

7

14892





TRAVELS IN THE EAST

INCLUDING A

JOURNEY IN THE HOLY LAND

BY

ALPHONSE DE LAMARTINE

FROM THE FRENCH :

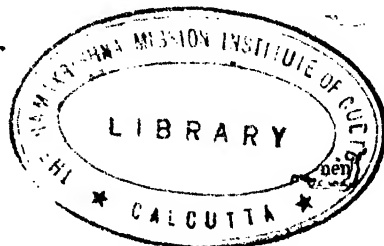
A NEW TRANSLATION FOR THE PRESENT EDITION.

WITH A MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR, AND NOTES.

EDINBURGH:•

PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM AND ROBERT CHAMBERS;
AND SOLD BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1839.



EDINBURGH:
PRINTED BY W. AND R. CHAMBERS,
13, WATERLOO PLACE.

MEMOIR OF M. DE LAMARTINE.

ALPHONSE MARIA LOUIS DE LAMARTINE, the author of the present work, was born on the 21st October 1791, at Maçon, in the department of the Saône-and-Loire, in the eastern part of France. His family had long held a distinguished place among the provincial nobility of France, and still retained a considerable portion of the seigniorial possessions that had in early times belonged to them. The father of the subject of our memoir was a captain of cavalry, and a chevalier of the order of St Louis. Alicia Desroys, the mother of Alphonse, was the daughter of a gentleman high in the service of Philip (Égalité), Duke of Orleans, with whose children, one of whom now reigns in France, Mademoiselle Desroys was brought up in infancy. With these connections, and the prejudices resulting from rank and birth, it was natural that the Chevalier de Lamartine should favour the royal cause at the commencement of the revolutionary troubles. He suffered severely for so doing, being imprisoned at Maçon in 1793, together with his father, and almost the whole of his relatives. His wife alone was left at liberty, and this she made use of to solace, as much as lay in her power, the distresses of her husband and his partners in confinement. She hired rooms immediately opposite to the prison, that she might at once be near the chevalier, and might daily gratify him by holding up her little son before his eyes, as he gazed through the bars of his dungeon. The youthful days of Alphonse were thus clouded by the misfortunes of his parents; but fortunately, ere the crowning blow could be given to these evils on the scaffold, the death of Robespierre opened the prisons of France, and the family of de Lamartine were permitted to retire to a small estate, named Milly, which formed part of their remaining property.

At Milly, Alphonse de Lamartine passed the years of his boyhood, and there he received his early education. His mother, an accomplished as well as beautiful woman, was his first tutor. Having been acquainted personally with J. J. Rousseau, she had adopted some of his less fanciful notions respecting education, and applied them to practice in the case of her only son. He was allowed to ramble at will on the hills, or among the woods, and to acquire vigour and hardihood of frame by the exposure of his naked feet and arms to all varieties of weather. Hence sprang, doubtless, much of his enthusiastic admiration of nature, if not, also, the grace and symmetry of person which afterwards distinguished him. But while thus pursuing the maxims of Rousseau, regarding the physical training of youth, Madame de Lamartine's sound sense and fervent Christian piety prevented an injurious and too close adherence to the rules of the same writer respecting intellectual and moral tuition. She instilled into the mind of Alphonse so warm a love of religion, that the sentiment tinctured all his future life and thoughts. Many more benefits he owed to the care of his tender parent, to whom he frequently alludes in the narrative of his travels. He subsequently received instruction at the college of Bellay, and afterwards made a journey to Italy, where he stored his mind with images and recollections, which, at a future period, came before the world in verse.

His mind had received its poetical bias at a very early period, or rather, his temperament was naturally so enthusiastic and imaginative that his thoughts very soon resolved themselves into song. From the age of seventeen, he had privately continued to pour forth his soul, at the will of the moment, in verse; and by the time he had attained to confirmed manhood, a numerous collection of pieces had accumulated in his *escritoire*. He had spoken little of these to any one, but he was at length induced to read one of his short poems, entitled "The Lake," to a company of professed critics. The unqualified approbation of the judicial circle was the consequence; yet de Lamartine's modesty might still have kept him in obscurity, had not his funds at the moment been less plentiful than was convenient or agreeable. He was unwilling

to resort to his parents, and he therefore ventured to address a publisher. The answer was encouraging; the poems went to press, and shortly after issued under the title of "Poetical Meditations." The success of the work, which consisted of odes and other short poems, was immense, and the author at once took rank among the first living poets of France. The successive productions which came from his pen after this period, may be enumerated here. Besides the "Poetical Meditations," of which there was a second series, de Lamartine has given at intervals to the world four books of "Poetical" and "Religious Harmonies;" a poem of considerable length, entitled "The Death of Socrates;" an addition to Byron's great work, entitled "The Last Canto of Childe Harold's Pilgrimage;" a "Coronation Chant for Charles the Tenth;" "Epistles, and other pieces;" "Jocelyn," a lengthened fragment of a great unfinished poem; and "The Angel's Fall," an episode from the same unpublished work. These productions form altogether a body of poetry, scarcely inferior in amount to the collected effusions of any poet of the age.

While on a visit to Savoy in 1819, he first beheld Miss Birch, an accomplished English lady, to whom he was afterwards married. At the restoration of the Bourbons, he had been enrolled in the royal body-guard, but after his marriage he entered on a diplomatic career, and was employed in that character at Naples, Florence, and, finally, in Greece. The revolution of 1830 terminated the poet's diplomatic service, as his attachment to the deposed family led him at once to resign the post he held. Oppressed in spirit by these political changes, and also by the death of his only and infant son, which followed shortly after that of his mother, M. de Lamartine now resolved to fulfil his long-cherished intention of visiting the East. His wife, and his sole remaining child, a girl of extraordinary beauty, accompanied him thither.

While in the East, M. de Lamartine was elected a member of the Chamber of Deputies by the town of Bergues, and, since his return to France in 1833, has sat successively for that place, and for his birth-place, Maçon. As a politician, he has become a supporter of the monarchy of 1830, and of the dynasty of Louis Philippe, probably considering that the elder branch of the Bourbons cannot be restored without so violent a convulsion, that the ultimate prize would not compensate the intermediate desolation. We cannot omit to mention, also, that one of his leading peculiarities as a member of the French legislature, is a narrow jealousy and dislike of Great Britain, though from what cause it is difficult to comprehend. It is unfortunate for his own fame that he ever stepped out of the region in which he is certainly transcendent—deep and thoughtful poetry, sublime and captivating sensibility, a love and "an eye" for nature, such as even Scott or Wordsworth has scarcely equalled, with a power of embodiment at once diversified and concentrated, an imagery delighting in simple illustrations, yet inducing in the mind that charm and inward voluptuousness, which beautiful, graceful, and happy pictures, always spread within it. There is sometimes an egotism in his writings which is painful to the reader; but it is soon lost and forgiven; for in depth of thought, in warmth and earnestness of feeling, in eloquence and beauty of diction, his pieces are surpassed by those of no contemporary writer. Still in the prime of life, his summers are devoted to his old country, *France*, and to verse, while his winters are given to Paris, and his legislative functions. His aged father, and the wife of his affections, still live to cheer and solace him for what he has lost, and to enjoy with him the esteem and love which he has earned from his country.

The present work, published originally under the title "VOYAGE EN ORIENT—1832, 1833," is the chief, if not almost the only, prose production of M. de Lamartine, and has been made favourably known in England by a translation, published a few years ago in London. The present, which is a new translation from the last French edition, has been undertaken with the view of carrying the work into those channels from which it

MEMOIR OF M. DE LAMARTINE.

has hitherto been excluded, in consequence of the highness of its price. A more fitting accession to the libraries of the less affluent members of the community, it will readily be allowed, could not well be made.

Where it has appeared necessary for supplying deficiencies in the author's descriptions of places, explanatory notes have been added from the latest and best sources of information.

AUTHOR'S PREFACE

THIS is neither a book nor a journey; I never thought of writing either the one or the other. M. de Chateaubriand has composed a book, or rather a poem, on the East; that great author and poet only passed over that land of prodigies, but he has imprinted for ever the marks of genius upon that dust which so many ages have stirred. He went to Jerusalem as a pilgrim and a knight, the Bible, the Gospel, and the Crusades in his hand. I visited it only as a poet and philosopher; I have brought from it profound impressions in my heart, high and awful precepts in my mind. The reflections I have there made upon religions, history, manners, traditions, the different phases of humanity, are not lost upon me. Those reflections, which expand the narrow horizon of the thought, which bring before the reason the great religious and historical problems, which force men to turn upon themselves and scrutinise their previous hastily-formed convictions to change them for new ones; that grand and inward improvement of the thought by the exercise of thought itself, by localities, by facts, by comparisons of cras with cras, manners with manners, creeds with creeds, nothing of all this is lost to the traveller, the poet, or the philosopher—they are the elements of his future poetry and philosophy. When he has amassed, classed, arranged, elucidated, and digested, the countless throng of impressions, images, and thoughts, which the earth and men arouse whom he studies—when he has matured his mind and his convictions—he also gives them vent; and whether good or bad, just or false, he utters his thoughts to his generation, either in the form of a poem, or a philosophic summary. He speaks his word, that word which every man who thinks is called upon to speak. This moment will perhaps occur for me; but it has not yet come.

As to a book of travels—that is to say, a complete and faithful description of the countries I have traversed, the personal events that have befallen me, or the effect of the impressions made upon me by places, men, and manners—I have still less intended to compose. It is already done for the East in England, and is now progressing in France at this moment, with a faithfulness, talent, and success, which I could not hope to surpass. M. de Laborde writes and designs with the talent of the traveller in Spain, and the pencil of our greatest artists. M. Fontanier, consul at Trebisonde, gives us, in succession, exact and living portraits of the least explored parts of the Ottoman empire. And the Eastern Correspondence supplied by M. Michaud, of the French Academy, and by his brilliant fellow-labourer M. Poujoulat, leaves nothing to curiosity, as to the history, morals, or landscapes of the East, to desire. M. Michaud, an experienced writer, an accomplished and classical historian, enriches the description of the places he visits with all the recollections, so vivid to him, of the Crusades. He exercises his criticism upon localities by historical illustrations, and clears up history by an examination of the scenes themselves; his ripened and inductive mind pierces the obscurity of the past equally with the manners of the people whom he surveys, and spreads the salt of his piquant and graceful intellect over the usages, customs, and religions, he investigates; he is the man advanced in years and wisdom, leading youth by the hand, and showing to him, with the smile of reason and irony, new scenes. M. Poujoulat is a poet and a painter; his style, conveying the impression and hues of the very scene, reflects them all sparkling and warm with the local brilliancy. We feel that the Asian sun still shines upon and heats his young and teeming mind whilst he writes to his country; his pages are portions of the very country, which he bears to us all radiant in their native splendour. Such two varied

talents, acting in conjunction, render the Eastern Correspondence the most complete work that we could desire upon this admirable country, as well as presenting the most varied and attractive information.

We have not hitherto effected much as to geography; but the labours of M. Cailliet, a young staff-officer whom I met in Syria, will be doubtless shortly published, and will give us a complete picture of that part of the world. M. Cailliet has passed three years in exploring the Isle of Cyprus, Carmania, and the different parts of Syria, with that zeal and intrepidity which characterise the enlightened officers of the French army. Having shortly ago returned to his native land, he brings with him information that would have been extremely useful to Bonaparte's expedition, and which may pave the way for others.

The notes which I have here consented to give to the public, have none of these merits. I yield them with regret; they are merely in the shape of recollections for myself, and were destined for that purpose alone. There is nothing of science, history, geography, or manners in them—the public was far from my thoughts when I wrote them—and how did I write them? Sometimes at noon, during the mid-day repose, under the shade of a palm-tree, or under the ruins of a monument in the desert; more often in the evening, beneath a tent, beaten by the wind and rain, by the light of a torch of resin; one day in the cell of a Maronite convent on Lebanon; another day amid the rolling of an Arab boat, or upon the deck of a brig, in the midst of the shouts of sailors, neighing of horses, interruptions and distractions of all sorts by land and sea; sometimes eight days without writing at all; at other times losing the scattered pages of an album, torn by jackals, or steeped in the brine of the sea.

When returned to Europe, I might have, doubtless, revised these fragments of impressions, collected, arranged, and prepared them, and, like another, made a book of travels. But I have already said, to write travels was not in my mind. It would have needed time, freedom of spirit, attention, and labour; and I had none of all this to give. My heart was broken, my mind was elsewhere, my attention distracted, my leisure destroyed; it was necessary either to burn the notes, or let them go forth such as they were. Circumstances, which it is not requisite to explain, have induced me to adopt the latter alternative; I repent of having done so, but it is too late.

Let, then, the reader close the book before casting his eyes over it, if he seeks any thing but the most fugitive and superficial impressions of a traveller who marches without tarrying. There can be a little interest only for painters—these notes are almost exclusively picturesque—it is the look, the glance of a passer-by, seated on his camel or on the deck of a brig, who sees landscapes float before him, and who, in order to remember them on the morrow, throws a few colourless pencil-marks on the pages of his journal. Sometimes the traveller, forgetting the scene which surrounds him, turns upon himself, speaks to himself, listens to himself thinking, enjoying, or suffering; he then records a word of his distant feelings, so that the wind of the desert or the ocean may not bear away his whole existence, and so that there may remain some trace of them at another time, when returned to the solitary hearth, striving to reanimate an extinct past, give heat to frozen remembrances, and to link again the chains of a life which have been snapped in so many places. Such are these notes—of interest, they possess none; of success, they can expect no portion; of indulgence, they have too much reason to claim a considerable share.

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

MARSEILLES, 20th May, 1832.—My mother had received from her mother, on her death-bed, a fine bible of Roy-aumont, in which she taught me to read when I was a little child. This bible had engravings of sacred subjects in all the pages. There was Sarah, there was Tobit and his angel, there was Joseph or Samuel; above all, there were those fine patriarchal scenes where the solemn and primitive nature of the East was mingled with every act of that simple and marvellous life which was led by the early men. When I had correctly recited my lesson, and read nearly without a fault a half page of sacred history, my mother uncovered the engraving, and, holding the book open on her knees, made me contemplate it, while giving me its explanation as my reward. She was endowed by nature with a soul equally pious and affectionate, and with an imagination of the most sensitive and graphic order; all her thoughts were sentiments, all her sentiments were images; her fine, noble, sweet countenance reflected in its beaming physiognomy all that was glowing in her heart, all that was painted in her conceptions; and the silvery tone of her voice, so affectionate, solemn, and impassioned, imparted to her every word an emphasis of such force, and interest, and love, as still, at this moment, vibrates in my ear, alas! after six years of silence! The view of these engravings, the explanations and poetical commentaries of my mother, inspired me from my tenderest infancy with scriptural tastes and inclinations; and, from the love of these representations to the desire of seeing the places where the events represented had taken place, there was but one step. I burned, then, from the age of eight years, with an eager wish of visiting those mountains where God descended; those deserts where the angels came and pointed out to Hagur the hidden spring from which to reanimate her poor banished infant that was dying of thirst; those rivers that issued from the earthly paradise; that heaven where the angels were seen to descend and to ascend on the ladder of Jacob. This longing had never been extinguished in me; I mused continually on a journey to the East, which formed the one great act of my intellectual existence; I was eternally constructing in my thoughts a vast, religious epic, of which these beautiful localities were to form the principal scene; it seemed to me also, as if my spiritual doubts and religious perplexities were there to find their solution and their pacification. In a word, I was from this source to find colouring for my poem; for life always presented itself to my intellect as a great poem, while to my heart it breathed of love. God, Love, and Poetry—these are the three only words I should wish engraved on my monument, should I ever deserve a monument.

Such was the origin of those notions that now impel me to the shores of Asia. Such is my reason for now being at Marseilles, and for my taking so much pains to leave a country which I love, where I have friends, and whence some fraternal feelings will pursue me with regret.

Marseilles, 22d May.—I have freighted a vessel of 250 tons, with a crew of sixteen. The captain is an excellent man. His physiognomy pleases me. His voice has that grave and sincere accent that denotes firm integrity and a pure conscience; there is a gravity in

the expression of his countenance, and his look has that lively, frank, and direct beam, which is so sure an index of a prompt resolution, energy, and intelligence. He is, besides, a mild, polite, and well-bred man. I have examined him with all that carefulness which one must naturally bring to the selection of an individual to whom he is about to confide not only his fortune and his life, but the lives of his wife and only child—thus concentrating three existences, as it were, into one alone. May God protect us, and grant us a safe return!

The vessel is named the *Alceste*. The captain is M. Blanc of La Ciotat. The owner is one of the worthiest merchants in Marseilles, M. Bruno-Rostand. He overpowers us with attentions and kindnesses. He has himself resided a long time in the Levant. He is a well-informed man, and capable for the highest employments, and, in his native city, his probity and talents have gained for him a consideration equal to his fortune. The latter he enjoyed without ostentation, and, surrounded by a charming family, he is entirely occupied in diffusing among his children the traditions of loyalty and virtue. What a noble country, where such domestic spectacles are to be met with in every class of society! And how amiable are those household institutions that protect, preserve, perpetuate, the same sanctity of morals, the same nobility of sentiments, the same traditional qualities, in the cottage, in the counting-house, or in the lordly mansion.

May 25.—Marseilles welcomes us as if we were children of her own beautiful clime; it is a land of generosity of heart, and of the poetry of soul; they receive poets as brothers, they are poets themselves—and I have found, among men of the common walks of society, among the academicians, and amidst young people who have scarcely entered upon life, a host of character and of talent, capable of doing honour, not to their native province alone, but to entire France. The south and north of France appear to me, in this respect, much superior to the central provinces. The imagination languishes in these intermediate regions, in these over-temperate climates; it must have an excess of temperature. Poetry is daughter of the sun, or of eternal hoarfrosts: we find a Homer or an Ossian, a Tasso or a Milton.

May 28.—My heart will carry with it an eternal memorial of the benevolence of the Marseillaise. It seems as if they wished, in my case, to heighten those feelings of anguish that oppress the heart when one is about to leave his native land without knowing if he shall ever revisit it. I wish also to treasure up the names of those individuals who have given me a more particular reception, and whose reminiscence will abide with me as the last sweet impression of my natal soil: M. J. Freyssinet, M. de Montgrand, Messrs de Ville-neuve, M. Vangaver, M. Autran, M. Dufeu, M. Jauffret, &c., all men distinguished for some eminent quality of mind and heart, as philosophers, statesmen, authors, or poets. May I see them again, and pay them on my return all those tributes of gratitude and of friendship which it is so sweet to owe, and so sweet to discharge!

Here are some verses which I wrote this morning, in sailing between the islands of Pomègue and the coast of Provence. They are a farewell to Marseilles, which

LAMARTINE'S

I quit with the feelings of a son. There are also some stanzas of it which point to earlier and more remote passages in my heart.

A FAREWELL TRIBUTE TO THE ACADEMY OF MARSEILLES.

If to yon swift bark's canvass I confide
Each blessing Heaven has willed it to impart;
If I commit to ocean's fickle tide
A wife and child, twin portions of my heart;
If I expose to sand-bank, surge, and blast,
Such hopes as these, so many heaving breasts,
And with no gage of safety, save a mast
That quivers when the south-wind lists;
'Tis not that lust of gold inflames a soul
Which to itself hath nobler treasures made;
Nor that I thirst in glory's flaming scroll
To write my name—if written, soon to fade;
'Tis not that like to Dante's is my fate,
The bitter salt of exile doomed to taste;
Nor that inconstant faction's angry hate
Hath laid my parent roof-tree waste.
No, no! I leave upon a valley's side,
And weep to leave, green fields and shade-fraught trees—
A home where sweet remembrances abide,
Which many a kind eye blesses when it sees;
Screen'd by the woods, I have scene retreats,
Where never factious brawls the calm destroy,
Where, stead of civil tempests, nothing meets
My ear but thankfulness and joy.
An aged sire, girt by our injured forms,
Starts if around the walls the winds but sigh,
And daily prays that he who rules the storms
May not beyond its strength our canvas try;
Workmen and servants, masterless each one,
Trace on the turf our steps with sad acclaim,
And, basking 'neath my window in the sun,
My dogs whine as they hear my name.
Sisters I have, nursed at the same kind breast,
Baught on the same trunk cradled by the gate;
Friends, too, whose souls my spirit has possess'd,
Who read my eye, and can my thoughts unveil;
And hearts unknown are by the muse made mine—
Friends who hold converse with my poems—
Echoes unseen, who round my path combine
To pour responsive harmonies!
Yet souls have instincts hard to be defin'd,
Like that which prompts some hardy birds to roam
In quest of nurture of another kind,
And cross at one bold flight the deep sea foam.
What seek they in the regions of the East?
Have they not mossy homes beneath our caves?
And store of food their little ones to feast,
When autumn shakes our sun-tipt sheave?
I have like them the bread each day requires,
Like them I have the river and the hill;
Most humble is the range of my desires,
Yet I like them am coming, going still!
The East, like them, some power now bids me trace,
For never have I seen or touch'd the land
Of Cham, the first dominion of our race,
Where man's heart felt God's kneading hand.
I have not sail'd across the sandy sea,
To the slow rocking of the desert ship;
At Hebron's well, beside the palm-trees three,
I have not wet at eve my yearning lip,
g cloak beneath the tent I have not spread,
In the dust which strew'd Job's brow of yore,
Nor dream'd by night, with moaning sails overhead,
The dreams which Jacob dream'd before.
Of earth's seven pages one yet waits my eye
I know not how the stars may leap their sphere—
'Neath what ideal weight the hours may ply—
How palpitates the heart—when gods are near!
I know not when the grand of Eden throw
The serpent's head the ship's bows of the past,
May speak, or if earth murmurs low,
dly weeps the passing blast.
I have not heard the nations' cries ascend,
And call responses from the cedars old,
Nor seen high Lebanon's God-cent eagles bend
Their flight on Tyre—emblems of wrath foretold;

My head I have not laid upon the mounds
Where all of Tadmor but the name is gone,
Nor have my lonely footsteps woken the sounds
That sleep round Meinnon's vacant throne.

I have not heard the mournful Jordan pour
Low murmurings from its abyssal caves,
Weeping sublimer tears than those of yore,
With which sad Jeremiah chilled its waves;
I have not heard the soul within me sing
In that resounding grot, where, 'mid the night,
The bard-king's trembling fingers swept the string,
Led by the hand of fiery light.

I have not traced the prints around that spot,
Where, 'neath the olive, Jesus weeping lay,
Nor on the straggling roots the tears have sought,
Which eager angels could not kiss away;
By night I have not in that garden watched,
Where, while the sweat of blood was undergone,
The echo of our griefs and sins unmatched,
Resounded in one heart alone.

To that dear dust I have not bowed my head,
Which was by Christ's departing foot imprest,
Nor kiss'd the stones in which his mother laid
His tear-embalm'd remains of earth to rest;
Nor have I beat my bosom in the place,
Where, conquering the future by his death,
He stretch'd his arms all mankind to embrace,
And blest them with his latest breath.

For these things I depart—on these bestow
The span of worthless days yet left for me.
What boots it where the winter winds lay low
The barren trunk, the withered shadeless tree?
"Madman!" the crowd exclaims, itself unwise!
All do not find their food on every road—
The pilgrim poet's food in thinking lies:
His heart lives on the works of God!

Adieu, my aged sire and sisters dear!
My white and wat'ry shaded home, adieu!
Farewell, my steeds—now idling all the year!
My lonely, hearth-couch'd dogs, farewell to you!
Each image grieves, and hant's me like the ghost
Of bliss departed, that would stay me faint:
Ah, may our reuniting hour be cross'd
By no like shades of doubt and pain!

And thou, my land, more vex'd by surge and blast
Than the frail bark which now my all conveys,
Land, on whose fate the hopes of earth are cast,
Adieu! thy shores now fly my dimming gaze!
Oh, may a ray of heaven dispel the gloom
Which wraps thy freedom, temples, throne, and thee,
And all thy sacred borders re-illum'd
With light of immortality!

And thou, Marseilles, that at the gates of France
Sittest as if to hail each coming guest,
Whose port smiles on these seas, with hope-bright glance,
And seems for w'nded barks an eagle nest,
Where kindly hand, yet feel the clasp of mine,
Where yet my feet half cling in fond sojourn,
Thine be my parting prayer, Marseilles, and thine
My first salute on my return!

June 13.—We have been to visit our ship, our house for so many months! It is divided into small cabins, in which we have room for a hammock and trunk. The captain has caused some small windows to be pierced, which give the cabins a little light and air, and which we shall be able to open when the sea is not high, or when the vessel does not heel much over. The great state-room is reserved for Madame de Lamartine and Julia. The waiting-maids will sleep in the captain's little state-room, which he has been so kind as give up to us. As the season is fine, we shall eat on deck, under a tent rigged close to the mainmast. The brig is encumbered with provisions of all kinds required for a journey of two years in countries of no resources. A library of five hundred volumes, all selected works of history, poetry, and travels, forms the finest ornament of the largest apartment. Bundles of arms are grouped in the corners, and I have purchased, besides, a private arsenal of muskets, pistols, and sabres, to arm ourselves

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

and our people. The Greek pirates infest the seas of the Archipelago. We are determined to fight to the utmost, and not allow them to board while life is left us. I have to defend two lives, which are dearer to me than my own. There are four guns on deck, and the crew, who are aware of the fate reserved by the Greeks for the unhappy sailors they surprise, are resolved to die rather than surrender to them.

June 17.—I take out with me three friends. The first is one of those persons whom providence attaches to our path when it foresees that we shall have need of a support that may not bend under peril or misfortune—Amédée de Parseval. We have been linked together from our tenderest youth by an affection which no period of our life has found defective. My mother loved him as a son; I have loved him as a brother; whenever I have been wounded by a stroke of destiny, I have found him at hand, or have seen him arrive to take his share of it, the principal share, the calamity all entire, had it been in his power. His is a heart that lives only in the happiness of others, and suffers only from their misfortunes. When I was, fifteen years ago, at Paris, alone, unwell, ruined, desperate, and dying, he passed the nights in watching by my lamp of agony; when I have lost some adored being, it was always he who came and brought me the balm of solacement; on the death of my mother, he reached me as soon as the fatal intelligence, and conducted me from a distance of two hundred leagues to that tomb where I repaired in the vain search of that last adieu which she had addressed to me, but which I had never heard! More lately! But my misfortunes are not ended, and I shall again experience his friendship whenever there is despair to be soothed away from my heart, whenever there are tears to be mingled with mine.

Two worthy intellectual and well-informed men, two truly choice personages, have also arrived to accompany us in this pilgrimage. The one is M. de Capmas, sub-prefect, deprived of his aim by the revolution of July, one who has preferred the precarious chances of a painful and uncertain future to the preservation of his place. An oath would have been repugnant to his loyalty, for the very reason that it would have appeared interested. He is one of those men who make no calculation in the face of a scruple of honour, and with whom political sympathies have all the warmth and virgin purity of true sentiment.

Our other companion is a physician of Hondschoote, M. de la Royere. I became acquainted with him at my sister's house, during the period when I was meditating this departure. The purity of his soul, the original and unsophisticated graces of his intellect, the loftiness of his political and religious sentiments, made a strong impression on me. I was desirous of bringing him with me, much more as a moral resource than from any prospective reference to my health. I have since congratulated myself on this, as I attach much more value to his mind and disposition than to his professional abilities, though these are very well established. We converse together much more about politics than about medicine. His views and ideas about the present and future condition of France are liberal, and not at all limited by personal attachment or dislike. He knows that providence accepts no aid of party in its operations; and like myself, he looks, in human policy, to ideas, and not to men's names. His thoughts proceed to the result, without troubling themselves through what channel the passage is to be made; and his mind is free from all prejudices and prepossessions, even those of his religious faith, which is sincere and fervent.

Six servants, almost all born or of long service in the family, complete our company. All of them set out with joyfulness, and take a personal interest in this journey. Each believes he is on his own private travels, and they all gaily brave the fatigues and perils upon which I have not deceived them.

In the roadstead, at anchor off the little gulf of Montredon, 6th July 1832.—I have sailed: the billows have now our whole destiny in their power. I am no longer

connected with my native land, save by the thought of those cherished beings I still leave in it; by the thought, especially, of my father and sisters.

To explain to myself how—already verging towards the close of my youth, approaching that season of life when man withdraws himself from the ideal world to enter upon the world of earthly interests—I should have quitted my beautiful and peaceful existence at Saint-Point, and all the innocent delights of the domestic fireside, whose charm was a wife, and whose embellishment a child; to explain to myself, I say, why I wander at present on the vast sea towards unknown shores and an unknown futurity, I am obliged to recount to the source of all my thoughts, and to seek there the causes of my travelling tastes and sympathies. It is because imagination has also its wants and its passions! I was born a poet, that is to say, more or less conversant with that noble language, which God addresses to all men, but more clearly to some, through the medium of his works. When young, I had heard this voice of nature, this language formed of images and not of sounds, in the mountains, in the forests, on the lakes, on the margin of the chasms and torrents of my own country, and of the Alps; I had even translated into written language some of those accents that had affected me, and which now in their turn affected other minds; but those accents were no longer sufficient for me; I had exhausted that small treasury of divine converse which our soil of Europe utters to man—I thirsted to listen to other specimens on more brilliant and more eloquent shores. My imagination was enamoured with the sea, the deserts, the mountains, the manners, and the traces of God in the East. All my life had the East been the dream of my days of darkness, amidst the fogs of autumn and winter, in my native valley. My body, like my soul, is a child of the sun; it must have light; it needs that ray of life which beams not from the shattered bosom of our western clouds, but from out the depths of that purple sky which resembles the mouth of the furnace; those rays which are not merely a light, but a glowing shower, which calcine, as they descend, the white rocks, the sparkling teeth of the mountain-peaks, and which tinge the ocean with red, like to a conflagration floating on the waters! I had a craving to stir and knead in my hands a little of that land which had been the land of our first family, the land of prodigies; to see, to traverse, that gospel scenery, amid which was enacted the drama of divine wisdom in conflict with human error and perversity!—where moral truth became a martyr, in order to fertilise with its blood a more perfect civilisation! And then I was—I had almost always been—a Christian in heart and in imagination; my mother had made me so; I had sometimes ceased to be so, during the less good and pure days of my early youth; misfortune and love, that complete love which purifies whatever it inflames, had conjointly driven me back, at a later period, into this first asylum of my thoughts, into those consolations of the heart which one strives to resummon from his reminiscences and his hopes, when all the bustle of the heart has fallen within us; when all the emptiness of life appears to us, after a passion extinguished, or a death which leaves us nothing to love. This Christianism of sentiment had once more become a sweet habitude of my thoughts; I used often to say to myself, Where is truth, perfect, evident, and incontestible, to be found? If it be any where, it is in the heart—it is in that *felt* evidence against which there is no reasoning that can prevail. But truth in the mind is no where complete; it is with God, and not with us; our eye is too narrow to absorb a single ray of it; all truth, with respect to us, is only relative; whatever is most useful to mankind will be truest also. The doctrine most fertile in divine virtues, then, will be that which contains the greatest number of divine truths, for what is good is true. All my religious logic stood at this point: my philosophy did not ascend higher; it interdic-

* In the original—Mais la vérité de l'esprit n'est complète nulle part.

from doubts, those interminable dialogues of reason with herself; it left me that religion of the heart which harmonises so well with all the infinite sentiments of the life of the soul, that religion which resolves nothing, but which pacifies every thing.

July 7, seven o'clock of the evening.—I say to myself, This pilgrimage, if not as a Christian, at least as a man and a poet, would have so much pleased my mother! Her soul was so ardent, and coloured itself so quickly and so completely with the impression of places and objects! It was she whose soul would have exulted in presence of this sacred and now deserted theatre, on which was performed the great drama of the gospel—that complete drama, in which the human and the divine portion of our nature act each its part, the one crucifying, the other crucified! This journey of the son she loved so well, must be pleasing to her, in that heavenly mansion where I now seem to perceive her; she will observe us; she will place herself like a second providence between us and the tempest, the simoom, and the Arab of the desert! She will protect, against every danger, her son, her daughter of adoption, and her grand-daughter, that visible angel of our destiny, whom we carry every where with us. She loved her so much! she rested her look with such unspeakable tenderness, with such penetrating pleasure, on the charming countenance of that infant, the last and fairest hope of her numerous generations!—and, if there be imprudence in this enterprise, on which we have so often mused together, she will obtain for me a pardon on high in favour of the motives, which are, Love, Poetry, and Religion!

The same evening.—Politics return to assail us even here. France is beautiful when viewed in the approaching future. A generation of men are rising, who will have, by virtue of their later appearance, a complete disconnection from our rancours and recriminations of forty years. Little matters it to them, that one may have belonged to this or that hateful denomination of our old parties; these men went for nothing in those quarrels; they have neither prejudices nor vengeance in their minds. That generation present themselves pure and vigorous on the threshold of a new career; but this career we are already blocking up with our hatreds, our passions, and our old disputes. Let us make way for it. How I should have loved to enter upon it in their name! to mingle my voice with theirs from that tribune which still only resounds with repetitions that have no echo in the future—that tribune where the weapons of warfare are the names of men! The hour would have now arrived for lighting up the beacon of reason and morality over our political tempests, for establishing the new social symbol which the world begins to foreknow and to comprehend—the symbol of love and charity among men, the evangelical politics! I do not reproach myself, at least, for my part, with any egotism in this respect; I would have sacrificed to this duty even my travels, that dream of my imagination for sixteen years! May Heaven rouse up some men for this work, for our politics make man ashamed, and cause the angels to weep! Destiny grants one season in every age for humanity to regenerate itself! the present is a season of revolution, and men squander it in tearing each other to pieces! They give up to vengeance the season granted by God for regeneration and advancement!

Same day, still at anchor.—The revolution of July, which has profoundly afflicted me, because I loved, innately, the old and venerable family of the Bourbons, because they had both the love and the blood of my father, my grandfather, and all my relations, because they should have had also mine if they had wished it—this revolution, notwithstanding, did not irritate me, because it did not astonish me. I saw it approaching from afar; nine months before the fatal day, the fall of the monarchy, I had heard of it in the very names of the men who were to lead it with its government. These men faithful, but they belonged to another school of thought: while the ideas of living in one direction, they were pre-occupied with another; the separation was com-

plete as to principles, it could not be delayed as to events; it was a mere question of days and hours. I have wept over that family, which seemed condemned to the destiny and to the blindness of Oedipus! I have deplored, above all, that divorce, without any necessity, between the past and the future. The former might have been so useful to the latter! Liberty, and the progress of society, would have borrowed as much strength from that adoption as the ancient royal houses, the old families and old virtues, would have done from them. It would have been at once so politic and so pleasant not to have separated France into two hostile camps, into two opposing interests, but to have moved on together, the one party pressing forward their steps, and the other retarding theirs, in order not to be disjoined on the route. All this is now only a dream. The fact must be regretted, but time must not be lost in uselessly recalling such things to memory. We must act, we must move forward; this is the law of nature, the law of God. I regret, that what is called the royalist party, which embraces so much talent, influence, and virtue, should wish to make a pause on the question of July. It was not compromised in that affair, which was a mere affair of the palace, of intrigue, of a clique, in which the great majority of royalists had no part. It is always allowable, always honourable, to take a share in the misfortunes of others; but one ought not to make himself a gratuitous accomplice in an error which he did not commit; we ought to leave to whoever vindicates it the fault of state revolutions, and of the retrograde movement; to pity and bewail the august victims of a fatal mistake; to abjure nought of those affections that are honourable to them; not to repudiate hopes which, though remote, are legitimate; and, in one word, to return into the ranks of the citizens, to think, speak, act, and combat, along with that family of families, the country. But let us drop this subject. We shall see France again in two years. May God protect her, and all that is dear and excellent in every party we leave behind us!

July 8: under sail.—This day, at half-past five in the morning, we got under way. Some friends of few days' standing, but of much affection, had outrisen the sun, in order to accompany us some miles to sea, and thus postpone their adieus. The brig glided along a smooth sea, limpid and blue, like the water of a shady spring in the rock. Scarcely did the weight of the yards—those long arms of the vessel loaded with sails—cause a slight inclination of each side alternately; a young man from Marseilles (M. Autran) recited to us some admirable verses, in which he confided his vows for our safety to the winds and the billows. We were affected by this separation from the land, by those thoughts that flew back to the shore, that traversed Provence, and proceeded towards my father, my sisters, my friends; by those adieus, those verses, that fine outshading of Marseilles, which was retiring and diminishing under our view, and by that boundless sea which was to become for so long a while our only country.

Oh, Marseilles! oh, France! Thou deservedst better! This age, this country, these young men, were worthy of engraving a true poet, of engraving a world and an epoch in the harmonious memory of mankind! But as for me—I feel it profoundly—I am but one of those men without stamp, of a transitory and effaced epoch, some of whose sighs have had an echo, because the echo is more poetical than the poet. However, I belonged to another period by my inclinations; I have often felt in myself another man; horizons immense, infinite, luminous with poetry at once philosophic, epic, religious, and new, were scattered in confusion before me; but, in punishment of my mad and lost season of youth, these horizons were very quickly closed again. I felt them too vast for my physical forces; I closed my eyes, not to be tempted to precipitate myself into them. Farewell, then, to those reveries of genius, of intellectual pleasure! It is too late! I shall sketch, perhaps, a few scenes, I shall murmur a few songs, and all that will be said is—“Make way for others;” and, I perceive it with plea-

ture, there are others coming. Nature was never more fertile in promises of genius than at this moment. What men we shall have in the lapso of twenty years, if all should reach to manhood!

However, if God were pleased to grant my prayer, this is all I should implore of him: a poem according to my heart and to his!—a visible, living, animated, and coloured image of his visible and invisible creations. Here would be a fine inheritance to leave to this world of darkness, doubt, and sorrow! an aliment which would nourish it, which would renew its youth for a century! Oh! why cannot I give this to it, or, at least, give it to myself, although even no other person should hear a verse of it!

Same day, at three o'clock, at sea.—The east wind, which disputes the way with us, has blown with more force; the sea has risen and whitened; the captain declares that he must regain the coast, and anchor in a bay two hours' sail from Marseilles. Here we are, then; the billows rock us sweetly; the sea speaks, as the sailors say; a murmuring is heard in the distance, resembling the hum that issues from a large city. This threatening language of the sea, the first we have heard, resounds with a solemn effect in the ear and in the breast of those who are about to have such close conversation with it for so long a period.

On our left, we see the islands of Pomègue and the castle of If, an old fortress, with grey, round towers, crowning a naked and slate-coloured rock; ahead, over a lofty coast, intersected with whitish cliffs, are numerous country-seats, whose gardens, surrounded by walls, only allow to be perceived the tops of the shrubbery, or the green arcades of the vine arbours; scarcely a mile farther up the country, on an isolated and naked elevation, appear the fort and chapel of Our Lady of Protection (Notre-Dame de la Garde), a place of pilgrimage for the mariners of Provence before their departure, and at their return from every voyage. This morning, without our knowledge, at the very moment when the wind was filling our sails, a Marseillaise woman rose before daybreak, and, accompanied by her children, went to pray for us on the summit of this mountain, from whence her friendly glance perceived, without doubt, our vessel like a white speck on the water.

What a world is that world of prayer! What invisible but all-powerful tie is this between beings, known or unknown to each other, and praying in company or in separation for one another! It has always appeared to me that prayer—that instinct so unerring of our powerless nature—formed the only real power, or at least the greatest power, of mankind! Man cannot conceive its result, but what can he conceive! The necessity that impels man to breathe, proves to him, of itself, that air is necessary to life. The instinct of prayer also proves to the soul the efficacy of prayer: let us pray, then! And thou, who hast inspired unto us this marvellous power of communication with thyself, with creatures and worlds invisible, do thou, oh, my God! hear us most favourably; favour us beyond our desires!

Same day, eleven o'clock at night.—A splendid moon appears to hover between the masts, yards, and rigging, of two brigs of war, anchored not far from us, between our anchorage and the dark mountains of Var; the cordage of both vessels stands out in relief to the eye on the blue and purple field of the evening sky, like the fibres of a gigantic and fleshless skeleton, seen from a distance by the pale and steady lamp-lights of Westminster or St Denis. To-morrow, these skeletons are to awaken into life, to expand their swelling wings like ourselves, and fly away like birds of the ocean, to perch on other shores. We can hear, from the point where I am, the sharp and modulated whistle of the boatswain superintending the duty—the roll of the drum—the voice of the officer of the deck. The colours glide downward from the mast; the boats remount the quarter with the rapid and living gesture of animated creatures. All is once more silence on board of these vessels and of our own.

Formerly, men did not commit themselves to sleep

on this deep and treacherous bed of the ocean, without raising their souls and voices to God, without rendering homage to their sublime Creator, in the midst of all these stars, and billows, and mountain-summits—of all these charms and dangers of the night; yes, an evening prayer arose from every vessel! Since the revolution of July, this is done no longer. Prayer expired on the lips of that old liberalism of the eighteenth century, which had in itself nothing of life, save its cold hatred to the concerns of the soul. That sacred breath of man, which the children of Adam had transmitted, along with their joys and their griefs, as far as our times, was extinguished in France during our season of dispute and pride; we mixed up the Almighty in our quarrels. The shadow of God causes fear in certain men. Those insects—which have just been born, which are to die to-morrow, whose barren dust will in a few days be scattered by the wind, whose blanched bones these eternal waves will cast on some rocky shore—are afraid to confess, by a single gesture, the infinite Being, whom the heavens and the ocean testify; they disdain to name him who has not declined to create them; and all this for what reason? Because these men wear a uniform, because they can calculate as far as a certain extent of numbers, and because they call themselves Frenchmen of the nineteenth century! Happily, the nineteenth century is passing away, and I perceive a better approaching, an age truly religious, in which, if men do not confess God in the same language, and under the same symbols, they will at least confess him under every symbol, and in every language!

Same night.—I have been walking an hour on the deck of the vessel alone, and making these sad or consolatory reflections; I have been murmuring from my heart and from my lips all the prayers I learned from my mother when I was a child. The verses and fragments of psalms which I have heard her so often mutter in a low voice, during our evening walk in the alley of the garden of Milly, rose again to my memory, and I enjoyed a deep and close-felt pleasure in pouring them forth, in my turn, to the waves, to the wind, to that ear which is always open, and to which no movement of the heart or of the lips is ever lost! The prayer which we have heard breathed by some one whom we loved, and whom we have seen expire, is doubly sacred! Who among us does not prefer the few words his mother taught him, to the finest hymns which he might himself compose? For this reason it is, that, whatever sect our reason inclines us to adopt at the age of reason, the prayer of Christianity will ever be the prayer of the human race. I have thus offered up in solitude the prayers for the evening and for the sea, in behalf of that wife who makes no calculation of danger when uniting herself to my fate, and of that fair child who was sporting meantime on the deck, or inside of the boat, with the goat that is to yield to her its milk, or with the pretty and gentle grey-hounds, that lick her white hands, and nibble her long fair hair.

Nine in the morning, under sail.—During the night, the wind changed and freshened; I heard from my cabin on the deck below, the footsteps, voices, and plaintive song of the seamen, resounding for a long while over my head, along with the clanging of the chain-cable, as they secured again the anchor to the bows. They were getting under way; we were proceeding on our route. Again I fell asleep. When I awoke, and opened the port to gaze on the coast of France, which we were so close to the evening before, I saw no longer any thing save the immense sea, clear, naked, and gently rustling, with only two vessels, two lofty vessels, rising up like two landmarks, like pyramids of the desert in the boundless distance.

The wave gently caressed the full and rounded quarters of our brig, and babbled pleasantly under my narrow window, to which the foam sometimes rose in slender white garlands; it was like the unequal, varied, confused sound of the warbling of swallows, when the sun is rising over a field of corn. There are harmonies

between all the elements, just as there is a general harmony between material and intellectual nature. Every thought has its counterpart in some visible object, which repeats it like an echo, reflects it like a mirror, and renders it perceptible in two ways: to the senses by the image, to thought by thought; such is the boundless poetry of this doubleness of creation! Men call this comparison: comparison is genius. To compare, is the art or instinct of discovering additional words in that divine language of universal analogies, which God alone possesses, but part of which he permits certain men to attain. This is why the prophet or sacred poet, and the poet or profane prophet, were of old every where regarded as divine beings. At this day they are viewed as mad, or, at the very least, useless creatures: this is logical, for, if you reckon as every thing the material and palpable world—that part of nature which resolves itself into numbers and dimensions, into money and physical enjoyments—you do well to despise those men who preserve only the culture of moral beauty, the idea of God, and that language of images and of mysterious relations between the visible and the invisible! What does this language demonstrate? God and immortality! but these are nothing to you!

July 10, at anchor in the little gulf of La Ciotat.—The favourable breeze that sprang up for a moment, soon died away from our sails, which, drooping along the masts, left them to vibrate at the pleasure of the feeblest wave. A fine image of those characters that want decision—that moving current of the human soul—irresolute characters that fatigue those who possess them: such characters are more exhausted by feebleness than they would be from those courageous exertions which a rigorous firmness of will impresses on men of energy and activity; just as ships are more annoyed on a sea unruffled by the wind, than under the impulse of a fresh breeze that drives and sustains them over the foaming billows.

Whether by chance, or through some secret manoeuvre of our officers, we find ourselves obliged, on account of the wind, to enter at three o'clock the delightful bay of La Ciotat, a small town on the coast of Provence, where our captain, and almost all our seamen, have their houses, wives, and children. Under shelter of a little mole, which projects from a pleasant rising ground, quite clothed with vines, fig-trees, and olives, like a friendly hand held out to sailors from the shore, we let fall the anchor. The water is perfectly smooth, and so transparent, that at the depth of twenty feet we can perceive the gleam of the stones and shells, the undulations of the long marine plants, and the darting movement of thousands of fishes with glittering scales, those hidden treasures in the bosom of the sea, which is equally rich and inexhaustible as the land in vegetation and inhabitants. Life is found everywhere, and so is intellect! All nature is animated, all nature feels and thinks! He who does not see this, has never reflected on the inexhaustible fertility of creative thought! It ought not to have stopped, nor has it been able to stop; infinity is peopled; and wherever there is life, there also is sentiment; and thought has without doubt unequal grades, but has no vacuum. Would you have a physical demonstration of this? Look at a drop of water under the solar microscope: you will there see thousands of worlds gravitating; you will see worlds in the larva of an insect; and if you succeeded in again decomposing each of these thousands of worlds, millions of other universes would still appear to you! If from these numberless and infinitely small worlds you suddenly raise your view to the innumerable great globes of the celestial vault, if you plunge it to the milky way, that incalculable dust, so to speak, of suns, each of which rules over a system of globes larger than the earth and the moon, the intellect is shattered by the weight of such calculations; but the soul can sustain them, and glorifies itself in having its place in this great workmanship, in the strength to comprehend it, in having an impulse to bless and adore its Author! Oh, my God! what a worthy prayer does nature become to him who seeks thee there, who there discovers thee under every

form, and who comprehends some syllables of its mute language, which, mute though it is, tells of every thing!

Bay of La Ciotat, eleven at night.—The wind has died away, and there is no appearance of its return. The surface of the bay is without a ripple; the sea is so smooth that one can distinguish here and there the impression of the transparent wings of the *moustiques*,* which float on its glassy surface, and which alone tarnish it at present. See, then, to what a degree of calmness and repose that element can descend, which bears the three-decker without feeling her weight, which can gnaw away whole leagues of coast, wear down hills, split rocks, and shatter mountains, by the shock of its roaring billows! Nothing is so gentle as that which is powerful.

We are to go ashore, at the earnest request of our captain, who wishes to introduce us to his wife, and show us his house. The town resembles the pretty towns in the kingdom of Naples, on the coast of Gaeta. All is radiant, gay, serene; existence is a continual feast in the climates of the south. Happy is the man who is born and who dies under a sunny sky! Above all, happy is he who has his house—the house and garden of his fathers—on the borders of that sea whose every wave is a sparkle that darts its light and its splendour on the land! The lofty mountains excepted, which borrow the white lustre of their summits and horizons from the snows that cover them, from the sky into which they penetrate—no site in the interior of countries, however joyous and graceful it be rendered by hills and trees and rivers, can vie in beauty with the spots that are bathed by the waves of the south. The sea is to the landscape what the eye is to a fine face; it lightens up the scene, and imparts to it that radiance and expression which makes it to live and speak, to enchant and fascinate the contemplative eye.

Same day.—It is night, that is to say, what is called night in these climates. How many days less light have I not counted on the velvet slopes of Richmond Hill in England! In the fogs of the Thames, the Seine, the Saône, or the lake of Geneva! A full moon ascends in the firmament; she leaves in the shade our dark brig, which reposes motionless a short distance from the quay. The moon, on her progress, has left behind her as it were a train of red sand, with which she seems to have strewed one-half of the sky; the remainder is blue, and whitens up as she approaches. At a horizon nearly two miles distant, between two small islands, one of which has lofty yellow cliffs resembling the Coliseum at Rome, and the other is violet, like the flowers of the lilac, there appears on the water the *mirage* of a great city—the eye is deceived in this: one sees domes glittering, palaces with dazzling facades, long quays inundated with a sweet and serene light; to the right and left the billows whiten and seem to envelope it; one would say it was Venice or Malta sleeping on the bosom of the waters. It is neither an island nor a town—it is the reverberated light of the moon from the point of the sea directly under her disc; still nearer us, this reverberation extends and prolongs itself, and rolls a river of gold and silver between two banks of azure. On our left the bay carries out to an elevated headland the long and sombre chain of its scarp and serrated hills; to the right there is a narrow and encompassed valley, where there flows a beautiful fountain, under the shade of some trees; behind we have a higher hill, covered to the very summit with olives, which the night causes to appear black; from the top of this hill, down to the sea, some grey towers, and small white houses, pierce here and there through the monotonous obscurity of the olives, and attract the eye and the thought to the dwellings of man. More distant still, and at the extremity of the bay, three enormous rocks seem to rise, without any base, from the water; they are of singular forms, rounded like pebbles, polished by the waves and tempests: these pebbles are mountains, the gigantic freaks of a primitive ocean, of which our seas are, without doubt, but a feeble image!

* A species of gnat, found also in America.

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

July 12.—We have visited the captain's house, which is a pretty dwelling, modest but ornamented. We were received by his young wife, who appeared to suffer from sadness at the sudden departure of her husband. I proposed to take her on board, and that she should accompany us during the voyage, which would be longer than the average trips of a merchant vessel. Her state of health was an obstacle to this arrangement; alone, and without children, she would have to count long days, perhaps long years, during the absence of her husband. Her mild and feeling expression bore the impress of that melancholy prospect, and that solitude of heart. The house resembled a Flemish one; its walls were tapestried with portraits of the vessels which the captain had commanded. Not far from this, he took us to the country to see a house which he was, although young, preparing as an asylum, to which he might retire from the wind and the wave. I was well pleased at having seen the rural establishment where this man was planning out beforehand repose and happiness for his old age. I have always loved to get acquainted with the fireside, the domestic circumstances, of those with whom I have had necessary intercourse in this world. These things are a part of themselves, and form a second external physiognomy that supplies a key to their character and their destiny.

The greater part of our seamen belong also to these villages. Mild, pious, gay, and laborious men they are, managing the wind, the tempest, and the wave, with the same calm and silent regularity that our husbandmen of Saint-Point handle the harrow or the plough; they are ploughmen of the sea, peaceful and musical like the men of our valleys, when they follow, by the rays of the morning sun, their long smoking furrows on the flanks of their hills!

July 13.—Having awoke early this morning, I heard the voices of the sailors on deck, mingled with the crowing of the cock, and bleating of the goat and sheep. Some women's and children's voices completed the illusion—I might have imagined myself lying in the wooden chamber of a peasant's cottage, on the banks of the lake of Zurich, or of Solerne. I went on deck; it was some of our seamen's children whom their mothers had brought on board. The fathers were making them sit on the ship's guns, or holding them upright on the bulwarks, or laying them down in the boat, or rocking them in the hammocks, with that tenderness in their accent, and those tears in their eyes, which mothers or nurses might have displayed. Brave fellows! having hearts of flint against danger, but women's hearts for those they love—tough or mild, like the element to which they are so familiarised. Let him be shepherd or sailor, the man who has a family, has a heart kneaded, so to speak, with kindly and praiseworthy sentiments. The family-spirit is the second soul of humanity; modern legislators have too much neglected it; they think only of nations and of individuals; they omit to consider families, the only source of a pure and a powerful population, the sanctuary of traditions and of morals, in which all the social virtues are retempered. Legislation, even after the diffusion of Christianity, has been barbarous in this respect; instead of inviting men to indulge the family-spirit, it repulses them from such indulgence! It interdicts one-half of mankind from wife and child, from the ownership of a fireside and a field; these blessings were due from it to every one, so soon as he reached the age of manhood; it was only called upon to deny them to culprits. A family is a miniature of society at large; but it is a society in which the laws are natural, because they are the expression of feelings. Excommunication from the privilege of family might have constituted the greatest reprobation, the last withering effect of the law; it would have been the only capital punishment under a Christian and humane legislation: the sanguinary penalty of death would have been abolished ages ago.

July, still at anchor, the wind being contrary.—A mile to the westward, along the coast, the mountains are shattered as if by powerful hammering; enormous fragments have fallen here and there at the feet of the

mountains, or on the blue and greenish waves of the sea that bathes them. The sea breaks there incessantly, and from the wave, which strikes with a dull alternating sound against the rocks, there are darted forth, as it were, tongues of white foam, that lick the salt sea-shore. These heaped-up portions of mountains, for they are too large to be called rocks, have been heaved and piled in such confusion over one another, that they form an innumerable quantity of narrow creeks, profound vaults, sonorous grottoes, and sombre caverns, whose pathways, windings, and exits, are known only to the children of two or three fishers' cottages in the neighbourhood. One of these caverns, into which you penetrate by the depressed arch of a natural bridge, covered with an enormous block of granite, gives access to the sea, and then opens out upon a narrow and obscure valley, which the sea fills entirely with its waves, here always limpid and smooth, like the sky in a lovely night. This is a little sheltered bay known to the fishermen, where, whilst the billows are raging and foaming without, and shaking the flanks of the coast with their shock, the smallest boats can lie under shelter; you can scarcely perceive in it that slight bubbling of a spring that falls in a sheet of water. The sea preserved there that beautiful colour of a greenish mulberry yellow, which painters of marine scenery find so perceptible to the eye, but which they can never exactly transfer to canvass, for the eye sees more than the hand can imitate.

On the two flanks of this marine valley, there ascend out of sight two walls of rocks almost perpendicular, sombre, and of a uniform colour, resembling that of iron dross some time after it has fallen from the furnace. No plant, no moss, can find there even a slit to suspend itself by and take root, to cause to float there those garlands of *lilanes* and those flowers which one sees so often undulating on the walls of the rocks of Savoy, at heights where God alone can inhale them; naked, steep, dark, repulsive to the eye, these rocks are only there to defend from the sea air the hills of vines and olives that vegetate under its shelter; images of those men that rule over an epoch or a nation, exposed to all the injuries of time and tempest, in order to protect more feeble and more happy men. At the bottom of the little bay, the sea widens a little, serpentine, takes a clearer tint in proportion as it discovers more sky, and terminates at length in a fine sheet of water, reposing on a bed of small violet shells, bruised and compact like sand. If you land from the boat that has carried you thus far, you find to the left, in the hollow of a ravine, a cool and pure spring of fresh water; then, on turning to the right, a stony goat walk, rough and precipitous, shaded by wild fig-trees, and by medlars, which leads down from the cultivated grounds to this solitude of the waters. Few spots have so much struck me, or allured me so powerfully in my journeyings. It is that perfect blending of strength and gracefulness which constitutes complete beauty in the harmony of the elements, as well as in animated or intellectual nature. It is that mysterious wedlock of the land and the sea, surprised, so to speak, in their most intimate and most curtailed union. It is that image of calm and most inaccessible solitude, side by side with that stormy and tumultuous theatre of the tempests, and close upon the roar of its billows. It is one of those numberless masterpieces of the creation which God has scattered everywhere, as if to sport with contrasts, but which it pleases him most often to hide under the unattainable summit of a precipitous mountain, in the depth of an inaccessible ravine, or on the most unapproachable reefs of the ocean, like jewels of nature which she only discovers, and that rarely, to simple men, to shepherds, to fishermen, to travellers, to poets, or to the pious contemplation of anchorites.

July 14.—At ten o'clock, a westerly breeze springing up; at three o'clock, up anchor; we soon had nothing but sea and sky for our horizon; sea sparkling; soft and cadenced movement of the brig; murmuring of the wave as regular as the respiration of the human breast. This regular alternation of the wave of the wind in the

sail, recurs in all the movements and in all the sound of nature: may it not be that she also respires? Yet undoubtedly; she breathes, she lives, she thinks, she suffers and enjoys, she feels, she adores her divine Author! He did not make death: life is the symbol of all his works!

July 15, out at sea, eight o'clock at night.—We have seen, gradually sinking, the last peaks of the great mountains on the coasts of France and Italy, till the blue and sombre line of the sea, at the horizon, submerged the whole. The eye, at this moment of the known horizon's disappearance, runs over the floating desert of space that surrounds it, like some unfortunate who has lost successively every object of his affection and habitudes, and searches in vain for an object on which his heart may repose.

The sky becomes the grand and only scene of contemplation; then the view falls down again upon that imperceptible point, drowned, as it were, in space, that narrow vessel now forming the entire universe of those whom it conveys.

The boatswain is at the helm; his manly and impassible countenance, his firm and vigilant regard, now fixed on the compass in the binnacle, and now on the ship's head, to trace, through the fore-rigging, his course through the waters; his right hand grasping the tiller, and by its movement impressing his will on the immense mass of the vessel. Every thing in his appearance indicates the importance of his charge—the fate of the vessel and the lives of thirty persons revolving in his ample forehead, and giving energy to his robust arm.

In the fore part of the deck, the sailors are to be seen in groups, seated, standing, or reclining on the planks of shining fir, or on the cables rolled in vast spirals—some mending the old sails with large iron needles, and seeming as earnest on the neatness of their tasks as girls that embroider their marriage veil or the curtain of their virgin bed; others leaning over the bulwarks viewing, without perceiving them, the foaming waves just as we look at the pavement of a road that we have a hundred times travelled, and carelessly giving to the wind the puffs of smoke from their pipes of red clay. One is giving drink to the fowls in their long troughs; another holds out a handful of hay for the goat to nibble, grasping its horns with the other hand; while others again are playing with two beautiful sheep that are roosted in the large boat suspended between the two masts: these poor animals raise their restless heads over the gunwale, and perceiving nothing but the undulating plain whitened with foam, they bleat after the rocks and dry moss of their native mountains.

At the extremity of the vessel—the horizon of this floating world—is seen the sharp prow preceded by its mast, the bowsprit, inclining to the sea: this mast projects from the ship's head, like the horn of some marine monster. The undulations of the sea, which are almost insensible at the centre of gravity, or near the middle of the deck, cause the ship's head to describe slight and gigantic oscillations. Now it seems to direct the path of the vessel towards some star of the firmament, and then it threatens to plunge her into some profound valley of the ocean; for the sea has the appearance of continually rising and descending, to one placed at the stern of a vessel, the masts and length of which multiply the effect of these undulated waves.

As for ourselves, separated by the mainmast from this scene of maritime manners, we are seated on the quarter-deck benches, or walk the deck with the officers, looking at the sun and the waves, as they appear to rise and fall successively.

In the midst of all these manly, austere, and pensive figures, a female child, with her loose hair streaming over her white garments, and her rosy, happy, and smiling face beaming from under a little straw hat of sailor fashion, is playing with the captain's white cat, or with a brood of sea pigeons captured the evening before, which are nestled on a gun-carriage, and for which she is crumbling her little allowance of bread.

Meantime, the captain of the vessel, with telescope in hand, spying in silence, towards the west, the pre-

cise moment when the lower limb of the sun, refracted upwards as it is by one half of the disc, seems to touch the water, and float on it for an instant, before being entirely immersed—raises his voice and exclaims, "Gentlemen, prayers!" All conversation ceases; every game is closed; the seamen throw overboard their still lighted cigar, they doff their Greek red-woollen caps, hold them in their hands, and come and kneel between the two masts. The youngest of them opens the book of prayer, and sings the *Ave maris stella* and the litanies, with a tender, plaintive, and grave melody, that seems to have been inspired by thoughts of the surrounding element, and by that restless melancholy of the last hours of day, when all the recollections of the land, the cottage, the fireside, ascend from the heart to the meditations of those simple men. The shades of evening are about to descend once more upon the waters, and to overshadow, in their dangerous obscurity, the path of the mariners and the lives of so many beings, who have now no other beacon-light but Providence, no other asylum but in that invisible hand which sustains them on the waters. If prayer was not born with man himself, it must have been here that it was invented, by men left alone with their thoughts and their feebleness, in presence of that abyss of the firmament, where their view is lost in confusion, and of that abyss of the sea from which only a frail plank divides them; in hearing of that roar of the ocean, when it grows, hisses, howls, and bellows, like the voices of a thousand savage beasts; amid those blasts of the tempest that make the cordage utter so shrill a sound; at the approaches of night which magnifies every danger, and multiplies every terror. But prayer was never invented; it was born out of the first sigh, the first joy, the first grief of the human heart, or rather man was only born for prayer; to glorify God, or to implore him, this was his only mission here below. Every thing else perishes before him or with him; but the cry of glory, of admiration, or of love, which he raises up to God, though it passes away along the earth, does not perish; it reascends, it resounds from age to age, in the ear of God, as the echo of His own voice, as a reflection of His magnificence; it is the only thing that is completely divine in man, and which he can exhale with joy and with pride; for that pride is a homage to Him who alone can have it—to the infinite Being.

Scarcely had we each revolved, in silence, these thoughts, or others similar to them, when a cry arose from Julia, who was on the side of the vessel facing the eastward. A fire on the sea! A ship on fire! We rushed to see this distant conflagration on the waters.

In fact, a large mass of fire appeared floating to the eastward on the extremity of the horizon of the sea; then, rising and rounding itself in a few minutes, we recognised the full moon inflamed by the vapour of the east wind, and issuing slowly out of the waves, like a disc of red-hot iron which the smith draws with his tongs from the furnace, and which he suspends over the water where he is about to quench it. On the opposite side of the heavens, the disc of the sun, which had just set, had left in the west the semblance of a golden sandbank, like to the shore of some unknown country. Our view was continually wavering from one to the other of these magnificent displays of the heavens. Gradually, the lustre of this double twilight was extinguished, thousands of stars broke forth above our heads, as if to trace out the route to our masts as they passed from one to another; the first watch for the night was set, the deck was cleared of whatever might hinder the working of the ship, and the seamen came, one after another, and said to the captain, "May God be with us!"

I continued for some time walking the deck in silence, when I went below, giving thanks to God in my heart, for having permitted me to see again that unknown aspect of his nature. My God! my God!—to see thy workmanship under all its aspects, to admire thy magnificence on the mountains and on the seas, to admire and bless that holy name of thine which no language can express!—this is the whole of life! Multiply thou

our life, in order to multiply love and admiration in our hearts! Then do thou turn the page, and cause us to read in another world the endless wonders of the book of thy greatness and goodness!

July 16, in the open sea.—We have had all night and all day, a beautiful though high sea. In the evening the wind freshened, the waves began to form and to roll heavily against the brig's quarters; there was a bright moon which gave out lengthened torrents of white and undulating light in the large liquid valleys, hollowed out between the great waves. These floating illuminations from the moon resemble streams of running water, or cascades of melted snow, in the bed of the green valleys of the Jura mountains or of Switzerland. The vessel descends and remounts heavily each of these profound ravines. For the first time, during this voyage, we hear the complainings, the groanings of the timber; the crushed flanks of the brig, at the shock of every fresh wave, utter a sound which can only be compared to the last bellowsings of a bull struck by the hatchet, and lying on his side in the convulsions of mortal agony. This sound mingling throughout the night with the roar of thousands of waves, the gigantic boundings of the vessel, the creaking of the masts, the whistling of the squalls, the showers of spray which they throw, and which one hears raining with a hissing noise upon the deck, the heavy and hurried footsteps of the seamen on duty, running to their work, at the few and short but firm words of the officer—all this forms a union of significant and alarming sounds which shake more deeply the human soul, than the roar of cannon on the field of battle. It is one of those scenes which one must have witnessed, in order to know the dark side of a sailor's life, and to measure his own sensibility, moral and physical!

The whole night passes thus without sleep. At day-break the wind falls a little, the wave is no longer crested with foam, every thing announces a fine day; we perceive, through the coloured fogs of the horizon, the long and lofty chains of the mountains of Sardinia. The captain promises us a sea as calm and smooth as a lake, between that island and Sicily. We are running eight, and sometimes nine, knots; at every quarter of an hour, the glittering shores to which the wind is conveying us are sketched forth with more and more clearness; the bays open out, the headlands stretch forward, the white rocks emerge to the surface, the houses and cultivated fields begin to be distinguished on the flanks of the island. At noon, we are close to the entrance of the bay of St Pierre, but at the moment of doubling the reef that closes it, a sudden hurricane from the north bursts upon our sails; our already heavy sea of last night presents a body to the wind, and is heaped up into truly moving mountains; the whole visible surface is but one sheet of foam; the vessel staggers on the ridge of each succeeding wave, then plunges almost perpendicularly into the depths that separate them; in vain we persist in our endeavour to seek an asylum in the bay. At the moment we are rounding the headland to enter it, a furious wind, hissing like a volley of arrows, rushes from every valley, from every creek, and throws the ~~brig~~ on her side; there was scarcely time to ~~claw up~~ the sails; we kept only the courses, or lower sails, with which we hauled to the wind; the captain ran himself to the helm; then the vessel, like a horse curbed by a vigorous hand, and with its bridle held short, seems to curvet over the foam of the bay; the waves graze the bulwarks of the deck, on the side to which the vessel is inclined, and all the larboard side, almost down to the keel, is out of the water. We thus proceed about twenty minutes, in the hope of gaining the small roadstead of the town of St Pierre; we already perceive the vines, and the small white houses, about a cannon-shot distant; but the tempest increases, the wind strikes us with redoubled force; we are obliged to yield, and to wear ship with great danger, under actually the most violent blast of the squall. We succeed, and leave the bay by the same manœuvre that drove us thither; we find ourselves once more at large on a horrible sea. The fatigue of the night

and day made us eagerly desire a place of shelter before the approach of a second night, which every thing induces us to apprehend will be still more tempestuous. The captain determines on braving every thing, even the loss of his masts, in order to find an anchorage on the coast of Sardinia. At some leagues from the point where we were, the bay of Palma promised us the wished-for shelter. After two hours' arduous exertion, we gained our point, and entered, like a sea-fowl borne on its wings, the beautiful bay of Palma. The tempest has not at all subsided; we still hear the incessant roar of the open sea three leagues astern of us; the wind continues to whistle through our rigging; but in this basin, hollowed out among high mountains, it can only dash up puffs of spray that sprinkle and refresh the deck: and, at length, we cast anchor about three cables' lengths from the Sardinian shore, on a bed of marine plants, and in the tranquil and almost unruffled water. What a delightful sensation is that of the mariner, who has escaped from the storm by dint of labour and suffering, when he hears at length the thundering rattle of the chain-cable, as it rushes out to secure him to some hospitable shore. As soon as the anchor has gone, the formerly contracted visages of the seamen stretch out; it is easy to see that their thoughts are also in repose; they go down below, change their wet clothes, and soon reappear on deck in their Sunday's attire, and resume all the peaceful habits of their life on shore. In an idle, gay, and prattling humour, they seat themselves on the bulwarks, or quietly smoke their pipes, viewing with indifference the buildings and landscapes of the land.

July 17.—At anchor in this peaceful roadstead. After a night's delicious sleep, we breakfast on deck under shelter of a sail which serves us for a tent; the scorched, but picturesque, coast of Sardinia, stretches out before us. A boat, armed with two guns, puts off from the island of St Antioch, and appears to stand for us. We soon distinguish her better; she carries seamen and soldiers; she is soon within hail; she interrogates us, and orders us to go ashore; we consult; I decide on accompanying the captain of the brig. We arm ourselves with several muskets and pistols to make resistance, should they be disposed to employ force to detain us. We shoved off in the jolly-boat, and made sail. Nearing the little Sardinian boat that preceded us, we landed on a flat beach at the head of the bay. This beach borders a marshy and uncultivated plain. White sand, large thistles, some tufts of aloes, here and there some clumps of a shrub with a pale grey bark, and a leaf resembling that of the cedar; swarms of wild horses, grazing at liberty on these heaths, which come galloping up to reconnoitre and snuff us, and then start away again neighing, like flocks of ravens; a mile from us, grey and naked mountains, with only a few specks of stunted vegetation on their sides; an African sky above their calcined summits; a vast silence over all these plains; the same aspect of desolation and solitude which is to be seen in all regions that have a bad atmosphere, as in Romagna, in Calabria, or along the Pontine Marshes—such is the scene: seven or eight men of fine physiognomy, with elevated foreheads, bold and savage eyes, half-naked, and half-clothed in rags of uniforms, armed with long carbines, and holding reeds in their other hands to receive our letters, or to present to us what they have to offer—such are the actors. I answered their questions in wretched Neapolitan *patois*; I named to them some of their country with whom I had been on friendly terms in Italy during my youth. These men, from having been insolent and imperious, became polite and obliging. I bought a sheep from them, which they quartered on the shore. We wrote—they took our letters in a slit they had made in the end of a long reed; they struck a light, broke off some branches of the shrubs that cover the coast, lighted a fire, and passed our letters, after soaking them in seawater, through the smoke of this fire, before touching them. They promised to us to fire a musket in the course of the evening, as a signal for us to come ashore again, when our other supplies of vegetables and fresh

water would be ready. Then, taking out of their boat an immense basket of shell-fish (*frutti di mare*), they offered them to us, without consenting to take any payment.

We returned on board. Hours of leisure and of delightful contemplation passed by me on the poop of the vessel at anchor, whilst the tempest still resounds at the extremity of the two headlands that cover us, and whilst we can perceive the spray of the main sea still lashing, to the height of thirty or forty feet, the golden flanks of these headlands.

July 18.—Sailed from the bay of Palma with a smooth, mirror-like sea; a light westerly breeze, scarcely sufficient to dry up the night dew that glistens on the branches cut from the lentisk-tree, the only verdure of those shores that have already become African. On the open sea, a still day, a sweet breeze that carries us six or seven knots an hour; a fine evening; a sparkling night; the sea is also asleep.

July 19.—We awoke at twenty-five leagues' distance from the coast of Africa. I read again the history of St Louis, to recal the circumstances of his death on the coast of Tunis, near the cape of Carthage, which we shall see this evening or to-morrow.

I could not understand in my youth why certain nations inspired me with an innate antipathy, so to speak, whilst others attracted me, and led me back continually to their history by some involuntary allurements. I experienced, in regard to these vain shadows of the past, these dead memoirs of nations, exactly what I experience, with irresistible compulsion, for or against the physiognomies of the individuals with whom I live or have connection. I love or I abhor, in the physical meaning of the word; at first sight, in the twinkling of an eye, I have passed judgment on a man or woman for ever. Reason, reflection, even violence, often tried by me against these first impressions, are of no avail in the matter. When the coin has received its impress from the die, it is in vain for you to turn it over and over in your fingers; it preserves it—so it is with my soul—so it is with my mind. This is the peculiar attribute of beings with whom instinct is prompt, powerful, instantaneous, inflexible. We ask ourselves, what is instinct?—and we recognise it to be supreme reason, but still reason innate, reason not reasoned, reason such as God made, and not such as man renders it. It strikes us like the lightning, without the eye having the trouble to seek it. It illumines every thing with the first jet. Inspiration in all the arts, as well as on the field of battle, is also this same instinct, this guessed reason. Genius also is instinct, and not logic and labour. The more one reflects, the more he must acknowledge that man possesses nothing of great or beautiful that belongs to himself, or that comes from his own power or will; but that whatever there is of sovereignly beautiful, comes immediately from nature and from God. Christianity, which knows every thing, understood this from its first commencement. The early apostles felt in themselves this immediate action of the Deity, and exclaimed from the very first, "Every perfect gift cometh from God."

Let us return to nations. I have never been able to love the Romans; I have never been able to take the slightest interest in Carthage, in spite of her misfortunes and her glory. Hannibal has never appeared to me more than an East India Company's general, carrying on a mercantile campaign, a brilliant and heroic operation of commerce on the plains of Thrasy-mene. That nation, ungrateful like all egotistical nations, rewarded him for it with exile and death! As for his death, it was pathetic; it reconciles me to his triumphs; I have been affected by it ever since my childhood. There has always been to my view, as well as to that of the whole human race, a sublime and heroic harmony between sovereign glory, sovereign genius, and sovereign misfortune. We have, in this, one of those notes of destiny which never fails in its effect, never misses its sad and voluptuous modulation in the human heart! There is not, in fact, any glory sympathized with, nor any virtue completed without

ingratitude, persecution, and death. Christ was the divine example of this truth; and his life, as well as his doctrine, explains that mysterious enigma of the destiny of great men by the destiny of the Divine Man!

I discovered it afterwards; the secret of my sympathies or antipathies for the memory of certain nations, is in the very nature of the institutions and actions of those nations. With regard to nations like the Phœnicians, Tyre, Sidon, Carthage—commercial societies exploring the world for their profit, and measuring the greatness of their enterprises only by the material and actual utility of the result—I am like Dante; I look, and I pass on.

"Non ragionar di lor, ma guarda e passa!"

[Not speculating concerning them, I look and proceed.]

Let us speak no more of them. They laboured only for the present; succeeding ages have no call to occupy themselves about them. *Receperunt mercedem.* [They have received their reward.]

But those who, little mindful of the present, which they feel escaping from their grasp, have, from a sublime instinct of immortality, an insatiable longing after the future, carried the national thought beyond the present, and raised human sentiment above mere ease, riches, and material utility; those who have expended generations and centuries to leave on their route a fine and eternal track of their passage; those generous and disinterested nations who have stirred up all the great and weighty ideas of the human mind, in order to construct from them monuments of wisdom and of legislation, theogonies, arts, and systems; those nations who have stirred up, too, such masses of marble or granite, in order to construct from them obelisks or pyramids, as a sublime defiance hurled by them against time, a mute language, with which they will for ever speak to great and generous souls; those poet-nations, like the Egyptians, the Jews, the Hindoos, the Greeks, who have idealised politics, and given predominance in their national existence to the divine principle—the soul, over the human principle—the useful; those nations I love, I venerate, I search out and adore their traces, their recollections, their works, whether written, built, or sculptured; I live with their life, I assist as a moved and partial spectator at the touching or heroic drama of their destiny, and I cross willingly the seas, to go and muse for some days over their dust, and to pay to their memory the homage of reminiscence from the future. Such nations have well deserved of mankind, for they have elevated their thoughts above this globe of dirt, beyond this fugitive existence. They felt themselves formed for a loftier and more ample destiny; and unable they were to give themselves that immortal life which is the day-dream of every great and noble heart, they said to their works—Immortalise us, exist for us, speak of us to those who shall traverse the desert, or who shall pass over the billows of the Ionian Sea, before Cape Sigeum, or before the promontory of Sunium, where Plato sang the strains of a wisdom which will still be the wisdom of futurity.

Such were my thoughts, while listening to the prow on which I was seated, as it cleaved the waves of the African Sea, and looking every minute athwart the rosy vapours of the horizon, to see if I could not perceive the Cape of Carthage.

The breeze fell, the day passed away in gazing vainly from afar on the foggy coast of Africa. In the evening a strong wind arose; the vessel, banded from one side to another, crushed down under the force of the sails, that resemble the sea-bird's wings shattered by the fatal lead, shook her sides with that terrible roaring that is heard from a tumbling edifice. I spent the night on deck, with my arm passed round a cable. From the whitish clouds that advance, like some lofty mountain, towards the deep bay of Tunis, flashes of lightning are gleaming, and distant peals of thunder are heard. Africa appears to me as I have always represented her to myself; her flanks torn by the fires of heaven, and her calcined summits hidden under the clouds. In pro-

portion as we approach the coast, and as first the Cape of Bysserte, then that of Carthage, issue from obscurity, and seem advancing to meet us, all the great images, all the fabulous or heroic names which have resounded on this shore, also spring forth from my memory, and recall to me the poetical or historical dramas of which these places were successively the theatre. Virgil, like all the poets that wish to surpass truth, history, and nature, has much rather injured than embellished the image of Dido. The Dido of history, widow of Sicheus, and faithful to the manes of her former spouse, causes her funeral pile to be prepared on the promontory of Carthage, and ascends it, the sublime and voluntary victim of a pure love, and of a faithfulness even unto death! This is somewhat finer, holier, and more pathetic than the cold gallantries which the Roman poet allows her with her ridiculous and pious *Æneas*, and her amorous despair, in which the reader cannot sympathise.

But the *Anna soror*, and the magnificent farewell, and the immortal imprecation that follow, will ever plead a pardon for Virgil.

The historical aspect of Carthage is still more poetical than the poetry of Virgil. The heavenly death and the funeral of St Louis—the blind Belisarius—Marius expiating among wild beasts on the ruins of Carthage, himself a wild beast—the shrieks of Rome—the lamentable day on which, like the scorpion surrounded by fire that pierces itself with its envenomed dart, Carthage, surrounded by Scipio and Massinissa, herself sets fire to her edifices and her riches—the wife of Asdrubal, shut up with her children in the temple of Jupiter, reproaching her husband for not having known how to die, and kindling herself the torch which is to consume her and her children, and all that remains of her native country, in order to leave only ashes to the Romans!—Cato of Utica, the two Scipios, Hannibal—all these great names still rear themselves erect on the forsaken promontory, like columns standing in front of a temple overturned. The eye sees only a naked headland rising above a deserted sea, a few reservoirs, empty, or filled with their own rubbish, a few aqueducts in ruins, a few moles, ravaged by the billows and covered by the water; a barbarian town close by, where those very names are unknown, like men that live too great an age, and become strangers in their own land! But the past is sufficient for a place in which it dazzles with such a lustre of recollections. How know I even if I do not love it better alone, isolated in the midst of its ruins, than profaned and polluted by the bustle and the crowd of new generations? It is with ruins as with tombs: amidst the tumult of a great city, and the mire of our streets, they afflict and sadden the view; they are a stain on all that buzzing and agitated scene of life; but amidst solitude on the shores of the sea, on a deserted cape, on a wild sandy shore, those stones, become yellow by the lapse of ages, and shattered by the thunderbolt, cause us to reflect, to think, to muse, or to weep.

Solitude and death, solitude and the past, which is the death of things, are necessarily allied in human thought: their accord is a mysterious harmony. I prefer the naked promontory of Carthage, the melancholy cape of Sumbon, the naked and infested beach of Pastum, for realising the scenes of ages gone by, to the temples, the arches, the Coliseums of departed Rome, trodden under foot in living Rome, with all the indifference of habit, or the profanation of forgetfulness.

July 20.—At ten o'clock, the wind gets milder; we can ascend to the deck; and running seven knots an hour, we soon find ourselves abreast of the detached island of Pantelleria, the ancient island of Calypso, still delicious from its African vegetation, and the coolness of its valleys and its waters. It was to this spot that the emperors in succession exiled persons condemned for political offences.

It appears to us only a black cone rising from the sea, and clad, to two-thirds from its summit, with a white fog given upon it by the night wind. No vessel can anchor near it; it has only harbours for the small boats which convey to it the exiles from Naples and from Sicily,

who languish for ten years, expiating some premature dreams of liberty.

Unhappy the men who, in any department of thought, are ahead of their age! The age crushes them. This is our own fate, as impartial, political, and rational Frenchmen. France is still a century and a half behind our ideas. She wishes, in every thing, men and ideas of sect and party; what signify to her patriotism and reason? It is hatred, rancour, and alternate persecution, that in her ignorance she requires! She will have all these, until, wounded by the deadly weapons which she is so determined to wield, she either falls, her own victim, or casts those weapons far from her, to turn to the only hope of all political amelioration—God, his law, and reason, his law innate.

July 21.—On my awaking, the sea, after a stormy night, appears to sport with the remains of yesterday's wind; the foam covers it still, like the half-dry flakes of froth that stain the flanks of the horse when fatigued by a long course, or like those which his bit shakes forth when he stoops and lifts his head, impatient for a new career. The waves run quick and irregularly, but are light, shallow, and transparent; this sea resembles a field of fine oats undulating to the breezes of a morning in spring, after a night of rain. We see the islands of Gazzo and Malta rising, at the distance of five or six leagues, under the fogs of the horizon.

July 22: arrival at Malta.—As we approach Malta, the low coast elevates itself and assumes a distinct form; but its aspect is sad and sterile: we soon perceive the fortifications and the gulfs formed by the quays of the harbours. A swarm of little boats, each manned by two rowers, put off from these gulfs, and pull rapidly to our vessel; the sea is heavy, and the wave plunges them sometimes into the deep furrow that we are tracing in the water; they seem on the point of being swallowed up; the wave raises them again, they run in our wake, they skim gaily past our quarters; they throw us small ropes to tow us into the anchorage.

The pilots announce to us a quarantine of ten days, and conduct us to our destined port under the lofty fortifications of the city of Valetta. The French consul, M. Miège, informs the governor, Sir Frederick Ponsonby, of our arrival; he assembles the council of health, and reduces our quarantine to three days.

We obtain the indulgence of an evening excursion in a boat along the canals that lengthen out the port of quarantine. It is Sunday. The burning sun of the day has set at the bottom of a narrow and peaceful creek of the gulf that is behind our ship's head; the sea is there smooth and brilliant, of a light leaden colour, exactly resembling sheet-iron newly tinned. The heaven above is of an orange tint slightly inclining to rose. This colour fades, in proportion as the sky approaches the zenith, retiring from the west; to the eastward, it is of a pale grey blue, and no longer recalls the beautiful azure of the bay of Naples—nor even the dark profound of the firmament over the Alps of Savoy. The colour of the African sky partakes of the burning atmosphere, and of the harsh severity of that continent; the reverberation of heat from these naked mountains strikes the firmament with dryness and warmth, and the inflamed dust of these deserts of arid sand seems to mingle with the air that envelops them, and to tarnish the vault of heaven. Our rowers convey us slowly to some toises from the shore. The low and smooth sandy beach terminating some inches above the sea, is covered for half a mile with a range of houses that touch one another, and seem to have approached as near as possible to the water, to enjoy its coolness and listen to its murmuring. Here is one of those houses and one of those scenes that we see repeated on every threshold, terrace, and balcony. By multiplying this scene and this view over five or six hundred similar houses, one will have an exact memorial of this landscape, so unique to a European that has not seen Seville, nor Cordova, nor Granada; it is a memorial that must be engraven in all its entrenchment, and with all its details of manners, in order to recall it even once to memory, amid the dull and sombre uniformity of our towns of the west. These

memorials, recovered in the memory, during our days and months of snow, fog, and rain, are like a gleam of serene sky amidst a long tempest. A little sun in the eye, a little love in the heart, a ray of faith or of truth in the soul—'tis all the same thing—I cannot live without these three consolations of our terrestrial exile. My eyes are eastern, my soul is love, and my mind is of that class that carry within them an instinct of light, an unreasoned evidence which is not matter of proof, but which never deceived and ever consoles! Here, then, is the landscape:—

A light, golden, sweet and serene, like that which beams from the eyes and features of a young maiden, before love has engraven one wrinkle on her forehead, or cast one shade on her eyes. This light diffused equally over the sea, the earth, and the heavens, strikes the white and yellow stones of the houses, and causes all the designs of the cornices, corners of the angles, balustrades of the terraces, and carved work of the balconies, to be articulated fully and clearly on the blue horizon, without that aerial tremulousness, that uncertain and vapoury undulation, out of which our western atmosphere has derived a beauty for its arts, being unable to correct this vice of its climate. This quality of the air, this white, yellow, golden colour of the stone, this vigorousness of the contours, imparts to the meanest edifice of the south a firmness and a neatness which revive and gladden the sight. Every house has the air not of having been built, stone on stone, with sand and mortar, but of having been sculptured living and erect, out of the bright rock, and of being planted on the earth, like a block sprung out of its bosom, and as durable as the soil itself. Two large and elegant pilasters rise from the two angles of the façade; they ascend only to the height of a story and a half; there an elegant cornice, sculptured out of the shining stone, crowns them, and itself serves as a base to a rich and massive balustrade, which extends the whole length of the top, and replaces those flat, irregular, pointed, and odd-looking roofs, which disgrace all architecture, which break every line harmonising with the horizon in those eccentric assemblages of houses of ours, which we call cities, in Germany, England, and France. Between these two large pilasters, which project several inches from the façade, two openings only are designed by the architect, a door and two windows. The door, which is lofty, wide, and arched, has not its threshold on the street; it opens on an exterior flight of steps, which encroach seven or eight feet on the quay. This stair, surrounded by a balustrade of sculptured stone, serves for an exterior hall, as well as for an entrance to the house. Let us describe one of these flights of steps—it will answer for them all. One or two men, in white garments, with dark visages, and African eyes, having long pipes in their hands, are carelessly lounging on a couch of reeds, at the side of the door: in front of them, leaning gracefully on the balustrade, three young women, in different attitudes, are viewing in silence our boat as it passes, or smiling among themselves at our foreign aspect. A black gown reaching only half way down the leg, a white corset with wide, folded, and flowing sleeves, a head-dress of black hair, and over the head and shoulders a half mantle of black silk like the gown, covering half the face, one shoulder, and the arm that holds the mantle: this mantle of light stuff, swelled out with the breeze, assumes the figure of a small boat's sail, and, through its capricious folds, now conceals, and now unveils, the mysterious countenance that it envelops, and which seems to escape from it at pleasure. Some are raising their heads gracefully to chat with other young girls who are bending over the upper balcony, and throwing at them pomegranates and oranges: others are speaking to young men with long moustaches, dark, and bushy hair, dressed in short white pantaloons, and red belts. Seated on the steps, two young abbés in black, with black ties, are conversing familiarly, and playing with two fans, while, at the foot of the last mendicant monk, with naked feet, me, bald-white, and open his body

enveloped in the heavy folds of his brown cloak, is reclining like a statue of mendicity on the threshold of the rich and happy man, and viewing with an eye of vacancy and indifference this spectacle of happiness, ease, and enjoyment. On the upper story are seen on a large balcony, supported by beautiful cariatides,* and surmounted by an Indian veranda adorned with curtains and fringes, a family of English, those happy and firm-minded conquerors of modern Malta. There, some Moorish nurses, with sparkling eyes, and dark leaden complexions, are holding in their arms these beautiful children of Britain, whose flaxen curly tresses, and white and rosy skin, resist the sun of Calcutta, as well as that of Malta and Corfu. On seeing these children under the black mantle and burning look of these half-African women, one might imagine them beautiful white lambs suspended at the breasts of tigresses of the desert. On the terrace, there is another scene; the English and Maltese share it together. On one side, you see some young maidens of the island holding the guitar under the arm, and warbling a few notes of an old national air, wild as the climate; on the other, a lovely young Englishwoman, leaning in a melancholy mood on her elbow, contemplating with indifference the scene of life which is passing before her eyes, and turning over the pages of the immortal poets of her country.

Add to this *coup d'œil* the Arab horses, ridden by English officers, and running, with their tails streaming, along the sands of the quay—the Maltese carriages, a kind of sedan-chairs on two wheels, drawn by a single Barbary horse, which the conductor follows on foot at the gallop, having round his middle a red belt with long fringes, and his forehead covered with the *resille*, or the red cap of the Spanish muleteer, hanging over as far down as the belt—the savage cries of the naked children as they plunge into the sea, and swim alongside our boat—the songs of the Greek or Sicilian mariners at anchor in the neighbouring harbour, and responding in chorus from one ship's deck to another—the monotonous and skipping notes of the guitar, forming, as it were, a sweet humming bass of the evening atmosphere to all these sharper sounds—and you will have some idea of a quay at Empsida, on a Sunday evening.

July 21.—Admitted to free *pratique* in the harbour of the city of Valetta; the Governor, Sir Frederick Ponsonby, having returned from his country residence to welcome us, received us at the Palace of the Grand Master, at two o'clock. What a fine specimen of an honest Englishman—probity is the physiognomy of such men's faces—elevation, gravity, and nobleness, form the expression of the true English nobleman. We admired the palace; its magnificent and dignified simplicity; the beauty in its mass, and the absence of unmeaning decorations both within and without; the vast halls, long galleries, severe paintings; the wide, smooth, and sonorous staircase; halls of arms 200 feet in length, containing the armour, at every period of history, of the order of St John of Jerusalem; a library of 40,000 volumes, in which we were received by the director, the Abbé Bollanti, a young Maltese ecclesiastic, quite resembling the Roman abbot of the old school, with a mild, penetrating eye, a mouth smiling and meditative, a pale and expressive forehead, his language elegant and modulated, and his politeness simple, natural, and delicate. We conversed for a long while, for this is just the sort of man most suitable for a long, full, and powerful confabulation. There is in him, as in all those distinguished clergymen whom I have met with in Italy, an air of sadness, indifference, and submissiveness, that speaks of the noble and dignified resignation of departed power. Educated amid the ruins, on the very ruins, of a fallen monument, they have contracted from them a habitual melancholy and carelessness about the present. "How," I said to him, "can a man like you tolerate the intellectual exile, and the seclusion in which you live in this deserted palace, and

* [Figures, generally human, so called from the natives of Caria having been degraded to appear, as slaves, in this architectural attitude.]

amidst the dust of these books?" "It is true," he replied, "I live alone, and I live sorrowful; the horizon of this island is indeed limited; the fame which I might make here by my writings would not resound very far, and even that which other men make elsewhere scarcely penetrates hither; but my soul perceives, beyond this narrow spot, a horizon more free and vast, whither my thoughts love to transport themselves. We have a beautiful sky over our heads, an atmosphere of grateful warmth around us, a blue and spacious sea before our view—this suffices for the life of the senses; as to the life of the mind, *that* is nowhere more intense than in the bosom of silence and of solitude. This life thus remounts directly to the source from whence it emanates, to God, without wandering astray, and becoming impaired by the contact of earthly things, and by the cares of the world. When St Paul, on his way to convey the fruitful word of Christianity to the nations, was cast away at Malta, and staid there three months in order to sow in that island the grain of mustard-seed, he did not complain of his shipwreck and exile, which were availing to that island in an accelerated acquaintance with the word, and with divine morality; ought I to complain—I who was born on those arid rocks—if the Lord confines me here to preserve his Christian truth, in hearts where so many truths are on the eve of extinction! This kind of life has its poetry, too," he added; "when I am at length freed from my classifications and catalogues, perhaps I also shall indite that poesy of solitude and prayer!" I left him with regret, and with an earnest wish of again meeting him.

The church of St John, the cathedral of the island, has quite the character, quite the solemnity of appearance, which one would expect from such a monument in such a place—grandeur, nobleness, richness. The keys of Rhodes, carried off by the knights after their defeat, are suspended at the two sides of the altar, a symbol of eternal regrets, or of hopes for ever frustrated. The dome is superb—the whole of it painted by the Calabrese—a work worthy of modern Rome in her finest era of painting.

One picture struck me remarkably in the chapel of the Election; it is by Michael Angelo, of Caravaggio, whom the knights of that time had invited to the island to paint the dome of St John. He undertook the task, but the restlessness and irritability of his wild disposition prevailed; he became afraid of a tedious amount of labour, and departed. He left at Malta his masterpiece, the Decollation of St John the Baptist. If our modern artists, who hunt for the romantic in a system, instead of finding it in nature, were to view this magnificent painting, they would find their pretended invention invented before them. Here is the fruit as it grows on the tree, and not the artificial fruit moulded in wax, and painted in false colours; picturesqueness of attitude, energy of design, profundity of sentiment, truth and dignity united; vigour of contrast, but still unity and harmony, horror and beauty side by side—such is this painting. It is one of the finest I have seen in my whole life. It is the painting which the artists of the present school are in search of. Here it is—it is found! Let them search for it no more. Thus there is nothing new in nature, or in the arts. All that man is now doing has been done—whatever he says has been said—whatever he dreams has been dreamed. Every age is a plagiarist from another age; for all of us, such as we are, perishable and fugitive artists or thinkers, copy in different ways a model, immutable and eternal, Nature—that single though diversified thought of the Creator!

July 25.—From the summit of the observatory which commands the Palace of the Grand Master, there is a panoramic view of the towns, harbours, and country scenery of Malta; the country naked, formless, colourless, and arid, like the desert; the town resembling the shell of a turtle aground upon the rock; one would say it had been carved out of one single block of the native rock; scenes there are also of the terraced roofs towards the approach of night, and of women seated on those terraces. Thus did David see Bethsheba. Nothing

can be more graceful and seductive than these figures, white or dark, like so many shadows, thus appearing by the rays of the moon, on the roofs of this multitude of houses. It is only there, or at church, or on their balconies, that the women are to be seen; their whole language is in their eyes; their whole love is a long mystery which words do not impair—a long drama is thus unravelled and unravelled without discourse. This silence, these appearances at certain hours, those meetings in the same places, those distant intimacies, those mute expressions, are perhaps the first and most divine language of love, that sentiment superior to words, which, like music, expresses in a language of signs what no direct language can express.

Those views, those thoughts, bring back youth to the soul; they cause us to feel the only exhaustless charm which God has spread over the earth, and to regret that the hours of life should be so rapid and so motified. Two sentiments alone would suffice for man, lived he the age of rocks—the contemplation of God, and love. Love and religion are the two ideas, or rather the one idea, of the nations of the south—so they seek for nothing else, they have enough. We pity them, whereas we ought to envy them! What is there in common between our factitious passions, between the tumultuous agitation of our vain thoughts, and those two sole true ideas that occupy the life of these children of the sun, religion and love—the one enchanting the present, the other enchanting the future? Thus, I have ever been struck, in spite of the prejudices to the contrary, with the profound and rarely troubled calm of the physiognomies of the south, and with that mass of repose, serenity, and happiness, diffused over the manners and countenances of that silent crowd, who breathe, live, love, and sing, before your eyes—song, that overflowing of happiness and of sensations in a soul too full! They sing at Rome, at Naples, at Genoa, at Malta, in Sicily, in Greece, in Ionia, on the shore, on the waves, on the roofs; no light is heard but the slow recitation of the fisherman, the mariner, the shepherd, or the tinkling murmur of the guitar during the serene nights. This is happiness, whatever may be said of it! They are slaves, say you? What do they know of it?—slavery or liberty!—conventional happiness or unhappiness! Happiness and unhappiness are closer to us. What matters it to these peaceful groups who are inhaling the sea breeze, or stretched out under the grateful rays of the sun of Sicily, Malta, or the Bosphorus, whether the law be made to them by a priest, a pacha, or a parliament? Does that change any thing of their relations with nature, the only ones that engage them? No, undoubtedly; every society, whether free or absolute, may be analysed always into servitudes more or less felt. We are slaves to the variable and capricious laws that we form for ourselves; they again are so to the immutable law of that control which God exerts upon them—all this, as to happiness or unhappiness, returns to the same point; but as to human dignity, and the progress of intelligence and morality among mankind—no, no! We must, however, examine before pronouncing this *no*. Take at random a hundred men among these slave nations, and a hundred men among our nations calling themselves free, and cast the balance. Among which of them will be found most or least morality and virtue? I know well, but I shudder to tell it. If any one should read this after me, he might suspect me of partiality to despotism, or contempt towards liberty. He would be mistaken. I love liberty as an effort difficult and ennobling for humanity, as I love virtue for its merits and for its reward; but the question is about happiness, and I examine the matter philosophically, and I say like Montaigne, "What do I know?" The fact is, that our political questions, so all-important in our lyceums, our coffee-rooms, and our clubs, are very small affairs, when seen from a distance, in the midst of the ocean, from the summit of the Alps, or on the heights of philosophical or religious contemplation. Those questions only interest a few individuals that have their daily food and hours of leisure—the great mass have no concern but with na-

ture; a good, beautiful, and divine religion, is the politics for the use of the multitude. This principle of life is wanting in our system—hence it is that we stumble, fall, and fall again; we do not walk; the breath of life is wanting to us; we create formations, and the soul enters not therein. Oh, God! restore us your breath, or we perish.

Malta, July 28, 29, and 30.—Detained at Malta by Julia's indisposition. She is recovering, and we resolve on going to Smyrna, touching at Athens. There I shall establish my wife and child; and I shall go alone across Asia Minor, and visit the other regions of the east. We got under way, and were about to leave the harbour, when a sail arrived from the Archipelago, which announced the capture of several vessels by the Greek pirates, and the massacre of the crews. M. Miège, the French Consul, advised us to wait a few days; Captain Lyons, of the British frigate *Madagascar*, offered to escort our brig as far as Napoli in the Morea, and even to take us in tow if the brig's rate of sailing should be inferior to that of the frigate. He accompanied this offer with such obliging courtesies as enhanced its value: we accepted, and sailed on Wednesday, the 1st of August, at eight o'clock of the morning. We were scarcely at sea, when the captain, whose vessel shot rapidly ahead of ours, hove to and waited for us. He threw overboard a cable with a hawser fast to it; we picked up the same, and followed, like a led courser, the floating mass, that clove the waters without seeming to feel our weight.

I was not acquainted with Captain Lyons, who had commanded for six years one of the ships of the British station in the Levant; I was unknown to him, even by name; I had not met him in any person's house at Malta, because he was then in quarantine; and, notwithstanding, here was an officer of another nation—of a nation often rival and hostile, who, on the first signal from us, consented to be delayed two or three days on his passage, to expose his vessel and crew to a manœuvre often very perilous (towing), to hear perhaps his men murmuring around him about such condescension to an unknown Frenchman; and all this through one sole feeling of noble-mindedness and sympathy for the anxieties of a wife and the sufferings of a child. Here one sees the genuine English officer in all his personal generousities, and man in all the dignity of his character and mission. I shall never forget either the circumstance or the individual. This officer, who came sometimes on board of us to ascertain our state of comfort, and to repeat to us assurances of the pleasure he felt in protecting us, appeared to me one of the most loyal and open characters whom I ever met with. Nothing about him reminded me of that pretended rudeness of a sailor; but the firmness of a man accustomed to struggle with the most terrible of the elements, was admirably blended, in his still fine youthful countenance, with mildness of temper, elevation of thought, and gracefulness of disposition.

Though we arrived strangers at Malta, we did not behold without regret its white walls sinking in the distance under the waters. Those houses, which we looked upon with indifference a few days before, had now a physiognomy and a language for us. We were now acquainted with those who inhabited them, and the looks of many a well-wisher were pursuing, from the height of their terraces, the distant sails of our two vessels.

The English are a great moral and political people, but, in general, they are not a sensible people. Concentrated in the sweet and sacred privacy of the family fireside, when they do go out from it, it is not pleasure, it is not the need of communicating their souls, or of diffusing their sympathies; it is custom, it is vanity, that leads them forth. Vanity is the soul of all English society. It is this which constructs that form of society, so measured, and full of etiquette; it is this which created those classifications of ranks, which, by which alone men are there, which have made a complete abstraction, to consider only the name, the dress,

the social form. Are they different in their colonies? I should believe so, after what we experienced at Malta. Scarcely had we arrived there when we received, from all that compose that beautiful colony, the most cordial and disinterested marks of interest and good will. Our residence there was but one brilliant and continued scene of hospitality. Sir Frederick Ponsonby, and Lady Emily Ponsonby, his wife, a couple formed to represent worthily every where, the one the virtuous and noble simplicity of the great English nobles, and the other the sweet and graceful modesty of the ladies of high rank in her country. The family of Sir Frederick Hankey, Mr and Mrs Nugent, Mr Greig, Mr Freyre, formerly ambassador to Spain, welcomed us less as travellers than as friends. We saw them for eight days—we shall, perhaps, never see them more; but we carry with us an impression of their obliging cordiality that penetrates to the bottom of our hearts. Malta was for us the colony of hospitality; whatever of chivalrous and hospitable that recalls the memory of its ancient possessors is found anew in those palaces, now occupied by a people worthy of the high rank they hold in civilisation. One cannot love the English, but it is impossible not to esteem them.

The government of Malta is harsh and contracted; it is not worthy of the English, who have taught liberty to the world, to have in one of their possessions two classes of men, the citizens and the freedmen.

The provincial government and the local parliaments would easily associate themselves with the broad representation of the mother country. The germs of liberty and of nationality, when respected among conquered nations, become thenceforward germs of virtue, strength, and dignity, for the entire human race. The British flag should float only over free men.

August 1, midnight.—Though we sailed this morning with a heavy sea, a dead calm surprised us about a dozen leagues at sea; it still continues; no wind in the heaven, save some spent breezes, that come from time to time, and ruffle the sails of the two vessels; they cause these great sails to send forth a sonorous palpitation, an irregular flapping, like the convulsive flapping in the wings of a dying bird; the sea is smooth and polished like the blade of a sabre; not a ruffle to be seen, but, at far intervals, large cylindrical undulations, which slide under the vessel, and make her shudder as from an earthquake. The whole mass of the masts, yards, rigging, and sails, creak and tremble then, as if under a heavy gale. We are not advancing one inch an hour; the orange peels that Julia throws overboard, float without change of place about the brig, and the helmsman carelessly looks at the stars, without the tiller turning aside his listless hand. We have cast off the tow-rope which fastened us to the English frigate, as the two vessels, no longer having steerage way, ran the risk of striking each other in the dark.

We are now about five hundred paces distant from the frigate. The lighted lamps gleam through the port-holes of the officers' large and handsome cabins that decorate her stern. A light, which the eye might mistake for one of the two great luminaries of the firmament, ascends, and remains stationary at the mizen-topgallantmast-head, to keep us in company during the night. Whilst our view is fixed on this floating beacon-light that is to guide us, a delicious music suddenly issues from the luminous quarters of the frigate, and resounds under her cloud of canvass, as if under the sonorous vaults of a cathedral.

The harmonies are varied, and succeed each other thus for several hours, and spread afar over that enchanted and sleeping sea, all the sounds we have listened to in the most delicious hours of our life. All the melodious reminiscences of our towns, of our theatres, of our rural airs, return and carry our thoughts toward periods that are no more, toward beings now removed from us by death or by lapse of time!

To-morrow, or in a few hours, perhaps, the terrible sounds of the hurricane causing the masts to groan, the redoubled shocks of the sea against the hollow flanks of the vessel, the signal-gun of distress, the

thunder, the convulsive voices of two elements at war, and of man struggling against their combined fury, will take the place of this serene and majestic music.

These thoughts arise in all our hearts, and a complete silence reigns over the two decks. Every one recalls to himself some of these notes, so significant and engraven by a strong impression on his memory, which he has heard elsewhere in some happy or sombre circumstance of the life of his heart; every one thinks more tenderly on what he has left behind him. We become anxious at this defiance which man appears to throw down to the tempest. Such moments as these ought to be inscribed in our thoughts for ever; they comprise in a few minutes more impressions, more colours, more life, than whole years passed in the prosaic vicissitudes of common life. The heart is then full, and seeks to overflow. Then it is that the most ordinary man feels himself a poet in every fibre; then it is that the finite and the infinite enter through every pore; then it is that we feel a wish to vent forth before God, or to reveal to but one sympathetic heart, or to all mankind, in the language of minds, what is passing in our mind; it is then that one might improvise songs worthy of earth, and even of heaven. Ah! if one had but a language! But there is no language, especially for us Frenchmen—no, there is no language for philosophy, love, religion, or poetry; mathematics are the language of this nation; her words are dry, precise, and colourless, like ciphers. Let us go to sleep.

Two o'clock of the morning—same date.—I could not sleep, I had felt too much; I returned upon deck—let us describe the scene. The moon had disappeared beneath the orange fog that veiled the horizon. It was indeed night, but a night at sea—that is to say, on a transparent element that reflected the feeblest gleam from the firmament, and seemed to retain a luminous impression of day. The night was not dark, but only pale and pearly, like the colour of a mirror when the torch is withdrawn to a side, or placed behind it. The air also seemed dead, or asleep on that supple couch of the waves. Not a sound, not a breath, not even a sail flapping against the yard—not a wreath of foam to murmur and trace the wake of the brig.

I viewed this mute spectacle of repose, voidness, silence, and serenity. I inhaled that light and tepid air, in which the breast can perceive neither heat, nor coolness, nor weight, and I said to myself, 'This must be the air that is breathed in the land of souls, in the regions of immortality, in that divine atmosphere where all is immovable, voluptuous, perfect.'

Another view of the heaven. I had forgot the English frigate; I was looking in the opposite direction; she was a few cables' length from us. I turned accidentally, and my eyes fell on that majestic colossus, reposing immovable and immense, without the least vibration, as if on a pedestal of polished marble.

The dark and gigantic mass of her hull seemed to detach itself in spectral darkness from the silvery base of the water, and was sketched out on the blue field of sky, air, and sea; not a sigh of life issued from that majestic edifice; nothing indicated either to the eye or ear that it was animated with so much life and intellect, and peopled by so many thinking and acting beings. One would have taken her for one of those great victims of the tempest, which the navigator meets with terror, floating rudderless in the solitudes of the southern ocean, a mortuary register without note or date, which the sea allows to float a few days above the surface before swallowing it up entirely.

Over the dark hull of the vessel, the cloud of all her sails was picturesquely grouped, and rose like a pyramid along her masts. They ascended from story to story, from yard to yard, cut out a thousand fantastic forms, unfolded in wide and deep plies, like the numerous high turrets of a Gothic castle, grouped around the donjon; they had neither the movement nor the glancing golden colour of sails seen at a distance on the waters in the day-time; motionless, dull, and tinged by the darkness, a slaty grey, one would have said it was a covey of enormous bats, or of some unknown

sea-birds, beat down, and pressed closely against one another on a gigantic tree, and suspended to its naked trunk, by moonlight, in a night of winter. The shadow of this cloud of sails descended upon us from aloft, and deprived us of half the horizon. Never did a stranger and more colossal vision of the sea appear to the mind of Ossian in a dream. All the poetry of the waves was here. The blue line of the horizon was confounded with that of the sky; all that was reposing on high or below, had the appearance of one single ethereal fluid, in which we were swimming. All that expanse of water, without objects or boundary, augmented the effect of this gigantic apparition of the frigate on the waters, and brought the mind under the same illusion as the eye. It seemed to me as though the frigate, the aerial pyramid of her canvass, and ourselves, were all raised upwards together, and conveyed along, like heavenly bodies in the liquid plains of ether, bearing on nothing, and moving by an internal force on the azure void of an universal firmament.

Several similar days and nights were passed in the open sea, with a dead calm and a burning sky. Immense waves roll from the Adriatic into the sea of Africa; these are vast cylinders slightly channeled, and gilt in the morning and evening, like the columns of the temples of Rome or Pæstum.

I passed the day-time on deck—I wrote some verses to M. de Montherot, my brother-in-law.

Friend, more than friend, brother in heart and soul,
Whose sad look haunts me still as on I roll;
Across so many waves, hung far a-lea,
Through floods of sky and air, I think of thee!
I think of all the hours we two have spent,
Where asp and willow o'er the brook are bent—
Of our oft lingering steps, our converse sweet,
In which thy verse with mine would often meet—
Thy verse of smiles and meteor-flashes born,
Not from the lyre with tremulous ardour torn,
But which thy careless hand, from day to day,
Leaves to what wind of fancy sweeps thy way;
Like to those liquid pearls, wept by the dawn,
That steep in sparkling tints the waking lawn,
Which, undiffused, a stream would constitute,
But now sink noiseless on the passer's foot;
Who-e humble shower, raised by the sun, exhales
At length in perfume on the drying gales!

New days, new cares; for every fruit its time.
Long ere my judgment had attained its prime,
While yet I sported round my mother's knees,
A child whom toys could charm, or toys displease,
I copied boys, my equals, in their play,
I spoke their language, and I did as they;
In early spring, when buds begin to sprout,
And sap from bark of trees seems sweating out,
I sought our village torrent's rumbling billow,
To cut fresh branches from the bending willow;
Then softening with my lips a twig, as yet
Undried, I from it pulled the bark unsplit;
I blew into the wood, and soon a sound,
Plaintive and soft, filled all the air around;
For artful rules this sound was all unmoet—
An empty noise, a murmur vague and sweet,
Like to the voices of the wave and breeze,
Which bear no meaning, though the ear they please;
The prelude of a soul stirred in young years,
Which chants before the days of song, weeps ere the time of
tears!

Those times are past, and half my span is
And pains and care have raised my spirit's
These fragile reeds, fit toys for boyish days,
Could ill relieve this load that on me weighs.
It lieth not in mortal speech nor rhyme,
In trump of war, nor yet in organ chime,
To bear the outburst of my soul's full blast,
Whose fire melts all its shock doth not o'ercast!
To vent its breathings, it hath long ago
Renounced the phrases of the world below:
Their fragile symbols would be burst—twixt woe
And word, lightning collisions would be stirred,
And youth, with shaking front, would wildly cry,
"Let him speak softly, Lord! or else we die!"

having seen, ^{on my passage along this earth, that land} of doers of great things, ^{as Epaminondas} called his country.

During my whole youth, I have desired to do what I am now doing, to see what I am now seeing. A desire, at length satisfied, is a happiness. I experience at the sight of these horizons, so much dreamed of, what I have all my life experienced in the possession of whatever I have eagerly desired—a calm and contemplative pleasure, which falls back upon itself—a repose of the mind and soul, which pause for a moment and say to themselves, "Let us make a halt, and enjoy:" but, at bottom, these happinesses of the mind and imagination are very cold. It is not the same with the happiness of the soul: this exists nowhere but in love, human or divine, but always in love.

Same date: evening.—We are sailing deliciously, with a favourable wind, which carries us between Cape Matapan and the island of Cerigo.

A Greek pirate brig approached us, while the frigate was some leagues at sea, in chase of a suspicious vessel. The brig was only a cable's length from us; we all ascended upon deck, and prepared for action. Our guns were loaded, and the deck strewed with muskets and pistols. The captain summoned the commander of the Greek brig to retire. The latter, seeing twenty-five men well armed on our deck, decided on not venturing to board us. He stood away, but returned almost close alongside of our vessel. We were about to give fire, when he again declined the affair, and withdrew, remaining for a quarter of an hour within pistol-shot of us. He pretended that he was, like ourselves, a merchant vessel returning to the Archipelago. I observed his crew, and never did I see countenances in which crime, murder, and pillage, were written in more hideous characters. There were to be seen, on board of the pirate, fifteen or twenty bandits, some in Albanese costume, others with tatters of European dresses, seated, lying, or working the vessel. All were armed with pistols and poignards, the handles of which glittered with chased work of silver. There was a fire on deck, at which two aged women were dressing fish. A young girl, of fifteen or sixteen, appeared from time to time among these haridans—a celestial face, an angelic apparition, in the midst of these infernal countenances. One of the old women repulsed her several times to the lower deck, to which she descended, weeping. A dispute arose seemingly on this subject between some of the crew. Two poignards were drawn and brandished; the captain, who was leaning on the tiller, carelessly smoking his pipe, threw himself between the two bandits, and turned one over the deck; every thing became quiet; the young Greek woman came up again, and, wiping her eyes with the long tresses of her beautiful hair, seated herself at the foot of the mainmast. One of the old women knelt behind her, and combed the girl's long hair. The wind freshened. The Greek pirate turned his head to Cerigo, and in a twinkling, crowding all canvass, was soon only a white spot on the horizon.

We hove-to, in order to wait for the frigate, who fired a gun to warn us. In a few hours she rejoined us. The Greek pirate, which she chased, had escaped, having entered one of those inaccessible creeks of the coast where they always take refuge in a similar emergency.

Same day: eleven o'clock.—Whenever some powerful impression agitates my soul, I feel the necessity of telling or writing to some one what I experience, of finding somewhere a joy of my joy, a reverberation of what has struck myself. An isolated sentiment is not complete; man was created double.

Alas! when I now look around me, there is already much of loneliness. Julia and Mariamne* comprise all in themselves alone; but Julia is still so young that I tell her only what is within the reach of her infancy. This is all the future: it will soon be all the present for us.

The person who would have most enjoyed my happiness at this moment, was my mother. In whatever

* Madame de Lamartine.

happens to me of happiness or sorrow, my thoughts turn involuntarily towards her. I think I see her, hear her, speak to her, write to her. A being whom we remember to such a degree, is not absent; an object that lives so completely, so powerfully, in ourselves, is not dead with regard to us. I always impart to her, as during her lifetime, all my impressions, which used to become so rapidly and entirely her own, which became more embellished, coloured, and glowing in her radiant imagination, an imagination which stood always at the age of seventeen! I seek for her in idea in the modest and pious solitude of Milly, where she educated us, where she thought of us when the vicissitudes of my youth separated us from each other. I see her expecting, receiving, perusing, commenting on my letters, revealing more than even myself in my ideas. Vain dream! she is there no more; she dwells in the world of realities; our fugitive dreams are no longer anything to her: but her spirit is with us—it visits, follows, and protects us: *our conversation is with her in the eternal regions.*

I have thus lost, before the age of maturity, the greater number of the beings whom I loved most, or who have most loved me here below. My life of affection has become concentrated; my heart has now only a few hearts to betake itself to for refuge; my memory has scarce on this earth aught but tombs to repose on. If God were to level but two or three strokes more around me, I feel that I should be entirely detached from myself: for I should contemplate myself no longer—I should love myself more in others; and it is only thus that it is possible for me to love myself.

While very young, I loved myself in myself; infancy is egotistical. It was all well then, at sixteen or eighteen years of age, when I did not as yet know myself, when I knew life still less; but now I have lived too long, I have known too much to hold to that form of existence which is called the human "I." What is a man, great God! and what a pity to attach the least importance to what I feel, to what I think, to what I write! What place is it which I hold in existing things! What void shall I leave in the world?—a void of a few days in one or two hearts; one shadow less to the sun; my dog, who will seek for me; some trees that I have loved, and that will be astonished at not seeing me return under their shade: that is all! And then all this will pass away in its turn. We do not begin to feel the emptiness of existence till the day comes when we are no longer necessary to any one, till the hour when we can be no longer cherished. The only reality here below, I have always felt, is love—love under all its forms!

August 7: evening, six o'clock.—The elevated coast of Laconia is at a few cannon-shots' distance from us. We skirt it with a fine breeze; it slides away majestically before us. Leaning on the bulwark of the vessel, my looks seize, in order to recollect them, those classic forms of the mountains of Greece; they unroll themselves as if they were waves of stone and earth; they rise, sink, and group themselves before me, like the clouds of the country of his soul before the mind of Ossian. I spend one or two hours, making in silence this review of the hills and of the sonorous names of this departed country. The hills of Cronius, from which the Eurotas derives its source, dart into the air their rounded summits; the globe of the sun descends upon them, and strikes them like domes of gilded copper; he inflames his cloudy couch around him; the mountain tops become transparent, like the very air that envelopes them, and from which they can hardly be distinguished; one would swear that he saw behind them the light of another sun already set, or the immense reflection of some distant conflagration.

One of these mountains, among others, presented to our sight the figure of a crescent reversed; it seems to be hollowed out proportionally in order to open out an aerial track for the disc of the sun, which rolls there amid the golden dust of the vapour that ascends to him. The nearer summits, which the sun has already passed, are tinged with purplish violet, or with a pale lilac colour; they swim in an atmosphere as rich as the

painter's palette: still nearer us, other hills, already covered with the shades of evening, appear clothed with dark forests; finally, those which compose the foreground, those which we seem to touch, and whose steep slopes are washed by the sea foam, are quite plunged in night; the eye only distinguishes among them a few creeks, which afford a refuge to the numerous pirates of these shores, and a few advancing promontories, which carry, like Napoli di Malvasia, towns or fortresses on their precipitous summits. These mountains, viewed thus from the deck of a ship, at this hour when the night tapestries them with its thousand illusions of colour, are perhaps the finest terrestrial forms that my eyes have yet contemplated; and then the ship floats so gently inclined, like a moveable balcony on the sea, which murmurs while caressing her keel! the air is so mildly warm and so perfumed! the sails give out such pleasing sounds at each puff of the evening breeze!—almost all that I love is there, tranquil, happy, safe, looking and enjoying with me. Julia and her mother are leaning near me on the rigging. The countenance of the child beams at all the views, and names of places, at all the historical facts which her mother relates to her regarding each; her eyes float along with ours over all those scenes, the marvellous dramas of which are already known to her! There is genius in her look; one sees there the deep, living, warm, and rapid thoughts of a mind which is budding under the ardent and loving soul of her mother; she seems to enjoy as much as we do, and especially because she sees us interested and happy—for the soul of that child lives in ours; a tear comes into her eyes, if she sees me sad and pensive; her features are an instantaneous reflection of mine, and the smile of every joy of ours never has to wait for a like smile from her lips. How beautiful she is thus!

I have long seen, and under all their aspects, the mountains of Rome and of Sabina; those here surpass them in variety of grouping, in majesty of form, in dazzling splendour of tints; their alliteration is endless—it would require a volume to describe what a picture would tell at one glance; but to be seen in all their imaginative beauty, they must be thus perceived at the fall of day. Then they are to be seen, clad, as in their youth, with forests and green pastures, and rural cottages, and flocks and shepherds; the shades of evening clothe them—they have no other wardrobe; just as the history of the men who have rendered them illustrious requires the clouds of the past and the prestige of distance to attach and seduce our thoughts. Nothing ought to be seen in broad day, by the light of the present; in this sad world of ours, there is nothing completely beautiful but what is ideal; illusion in all things is an element of the beautiful, except in virtue and in love.

Same date: eight o'clock at night.—The wind freshens; we are sailing along with a beautiful sea, before the openings of different bays; we approach Cape St Angelo, anciently Cape Malia; we shall soon be abreast of it.

August 8: morning.—The wind has died away; we have passed the night without making any progress, at a short distance from Cape Malia.

Same date: noon.—The breeze is mild, and wafes us towards the cape. The frigate, which has us in tow, hollows out ahead of us a level and murmuring path, along which we glide in her wake, amidst the wreaths of foam which her keel dashes up on its flight. Captain Lyons, who knows the coast, wishes to let us enjoy the view of the cape and the country, by passing not more than a hundred fathoms from the shore.

At the extremity of Cape St Angelo, or Malia, which advances considerably into the sea, that narrow passage commences which timid mariners avoid by leaving the island of Cerigo on their left. This cape is the cape of tempests for Greek sailors. The pictures alone show head to it, because they know they will not be followed thither. The wind descends from this cape with such weight and impetuosity on the sea, that it often hurls rolling stones from the mountain upon the decks of

that forms the headland of the cape, sharpened by hurricanes and by the lashing of the spray, accident has suspended three rocks detached from the summit, and arrested half way in their fall. There they remain, like a nest of sea-fowl bending over the foaming abyss of the waters. A quantity of reddish earth, also stopped in its fall by these three unequal rocks, gives root to five or six stunted fig-trees, which themselves hang with their tortuous branches, and their large grey leaves, over the roaring gulf that whirls at their feet. The eye cannot discern any footpath, any practicable declivity, by which this little mound of vegetation could be reached.

However, a small low dwelling can be distinguished among the fig-trees—a house of a grey, sombre appearance, like the rock which serves for its base, and with which one confounds it on the first view. Over the flat roof of the house there rises a small open belfry, as over the door of convents in Italy: a bell is suspended from it. To the right are to be seen some ancient ruins of foundations of red bricks, in which there are three open arcades leading to a little terrace that stretches in front of the house. An eagle would have feared to build his eyrie in such a place, without a single bush or trunk of a tree to shelter him from the wind which roars continually, from the eternal noise of the sea breaking, and of the spray licking incessantly the polished rock, under a sky always burning. Well! a man has done what the bird itself would scarcely have dared to do; he has chosen this asylum. He lives there; we perceived him—he is a hermit. We doubled the cape so closely that we could distinguish his long white beard, his staff, his chaplet, his hood of brown felt, like that of sailors in winter. He went on his knees as we passed, with his face turned towards the sea, as if he were imploring the succour of Heaven for the unknown strangers on this perilous passage. The wind, which issues furiously from the mountain-gorges of Laconia, as soon as you double the rock of the cape, began to resound in our sails, and make the two vessels roll and stagger, covering the sea with foam as far as the eye could reach. A new sea was opening before us. The hermit, in order to follow us still farther with his eyes, ascended the crest of a rock, and we distinguished him there, on his knees and motionless, as long as we were in sight of the cape.

What is this man? He must have a soul trebly steeped in woe, to have chosen this frightful abode; he must have a heart and senses eager for strong and eternal emotions, to live in this culture's nest, alone, with the boundless horizon, the hurricane, and the roar of the sea. His only spectacle is, from time to time, a passing ship, the creaking of the masts, the tearing of the sails, the cannon of distress, the cries of sailors in their agony.

These three fig-trees, that little inaccessible field, this spectacle of the convulsive struggle of the elements, these rough, severe, and meditative impressions of the soul, formed one of the dreams of my childhood and youth. By an instinct which my knowledge of men has since confirmed, I never placed happiness but in solitude—only, at that time I placed love there; but now I shall place there, love, God, and thought: this desert suspended between the heavens and the sea, shaken by the incessant shock of the winds and waves, would still be one of the charms of my heart. It is the attitude of the bird of the mountains, while yet touching with its foot the sharp summit of the rock, and already flapping its wings to dart still higher into the regions of light. There is no well-organised man who would not become, in such an abode, either a saint or a great poet, perhaps both. But what a violent shock of existence must have been required to inspire me with such thoughts and desires, and to drive thither those other men whom I see there! God knows. Whatever be the case, he cannot be an ordinary man, who has felt the pleasure and the necessity of hooking himself like the pendant birdweed to the walls of such an abyss, and to remain hovering there during a whole lifetime, beside the tumult of the elements, the terrible music of the tempest, alone with his own thoughts, in the presence of nature and of God.

the steep and inaccessible declivity of the rock

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

Same date.—At some leagues' distance from the cape, the sea became finer again. Light Greek vessels, unbecked and crowded with canvass, passed alongside of us in the deep valleys of the waves; they are full of women and children, who are going to Hydra with baskets of melons and grapes. The least puff of wind makes them heel over on the sea, so much as to bathe their sails in it. They have nothing to protect them from the wave but a cloth a few feet high, stretched along the side exposed to the water; they are often concealed from our view by the billow and the foam; they rise again like a cork floating on the water. What a life!—it is that of almost all the Greeks; their element is the sea; they disport there like the child of our villages on our mountain heaths. The destiny of the country is written by nature; it is the sea.

Same date.—Here are the distant summits of the island of Crete rising on our right; here is Ida covered with snows, appearing from this distance like the top-sails of a vessel.

We enter a vast bay, that of Argos; we glide along with the wind aft, and with the velocity of a flight of swallows; the rocks, mountains, and islands of the two shores, fly like dark clouds from before us. Night falls; we already perceive the head of the bay, though it is six leagues in extent; the masts of three squadrons anchored before Nauplia are sketched out like a winter forest on the background of the sky and the plain of Argos. The darkness becomes soon complete; fires are lighted on the mountain slopes, and in the woods, where the Greek shepherds are tending their flocks; the ships are firing the evening gun. We see all the gunports of these sixty vessels at anchor gleaming successively, like the streets of a great town lighted by its reflectors; we enter this labyrinth of ships, and we are about to anchor in the middle of the night close to a little fort which protects the roadstead of Nauplia, in front of the town, and under the guns of the castle of Palamides.

August 9.—I rise with the sun to have at length the pleasure of viewing close to me the Gulf of Argos, Argos, Nauplia, the present capital of Greece. What a complete deception! Nauplia is a miserable village, built on the side of a long and narrow gulf, on a margin of earth that has fallen down from the lofty mountains that cover the whole of this coast; the houses have no foreign character; they are built in the style of the most ordinary dwellings in the villages of France and Savoy. Most part of them are in ruins, and the fragments of walls overturned by cannon in the last war, are still lying in the middle of the streets. Two or three new houses, painted in rough colours, appear on the quay, and a few coffee-houses and shops of wood project on piles into the sea; these coffee-houses and balconies on the water are crowded with some hundreds of Greeks, in their gaudiest but dirtiest costume; they are seated or stretched out on planks or on the sand, forming a thousand picturesque groups. All their physiognomies are beautiful, but sad and ferocious; the weight of indolence oppresses their every attitude. The laziness of the Neapolitans is mild, serene, and gay—it is the nonchalance of happiness; the laziness of the Greeks is heavy, morose, and gloomy—it is a vice which is its own punishment. We turn our eyes from Nauplia; I admire the beautiful fortress of Palamides, which ranges over the whole mountain by which the town is commanded; the battlemented walls resemble the indentations of a natural rock.

But where is Argos? A vast plain, sterile and naked, intersected with marshes, extends in a circular form at the head of the gulf; it is bounded on all sides by chains of grey mountains. At the end of this plain, about two leagues in the interior, you perceive a conical hill, which has a few fortified walls on its summit, and which protects with its shadow a village in ruins: that is Argos. Quite close to this is the tomb of Agamemnon. But what are Agamemnon and his empire to me? These historical and political legends have lost the interest of youth and of truth. I should wish to see only a valley of Arcadia; I prefer a tree, a spring under the rock, a rose-laurel on the bank of a river,

under the fallen arch of a bridge tapestried with bindweed, to the monument of one of those classical kingdoms, which no longer recall any thing to my mind save the ennui they gave me in my infancy.

August 10.—We have passed two days at Nauplia. The state of Julia's health again distresses me. I remain a few days more, to wait till she is completely recovered. We are on shore, in the chamber of a wretched inn, opposite a barrack of Greek troops. The soldiers are all day stretched out under the shade of the fragments of ruined walls; their costumes are rich and picturesque; their features bear the impress of misery and despair, and of all those fierce passions which civil war kindles and foment in those savage souls. The most complete anarchy reigns at this moment over all the Morea. Each day, one faction triumphs over the other, and we hear the musketry of the Klephtes, of the Colocotroni faction, who are fighting on the other side of the gulf against the troops of the government. We are informed, by every courier that descends from the mountains, of the burning of a town, the pillage of a valley, or the massacre of a population, by one of the parties that are ravaging their native country. One cannot go beyond the gates of Nauplia without being exposed to musket shots. Prince Karadjia had the goodness to propose to me an escort of his palikars to go and visit the tomb of Agamemnon; and general Corbet, who commands the French forces, politely offered to add to them a detachment of his soldiers. I refused, because I did not wish, for the gratification of a vain curiosity, to expose the lives of several men, for which I should eternally reproach myself.

August 12.—I was this morning present at a meeting of the Greek Parliament. The hall is a hovel of wood; the walls and roof are formed of planks of fir badly joined. The deputies are seated on raised benches around a floor of sand; they speak from their places.

We sat down, to see them arrive, on a heap of stones at the door of the hall. They came in succession on horseback, each accompanied by an escort more or less numerous, according to the importance of the chief. Each deputy dismounted, and his palikars, superbly armed, went and grouped themselves at some distance in the little plain which surrounds the hall. This plain presented the image of an encampment, or of a caravan.

The attitude of the deputies was haughty and martial; they spoke without confusion or interruption, in a tone of emotion, though, at the same time, firm, measured, and harmonious. They were no longer those ferocious figures that are so repulsive to the view in the streets of Nauplia; they were the chiefs of a heroic nation, who still held in their hands the musket or the sabre with which they had just been combating for its deliverance, and who were deliberating together on the means of securing the triumph of their liberties.

One cannot imagine any thing more simple, and, at the same time, more imposing, than the spectacle of this armed nation thus deliberating amidst the ruins of their country, under a planked roof raised in the open field, whilst the soldiers were polishing their arms at the very door of this senate, and the horses neighing impatiently to resume their path on the mountains! There were to be seen among these chiefs some heads admirable for beauty, intelligence, and heroism: these were the mountaineers. The Greek merchants of the islands were easily recognised by their more effeminate features, and by the wily expression of their physiognomies. The commerce and indolence of their towns have removed all nobility and vigour from their countenances, and stamped in their stead the impress of that vulgar skill and cunning which characterises them.

August 13.—There was a charming fête given on board his vessel by Admiral Hotham, who commands the English station in the roads of Nauplia. He made us visit his three-decker, the St Vincent, and caused to be executed for us the imitation of a naval combat. A vessel, manned with sixteen hundred men, and seen thus at the moment of action, is the masterpiece of human intellect.

He is an excellent man, whose countenance and man-

ners present that rare union of the nobleness of the old warrior and the benevolent mildness of the philosopher, a disposition which pervades generally the fine physiognomies of the English aristocracy. He offered us one of his vessels of war to accompany us as far as Smyrna. I declined, and claimed this favour from Admiral Hugon, who commands the French squadron. He has been so good as give us the brig *Le Génie*, commanded by Captain Cungo d'Ornano: but it will only escort us as far as Rhodes.

I dined with M. Rouen, French minister in Greece; I was myself to have occupied that post under the restoration. He congratulated me at not having obtained it. M. Rouen, who had passed at Nauplia all the miserable days of Greek anarchy, was sighing for his deliverance. He consoled himself for the severity of his exile, by giving a welcome reception to his countrymen, and by representing, with perfect grace and cordiality, the high position of France, in a country which one must love both in its past and in its future history.

August 15.—I wrote nothing; my soul was withered and melancholy like the frightful country that surrounded me: naked rocks, ruddy or black soil, creeping and dusky shrubs, marshy plains, where the frosty north wind, even in the month of August, blows over harvests of reeds; there is all. This land of Greece is now but the winding-sheet of a people; it resembles an old sepulchre robbed of its bones, and the very stones of which are scattered and embrowned by the lapse of ages. Where is the beauty of that Greece so much vaunted? Where is her gilded and transparent sky? All is now dull and cloudy, as in a ravine of Savoy or Auvergne, in the last days of autumn. The violence of the north wind, which swept along with the roaring waves to the head of the bay where we were anchored, prevented us from leaving.

August 18: at sea—at anchor off the gardens of Hydra.—At length we started last night with a fine breeze at south-east; we were asleep in our hammocks. At seven o'clock we were out of the gulf; the sea was beautiful, and beat melodiously against the sides of the vessel. We were now in the channel that extends between the mainland and the islands of Hydra and Spezzia.

Towards noon, we were driven towards the coast of the continent, opposite to Hydra. Those terrible squalls, proceeding from all the points of the compass, rendered the working of the ship perilous. Our sails were torn to pieces; there was a risk of our masts being carried away; for three hours, we struggled without remission against furious hurricanes; the sailors were exhausted with fatigue; the captain appeared anxious about the fate of the vessel: at last he succeeded in gaining the shelter of a lofty shore, and an anchorage well known to sailors, abreast of a charming hill, called the Gardens of Hydra. We cast anchor there at a mile from the coast, and not far from the brig-of-war *Le Génie*, which had followed the same route.

We had a day's repose, though the sea was still agitated, and squalls whistled through our rigging; we landed on the coast—it was the prettiest spot we had yet visited in Greece; lofty mountains command the landscape; they retain, besides, some strata of earth, some patches of a pale green on their rounded flanks; they slope gently, and hide their feet in some forests of olives; farther off, they extend in moderate inclinations as far as the channel of Hydra, which flows at their feet like a large river rather than a sea. There the eye reposes on one or two country-houses, surrounded by gardens and orchards, cultivated fields, groups of chestnut trees and green olive flocks, some Greek peasants cultivating the ground. We let loose our dogs, and hunted all day on the mountain; we returned with game.

The town of Hydra, which covers all the little island of that name, was shining on the other side of the white, resplendant, glittering like a rock newly washed, island does not present an inch of ground to all is stone; the town covers the whole: the

houses are arranged perpendicularly to one another, and were the refuge of free commerce, and of Greek opulence, during the domination of the Turks. One can estimate the increasing or decreasing civilisation of a nation by the situation of its towns and villages; when security and independence augment, the towns descend from the mountains to the plains; when tyranny and anarchy revive, they reascend the rocks, or take refuge on the reefs of the ocean. During the middle ages, in Italy, on the Rhine, in France, the towns were eagles' nests, on the peaks of inaccessible rocks.

Same date.—The night was calm. We passed a delicious evening on deck. We shall sail to-morrow, if the north wind does not return in equal strength.

August 18: at sea.—We weighed anchor at three o'clock in the morning. A moderate wind allowed us to approach that point of the continent which advances into the Sea of Athens; but when there, a fresh tempest assailed us, still more violent than the former; we were in an instant separated from the two vessels that were sailing in company with us. The sea became enormous; we rolled from one abyss into another, the yards dipping into the wave, and the spray dashing over the deck. The captain persisted in doubling the cape; after several hours' ineffectual manœuvring, he succeeded. We were now in the open sea; but the wind was so powerful, that the brig made considerable leeway. We were obliged to stand for the mountains that were distinguishable on the other side of the Bay of Athens. We went six knots, amidst clouds of humid dust, and under showers of spray, flying from the head and sides of the vessel. Occasionally the horizon cleared up, and allowed us a glimpse of Cape Colonna whitening out ahead of us. We expected to anchor in the evening at the foot of these columns, and to salute the memory of the divine Plato, who was wont to come and meditate two thousand years before us on this same promontory of Sunium. I could not withdraw my view from the horizon, where appear the mountains of Athens, from which the tempest is repelling us. At length, towards sunset, the wind abated, and we made a tack towards the island of Egina. We got almost becalmed under shelter of the island, and of the coast of the mainland, and we entered at the fall of day another gulf, formed by the island and the lovely shores of Corinth. The sea was like a mirror, and we seemed to sail on a waveless river, whose imperceptible current was carrying us to the anchorage. We cast anchor at the moment when the night fell in an immense enchanted lake, enveloped with sombre mountains, and when the rising moon was striking with its silvery light the Acropolis of Corinth, and the columns of the Temple of Egina. We were some hundreds of paces from the island, opposite gardens shaded by beautiful planes. A few white houses shone forth amidst the verdure. We enjoyed repose, and a tranquil supper on deck, after a day of perils and fatigues. Such is the life of travellers, and of man on the earth.

On our right, the island of Egina, softening its dark and rapid declivities, extends along a gulf into a tongue of land, strewed with a few cypresses, vines, and fig-trees, and terminated by the town. The latter is less oddly situated than the few Greek towns we had as yet seen; the gymnasium, erected by Capo d'Istria, gleams in the centre—its museum. I did not go there; I am tired of museums, those cemeteries of the arts; fragments detached from their locality, their destination, and from the whole of which they formed a part, are dead—the dust of marble which has life no more. I went ashore alone, and passed two delicious hours in a garden of cypresses and orange trees belonging to Gergio, Bey of Hydra. At ten o'clock I returned to the vessel; on descending the ladder, I found half of the deck literally covered with heaps of water-melons, immense baskets full of grapes of all forms and colours, some of which weighed from three to four pounds, figs of Attica, and all the flowers that the season and the climate could furnish. They told me it was the governor of Egina, Nicolas Scuffo, who having learned, the evening before, through my Greek pilot, of my passage

rough the gulf, had come to pay me a visit with a pat full of this present from his estate; he recognised my name that of a friend to Greece, and had brought me the first pledge of that prosperity which so many numerous hearts have desired for that country! He announced his intention of returning in the evening. I requested a boat from Captain Cunco d'Ornano, and went to Ægina to carry my thanks to the governor; I found him afloat, and we returned together on board our vessel. He is a distinguished man, of very intellectual conversation. We spoke of Greece, of her future condition, and her present crisis. I saw with regret that the religious spirit is extinct in Greece; the ignorant clergy are despised; the commercial spirit has not sufficient virtue to resuscitate a people. I fear for that country; at the first European crisis, it will decompose itself afresh. It is as in Italy; men the most intelligent and courageous, brilliant individuals, but no common bond of union—Greeks, but no nation.

Having sailed at noon of the 18th from Ægina, we saw the sun set in the golden valley that is hollowed out on the isthmus of Corinth, between Acro-Corinthus and the mountains of Attica—it kindled up all that quarter of the heaven; and it was there that, for the first time, we witnessed that splendour of the firmament which gives to the East its charm and its glory. Salamis, the tomb of the fleet of Xerxes, was a few paces ahead of us—a grey coast, dark soil, with no other attraction but its name; its naval battle, and the memory of Themistocles, cause it to be saluted with respect by the mariner. The mountains of Attica raise their black summits above Salamis; and to the right, on one of the decreasing peaks of Ægina, the temple of Jupiter Panhellenicus, gilded by the last rays of day, rises above this scene, one of the finest of an historical nature, and casts its religious reminiscences over that record of places and times; the religious thoughts of humanity mingle with and consecrate the whole, but the religion of the Greeks, a religion of the mind and the imagination, and not of the heart, does not make on me the slightest impression; we know that these gods of the people were only the sportive creations of poetry and of art—gods feigned and dreamed of. There was nothing grave, nothing real, nothing drawn from the deep wells of nature, and of the human soul, before the age of Socrates and Plato! Then commenced the religion of reason! Then came Christianity, which had received from its divine founder the word and the key of human destiny! The ages of barbarism, which it had to traverse to arrive at us, have often impaired and disfigured it, but if it had fallen among Platos and Pythagorases, what should we not have attained to, owing to it, by it, and with it!

A settled calm came on, and we floated six hours without motion amid the transparent water and coloured vapours of the Sea of Athens. The Acropolis and the Parthenon rise like an altar six leagues in front of us, detached from Mount Pentelicus, Mount Hymettus, and Mount Anchismus. In fact, Athens is an altar to the gods, the finest pedestal on which past ages could have placed the statue of humanity! At the present day its aspect is sombre, and, dark, arid, desolate—a weight on the heart; there is nothing living, green, gracious, or animated; we see there nature exhausted, which God alone could vivify. Liberty will not suffice for this: to the poet and the painter, it is written on these barren mountains, on these capes whitened with crumbling temples, on these marshy or pebbly heaths, which have no longer any thing but sonorous names, it is written—“It is finished!” It is a land of apocalypse that seems struck by some divine malediction, by some great word of prophecy; a Jerusalem of the nations, in which there is no longer even a tomb! Such is the idea of Athens and all the shores of Attica, of the islands and the Peloponese.

Having arrived at the Piræus at eight o'clock in the morning of the 19th August, we came to an anchor. Horses were waiting for us on the beach of the Piræus; we mounted. I found an ass, on which we placed a side-saddle for Julia; and we started. For half a league,

the plain, although of a light, manageable, and fertile soil, is completely naked and uncultivated. The Turks burned, during the war, a forest of olive-trees, which extended down to the sea; some black trunks still remain. We entered the wood of olives and fig-trees, which encircle the advanced group of the hills of Athens as with a verdant belt. We followed the foundations, still evident, of the long wall built by Themistocles, which united the city to the Piræus. A few Turkish fountains, in the form of wells, surrounded with rustic troughs of rough stone, are placed at intervals. Some Greek peasants, and a few Turkish soldiers, were lying near the fountains, and giving each other to drink. At length we passed under the lofty ramparts and black rocks that serve as a pedestal to the Parthenon. The Parthenon itself does not appear to us to increase in magnitude, but, on the contrary, to dwindle the more as we approach it. The effect of this edifice, the finest, by the judgment of all ages, that human hands have erected on the earth, does not, when thus viewed, correspond in any thing to what one expects; and the pompous language of travellers, artists, or poets, falls back sorrowfully on your heart, when you see that reality so remote from the descriptions. It is not gilded as by the petrified rays of the Grecian sun; it does not shoot upwards like an aerial island, carrying a divine monument; it does not shine from afar on the sea and land like a beacon-light, proclaiming, here is Athens!—here man has exhausted his genius, and hurled his defiance to the future! No, nothing of all this! Over your head, you see rising irregularly old blackish walls, covered with white spots. These spots are marble, the fragments of the monuments with which the Acropolis was crowned, before its restoration by Phidias and Pericles. These walls, flanked at intervals by other walls that sustain them, are crowned with a square Byzantine tower and Venetian battlements. They surround a broad eminence, which contained almost all the sacred monuments of the city of Theseus. At the extremity of this eminence, on the side of the Ægean Sea, there presents itself the Parthenon, or Temple of Minerva, the virgin that sprang from the brain of Jupiter. This temple, the columns of which are blackish, is marked here and there with spots of a dazzling whiteness; these are the impressions of the Turkish cannon, or of the hammers of the Iconoclasts. Its form is an oblong; it appears too low and too small for its monumental situation. It does not say of itself, “This is I; I am the Parthenon, I cannot be any thing else!”—you must ask this of your guide, and when he has answered you, you are still in doubt. Farther off, at the foot of the Acropolis, you pass through a dark low gateway, at which a few Turks in ragged garb are seated, beside their rich and beautiful weapons, and you are in Athens. The first monument worthy of regard is the temple of Jupiter Olympius, the magnificent columns of which rise alone on a naked and desert place, to the right of what was Athens, a worthy portico of the city of ruins! Some paces from this, we entered the city, that is to say, an inextricable labyrinth of narrow paths strewn with portions of fallen walls, of broken tiles, of stones and marble, scattered pell-mell; sometimes descending into the court of a ruined house, sometimes clambering along the staircase, or even on the roof of another. In these little, white, vulgar hovels, or ruins of ruins—dirty and infected haunts—some families of Greeks are huddled together and hidden. Here and there, several women, with black eyes, and the graceful Athenian mouth, came out, at the noise of our horses' footsteps, to the threshold of the door, and gave us the gracious salute of Attica, “Welcome, gentlemen foreigners, to Athens!” We arrived, after a quarter of an hour's walk, amidst the same scenes of devastation, and the same heaps of fallen walls and roofs, at the modest dwelling of M. Gaspari, agent of the consulate of Greece at Athens. I had sent him in the morning the letter that recommended me to his attentions. I had no need of it; politeness is the disposition of almost all our agents towards a stranger. M. Gaspari received us like unknown friends; and while

he was sending his son to search for a residence to us in some house still standing, one of his daughters, an Athenian girl, a fine and graceful specimen of that beauty hereditary in the women of her country, served up to us, with much eagerness and modesty, some iced orange juice, in vessels of porous earth, of antique form. After having refreshed ourselves a while in this humble asylum of simple and cordial hospitality, so sweet to meet with under a burning sun, several hundreds of miles from one's country, at the close of a day of storm, heat, and dust, M. Gaspari conducted us to the lower part of the town, across the same ruins, to a neat, white house, quite recently built, and where an Italian, M. —, had established an inn. A few rooms whitened with lime, and neatly furnished; a court refreshed by a spring, and by a little shade; at the foot of the staircase a fine lioness in white marble; abundance of fruits and vegetables; some honey of Hymettus, calumniated by M. de Châteaubriand; Greek servants, acquainted with Italian, attentive and intelligent—all this was doubly valuable to us, in midst of the desolation and absolute nakedness of Athens.

One could not be more comfortable on a tour through Italy, England, or Switzerland. May this inn maintain its ground, and prosper for the consolation and welfare of travellers to come! But, alas! for forty-eight days, no stranger had crossed its threshold or disturbed its silence!

In the evening, M. Gropius obligingly came and put himself at our disposal, to show us, and comment with us upon Athens. As happy as M. de Châteaubriand had been formerly when conducted through the ruins of Athens by M. Fauvel, we had in M. Gropius a second Fauvel, who had become an Athenian thirty-two years before, and built, like his master, a house for his old age, amidst these wrecks of a city where he had spent his youth, and which he assists as much as he can to raise, for the hundredth time, out of its poetical ashes. M. Gropius is consul for Austria in Greece, and a man of intellect and learning, joining to the most profound and correct knowledge of antiquity, that character of simple good nature and inoffensive grace, which is the distinctive feature of the true and worthy sons of learned Germany. When unjustly accused by Lord Byron, in his sarcastic notes on Athens, M. Gropius did not return injury for injury to the memory of the great poet: he was only afflicted that his name should have been dragged by him through edition after edition, and consigned to the rancour of fanatics ignorant of antiquity; but he did not choose to justify himself; and when one is on the spot, a witness to the constant efforts made by this distinguished man to restore some word to an inscription, some strayed fragment to a statue, or a form and date to a monument, one is sure beforehand that M. Gropius has never profaned what he adores, nor made a vile commerce of the noblest and most disinterested of studies, the study of antiquities.

With such a man days are worth years for the ignorant traveller like myself. I requested him to excuse me from all doubtful antiquities, conventional celebrities, and systematic beauties. I abhor falsehood and effort in every thing, but especially in admiration. I wish to see only what God or man has made beautiful—present, real, palpable beauty, addressing itself to the eye and to the soul; and not the beauty of a locality or an epoch, historical, or critical beauty—I leave that for the learned. To us poets, there must be beauty, evident and sensible: we are not creatures of abstraction, but men of nature and instinct. Thus have I many a time traversed Rome; thus have I visited seas and mountains; thus have I read sages, historians, and poets; thus have I visited Athens.

It was a pure and beautiful evening: the devouring sun was descending, bathed in a violet vapour, on the black and narrow bar which forms the Isthmus of Corinth, and was gilding with his luminous beams the battlements of the Acropolis, which present their firm, rounded, like the crown of a tower, over the large and undulating valley, where sleeps in silence the shade of Athens. We passed out by paths white of stone or

track, having to clear at every moment breaches of fallen garden-walls, or of roofless houses, or of ruins lying in heaps on the white dust of the soil of Attica. As we descended towards the bottom of the deep and desert valley shaded by the Temple of Theseus, the Pnyx, the Areopagus, and the Hill of the Nymphs, we discovered a greater extent of the modern town opening out on our left, resembling in every thing what we had previously seen. A vast, confused, melancholy, disordered assemblage of fallen huts, of pieces of wall still standing, roofs sunk in, gardens and courts ravaged, mounds of stones heaped together, barring up the way, and rolling under our feet; the whole wore the colouring of recent ruins, that dull, feeble, and discoloured grey, which has not even for the eye the sanctity of time elapsed, nor the gracefulness of ruins. There was no vegetation, excepting three or four palm-trees resembling Turkish minarets, that had remained upright over the destroyed city; here and there, a few houses of vulgar and modern fashion, recently built by some Europeans, or by Greeks from Constantinople. These were houses such as are seen in our villages of France or England, roofs raised without any grace, numerous and narrow windows, with an absence of terraces, architectural lines, or decorations—residences for a lifetime, built in the expectation of a fresh destruction—but nothing of those palaces which a civilised people build with confidence for themselves and generations unborn. In the midst of all this chaos, there appear, though rarely, some fragments of the Stadium, some blackish columns of the Arch of Adrian, or of Lazara, the dome of the Tower of the Winds, or of the lantern of Diogenes, inviting, but not detaining, the view. In front of us, appeared, increasing and detaching itself from the grey hill on which it is placed, the Temple of Theseus, isolated, exposed on all sides, standing quite entire on its pedestal of rock. This temple, after the Parthenon, is, according to scientific judges, the finest that Greece has erected to her gods or her heroes.

On approaching, assured from my reading of the beauty of the monument, I was astonished to feel myself cold and unmoved; my heart tried to be affected, my eyes endeavoured to admire; but in vain! I did not feel what one experiences at the sight of a faultless work, namely, a negative pleasure—was it then a real and strong impression, a new, powerful, and involuntary pleasure? No! This temple is too little; it is a sublime toy of art! It is not a monument for gods, for men, for centuries. I had only one instant of ecstasy; this was when, seated at the western angle of the temple, on the lowest steps, my view embraced, all at once, the magnificent harmony of its forms, and the majestic elegance of its columns, together with the wide and more sombre space of its portico, and the admirable bas-reliefs on its interior frieze of the combats between the Centaurs and the Lapithæ; and underneath, through the opening at the centre, the blue and resplendent sky, diffusing its serene and mystic light on the cornices and salient figures of the bas-reliefs; they then appeared to live and move. Great artists alone, of all descriptions, have this gift of life, alas, to their own cost! In the Parthenon, there remain only two figures, Mars and Venus, half crushed by two enormous fragments of the cornice which have fallen on their heads; but these two figures are worth to me, in themselves alone, more than all I have seen of sculpture in my life; they live as never canvass nor marble lived. One suffers from the weight that oppresses them; you would wish to relieve their limbs, which seem to bend and stiffen under this mass; you feel that the chisel of Phidias trembled and glowed in his hand, when these sublime figures were coming to life under his fingers. You feel—and this is no illusion, but the truth, the painful truth!—that the artist infused a portion of his own individuality, his own blood, into the forms and the veins of the beings whom he was creating, and that it is still a part of his life that you see palpitating in these living figures, in these limbs ready to move, on those lips ready to speak!

No! the Temple of Theseus is not worthy of its re-

own; it does not live as a monument, it tells nothing of what it ought to tell; it is beauty, without doubt, but a beauty cold and dead, from which the artist alone could shake off the winding-sheet and wipe away the dust! As for me, I admired it, and I went away without any desire of seeing it again. The fine stones of the colonnade of the Vatican, the majestic and colossal shadows of St Peter's at Rome, have never allowed me to depart without regret, without a hope of returning.

Higher up, after clambering up a black hill covered with thistles and reddish pebbles, you arrive at the Pnyx, the scene of the stormy assemblies of the people of Athens, and of the inconstant ovations of their orators and favourites. Enormous blocks of black stone, some of which are of twelve or thirteen feet cube, rest one above another, and supported the terrace where the people used to meet. Higher still, at the distance of about fifty paces, you perceive an enormous square block on which steps have been cut, which served doubtless for the orator to ascend to that tribune, which thus overlooked the people, the town, and the sea. This has no trace of the elegance of the people under Pericles; it has a Roman character; the recollections connected with it are noble. From this, Demosthenes spoke, and excited or calmed that sea of people, more stormy than the Ægean, which he could also hear roaring behind him. I sat down there, alone and pensive, and remained till the night had nearly closed in, reanimating without an effort all that history, the finest, most ardent, and most fervid of all the histories of men who have wielded the sword or the tongue. What an age for genius! And what genius, greatness, wisdom, light, and even virtue (for not far from this Socrates died) for that age! The present day resembles it in Europe, and especially in France, that vulgar Athens of modern times! But it is only the elect of France and of Europe that may be called Athens—the mass is barbarous still. Suppose Demosthenes speaking his glowing, energetic, and elevated language, to a popular audience in one of our present cities; who would comprehend him? The inequality of education and enlightenment is the grand obstacle to our complete modern civilisation. The people are masters, but they are not capable of being so; hence, they destroy every where, and raise up nowhere any thing beautiful, durable, or majestic! All the Athenians comprehended Demosthenes, knew their own language, and could judge regarding their own legislation and arts. They were a nation of chosen men; they had the passions of a populace, but not their ignorance; they committed crimes, but not absurdities. It is so no longer; hence democracy, though necessary in right, seems impossible in fact, among our great modern populations. Time alone can render nations capable of governing themselves. Their education is formed by their revolutions.

The destiny of an orator such as Demosthenes or Mirabeau, the only two worthy of the name, is more seducing than that of the philosopher or the poet; the orator partakes, at the same time, in the glory of the author, and in the power of the masses on whom and through whom he acts: he is the philosopher-king, if he is a philosopher; but his terrible weapon, the people, is broken in his hands, wounds and kills himself; and then, what he does and says, what he stirs up in humanity, being transitory passions, principles, and interests, all this is not durable, not eternal in its nature. The poet, on the contrary—and by poet I mean whoever creates ideas in bronze, in stone, in prose, in words, or in rhymes—the poet stirs up only what is imperishable in nature and in the human heart; ages pass away, languages are worn out, but he lives for ever all entire, for ever as much himself, as great, as new, as powerful over the soul of his readers; his destiny is less human, but more divine: he is above the orator.

The beauty would be to unite both destinies: no man has done so; but there is nevertheless no incompatibility between action and thought in a complete intellect. Action is the daughter of thought—but men, jealous of every pre-eminence, never grant two powers to one

same head. Nature is more liberal. They proscribe from the domain of action him who excels in the domain of intellect and speech; they would not have Plato to make real laws, nor Socrates to govern a borough.

I sent to request of the Turkish Bey, Yousouf Bey, commandant of Attica, permission to ascend to the citadel with my friends, and visit the Parthenon. He sent me a janissary to accompany me. We set out on the 20th, at five o'clock in the morning, accompanied by M. Gropius. Every thing is silenced before the incomparable impression of the Parthenon, that temple of temples built by Setinus, ordered by Pericles, decorated by Phidias; the unique and exclusive model of the beautiful in the arts of architecture and sculpture—a sort of divine revelation of ideal beauty received one day by that people who were emphatically a nation of artists, and transmitted by them to posterity in blocks of imperishable marble, and in sculptures that will live for ever. This monument, such as it was, taking into view as a whole its situation, its natural pedestal, its steps decorated with unrivalled statues, its grand figures, its execution, perfect in all the details, its material, its colour of petrified light—this monument has, for ages, crushed admiration, without satisfying it. When one sees of it what I have seen of it only, with its majestic fragments, mutilated by the Venetian bombs, by the explosion of gunpowder under Morosini, by the hammer of Theodore, by the cannons of the Turks and Greeks, its columns lying in immense blocks on its pavements, its fallen capitals, its triglyphs broken by the agents of Lord Elgin, its statues carried away in English vessels—what remains of it is sufficient to make me feel that it is the most perfect poem written in stone on the face of the earth; but still I also feel that it is too little; the effect is wanting, or it is destroyed. I passed delicious hours, reclined under the shade of the Propylæa, with my eyes fixed on the tottering pediment of the Parthenon; I feel the whole spirit of antiquity in what it has produced most divine; the rest is not worth the language that describes it! The aspect of the Parthenon exhibits, more than history, the colossal grandeur of a people. Pericles ought not to die! What superhuman civilisation was that which found a great man to order, an architect to conceive, a sculptor to decorate, statuary to execute, workmen to hew, a people to pay, and eyes to comprehend and admire, such an edifice! Where shall a like epoch and people be found again? Nothing announces it. As the human race gets older, it loses the sap, the mood, the disinterestedness, necessary for the arts! The Propylæa, the temple of Erechthens, or that of the Cariatides, are beside the Parthenon. They are themselves masterpieces, but drowned in that masterpiece; the soul, struck with too violent a shock at the sight of the first of these edifices, has no longer strength to admire the others; one has to look and go away, lamenting less the devastation of this superhuman work of man, than the impossibility of man ever equalling its sublimity and harmony. It is revelations such as these that heaven does not give twice to the earth—it is like the poem of Job, or the Song of Songs, like the poem of Homer, or the music of Mozart. It is done, seen, and heard; then it is done, seen, and heard no more, till the consummation of ages. Happy the men through whom these divine breathings pass—they die, but they have proved to man what man can be; and God recalls them to himself to celebrate him elsewhere, and in a language more powerful still! I wandered the whole day, mute amidst these ruins, and I returned with my eyes dazzled by figures and colours, and my heart full of recollections and admiration! The Gothic style is beautiful, but order and light are wanting to it—order and light, those two principles of every eternal creation! Adieu for ever to the Gothia!

Of all books the most difficult to make, in my opinion is a translation. Now, to travel is to translate; it is to translate to the eye, thought, and soul of the reader, the places, colours, impressions, and sentiments which nature or human monuments give to the traveller. He must be able, at the same time, to look, to feel, and

to express; and how to express!—not with lines and colours like the painter—a simple and easy matter; not with sounds like the musician; but with words, with ideas, which contain neither sounds, nor lines, nor colours. Such were the reflections which I made, seated on the steps of the Parthenon, having before my view Athens and the olive wood of the Piræus, and the blue sea of Ægea, and over my head the majestic shadows of the frieze of the temple of temples. I wished to carry away for myself a living memorandum, a written memorandum, of this moment of my life! I felt that this chaos of marble so sublime, so picturesque to my sight, would vanish from my memory, and I wished to be able to find it again amid the common-place of my future life. Let us write, then: it will not be the Parthenon, but it will be at least a shade of that great shade that hovers this day above me.

From the midst of the ruins, which were Athens, and which the cannon of the Greeks and Turks have pulverised and scattered over the whole valley, and over the two hills to which the city of Minerva extended, a mountain rises precipitous on all sides. Enormous walls surround it, built at their base with fragments of white marble, higher up with the wreck of ancient friezes and columns, and terminated in some places by Venetian battlements. This mountain resembles an enormous pedestal, hewn out by the gods themselves for supporting their altars. Its summit, levelled to receive the floors of the temples, is scarcely five hundred feet in length by two or three hundred feet in breadth. It commands all the hills that formed the ancient ground of Athens and the valleys of Pentilicæus, and the course of the Ilissus, and the plain of the Piræus, and the chain of dales and peaks which curves and extends as far as Corinth, and finally, the sea, strewed with the islands of Salamis and Ægina, where shine on the summit the pediments of the Temple of Jupiter Panhellenicus. This view is even, at this day, admirable, although all these hills are naked, and reflect like polished brass the reverberated rays of the sun of Attica. But what a spectacle must Plato have had from this spot under his view, when Athens, living and clothed with her thousand inferior temples, murmured at his feet like an overflowing live; when the great wall of the Piræus traced to the very sea an avenue of stone and marble, full of movement, and where the population of Athens were passing and repassing incessantly like waves; when the Piræus itself, and the port of Phaleros, and the sea of Athens, and the gulf of Corinth, were covered with forests of masts or with glittering sails; when the sides of all the mountains, from those that hide Marathon as far as the Acropolis of Corinth, an amphitheatre of forty leagues in a semi-circle, were diversified with forests, pastures, olives, and vines, and when the villages and towns decorated on all sides this splendid belt of mountains!

I see from here the thousand roads that descended from these mountains, traced on the flanks of the Hymettus, through all the sinuosities of the gorges and valleys, that all come, like beds of torrents, to discharge themselves into Athens. I hear the noises that rise from the town, the blows of the hammer from the workmen in the marble quarries of Mount Pentilicæus, the rolling of the blocks which tumble along the slopes of its precipices, and all those sounds that fill with life and bustle the approaches to a great capital. On the side of the town, I see ascending by the sacred way, cut out in the very flank of the Acropolis the religious population of Athens, coming to implore Minerva, and to burn the incense to all their domestic divinities, in the very place where I am now seated, and where I breathe only the dust of the temples.

Let us rebuild the Parthenon; that is easy, for it has lost only its frieze and its interior compartments. The exterior walls chiselled by Phidias, the columns, or the wrecks of the columns, are still there. The Parthenon was entirely constructed of white marble, called Pentilicæan marble, from the name of the neighbouring mountainence it was brought. It consisted of an oblong, ded by a peristyle of forty-six columns of the

Doric order. Each column is six feet in diameter at its base, and thirty-four feet in height. The columns rest on the very pavement of the temple, and have no base. At each extremity of the temple, there exists, or did exist, a portico of six columns. The total dimensions of the edifice were 228 feet in length by 102 in breadth; the height was 66 feet. It presented to the eye only the majestic simplicity of its architectural lines. It was a single idea in stone, one and intelligible at a look, like the idea of the ancients. You had to approach it in order to contemplate the richness of the materials, and the inimitable perfection of the ornaments and details. Pericles had been desirous to make it as much an assemblage of all the masterpieces of genius and of human workmanship, as a homage to the gods, or rather, it was Greek genius all entire, offering itself under this emblem, as itself a homage to the Divinity. The names of all those who carved one stone, or modelled one statue of the Parthenon, have become immortal.

Let us forget the past, and let us now look around us, now that centuries, and the war of barbarous religions, and ignorant nations, have been trampling it under foot for more than 2000 years.

There are only wanting a few columns to the forest of white columns: they have fallen, in entire and glittering blocks, on the pavements or on the neighbouring temples: some, like the great oaks in the forest of Fontainebleau, have remained leaning on the other columns; others have slid from the top of the parapet which encircles the Acropolis, and lie, in enormous shattered blocks, one above another, as do in a quarry those parings of the blocks which the architect has rejected. Their flanks are gilt with that sunny coating which the lapse of ages spreads over marble; their fractures are as white as ivory freshly turned. They form, on this side of the temple, a streaming chaos of marble, of all shapes and colours, thrown or piled up in the most singular and most majestic disorder: from a distance one might fancy he saw the foam of enormous waves that were breaking and whitening on a headland beaten by the sea. The eye cannot tear itself away from the view of them; we follow, admire, and lament them, with that feeling which we should have for beings who might have had, or who might still have, the sentiment of existence. It is the most sublime effect of ruins that men have ever been able to produce, because it is the ruin of what they ever made most beautiful!

If we enter under the peristyle and porticoes, we might believe ourselves to be still at the moment when the edifice was being finished; the interior walls are so well preserved, the face of the marble so shining and polished, the columns so straight, the preserved parts of the edifice so wonderfully free from all damage, that the whole seems to be springing forth from the hands of the workman; only the heaven sparkling with light is the sole roof of the Parthenon, and through the chasms in the faces of the walls, the eye plunges into the immense and voluminous landscape of Attica. The whole soil around is strewed with fragments of sculpture, or with morsels of architecture, which seem to wait for the hand that is to raise them to their place in the monument that waits for them. The feeble strike incessantly against the masterpieces of the Greek chisel—you pick them up, and then throw them down again, to pick up one more curious; you at length tire of this useless labour; the whole is but a masterpiece pulverised. Your footsteps print themselves in a dust of marble; you at length view it with indifference, and remain mute and insensible, overwhelmed in the contemplation of the whole, and in the thousand thoughts that arise from each of these fragments. These thoughts are of the very nature of the scene where you breathe them; they are grave, like these ruins of times passed away—like these majestic witnesses to the nothingness of human nature; but they are serene as the sky that is over our heads, inundated with a pure and harmonious light, elevated like that pedestal of the Acropolis, which seems to hover on high over the earth; resigned and religious like this monument erected to a

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

vine idea, which God has allowed to crumble before him make way for ideas more divine! I feel no sadness; my soul is light, though meditative; my thoughts embrace the order of the divine will, and of human statutes; she admires that it should have been given to man to raise himself so high in the arts and in a material civilisation; she conceives how God may have then broken that admirable mould of an incomplete idea; how the unity of God, recognised at length by Socrates in these very places, may have withdrawn the breath of life from all those religions which the imagination of the early ages gave birth to; how these temples may have fallen on their gods: the idea of the only God is worth more than these dwellings of marble, where only his shadow was worshipped. That idea has no need of temples built by human hand: entire nature is the temple where it worships!

In proportion as religions become spiritualised, the temples disappear; Christianity herself, which constructed the Gothic to animate it with her breath, leaves her admirable cathedrals to fall insensibly into ruins. The thousands of statues of her demigods descend by degrees from their aerial niches around her cathedrals; she is transformed also, and her temples become more naked and more simple as she divests herself more and more of the superstitions of her ages of darkness, and resumes more the great principle which she propagated on earth—the principle of the one only God, proved by reason and adored by virtue!

VISIT TO THE PACHA.

On the evening of the 20th, I went to thank Yousof, the Bey of Negropont and Athens; I entered a Moorish-looking court; the wide galleries of the two stories were supported by little columns of black marble. A waterless fountain was in the centre of the court; and stables all around. I ascended a wooden staircase, on the landing of which were ranged several *spahis*, and I was introduced to the bey. At the extremity of a spacious and rich apartment, decorated with wainscoting in little compartments painted in flowers, in Arabesque and in gold, in the corner of a large Indian cloth ottoman, the bey was seated in the Turkish fashion; his head was under the hands of his hair-dresser, a fine young man dressed in a very rich military costume, and having superb arms in his belt; eight or ten slaves, in different attitudes, were scattered about the apartment. The bey desired my pardon to be asked for allowing himself to be surprised at the moment of his toilet, and begged me to be seated on the ottoman not far from him. I sat down, and the conversation commenced. We spoke regarding the object of my journey, the condition of Greece, the new boundaries assigned by the conference at London, the negotiations concluded by Mr Stratford Canning, all of them subjects about which the bey appeared to be in profound ignorance, and regarding which he interrogated me with the liveliest interest. After a short while, a slave carrying a long pipe, the end of which was of yellow amber, and the tube covered with plaited silk, approached me with measured steps and downcast looks: when he had exactly calculated to himself the precise distance of the point of the floor at which he should apply the pipe to my mouth, he pointed it to the ground, and walking circularly so as not to derange it from its perpendicular, he came towards me by a half turn, and, bowing, delivered into my hands the amber extremity, within reach of my lips. I bowed in my turn towards the pacha, who returned my salute, and we commenced smoking. A white Athenian greyhound, with yellow paws and tail, was sleeping at the feet of the bey. I complimented him on the beauty of this animal, and asked him if he was a sportsman. He answered in the negative, but said that his son, who was then at Negropont, was passionately fond of this exercise; he added, that he had seen me passing in the streets of Athens with a greyhound, which was white also, but of a smaller breed; that he thought it excessively beautiful, and that, if I had several of the same kind, he would be overjoyed at

possessing one. I promised, on my return to my native country, to transmit him one to Athens, in testimony of my remembrance and my gratitude for his kind attentions. Another slave then brought the coffee, in very small China cups, themselves contained in small network of gilt silver-thread.

The expression of this Turk had that character which I have since recognised in all the Mussulman countenances which I have had occasion to see in Syria and Turkey—nobleness, mildness, and that calm and serene resignation which these men derive from the doctrine of predestination, and which true Christians acquire from faith in providence. There is here the same adoration of the divine will; but the one is pushed to absurdity and error, while the other is the sad and true avowal of that universal and merciful wisdom which presides over the destiny of all that it has designed to create. If an opinion, held from conviction, could be considered a virtue, fatalism, or rather providentism, would be mine! I believe in the ever-acting and ever-present energy, of the will of God—it is the evil in us that alone opposes this divine will in always producing good! Whenever our destiny is changed, or injured, or perverted, if we consider well, we shall always recognise that it is through a will of our own, a human will, that is to say, a corrupt and perverse one; if we would allow the only ever-good will to act, we should be always good and always happy ourselves!—evil would not exist! Those dogmas of the Koran are but the Christian doctrine modified, but that modification has not been able to degenerate them. That worship of theirs is full of virtues, and I love this people, because they are a people of prayer!

August 22.—I have suffered deep anxiety regarding my daughter's health. I have had a sorrowful walk to the temple of Jupiter Olympus, and to the Stadia. I drank from the waters of the muddy and infectious stream which is the Ilissus! I scarcely found enough of water to dip my finger. Aridity, nakedness, and the tinge of iron-dross, are spread over all that plain of Athens! Oh ye plains of Rome, ye gilded tombs of the Scipios, thou green and sombre fountain of Egeria!—what a difference! And how the sky also surpasses at Rome the so much vaunted sky of Attica!

August 23.—We sailed in the evening. We enjoyed a beautiful twilight under the olive groves of the Piræus, on going to sea.

The brig of war, *Le Génie*, Captain Cuneo d'Ornano, was waiting for us, and we got under way. A fine breeze from the northward carried us in three hours abreast of the cape of Sunium, whose yellow columns we saw marking out on the horizon the ever-living trace of the organ of Grecian wisdom, of that Plato whose disciple I would have been if Christ had not spoken, nor lived, nor suffered, nor forgiven when expiring.

We passed a dreadful night in the midst of the Cyclades, but the wind abated at break of day. We had had fine, smooth sailing till the evening. At night we encountered a furious squall between the island of Amorgos, and that of Stampalia. There was the doleful groaning of the vessel, and the dull sound of the wave as it beat against our stern. The roll of the vessel threw us now on one billow, then on another. I spent the night in watching the child, and walking on the deck. What a distressing night! How often I shuddered on thinking that I had staked so many lives on a single chance! How happy I would have been, if a celestial spirit had transported Julia away to the peaceful retreat of Saint-Point! My own life, now half spent, has lost more than half its value to myself!—but that life, which is mine also, which gleams in her beautiful eyes, which beats in that young heart, is a hundred times dearer to me than my own!—it is for that life especially that I pray with fervour the blast that sets the waves in commotion, to spare that effluve which I have so imprudently trusted it to. It hears me!—the billows smoothen, the day appears, the islands fly behind us; Rhodes shows itself on the right, in the foggy distance of the horizon of Asia; and the lofty peaks of the coast of Caramania, white as the Alpine snow, rise

rependant above the floating clouds of night. Hero, then, is Asia!

The impression surpasses that from the horizons of Greece;—one feels a milder atmosphere; the sea and the sky are tinged with a calmer and paler blue; nature defines herself in more majestic masses! I breathe, and feel my entrance into a wider and loftier region! Greece is small—it is tormented and despoiled—it is the skeleton of a dwarf!—here is that of a giant! Dark forests stain the sides of the mountains of Marmoriza, and one sees from afar white torrents of foam falling into the profound ravines of Caranania. 14892

Rhodes springs up like a verdant nosegay from the bosom of the waves; the light and graceful minarets of its white mosques rear themselves above its forests of palms, carobs, sycamores, planes, and fig-trees; they attract from a distance the mariner's eye to those delicious retreats of the Turkish cemeteries, where are to be seen, every evening, Mussulmans stretched out on the turf that covers the tomb of their friends, and quietly smoking and chatting, like sentries waiting till they are relieved, like indolent men that love to lie down in bed, and make an essay of sleep before the hour of their last repose. At ten o'clock in the morning, our brig was suddenly surrounded by five or six Turkish frigates, under full sail, that were cruising off Rhodes. One of them approached within hail, and interrogated us in French; they saluted us politely, and we soon came to an anchor in the roadstead of Rhodes, in the midst of thirty-six men-of-war of the Capitan-Pacha, Halil Pacha. Two French vessels of war, one a steamer, *Le Sphinx*, commanded by Captain Sarlat, the other a corvette, *L'Actéon*, commanded by Captain Vaillant, were lying at anchor not far from us. The officers came on board to ask us the news from Europe. In the evening we delivered our thanks to M. d'Ornano, the commander of the brig *Le Génie*—he proceeded on his return with the *Actéon*. We were now to continue our voyage alone to Cyprus and Syria.

I passed two days at Rhodes in examining this first specimen we had of a Turkish town—the oriental character of the bazaars, or Moorish shops, of carved wood—the street of the Knights, where every house still preserves uninjured, over the door, the cseuthecons of the ancient families of France, Spain, Italy, and Germany. Rhodes presents some fine remains of its antique fortifications; the rich Asiatic vegetation with which they are crowned and enveloped, imparts to them more grace and beauty than those of Malta can lay claim to—an Order that could allow itself to be expelled from such a magnificent possession, received its death-blow! Heaven seems to have formed this island as an advanced post on Asia—a European power that should be mistress of it, would hold at the same time the key of the Archipelago, of Greece, Smyrna, the Dardanelles, and of the Egyptian and Syrian seas. I know not in the world either a finer military maritime position, or a lovelier sky, or a more smiling and fertile land. The Turks have impressed upon them that character of inaction and indolence which they carry everywhere! Every thing here is in a state of inertia, and in what may be called misery: but this people, who create nothing, who renew nothing, never break nor destroy any thing either—they at least allow nature to act freely around them—they respect trees even in the very middle of the streets, and of the houses which they inhabit; water and shade, the lulling murmur and voluptuous coolness, are their first, their only wants. Thus, as soon as you approach a land possessed by Mahomedans, whether in Europe or in Asia, you recognise from afar the rich and sombre verdure which covers it, the trees for shade, the spouting fountains for lulling to repose, the silence, and the mosques with their light minarets rising at every step from the bosom of religious soil—it is all that is necessary to this people. They leave this soft and philosophic apathy at their desert coursers, the first servants

fearlessly to rush upon death for their dear God. The dogma of fatalism has bravest people on the earth, and although

existence may be to them both light and pleasant, that promised by the Koran as the reward of a life given up for its sake is the more prized, from their requiring but one weak effort to throw themselves from this to the celestial world, which they see before them redolent in beauty, repose, and love! It is the religion of heroes!—but this religion grows faint in the faith of the Mussulman, and heroism is extinguished with the faith which is its principle, so that as the people shall believe less either in a dogma or an idea, they will die less willingly and less nobly. It is as in Europe; why die if life avails more than death, if there is no immortal gain from the sacrifice to duty? Thus war will diminish and be abolished in Europe, until some faith shall reanimate and move the heart of man more highly than the base instinct of life.

The forms of women seated on the terraces by the light of the moon, are ravishing to behold. There is the eye of the Italian women, but softer, more timid, expressing more of tenderness and love; there is the figure of the Grecian women, but more rounded, more supple, with more gracious and winning motions. Their forehead is large, white, and polished, like that of the most beautiful women of England or of Switzerland, but the regular, straight, and high profile of the nose, gives to the countenance more majesty and nobleness. The Greek sculptors would have been yet more perfect, if they had taken their models of female figures from Asia! How sweet is it for a European, accustomed to the hard features, the studied and contracted expression of the women of Europe, especially of drawing-room women, to behold countenances as simple, pure, and smooth, as the marble broken from the quarry—countenances which have but one expression, the repose of tenderness, and which the eye can scan as quickly, and as easily, as the large type of some magnificent publication.

Society and civilisation are evidently enemies of physical beauty. They multiply impressions and sentiments too much; and as the features receive and involuntarily preserve their marks, they become complicated, and, as it were, adulterated; they acquire a certain confusion and uncertainty, which destroy their simplicity and their charm; they are like a tongue too full of words, which is inarticulate because it is too rich.

August 27.—We set sail from Rhodes for Cyprus on a splendid afternoon. I have my eyes turned upon Rhodes, which sinks at last into the sea. I regret this beautiful island as an apparition one wishes to recall; I could have settled there, if it were less separated from the moving world in which destiny and duty compel us to live! What delicious retreats on the sides of the high mountains, and on the declivities, shaded by all the trees of Asia! I was shown a magnificent house belonging to the former pacha, surrounded by three extensive and abundant gardens, bathed by numerousountains, and adorned with ravishing kiosks. They asked 16,000 piastres for the purchase, that is to say, 4000 francs (£165)—happiness at a cheap rate!

August 28.—The sea is beautiful, but dull, and no wind; immense waves come from the west, rolling majestically on our stern, and throwing us, during three days and nights, from one side to the other. A motion, without result, is an insupportable martyrdom!—it is rolling the cask of the infernal regions! On the fourth day we perceive the eastern point of Cyprus; to run along the island takes up a day; we do not cast anchor in the road of Larnaca before the morning of the sixth day.

M. Bottu, French consul at Cyprus, recognises the vessel in which he knows we embarked. He sends on board one of the persons of his consularship to invite us to his house, and receive a hospitality to which we had no other right than his obliging and amiable disposition. I accept; we disembark: excellent and cordial reception from Monsieur and Madame Bottu; M. Perthier, and M. Guillois, attachés of the consulate, greet us with the same forwardness to oblige; we give and receive visits;—receive as presents, coffee, and wine of Cyprus, sent by M. Mathei, one of the Cyprian magnates.

August 31.—We passed two days at Cyprus, enjoying the delights of repose after a long voyage, with the most unexpected and most amiable attentions of hospitality. Such was the state of my mind at Cyprus; but that was all. This land, which had been pictured to me as an oasis amongst the islands of the Mediterranean, bears a complete resemblance to all the cropped, dull, and naked islands of the Archipelago; it is the carcase of one of those enchanted isles, where antiquity placed the scene of its most poetical rites. It is true, that in a hurry to arrive in Asia, I visited only with the eye the distant and picturesque scenes of which this island, as they say, is so full: on my return I must make a month's stay, and traverse in detail the mountains of Cyprus.

The island is fertile in all parts; oranges, olives, grapes, figs, vines, cotton, all succeed, even the sugarcane. This land of promise, this beautiful kingdom for a knight of the Crusades, or for a companion of Bonaparte, formerly contained 2,000,000 of people; there are now only 30,000 Greek inhabitants, and some Turks. Nothing would be more easy than to seize upon this sovereignty; an adventurer would succeed without trouble, with a handful of soldiers, and some millions of piastres; it would be worth the trouble, if there were a chance of preserving it; but Europe, which has so much occasion for colonies, is opposed to making them; the jealousy of the powers would come to the assistance of the Turks, scatter discord in the new conquest, and the victor would suffer the fate of king Theodore. What a pity!—it is a delightful dream, and a weak man may convert it into reality!

At sea: departure from the Isle of Cyprus, the 2d of September.—We hoisted sail yesterday at midnight. Our Cyprian friends, M. M. Botin and Perthier, passed the evening with us on the deck of the brig, and did not quit us till midnight. We are impressed with the liveliest sentiments of gratitude for the truly amicable welcome given us by M. and Madame Botin. The traveller's fate is a singular one; he every where plants his affections, recollections, and regrets; he never quits a shore without indulging the desire, and the hope of returning to it, to seek again those whom he did not know a few days before. When he arrives, every thing is indifferent to him on the land he looks upon; when he departs, he feels that there are eyes and hearts which follow him from that shore, which he sees receding from him. He himself fixes his look upon it; he leaves there a part of his own heart; then the wind bears him to another horizon, where the same scenes, the same impressions, are renewed for him. To travel is to multiply, by arrival and departure, by greetings and farewells, impressions which the events of a sedentary life give only at rare intervals; it is to experience a hundred times in a year a little of what one finds in ordinary life from knowing, loving, and losing beings cast in our route by Providence. Departing, as it is were to die, for we quit distant countries where fate does not conduct the traveller a second time. Travelling, is summing up a long life in a few years; it is one of the strongest exercises a man can give his heart and his mind. The philosopher, the politician, the poet, should all have travelled much. Changing the moral horizon is to change thought.

September 3.—We arise in the wide sea. We no longer behold the white coasts of the island, or the rounded summit of Olympus. The sea is calm as a vast lake; a thick and silvery mist covers the horizon on all sides. A feeble breeze, lazy and inconstant, comes at intervals to exhaust itself in our large sails. The sun scorches the planks of the deck, which we water to cool it. Every one is extended on the beams or the ropes, speechless, motionless, the forehead streaming with perspiration. The air fails for respiration; it is a veritable snuinoon on the sea. It appears as if we breathe in advance the oppressive and burning blast of the desert, from which we are yet a hundred and fifty leagues. Thus the days are passed. We have no power to speak, not even to read. I sometimes open the Bible to seek what is related of Lebanon, the first height which

must soon strike our eyes. I read the history of Herod in Josephus.

September 4.—The same absence of wind; the same burning sky. The sea smokes with heat, and its dead waters are veiled by a mist which no wind stirs. We follow, till out of sight, the slight ripple which some expiring breeze causes on its surface; we see a light air slowly approaching the brig, giving a little colour to the sea; it imparts a momentary swelling to the large sails; the vessel creaks, and raises a little foam at its prow. Our breasts are expanded; we draw near the quarter from which the breeze has come. We feel an air of coolness pass along our foreheads, and beneath the moist curls of our hair; and then all returns into stillness and the accustomed stifling heat. The water we drink is tepid; no one has force to eat. If this state were prolonged, man could not long survive. Happily we have only six weeks of heat to fear; it will be over by the middle of October.

September 4, evening.—From five till eight o'clock, a fresh breeze out of the gulf of Alexandretta has pushed us on a few leagues. We must be nearly one-half of the way between Cyprus and the coast of Syria; perhaps to-morrow, on rising, we shall have it in sight.

September 5.—I heard, on getting up, the slight murmur produced by a vessel moving forward. I hasten on deck to see the coast; but we can see nothing yet. The frequent currents of this sea may have carried us far from our reckoning; we were perhaps on the low shores of Idumea or of Egypt. We were all becoming impatient.

Same date, two o'clock.—The captain of the brig has distinguished the tops of Mount Lebanon. He calls me to show them; I seek them in vain through the heated mist where his finger points. I can see nothing but the fog which the heat raises, and above, some clouds of a dull white. He insists; I look again, but in vain. All the sailors show me Lebanon, laughing; the captain does not understand how I do not see it like him. "But where are you looking for it?" said he to me; "you are looking too far; here, nearer, above our heads!" I raised my eyes towards the sky, and I perceived in reality the white and gilded crest of Samin, which stretched in the firmament above us. The mist of the sea prevented me from seeing its base and sides. Its head alone appeared, glorious and serene in the blue of heaven. It conveyed one of the most magnificent and delightful impressions I have felt in my long travels. There was the land to which all my immediate thoughts tended, as a man and as a traveller; there was the sacred land, the land to which I was going from such a distance to seek the recollections of primitive humanity; and, then, it was the land also where I was about to bring to repose, in a delicious climate, beneath the shade of oranges and palms, on the edges of snow-torrents, on fresh and verdant hills, all that I held dearest in the world—my wife and Julia. I did not doubt that a year or two passed under this lovely sky, would strengthen the health of Julia, which for the last six months had sometimes given me gloomy forebodings. I saluted these mountains of Asia as an asylum where God led her to cure her; a silent and profound joy filled my heart; I could not draw my eyes from Lebanon.

We dine under the awning stretched over the deck. The breeze continues, and increases as the sun goes down. At every instant we run to the prow to calculate the progress of the vessel by the noise which it makes in cutting the sea; the wind becomes at length more brisk, the waves curl; we make five knots an hour; the sides of the lofty mountains pierce the mist, and show themselves as airy capes before us; we begin to distinguish the deep and black valleys which open from the coasts; the ravines grow whiter, the tops of the rocks are clearly discerned; the first hills which rise from the sea are rounding their forms; by degrees we think we recognise the villages scattered on the declivities of the hills, and the great monasteries which crown, like Gothic castles, the summits of the intermediate mountains. Every object that our vision seizes, creates heartfelt joy. Every body is on deck; each

makes his neighbour remark something that had previously escaped him; one sees the cedars of Lebanon as a black spot on the sides of a mountain; another, as a tower on the top of the mountains of Tripoli; some even think they can distinguish the foam of the cascades as they fall down the precipices. We wished to reach the shore so long dreamed of, so long desired, before night; we fear, that at the moment of reaching it, a fresh calm may keep the vessel for days slumbering on the waves which are become fatiguing, or that a contrary wind may spring up from the coast, and drive us back upon the sea of Candia; this sea of Syria, an immense gulf surrounded by the lofty summits of Lebanon and Taurus, is so perfidious to mariners: there is nothing but tempests, calms, or currents; the currents drive vessels very far from their course, and there are no ports on the coast; it is necessary to come to anchor in dangerous roads, at a great distance from the shore; an almost constant surge disturbs these roads and cuts the anchors; we shall not be tranquil, and sure of having arrived, until we are actually on land. Whilst we are making all these reflections, and wavering between hope and fear, night all at once falls—not as in our climates with the slowness and measure of twilight, but like a curtain drawn over the heavens and over the earth. All disappears, all is effaced on the blackened sides of Lebanon, and we see nothing more than the stars between which our masts are swinging. The wind falls also, the sea sleeps, and we go down into our cabins in great uncertainty for to-morrow.

I did not sleep; my mind was too much agitated: I heard through the ill-joined planks which separated my chamber from Julia's, the breathing of my sleeping child, and all my heart reposed upon her. I thought that to-morrow, perhaps, I should sleep more tranquilly, having my mind more at ease as to a life so dear, which I repented of having thus hazarded upon the sea, which a tempest might carry off in its bloom. I prayed God, in my thoughts, to pardon me this act of imprudence, not to punish me for having confided too much in him, for having asked from him more than I had any right to do. I became reassured; I said to myself, There is a visible angel who protects at once her destiny and that of us all. Heaven will count her innocence and purity as a ransom; it will carry us forward, it will bring us back, on her account. She will have seen, at the best age of life, at that age in which all the impressions incorporate themselves, so to speak, with us, and become the very elements of our existence, all that is beautiful in nature, in creation. The recollections of her infancy will be the wonderful monuments, the chief works of art, in Italy; Athens and the Parthenon will be engraved in her memory, like paternal spots; the beautiful islands of the Archipelago, Mount Taurus, the mountains of Lebanon, Jerusalem, the Pyramids, the Desert, the tents of Arabia, the palm trees of Mesopotamia, will be the recitals of her advanced age. God has given her loveliness, innocence, genius, and a heart moved by generous and sublime sentiments; I shall have given her what I could add to these celestial gifts—the sight of scenes the most marvellous, the most filled with enchantment, on the earth! What a being she will be at twenty years old! All will have been happiness, piety, love, and marvel in her life. Oh, who will be worthy of completing it by love! I wept, and prayed with fervour and confidence, for I can never entertain a powerful sentiment in the heart but it tends to the infinite, but it resolves itself into a hymn, or an invocation to him who is the end of all our sentiments, to him who produces and absorbs them all—to God.

As I was about to fall asleep, I heard on deck some hurried steps, as if preparing for a manœuvre; I was astonished, for the silence had been unbroken for some time, and the sea only made that slight rippling noise which indicated the vessel moving onwards. Shortly, I heard the sonorous rings of the anchor-chain heavily pulled from the capstan; then I felt that sudden shock which makes the whole ship vibrate, when the anchor

has fallen upon a solid bottom and digs into the sand or sea-weed. I got up, and opened my narrow window. We had arrived; we were in the road before Beirut; I saw some lights scattered upon the distant shore; I heard the barkings of dogs on the plain. It was the first noise which had come to me from the coast of Asia, and it rejoiced my heart. It was midnight. I returned thanks to God, and I sank into a deep and quiet sleep; no person but myself had been aroused below deck.

September 6: nine o'clock in the morning.—We were before Beirut, one of the best peopled towns on the coast of Syria, the ancient Berytus, made a Roman colony under Augustus, who gave it the name of *Felix Julia*. The epithet of "Fortunate" was bestowed upon it, on account of the fertility of its surrounding lands, of its incomparable climate, and of the magnificence of its situation. The town occupies a delightful hill, which sweeps with a gentle declivity to the sea; some banks of earth or of rocks advance into the waves, and support the Turkish fortifications, with an effect truly picturesque; the road is shut in by a tongue of land which defends it from the eastern winds. The whole of this tongue of land, as well as the neighbouring hills, is covered with the richest vegetation; mulberry trees for silkworms are planted all around, raised in rows one above the other, upon artificial terraces; carob trees, with their dark verdure and majestic dome; fig-trees, palms, oranges, pomegranates, and a quantity of other trees and shrubs foreign to our climates, extend on all parts of the shore near the sea the harmonious tints of their foliage. At a greater distance, upon the acclivities of the mountains, forests of olives strew the country with their grey and ashy leaves. At about a league from the town, the high mountains of the chain of Lebanon begin to rise; they open their deep gorges where the eye loses itself in the distant darkness; they cast down their broad torrents, which become rivers; they stretch in different directions, some towards Tyre and Sidon, others towards Tripoli and Latakia, and their unequal summits, lost in the clouds, or whitened by the refraction of the sun's rays, resemble our Alps covered with eternal snows.

The quay of Beirut, which the waves wash without ceasing, and sometimes cover with foam, was filled with a crowd of Arabs in all the splendour of their striking costumes, and of their arms. We perceived a movement as active as on the quays of our large maritime towns. Several European vessels were at anchor near us in the road; and the chaloupes, bearing merchandise from Damascus and Bagdad, came and went between the shore and the ships incessantly. The houses of the town arose in confused groups, the roofs of the lower serving as terraces for the upper ones. These houses with flat roofs, and some of them with turreted balustrades, the bars of painted wood which closed the windows hermetically with the veil of eastern jealousy, the tops of palm-trees, which appeared to spring from the stones, and showed themselves even under the roofs, as if to carry a little verdure to the eyes of the females, prisoners in the harems—all this captivated us, and announced the East. We heard the sharp cry of the Arabs of the desert who were disputing upon the quay, and the harsh and doleful groans of the camels, as they made them bend their knees to receive their loads. Occupied with this spectacle, so new and captivating to our eyes, we did not think of disembarking into our new country. The flag of France, however, floated on the top of a mast on one of the most elevated houses in the town, and appeared to invite us to go and repose ourselves, after our long and painful voyage, under its protection.

But there were too many of us, and we had too much luggage to risk the disembarkation before reconnoitring the country and choosing a house, if we could procure one. I left my wife, Julia, and two of my companions, in the brig, and I caused the boat to be lowered, to go on shore and make inquiries.

In a few minutes I reached the sand through the smooth and silvery water, and some Arabs with naked legs carried me in their arms to the bottom of a gloomy

and steep street which led to the French consulate. The consul, M. Guys, for whom I had letters, and whom I had already seen at Marseilles, was not arrived. I found in his place M. Jorelle, the acting member of the consulate, and French dragoman in Syria, a young man whose pleasing and amiable countenance bespoke our good opinion, and whose kindness during our long stay in Syria justified this first impression. He offered us a part of the consular house as a first asylum, and promised to have inquiries made in the environs of the town for a house where we could establish our household. In a few hours, the boats of several vessels, and the porters of Beirut, under the guardianship of the consular janissaries, had effected the landing of our party and of our baggage of all description; and before night we were all on shore, temporarily lodged and rendered comfortable by the care and attentions of M. and Madame Jorelle. That is a delightful moment, in which, after a long and stormy passage, when just arrived in an unknown land, you cast your eyes from a perfumed and smiling terrace upon the element which you have at last quitted for a long time, upon the ship which has brought you through the tempests, and which is yet leaving in the billows, upon the shady and quiet country which surrounds you, upon all those scenes in life on shore which seem so sweet when you have been long a stranger to them. We enjoyed this contemplation all the evening. Madame Jorelle, a young and charming woman born at Aleppo, had preserved the rich and noble costume of the Arab females; the turban, the embroidered vest, the dagger in the girdle: we never ceased for a moment admiring this magnificent costume, which so much heightened her truly oriental beauty.

When night was come, we were served with a supper in the European fashion, in a kiosk, the large latticed windows of which opened on the port, and in which the refreshing breeze of evening played round the lights. I opened a case of French wine, which I added to this hospitable entertainment, and we thus passed our first evening in conversation upon the two countries, that which we quitted and that which we came to visit: an inquiry respecting France was answered by a question upon Asia. Julia played with the long tresses of some Arab women, or of some black slaves who came to wait upon us; she admired the costumes so new to her; and her mother wove into tresses the long curls of her fair hair, in imitation of the Beirut ladies, or converted her shawl into a turban for the head. I have seen nothing more ravishing amongst all the female faces which are engraven in my memory, than the countenance of Julia thus dressed in the turban of Aleppo, with the band of carved gold, from which hung strings of pearls and chains of golden sequins, and her long hair flowing over her shoulders; joined to the surprised look she cast on her mother and me, and her smiles, which seemed to say to us, "See, how handsome I am in this attire!"

After having spoken a hundred times of our country, and repeated all the names of places and of persons which a common recollection brought to our minds—after we had exchanged all the information which could mutually interest us—we talked of poetry; Madame Jorelle begged me to let her hear some pieces of French poetry, and translated herself some fragments of the poetry of Aleppo. I told her that nature was always more perfectly poetical than poets, and that she herself at that moment, at that hour, in so beautiful a spot, in that strange costume, with that eastern pipe in her hand, and the poignard with a diamond hilt at her waist, was a more beautiful subject for the muse than all those which we surveyed by thought alone. And as she answered me that it would be very agreeable to have a memorial of our journey to send to her father at Aleppo, in some verses made for her, I retired for a moment, and I brought back some lines suitable to the place where they were written, and the feeling of gratitude which inspired me.

Child of the East, and dost thou ask a wreath of song from me?—
Thou, nursed where desert-winds pour forth their music wild and free!

Flower of Aleppo's gardens! thou, upon whose opening bloom,
The bulbul* might have loved to chant and languish in perfume!

Who to the balsam-tree brings back the sweets that from it flow?
Or would reflex its bounteous fruits upon the orange-bough?
Who seeks to lend new lustre to the oriental morn?
Or would with added stars of gold night's glittering sky adorn?

No, this is not a place for verse! but if thou lovest well
All that which casts o'er poetry its most enchanting spell,
Look on the waters of this pool,† and there thyself behold—
Compared with loveliness like thine, all verse is weak and cold!

When, placed in the kiosk at night beside the lattice-bars,
Through which creeps, in the ocean-breeze, the light of moon
and stars,
Thou sittest on a mat to which Palmyra lent its gifts,
And whence the Noka's bitter fumes arise in heated drifts;

When to those half-closed lips of thine thy beauteous fingers raise
Thy pipe of jasmine-wood, on which the golden frettings blaze,
And, drinking in the rose's sweet perfume the while, thy mouth
Makes murmurs in the water-cell, as of the breezy south;‡

When the winged mists which hover and embrace thee round
and round

With odorous vapours, have their chain about thy senses wound,
And visions, far-off dreams, of love, and days of youthful glee,
Float round us in the fragrant air exhaled in mists from thee;

When thou descri'st the Arab steed, the spurrier of the sands,
Subjected to the foaming hilt beneath thy child-like hands—
Thy slanting glance so lustrous bright, meanwhile, as to outvie
The soft yet burning brilliancy of his triumphant eye;

When, tapering like the handle of the polished vase, thine arm
Upon thy bended elbow props thy brow of many a charm,
And when a chance reflection of the evening lamp displays
Thy jewelled poignard's hilt and sheath, all bright with diamond
rays—

Then is there nought in all the sounds that language can employ,
Nought in the dreaming brow of those who know the poet's joy,
Nought in the soft sighs of a soul from stain and blemish free,
Nought half so fresh and redolent of poetry as thee!

I have o'erstep the happy time, in which life's flower of bloom,
Love, young love, opens up the heart, and fills it with perfume,
And admiration in my soul, though touched upon the core,
Has nought for beauty but a ray that carries warmth no more!

Alone in this unpassioned heart the harp is now adored:
Yet how would I, in younger years, my verses forth have poured,
For one of those most fragrant wreaths of light and cloudy air,
Which now thy lip sends up to float, unheeded, here and there

Or how should I have joyed to trace that most enchanting mould,
Of which a viewless hand now forms an outline dim and cold,
As night's soft rays, caressing with their light that form of thine,
Sketch on the wall its shadowy grace amid the sweet moonshine!

We could not tear ourselves from this first scene of Arab life. At length we went, for the first time these three months, to repose in beds, and to sleep without fear of the waves. An impetuous wind roared upon the sea, shook the walls of the lofty terrace under which we slept, and made us feel, with a more delicious sensation, the benefits of a tranquil abode after so many joltings. I thought that Julia and my wife were at length, for a long time, beyond the reach of danger, and I cast in my mind the means of preparing for them an agreeable and safe residence, whilst I pursued the course of my journey into those places which I visited in the sequel.

September 7.—I have arisen with the sun. I have opened the shutter of cedar-wood, the sole barrier of the chamber in which we sleep in this beautiful climate. I have cast my first look upon the sea, and upon the glittering line of coast which stretches from Beirut as far as Cape Batroun, half way to Tripolis.

Never has a view of mountains made such an impression upon me. Lebanon has a character which I have not seen either in the Alps or Mount Taurus: it is the mingling of the imposing sublimity of the outlines and the summits, with the gracefulness of the details and the variety of tints—it is a mountain solemn as its

* [The bulbul is the eastern name for the nightingale.]

† [The pool or fountain in the court of an oriental dwelling.]

‡ [The circumstance of a lady wearing a poignard, and of her smoking from a pipe, which contains perfumed wax or oil for cooling the fumes, will not surprise t with eastern manners.]

name—it is the Alps under the sky of Asia, plunging their aerial crests into the deep serenity of an eternal splendour. It appears that the sun reposes for ever upon the gilded angles of these summits; the dazzling whiteness with which it impresses them is confounded with that of the snows, which remain to the middle of summer upon the highest tops. The chain develops itself before the eye for a length of at least sixty leagues, from the Cape of Saïde, the ancient Sidon, to the environs of Latakia, where it begins to decline, in order to leave Mount Taurus to cast its roots into the plain of Alexandretta.

Sometimes the chain of Lebanon rises almost perpendicularly from the sea, with villages and large monasteries suspended upon their precipices; sometimes it retires from the shore, forming immense gulfs, and leaving verdant spots or ridges of sand between it and the waves. Vessels frequent these gulfs, and go to anchor in the numerous roads with which the coast is indented. The sea is there of the bluest and most sombre hue; and although it is always billowy, the waves, which are broad and high, roll in vast circles upon the sands, and reflect the mountains as in a stainless mirror. These waves produce a dull murmur at once harmonious and confused, which mounts to the vines and the carob-trees, and fills the fields with life and stirring sound. To my left the coast of Beirut was low; it was a continuity of little tongues of land crowned with verdure, and only preserved from the overflowing of the sea by a line of rocks and sand, covered for the most part with ancient ruins. Farther on, hillocks of red sand, like that of the Egyptian deserts, jutted out into a promontory, and served as a beacon to mariners; on the summit of this promontory the broad tops of a forest of Italian pines were visible, and the eye, glancing between their scattered trunks, fell upon the sides of another chain of Lebanon, and even upon the advanced sand-bank upon which Tyre (now Sour) was built.

When I turned to the land side, I saw the high minarets of the mosques, like isolated columns, mounting into the undulating azure of the morning; the fortresses which command the town, and from the crevices of their walls a multitude of climbing plants, wild figs, and wall-flowers springing; the round battlements of the fortifications; the level sweep of the mulberry-trees in the fields; here and there the flat roofs and white walls of country-houses, or of the huts of the Syrian peasants; and beyond, the green banks of the Beirut hills, covered with picturesque edifices of every description, Greek convents, Maronite convents, mosques, and santons, and clothed with foliage and tillage, like the most fertile hills of Grenoble, or of Chambéry. Then there was always Mount Lebanon, taking a thousand curves and bends, grouped in gigantic masses, and casting its heavy shadow, or making its snows glitter, over all the scenes of this landscape.

Same date.—I have passed the whole day in traversing the environs of Beirut, and seeking for a place of rest to establish my family.

I have hired five houses, which compose a group, and I shall unite them by wooden staircases, galleries, and doors. Each house here is formed only of a subterranean apartment, serving as a kitchen, and of one chamber, in which the whole family, howsoever numerous, sleep.

In such a climate, the real habitation is the roof turned into a terrace. It is there the women and the children pass the days, and frequently the nights. In front of the houses, between the trunks of mulberry or olive trees, the Arab makes a fire-place with three stones, and his wife prepares his food there. They cast a straw mat over a stick which stretches from the wall to the branches of the tree. Beneath this shade, the household economy is all carried on. The women and the girls are squatted there the whole day, occupied in their long hair, and putting it into tresses, in their veils, in weaving silk, in feeding their fowls, or in playing and chatting amongst themselves. The girls on a Sunday morning in our vil-

lages of the south of France, when they collect at the doors of their dwellings.

Same date, evening.—The whole day has been occupied in unloading the brig, and carrying from the town to our country-house the luggage of our caravan. Each of us will have a chamber. A large grove of mulberries and oranges extends around the five united houses, and affords a few paces for promenade, and a little shade to breathe in, before the door of each. I have purchased Egyptian mats, and Damascus carpets, to serve us for beds and divans. I have found the Arab carpenters very active and intelligent; they are already at work upon the doors and windows, and we shall go this evening to sleep in our new abode.

September 8.—Nothing can be more delicious than our arising after the first night passed in our house. We have had breakfast brought upon the largest of our terraces, and we have looked over our environs.

The house is ten minutes' walk from the town. We arrive by pathways shaded with immense aloes, which hang their prickly fruit upon the heads of those passing under. We go by the side of some antique arches, and an enormous square tower built by the emir of the Druzes, Fakardin, which serves at present as an observatory for the sentinels of Ibrahim Pacha's army, and whence they command the whole country. We afterwards glide between the trunks of mulberries, and come to a group of low houses concealed in the trees, and flanked on both sides by citrons and oranges. These houses are irregular, and the middle one rises like a square tower or pyramid above the others. The roofs of all these little houses communicate by means of some wooden steps, and thus form a whole sufficiently commodious for persons who have just passed so many days beneath the deck of a merchant vessel.

A few hundred paces from us the sea advances into the land, and seen from here, above the green tops of the citron and aloe trees, it resembles a beautiful inland lake, or a large river of which only a portion is observable. Some Arab barks are at anchor, and are gently moved by the insensible undulation. If we ascend the upper terrace, this beautiful lake is expanded into an immense gulf, closed on one side by the Moorish castle of Beirut, and on the other, by the high dark walls of the mountain-chain which extends towards Tripolis. But in front of us the landscape is more extensive. It commences by sweeping over a plain of fields in admirable cultivation, studded with trees which entirely conceal the soil, and here and there with houses similar to our own, raising their roofs like so many white sails in a sea of green; it contracts, afterwards, into a long and agreeable hill, on the summit of which a Greek convent shows its whitened walls and its blue cupolas; some pine-trees rise above the very cupolas of the convent. Down the hill are terraces sustained by stone walls, in which grow olives and mulberries. The sea washes the lowest of the terraces, and then retiring, gives place

a second plain more distant, through which a river meanders amongst a wood of green oaks, and falls into the gulf, which is rendered yellow by its muddy waters. This plain is not terminated until it reaches the sides of the mountains. These mountains do not rise with a single spring; they begin by enormous hills resembling immense blocks, some rounded, others square; a slight vegetation covers the tops of these hills, and each of them bears either a monastery or a village, which reflects the glare of the sun, and attracts the eye. The sides of the hills shine like gold; they are composed of yellow freestone shivered by earthquakes, each particle of which reflects and darts out light. Above these first small mountains, the steps of Lebanon grow broader; there are table-lands of one and two leagues, uneven, broken, cut into ravines, deep beds of torrents, and dark gorges where the eye loses itself. After these table-lands, the high mountains show themselves almost perpendicularly; yet we see the black spots of the cedars and the firs which crown them, and some inaccessible convents, some unknown villages, which appear to hang upon their precipices. At the top of the most pointed of this second chain, some trees, which seem gigantic, are

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

like straggling hairs upon a bald forehead. We distinguish their unequal heights, which are like the elements on a citadel.

Behind this second chain, the real Lebanon at length is; it is not possible to distinguish whether his sides are abrupt or sloping, whether they are naked or covered with vegetation: the distance is too great. The flanks are confounded in the transparency of the atmosphere with the air itself, of which they seem to be a part; we see only the ambient refraction of the sun's rays which obscures them, and their reddened crests, which are confounded with the purple clouds of the morning, hovering like unapproachable islands in the billows of the sky.

If our eyes descend from this sublime horizon of mountains, they find a resting-place only on the majestic groups of palm-trees, planted here and there in the country, near the houses of the Arabs, on the green undulating tops of the larch-pines scattered in small knots upon the plains or the hills, on the nopal hedges, or other thick plants, the heavy leaves of which fall down, as if for decoration, upon the little walls which sustain the terraces. These walls themselves are so covered with lichens in flower, ivy, wild figs, and bulbous plants, flowering in every variety of tint, that we cannot perceive the stones of which the walls are built; they are ramparts only of verdure and flowers.

In fine, near to us, just beneath our eyes, are two or three houses similar to our own, and half hidden by the orange-trees in flower and in fruit, which present to us those animated and picturesque scenes which are the life of every landscape. Arabs, seated upon mats, smoke upon the roofs of the houses. Some women lean on the windows to look at us, and conceal themselves when they perceive that we see them. Under our very terrace two Arab families, fathers, brothers, women and children, take their repast by the shade of a small plane-tree upon the threshold of their houses; and at some paces from them, under another tree, two young Syrian girls of incomparable beauty dress themselves in the open air, and cover their hair with white and red flowers. There is one of them whose hair is so long and bushy that it completely envelopes her, as the branches of a weeping-willow close around the trunk on all sides; we can only perceive her beautiful forehead, and her eyes radiant with simple gaiety, piercing for a moment this natural veil, as she shakes aside the waving hair. She appears to enjoy our admiration; I throw to her a handful of *ghazis*, small pieces of gold, of which the Syrians make necklaces and bracelets, by stringing them on a slip of silk. She joins her hands, and carries them to her head to thank me, and retires into the low chamber to show them to her mother and sister.

September 12.—Habib-Barbara, a Syrian Greek established at Beirut, and whose house is near ours, serves us as dragoman, that is, interpreter. Attached in this quality during twenty years to the different consulates of France, he speaks French and Italian; he is one of the most obliging and intelligent men whom I have met in my travels: without his assistance, and that of M. Jorelle, we should have had infinite difficulty in completing our establishment in Syria; he procures us domestics, both Greek and Arab. I buy at first six Arab horses of the half-blood, and I keep them, like the people of the country, in the open air in a field before the house, the legs fettered by rings of iron fastened to a stake in the earth. I cause a tent to be prepared beside the horses, for the *sais*, or Arab grooms. These men appear quiet and intelligent; as to the animals, in two days they knew us and scented us like dogs. Habib-Barbara presents us to his wife, and to his daughter, who is to be married in a few days; he invites us to the wedding: curious to observe a Syrian marriage, we accept, and Julia prepares her presents for the bride. I give her a small gold watch, of which I have laid in a store for occurrences of this nature; she adds to it a small chain of pearls. We get on horseback to reconnoitre the environs of Beirut; Madame Jorelle mounts a superb Arab horse, caparisoned in blue velvet

plated with silver, a breast-piece of embossed silver cut in garlands, and clanging on the chest of the beautiful animal. M. Jorelle sells me one of his horses for my wife; I get Arab saddles and bridles made for fourteen horses.

About half a league from the town on the east, the Emir Fakardin had planted a forest of spreading pines, upon a sandy ridge which extends between the sea and the plain of Bagdad, a pretty Arab village at the foot of Lebanon. The emir had planted this magnificent forest, it is said, in order to oppose a rampart to the invasion of the immense hillocks of red sand which rise at a little distance, and threaten to overwhelm Beirut and its rich plantations. The forest has become superb; the trunks of the trees are sixty and eighty feet high, and their wide immovable branches stretch from one to another, covering an immense space with their shade; the sand creeps between the trunks, and forms the pleasantest soil for the hoofs of the horses. The rest of the ground is covered with a light downy turf, sprinkled with flowers of the most dazzling red; the roots of wild hyacinth are so large that they are not crushed beneath the iron of the horses' shoes. Through the columns of trunks, we see on one side the white and reddish downs of sand which hide the sea, on the other the plain of Bagdad, and the course of the river into this plain, and a corner of the gulf, looking like a small lake, so much is it lessened by the horizon of land, and the twelve or fifteen Arab villages upon the last slopes of Lebanon, which form the curtain of this scene. The light is so clear, and the air so pure, that we distinguish at several leagues' elevation, the forms of the trees upon the mountains, and the large eagles who float in the ethereal ocean without moving their wings. This wood of pines is certainly the most magnificent of all the spots I have seen in my life. The sky, the mountains, the snows, the blue horizon of the sea, the red and lurid aspect of the desert; the meandering course of the river, the isolated tops of the cypress trees, the clusters of palms in the fields, the delightful appearance of the huts, covered with oranges and vines overhanging the roofs; the austere aspect of the elevated Maronite monasteries, casting alternate shade and light on the chiselled rocks of Lebanon; the caravans of camels loaded with merchandise passing in silence amongst the trees; flocks of poor Jews mounted on asses holding two children on each arm; women enveloped in white veils on horseback, marching to the sound of the fife and the tambour, surrounded by a crowd of children, dressed in red stuffs embroidered with gold, and dancing before their horses; some Arab horsemen throwing the *djerid* around us, upon horses whose manes literally sweep the sand; some groups of Turks seated before a café built in the foliage, and smoking their pipes or performing their devotions; a little farther, the sandy desert hills without end, which are tinged with the golden rays of the evening sun, and from which the wind raises clouds of heated dust; and, in fine, the dull murmur of the sea, which mingles with the musical rustling of the wind amongst the branches of the pines, and with the song of myriads of unknown birds;—all this offers to the eye and the thought of the wanderer, a blending of objects the most sublime and beautiful, and at the same time the most melancholy, which have ever excited my mind; it is the site of my dreams; I will return to it every day.

September 16.—We had passed all these days in the pleasant occupation of making a general knowledge of men, manners, places, and in the amusing details of an establishment, in the bosom of a country so entirely new. Our five houses have become, by the assistance of our friends and Arab workmen, a sort of Italian villa, like those we have inhabited with such delight on the mountains of Lucca, or the coasts of Leghorn, in former times. Each of us has his apartment; and a saloon, having a terrace ornamented with flowers, is the centre of reunion. We have arranged divans there; we have placed on the tables our ship-library; my wife and Julia have painted the walls in fresco, have piled on a cedar table their books, and all those little objects of women,

which, in London and Paris, adorn tables of marble and mahogany; it is there that we assemble in the burning hours of the day, for in the evening our saloon is held in the open air, on the terrace itself; it is there we receive the visits of all the Europeans whom the commerce with Damascus, of which Beirut is the sea-port, fixes in this fine country. The Egyptian governor of Ibrahim Pacha has come to offer us, with a graciousness and cordiality more than European, his protection and his services for our sojourn, and for the journeys that we wish to venture upon. He has dined with me to-day; he is a man who would not disgrace any society. An old soldier of the Pacha of Egypt, he has for his master, and especially for Ibrahim, that blind devotion and confidence in fortune, which I recollect to have formerly witnessed in the generals of the emperor; but the Turkish attachment has something in it more touching and more noble, because it belongs to a religious sentiment, and not a personal feeling. Ibrahim Pacha is destiny, is Allah, to his officers: Napoleon was but glory and ambition to his.

He drank champagne with pleasure, and submitted to all our usages, as if he had never known any other. Pipes and coffee, taken at several intervals, filled up the afternoon. I have given him a letter for Ibrahim Pacha, a letter in which I announced to him the arrival of a European traveller in the country subject to his arms, and ask from him the protection which is to be expected from a man who combats for the cause of European civilisation. Ibrahim passed a short while ago with his army; he is at present beside Homs, a large town in the desert, between Aleppo and Damascus; he has left few troops in Syria; the principal towns, such as Beirut, Saïde, Jaffa, Acre, Tripolis, are occupied by agreement with Ibrahim by the soldiers of the Emir Beshir, or great prince of the Druzes, who reigns in Lebanon. This chieftain has not resisted Ibrahim; he abandoned the cause of the Turks, in appearance at least, after the taking of St Jean d'Acre by Ibrahim, and he now mixes his troops with those of the Pacha. The Emir Beshir, if Ibrahim should be defeated at Homs, could block his retreat, and destroy the remnant of the Egyptians. This skilful and warlike prince has reigned for forty years over the mountains of Lebanon. He has cast into one people the Druzes, the Metualis, the Maronites, the Syrians, and the Arabs, who live under his sway. He has sons as warlike as himself, whom he sends to govern the towns which Ibrahim entrusts to him; one of his sons is encamped a quarter of a mile from here, in the plain which reaches to Lebanon, with 500 or 600 Arab horsemen. We must see him; he has sent to compliment us.

An Arab related to me to-day the entry of Ibrahim into the town of Beirut. At some distance from the gate, as he passed along a deep road, the sides of which are covered with thick roots and interwoven plants, an enormous serpent issued from the bushes, and, crawling on the sand, slowly advanced under the feet of Ibrahim's horse; the horse, being alarmed, began to prance, and some slaves, who followed the pacha on foot, threw themselves forward to kill the serpent; but Ibrahim stopped them with a gesture, and, drawing his sword, cut off the head of the reptile before him, and crushed the body below his horse's feet. The crowd uttered a cry of admiration, and Ibrahim, with a smile on his lips, continued his route, enchanted at this circumstance, as it is an assured augury of victory amongst the Arabs. This people see no accident in life, no natural phenomenon, without attaching to it a moral and prophetic sense. Is it a confused reminiscence of that first more perfect tongue which mankind formerly understood, a language in which all nature was explained by nature? Is it a vivacity of imagination, which seeks to find relations amongst things which it is not permitted to man to comprehend? I do not know, but I belong to the first interpretation; humanity has no instincts without motives, end, and cause; the instinct for divination has tormented every age and every people, especially the people of the primitive ages. Divination, then, either must or might have existed; but it is a language of

which man lost the key, when leaving that superior state, that Eden of which all nations have a confused tradition. Then, doubtless, nature spoke more loudly and clearly to his spirit; man conceived the hidden relation of all natural events, and their connection could conduct him to the perception of truths, or of future circumstances, for the present is always the generating and infallible germ of the future; it requires only to be seen and to be comprehended.

September 17.—Still the same life. The day is passed in giving and receiving visits of Arabs and Franks, and in traversing the delicious environs of our retreat. We have found equally obliging dispositions amongst all the European consuls of Syria, whom the war has concentrated at Beirut. The consul of Sardinia, M. Bianco, the Austrian consul, M. Laurella, and the English consuls, MM. Farren and Abost, have put us in communication with all the Arabs who can assist us in our projects of travelling into the interior. It is impossible to meet greater welcome and hospitality. Some of these gentlemen have lived many years in Syria, and have relations with the Arab families of Damascus, Aleppo, and Jerusalem, who have again similar relations with the principal sheikhs of the Arabs of the deserts which we have to travel over. We thus form in advance a chain of recommendations, and relations of hospitality, upon the different routes which may lead us to Bagdad.

M. Jorelle has procured me an excellent dragoman, or interpreter, in the person of M. Mazoyer, a young Frenchman by origin, but who, born and bred in Syria, is very well versed in the learned languages, and in the different dialects of the regions which we have to traverse. He is installed from to-day with me, and I hand over to him the government of all the Arab part of my household. This Arab portion is composed of an Aleppo cook, named Aboulhas; of a young Syrian of the country, named Elias, who, having already been in the service of the consuls, understands a little Italian and French; of a young Syrian girl also speaking French, and who will serve to interpret for the women; in fine, of five or six Greek, Arab, or Syrian grooms, from different parts of Syria, destined to take charge of our horses, to fix the tents, and to serve us as an escort in travelling.

The history of our Arab cook is too singular not to preserve.

He was a young and intelligent Christian; he had established at Aleppo a small commerce in stuffs of the country, which he went himself to sell, mounted on an ass, amongst the tribes of wandering Arabs, who come in the winter to encamp in the plains about Antioch. His commerce prospered; but his quality of infidel giving him some anxiety, he thought it best to associate himself with a Moslem Arab of Aleppo. The trade only went on the better, and at the end of some years Aboulhas found himself one of the most eminent merchants of the country. But he was enamoured of a young Græco-Syrian girl, and they would not give her to him except on condition of quitting Aleppo, and of establishing himself in the neighbourhood of Saïde, where the family of his young mistress resided. He required to realise his fortune; a quarrel ensued between the two partners about the partition of the wealth acquired in common. The Mahomedan Arab prepared a snare for the poor Aboulhas; he posted concealed witnesses, who, in a dispute with his associate, heard him blaspheme Mahomed, a mortal crime for an infidel. Aboulhas was dragged before the pacha, and condemned to be hanged. The sentence was put in execution; but the cord having broken, the unfortunate man fell to the foot of the gibbet, and was left for dead on the place of execution. However, the relations of his bride having obtained from the pacha permission to bury his body with the forms of their religion, carried it into their house, and perceiving that Aboulhas gave signs of life, they resuscitated him, concealed him in a cave for some days, and interred an empty coffin, to avoid exciting the suspicion of the Turks. But they had got an idea of the deceit; and Aboulhas was again arrested, at the moment he was escaping in the night

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

from the gates of the town. Conducted to the pacha, he related to him how his life had been saved without any fault of his. The pacha, according to a text of the Koran, which was favourable to the accused, gave him the alternative either of being hanged a second time, or of becoming a Turk. Aboulhas preferred the latter, and for some time practised Islamism. When his adventure was forgotten, and his conversion certified, he found means to escape from Aleppo, and to embark for the Isle of Cyprus, where he made himself once more a Christian. He espoused the woman whom he loved, obtained the protection of the French, and was enabled to reappear with impunity in Syria, where he continued his trade as a packman amongst the Druzes, Maronites, and Arabs. Such is the man whom we now required to travel in these countries. His talent as a cook consists in making a fire in the open air with prickly plants, or the dried dung of camels; in suspending a brass kettle upon two cross-sticks, and in boiling rice and chickens, or morsels of lamb, in the kettle. He also heats round flints in the fire, and when they are almost red, he spreads upon them a paste of barley meal which he has kneaded, and this forms our bread.

September 19.—To-day my wife and Julia have been invited, by the wife and daughter of a neighbouring Arab chief, to pass the day in the bath; it is the amusement of the women of the East amongst themselves. A bath is announced fifteen days beforehand, as a ball in Europe. The following is the description of this festival, as given us by my wife in the evening:—

The bath-rooms are in a public place, to which the approach of men is prohibited every day up to a certain hour, in order to keep them exclusively for the women, and the whole day when the bath is required for a bride, as was the case on the present occasion. The rooms are feebly lighted, through small domes of painted glass. They are paved with marble, in compartments of different colours, worked with great art. The walls are also covered with marble in mosaic, or adorned with mouldings or Moorish pillars. The rooms are graduated as to heat; the first of the temperature of the outer air, the second lukewarm, the others successively hotter, until the last, where the steam, from water nearly boiling, rises from basins, and fills the air with its stifling heat. In general, there is not a hollow bath in the centre of the room; there are only spouts always flowing, which pour on the marble floor about half an inch of water. This water escapes by channels, and is incessantly renewed. What is called the bath in the East is not a complete immersion, but a succession of sprinklings more or less hot, and the pressing of vapour on the skin.

Two hundred ladies of the town and the neighbourhood were invited this day to the bath, and in the number several young European females; each arrived enveloped in the immense cloak of white linen, which entirely covers the superb costume of the women when they leave home. They were all accompanied by their black slaves or free servants: as they arrived, they formed into groups, and seated themselves on the mats and cushions prepared in the first vestibule; their attendants removed the cloak which encompassed them, and they appeared in all the rich and picturesque magnificence of their clothes and jewels. These costumes are greatly varied in the colour of the stuffs, and the number and splendour of the jewels, but they are uniform in the shape of the garments.

These garments consist of pantaloons with large folds of streaked satin, bound at the waist by a tissue of red silk, and closed round the ankle by a band of gold silver; a loose robe, worked in gold, open in front, and tied under the breast, which it leaves uncovered; the sleeves are tight from the shoulder, and hang loose from the elbow to the wrist; beneath is a chemise of silken gauze passing over the bosom. Above their robe they wear a vest of scarlet velvet lined with ermine or marten, embroidered with gold at all the seams, and the sleeves open.

The hair is parted at the crown of the head; one part falls down over the neck, the rest is twisted into tresses

with black silk resembling the hair, and descends to the feet. Little wreaths of gold or silver hang at the extremity of these tresses, and by their weight draw them down the full length of the figure; on their heads small strings of pearls, of golden sequins, and of natural flowers, are scattered, the whole mixed together with incredible profusion. It seems as if the contents of a casket had been thrown at hazard upon the brilliant hair, so redolent is it in jewels and flowers. This barbaric luxury has the most picturesque effect upon young girls of fifteen to twenty years of age. On the top of the head some women wear a cap of carved gold, in the form of an inverted cup; from the middle of this cap a string of gold, with a row of pearls, hangs pendant down the back.

The legs are unadorned, and the feet are covered with yellow slippers, which they drag as they walk. The arms are crowded with bracelets of gold, silver, and pearls; the breast with several necklaces, which shield the uncovered bosom with chains of gold or pearls.

When all the ladies were collected, a barbarous music was heard; women whose bodies were clothed in a simple red gauze, uttered sharp and doleful cries, and played on the fife and tambourine. This concert never ceased throughout the day, and imparted to a scene of pleasure and rejoicing a character of uproar and phrensy perfectly savage.

When the bride appeared, accompanied by her mother and her young friends, attired in a costume so magnificent that her hair, neck, arms, and bosom, were entirely concealed under a floating veil of garlands, gold, and pearls, the bathing-women seized her, and took off, piece by piece, all her garments. During this process, the other females were undressed by their slaves, and the different ceremonies of the bath commenced. They passed from one saloon to another always to the sound of the same music, and always with the most absurd ceremonies and words. They took the vapour bath; then the water bath; then they had thrown over them perfumed soap water. At length the sports began, and all the ladies, with various gestures and cries, gambolled like a troop of schoolboys taken to bathe in a stream, splashing each other, plunging their heads into the water, and throwing it upon their bodies; and the music struck up with an increased roar every time that any of these infantine tricks excited the noisy laughter of the young Arab girls. At length they left the bath; the slaves and servants twisted afresh the damp hair of their mistresses, arranged again the necklaces and bracelets, put on the silken robes and velvet vests, stretched the cushions on the mats in the rooms where they had dried the floors, and drew from baskets and silk coverings the provisions brought for the collation. They consisted of pastry and sweetmeats of all kinds, in which the Turks and Arabs excel; sherbet, orange-flowers, and all the iced drinks of which the orientals make use at every moment of the day. Pipes and hookahs were brought for the elder females; a cloud of odoriferous smoke filled and obscured the atmosphere; coffee, served in little cups enclosed in small open vases of gold or silver thread, never ceased circulating, and conversation became animated. Then followed the dancing-girls, who executed, to the sounds of the same music, the Egyptian dances and the monotonous evolutions of Arabia. The whole day was thus passed, and it was not till the fall of night that this cortège of women reconducted the young affianced bride to the house of her mother. This ceremony of the bath usually takes place a few days before marriage.

September 20.—Our establishment being complete, I occupy myself with organising my caravan for the journey into the interior of Syria and Palestine. I have bought fourteen Arab horses, some from Lebanon, others from Aleppo and the desert; I have caused bridles and saddles to be made in the fashion of the country, richly ornamented with silken fringe and thread of gold and silver. The respect of the Arabs is in proportion to the luxury displayed; it is necessary to dazzle them, to strike their imagination, and to betray no distrust in travelling amongst their tribes. I have got our arms

put in order, and I have bought some very beautiful ones to arm our *carvas*. These *carvas* are Turks who are substituted for the janissaries which the Porte formerly granted to ambassadors or travellers whom it wished to protect; they are at the same time soldiers and magistrates; they answer very nearly to the gendarmes of the states of Europe. Each consul has one or two attached to his person; they travel on horseback with them; they announce them in the towns which they have to visit; they go to apprise the scheik, pacha, or governor; they get emptied and put in order the house which it pleases them to select in the town or village; they protect, by their presence and authority, every caravan to which they are attached; they are clad in costumes more or less splendid, according to the wealth or importance of the person who employs them. The ambassadors or consuls are the only persons who have a right to them; but owing to the exertions of M. Jorelle, and the kindness of the Egyptian governor of Beirout, I am granted several. I shall leave some of them at the house for the service of my wife and Julia, and for their security when they leave home; and I take the youngest, the most intelligent and brave, to march at the head of our detachment. These men are quiet, servicable, attentive, and require scarcely any thing but fine arms, fine horses, and glittering costumes; they live, like all my other Arabs, on cakes of barley-meal and fruits; they sleep in the open air, under the mulberries in the garden, or in a tent which I have had erected near the place where the horses are kept.

M. Bianco, the Sardinian consul, whom we see every day, like a friend of several years' standing, facilitates all those internal arrangements which will tend to the security of my wife and child during my absence, and which will contribute also to our own safety in travelling. I buy tents, and he lends me the best of his own.

September 22.—The stifling heats of September delay our departure for some time. We pass the days in exchanging visits with our Greek, Arab, and Maronite neighbours, and in forming relations which may render our stay agreeable. We could find in no part of Europe more kindness and cordiality than they evince towards us here; these people are accustomed only to see Europeans arrive in their country who are absorbed in commerce, and who enter into such connections as are likely to be advantageous to themselves merely; they do not understand at first that any one can come to live and journey amongst them, simply to know them, and to admire their beautiful country, and their ruined monuments. They begin by suspecting the intentions of a traveller; and as traditions lead them to believe that treasures are concealed in all the ruins, they think that we have the power of drawing forth these treasures, and that such is the object of our expenses and fatigues. But when once they can be convinced that we do not travel with this intention, that we come solely to admire the works of God in the most beautiful countries of the world, to study manners, to see and love mankind; when, further, we offer them presents, without demanding in exchange any thing but their friendship—when we have with us, as we have, a physician and a medicine-chest, and we distribute amongst them, without fee, recipes, prescriptions, and medicines—when they see that the stranger who arrives amongst them is an object of regard and attention to the other Franks, that he has a beautiful vessel with him which bears him at his pleasure from one port to another, and who refuses to lend himself with any article of commerce, their imagination is struck with an idea of power, greatness, and disinterestedness, which overthrows all their systems, and they pass at once from distrust to admiration, from admiration to devotedness.

Such is their disposition for us. Our court is for ever filled with the Arabs of the mountain, Maronite monks, scheiks of the Druzes, with women, children, and invalids, who come from fifteen to twenty leagues to see us, to ask for our advice, and offer us hospitality. If we wish to pass through their territories; almost all are preceded by some presents of the wines or fruits

of the country. We receive them with kindness, make them take coffee, smoke the pipe, and drink iced-sherbet; I give them in return for their presents the fabrics of Europe, some arms, a watch, little jewels of small value, of which I have brought a great quantity; they return enchanted at our welcome, and spread far and wide the reputation of the *Emir Frangi*, for it is thus that they have named me—the *Prince of the Franks*. I have no other designation in all the environs of Beirout, and in the town itself; and as this estimation may be of the greatest utility to us in our adventurous career in these countries, M. Jorelle, and the European consuls, have had the kindness not to deceive them, and to allow the humble poet to pass for a potent man of Europe.

It is not possible to imagine the rapidity with which news circulates from mouth to mouth in Arabia; it is known already at Damascus, Aleppo, Latakia, Saïde, and Jerusalem, that a stranger is arrived in Syria, and is about to travel through those countries. In a country where there is little movement in affairs and minds, the most petty circumstance of an unusual nature becomes all at once the topic of every conversation; it circulates with the rapidity of speech from one tribe to the other; the lively and exalted imagination of the Arabs exaggerates and heightens every thing, and in fifteen days a renown is gained at a hundred leagues' distance. This disposition of the country, of which Lady Stanhope formerly experienced the effect, in circumstances nearly similar to mine, is too favourable for us to be complained of. We let them do and say what they like, and I accept, without contradiction, the imaginary titles, riches, and virtues, with which the Arab imagination has endowed me, to lay them humbly down hereafter, when returning again into the just proportions of my native mediocrity.

September 27: *Eckardlin's Tower*.—We have passed all the day at the nuptials of the young Syrian-Greek girl. The ceremony commenced by a long procession of Greek, Arab, and Syrian women, who came, some on horseback, others on foot, through the roads of aloes and mulberries, to assist the bride during this fatiguing day. For several days and nights, a certain number of these women has never left Habib's house, nor ceased to utter shrill and prolonged cries, songs, and groans, similar to those shouts which the reapers and hay-makers make on the coasts of France during the harvests. These clamours, lamentations, tears, and rejoicings, must prevent the bride from getting any sleep for several nights before the marriage. The old and young men of the family of the husband make as many on their side, and permit him scarcely any repose for eight days beforehand. We cannot comprehend the motives for such a usage.

Introduced into the gardens of Habib's house, the females were made to enter into the interior of the divan, to pay their compliments to the young girl, to admire her dress, and to see the ceremonies. As for us, we were left in the court, or called into an outer room. There a table was laid out in the European manner, covered with a multitude of dried fruits, honey, and sugar-cakes, liquors, and sherbet, and during the evening they renewed these refreshments, as the numerous visitors exhausted them. I succeeded in being admitted as an exception into the divan of the women, at the moment when the Greek archbishop was bestowing the nuptial benediction. The young girl was standing up by the side of the bridegroom, covered from head to foot with a veil of red gauze, embroidered with gold. The priest lifted up the veil for a moment, and the young man for the first time got a glimpse of her to whom he was uniting his fate; she was extremely pretty. The paleness which fatigue and emotion spread upon her cheeks, was rendered yet more striking by the reflection of the red veil, and the countless ornaments of gold, silver, pearls, and diamonds, with which she was covered, and by the long tresses of her jet black hair which fell around her person. This, joined to her eyelashes painted black, as well as her eyebrows, and the margins of her eyes, her hands, with the tips

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

of her fingers and nails, stained red with henna, and marked with Moorish designs, all gave to her ravishing beauty a character of novelty and solemnity with which we were singularly struck. Her husband had scarcely time to see her. He appeared exhausted, and fainting under the infliction of the vigils and fatigues with which these ridiculous customs extinguish even the force of love. The prelate took from the hands of one of his priests a chaplet of natural flowers, placed it on the head of the young girl, took it off, put it on the hair of the youth, again took it off to set it on the veil of the bride, and thus passed it several times from one head to the other. Then he put in the same alternate manner rings on the fingers of both. They afterwards broke the same piece of bread, they drank the consecrated wine in the same cup. After which they removed the bride into the apartments, where women alone could follow her, in order to change her dress. The father and friends of the bridegroom led him into the garden, and made him sit down at the foot of a tree, surrounded by all the males of his family. The musicians and dancers then arrived, and continued till the setting of the sun their barbarous symphonies, their piercing cries, and their contortions, around the young man, who had sunk into sleep at the foot of the tree, resisting all the efforts of his friends to awaken him.

At night they conducted him alone and in procession to his father's house. It is not until after eight days that a newly-married husband is permitted to take his wife, and conduct her to his own house.

The women, who filled the house of Habib with their exclamations, also issued forth a little later. Nothing was more picturesque than this prodigious procession of women and young girls, in their strange and splendid costumes, covered with glittering stones, surrounded by their servants and their slaves, bearing torches of resinous pine to lighten the road, and extending thus their luminous train through the long and narrow paths, shaded by aloes and oranges, to the borders of the sea, sometimes in a profound silence, sometimes uttering piercing cries which resounded over the waves, or beneath the large plantains at the foot of Lebanon. We returned to our house, close to the country residence of Habib, where we continued to hear the noise of the women of the family conversing; we mounted upon our terraces, and followed with our eyes, for a long time, the wandering lights, which danced on all sides through the trees in the plain.

September 29.—There is a report of the defeat of Ibrahim. If the Egyptian army suffers a reverse, the vengeance of the Turks, oppressed at present by the Christians of Lebanon, is to be feared, and excesses will take place in isolated spots such as ours. I have determined to hire a house, by way of precaution, in the town. I have found one this morning which can lodge us all; it is composed, like all Arabian palaces, of a small dark corridor, which opens on the street by an elliptical doorway: this corridor conduces to an inner court, paved with marble and surrounded with divans or open rooms. In the summer, they throw an awning over this court, and the Arabs there receive visits. A cascade of water flows and murmurs in the middle of the court; when there is no running stream, there is at least a closed well in one of the corners. From this court, we pass into several large apartments, likewise paved in mosaic or with flags of marble, and adorned, to the height of the ceiling, either with marble sculptured in niches, in pilasters, or in small fountains, or with a wainscoting of yellow cedar, admirably carved. The first part of these divans is lower by a step than the second half, and this second half is separated by a balustrade of elegantly worked wood. The slaves and attendants keep in the first division, standing with the cup of coffee, sherbet, or pipe, in their hands: the masters are seated on the carpets, supported by cushions, in the second. Generally, at the bottom of the room, is a small wooden staircase, concealed in the wainscot, which leads to a sort of high gallery, which fills the far end of the apartment. This gallery opens, on one side, upon the street, with little windows, furnished with

bars; and on the side of the room, it is also hidden by wooden lattices, in the manufacture of which the carpenters of the country expend all their art in design and workmanship. These galleries are very narrow, and can only contain a sofa, covered with a mattress and silk cushions: the rich Turks or Arabs retire there for the night; the others are contented with cushions laid on the floor, and sleep upon them in their clothes, without any other covering than the heavy and beautiful furs in which they are habitually clad.

There are five or six similar rooms, in my town-house, on the first floor, and as many on the second, besides a great number of small chambers detached, for the European domestics. The janissaries, the saïs, and the Arab servants, will sleep at the street-door, or in the corridor, or in the court; they never trouble themselves to find these people with a room or a bed. The lower classes here have no other bed than the earth or a straw mat; the loveliness of the climate is a sufficient provider, and we ourselves find that there is not under heaven a more delightful canopy than the beautiful starry firmament, where the light sea-breezes waft their freshness and provoke to sleep; there is little or no dew, and it is sufficient to cover the eyes with a silk kerchief, to sleep in this manner without any inconvenience.

This house is intended only as a refuge for my wife and child, in case of Ibrahim Païa's retreat; I have contented myself with taking the keys, and we shall not occupy it unless the rest of the country becomes uninhabitable. Under the guardianship of the European consuls, in a town surrounded with walls, and close to a harbour where vessels of all nations are perpetually at anchor, there cannot be any imminent peril for travellers. I have taken the town-house for a year, at 1000 piastres, that is to say, about 500 francs (£12, 10s.); the five conjoined houses in the country cost me only 3000 piastres—in all, 1300 francs (£45, 11s. 8d.) per annum, to have six houses, of which one alone, that in the town, would cost 4000 or 5000 francs in Europe.

Upon a tongue of land to the left of the town, there is one of the most delicious abodes that a man could desire on the earth. It belongs to a rich Turkish merchant, to whom I have made proposals for letting it to me. He has declined giving it me on hire, but has offered to sell it to me for 30,000 piastres, or about 10,000 francs (£416, 13s. 4d.) It is built in the midst of a very large garden, planted with cedars, oranges, vines, and figs, and irrigated by a fountain of clear spring water; the sea encompasses it on two sides, and the foam dashes at the foot of the walls; the beautiful road of Beirut extends before you, with its ships riding at anchor, and you can hear the whistling of the wind in their rigging. The road is closed by an old Moorish castle, which juts into the sea, and is connected by bridges to beautiful green banks. The elevated turrets of the castle fall in a sombre shade upon the snows of Sannin, and the sentinels of Ibrahim are seen in their intervals, pacing about, and looking at the sea.

This house is far more beautiful than the one which I have just hired. All the walls are covered with marble, elaborately sculptured, or with wainscotings of cedar, of the richest workmanship. Inexhaustible waterspouts murmur in the midst of the rooms on the ground-floor; and projecting grated balconies, running round the upper stories, permit the women to pass day and night in the open air, without being seen, and to feast their eyes with the wonderful spectacle of the sea, the mountains, and the animated scenes of the harbour. The Turk received me with great civility; lavished upon me sherbet, pipes, and coffee, and conducted me himself into all the rooms of his house. He sent, beforehand, a black eunuch to request his women to retire into a pavilion of the garden; but when we came to their apartments, or harem, the order was not yet executed, and we perceived five or six young women, some fifteen or sixteen years old at the most, the others from twenty to thirty, in the beautiful and graceful costume of the Arab women, and in all the disorder of their household toilet, who arose with precipitation from their mats and divans, and took to flight in their bare legs

and feet, here throwing their veils hastily over their faces, there snatching little children to their breasts, with all the bashfulness and confusion natural to so complete a surprise. They glided into a dark passage, and the eunuch placed himself at the door. The Arab merchant appeared in no degree embarrassed or annoyed at the circumstance, and we visited all the secret recesses of the harem, as we might have done in a European house.

VISIT TO LADY HESTER STANHOPE.

Lady Hester Stanhope, the niece of Mr Pitt, after the death of her uncle, left England, and travelled through Europe. Young, beautiful, and rich, she was welcomed every where with the cordiality and respect which her rank, fortune, wit, and beauty, were calculated to secure her; but she constantly refused to unite her lot to that of her most worthy suitors, and, after some years passed in the chief capitals of Europe, she embarked with a numerous suite for Constantinople. The motives of this expatriation have never been known; some have attributed it to the death of a young English general, killed at that period in Spain, and whom a never-ending sorrow for his fate brought perpetually to the mind of Lady Hester; others to the pure love of adventure, which the enterprising and courageous character of this young lady seemed to evince. Whatever it was, she departed. She passed some years at Constantinople, and at length embarked for Syria in an English vessel, which also bore the greater part of her treasures, and immense sums in jewels, and presents of all kinds.

A tempest assailed the ship in the Gulf of Maeri, upon the coast of Caramania, opposite the Isle of Rhodes. It struck upon a rock some miles from the shore. The vessel was shattered to pieces in a few seconds, and the treasures of Lady Stanhope were buried in the waves. She herself escaped death with difficulty, and was borne, on a remnant of the wreck, to a small desert island, where she passed twenty-four hours without food or assistance. At last, some fishermen of Marmoriza, who were searching for the spoils of the shipwreck, discovered her, and conducted her to Rhodes, where she made herself known to the English consul. This deplorable disaster did not diminish her courage. She went to Malta, and thence to England. She collected the residue of her fortune; she sold, at a sacrifice, part of her lands, embarked her riches, and presents adapted to the countries she purposed visiting, a second time on board a vessel, and put to sea. The voyage was fortunate, and she landed at Latakia, the ancient Laodicea, upon the coast of Syria, between Tripolis and Alexandretta. She established herself in the environs, learnt Arabic, surrounded herself with all the persons who could facilitate her intercourse with the Arab, Druze, and Maronite populations of the country, and prepared, as I was then doing myself, for travels of discovery into the least accessible parts of Arabia, Mesopotamia, and the Desert.

When she had rendered herself familiar with the language, costume, manners, and usages of the country, she organised a numerous caravan, loaded camels with rich presents for the Arabs, and traversed all the districts of Syria. She sojourned at Jerusalem, Damascus, Aleppo, Koms, Balbek, and Palmyra. It was in this last station that the numerous tribes of wandering Arabs, who had facilitated her approach to these ruins, collected around her tent to the number of forty or fifty thousand, and, enraptured with her beauty, grace, and magnificence, proclaimed her Queen of Palmyra, and delivered to her patents, by which it was stipulated, that every European, protected by her, might come in full security to visit the desert and the ruins of Balbek and Palmyra, provided that he engaged to pay a tribute of one thousand piastres. This treaty still exists, and would be faithfully executed by the Arabs, if positive proof were given of the protection of Lady Stanhope.

On her return from Palmyra she was, however, about to be carried off by a numerous tribe of other Arabs, who were at enmity with those of Palmyra. She

was apprised in time by one of her people, and owed her safety, and that of her caravan, to a forced march at night, and to the swiftness of her horses, which cleared an incredible extent of desert in twenty-four hours. She returned to Damascus, where she resided some months, under the protection of the Turkish pacha, to whom the Porte had especially recommended her.

After a wandering life in all the countries of the East, Lady Hester Stanhope settled at last in an almost inaccessible solitude, upon one of the mountains of Lebanon, near Saïde, the ancient Sidon. The Pacha of Acre, Abdallah-Pacha, who entertained for her a profound respect, and an absolute devotion, ceded to her the ruins of a convent, and the village of Digioun, peopled by the Druzes. She built there several houses, surrounded by an outer wall, like our fortifications of the middle ages. She formed a charming garden by artificial means, in the manner of the Turks—a garden of flowers and fruits, vineyards, kiosks enriched with arabesque sculpture and paintings; water flowing in marble channels, water spouting in the midst of the kiosks, avenues of oranges, figs, and citrons. There Lady Stanhope lived several years in a luxury altogether oriental, accompanied by a great number of European or Arab dragomans, by a numerous suite of women and black slaves, and maintaining amicable and even political relations with the Porte, Abdallah-Pacha, the Emir Beschir, sovereign of Lebanon, and, above all, with the Arab sheiks of the deserts of Syria and Bagdad.

Her fortune, still considerable, was diminished by the derangement her affairs suffered from her absence, and she found herself reduced to thirty or forty thousand francs of income, which was, however, sufficient in this country for the establishment she is obliged to keep up. But the persons who had accompanied her from Europe died or removed; the friendship of the Arabs, which it is necessary to sustain by unceasing presents and imposing illusions, cooled, the intercourse became less frequent, and Lady Hester fell into the complete isolation in which I found her; but in this state the heroic cast of her character was displayed by all the energy and constancy of courage. She never thought of retracing her steps; the world and the past caused her no regret; she flinched not under abandonment, misfortune, or the prospect of an old age amidst oblivion. She remained alone where she is yet, without books, journals, letters from Europe, friends, or even servants attached to her person, surrounded only by some negroes and black children, and a few Arab peasants to cultivate her garden, to take care of the horses, and to protect her personal safety. It is generally believed in the country, and my communications with her induce me likewise to believe, that the supernatural vigour of her mind and resolution is sustained not only by her strength of character, but also by exalted religious ideas, in which the mysticism of Europe is mingled with certain oriental superstitious, and especially with the ravings of astrology. Whatever it may be, Lady Stanhope has a great renown in the East, and excites the astonishment of Europe. Finding myself so near her, I desired to see her; her choice of solitude and meditation had so much apparent sympathy with my own inclinations, that I felt glad in the idea of ascertaining in what we coincided. But nothing is more difficult for an European than to gain admission to her; she refuses any communication with English travellers, with women, or with the members of her own family. I had, therefore, little hope of being introduced to her, and I had no letter of recommendation; knowing, however, that she preserved some distant relations with the Arabs of Palestine and Mesopotamia, and that a protection from her hand, addressed to these tribes, might be of the very greatest utility to me in my future travels, I resolved to send her, by an Arab, the following letter:—

“MY LADY—A traveller like yourself, a stranger like you, in the East, and an imitator of you, in my search after the contemplation of its territories, its ruins, and

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

the great works of God, I have just arrived in Syria, with my family. I should reckon that day amongst the most interesting of my journey, on which I should become acquainted with a woman, who is herself one of the wonders of this East which I come to visit.

If you will do me the favour of receiving me, be pleased to name the day which will be convenient to you, and let me know if I must come alone, or if I may bring with me some of the friends who accompany me, and who will attach no less value than myself to the honour of being presented to you.

Let not this request, my lady, in any degree constrain you, from politeness, to grant me what is offensive to your habits of complete seclusion. I understand too well myself the value of liberty, and the charm of solitude, not to appreciate your refusal, and to respect its motives.—Accept, &c.

I had not long to wait for an answer: the 30th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the querry of Lady Stanhope, who is at the same time her physician, arrived at my house with orders to accompany me to Digioun, the residence of this extraordinary woman.

We started at four o'clock. I was accompanied by Doctor Leonardi, M. de Parseval, a domestic, and a guide. We were all on horseback. I passed through, about half an hour from Beirut, a wood of magnificent firs, originally planted by the Emir Fakardin upon an elevated promontory, the view from which extends to the right, over the stormy sea of Syria, and to the left over the magnificent valley of Lebanon—an admirable landscape, in which the choicest of western vegetation, the vine, fig-tree, mulberry, and pyramidal poplar, are united with the lofty columns of eastern palms, the broad leaves of which shake in the wind like bunches of feathers. A few paces beyond, we enter into a sort of desert of red sand, raised into immense moving masses like the waves of the ocean. There was a brisk wind this evening, and it ploughed up the sand, raised it aloft, and scooped out hollows, as it makes the breakers of the sea lash and roar. This spectacle was new and sad, as an insight into the true and vast desert which I was about to enter upon. No mark of men or animals was visible on this turbulent scene; we were guided only by the bellowing of the waves on the one side, and by the transparent ridges of Lebanon on the other. We soon recovered a sort of road or path, strewn with enormous angular blocks of stone. This road, which follows the sea even into Egypt, conducted us to a ruined house, the remnant of an old fortified tower, where we passed the gloomy hours of the night, stretched upon a mat of rushes, and covered up with our mantles. As soon as the moon had risen, we got on horseback again. It was one of those nights in which the sky is resplendant with stars, in which the most perfect serenity appears to reign in those vast ethereal regions we contemplate from below, but in which nature immediately around us seems to groan and torture herself into violent convulsions. The desolate aspect of the coast for some leagues added to this painful impression. We had left behind us, with the twilight, the beautiful shady slopes, the verdant valleys of Lebanon. Savage hills, strewn from top to bottom with black, white, and grey stones, the relics of earthquakes, arose close beside us; to our left and to our right, the sea, agitated since the morning by a growing tempest, rolled its heavy and threatening waves, which we saw as they came from afar, by the shadow which they cast before them, and broke upon the beach with the noise of thunder, throwing their thick and bubbling froth upon the ridge of damp sand we were travelling on, bathing each time the feet of our horses, and threatening to drag us back with it. A moon as brilliant as a winter sun, shed sufficient light upon the sea to discover to us its fury, and not sufficient clearness upon our route to satisfy our eyes as to the perils of the road. A glimmering light shortly broke on the top of the mountains of Lebanon, with the white or sombre fog of morning, and spread over all this scene a false and pale tint which was neither day nor night, which had neither the splendour of the one nor the serenity of the other;

an hour painful to the eye and to the thought, a contest of two opposing principles of which nature often presents the afflicting image, and which we more often find in our own hearts.

At seven in the morning, under a sun already oppressive, we quitted Saïde, the ancient Sidon, which sits upon the waves as a glorious memento of a past dominion, and we climbed the slaty, naked, and broken hills, which, rising insensibly from stage to stage, led us to the solitude that we sought in vain to forestall with our eyes. Each peak as we cleared it disclosed to us one more elevated, which we had to wind round or climb up; the mountains were linked with mountains, like the rings of a chain, leaving between them only deep ravines, dry, scorched, and scattered with blocks of greyish rock. These mountains are completely bare of vegetation and of soil. They are the skeletons of hills which the waters and the winds have gnawed for ages. It was not there that I expected to find the residence of a female, who had visited the world, and who had had the universe to select from. At length, from the top of one of these rocks, my eyes fell upon a deeper and broader valley, closed in on all sides by mountains more majestic, but not less sterile. In the middle of this valley, the hill of Digioun, like the base of a large tower, took root, and mounting in circular layers of rock, grew attenuated as it approached the summit, and formed an esplanade of some hundred fathoms broad, covered with a beautiful lively green vegetation. A white wall, flanked by a kiosk at one of its angles, encircled this verdant spot. This was the abode of Lady Hester. We reached it at mid-day. The house is not what we call by the same name in Europe, it is not even what is called a house in Asia; it is a confused and strange aggregation of ten or twelve little houses, each containing but one or two chambers on the ground floor, without windows, and separated from one another by small courts or gardens—an assemblage very similar in aspect to those poor convents which we meet with in Italy or Spain upon high mountains, belonging to the mendicant orders. According to her custom, Lady Stanhope was not to be seen until three or four o'clock in the afternoon. We were each conducted into a sort of narrow cell, dark, and without furniture. We were served with breakfast, and we threw ourselves on a divan, whilst waiting for the rising of the invisible hostess of this romantic habitation. I fell asleep. At three o'clock they came and knocked at my door, to announce to me that she expected me. I passed through a court, a garden, an open kiosk with hangings of jessamine, then two or three gloomy corridors, and I was introduced by a little negro child, six or eight years old, into the cabinet of Lady Hester.

So profound an obscurity reigned, that I had great difficulty in distinguishing the noble, grave, mild, and majestic features of the white form, which in oriental costume rose from the divan, and came forward stretching out her hand. Lady Hester appears to be fifty years old; she has those features which years cannot alter. The freshness, colour, and grace of youth, are gone; but where the beauty is in the figure itself, in the chasteness of the outlines, in the dignity, majesty, and expression of a male or female face, it changes at the different epochs of life, but it does not pass away. Such is the beauty of Lady Stanhope. She had upon her head a white turban, on her forehead a little fillet of purple wool falling on each side of the head upon the shoulders. A long shawl of yellow cashmere, and an immense Turkish robe of white silk, with hanging sleeves, covered her person in simple and majestic folds, and it was only in the opening which this first tunic left upon her breast, that a second robe of Persian flowered stuff, reaching to the neck, and fastened by a clasp of pearls, could be perceived. Yellow Turkish boots, embroidered with silk, completed this beautiful oriental costume, which she wore with the freedom and gracefulness of a person who has never worn any other since her infancy.

"You have come a long way to see a hermit," she said to me; "you are welcome; I receive few strangers, scarcely one or two in a year; but your letter pleased

me, and I desired to know a person who loved, like me, God, nature, and solitude. Something, besides, told me that our stars were friendly, and that we should agree well together. I see with pleasure that my presentiment has not deceived me; and your features which I now see, and the very noise of your steps whilst you were traversing the corridor, have sufficiently informed me respecting you to prevent my repenting of having resolved to see you. Let us sit down and converse. We are already friends." "How!" said I to her; "do you honour so quickly with the name of friend, my lady, a man whose name and life are completely unknown to you? You are ignorant who I am." "True," replied she; "I know neither who you are according to the world, nor what you have done whilst living amongst men; but I know already what you are before God. Do not take me for a fool, as the world often calls me; but I cannot resist the inclination to speak to you with an open heart. There is a science, lost at present in your Europe, a science which was born in the East, where it has never perished, and where it yet survives. I possess it. I read in the stars. We are all children of some one of those celestial fires which preside at our birth, and whose fortunate or malignant influence is written in our eyes, on our foreheads, in our features, in the lines of our hand, in the form of our foot, in our gesture, and in our gait. I have only seen you a few minutes, and yet I know you as if I had lived an age with you. Do you wish that I open to you yourself? Do you wish that I predict your destiny?" "Pray avoid doing so, my lady," answered I, smiling; "I do not deny what I am ignorant of; I will not affirm, that in visible and invisible nature in which every thing is held, every thing enchained, beings of an inferior order, like man, may not be under the influence of superior beings, like stars or angels; but I have no need of their revelation to know myself—corruption, infirmity, and woe! And as to the secrets of my future destiny, I should consider it a profanation on the Divinity, who conceals them from me, if I sought them from a creature. In regard to the future, I believe only in God, free-will, and virtue." "Never mind," said she to me, "believe what you please; as to me, I see evidently that you are born under the influence of very happy, potent, and benevolent stars, which have endowed you with analogous qualities, and which conduct you to an end which I could, if you pleased, indicate to you from this moment. It is God who leads you here to enlighten your mind: you are one of those desirable and good-intentioned men, of whom there is a great want as instruments for the wonderful works which are soon to be accomplished amongst men. Do you believe the reign of the Messiah come?" "I was born a Christian," said I to her; "it is for you to answer." "A Christian!" retorted she with a slight sign of dissatisfaction; "I also am a Christian; but he whom you call Christ, has he not said, 'I speak to you in parables, but he who shall come after me will speak in the spirit and in truth.' Now, it is this one whom we are waiting for! This is the Messiah who is not; he comes, who is not far off, whom we will see with our eyes, and for the coming of whom all is prepared in the world! What will you answer? And how will you deny or twist the very words of your Gospel which I have just cited to you? What are your motives for believing in Christ?" "Excuse me, my lady," I interrupted, "from entering with you into such a discussion; I do not enter into it with myself. Man has two lights: the one which illumines the understanding, which is subject to discussion and doubt, and which often leads only to error and mistake; the other which actuates the heart, and never deceives, for it is at once evidence and conviction; and for us miserable mortals, truth itself is but a conviction. God alone possesses truth otherwise, and as truth; we possess it only as faith. I believe in Christ, because he has brought to the earth the most holy, fruitful, and divine doctrine, which has ever beamed upon human intelligence. A doctrine so heavenly cannot be the fruit of a lie and a cheat. Christ has spoken as reason speaks. His doctrines are known

by their morality, as a tree by its fruits. The fruits of Christianity (I speak of its fruits to come, much more than of those which are already gathered and corrupted) are infinite, perfect, and divine; therefore its author is that divine Word which he described himself. Such are the reasons for which I am a Christian, such is the whole of my religious controversy with myself; with others I have none; we can prove to man only what he already believes."

"But," resumed she, "do you find the social, political, and religious world, well constituted? And do you not think that all the world feels the want, the necessity, of a Revealer, of a Redeemer, of the Messiah whom we expect, and whom our desires have already pointed out?"

"Oh! as to that," said I, "it is another question. No one regrets and laments more than myself the universal suffering of nature, of men, and of society. No one acknowledges more distinctly the enormous social, political, and religious abuses. No one more desires and hopes for an alleviator of those intolerable evils of humanity. No one can be more convinced that this alleviator must be divine! If you call that expecting a Messiah, I expect him like you—and, farther than you, I sigh for his early appearance; like you, and farther than you, I perceive in the wavering creeds of man, in the tumult of his ideas, in the emptiness of his heart, in the depravity of his social state, in the incessant totterings of his political institutions, all the symptoms of an overthrow, and consequently of a near and impending renovation. I believe that God always shows himself at the precise moment in which every thing that is human avails nothing, in which man confesses that he is helpless. The world is now so. I believe, therefore, in a Messiah near to our own epoch; but in this Messiah I do not see the Christ, who has nothing more in wisdom, in virtue, and in truth, to give us; I see him who Christ announced was to come after him—that Holy Spirit ever urging, ever assisting man, always revealing to him, according to time and occasion, what he ought to do and know. It matters little whether this Holy Spirit is incarnate in a man, or in a doctrine, in a deed, or in an idea—it is the same; man, or doctrine, deed, or idea, I believe in it, I place my hopes upon it, and I expect it, and, more than you, I invoke it! You thus see that we can understand each other, and that our stars are not so far asunder as this conversation has led you to think."

She smiled; her eyes, occasionally obscured by a little discontent during the confession of my Christian system of belief, were lighted up with a tenderness of expression, and a brilliancy almost supernatural. "Believe what you will," said she to me; "you are still one of those men whom I was looking for, whom Providence sends to me, and who have an important part to play in the work which is preparing. You will soon return to Europe; Europe is done; France alone has a grand mission yet to accomplish; you will participate in it; I do not at present know how, but I can tell you this evening, if you desire it, when I have consulted your stars. I do not yet know the names of all; I see more than three; I distinguish four, perhaps five, and, who knows, more yet? One of them is certainly Mercury, who gives clearness and emphasis to the intellect and to the power of expression; you ought to be a poet—that is evident from your eyes and the higher part of your face; lower, you are under the empire of quite distinct, almost opposing stars, in which there is an influence of energy and action. There is the sun also," continued she, with a start, "in the leaning of your head, and in the manner you throw it on your left shoulder. You may thank God: there are few men who are born under more than one star, few whose star is happy, still fewer whose star, when favourable, is not counterbalanced by the malignant influence of an opposing star. You, on the contrary, have several, and all are in harmony to serve you, and to act in concert for your advantage. What is your name?" I told it to her. "I had never heard of it!" she exclaimed, in the accent of truth.

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

"See, my lady, what glory is! I have composed some verses in my life which have made my name be echoed a million of times in the literary circles of Europe; but this echo is too weak to traverse your sea and mountains, and here I am quite a new man, a man completely unknown, with a name never pronounced! I am only the more flattered by the kindness you have showered upon me; I owe it only to you and myself." "Yes," said she, "poet or not, I esteem you, and I place hopes in you; we shall see each other again, be assured! You will return to the West, but you will not be long in returning to the East; it is your country." "It is, at least," said I, "the country of my imagination." "Do not laugh," she resumed, "it is your actual country—it is the country of your fathers. I am now certain of it; look at your foot!" "I see there," said I, "nothing but the dust of your roads which covers it, and which would make me blush in a saloon of old Europe." "That's nothing," continued she; "it is not that. Look at your foot. I had not myself taken notice of it before. See; the instep is very high, and between your heel and toes, when your foot is on the ground, there is a sufficient elevation to let water pass without wetting you. It is the Arab's foot; it is the foot of the east; you are a son of these climates, and we draw near the day on which we shall each return to the land of our fathers. We shall see each other again."

A black slave now entered, and, prostrating herself before her, bowing her forehead to the ground, and placing her hands upon her head, spoke to her some words in Arabic. "Go," said she to me; "dinner is served; be quick and return: I am going to concern myself about you, and to see more distinctly through the confusion of my ideas as to your person and your future. As for me, I never eat with any one; I live too abstemiously; bread, and some fruits, as I feel hungry, are sufficient; I cannot put a guest upon my diet."

I was conducted beneath a bower of jessamine and laurel-rose, at the gate of the garden. The table was set for M. de Parseval and me; we dined with great dispatch, but she did not even wait for our rising from table, but sent Leonardi to tell me she was waiting for me. I hastened to her: I found her smoking a long eastern pipe; she ordered one to be brought to me. I was already accustomed to see the most elegant and beautiful women smoking in the east; I no longer felt any thing shocking in the graceful and careless attitude, nor in the odoriferous smoke escaping in light curls from the lips of a handsome woman, and interrupting the conversation without stifling it. We conversed a long time, and always on the favourite subject, the sole and mysterious theme of this extraordinary woman, the modern enchantress, recalling the famous magicians of antiquity—the Circe of the deserts. It appeared to me that the religious doctrines of Lady Hester were a clever though confused mixture of the different religions in the midst of which she had condemned herself to live; mysterious as the Druzes, whose mystic secret she, of all the world, perhaps, alone knew; resigned as the Moslem, and like him a fatalist; with the Jew, expecting the Messiah; and with the Christian, professing the worship of Christ and the practice of his charity and morality. Add to this, the fantastic colouring and supernatural dreams of an imagination unctured with oriental extravagance, audited by solitude and meditation, the impressions, perhaps, of the Arabic astrologers, and you will have an idea of this compound of the sublime and ridiculous, which it is more convenient to stigmatise as madness, than to analyse and comprehend. No; this woman is not mad. Madness, which displays itself in the eyes, so as never to be mistaken, is not expressed in her mild and straight look; madness, which is always betrayed in conversation by the interruptions it gives to the train of discourse by sudden, disordered, and eccentric bursts, is not perceptible in the elevated, mystic, and obscure, though sustained, connected, and powerful conversation of Lady Hester. If I were called upon to decide, I should rather say it was the voluntary and studied madness

of one who knows what she is about, and who has her own reasons for appearing insane. The sway, founded on admiration, which her genius has exercised, and still exercises, over the Arab population which surrounds her mountains, proves sufficiently that this affected madness is but a means. To the men of this land of prodigies, to these men of rocks and deserts, whose imagination is more vivid and wreathed in mist than the horizon of their sands or seas, the words of Mahomet or Lady Stanhope are necessary! They require the knowledge of the stars, prophecies, miracles, the second sight of genius! Lady Stanhope has comprehended this from the extent of her truly superior intellect. Then, perhaps, like all others gifted with powerful intellectual faculties, she has concluded by deceiving herself, and by becoming the first neophyte of the symbol she had elevated for others. Such is the effect this woman produced upon me. One cannot judge or classify her in a sentence; she is a statue of enormous dimensions, which we can estimate only in proportion as we see it. I would not be surprised if an early day should bring about the realisation of part of the destiny she promises herself. An empire in Arabia, a throne in Jerusalem!—the least political commotion in the region she inhabits, might lift her to that height.

"Upon this subject," said I to her, "I have only one reproach to make to you, namely, that you have been too timid in the course of events, and have not yet pushed your fortune as far as it might have conducted you." She answered, "You speak to me like a man who believes too much in human volition, and not sufficiently in the irresistible control of destiny alone: my power is in it. I await it, but do not invoke it. I am growing old; I have greatly lessened my fortune; I am at present alone, and abandoned to myself, upon this desert rock, a prey to the first audacious ruffian who may force my gates, surrounded by a band of faithless domestics and ungrateful slaves, who rob me every day, and sometimes threaten my life. Yet more, I owe my safety solely to this poignard, with which I have been compelled to arm myself, to guard my breast against the weapon of a black slave whom I have reared. Well, in the midst of all these tribulations, I am happy; I respond to every thing by the sacred phrase of the Mussulmans, 'Allah Kerim!' (It is the will of God!)—and I await the future, of which I have spoken to you, with confidence; and I wish I could inspire you with the conviction respecting it with which you ought to be impressed."

After having smoked several pipes, and drunk several cups of coffee, which the black slaves brought every quarter of an hour, she said to me, "Come, I will lead you into a sanctuary where I allow nothing profane to enter—my garden." We descended to it by some steps, and, in a positive enchantment, I followed her through one of the most beautiful Turkish gardens which I had yet seen in the East. There were arbours of vine where the light was dulled, but on the verdant arches of which glittered the grapes of the promised land, like myriads of *la-tres*; *kiosks* (summer-houses), where the sculptured arabesques were entwined in jessamine and the climbing canes of Asia; canals, in which an artificial water came murmuring for a league of distance, and spouted up through marble jets; alleys, lined with all the fruit-trees of England, Europe, and these beautiful climates; plots of green sward, sprinkled with shrubs in flower, and marble compartments surrounding the shoots of flowers new to my eyes. Such was her garden. We rested in several of the kiosks with which it was ornamented; and never did the inexhaustible conversation of Lady Hester lose the mystic tone or the elevation of style which it had assumed in the morning. "Since destiny," said she to me at the close, "has sent you here, and so astonishing a sympathy in our stars permits me to confide to you what I conceal from the profane—come, and I will let your eyes behold a prodigy of nature, the destination of which is known only to myself and my scholars; the prophecies of the East had many ages ago announced it, and you will judge yourself if these prophecies are accomplished." She

opened a door of the garden, which introduced us to a small inner court, where I perceived two magnificent Arabian mares, of pure race and of rare symmetry. "Approach and look at this bay mare," said she; "see if nature has not accomplished in her all that is written touching the mare which is to carry the Messiah—She shall be born ready saddled." I saw, in fact, upon this fine animal, a sport of nature sufficiently uncommon to serve as a delusion for vulgar credulity amongst a half-barbarous people; the mare had, from a defect in the shoulders, a cavity so broad and deep, and so much in the form of a Turkish saddle, that it might be said with truth, she was born ready saddled; and even to the stirrups, she could be easily mounted without the aid of an artificial saddle. The mare, a splendid animal in other respects, appeared used to the admiration and respect which Lady Stanhope and her slaves testified for her, and to have a presentiment of the dignity of her future mission; no person had ever mounted her, and two Arab grooms attended and watched her, without losing her a moment out of sight. Another white mare, and, in my opinion, infinitely more beautiful, partook, with the Messiah's mare, the respect and attentions of Lady Stanhope. No one had ever mounted her either. Lady Hester did not tell me, but she left me to infer, that although the destiny of the white mare was less sanctified, she had likewise one of great mystery and importance: and I thought I understood that Lady Stanhope reserved her for herself, on the day when she should make her entry, by the side of the Messiah, into the reconquered Jerusalem. After having caused the two animals to be promenade for some time upon a green plot, outside the enclosure of the fortress, and admiring their suppleness and grace, we returned; and I renewed to her my request, that she would at length allow me to present to her M. de Parseval, my friend and fellow-traveller, who had followed me, in spite of myself, to her house, and who had been vainly waiting since the morning for a favour of which she was so chary. She consented at last, and we all three returned into the little saloon which I have already described, to pass the evening or the night. Coffee and pipes reappeared in oriental profusion, and the room was soon filled with such a cloud of smoke, that the figure of her ladyship was visible only through an atmosphere similar to that of a magical invocation. She conversed with the same vigour, grace, and abundance, but with infinitely less of the supernatural, upon subjects not so sacred for her, as she had exhibited with me when alone throughout the day.

"I hope," said she to me suddenly, "that you are an aristocrat; I do not doubt it from your appearance." "You are deceived, my lady," replied I; "I am neither an aristocrat nor a democrat; I have lived long enough to see the two sides of the human medal, and to find both equally unsound. I am neither aristocrat nor democrat; but I am a man, and the exclusive partisan of what may ameliorate and perfect every member of the human race, whether he be born at the top or the bottom of the social ladder. I am neither for the people nor for the nobles, but for all humanity; and I do not ascribe any exclusive capacity for improving humanity either to aristocratic or democratic institutions: this capacity is only in a divine morality, the fruit of a perfect religion! Faith is the civilisation of nations!"

"That is true," replied she; "but yet I am an aristocrat in spite of myself: and you will acknowledge that if there be vices in aristocracy, there are at least lofty virtues to redeem and compensate them; whilst in democracy I see many vices, and vices of the lowest and most malevolent order, but I seek in vain for the elevated virtues." "It is not so, my lady," said I in return; "there are at both sides vices and virtues; but in the higher classes these very vices have a brilliant cast; in the lower classes, on the contrary, these vices exhibit themselves in all their naked deformity, and wound the moral sentiment more in the contemplation. The difference is in appearance, and not in fact, but, in reality, the identical vice is more a vice in the rich, educated, and instructed man, than in the wretch

without information and without bread—for with the one the vice is matter of choice, with the other of necessity. Let us despise it, then, every where, and yet more in a profligate aristocracy, and let us judge humanity not by classes, but by men; the nobles would have the vices of the people, if they themselves were of the people, and the inferiors would have the vices of the superiors if they were nobles! The balance is even, let us not weigh it down." "Very well, let it pass," she remarked, "but give me leave to believe that you are an aristocrat like myself; it would cost me much uneasiness to think that you are of the number of those young Frenchmen who rouse the popular froth against all the institutions which God, nature, and society, have made, and who would overthrow the edifice to rear for themselves, out of its ruins, a pedestal upon a level with their own grovelling envy." "No!" said I to her; "be tranquil on that head; I am not one of these men; I am only of those who do not despise what is below them in the social grade, whilst respecting what is above them, and whose desire or dream is to call all men, independently of their standing in the arbitrary hierarchies of society, to the same enlightenment, the same liberty, and the same moral perfection!—and since you are religious, since you believe that God loves all his children equally, and you await a second Messiah to institute a new order of things, you think, doubtless, like them and me." "Yes," replied she, "but I concern myself no longer with human politics; I have had enough of them: I have seen too much of them for the ten years which I passed in the cabinet of Mr Pitt, my uncle, when all the intrigues of Europe were resounding in my ears; in my youth I have despised humanity, and I do not wish to hear any further mention of it; all that men do for men is fruitless!—the forms by which it is done are indifferent to me." "And to me also," said I. "The foundation of things is God and virtue!" "I think exactly with you," I responded, "so let us talk no more about it, as we are both of one opinion."

Passing to subjects less grave, and joking on the species of divination which enabled her to comprehend a man at the first glance, and upon a simple inspection of his star, I put her wisdom to the proof by interrogating her upon two or three travellers of my acquaintance, who, fifteen years ago, had come under her observation. I was struck with the perfect justice of her glance over two of these individuals. Amongst others, she analysed, with an amazing clearness of judgment, the character of one of them, which was known intimately to myself, a character difficult to understand at a first view—lofty, but veiled beneath appearances of the most simple and engaging good-nature: and what carried my astonishment to the highest pitch, and made me admire her grasp of memory as altogether surprising, was the fact of this traveller having passed but two hours in her house, and of sixteen years having elapsed between the period of his visit, and that of the account which I asked from her of the impressions she entertained regarding him. Solitude concentrates and fortifies all the faculties of the mind. The prophets, the saints, great men, and poets, have perfectly understood this truth, and their dispositions have made them seek the desert or isolation in the midst of mankind.

The name of Bonaparte dropped, as usual, in the course of conversation. "I thought," said I to her, "that your fanaticism for this man would have raised a barrier between us." "I have been a fanatic only from his misfortunes, and from pity for him," answered she. "And I also; so we understand each other again," I replied.

I could not explain to myself how a religious and moral woman should adore force alone without pity, without morality, and without liberty. Bonaparte was a grand reconstructor, without doubt; he remodelled the social world, but he did not pay sufficient attention to the elements which compose it: he fabricated his statue with dirt and personal interest, instead of sculpturing it in divine and moral sentiments, in virtue and in liberty.

The night thus wore away in the free discussion, with-

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

out any affection on the part of Lady Hester, of all the subjects which hazard calls up, and brings into conversation. I found that no chord was wanting in her high and strong intellect, and that every key that was touched gave out a just, full, and powerful sound, except perhaps the metaphysical chord, which too much stretching and solitude had rendered false, or elevated to a diapason* too high for mortal intelligence. We separated, with a sincere regret on my part, and an obliging reluctance testified on hers.

"No farewells," said she to me; "we shall often meet again in this journey, and more often yet in other journeys, of which you have not formed any project. Go to repose, and recollect that you leave a friend in the solitudes of Lebanon." She stretched out her hand to me; I put mine upon my heart, in the manner of the Arabs, and we retired.

On the morrow, at four o'clock in the morning, M. de Parseval and I were on horseback descending the steep declivity which leads from her monastery to the deep valley of the torrent Belus; we cleared at a ford the waters exhausted by the summer heat, and we began to climb the high mountains of Lebanon which separate Digioun from Deir-el-Kammar, or the Convent of the Moon, the palace of the Emir Beschir, sovereign prince of the Druzes, and of all the mountains of Lebanon. Lady Hester had given us her physician as interpreter, and an Arab groom as a guide. We arrived, after two hours' ride, in a more deep, narrow, and picturesque valley, than any of those that we had already traversed. On the right and on the left, like two perpendicular ramparts, arose two mountain chains from three to four hundred feet high, which appeared to have been recently torn from each other by a thunderbolt of the creator of worlds, or perhaps by the earthquake which shook Lebanon to its foundations, when the Son of Man, returning his soul to God, not far from these same mountains, heaved that last sigh which scattered the spirit of error, oppression, and falsehood, and breathed truth, liberty, and life, into an invigorated world. Gigantic blocks detached from the sides of the mountains, and spread like pebbles by the hands of children in the bed of a brook, formed the horrible, sunken, and uneven course of the dry torrent. Some of these blocks were higher and longer than large houses. Some stood straight up like solid and eternal bodies; others, suspended upon their angles, and sustained by the pressure of other unseen rocks, appeared as if they were yet falling and rolling, thus presenting the image of a ruin in action, of an incessant downward movement, of a stony chaos, of a never-ending avalanche of rocks:—rocks of dismal colour, grey, black, veined with red and white, opaque; the petrified waves of a river of granite. Not a drop of water was in the deep interstices of this torrent-bed, crumbling to dust in the broiling sun of Syria; not an herb, a plant, a blade, either in the torrent or on the indented and harsh sides of the abyss; it was a sea of stones, a cataract of rocks, to which the diversity of form, the variety of position, the strangeness of their impending fall, the play of shade and light on their sides and surfaces, appeared to impart motion and fluidity. If Dante had wished to paint in one of the circles of his hell, the hell of stones, the hell of aridity, of ruin, of the decay of things, of the sinking of worlds, of the rottenness of age, this is the scene which he would have had simply to copy:—it is a flood of the last hours of the world, when fire shall have consumed everything, and the earth, heaving up its entrails, shall be but one block of stone, burnt to ashes beneath the feet of the terrible judge who shall come to visit it.

We followed this valley of lamentations for two hours, without the scene varying otherwise than by the winding circuits which the torrent made for itself between the mountains, and by the manner, more or less terrific, in which the rocks were grouped in their stony bed. Never will this valley be effaced from my imagination. This land must have been the first, the land of horror-striking poetry, and of human lamentation. The pathetic and

sublime accent of the prophecies was felt in its savage, affecting, and awe-inspiring aspect. All the images of biblical poesy are engraved, in capital letters, on the furrowed face of Lebanon, and on its gilded summits, on its gushing valleys, and on its valleys mute and dead. The divine spirit, the superhuman inspiration, which breathed into the souls, and upon the harps of the poetic people, to whom God spoke by symbols and images, struck thus forcibly the eyes of the sacred bards from their infancy, and nourished them with a stronger sustenance than us old and withered inheritors of the ancient harp—than us who have beneath our eyes only a graceful, soft, and cultivated nature, a nature civilised and discoloured like ourselves.

At noon we reached the highest mountains we had to clear. We began to descend again by the steepest paths, where our horses' feet trembled on the loose stones which alone separated us from the precipices. After an hour's descent we perceived, on turning a hill, the fantastic palace of Dptedin, near to Deir-el-Kammar. We uttered a cry of surprise and admiration, and with an involuntary movement we stayed our horses, to contemplate the novel, picturesque, and truly oriental scene which opened before us.

A few paces from us, an immense sheet of foaming water rushed from a mill-dam, and fell from a height of fifty or sixty feet upon a bed of rocks, which broke it into fleeting shreds; the noise of this waterfall, and the freshness which it spread in the air, moistening our burning foreheads, gave us a delicious preparation for the rapture which our senses were eager to enjoy. Above the cascade, which was lost in the bottomless abyss, unfathomable to our eyes, a vast and deep valley opened through a vista planted from the bottom to the top with mulberries, vines, and figs, and in which the earth was everywhere clothed with the freshest and lightest verdure; some beautiful villages were suspended like terraces, on the declivities of all the mountains which surrounded the valley of Deir-el-Kammar. On one side only the horizon stretched, and permitted the Sea of Syria to be seen over the least elevated summits of Lebanon. "*Ece mare magnum!*" said David. "See below the great blue sea with its waves, and its roarings, and its immense reptiles!" David was *there*, perhaps, when he uttered this poetical exclamation! In fact, we perceive the Sea of Egypt, tintured with a deeper blue than that of the sky, and confounded at a distance with the horizon, in the foggy and purple vapour which veils all the coasts of this part of Asia.

At the bottom of this immense valley, the hill of Dptedin, on which the emir's palace is erected, took root and arose like an enormous tower, flanked with rocks covered with ivy, and shoots of waving verdure hanging from their fissures and indentations. This hill rose to a level with the precipice on which we ourselves were suspended; a narrow and growning abyss separated us from it. On its summit, the Moorish palace of the emir stretched majestically over all the table-land of Dptedin, with its square towers and battlements; long galleries, rising one above the other, and presenting extended rows of projecting arcades, light as the trunks of the palm which crowned them with their aerial plumes; vast courts ranged by lofty steps from the top of the hill to the outward walls of the fortification. At the extremity of the largest of these courts, on which our eyes plunged from the height on which we were placed, the irregular façade of the women's palace presented itself to us, ornamented with slender and graceful colonnades, which in irregular and unequal forms reached to the roof, and bore, like an umbrella, a light covering of painted wood, serving as a portico to the palace. A marble staircase, decorated with balustrades sculptured in arabesque, led from this portico to the door of the women's palace; this door, inlaid with wood of various colours, with frames of marble, and surmounted with Arabic inscriptions, was surrounded by black slaves, magnificently attired, armed with silver-mounted pistols, and with Damascus sabres, glittering with gold and engravings; the large courts which faced the palace were likewise filled with a crowd of servants,

* A musical term signifying an eighth.

courtiers, priests, and soldiers, in all the varied and picturesque costumes which distinguish the five populations of Lebanon; the Druzes, Christians, Armenians, Greeks, Maronites, and Metualis. Five or six hundred Arab horses were attached by the feet and head to cords which stretched across the courts, saddled, bridled, and covered with shining cloths of all colours; several groups of camels were lying, standing, or bent on the knee, to receive or discharge their loads; and on the most elevated terrace of the inner court, some young pages were throwing the djerid, rushing with their horses upon each other, crouching down to evade the blow, returning at full speed upon their disarmed adversary, and going through, with an admirable grace and vigour, all the rapid evolutions which this warlike sport requires. After having contemplated for some instants this oriental scene, so full of novelty for us, we proceeded to the immense and massive gate of the first court of the palace, guarded by Arabs, armed with muskets and long slight blades, similar to the stalks of long reeds. There, we sent to the prince the letters which we had for him. A few moments afterwards he dispatched to us his first physician, M. Bertrand, a native of Syria, of a French family, who still preserved the language and recollection of his country. He conducted us to the apartments which the hospitality of the emir offered us, and the slaves led our suite and horses to another quarter of the palace. Our apartments consisted of a pretty court, decorated with Arabic pilasters, and with a spouting fountain in the centre falling into a large marble basin; round this court were three rooms and a divan, that is to say, a chamber larger than the others, formed by an arcade, which opened on the inner court, and which had neither door nor shutters to close it. It is a place of transition between the house and the street, serving as a garden to the lazy Mussulmans, its motionless shade supplying for them that of the trees, which they have neither the industry to plant, nor energy to go and seek, where nature herself causes them to grow. Our rooms, even in this magnificent palace, would have appeared ruinous to the poorest peasant of our huts; the windows had no glass, an unknown luxury in the east, notwithstanding the rigour of winter in these mountains; no beds, tables, or chairs; nothing but the naked walls, mouldering and riddled with rat and lizard holes; and as a floor, the battered clay, uneven, and mixed with chopped straw. Slaves brought mats of rush, which they stretched upon this floor, and Damascus carpets, with which they covered the mats; they afterwards brought a small table of Bethlehem, made of wood, encrusted with mother-of-pearl. These tables are not half a foot either in diameter or in height; they resemble the trunk of a broken column, and are not capable of holding more than the tray on which the Mahomedans place the five or six dishes which compose their repasts.

Our dinner, which was served on this table, consisted of a pilau, of a dish of sour milk which is mixed with oil, and some pieces of hashed mutton, which they heap on boiled rice, and garnish with certain gourds like our cucumbers. This is, in fact, the most desirable and savoury food which one can eat in the East; for drink, pure water, which they drink in earthen jugs, with long spouts, which are passed from hand to hand, and from which they make the water fall into the opened mouth, without the vase touching the lips. No knives, spoons, or forks; they eat with the hands—but the repeated ablations render this custom less revolting for the Mussulmans.

Scarcely had we finished dinner, than the emir sent to tell us that he was waiting for us. We traversed an immense court, ornamented with fountains, and a piazza, formed of high slim columns rising from the ground, and supporting the roof of the palace. We were introduced into a very beautiful saloon, the pavement of which was marble, and the ceilings and walls painted with lively colours and elegant arabesques, by artists from Constantinople. Water spouts murmured in the corners of the apartment; and at the end, behind a series of the inter-columniations of which were barred

and glazed, an enormous tiger was seen sleeping with its head upon its paws. The half of the room was filled with secretaries in long robes, each bearing a silver inkstand, pushed like a poignard into their belts; Arabs richly armed and clothed; negroes and mulattoes waiting the orders of their master, and some Egyptian officers, clad in European vests, and having on their heads the Greek bonnet of red cloth, with a long blue tuft hanging on the shoulders. The other part of the saloon was raised about a foot, and a large sofa, or divan, of scarlet velvet, ran round it. The emir was squatted at a corner of this divan. He was a fine-looking old man, with a lively and penetrating eye, a fresh and ruddy complexion, and a flowing grey beard. A white robe, bound by a cashmere shawl as a belt, entirely covered him, and the glittering handle of a long and wide poignard issued from the folds of his robe as high as his breast, and bore a cluster of diamonds of the size of an orange. We saluted him in the manner of the country, first carrying our hand to the forehead, and then to the heart. He returned us our salutation with grace and a smile, and made us a sign to come near, and seat ourselves beside him on the divan. An interpreter was on his knees between him and us. I commenced the conversation by expressing to him the pleasure which I experienced in visiting the interesting and beautiful country, which he governed with so much firmness and wisdom; and I told him, amongst other things, that the highest eulogy I could pass on his administration was to find myself there; that the security of the roads, the richness of the cultivation, the order and peace reigning in the towns, were undoubted testimonies of the virtue and ability of the ruler. He thanked me, and put to me a multitude of questions on Europe, and especially on the policy of Europe in the contest between the Turks and Egyptians, which showed the interest with which he regarded that affair, as well as a knowledge and acquaintance with things very uncommon for an eastern prince. Coffee and long pipes were brought, which were several times renewed, and the conversation continued for nearly an hour.

I was delighted with the sagacity, the information, and the noble and dignified manners of this old prince, and I arose, after a long conversation, to accompany him to his baths, which he resolved upon showing us himself. These baths consisted of five or six rooms, paved with marble flags, the arched roofs and walls being stuccoed and painted in water colours, with great taste and elegance, by Damascene artists. Jets of hot, tepid, and cold water, sprang from the pavement, and spread their varied temperatures through the rooms. The last was a vapour-bath, where we could not remain a minute. Several handsome white slaves, with only a shawl of raw silk drawn over their limbs, held themselves in readiness in these rooms to exercise their functions as assistants in the bath. The prince proposed to us to take the bath with him, but we declined the honour, and we left him in the hands of his slaves preparing to undress him.

We went from there, under the care of one of his equerries, to visit the courts and stables, where his splendid Arabian stallions were kept fastened. It is only in the stables of Damascus, or in those of the Emir Beschir, that an idea can be had of the Arabian horse. This superb and graceful animal loses his beauty, his gentleness, and his picturesque form, when he is transplanted from his native country and familiar habits into our cold climates, and the darkness and solitude of our stables. He must be seen at the door of the tent with the Arabs of the desert, his head between his legs, shaking his long black mane like a moving umbrella, and lashing his sides, polished like brass or silver, with his spreading tail, the end of which is always dyed with henna, a purple colour; he must be seen with his sparkling trappings turned up with gold, and embroidered with pearls; his head covered with a net of red

It must be remembered, in order to avoid confusion, that the word "divan" in the East, is applied both to a large room and to the sofa which runs round every principal apartment in a house.—(Note by Translator.)

or blue silk woven with gold or silver tissue, and the resounding waving points, which fall from his forehead over his nostrils, and which display or conceal by turns, at every undulation of his neck, the large, intelligent, fiery, the soft yet proud orbit of his eye. Above all, he must be seen when in a body of two or three hundred, as we saw him; some stretched on the dust of the court, others shackled with rings of iron, and fastened to long cords which reached across the courts; others loose upon the sand, and clearing, at a bound, the rows of camels which were opposed to their flight; here were some held in the hand by young black slaves, clad in scarlet vests, and their heads resting in a caressing manner upon the shoulders of the boys; there, were some frisking together, free and tetherless as colts in a meadow, rearing against each other, or rubbing their foreheads together, or mutually licking their shining and silvery skins: all looking at us with an unquiet and inquisitive attention, on account of our European costumes, and of our strange tongue, but soon familiarising themselves, and coming gracefully forward to yield their necks to our caresses, and the pleasing stroke of our hands. The varied expression and transparency of physiognomy possessed by these horses, is not to be believed by those who have not witnessed it. All their thoughts are depicted in their eyes, and in the convulsive movement of their jaws, lips, and nostrils, with as much certainty, force of character, and varied motion, as the impressions of the mind on the countenance of a child. When we drew near them, for the first time, they pouted, and gave signs of repugnance and of curiosity perfectly similar to those which a nervous man would make at the appearance of an unforeseen and disquieting object. Our language especially struck and astonished them; and the motion of their ears held erect, thrown back, or pointed forwards, testified their surprise and alarm. I admired above the rest several priceless mares, reserved for the emir exclusively. I made an offer to the equerry through the interpreter as far as 10,000 piastres for one of the most beautiful; but no temptation will induce an Arab to part with a mare of pure blood, and this time I could purchase nothing.

At the close of day, we returned to our rooms, and they brought us a supper similar to the dinner. Several officers of the emir came to pay us a visit on his part. M. Bertrand, his first physician, passed the evening with us. We were able to hold a conversation with him, owing to a little Italian and French which he had preserved from the recollections of his family. He gave us the most interesting details touching the domestic life of the Emir of the Druzes. This prince, although seventy-two years of age, having recently lost his first wife, to whom he was indebted for all his fortune, had just married again. We regretted that we could not see his new wife; she was, they said, remarkably beautiful. She was only fifteen years old—a Circassian slave, whom the emir sent to buy at Constantinople, and whom he made a Christian before he espoused her; for the Prince Beschir is himself a Christian, and even a Catholic, or rather he is, as usual in all countries of toleration, of all the official creeds in his country—a Moslem for the Mussulmans, a Druze for the Druzes, a Christian for the Christians. There are both mosques and a church in his palace; but for several years his family religion, the faith of his heart, is Catholicism. His policy is such, and the terror of his name so well established, that his Christian faith inspires neither distrust nor hatred in the Malomedan Arabs, in the Druzes or Metualis, who live under his sway. He does justice to all, and all equally respect him.

In the evening, after supper, the emir sent us some of his musicians and singers, who improvised Arabic verses in our honour. He has amongst his servants some Arabs solely devoted to this sort of ceremony. They are exactly what the troubadours were in the castles of the middle ages, or the popular bards in Scotland. Standing behind the cushion of the emir, or of his sons, whilst at their repasts, they sing verses in praise of the

masters whom they serve, or of the guests whom the emir wishes to honour. We got M. Bertrand to translate some of these poetic toasts; they were, in general, very insignificant, or their ideas were so far-fetched, that it would be impossible to put them into ideas or images appropriate to our European tongues. The following is the only thought possessing a little perspicacity which I find noted in my album:—

“Your vessel has wings, but the courser of the Arab has wings also. His nostrils, when he flies over the mountains, imitate the noise of the wind in the sails of a ship. The motion, caused by his rapid gallop, to the hearts of the weak, is like the rolling of the waves; but it rejoices the heart of the Arab. May his back be for you a seat of honour, and may it often conduct you to the divan of the emir!”

Amongst the secretaries of the emir, there was at that time one of the greatest poets of Arabia. I was ignorant of the circumstance, and knew it only somewhat later. When he learnt from other Syrian Arabs that I was myself a poet in Europe, he wrote me some verses, always full of that affectation and straining, always spoiled by that play on words, which characterise languages and civilisation weakened by age, but in which were nevertheless perceptible a high order of talent, and ideas far superior to what we figure to ourselves in Europe.

We slept upon the cushions of the divan spread upon mats, to the murmuring noise of the water spouting on all sides in the gardens, the courts, and the saloons of this part of the palace. When it was day, I saw through the grate several Mussulmans at their devotions in the great court of the palace. They stretched a carpet on the ground, to avoid touching the dust; they stood a moment erect, then inclined their whole bodies, and several times touched the carpet with their foreheads, the face being always turned towards the mosque; they afterwards laid themselves flat down on the carpet, and struck the ground with their foreheads; they again rose, and recommenced a number of times the same ceremonies, reassuming the same attitudes, and murmuring prayers. I never discovered any thing in the least ridiculous in these attitudes and ceremonies, however odd they may seem to our ignorance. The physiognomy of the Mussulmans is so penetrated with the religious sentiment, which they express by these gestures, that I have always deeply respected their praying—the motive sanctifies all. Wherever the divine idea descends and acts in man, it impresses upon him a dignity more than human. We may say:

I do not pray like thee, but I pray with thee to the common master, the master whom thou believest, and whom thou wishest to acknowledge and honour, as I myself wish to acknowledge and honour him under another form. It is not for me to laugh at thee; it is for God to judge us.

We passed the morning in visiting the palaces of the emir's sons, which are at a little distance from his; and also a small Catholic chapel, quite similar to our modern village churches in France or Italy. We went through the gardens of the palace likewise. The emir has erected another country palace about a mile from Dptedin. It is the sole object of his rides, and the road to it is almost the only one where a horse, even an Arabian, can gallop without danger. On all other sides, the paths which lead to Dptedin are so steep and suspended on the edges of precipices, that one cannot pass, even in a walk, without shuddering.

Before quitting Dptedin and Deir-el-Kammar, I transcribed the faithful and curious notes which I collected on the spot concerning the able and warlike old man whom we had just seen.

NOTES UPON THE EMIR BESCHIR.

Upon the death of the last descendant of the Emir Fakardin, the command of the mountain passed into the hands of the Chab family. This family has only been established on Lebanon for about 110 years. This is what the old Arabic chronicles of the desert relate.

Towards the commencement of the first age of the

Hegira, at the era when the armies of Abubeker overran Syria, a man of distinguished bravery, named Abdallah, an inhabitant of the small village of Bet-Chiabi, in the desert of Damascus, covered himself with glory at the siege of that city, and was slain beneath its walls. The Moslem general showered benefits on his family, who then quitted Bet-Chiabi, to establish themselves at Housbaye, on Anti-Lebanon. The primitive stock of the family, whence issued the branch now reigning on Lebanon, is still to be found there.

The Emir Beschir, one of Abdallah's descendants, was left an orphan at a tender age. His father, the Emir Hassem, had been invested with the pelisse of dignity, and had received the signet-ring of command, at the time his uncle, the Emir Milhem, gave up the administration of affairs, in order to finish his days in a peaceable retreat; but the government of Hassem was unskilful and weak, and Milhem, being forced to reassume the command, had to repair the faults of his nephew, and appease the troubles his rashness had excited.

Thus, as Volney has related, the power afterwards passed in succession from Mansour to Joussef, the one the father, the other the son of Milhem. When Joussef assumed the command, for the first time, the Emir Beschir was only seven years old. Joussef attached him to his person, and caused him to be carefully educated. Some years afterwards, having perceived in him a quick and courageous spirit, he made him enter into the affairs of the government.

At this period, Djezzar, Pacha of Acre, who had succeeded Daher, had for a long time annoyed the Emir Joussef by his attacks and exorbitant exactions. War broke out; but Beschir could not follow his uncle in this expedition; it was not until 1784 that he took part in the second expedition against Djezzar Pacha. The young Beschir, then twenty-one, ran great danger in the town of Ryde, of which the Druzes had gained possession. Pursued by a body of the pacha's troops, and forced to evacuate the town, he found himself, in his retreat, hemmed in by the enemy. His situation was critical; Beschir forced his horse violently up a wall, and precipitated himself from the top of it under a shower of bullets. Happily he was not injured, but his horse was killed in the fall.

On his return to Lebanon, the Emir Beschir applied himself entirely to business, and attempted to institute order in the administration of the Emir Joussef. His ambition was soon inflamed; he recalled to mind whose son he was, and, although poor, he coveted supreme power. His manners and his courage had gained him the friendship of several powerful families; he laboured to attach others, whom the bad administration of Joussef disgusted, and succeeded in drawing into his interest a considerable and very influential family, that of Kantar, the chief of which was the most able man then in Lebanon, possessing great wealth, and bearing the title of Scheik-Beschir, that is to say, great and illustrious. Opportunity was now all that Beschir required, and it presented itself.

From 1785, in which year Djezzar-Pacha had restored to Joussef the command of which he had deprived him for more than twelve months, hostilities had completely ceased between these two princes. The Emir Joussef sent every year certain officers to St Jean d'Acre, who brought him the pelisse accompanied with the usual compliments; he was, however, always apprehensive of a misunderstanding between him and the pacha, which was not long in occurring.

In 1789, a violent rupture broke out between these two chiefs; and the Emir Joussef, in no competition for resistance, resolved to abdicate. Beschir possessed credit, Joussef loved him. He called him to him, and advised him to go to Acre, and ask the investiture from Djezzar. Beschir at first refused, and let his uncle understand that he found himself at that time obliged to remove from his states, because the pacha required it, and because his presence in Lebanon would present an incessant aliment to faction. Joussef, in making the

to his relation, was urged by two reasons:

first, to prevent the power going out of his own family, and to reassume the command, when Beschir had smoothed the difficulties, either by conciliation or force of arms.

Joussef was urgent; and on the promise which he made of quitting the country as soon as Beschir should have received the command, the young prince departed for Acre. Djezzar received him with kindness, granted him the sway over Lebanon, and gave him 8000 men to secure his power, and to seize upon the Emir Joussef. Beschir, having arrived at the bridge of Gesser-Cadi, wrote secretly to his uncle, informed him of the instructions he had received from the pacha, and urged him to retire. The Emir Joussef fell back on Gibel in Kosrouan, where he collected his partisans. Beschir joined to his followers the soldiers whom he had brought from Acre, and marched against Joussef, whom he fell in with in Kosrouan. He gave him battle, and destroyed many of his troops; however, several months elapsed without any definitive result.

To put an end to the dispute, Joussef sent to Acre a messenger who promised to the pacha a greater tribute than that paid by Beschir, if he would restore him to the command. Djezzar consented, called him to Acre, invested him with the pelisse, and gave him, in order to chase Beschir away, the same 8000 soldiers who had fought against him. Beschir retired into the district of Marmeri, whence he laboured to procure the downfall of his rival, by offering yet more than Joussef had promised. The pacha agreed, and Joussef was again compelled to give up the dignity. He returned to Acre, to attempt new intrigues, but Beschir offered to the pacha 4000 purses (of 500 pieces of 40 cents, or 4d. each), if he would order the death of Joussef, wishing by that means to put an end to the troubles which distracted the mountain.

Djezzar was then at Damascus. His treasurer, a Greek who possessed his confidence, and who was considered in his absence as the Pacha of Acre, treated in his name, and informed his master of the bargain which he had concluded. The proposition at first pleased Djezzar, who ratified the engagement, and ordered the Emir Joussef, and his minister Gandour, to be hanged.

Scarcely had Djezzar dispatched the order, than he repented of having done so; it occurred to him, that the enmity of the two princes was useful to him, and he sent a second order which revoked the first; but whether it arrived too late, or the minister was won, the Emir Joussef was hanged. This execution irritated the pacha; he returned to Acre, investigated the affair, pretended that he had been deceived, caused his treasurer to be drowned, and with him all his family, besides several other persons accused of having been concerned in the business.

Djezzar confiscated the immense treasures of his favourite, and wrote a letter of reproaches to the Emir Beschir. The tone of this dispatch convinced the young prince that he was compromised. He attempted to justify himself with the pacha, who dissembled until the time for the re-election of the governor; then Djezzar invited the prince to come to Acre to receive the investiture. He went without distrust, accompanied by his minister, the Scheik Beschir; but they had no sooner arrived than they were thrown into a dungeon, where they endured all sorts of sufferings, during eighteen or twenty months of captivity. The object of Djezzar, in treating them thus, was to induce them to pay a rich ransom; but the prince had nothing; he had governed too short a time to have amassed great wealth. His minister supplied the deficiency. He secretly sent to the pacha the widow of a Druze prince, named Sest-Abous, with whom he had had intimate relations; he commissioned her to offer to the pacha the required sum, and to pretend that she herself would pledge her own jewels to complete the ransom. She was an adroit and bold woman, with a considerable share of ability. She attended the pacha at Acre, and gained him so completely, by the charms of her person and understanding, that Djezzar reduced considerably the sum which he at first demanded. The investiture was granted to the

Emir Beschir, who obtained the good graces of the pacha.

During his captivity, the brother of the Emir Joussef, and his cousin the Emir Kaider of Hubda, had seized upon the government, and taken the necessary measures to prevent the Emir Beschir from returning to his dominions, if the pacha should restore him to liberty. As soon as he was released from prison, the prince, not judging it prudent to re-appear at that time amongst his people, sent his minister, the Scheik Beschir, to sound the public feeling, and, in the meantime, retired to the village of Homs, to wait the effect of his negotiations. He endeavoured, likewise, to gain the Emir Abbets, a Druze prince of Soliman, who had hitherto reserved neutrality, and who enjoyed the highest consideration amongst the Druzes and the Christians, specially those of the Maracoutre district.

The Emir Abbets, concluding the cause of Beschir, declared himself in his favour, and invited him to come to him. As the communication was difficult, he sent his dispatch to him by an Italian, a lay-brother of the convent of Soliman. Beschir suddenly appeared in the midst of his partisans, the number of whom the cheik had augmented by his largesses and tact, fell with impetuosity on the army of his rivals, dispersed it, got possession of the persons of the two princes, and strangled them without ceremony.

Now peaceable possessor of supreme power, the Emir Beschir married the widow of a Turkish prince, who had been like himself of the family of Chah, and whom he had caused to be put to death two years before. This union rendered him master of an immense fortune. Before espousing the princess, who possessed great beauty, he made her be baptised. The marriage was attended with much happiness. When sixty-eight years old, the princess was overwhelmed with infirmities, and by a paralysis which took from her the use of her limbs: hey, however, presented an example of the most lively affection, and of the most perfect union.

The Emir Joussef at his death had left three children very young. Giorgios-Bey, and his brother Abdallah, educated them with great care, in the hope that they would one day collect the party of Joussef, and overthrow Beschir; but the latter triumphed over all obstacles, and peaceably enjoyed his power until the year 1804.

Events of the highest importance were passing in Egypt. Bonaparte having entered Syria with a division of his army, arrived before Acre, which was to open to him the gates of the East. The French general dispatched pressing letters and emissaries to the prince of Lebanon, to induce him to enter into his views, and to assist him in becoming master of the place. The Emir Beschir answered that he was disposed to unite himself to him, but he would not do so until after Acre was taken. A Frenchman one day reproached the emir with not having embraced with enthusiasm the cause of the French army, and with having by his backwardness perhaps prevented the regeneration of the East. The prince answered him: "Notwithstanding the strong desire which I had to join General Bonaparte, and in spite of the profound hatred which I had vowed to the pacha, I could not embrace the cause of the French. The fifteen or twenty thousand men whom I might have sent from the mountain, could have done nothing towards the success of the siege. If Bonaparte had taken the place without my assistance, he would have carried the mountain without opposition, for the Druzes and the Christians ardently desired his arrival; I should then have lost my command. On the contrary, if I had aided the General Bonaparte, and we had not conquered the place (which would have been the case), the pacha of Acre would have had me hanged, or thrown into a dungeon. Who then would have succeeded me?—whose protection should I have implored? Would it have been that of France, who was so far off, who had England and all Europe on her hands, and who was herself torn by civil war and intestine factions?"

General Bonaparte understood the position of the Prince Beschir, and, as a proof of his friendship, sent

him a superb musket, which Beschir has preserved in memory of the great captain.

Before resuming the history of the events which followed the ruin of the Emir Joussef's party, it will be appropriate to relate an adventure, which was perhaps instrumental in rendering the Pacha Djeddar so cruel and ferocious.

During the first years of his command, he went, according to usage, to meet the caravan returning from the pilgrimage of Mecca. (Afterwards the Pacha of Damascus was charged with this duty, and he of Acre was held bound only to the furnishing of a proportion of the expenses of the caravan, and of the tribute to the Arabs of the Desert.) The Mamelukes to whom Djeddar had left the guard of his seraglio in his absence, forced open the gates, and abandoned themselves to all the brutality of lustful passions. The pacha returned, and, far from taking to flight at his approach, the Mamelukes seized upon the treasure, closed the gates of the town, and decided upon repelling force by force. With the weak escort which accompanied him, Djeddar could not vanquish; but the Mamelukes sent him word that if he would let them retire with their arms and horses, they would open the gates of the town to him; if not, that they accepted war, and would sooner die with arms in their hands than surrender. Djeddar was not long in deciding. He knew that he was hated by the Turks as well as by the Christians, on account of his exactions; he was not ignorant, besides, that if the Emir Joussef came to learn his position, he would join with the Mamelukes, and commence a war which might be fatal to him.

He granted to the Mamelukes what they demanded, and they retired with great dispatch, whilst the pacha entered the town. Scarcely was Djeddar in his palace, than he sent out his cavalry to pursue the fugitives, but without effect; they arrived safe in Egypt. Djeddar then wreaked his vengeance on the women. He caused them all to be scourged, thrown into a great pit, and covered over with quick-lime. He excepted from this atrocious punishment his favourite, whom he caused to be decked out in her jewels and finest garments, enclosed in a sack, and cast into the sea.

This event rendered the character of Djeddar more morose. He was before a miser and a spoiler; he now became fierce and cruel; he talked henceforth only of cutting off noses and ears, or tearing out eyes. At the moment of his death, unable any longer to speak or order executions, he made a sign to those surrounding him, pointing to the pillow of his bed. Fortunately he was not understood. After his death, a long list of persons whom he designed for death when he recovered his health, was found. His ferocity accompanied him to the tomb.

Let us return to the Prince Beschir. As soon as the sons of the Emir Joussef were old enough to dispute the possession of power, Giorgios-Bey and Abdallah resolved to put their designs in execution. They took advantage of a moment of disagreement between Djeddar and Beschir, and raised the party of their pupils. The emir, taken unawares, was obliged to retire into the Huran, and to invoke the mediation of the pacha, whose cupidity and avarice he flattered. Djeddar interposed, and dictated a treaty which put an end to the strife between the two parties, but which was extremely favourable to Beschir, to whom he gave the country of the Druzes, whilst the sons of Joussef had to content themselves with the districts of Gibel and Kosrouan.

This treaty was not observed many years. The sons of Joussef tried all possible means to overthrow their enemy. As they were the strongest, they succeeded, and Djeddar disregarding the representations of Beschir, their usurpation was sanctioned. The Emir had then no resource but to throw himself into the arms of the Viceroy of Egypt.

The English Admiral, Sydney Smith, was at this period with some vessels in the roads of Syria. Beschir entreated him to receive him on board, and transport him to Egypt. After being several months at sea, and

touching at Cyprus, Smyrna, Candia, and Malta, he disembarked at Alexandria, where he went to seek the viceroy, followed by some friends who remained faithful to his fortunes.

The viceroy gave him a reception of the most flattering description, treated him with all the respect due to his station, loaded him with presents, and sent him back to Syria in one of the Admiral Sydney Smith's ships, with a letter for Djézzar full of reproaches and menaces, in the midst of which he ordered him to re-establish the Emir Beschir in his government.

The Egyptian viceroy was powerful, and Djézzar-Pacha hastened to obey him, for the tone of the dispatch made him feel that he should neglect nothing to give satisfaction to the Prince Beschir. He therefore enjoined the sons of Joussef, who durst not offer any resistance, to conform to the treaty in every particular; and up till the period of his death the most profound peace reigned between the two parties.

The Emir Beschir, however, did not entirely rely on the single protection of Mahomet Ali; he saw the party of the three princes grow stronger every day, and was apprehensive of falling before some plot, as he knew the ardent thirst for vengeance which inspired them against him. The skill of their ministers, Giorgios-Bey and Abdallah, likewise increased his fears. He therefore resolved to come to a conclusion with them by a decisive blow, capable of striking terror into his enemies. To accomplish his project, he took advantage of the investiture of Soleyman-Pacha, who succeeded Djézzar. At this time every thing appeared tranquil in Lebanon; the three princes governed their provinces in peace, and seemed reconciled to the supremacy which the treaty granted to their enemy, whilst their ministers prepared in secrecy for a new attack.

Beschir was beforehand with them. Informed of the favourable moment by his emissaries, he sent for Giorgios-Bey to Deir-el-Kammar, upon pretext of business; at the same time his brother, the Emir Hassen, attacked Gibel, seized the princes, and hanged Abdallah. The three brothers were conducted to Yong-Michael, where their eyes were put out. Their property was seized for the benefit of Beschir. Upon hearing of these events, Giorgios-Bey threw himself from a window of his prison and killed himself, which did not prevent the emir from having him hanged as an example to his enemies. Five chiefs of Deir-el-Kammar, and a brother of the Scheik Beschir, all of the house of Grumbelad-el-Bescantar, accused of having aided the dethroned princes, were put to death and their goods confiscated.

Having performed these bloody sacrifices, the Prince Beschir obtained supreme authority over all Lebanon, and he gave the command of Kosrouan, the chief seat of which was Gazyr, to his brother Hassen; but as he died a short time afterwards, the Emir Beschir was accused of having poisoned him from entertaining suspicions of ambitious designs on his part. This accusation is without foundation, and public opinion has done him justice in discrediting it.

In 1819, the districts of Gibel-Biscarra, Gibes, and Kosrouan, rose in insurrection, on occasion of a contribution which excited general discontent. The rebels, acting under the advice of the Bishop Joussef, resolved to proceed to attack the Emir Beschir in the country of the Druzes, where he was then residing. The prince, without allowing them time to collect their forces, advanced himself to meet them at the head of a small detachment of his army, after giving orders to his lieutenant-general, the Scheik Beschir, to follow him with 3000 men, whom he had assembled on the spot of the moment. The Emir entered the country of Gibes, and pitched his tent in a valley of Agousta, between Djani and the territory of Gazyr. During the night, and on the following morning, he was exposed to a brisk firing, from several detachments of the enemy posted on the heights. His tent was riddled with balls; but resisting all the entreaties of his son, Haul, he refused to change his position. When the day was more advanced, the fire of the enemy became hotter, and Beschir thought

the rebels had got an increase of force, and were preparing to block up his passage. Then he rose from the carpet on which he had been extended during the firing, got on horseback, and marched direct upon the enemy, accompanied by his trifling escort. At his approach the insurgents dispersed without offering any resistance, and he arrived at Gibes, where he took energetic steps to prevent them increasing their numbers.

His lieutenant-general, the Scheik Beschir, who followed him by slow marches, passed the river of Chiou, and took possession of the two first villages of Kosrouan, Yong-Michael, and Yong-Monsbak, which stood on his route. The very day of this occupation, his advanced guard arrested a priest who carried dispatches to the Bishop Joussef. The Scheik Beschir, having read these letters, presented his kangiar to him who had brought them to him, and ordered him to kill the priest, and bury him in the place where he had been taken. A few hours afterwards, another secret messenger met with the same fate.

The following day the Scheik Beschir resumed his march, overran, without obstacle, Kosrouan, and strangled all those whom the emir had inscribed on a list which he had sent him. He afterwards advanced to Gibel-Biscarra, where he joined the prince, who met him from Gibes. The Emir Beschir remained nine days in this province, during which he succeeded in stifling the revolt, by hanging and strangling all the rebels of distinction in the three districts of Gibes, Kosrouan, and Gibel-Biscarra. The bastonade was performed on various others, and afterwards ruinous ransoms exacted from them.

In the number of these last was a poor old man of seventy-five years of age, condemned to seventy purses, which he was not able to pay. His son wrote to him, that he would raise the money by loan if he sanctioned it, but the old man answered that he would pay nothing, adding expressions by no means complimentary to the prince. The letter was intercepted, and the old man handed over for torture. Already oppressed by age, he could not support so many inflictions, and when he was carried to the Scheik Beschir, according to his orders, he died after twenty days of suffering. His son inherited his father's condemnation; the emir seized his goods for his own profit, leaving him only a thousand piastres (£14) of patrimony.

The emir mounted the hill to Eden, passed the Cedars, and descended the other side of the mountain to Balbek, whilst the Scheik remained in occupation of the rebellious provinces. On arriving at Balbek, the chief ordered his lieutenant-general to return by the same route by which he had come, and to levy on his journey a contribution of 400 purses (of 500 pices each) from the three districts. That the prince of Lebanon could put down an insurrection in three such powerful provinces, with a force of only 3000 men, would appear miraculous, if we did not recollect that the revolt was partial, and that the party of Beschir in the provinces themselves facilitated his triumph.

The Pacha of Damascus had in this interval sent an aga to Bkaa for the purpose of taxing, according to custom, the produce of the lands dependent on his pachalik. This officer advanced to the village of Haunie, belonging to the principality of Lebanon, and there raised contributions in cattle and money. The inhabitants, not being inclined to submit, apprised Prince Beschir, who wrote to the aga testifying his displeasure, but the latter paid no attention to his remonstrances, and, after levying very heavy exactions, he returned to Damascus. The emir, greatly irritated, gave advice to the Pacha of Acre, and expressed his resentment in a very forcible strain. Abdallah, either from regard for Beschir, or from personal hatred for the aga, demanded from the Pacha of Damascus his severe punishment. The latter returned an evasive answer, indicating his surprise that the Pacha of Acre should interest himself in an affair concerning the Christians. Abdallah sent his letter to Beschir, with instructions to take vengeance on the Pacha of Damascus. The Prince of Lebanon assembled in haste 10,000 men, and advanced

towards Damascus. The pacha came forth to meet him, and the two armies had several conflicts, the superiority in which was always on the side of Beschir.

During these events, Abdallah gave proclamation to a forged firman, which declared the Pacha of Damascus deprived of his pachalik, and uniting it to that of Acre. But the Pacha of Damascus, applying to the neighbouring pachas, and to the court of Constantinople, obtained from the Porte a true firman, condemning the Pacha of Acre to death, and dethroning the Emir Beschir from his government. This prince was already at the gates of Damascus when the firman arrived. He then perceived the one promulgated by Abdallah was spurious, and he judged it prudent to retire into the province of Deir-el-Kammar, where, learning that the same fate as Abdallah's was reserved for himself, he fled to the environs of Beirout, and solicited the governor to receive him with his escort. This officer refused, alleging that the presence of the emir in the town would excite sedition. The prince then sent to apprise his brother, the Emir Abbets, whom he had left in command of the mountain, that he would return to his territories, and try the fortune of arms against the pachas sent by the Sublime Porte; but his brother answered him that the mountain was void both of provisions and money, and he advised him therefore very strongly not to attempt so perilous a project.

In this sad state of affairs, the prince again turned his eyes towards Egypt, and addressed himself to a Frank, begging him to assist him in his departure from Syria. M. Aubin procured his safe embarkation on board of a French ship lying between Beirout and Saïde, which then set sail for Alexandria. After his departure, the Scheik Beschir and the Emir Abbets joined themselves to the coalition of pachas, and intrigued for the command of the mountain. This was the source of the divisions which distracted Lebanon in 1823.

The combined troops began the siege of Acre in July 1822, and continued it until April 1823, when it was raised. Then the young Pacha of Acre, who was very avaricious, conceived a means of getting rid of the tribute which he owed to the Porte. With this design, he caused the officers who carried the tribute to be assassinated near Latakia, and obtained from the murderers the restoration of the money. He then complained to the Porte of the murder committed on his agents, and of the robbery of a rent belonging to the Grand-Seigneur. The pacha by this detestable conduct indulged two expectations—first, of exempting himself from tribute, and, secondly, of compromising the Pacha of Latakia, to whom he expected the bow-string would be forwarded, whilst his pachalik would be re-united to that of Acre; but Abdallah was deceived in his hopes.

The Sultan, apprised of the pacha's perfidy, a second time demanded his head. But what availed against Acre the pachas of Damascus, Aleppo, and Adama, with an army of 12,000 men, ill disciplined, without artillery capable of effecting a breach, possessing only some pieces of ordnance, of such large calibre that the balls were quite unfit for them, having 3000 or 4000 horsemen without baggage, and an infantry which consumed both day and night in smoking tobacco beneath the tents? Thus, Abdallah Pacha, being master of the strongest fortress in the East, prepared without fear for a vigorous defence.

An English corvette lying at anchor in the road, offered an officer from its crew to direct the artillery of the besiegers. The pachas accepted the offer, and put the cannons under his order. But at the end of three days, he saw that he would never carry the place with the Turks, who would not approach the walls with the artillery, which was the only means of breaching the fortifications.

Abdallah was perfectly at ease, in spite of the army of the pachas. He had nothing to fear on the land side from troops so ill organised, and, by way of showing his contempt for them, he replied to their cannon-balls by musket-shots. He had good soldiers well paid; provisions and munitions of war arrived for him in abun-

dance by sea, both from Europe and Asia. He was even suspected of holding an intercourse with the Greeks of the Morea.

The Emir Beschir, who was now under the protection of the Viceroy of Egypt, maintained a regular correspondence with Abdallah, who, under the mediation of Mahomet Ali, solicited peace and pardon from the Porte. If the pacha had nothing to fear from the land, he was afraid that the Divan of Constantinople would procure the blockade of the town by sea, and intercept his communications with strangers, which would soon reduce his people to famine, incite his soldiers to mutiny, and compel him to stretch out his own neck to the bow-string of the Sublime Porte. The divan pardoned him, knowing that Abdallah could deliver the place to the insurgents of the Morea; but it condemned him to a fine of 3000 purses, and the expenses of the war.

The viceroy, having obtained the pardon of Abdallah Pacha, demanded and secured that also of the Emir Beschir, who resumed his command. He took advantage of this crisis to make his influence at the divan be felt, and to obtain a sway over the Prince of Lebanon, whose political interests are at this moment united with those of Mahomet Ali.

At the end of the year 1823, the Emir Beschir landed at Acre, to regulate with Abdallah the expenses of the siege, and to fix the sum at which his part of the debt should be estimated. On his return to Lebanon, he levied a contribution of a thousand purses, for he was by no means in an easy position after his exile and the expenses of his sojourn in Egypt. His people also were very poor; and feeling indisposed to excite their antipathy against him by so severe an exaction, he resolved to make it be borne by his former lieutenant-general, the Scheik Beschir, wishing thus to revenge himself for the intrigues which he had had with his brother Abbets to deprive him of the command of the mountain. The Scheik Beschir refused to pay the sum, and retired to Karan, a province of Lebanon. He afterwards returned to his palace of Moctura, where he negotiated with Prince Abbets for the overthrow of Beschir. He even drew into the conspiracy three young brothers of the prince, who till then had lived tranquilly in their retreats. This conspiracy must have been fatal to the emir, without the aid of Abdallah Pacha.

The Scheik Beschir was pursued, and arrested in the plains of Damascus, with an escort of 200 persons. He might easily have saved himself; but upon the assurance given him by a Turkish officer, in the name of the Pacha of Damascus, that the Prince of Lebanon pardoned him, he yielded himself up, and was conducted to Damascus. There he was stripped of his garments, his hands bound, the one upon his breast, the other behind his back, and cast into a dungeon, where he remained several months. A process was instituted against him at Constantinople, and he was condemned to death. When the bow-string was presented to him, he appeared unmoved, and only asked to speak with the pacha and the emir. He was answered that it was useless, that neither the one nor the other could do any thing, as the sentence emanated from Constantinople. Then the Scheik Beschir submitted to his destiny. He was strangled, then beheaded, and his body, cut into pieces, was thrown to the dogs.

This execution took place in the beginning of 1824. The three brothers of the prince were afterwards arrested; their tongues and eyes were torn out, and they were sent into exile with their families, each into a village at remote distances. After that, tranquillity reigned in Lebanon; the family of Chab enjoyed power in peace; thanks to the active police which the emir maintained in his government, and to the friendship of Abdallah Pacha, who was not, however, ignorant of the intimate connexion which existed between him and Mahomet Ali.

Such is the policy which the Emir Beschir has followed up to this day, and every thing announces that he will pursue it with success in the new crisis which the attack of Mahomet Ali upon the Ottoman empire has produced. The emir took no part in the war until

Ibrahim Pacha, having taken Acre, and sent Abdallah Pacha a prisoner to his father in Egypt, entered Syria. It was then necessary to declare himself; and, according to the practice of orientals, he perceived the hand of God in victory, and ranged himself on the side of success. However, he has done so as if with regret, and alleging to the Porte the pretext of constraint. It is probable, that if Ibrahim Pacha sustained any reverse, the Emir Beschir would turn to the side of the Turks, and aid them in crushing the Arabs. Ibrahim, who is doubtful of this two-edged policy, compromises the prince as much as he can. He has forced him to give him one of his sons, and some of his best horsemen, to accompany him on the side of Homs; and his other sons, having come down from the mountain, hold military government, in the name of the Egyptians, over the principal towns of Syria.

The head of the Emir Beschir depends on the success of Ibrahim at Homs. If he should be conquered, the re-action of the Turks against the Christians of Lebanon, and against the prince himself, will be implacable. On the other side, if Ibrahim continues master of Syria, he will not be long in viewing with umbrage a power independent of his own, and he will endeavour to overcome it by political intrigue, or destroy it for ever, by eradicating the family of Chah. If the Emir Beschir were younger, and more active, he might resist both attempts, and establish for a long time, perhaps for ever, his dominion, and that of his descendants, over the most inaccessible, the best peopled, and the richest part of Syria. The mountaineers whom he commands are brave, intelligent, and well disciplined; the roads leading to the centre of Lebanon are impracticable; the Maronites, who are becoming very numerous on Lebanon, would be devoted to the emir by the common sentiment of Christianity, and by hatred and terror for Turkish dominion. The only obstacle to the creation of a new power in these countries is the difference of religion between the Maronites, Druzes, and Metualis, who people, with almost equal numbers, the territories subject to the authority of the emir. The strongest tie of nationality is community of religious creeds, or at least it has hitherto been found so. Civilisation in its advance reduces religious feeling to an individualism, and other common interests form a nationality; these interests, being less grave than the cause of religion, national feelings become feeble; for what so strong, as an incentive to man, as religious belief, his creed, his inward faith! It is the voice of intelligence, it is the thought in which he includes all others—manners, laws, country, every thing, is comprised in religion. It is this which, in my opinion, will render it so difficult to institute a single great nation in the East; it is this which makes the Turkish empire totter. You perceive no signs of an existence in common, or symptoms of a possible nationality, except in those parts of the empire where tribes of the same faith are congregated; it is visible amongst the Asiatic Greek race, amongst the Armenians, the Bulgarians, the Servians; every where besides you see men, but not nations.

October 3.—This day I descended the lower grades of Lebanon, which inclined from Deir-el-Kammar towards the Mediterranean, and I have come to sleep in a solitary khan in the mountains.

At five o'clock in the evening, we mounted our horses in the court of the emir's palace. Upon leaving the gate of the palace, we began to descend by a road cut in the rock, which wound round the peak of Dptedin. On our right and left the plots of soil sustained by the artificial terraces, were planted with mulberry trees, and carefully cultivated. The shade of trees and of vines everywhere covers the ground; and numerous rivulets, turned by the Arab husbandman, come from the mountain-heights divided into canals, and irrigate the roots of the trees and the gardens. The gigantic shadow of the palace and terraces of Dptedin reaches over the whole of this scene, and follows you to the foot of the peak, where you re-commence to ascend another mountain, which bears upon its summit the town of

Deir-el-Kammar. In a quarter of an hour we arrived there. Deir-el-Kammar is the capital of the Emir Beschir and the Druzes; it contains a population of ten or twelve thousand souls. But, except an ancient edifice, adorned with Moorish sculpture and high balconies, exactly resembling the ruins of one of our castles of the middle ages, Deir-el-Kammar possesses no feature of a town, still less of a capital; it is very similar to a little town of Savoy or Auvergne, or to a large village in a distant province of France. The sun was just rising when we went through it; troops of mares and camels issued from the courts of the houses, and spread themselves over the unpaved quarters and streets of the town. On a wide open square, some black tents of a vagabond race (zingari) were erected; men, women, and children, half-naked, or enveloped in the immense blankets of white wool which is their only garment, were huddled round a fire, combing their hair, or searching after the vermin which were feeding on them. Some Arabs, in the service of the emir, passed on horseback in their magnificent costumes, with superb arms stuck in their belts, and holding a lance twelve or fifteen feet long in their hands. Some were bringing to the emir news from Ibrahim's army; others were descending towards the coast to deliver the orders of the prince to the detachments commanded by his sons, lying encamped on the plain. Nothing is more imposing and rich than the costume and equipments of these Druze warriors. Their immense turban, composed of shawls of brilliant colours wound in graceful folds, casts over their swarthy visage and black eyes a shade which adds to the commanding and savage energy of their physiognomies. Long moustachios cover their lips, and fall over both sides of the mouth. A species of short tunic of a red colour is invariably worn by all the Druzes and mountaineers; this tunic is woven, according to the importance and wealth of the wearer, of cotton and gold, or only of cotton and silk, into elegant designs, in which the variety of colours contrasts with the gold or silver tissue sparkling on his breast and back. Immense trousers, in numberless plaits, cover the limbs; the feet are covered with short boots of red morocco, and with slippers of yellow morocco above the boots; furled jackets with hanging sleeves are thrown over the shoulders. A belt of silk or morocco leather, similar to that of the Albanians, encircles the waist in numerous folds, and serves the horseman to carry his arms. The handles of two or three langiars, or yatagans—poignards and short sabres in use amongst the orientals—are always seen sticking out of the belt, and shining on the breast; generally the stocks of two or three pistols, encrusted with gold or silver, complete this portable arsenal. All the Arabs have, besides, a lance, the shaft of which is thin, supple, and hard, like a long reed. This lance, which is their principal weapon, is decorated with waving tufts and strings of silk; they generally hold it in their right hand, the iron towards the sky, and the handle almost touching the ground; but when they urge their horses to the gallop, they brandish it horizontally above their heads, and in their military sports they throw it to an enormous distance, and pick it up, bending their bodies to the earth. Before throwing the lance, they give it an oscillating movement for some time, which adds considerably to the force of the cast, and enables them the more surely to hit the mark they design. We met a great number of these cavaliers in the course of the day. The Emir Beschir had himself given us some of them to serve as guides, and as a mark of honour. They all saluted us with extreme politeness, and drew up their horses to permit us to pass along the road.

About two miles from Deir-el-Kammar, there is one of the most beautiful views of Lebanon that can be imagined. On one side its deep gorges, into which we were about to descend, open all at once beneath your feet. On the other, the castle of Dptedin rises like a pyramid on the summit of its hill, clothed in verdure, and furrowed by foaming torrents; and before you are the mountains gradually sinking to the sea, some all black, others struck with the rays of light, and rolling like a

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

et of hills, until they are lost in the green ridges the olive woods in the plains of Sidon, or in the sandy beaches, red as brick, which border the coasts of Beirout. Here and there the variegated colouring the mountain sides, and the waving lines of the immense horizon described by their descent, are interrupted and cut off by the groups of cedars, firs, or pines with broad tops; and numerous villages glitter at their bases, or on their summits. The sea bounds this landscape; one follows with the eye, as upon an enormous chart or a raised plan, the hollows, the projections, and the undulations of the coasts, the capes, the promontories, and the gulfs of its shore, from Mount Carmel to Cape Batroun, a stretch of fifty leagues. The air is so pure that one imagines points can be reached in a few hours' descent, which require three or four days' march to arrive at. At this distance, the sea is so confounded at the first glance with the firmament, which closes on it at the horizon, that one cannot distinguish the two elements, and the land appears to float as it were in a boundless and double ocean. It is only after fixing with more attention the eyes upon the sea, and observing the little white sails shining on its blue expanse, that we can tell exactly what we see. A light mist, more or less gilded, floats at the edge of the horizon, and divides the water and the sky. At intervals, fleecy clouds, roused from the sides of the mountains by the morning breezes, were detached like the white feathers which a bird scatters in the wind, and were borne over the sea, where they evaporated in the rays of the sun, just commencing to sear.

We quitted with regret this magnificent scene, and we began our descent by a path more perilous than any I have ever seen in the Alps. The declivity was perpendicular, the road was not two feet broad, bottomless precipices yawned on one side, walls of rock rose on the other. The path was formed of loose stones, or of pieces of rock, so polished by water and the iron shoes of horses and the tread of camels, that these animals are obliged to seek with care a place to plant their feet: as they always fix them in the same spots, they have at last dug cavities in the stone, into which their hoofs sink some inches deep, and it is entirely owing to these holes that any points of resistance are afforded to the horses' shoes, so as to enable the animal to keep himself from sliding forwards. From time to time we found also steps cut in the rock two feet high, or round blocks of granite which it was impossible to clear, so that it is necessary to wind into the interstices, scarcely so wide as the limbs of the animals we bestrode. Such are almost all the roads in this part of Lebanon. At times the sides of the mountains swerved or grew into a plain, and we marched more at our ease on beds of yellow sand, of a sort of freestone, or of vegetable earth. One cannot conceive how such a country is filled with so many beautiful horses, and how they get accustomed to it. No Arab, however inaccessible his village or his dwelling, ever leaves home but on horseback, and we saw them descending or mounting, in perfect carelessness, with the pipe in their mouths, such declivities as our mountain goats would find it difficult to scale.

After an hour and a half's continual descent, we came in sight of the bottom of the gorge which we had to traverse and follow. A river murmured in its depths, still veiled from us by the mist of its waters, and by the branches of walnut, carob, plane, and Persian poplar trees, growing on the lowest banks of the ravine. Limpid fountains issued to our right from the grottoes of rock, hung with a thousand unknown creeping plants, or gushed from beds of green sward, sprinkled with the flowers of autumn. In a short time we spied a house amongst the trees on the edge of the stream, and we passed at a ford this river or torrent. There we stopped to rest our horses, and to enjoy for a moment one of the most extraordinary scenes which we had met in our journey.

The gorge to which we had descended was quite overflowed by the waters of the torrent, which foamed round the masses of rock fallen into its bed. Here and

there islets of vegetable soil gave root to gigantic poplars, which rose to a prodigious height, and cast their long tapering shadows on the banks of the mountain where we were seated. The torrent, on our left, tumbled headlong between two walls of granite, which it seemed to have cleaved to form a gulf for itself; these walls rose to a height of four or five hundred feet, and nearly joining at their summits, appeared an immense arcade, which in time would crumble on itself. The tops of Italian pines hung like clusters of wall-flowers over the ruins of ancient walls, and stood out in sombre green upon the vivid blue of the sky. On our right, the gorge winded for a quarter of a mile between the retreating and more sloping banks; the waters of the river stretched in freedom, washing a multitude of small isles or verdant promontories: all these isles, and tongues of land, were decked in the richest and most graceful vegetation. It was the first time I had met the poplar since on the banks of the Rhone and the Saone. It cast its wan and restless shade over the whole of this watery valley; but as it is not lopped or planted by the hand of man, it grows in groups, and extends its unrestrained branches with much more majesty, diversity of form and grace, than in our countries. Between these groups of trees, and multitudes of rushes and high reeds, growing also on the islands, we saw the broken arches of an old bridge, built by the ancient emirs of Lebanon, and fallen in the lapse of ages. Beyond the ruined arches of the bridge, the gorge widened into an immense landscape of valleys, plains, and elevated spots, studded with villages inhabited by the Druzes, and all was surrounded, like an amphitheatre, by a circular chain of high mountains. The elevations were almost all covered with green, and plantations of pine. The villages, suspended above each other, seemed to the eye as if they touched; but when we reached some of them, we found that the distance between them was considerable, both from the difficulty of the paths, and the necessity of descending and remounting the deep ravines which separated them. Some of these villages are so situated that it is quite easy to hear the voice of a man speaking in another village, yet it requires an hour to go from one to another. What increased the effect of this beautiful landscape were two large monasteries, planted like fortresses on the top of two hills behind the river, which seemed like huge blocks of granite blackened by age. The one is inhabited by Maronites, who devote themselves to the instruction of young Arabs, destined to the priesthood. The other is deserted; it formerly belonged to a congregation of Lazarites of Lebanon; and it now serves as an asylum and refuge to two young Jesuits sent there by their order, at the request of the Maronite bishop, to furnish rules and models to the Arab instructors. They live there in complete solitude, in an exemplary poverty and sanctity (I knew them afterwards). One of them learns Arabic, and uselessly labours for the conversion of the Druzes in the neighbouring villages; he is a man of great intelligence and information. The other is occupied with medicine, and traverses the country distributing medicines gratuitously. Both are much loved and respected by the Druzes, and even by the Metualis. But they can expect no result from their residence in Syria. The Maronite clergy are greatly attached to the Roman church; yet this clergy have their own traditions, and their independent discipline, which they will not allow to be borne down by the manoeuvres of the Jesuits. They possess the real spiritual authority in the whole of Lebanon; they would very quickly have rivals in the active and indefatigable corporations of Europe, and this rivalry they very naturally look upon with alarm.

After having rested half an hour in this enchanting spot, we got again on horseback, and commenced climbing the steep ascent which was before us. The road became more and more difficult as we scaled the last chain of Lebanon, separating us from the coasts of Syria. But in proportion as we mounted, the aspect of the immense hollow, which we left on our right, became more imposing from its vastness.

The river which we had quitted meandered in the midst of a plain slightly undulated with hills, and sometimes expanded into pools of water as blue and glittering as the lakes of Switzerland. The black hills, crowned at their summits with clusters of pines, interrupted its course at every moment, and divided it to appearance into a thousand luminous streaks. Step by step the hills leaving the plain, rose emulating and supporting each other, all redolent with flowering heaths, and bearing here and there at intervals trees with widely spreading tops, which threw a gloom on detached spots. Woods of cedars and pines stretched from the more lofty elevations, dying away in solitary groups and glades as they came around the numerous Druze villages, the terraces, balconies, and latticed windows of which we saw rising from out the greenness of the pines. The inhabitants, clad in their beautiful scarlet mantles, and their foreheads bound by red turbans in wide folds, stood on their terraces to see us pass, and added, by the brilliancy of their costume, and the gracefulness of their attitudes, to the imposing, novel, and picturesque effect of the prospect. At the entry, and at the termination of each of these villages, handsome Turkish fountains were playing. The women and young girls, who came to get water in their long and narrow jugs, were grouped around the basins, and lifted up a corner of their veils to get a look at us. The population appeared to us superb; men, women, and children, all had the aspect of vigour and of health. The women are very handsome; their features, in general, bear a haughty and elevated expression, without a shade of ferocity.

We were saluted on all sides with an agreeable politeness, and the hospitality of the dwellings was offered us by all. We declined their kindness, however, and continued ascending for about three hours precipitous paths, winding in the pine woods. We reached at length the concluding crest, white and naked, of the mountains, and the vast horizon of the Syrian coast stretched before us at a single glance. It presented a prospect widely different from that which we had had under our eyes for some days; it was like the view of Naples, seen from the top of Vesuvius, or from the heights of Castellamare. The immense expanse of ocean was at our feet, without limits, or only with some clouds heaped at the extremity of its waters. Beneath these clouds we might have believed we perceived land—the land of Cyprus, which is thirty leagues at sea; Mount Carmel on the left; and on the right, until all sight was lost, the interminable chain of the shores of Beirut, Tripolis, Syria, Latakia, and Alexandretta; and in fine, confusedly, and under the gilded mists of evening, the glittering peaks of the mountains of Taurus; but this must have been an illusion, for the distance is enormous. Immediately from under our feet the mountain began to sink; fir down the rocks, and the dry heaths of the summit, on which we stood; then the descent becoming less rapid, it stretched out from hill to hill, first over grey rocky eminences, afterwards over the dark-green tops of pines, carobs, and holly-oaks; then in more gentle declivities over the lighter and youthful green of planes and sycamores; finally appeared the brown hills, in the velvet foliage of the olive woods. All at last fell away, and was lost in the narrow plain which separates Lebanon from the sea. There, upon slips of land, we saw ancient Moorish towers, guarding the shore, and in the bottom of the gulfs, towns or large villages with their walls glittering in the sun, and their little coves hollowed in the sands, whilst their banks were pulled dry on shore, or with sails set were leaving or entering the havens. Saïde, and Beirut especially, surrounded by rich plains of olives, of citrons, and of mulberries, with the minarets and domes of their mosques, their castles and battlements, stood out from this expanse of tints and outlines, and drew the observation to the two points jutting into the waves. Beyond the plain the great Lebanon, broken by the course began again to rise, first yellow and gilded mists of Palestine, then grey, sombre, and onwards green and sable, in the region of

the forests, and lastly presenting its peaks of snow, which seemed confounded in the transparency of the heavens, and where the white rays of day slept in an eternal serenity upon a couch of perpetual snow. Naples or Sorrente, Rome or Albano, has no such landscape.

After having pursued our descent for nearly two hours, we found a khan, isolated under magnificent palm-trees, on the borders of a fountain. It is proper to describe, once for all, what they call a khan in Syria, and generally in all the countries of the East. It is a cabin built of stone, with its walls badly joined, without cement, and giving free ingress to both wind and rain. The stones are generally blackened with the smoke of the hearth, which is perpetually stealing through the numerous crevices. The walls are scarcely seven or eight feet high; they are covered with pieces of rough wood, with the bark and branches of trees; the whole is surmounted with dried faggots, which serve for a roof. The interior is not paved, and according to the season, it is a bed either of dust or of mud. One or two stakes serve as support to the leafy roof, and the traveller hangs there his mantle or his arms. In a corner is a small hearth raised on unhewn stones; upon this hearth a perpetual fire burns, and there are one or two brass coffee-pots, always full of thick and mealy coffee, the habitual refreshment and solitary want of the Turks and Arabs. There are, ordinarily, two rooms, such as I have described. One or two Arabs are authorised, upon payment of a rent to the pacha, to perform the honours of hospitality, and to sell coffee, and cakes of barley flour, to the caravans. When the traveller arrives at the door of one of these khans, he descends from his camel or his horse, and detaches the straw mat or Damascus carpet, which has to serve as his bed; it is stretched in a corner of the smoky chamber. He then seats himself, asks for coffee, lights his pipe or his hookah, and he waits until his slaves have collected a little dry wood to prepare his repast. His meal consists, generally, of two or three cakes, half-baked on a heated flint, and of some pieces of hashed mutton, which is stewed in a brass kettle, with rice. Most frequently there is neither mutton nor rice to be bought in the khan, and he contents himself with the cakes, and excellent fresh water, which is never wanting in the vicinity of the khans. The domestics, slaves, and moulkes (conductors of camels), with the horses, remain in the open air, round the khan. There is usually some well-known centenarian tree in the neighbourhood, which serves as a distant beacon to the caravan; it is oftenest an immense fig-sycamore, a tree which I have never seen in Europe. It is as high as the largest oaks, and attains a greater age than they; its trunk is sometimes thirty or forty feet in circumference, often much more; its branches, which commence to shoot out fifteen or twenty feet from the ground, extend horizontally, at first with an immense sweep, but they rise in less enlarged cones, and at a distance give an idea of the form of our beeches. The shade of these trees, which Providence seems to have thrown here and there like a welcoming cloud over the burning sand of the desert, stretches to a great distance from the trunk, and it is not uncommon to see sixty camels, or horses, and as many Arabs, encamped beneath the shelter of one of these trees during the heat of the day. But here, as everywhere, we discover with regret the carelessness of the orientals, and of their government. These trees, which should be preserved with care, as hotels provided by nature for the necessities of caravans, are abandoned to the stupid indifference of those whom they shelter; the Arabs light their fires at the foot of the sycamore, and the greatest number of these beautiful trees have their trunks all blackened and hollowed by the flame from these fires. Our small caravan established itself beneath one of these majestic sycamores, and we passed the night enveloped in our mantles, and stretched on a straw-mat, in a corner of the khan.

October 4.—This morning we left the khan; and after some hours' ride over the rapid sweeps of Lebanon, we arrived at the beautiful fountains midway to the coast. There, all the asperity of the mountain disappears, and

marched for two hours in the midst of rising ground, more pleasing, and better cultivated, than can be imagined. It resembled Tuscany. Walls of support everywhere sustain the terraces of soil, where the trees are entwined with vines, casting a shade over the crops of all kinds, without preventing them from flourishing. Villages, where every thing announces order, peace, industry, and wealth, are thickly scattered on the hills; the houses, or rather the castles, of the sheiks command them, as our Gothic castles formerly frowned over our small towns. Immense convents of Maronite monks occupy the tops of the eminences, like fortresses. The monks are seen issuing out, proceeding with the plough to the fields, or collecting the leaves of the mulberries. The Arabs, without distinction of sex, are peacefully at work in the enclosures, and look at us as we pass, with a smile at our European costumes. The sheik, and his principal servants, are generally seated on a carpet at the door of his castle, or beneath a great yeamore in the middle of the road; he smokes his pipe, and gives us a salute, by pressing his hand to his heart, and saying to us, "*Sala el kaci*"—"May the lay be fortunate for you, travellers!")

At length we reach the plain, which we traverse under an arch of verdure, formed by long reeds, palms, figs, vines, and mulberries. From time to time, a solitary house of an Arab, or Græco-Syrian cultivator, appears in this forest of foliage; the children play with the broad-tailed Syrian sheep, upon the thresholds of the doors; beautiful young girls, with their faces uncovered, bear water-pitchers on their heads; and the father and mother work, at the foot of the mulberries, on those beautiful silk stuffs of a thousand colours, the threads of which they attach from tree to tree, and weave, as they walk beneath the shade. Scotland, Saxony, Savoy, Switzerland, do not present the traveller with more scenes of quiet life, peace, and happiness, than are to be seen at the foot of Mount Lebanon, where we expect to find nothing but barbarians.

October 5.—I have found my wife and child in good health, and occupied in embellishing and adorning our winter abode. I have passed some days with them, before departing for Palestine and Egypt. Ibrahim Pacha has gained a decisive victory at Homs; he advances towards Caramania, and will pass the Taurus, driving the Turks before him. There is no longer any disquietude as to the tranquillity and safety of this country. I will travel with my mind at rest, touching all that I hold most dear in life. Our new Beirut friends, Messieurs Bianco, Jorelle, Farren, Laurella, Abost, are to provide in my absence for all the casualties which may occur. I am about to organise definitively my caravan, and shall depart as soon as the first rains have lowered the temperature of thirty degrees, which still prevails on the Syrian coast.

JOURNEY FROM BEIRUT, THROUGH SYRIA AND PALESTINE, TO JERUSALEM.*

October 8 : three o'clock in the afternoon.—We mounted on horseback, with eighteen horses in our train forming the caravan. We slept at a khan, three hours' march from Beirut, on the same route as that already described on our visit to Lady Stanhope. On the following day, departed at three in the morning; at five,

* (Palestine, or the Holy Land, forms only a portion of Syria. It consists of a stripe of land, lying betwixt the 31st and 36th degrees of north latitude, and having the Mediterranean Sea on the west, and the river Jordan on the east. The land of Edom and Egypt are on the south. The length of the country is from two to three hundred miles, and its breadth about fifty. It will be observed, that M. de Lamartine begins his journey at Beirut, in the northern quarter of the country, and proceeds southwards along the coast to Jerusalem, but making, when half way, an inland excursion to Nazareth and Lake of Galilee.)

crossed the river Tamour, the ancient Tamyris; rose-laurels in flower on the banks. Followed the strand, on which the foam of the waves washed over the feet of our horses, as far as Saïde, the ancient Sidon, still a fine shadow of the destroyed town, of which even the very name is lost—no relic of its past grandeur. A circular jetty, formed of enormous rocks, surrounds a dock, cloaked with sand, and some fishermen, with their children wading in the water, push into the sea a boat without masts or sails, the sole maritime feature of this second queen of ocean. At Saïde, we dismount at the French khan, an immense palace for our ancient commerce in Syria, where our consuls united the natives of all countries under the standard of France. There is no longer any commerce, no longer any Frenchmen; there only remains at Saïde, in the vast deserted khan, an old and respectable agent of France, M. Giraudin, who has lived there for fifty years in the midst of his truly oriental family, and who received us as a travelling countryman is always received, in a land where ancient hospitality is preserved in full integrity. We dined, and slept for some hours with this excellent family; hospitality is sweet thus accorded, unexpectedly and lavishly bestowed; water for washing offered by the sons of the house; the mother, and the wives of the sons, attending on their feet to the arrangements of the repast. At four o'clock, mounted on our horses, escorted by the sons and friends of the family of Giraudin; the exercise of the djerid performed by one of them seated on a superb Arab horse; two hours from Saïde, adieux and acknowledgments. Marched two hours more, and slept beneath our tents at a delightful fountain on the sea coast, named *El Kantara*. A gigantic tree overshadowed the whole caravan; a delicious garden descended to the very waves of the sea; an immense caravan of camels spread around us in the same field. Night under the tent; neighing of the horses, cries of the camels, smoke of the evening fires, transparent glimmer of the lamp through the streaked cloth of the tent. Thoughts of the tranquil life, of the fireside of home, of distant friends, come across the brow, whilst reposing uneasily, and in burning heat, upon the saddle, which serves for a pillow. In the morning, whilst the moulkes and slaves bridled the horses, two or three Arabs draw up the stakes of the tent; they knock away the pole which supports it; it falls, and the wide expanding sails which covered a whole family of travellers, slide and fall to the ground into a small heap of canvass, which a camel-driver puts under his arm, and hangs to the saddle of his mule. There simply remains upon the vacant spot where we were just now established, as if in a permanent abode, an abandoned fire, which is yet smoking, and quickly expires in the heat of the sun;—a veritable, striking, and living image of life, frequently employed in the Bible, and which always has a powerful effect upon me, whenever it is presented to my observation.

Departed from Kantara before daylight. Scaled some dry and rocky eminences advancing into the sea as promontories. From the top of the last and highest of these hills, we see Tyre, which appears at the termination of its long and sterile bank. Between the sea and the concluding heights of Lebanon, which here fall with a rapid descent, there stretches a plain about eight leagues long and one or two broad: the plain is naked, yellow, and covered with prickly shrubs, on which the camels of the caravan browse as they pass. A peninsula juts into the sea, separated from the continent by a causeway, covered with a glittering sand, brought by the winds of Egypt. Tyre, at present called Sour by the Arabs, is placed on the sharpest extremity of this promontory, and appears to rise from the waves themselves: at a distance you would call it a handsome, new, white, and lively town, looking on the sea; but it is only a beautiful shadow which vanishes on drawing near. A few hundred crumbling and almost deserted houses, in which the Arabs collect at evening the large flocks of sheep and black goats, with long hanging ears, which defile before you in the plain;—such is the Tyre of to-day! She has no longer a harbour in the seas, or

a road on the land : the prophecies are long ago accomplished upon her.

We journeyed in silence, occupied in contemplating this wreck and dust of empire which we trampled on. We followed a path in the middle of the lands of Tyre, between the town and the grey naked hills which Lebanon throws to the edge of the plain. We came opposite the town, and reached a hillock of sand which seems at present to form its sole bulwark, whilst it is overwhelming it. I thought on the prophecies, and I tasked my memory for some of the eloquent menaces which the divine spirit spoke by Ezekiel. I found them not in words, but I found them in the deplorable reality which I had before my eyes. Some verses of my own, thrown off at hazard on leaving France for the East, alone occurred to my recollection.

I have not heard the nations' cries ascend,
And call responses from the cedars old,
Nor seen high Lebanon's God-sent eagles bend
Their flight on Tyre, emblems of wrath foretold.

I had before me the black Lebanon ; but my imagination has deceived me, thought I to myself : I see neither the eagles nor the vultures, which ought, in order to fulfil the prophecies, to descend incessantly from the mountains to devour this corpse of a town reproved by God, and the enemy of his people. At the moment I was making this reflection, some large, strange, and motionless object appeared to our left on the top of a perpendicular rock which advanced into the plain, even to the route for caravans. It was like five statues of black stone, placed on the rock, as on a pedestal ; but from some almost insensible movements in these colossal figures, we believed, as we approached, that they were five Bedouin Arabs, clad in their black goat-skins, who stood on this height to see us pass. At length, when we were only fifty steps from the rock, we saw one of these five objects expand his wide wings, and flap them against his sides with a noise like that of a sail set to the wind. We distinguished them as five eagles, of the largest kind I had ever seen on the Alps, or chained in the menageries of our cities. They did not fly away, or bestir themselves as we drew near ; planted like kings of the desert on the edge of the rock, they looked down upon Tyre as their appanage, whither they were about to return. They seemed to possess it of right divine ; instruments of a command which they enforced, of a prophetic vengeance which they were commissioned to accomplish towards man, and in spite of man. I could not tire myself with the contemplation of this prophecy in action, this miraculous verification of the divine threats, of which chance rendered us the witnesses. Never had anything more supernatural struck thus vividly my sight and my spirit ; and it required an effort of my reason not to behold, behind the five gigantic eagles, the lofty and terrible figure of the poet of vengeance, Ezekiel, rising above them, and pointing out to them with his eye and finger the city which God gave them to devour, whilst the storm of divine anger shook his snowy streaming beard, and the fire of celestial wrath shot from his eyes. We stood when forty paces off ; the eagles just turned their heads, and cast a disdainful look upon us ; but at last two of our troop left the caravan, and rushed in a gallop, musket in hand, to the very foot of the rock ; still they flew not. Some shots with ball caused them heavily to rise, but they returned, and hovered for a long time over our heads, without being reached by our balls, as if they had said to us, " You can do nothing : we are the eagles of the Almighty ! "

I was then assured that poetic imagination had suggested to me the eagles of Tyre as less real, less beautiful, and less sublime than they were in fact, and that there is in the *mens divinator* of poet, even of the most obscure, some portion of that divining and prophetic instinct which speaks the truth without knowing it.

ed at noon, after a march of seven hours, of the Tyrian plain, at a place called the *monon*. All travellers have described them ;

they are three reservoirs of clear and running water, which springs, as by enchantment, from a flat, parched, and sandy soil, two miles from Tyre. Each of these reservoirs is artificially elevated about twenty feet above the level of the plain, and is filled to the very brim, the water perpetually running over the sides, and by the current it forms giving motion to the wheels of mills. By aqueducts, half ancient, half modern, the water is conveyed to Tyre, giving a fine effect to the landscape. It is said that Solomon caused these three wells to be constructed, as a recompense to Tyre and its king, Hiram, for the services which he had received from its marine and artists in the building of the temple. Hiram had conveyed the marbles and cedars of Lebanon.

These immense wells are each from sixty to eighty feet in circumference ; their depth is unknown, and in one of them no bottom is found. No one has ever discovered by what mysterious channel the water of the mountains is drawn there. There is every reason to believe, on examining them, that they are vast artesian wells, invented long before their re-invention by the moderns.

Departed at five o'clock from the Wells of Solomon ; marched two hours in the plain of Tyre, and arrived at night at the foot of a high perpendicular mountain on the sea, which forms the Cape of Raz-el-Abiad. The moon was rising above the dark peak of Lebanon to our left, but not high enough to illumine its sides ; she fell upon some prodigious blocks of white rock, on which her light glared like a flame on marble, leaving us in the shade ; these rocks, far advanced into the sea, broke the sparkling foam, and showered it over us ; the dull, periodical sound of the heavy wave against the cape was heard alone, and it shook at every stroke the narrow ridge on which we were toiling, suspended upon the edge of the precipice. At a distance the sea shone like an enormous sheet of silver, and here and there some lowering cape jutted into its bosom, or a deep cavern struck into the indented sides of the mountain ; the plain of Tyre stretched behind us ; it was yet distinguishable by its fringes of yellow glittering sand, which marked its outlines between sea and land. Tyre was seen throwing its shadow over the extremity of the promontory, and by a chance, doubtless unusual, a light was glimmering on its ruins, which at a distance might be taken for a beacon : but it was the beacon of solitude and desolation, guiding no vessel in her course, and appearing and drawing our eyes only to a glance of pity over its ruins. This route along the precipice, with all the varied, solemn, and sublime accompaniments of the night, the moon, and the yawning abysses, continued for about an hour—one of the hours the most strongly imprinted on my memory that God has permitted me to contemplate on earth ! A sublime portal for to-morrow's entry into the land of miracles !—into that land of testimony, yet all-impressed with the traces of the old and new dispensations from God to man !

On descending from the heights of this cape, we had the same view which had struck us on scaling them ; precipices equally lofty, sonorous, whitened with foam, and diversified with vast ledges of living rock, yawning beneath our feet and before our eyes ; the sea broke with the same ringing echo which accompanied us the whole length of the stormy coast of Syria, as the ancient Hebrew poets call it ; the moon, further advanced in the firmament, lighted up more vividly this scene, at once tumultuous and solitary. The vast plain of Ptolemais stretched before us. It was nine o'clock, in an October evening ; our horses, exhausted by a journey of thirteen hours, slowly dragged their feet over the sharp and shining rocks, which form the only roads in Syria, irregular stepping-stones on which we should not dare to risk any animal in Europe ; we ourselves, overcome with weariness, and overawed with the grandeur of the spectacle and the imperishable recollections of the day, walked in silence on foot, holding our horses by the bridle, and casting our eyes sometimes upon that sea which we had to cross to behold again our own rivers and our own mountains, and sometimes on the black and lofty peak of Mount Carmel, which began to

be delineated on the remotest skirts of the horizon. We arrived at a species of khan, that is to say, at a little house, half destroyed, where a poor Arab cultivates some figs and gourds in the clefts of the rocks, beside a fountain; the building was occupied by camel-drivers from Naplous, carrying corn into Syria for the army of Ibrahim. The fountain was tainted by the autumn heats. We nevertheless pitched our tents upon a soil covered with round loose stones; we made fast our horses to the stake, and we drank with moderation a few mouthfuls of the fresh water which remained in our jars from the Wells of Solonion. Between the plain of Tyre and the foot of the mountains, water begins to get scarce; the fountains are from five to six hours' distance from each other; and often when you arrive, you only find in the bed of the spring a dry and heated trough, which bears the foot-marks of the camels and goats which have last drunk at it.

On the 11th, we struck our tents by the light of a thousand stars, which were reflected in the waves stretched at our feet. We descended for yet an hour the last declivities which form the Cape of Raz-el-Abiad, and we entered the plain of Acre, the ancient Ptolemais.

The recent siege of Acre by Ibrahim Pacha had reduced the town to a heap of ruins, under which ten or twelve thousand slain were buried, with myriads of camels. Ibrahim, being victorious, was eager to place his important conquest beyond the reach of fortune, and immediately began to rebuild the walls and houses of Acre.* Every day, hundreds of dead bodies, half consumed, were dug out of the ruins; the putrid exhalations, the heaps of corpses, had corrupted the air of the whole plain. We passed as far as possible from the walls, and proceeded until mid-day, halting at the Arab village of the Waters of Acre, in an orchard of pomegranates, figs, and mulberries, close to the mills of the Pacha. At five o'clock we resumed, to reach an encampment, in an olive wood, on the top of the first hills of Galilee.

On the 12th we commenced our march with the first dawn of day; we cleared a hill planted with olives and holly-oaks, scattered in groups, or under the browsing teeth of goats and camels decreased to briars. When we were on the other side of the hill, the Holy Land, the land of Canaan, appeared in all its extent before us. It was a grand, agreeable, and imposing prospect. It was not that naked, rocky, and sterile land, that hive of mean and scraggy mountains, which is pictured to us as the promised land on the credit of prejudiced writers, or of travellers hurried in their descriptions, who, of the immense and varied domains of the twelve tribes, have only perceived the rocky path which leads from Jaffa to Jerusalem. Deceived by them, I expected only what they described, namely, a confined country, void of plains, trees, and water; a land encumbered with white or grey hillocks, where the Arab robber conceals himself in the shade of ravines to despoil passengers. Such is perhaps the route from Jerusalem to Jaffa. But here was Judea, such as we behold it, the first day, from the heights which skirt the plain of Ptolemais, such as we afterwards found it on the other side of the hills of Zabulon, beside Nazareth, and at the foot of the Mounts Hermon and Carmel: such as we traversed throughout its extent, and in all its variety, from the eminences which command Tyre and Sidon, as far as Lake Tiberias, and from Mount Tabor to the hills of Samaria and Naplous, and from there to the very walls of Sion. First before us was the plain of Zabulon; we were standing between two gently rising undulations, scarcely fit to be designated as hills; the hollow between them diving before us formed the road we had to follow. This road was marked by the traces of camels who have trod its

dust for four thousand years, and by the broad deep holes which their heavy feet, always falling on the same spot, have worn in the chalky and brittle rock, which continues invariably the same from the Tyrian cape to the first sands of the Lybian desert. To our right, and to our left, the round sides of the two hills were shaded every twenty steps by thickets of varied shrubs, which never lose their leaves; at a less distance, trees with knotty trunks, and strong interwoven branches, spread their motionless and sombre foliage. The greater part were holm-oaks of a particular species, the stem of which is thinner and straighter than the European oaks, and their velvety circular leaves are not notched like those of the common oak. The carob, the turpentine-tree, and more rarely the palm and sycamore, contributed to the clothing of these hills. I am not acquainted with the name of the other trees: some had the foliage of pines and cedars; others, and they were the most beautiful, resembled immense willows in the colour of their bark, the beauty of their foliage, and the delicate yellow tints of their leaves; but they far surpassed them in extent, growth, and elevation. The most numerous caravans can collect around their colossal trunk, and encamp with their camels and baggage beneath their shade; in the wide and frequent spaces which these different trees left naked on the sides of the hills, ridges of whitish, or oftener of bluish-grey rock, stood out from the soil, like the vigorous muscles of a strong-built human frame, which grow more prominent in advanced age, and seem as if they would pierce the skin which covers them; but between these ridges or blocks of rock, a black, light, and deep soil vegetated without intermission, and would have produced wheat, barley, and maize with the slightest husbandry, instead of forests of thorny brambles, wild pomegranates, Jericho roses, and prodigious thistles, the stems of which rose as high as the head of a camel. When you see one of these hills such as I have described, you have seen them all, so far as form is concerned, and the imagination can picture their effect when they are met in descriptions of the scenery of the Holy Land. We journeyed then between two of these hills, and we began again a gentle descent, leaving the sea and the plain of Ptolemais behind us, when we perceived the first plain in the land of Canaan—it was the plain of Zabulon, the garden of the tribe of that name.

Before us, on both sides, the two hills which we had just traversed separated in graceful and similar curves, like two exhausted waves, which gently sink and divide in unison before the prow of a vessel. The space which intervened between them, and which gradually enlarged, seemed like a creek, which the plain hollowed in the mountains; this creek, or gulf of level and fertile land, soon expanded into a larger valley; and where the two hills, which still skirted it, absolutely died away, the valley stretched, and was lost in an almost oval plain, the two sharp extremities of which sank under the shadow of two other rows of hills. This plain might be, at an eye's view, a league and a half broad, and three or four leagues long. From the height on which we were placed, at the opening of the hills of Acre, our eyes fell naturally upon it, involuntarily followed its wavings and sinuosities, and penetrated the narrowest hollows which it scooped in the roots of the mountains which bounded it. On the left, the lofty, gilded, and indented tops of Lebanon cast their pyramidal forms on the dark blue of the morning sky; on the right, the hill on which we stood rose insensibly as it left us, and, joining itself as it were to other hills, formed divers elevated groups, of which some were arid and fruitless, and others were covered with olives and figs, bearing on their summits a Turkish village, the white minaret of which contrasted strongly with the dark colonnade of cypresses, which almost every where envelopes the Moslem mosque. In front of us, the horizon which bounded the plain of Zabulon, stretching three or four leagues before us, formed a perspective of hills, mountains, and valleys, of sky, light, shade, and vapours, arranged in such a harmonious colouring and outline, cast in such happy composition, linked in such graceful proportions, and

* [Acre is the chief sea-port in Syria, and has about 16,000 inhabitants. As a fortification, it has endured a number of sieges, one of which was by the French, and proved unsuccessful. In front lies the bay of Acre, from the shore of which rises Mount Carmel. At the base of the mountain stands the small town of Caypha, and at a short distance to the east the bay receives the river Makattam, known in Scripture as "the brook Kishon."]

varied with effects so different, that I could not draw my eyes away; and, finding nothing in my recollections of the Alps, of Italy, or of Greece, to which I could compare this magical blending, I exclaimed, "It is a Poussin, or a Claude Lorrain!" Nothing in fact could equal the majestic sweetness of this prospect of Canaan, but the pencil of the two painters to whom the divine genius of nature has revealed her beauties. We shall only find this concourse of the grand and the soft, the energetic and the graceful, the picturesque and the rich, in the imaginary landscapes of these two great men, or in the inimitable country which we had before us, and which the hand of the great and supreme master had himself designed and coloured for the habitation of a pastoral and innocent people. At the foot of the mountains, about half a league in the plain, an eminence, entirely detached from the surrounding hills, rose from the ground like a natural pedestal, intended by nature to bear a fortified town. Its sides rose almost perpendicularly from the level of the plain to the very summit of this mountain-altar; they resembled exactly the ramparts of a fortification, traced and erected by the hands of men. The summit itself, instead of being uneven and round, like the tops of all the other hills and mountains, was levelled and flat, as if on purpose to bear something with which it should be crowned, when the people came for whose abode it was destined.

In all the charming plains of the land of Canaan, I have since again seen these same eminences in the form of quadrangular or oblong altars, evidently intended to protect the primitive dwellings of a timid and weak nation; and their destination is so well portrayed in their isolated and strange form, that their extent alone prevents our deceiving ourselves, and believing that they have been raised by the people as the sites of towns. But could so small a nation have ever elevated so many citadels of land, so enormous that the armies of Xerxes could not have heaped up one of them? To whatever belief credit may be attached, we must be blind not to see a special and providential, or, if you will, a natural, destination in these fortresses, reared at the openings and the terminations of almost all the plains of Galilee and Judea. Behind this eminence, on which the imagination may reconstruct, without difficulty, an ancient town, with its walls, bastions, and towers, the hills began to mount gradually from the plain, bearing in black and grey spots on their sides clusters of olives and holm-oaks. Between these hills, and the more lofty and frowning mountains of which they formed the bases, and which towered majestically above them, doubtless some torrent foamed, or the waters of some deep lake evaporated in the first heats of the morning sun, for a white and bluish vapour hung over the vacant space, and gently hid, as if to make it vanish, the higher range of mountains behind this transparent curtain, through which the rays of the sun streamed. Farther, and higher still, a third chain of mountains, enveloped in a perfect gloom, rose in circular and unequal peaks, and gave to the whole of this delightful landscape that aspect of majesty, energy, and sublimity, which should be always found in every thing that is beautiful, either as an element or a contrast. From point to point this third chain was broken, and permitted to the horizon and the vision an extension over a vast space of pale silvery sky, sprinkled with clouds lightly touched with vermillion; and behind this magnificent amphitheatre, two or three ridges of the distant Lebanon came out like advanced promontories upon the arch of heaven; and the first to catch the luminous darts of the early rays of the sun above them appeared so transparent, that we believed we could see the light of the firmament they hid from us trembling through them. Add to this spectacle, the serene expanse of the heavens, and the pureness of the light, and the force of the shades which characterise an Asiatic atmosphere; scatter in the plain a ruined khao, long rows of reddish cows, of white camels, of black goats, going with slow steps to seek the scarce but limpid and living water; figure to yourself a few Arab horse-

men, mounted on their light coursers, and scouring along the plain, glittering in their silvered arms and scarlet clothing, and groups of women, from the neighbouring villages, clad in their long sky-blue tunics, a broad white sash, with the ends trailing on the ground, and a blue turban, ornamented with little fillets of Venetian sequins—add here and there on the hill-sides Turkish and Arab hamlets, with walls of the colour of rock, and houses without roofs, confounded with the rocks of the hill itself; clouds of azure smoke rising from interval to interval between the olive and cypress trees which surround these villages; stones scooped like troughs (the tombs of the patriarchs), heads of granite columns, and sculptured capitals, scattered around the fountains beneath your horse's feet—conceive all this, and you will have the most exact and faithful idea of the delicious plain of Zabulon, of that of Nazareth, and of that of Sephora, and of Tabor. Such a land, repopled with a young and Jewish nation, cultivated and watered by intelligent industry, fructified by a tropical sun, producing spontaneously all the plants necessary or agreeable to man, from the sugar-cane and the banana to the vine and the grain of temperate climates, to the cedar and pine of the Alps—such a land, say I, would still be that of promise at the present day, if Providence should restore to it a race of people, and a condition of repose and liberty.

From the plain of Zabulon, we passed over gently rising hills, more sandy than the first, to the village of Sephora, the Sephora of the Scriptures, the ancient Diocæsana of the Romans, the largest town in Palestine, after Jerusalem, in the time of Herod Agrippa.

A great number of blocks of stone, cut for tombs, marked for us the route to the top of the eminence on which Sephora was placed; at the concluding height was an isolated column of granite, yet standing and pointing out the site of a temple; beautifully sculptured capitals lay on the ground at the foot of the column, and immense pieces of carved stone, raised for some great Roman monuments, were thick around, and served as boundaries to the fields of the Arabs, as far as a mile from Sephora, where we stopped to halt during the middle of the day. A fountain of excellent and inexhaustible water flows there for the inhabitants of two or three valleys; it is surrounded by orchards of fig and pomegranate trees, and we seated ourselves beneath their shade, and waited more than an hour before we could water our caravan, so great was the concourse of cows and camels which the pastoral Arabs brought there from all parts of the valley; countless strings of black goats, and of cows, stirred up the plain, and the hills which rise towards Nazareth.

I lay down, wrapped up in my mantle, under the shade of a fig-tree, a short distance from the fountain, and contemplated, for a long time, this scene of ancient days. Our horses were standing thickly about us, their feet shackled, their Turkish saddles on their backs, their heads lowered and seeking the shade of their own drooping manes; our arms, sabres, muskets, pistols, were suspended above our heads, on the branches of the pomegranates and figs. Some Bedouin Arabs, covered with a single piece of stuff with black and white stripes, were seated in a circle not far from us, and eyeing us with the aspect of plunderers. The women of Sephora, clothed exactly like the wives of Abraham and Isaac, with a blue tunic, bound at the middle of the body, and the swelling folds of another white tunic falling gracefully over the blue one, bore upon their blue-turbaned heads empty pitchers, lying on their sides, or carried them full and straight up, supporting them with their hands like the cariatides of the Acropolis. Some girls, in the same costume, were washing at the fountain, and laughing as they scrutinised us. Others clad in richer garments, and their heads covered with fillets of piastres or golden sequins, were dancing under a large pomegranate tree, at some distance from the fountain, and from us; their gentle and slow dance was nothing but a monotonous round, accompanied from time to time by some artless but not ungraceful steps. Woman has been created graceful; manners and costumes cannot

alter in her that charm of beauty and of love which every where hangs upon and displays her. These Arab women were not veiled, like all those whom we had hitherto seen in the east, and their features, though slightly tattooed, had a delicacy and regularity which distinguished them from the Turkish race. They continued dancing and singing all the time of our halt, and did not appear offended at the curiosity we evinced towards their movements, songs, and costumes. We were told that they were collected there, expecting the marriage-presents which a young Arab was gone to buy at Nazareth, for one of the daughters of Sephora, his bride. In fact, we met the presents on the road the same day; they consisted of a sieve to sift the flour, and separate it from the bran, a piece of cotton cloth, and a piece of richer stuff, to make a robe for the bride.

This day commenced in me new and entirely different impressions from those with which my journey had hitherto inspired me. I had journeyed with my eyes, thought, and understanding; I had never journeyed with the soul and the heart as on reaching the land of prodigies, the land of Jehovah, and of Christ!—the land, all the designations of which had been thousands of times lisped by my childish lips, all the ideas of which had first given colour to my young and tender imagination; the land from which had flowed to me at a later date, the lessons and consolations of a religion the second soul to our own. I felt within me as if something till now cold and dead was warmed and reanimated; I felt what we all feel on recognising, amongst a thousand unknown strange faces, the countenance of a beloved mother, sister, or wife!—what we feel on leaving the street to enter a temple—a feeling of meditation, of mildness, of internal joy, of tenderness, and of consolation, which we have nowhere else. The temple was, for me, this country of the Bible and the Gospel, into which I had just put my steps. I prayed to God in silence, in the secrecy of thought; I gave thanks to him for having granted that I should live long enough to cast my eyes upon the sanctuary of the Holy Land; and from this day, during all the rest of my journey in Judea, Galilee, and Palestine, the material poetic impressions which I received from the appearances and the names of places, were mingled with a more lively sentiment of veneration and love, and also of remembrance. My journey frequently became a prayer; and the two enthusiastic emotions, the most natural to my mind, that for nature, and that for its author, were roused within me almost every morning as fresh and vivid, as if so many scorching and withering years had not dried and exhausted them in my bosom. I felt that I was again a man, when appearing before the shadow of the God of my youth! On visiting the places consecrated by one of those mysterious events which have changed the face of the earth, we experience something similar to what is felt by the traveller who ascends the course of a vast river, like the Nile or the Ganges, to discover and contemplate it at its hidden and unknown source; it seemed to me also, as I scaled the last hills which separated me from Nazareth, that I was going to ponder, at its mysterious source, on that great and fruitful religion, which two thousand years ago worked its bed in the universe, and has refreshed so many mortal generations with its pure and life-bestowing waters! There was the source, in the hollow of that rock which I ground beneath my feet; that hill, the last steps of which I was clearing, had borne on its sides the Saviour, the Life, the Light, and the Hope of the world; it was there, at some steps from me, that the human model had taken birth amongst men, to draw them, by his word and example, from the ocean of error and corruption in which the human race was immersed. If I considered the matter as a philosopher, it was the starting point of the greatest event which has ever agitated the moral and political world—an event the influence of which alone imparts any remnant of movement and of vitality to the intellectual world! It was there that the most exalted, the most just, the most wise, and the most virtuous of all men, had arisen from obscurity, misery, and ignorance; there was his cradle, there the

theatre of his actions, and affecting sermons! From there he had issued forth yet young, with some obscure and ignorant men, upon whom he had engrafted the confidence of his genius and the courage of his mission, to proceed with foreknowledge to denounce an order of ideas and things not strong enough to resist him, but strong enough to procure his death! From there, said I, he went forth with confidence to vanquish death, and the universal empire of posterity! From there had flowed Christianity, an obscure spring, a drop of water invisible in the hollow of the rock of Nazareth, with which two passengers could not have slaked their thirst, which a ray of the sun could have drained, and which at present, like the great ocean of spirits, has filled up all the abysses of human wisdom, and bathed, with its inexhaustible waters, the past, the present, and the future! If, therefore, I had been incredulous as to the divinity of this occurrence, still would my mind have been powerfully overawed on drawing nigh to its first stage, and I should have laid bare my head, and bowed my face, before the concealed and disposing power which had made such things spring from so weak and imperceptible a commencement.

But considering the mystery of Christianity with the faith of a Christian, it was there, beneath that point of the blue heavens, at the bottom of that narrow and dark vale, and where that little hill threw its shadow, whose antique rocks seemed yet all broken up from the start of joy they suffered when giving birth to and sustaining the infant Jesus, or from the rent of grief that tore them when the dead Jesus was borne to the tomb—there was the fatal and sacred spot on the globe which God had chosen from all eternity for the descent on earth of his truth, his justice, and his love incarnate, in a God in Man. There it was that the divine breath had fallen at its own hour on a poor hut, the abode of humble industry, simplicity, and misfortune—that it had animated in the breast of an innocent and spotless virgin what was gentle, tender, and compassionate as herself, patient, suffering, and afflicted as a mortal, powerful, supernatural, wise, and prevailing as a God. It was there that God, in the garb of human nature, had endured our ignorance and weakness, our labours and miseries, during the obscure years of his unknown life, and that he had in some degree tasted existence, and inured himself to the world, before enlightening it by his word, healing it by his prodigies, and regenerating it by his death; it was there the sky had opened, and had darted to the earth his spirit made flesh, his conquering Word, to consume till the end of time iniquity and error, to try our virtues and our vices as in the fire of the crucible, and to kindle before the only and holy God the incense which shall never be exhausted—the incense of the renewed altar, the frankincense of universal charity and truth.

Whilst I made these reflections, with my eyes cast down, and my brain loaded with a thousand other thoughts yet more overpowering, I perceived at my feet, at the end of the valley, fashioned like a basin or lake of land, the white houses of Nazareth, gracefully grouped on the sides and at the bottom of the hollow. The Greek church, the high minaret of the Turkish mosque, and the extensive broad walls of the convent of the Latin fathers, were first perceived. Streets, formed by smaller buildings of an elegant and oriental style, extended round these larger edifices, and were animated with the bustle and movements of life. All around the valley or basin of Nazareth, groups of high prickly nopal, of fig-trees shorn of their autumnal leaves, and of pomegranates in gentle foliage, and of a delicate saffron green, were scattered here and there, giving freshness and grace to the landscape, like flowers of the field encircling a village altar. God alone knows what was then passing in my heart; but by a spontaneous, and, so to express it, an involuntary movement, I cast myself at my horse's feet, on my knees, in the dust, upon one of the blue crumbling rocks of the precipitous path we were descending. I remained in that posture some minutes absorbed in a silent contemplation, in which all the ideas of my sceptic and Christian

life rushed so confusedly into my head, that it was impossible for me to discriminate them. These words only escaped my lips, "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us." I uttered them with the sublime, deep, and grateful sentiment which they embody, and this spot inspires them so naturally, that I was struck on arriving in the evening at the sanctuary of the Latin church, to find them printed in letters of gold on the marble table of the subterranean altar in the house of Mary and Joseph. Then, bowing my head reverentially to the ground which had produced the Christ, I kissed it in silence, and moistened with tears of repentance, love, and hope, that soil, which has seen so many shed, and which has dried up so many, praying it might inspire me with some small portion of truth and charity.

We arrived at the convent of the Latin fathers of Nazareth, as the last faint light of evening was yet lingering on the high yellow walls of the church and the monastery. A broad iron gate opened for us, and our horses entered, their iron hoofs sliding and clattering on the glossy and sonorous flag-stones of the outer court of the convent. The gate was closed behind us, and we descended from our horses before the very door of the church where formerly stood the humble habitation of that mother who lent her breasts to the immortal visitor, who gave her milk to a God. The superior and the guardian father were both absent. Some Neapolitan and Spanish brothers, who were occupied in winnowing the wheat of the monastery under the gateway, received us rather coldly, and conducted us to an immense corridor, out of which the cells of the monks, and the chambers destined for strangers, opened. We there waited for a long time the arrival of the incumbent of Nazareth, who loaded us with politeness, and caused a room and a bed to be prepared for each of us. Oppressed by the journey, and the feelings of the day, we cast ourselves on our beds, adjourning until the morrow our inspection of the consecrated places, being unwilling to injure the entirety of our impressions by a glance cast in haste upon the holy spots, in the precincts of which we already reposed.

I arose several times during the night to lift up my soul and my voice to God, who had chosen in this place him who was to bear his word to the universe.

In the morning an Italian father came to conduct us to the church, and the underground sanctuary, which was anciently the house of the Holy Virgin and Saint Joseph. The church is a broad and lofty nave, with three elevations. The highest is occupied by the choir of the fathers of the Holy Land, which communicates with the convent by a door from behind; the lower is occupied by the faithful, and communicates with the choir and the great altar by a handsome staircase, with a double flight of steps, and gilded rails. From this part of the church, and beneath the great altar, a few steps conduct to a small chapel and a marble altar, lighted with lamps of silver, and erected at the very spot where tradition asserts the annunciation to have taken place. This altar is raised under the half-natural and half-artificial arch of a rock, against which the holy house doubtless leaned. Behind this first arch two darker subterranean recesses served, as it is said, as a kitchen and cellar for the holy family.* These traditions, more or less accurate, more or less altered by the pious necessities of popular credulity, or by the desire natural

to all those monks who possess so precious a relic to augment its interest by multiplying its details, have perhaps added some well-meant inventions to the powerful recollections of the place; but there is no doubt that the convent, and especially the church, were primitively constructed on the very site occupied by the house of the divine inheritor of heaven and earth. When his name was spread abroad like the light of a rising sun, a short while after his death, whilst his mother and disciples still lived, it is quite certain that they must have transmitted, from one to the other, the attachment and sorrow with which the absence of the divine master had inspired them, and have often themselves gone and conducted the new Christians to those places in which they had seen him live, speak, act, and die, whom they then adored. No mere human piety could preserve the tradition of a place dear to its remembrance, as faithfully as has done the piety of the faithful and the martyrs. We can trust for the exactitude of the principal positions of the redemption, to the fervour of a young faith, and to the vigilance of an immortal creed. We fell on our knees upon these stones, beneath this arch, the witnesses of the most incomprehensible mystery of the divine charity for man, and we prayed. The enthusiasm of prayer is likewise a mystery between man and God—like modesty, it casts a veil over the thoughts, and hides from men what is meant only for heaven.

We also visited the spacious and commodious convent, an edifice similar to all the convents of France or of Italy, and where the Latin fathers exercise as freely, and with as much security and publicity, the ceremonies of their religion, as they could do in a street of Rome, the capital of Christianity. The Mahomedans have been on this point very much calumniated. Religious tolerance, I will say more, religious respect, are profoundly impressed on their manners. They are so religious themselves, and regard with so jealous an eye freedom in their own religious exercises, that the creed of other men is the last thing upon which they permit themselves to make any attack. They have sometimes a sort of horror for a religion, the symbol of which is offensive to their own; but they entertain contempt and hatred only for the man who prays to the Almighty in no language; him they cannot comprehend, so much is the palpable conception of God ever present to their minds, and in constant occupation of their souls.

Fifteen or twenty Spanish and Italian fathers live in this convent, occupied in singing the praises of the Child-God, and the glories of his mother, in the temple where they lived poor and unknown. One of them, whom they call the Incumbent of Nazareth, is specially charged with the wants of the Christian community in the town, which contains seven or eight hundred Catholics, two thousand schismatic Greeks, some Maronites, and only a thousand Mahomedans. The fathers conducted us, in the course of the day, to the Maronite churches, to the ancient synagogue where the young Jesus went to instruct himself in the law which he was one day to purify, and into the workshop in which Saint Joseph exercised his humble trade of a carpenter. We remarked, with surprise and pleasure, the proofs of deference and regard which the inhabitants of Nazareth, even the Turks, every where evinced for the fathers of the Holy Land. A bishop, in the streets of a Catholic town, could not be more honoured, or more affectionately respected, than the religious persons here. Persecution is much less visited on the priest in the manners of the East, than in those of Europe; and if he desires martyrdom, it is not here that he should come and seek it.

October 14.—We started at four o'clock in the morning for Mount Tabor, the assigned scene of the transfiguration, but with great improbability, as at that epoch the summit of Tabor was crowned by a Roman citadel. The isolated position, and the height of this beautiful mountain, which rises like a verdant knoll from the plain of Esdraelon, caused it to be selected, in the time of Saint Jerome, as the scene of that sacred event. A chapel has been erected on the top, to which the pil-

* [How the site of the house of Joseph and Mary should now be below the level of the ground, is not explained by any authority which we have examined. M. Robinson mentions that the vault contains two granite columns, one, which is partially destroyed, being intended to record the spot where Mary was sitting when the angel Gabriel saluted her as the mother of the Messiah; the other, where the angel stood when he delivered the annunciation. The house of Joseph and Mary, which stood on this spot, is represented to have been carried miraculously by angels in 1291 to Galunatia, and thence in 1294 to near Rocanati in Italy, and finally in 1335 to Loretto, in the same country, where it is preserved with extraordinary care, and is an object of veneration to pilgrims. It is usually called the *Santo Casa*, or Holy House of Loretto. Imitations of it have been made at different

ms resort to hear the holy sacrifice; no priests side there, but they are supplied from Nazareth. hen arrived at the foot of Tabor—a superb cone of feet regularity, clothed on all sides with vegetation, and holly-oaks—the guide misled us. I sat down alone under an oak, close to the spot at which Raphael, in this picture, places the disciples dazzled with the glare from above, and I waited until the monk celebrated mass. It was announced to us from the height by the firing of a pistol, so that we might kneel down upon the natural steps of that gigantic altar before him who made it, and who stretched the shining arch of heaven over it.

At noon, we departed for Jordan and the Sea of Galilee—traversed, in an hour, the low and unbragous hills which bear the roots of Tabor—entered upon a vast plain eight leagues long, and at least as many broad. A khan in ruins was in the midst, of the architecture of the middle ages. Passed some villages of poor Arabs who cultivate the plain; each village has a well at some distance, and fig-trees and pomegranates planted not far from it. This is the only trace of comfort. The houses cannot be distinguished until you are close to them. They are huts six or eight feet high, a sort of mud cubes, with chopped straw forming a roof in the shape of a terrace. These terraces serve as courts; there is placed all their furniture—a rug and a mat. The women and children are almost always on them; the women are not veiled, their lips are dyed blue, the circle of their eyelashes is stained the same colour, and a slight tattooing is painted around their lips and on their cheeks. They are clad in a single blue chemise, tied with a white band around the loins—they all have an appearance of misery and distress. The men are covered with a mantle without a seam, of a thick stuff woven in black and white streaks in a shapeless guise, and the legs, arms, and neck, are bare. After journeying for a course of six hours through this yellow and rocky, though fertile plain, we perceive the land all at once sink before us, and we discover the immense valley of the Jordan, and the first azure glimmerings of the beautiful lake of Genesareth, or of the sea of Galilee, as the ancients and Evangelists call it. It soon opens entirely to our eyes, surrounded on all sides, except on the south, by an amphitheatre of lofty, grey, and black mountains. At its southern extremity this amphitheatre contracts, and leaves an opening through which flows the river of the prophets, and the river of the gospel—the Jordan!

The Jordan winds, as it issues from the lake, gliding into the low and marshy plain of Esdracelon, about fifty paces from the lake; it passes under the ruined arches of a bridge of Roman architecture, foaming a little, and making its first murmur heard. We directed our steps towards it by a rapid and rocky descent. We were eager to salute its waters, hallowed in the recollections of two religions. In a few minutes we are on its banks; we jump from our horses, and bathe our heads, feet, and hands, in its stream, fresh, tepid, and blue, as the waters of the Rhone where it leaves the lake of Geneva. The Jordan at this point, which must be nearly the middle of its course, would not be worthy of the name of river in a country of larger extent; but it, however, far exceeds the Eurotas and Cephalus, and all those rivers whose fabulous or historical names are early echoed in our memory, and are conceived in a likeness of magnitude, rapidity, and abundance, which the view of reality destroys. The Jordan even here is more than a torrent, although at the end of a rainless autumn it gently flows in a bed about a hundred feet broad, as a stream of water two or three feet deep, so clear, limpid, and transparent, that the pebbles in its bed can be told, and of that ravishing colour which returns the full depth of tint of an Asiatic sky—more blue even than the sky, like a picture more beautiful than the reality, like a mirror which embellishes what it reflects. Twenty or thirty paces from its waters, the strand, which it leaves at present dry, is scattered with loose stones, rushes, and tufts of laurel-roses yet in flower. This strand is five or six feet below the level

of the plain, and marks the dimensions of the river in the ordinary seasons of fulness. These dimensions, in my opinion, must be a depth of eight or ten feet, and a breadth of a hundred, or a hundred and twenty. It is narrower both above and below in the plain, but there it is more confined and deep, the spot at which we contemplated it being one of the four fords which the river has in its course. I drank, in the hollow of my hand, of the water of Jordan, of the water which so many divine poets had drunk before me, of that water which flowed over the innocent head of the voluntary victim! I found it perfectly fresh, of an agreeable taste, and of great clearness. The custom which we contract in eastern journeys of drinking nothing but water, and of drinking it repeatedly, renders the palate an excellent judge of the qualities of a new stream. The water of the Jordan failed in only one quality—coolness. It was warm, and though my lips and hands were inflamed by a march of eleven hours without shade, under a scorching sun, my lips and forehead experienced a sensation of heat on touching the water of this river.

Like all the travellers who come through so many fatigues, routes, and dangers, to visit in its abandonment this once royal stream, I filled several bottles with its waters to carry to friends less fortunate than myself, and I crammed the barrels of my pistols with the pebbles which I gathered on its shores. Might I not thus bear with me the holy and prophetic inspiration with which of old it invested the bards of its sacred precincts, and especially a small portion of that sanctity, and of that purity of spirit and heart, it contracted, doubtless, when having the purest and holiest of the children of men! I then mounted on horseback, and went round some of those ruined piles which bore the bridge or aqueduct of which I spoke above. I saw nothing but the inferior masonry of all the Roman constructions of that period—neither marble, sculpture, nor inscription; no arch was yet subsisting, but ten pillars were standing, and we distinguished the foundations of four or five others, with a space of about ten feet for each arch; which agrees pretty well with the breadth of 120 feet, which, at an eye's view, I believed the Jordan would have.

But what I say here of the dimensions of the Jordan, is only intended to satisfy the curiosity of persons who are anxious to have just and exact measures of the very creations of their thoughts, and not to lend arms to the enemies or champions of the Christian faith—arms despicable on both sides. What matters it whether the Jordan be a torrent or a river—whether Judea be a heap of barren rocks, or a delicious garden?—whether this mountain be but a hill, and this kingdom but a province? The men who rage and fight upon such questions, are as insane as those who think they upset a creed of two thousand years, when they laboriously strive to give the lie to the Bible, and an objection to the prophecies! Would one not believe, on seeing these grand combats on a word ill understood or wrongly interpreted by both sides, that religions are geometrical problems, which are proved by figures or destroyed by an argument, and that generations of believers or infidels are quite ready to await the end of the discussion, and immediately to pass over to the side of the best logician, and of the most erudite and ingenious antiquary? Profitless disputes, which neither pervert nor convert! Religions are not proved, are not demonstrated, are not established, are not overthrown, by logic! They are, of all the mysteries of nature and the human mind, the most mysterious and the most inexplicable; they are of instinct, and not of reason! Like the winds which blow from the east, and from the west, of which no one knows the cause, or the point of departure, they blow, God alone knows whence, God alone knows wherefore, God alone knows for how many ages, and over what countries of the globe! They are, because they are; they are not taken up or laid down at will, on the word of such or such a tongue; they are parcel of the heart, even more than of the understanding of men. Who is the man who will say, I am a Christian, because there is such a decisive answer in such a book,

or such an insurmountable objection in such another Every sensible man who is asked to give an account of his faith, will answer, "I am a Christian because the fibres of my heart are Christian, because my mother has made me suck a Christian breast, because the sympathies of my soul and my mind are for that doctrine because I live on the air of my own time, and do not attempt to foresee what will feed posterity."

We saw two villages suspended upon the steep banks of Lake Genesareth, the one at a quarter of an hour's march in front of us on the other side of the Jordan the other at some hundreds of fathoms on our left, and on the same side of the river. We did not know by what race of Arabs these villages were peopled, and we had been warned to be on our guard, and be prepared for surprises on the part of the Arabs of Jordan, who seldom permit their river and plains to be traversed with impunity. We were well mounted, well armed, and the rapid unexpected conquest of Syria by Mahomet-Ali had struck all the Arabs with such a sensation of fear and astonishment, that the moment was well chosen to attempt bold excursions on their territory. They were ignorant who we were, why we marched with so much confidence amongst them; and they might naturally suppose we were closely followed by forces superior to those they could bring against us. Fear for the morrow, apprehensions of a prompt vengeance, were thus the safeguards of our journey. In this belief, I went and audaciously fixed my camp in the very midst of the Arab village of which I spoke last. I do not know its name; it is built, if one can so speak of houses mere shapeless blocks of stone and mud, on the extremity of the elevated shore which commands the sea of Galilee. Whilst our Arabs fixed the tents, I descended alone the precipitous ridge which led to the lake; its waters bubbled upon the sides and bordered them with a fringe of light foam, which vanished and reappeared at each return of its short and quick waves, like the rolling of a quiet and deep sea dying away on the sands of some narrow gulf. I had scarcely time to bathe in its waters, the theatre of so many actions in the grand moral and modern poem, the Gospel, and to collect for my European friends some handfuls of its shells. Already the sun had sunk behind the high, black, volcanic peaks of the heights of Tiberias, and some Arabs, who had seen me descend alone, and who were loitering on the shore, might be tempted by the occasion. With my musket in my hand, I advanced straight up to them; they looked at me, and saluted me, putting their hands on their hearts; and I returned to the tents. We stretched ourselves on our mats, overcome with lassitude, but our hands on our arms, to be ready at the first alarm. Nothing broke the silence and slumber of that beautiful night, in which we were lulled by the soft and pleasing noise of the waves of the sea of Jesus Christ against its banks, by the wind which blew in harmonious gusts upon the tightened cords of our tents, and by the pious sentiments and sacred recollections which each of those sounds induced within us. In the morning, when we left our tents at sunrise, to go and bathe again in the lake, we only saw the female Arabs combing their long black hair on the terraces of their huts, a few shepherds, occupied in milking for us the cows and she-goats, and the naked children of the village, who were playing familiarly with our horses and dogs. The cock crowed, the infant cried, the mother rocked or suckled, as in a peaceable hamlet of France or Switzerland. We congratulated ourselves on having adventured an expedition into a part of Galilee so feared and so little known, and we did not doubt that the same pacific recreation would await us still further on, if we should wish to advance into Arabia. We possessed every capability for traversing in security Samaria, and the country of Naplous, the ancient Sychem, through Mt. Cottrifago, who is all-powerful in that district, and who offered to procure our announcement by his numerous Arab friends, and our convoy by his brother. Personal apprehensions compelled me to forego this route, and to retake that of Nazareth and Mount Carmel, where I hoped to find expresses and letters from Beirut.

However, we got on horseback, to skirt as far as the termination of the Sea of Tiberias, the sacred limits of the beautiful Lake of Genesareth. The caravan moved in silence from the village in which we had slept, and marched upon the western shore of the lake, at some paces from its waters, on a strand of sand and shells, sprinkled here and there with tufts of laurel-roses, and plants with a slender indented leaf, which bore a flower similar to the lilac. On our left, a chain of perpendicular hills, black, naked, hollowed with deep ravines, and speckled from space to space with immense loose and volcanic stones, stretched the whole length of the shore which we were proceeding to coast, and advancing as a dark and barren promontory almost to the middle of the lake, hid from us the town of Tiberias, and the bottom of the lake, in the direction of Lebanon. None amongst us raised his voice; all our thoughts were inward, concentrated, and profound, so intensely spoke the sacred remembrances in the breast of each of us. As to myself, never did any place on earth address itself so powerfully and deliciously to my heart. I have always rejoiced to pass over the actual scene of spots inhabited by men whom I have known, admired, loved, or revered, amongst the living as well as the dead. The land that an illustrious man has frequented and preferred during his sojourn on earth, has always appeared to me the surest and the most significant relique of himself—a sort of material manifestation of his genius, a tacit revelation of a portion of his soul, a living and palpable commentary on his life, actions, and thoughts. When young, I have passed many solitary and contemplative hours, seated beneath the olive-trees which shade the garden of Horace, in sight of the glittering cascades of the Tiber; I have often seated myself in the evening, listening to the noise of the beautiful Sea of Naples, below the spreading branches of the vine-trees, near the spot where Virgil wished his ashes to repose, because it was the loveliest and the sweetest spot on which his eyes had ever rested. How often, at a later period, have I consumed mornings and evenings, stretched at the foot of the beautiful chestnut-trees, in the little vale of Charvettes, where the memory of Jean Jacques Rousseau drew me and retained me by the sympathy of his feelings, his reveries, his misfortunes, and his genius! The same of several other authors or great men, whose names or writings have powerfully affected me. I have wished to study and know them in the places which had given them birth, or inspired them; and almost invariably an intelligent eye will discover a secret and profound analogy between the great man and his country, between the landscape and the author, between nature and the genius who was nursed and inspired by it. But it was not a great man or a great poet whose favourite abode here below I was visiting—it was the man of men, the divine man—nature, genius, and virtue made flesh; the incarnate divinity—whose steps upon the very shores he pressed the most, upon the very waves which supported him, upon the hills where he seated himself, upon the stones on which he reposed his head—I had come to adore! He had, with his mortal eyes, looked upon this sea, these waves, hills, and rocks; or rather this sea, these hills, and rocks had beheld him. He had trod a hundred times this road on which I was reverentially stepping; his feet had raised the very dust which sprang from under mine. During the three years of his divine mission, he went and came numberless times from Nazareth to Tiberias, and from Jerusalem to Tiberias; he moved in the barks of the fishers on the Sea of Galilee; he calmed its tempests; he stood upon the waves whilst stretching out his hand to the apostle of little faith like myself—the celestial hand of which I had greater need than he, in the more terrible tempests of opinions and thoughts!

The grand and mysterious scene of the Gospel passed almost entirely upon this lake, and the borders of this lake, and upon the mountains which surround and look upon it. There is Emmaüs, where he chose, at hazard, his disciples amongst the lowliest of men, to testify that the power of his doctrine is in the doctrine itself, and

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

in its insufficient organs. There is Tiberias, where he appeared to St Peter, and founded in three words the eternal hierarchy of his church. There is Capernaum; here is the mountain where he delivered the sublime sermon of the Mount; there is the one where he pronounced the new rewards according to God; there, that in which he exclaimed "*Misereor super turbam*"—"I have compassion on the multitude"—and multiplied the loaves and fishes, as his word brings forth and multiplies life. Behold the gulf of the miraculous drawing of fishes; in fine, behold the whole Gospel, with its affecting parables, and its tender and delightful images, which appeared to us such as they appeared to the auditors of the divine master, when he showed them with his finger the lamb, the sheep-fold, the good shepherd, the lily of the valley! In a word, behold the country which Christ preferred on this earth, that which he selected to witness the first scenes of his mysterious drama; where, during his obscure life of thirty years, he had his parents and his friends according to the flesh; where that nature, of which he possessed the key, seemed to him the fullest of charm; and those mountains where he saw, as we did, the sun rise and set, which was to measure his mortal days with such rapidity. There it was he came to be at rest, to meditate, to pray, and to exercise his love for man and God!

SYRIA.—GALILEE.

October 13, 1832.—The Sea of Galilee, about a league broad at the southern extremity where we had come upon it, expands at first insensibly up to the height of Emmaüs, the termination of the promontory which hid from us the town of Tiberias, and thence the mountains which confine it all at once recede into large gulfs on both sides, and form it into a vast basin almost round, in which its waters stretch over a bed of about twelve or fifteen leagues in circumference.† This basin is not quite regular in its form, the mountains do not every where descend to the sea; sometimes they retire to some distance from the shore, and leave between them and the waves a small flat plain, fertile and verdant as the plains of Genesareth; sometimes they part asunder, and open to admit the blue waters into the gulfs, scooped at their feet, and darkened with their shadows. The hand of the most skillful painter could not depict outlines more graceful, more indistinct, and more varied, than those that the creating hand has given to these waters and mountains; it seems to have prepared the evangelical scene for the work of grace, of peace, of reconciliation, and of love, which was destined at one time to be there accomplished! To the east, the mountains, from the tops of Gilboa, which we have a glimpse of on the south, as far as the summits of Lebanon, which show themselves on the north, form a close but undulating and bending chain, the sombre peaks of which seem ready from time to time to fall away, and are broken here and there to let a glimpse of sky be caught. These mountains are not surmounted at their heights with these sharp fangs, those rocks filed by the tempests, which offer their gloomy points to the lightning and the winds, and always impart to the aspect of elevated chains something of the old, the terrible, and the ruined, which saddens the heart whilst exciting the imagination. They fall gently away into knolls more or less broad, more, or less steep,

some covered with scattered oaks, others with green thorns, some again lined with bare but fertile soil, on which the traces of a varied culture are yet perceptible, and others on which the morning or evening rays are alone seen to glisten, enriching them with a bright yellow, or with a blue and violet tint, more lustrous than the pencil could portray. Their sides, although they give no passage to any real valley, do not compose an always even rampart; they are hollowed at intervals into deep and wide ravines, as if the mountains had cracked beneath their own weight; and the natural accidents of light and shade make of these ravines luminous, or more often obscure, spots, which attract the eye, and interrupt the uniformity of the outlines and the tints. Lower, they sink down, and throw out here and there into the lake, hills, or small round mountains, presenting a soft and agreeable transition between their peaks and the waters in which they are reflected. Scarcely at any point towards the east does the rock pierce the vegetable bed with which it is richly covered; and this Areadia of Judea thus always joins to the majesty and imposing effect of a mountainous country, the image of the diversified fertility and abundance of the earth. If the dews of Hermon still fell on its bosom! At the end of the lake, towards the north, this chain of mountains sinks as it recedes; we distinguish from a distance a plain, which dies away in the waters, and at the termination of this plain a white mass of foam, which seems to rush from a height into the sea. It is the Jordan, which is precipitated from there into the lake, which it passes through without mingling with its waters, and issues from it at the place I have described, tranquil, silent, and pure.

The whole of this northern extremity of the Sea of Galilee is bordered with a slope of fields which appear under cultivation; we perceived the brown stubble of the last harvest, and large fields of rushes, which the Arabs cultivate, wherever they find a spring to water the roots. On the western side, I have described the chains of volcanic hills, which we followed from the dawn of day. They continue, without intermission, as far as Tiberias. Avalanches of black stones, cast up from the mouths, still half-opened, of a hundred extinguished volcanic cones, are constantly falling down the harsh ridges of this sombre and dismal chain. Our route was only varied by the uncouth form and strange colours of the high masses of hardened lava which were scattered thick around us, and by the remains of walls, and gates of destroyed towns, and of columns extended to the earth, which our horses jumped over at every step. The shores of the Sea of Galilee, on this side of Judea, are but a single town, if the expression may be used. The multiplied ruins before us, the number of the towns, and the magnificence of construction which their mutilated fragments bespeak, recall to my memory the route which runs along the foot of Mount Vesuvius, from Castellamare to Portici. As there, the banks of Lake Genesareth appear to bear towns, instead of harvests and woods. After two hours' march, we arrived at the extremity of a promontory which juts into the lake, and the town of Tiberias appeared all at once before us, the living and dazzling apparition of a town of two thousand years. It covers the side of a black and naked hill, which sinks rapidly towards the lake. It is surrounded with a high square wall, flanked by fifteen or twenty embattled towers. The points of two white minarets are alone visible above the walls and towers, and all the rest of the town seems hid from the Arabs under the shadow of these lofty defences, and to present to the eye nothing but the flat unbending arch of its grey roofs, bearing a resemblance to the carved shell of a tortoise.

We halted at the Turkish mineral bath of Emmaüs, an isolated cupola, surrounded by superb remains of Roman or Hebrew baths. We established ourselves in the very saloon of the bath—a basin filled with running water, at a hundred degrees of Fahrenheit. We took a bath, and slept an hour. Again mounted our horses. A tempest was on the lake, which I desired extremely to witness. The water was green as the

* "I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat."—Mark, ch. vii. verse 2.

† [The Sea of Galilee, Lake of Genesareth, or Lake of Tiberias, is a sheet of water of about fifteen or sixteen miles in length, and six to eight in breadth. It is fed at the north end by the river Jordan; a river with the same name issues from its southern extremity, and continues in a tolerably even course to the Dead Sea. The country around, which is bare and rocky, abounds in spots mentioned in Scripture. Among others is Capernaum, which is at the northern end of the lake; but—of Capernaum no traces remain, not even, so far as I could ascertain by repeated inquiries, the memory of its name.]—Lord Lindsay's *Letters on the Holy Land*.]

leaves of the rushes which surround it—the foam livid and dazzling—the waves of goodly height, and following close. A terrible noise from the billows falling on the volcanic pebbles which they disturb, but no vessels in peril or in sight. There is not one on the lake. Entered Tiberias in the midst of a storm and flood of rain from the south. Took refuge in the Latin church. Caused a lighted fire to be brought into the middle of the deserted church, the first temple of Christianity.

The interior of Tiberias does not fulfil the expectation created by the distant view. It is a confused and dirty assemblage of some hundreds of houses similar to the mud and straw cabins of the Arabs. We were saluted in Italian and German, by several Polish or German Jews, who, towards the end of their days, when they have nothing more to expect than the uncertain hour of dissolution, come to pass their last moments at Tiberias, on the banks of their sea, in the very heart of their country, so as to die beneath their sun, and be buried in their land like Abraham and Jacob. To sleep in the bed of one's fathers—it is evidence of the inextinguishable love of country—it is the sympathy and affinity between man and the dust of which he is formed, from which he has sprung. This is undeniable. It is well, it is happy for him to bear to its place that little dust which has been lent him for a few days. Let me also sleep, oh my God, in the land and near the ashes of my fathers!

Nine hours' marching without repose brought us back to Nazareth by way of Cana, the scene of Christ's first miracle; a pretty Turkish village, gracefully inclining down the two sides of a hollow of fertile land, enclosed by hills covered with nopals, oaks, and olives. Around it pomegranates, palm, and fig-trees. Women and flocks standing about the troughs of the fountain. The house of the apostle, Saint Bartholomew, is in the village. At its side, the house in which the miracle of the water changed into wine took place: it is in ruins, and without a roof. The religious brethren still show the jars which contained the wine of the prodigy—monkish romances, which everywhere disfigure the simple and fruitful groundwork of religious traditions.

After having rested and slaked our thirst at the fountain of Cana, we resumed our route towards Nazareth by the light of the moon. We passed over some well-cultivated plains, and afterwards a series of wooded hills, which rise as they draw near to Nazareth. After three hours and a half's march, we arrived at the gate of the Latin Convent, and were once more lodged at Nazareth.

On awaking in the morning, I was astonished at hearing a voice which saluted me in Italian; it was that of an old French vice-consul at St Jean d'Acre, M. Cottafago, a well-known and very important personage in all Syria, where his title of European agent, his friendship with Abdallah, Pacha of Acre, his commerce and wealth, have rendered him celebrated and powerful. He is yet Austrian consul at Acre. His costume was in accordance with his double character of Arab and European. He was dressed in a red pelisse edged with ermine, and wore an immense three-cornered hat, the distinctive symbol of the French agents in the east. This hat dates from the time of the Egyptian war; it is a remnant religiously preserved of some general of brigade of Bonaparte. It is only placed on the head, on official occasions, in audiences of the pacha, or when a European journeys through the country. It is imagined that in it he will again behold his household gods. M. Cottafago was an old man, of under-stature, with the intellectual, firm, and piercing physiognomy of the Arabs; his eye, full of fire, softened by benevolence and politeness, lighted up his countenance with a ray of superior intelligence. At the first glance, we can conceive the ascendancy which such a man must have over the Arabs and Turks, who are in general deficient in the principle of activity which sparkles in the looks, is traced in the movements and gestures of M.

He held in his hand a packet of letters for which he had just received from the coast of Syria,

by a courier of Ibrahim Pacha, and a file of French newspapers which he had sent for himself. He had conceived with reason, that a French traveller would experience both pleasure and surprise thus to find in the middle of the desert, and a thousand miles from his country, news fresh from Europe. I read the letters, which gave me some uneasiness touching the health of Julia. M. Cottafago left me, after inviting me to breakfast in a pavilion which he had built at Nazareth, and where he passed alone the broiling days of summer; and I opened the journals. My name was the first which struck me. It was in a number of the *Journal des Debats*, in which were cited some verses that I had addressed, on leaving France, to Walter Scott. I fell upon these, the mournful and anxious tone of which suited the scene so perfectly, to which hazard had conducted me, the scene of the greatest revolutions of the human mind, the scene where the Spirit of God had so powerfully stirred up mankind, and on which the renovating creed of Christianity had taken its cast on earth, whilst a creed, also the offspring of Christianity, was exciting the other shore of those seas whence my accents were echoed back.*

Spectator, wearied out with life's great play,
Thou leav'st us in a rough and troublous way;
Prophet or bard the nations have no more,
To charm and head their march as heretofore;
Kings find the trembling throne a seat unsure,
Chiefs rule a day, kingdoms a month endure;
Human opinion's strong, impetuous roll—
The fiery equinox that whelms the soul—
Permitteth none, not even in hope, to stand
Firm on the lofty summit of command:
But sets the strong, by turns, upon the crown,
Strikes them with giddiness, and hurls them down.
In vain the world invokes a help and stay—
The potent time compels us 'neath its sway;
A child may curb the sea when it is blind,
But weak are all men when the time is grand.
Lo! tribunes, chiefs, kings, citizens each one—
God lays the hand on all, and chooseth none!
And the resistless, fiery meteor, Power,
Falls on our heads to judge us, and devour
'Tis done—the word has o'er the deep been hurl'd,
And Chaos broods above a second world:
And for poor mankind, of the sceptre reft,
No more in one, but all, is safety left.
In the vast heavings of a new formed main—
The oscillations sky and ship sustain—
By the huge waves that o'er us break and gape—
We feel that man now rounds a dangerous cape,
And passes through, with gloom and thunder by,
The stormy tropic of a new humanity.

I read these verses again as if they had been another's, so completely had they been effaced from my memory. I was struck afresh with that sentiment which had at another moment inspired them—with that sentiment of the universal tottering of things, of the general vertigo and infatuation of the human mind, which rushes with too much rapidity to take account of even its own progress, but which has the instinct of a new unknown consummation, to which God conducts it through the rough and precipitous ways of social catastrophes. I admired that marvellous power of locomotion given to human thought by the press and by journalism, by which a train of reflection which had crossed my brow six months before, in a wood of Saint Point, came to me again as a daughter seeking her father, and struck upon the ancient echoes of the rocks of Nazareth, in the sounds of a new but already universal language.†

October 20.—Breakfasted in the pavilion of M. Cot-

* [This sentence may perhaps appear somewhat obscure, but it is clear the pious author means by the last creed, which he calls an idea, the Jewish faith, the revelation of the same Deity.]

† [M. de Lamartine, of course, means here the French language, which is very aptly described as a universal language in Europe; but a language for which M. de Lamartine has probably very little respect, namely, the English, has much greater claims to the appellation in the other three quarters of the globe, Asia, Africa, and America.]

tafago, with one of his brothers and some Arabs. Went over again the environs of Nazareth; visited the stone in the mountains where Jesus went, according to tradition, to take his repasts with his first disciples. M. Cottafago gave me letters for Acre and the Mutzelim of Jerusalem.

On the 21st, at six in the morning, we leave Nazareth. All the Spanish and Italian fathers of the convent collected in the court, press round our horses; and whilst some put up vows and prayers for our safe journey, others offer us fresh provisions, excellent bread baked during the night, olives, and Spanish chocolate. I give 500 piastres to the superior to repay his hospitality. This is no impediment to some of the young priests whispering, in low tones, their requests in my ear, and receiving in secret a few handfuls of piastres to buy tobacco, and other trifling monastic comforts, which beguile their solitude. Travellers have given a romantic and false representation of these convents of the Holy Land. Nothing is less poetic or less religious, when inspected narrowly. Their conception is beautiful and grand. Men tear themselves from the delights of western civilisation to put their existence in jeopardy, or to lead a life of privations and martyrdom amongst the persecutors of their faith, on the very spots where the mysteries of their religion have consecrated the earth. They fast, they watch, they pray, in the midst of the blasphemies of the Turks and Arabs, in order that a little Christian incense shall still burn on each piece of ground where Christianity was born. They are the guardians of the sacred cradle and sepulchre; the angel of judgment shall find them alone at these places, like the holy women who watched and wept near the empty tomb. All this is beautiful and sublime in thought; but in actual fact these ideas must vanish. There is no persecution, no martyrdom; all around these retreats there is a Christian population, ready for the service and orders of the monks of the convents. The Turks annoy them in no respect whatever; on the contrary, they protect them. They are the most tolerant people on the earth, and understand better than others religion and prayer, in whatever language, and under whatever form, they are expressed. Atheism alone they detest, as they esteem it, with reason, a degradation of the human intellect, an insult to humanity much more than to the undoubted Being, God. These convents, besides, are under the respected and inviolable protection of the Christian powers represented by their consuls. On a complaint of the superior, the consul writes to the pacha, and justice is done on the very instant. The monks whom I have seen in the Holy Land, far from presenting to me the image of the long martyrdom with which they had been credited, appeared to me the most happy, respected, and feared, of the inhabitants of these countries. They inhabit a sort of strong castles, similar to those of our own middle ages. Their residences are inviolable, surrounded with walls, and closed with gates of iron. These gates are only opened for the Catholic population of the neighbourhood, which comes to assist at the offices, to receive a little pious instruction, and to pay, in respect and devotedness to the monks, the dues of the altar. I never went out accompanied by one of the fathers into the streets of a Syrian town, but the children and women came and bowed themselves under the hand of the priest, and kissed his hand and the bottom of his robe. The Turks, even, very far from insulting them, seem to partake the respect which they everywhere command as they move along.

Now, who are these monks? In general Spanish and Italian peasants, who have entered young into the convents of their country, and growing tired of the monastic life, are anxious to diversify it by the aspect of new countries, and seek to be sent to the Holy Land. Their residence in the house of their order established in the East, does not in general continue for more than two or three years. A vessel comes to take them back, and brings others in their place. Those who learn Arabic, and devote themselves to the service of the Catholic population of the towns, stay longer, and often pass

there the whole of their lives. They follow the occupations and life of our country parsons, but they are encircled with more veneration and attachment. Others remain shut up within the precincts of the convent, or pass from one house to another, in order to complete their pilgrimage, sometimes to Nazareth, or to Bethlehem, a short time at Rome, some time at Jaffa, or at the convent of St John in the desert. They have no other employment than the offices of the church, and the promenade in the gardens or on the terraces of the convent. No books, no studies, no useful function. They are devoured by listlessness; cabals are formed in the interior of the convent; the Spaniards decry the Italians, and the Italians the Spaniards. We were not much edified at the relations the monks of Nazareth gave of each other. We did not find a single individual amongst them who could sustain the slightest rational conversation, even on subjects which their vocation should have rendered familiar to them. No knowledge of sacred antiquity, of the fathers, or of the history of the places they resided in. The whole is reduced to a certain number of popular and ridiculous traditions, which they transmit amongst themselves without examination, and which they deliver to travellers as they have received them from the ignorance and credulity of the Christian Arabs of the country. They all sigh for the moment of their deliverance, and return to Italy or Spain without any advantage to themselves or to religion. On other points, the granaries of the convent are well filled; the cellars are stocked with the best wines this earth can produce. They do it all themselves. Every two years a ship arrives from Spain, bearing to the superior father the revenue that the Catholic powers, Spain, Portugal, and Italy, send them. This sum, increased by the pious alms of the Christians of Egypt, Greece, Constantinople, and Syria, furnishes them, it is said, with an income of 300,000 or 400,000 francs [from £12,500 to £16,500 sterling per annum]. This is divided amongst the different convents, according to the number of the monks and the wants of each community. The edifices are well supported, and every thing indicates comfort, and even relative luxury, in the houses which I have visited. I have never witnessed any scandal in the monks' abodes in the Holy Land. Ignorance, idleness, and listlessness, are the three plagues which they should and could eradicate.

These men appeared to me simple, and sincerely, though fanatically, credulous. Some even at Nazareth seemed to me veritable saints, animated with the most ardent faith and most active charity; humble, mild, patient, voluntary servants of their brothers and of strangers. I bear their countenances of peace and simplicity in my memory, and their hospitality in my heart. I know also their names; but what imports it to them that their names traverse the earth, provided that Heaven knows them, and their virtues remain buried in the shade of the cloister, beneath which it is their pleasure to conceal them.

Same date.—On leaving Nazareth, we pass along the side of a mountain, covered with fig-trees and nopals. On the left, a green and shady valley opens, and a pretty country-house, recalling our European villas, is placed alone on one of the slopes of this valley. It belongs to an Arab merchant of Acre. Europeans run no danger in the environs of Nazareth—a population almost wholly Christian is at their service. In two hours we reach a series of small vales, gracefully winding between hills that are clothed with beautiful woods of holm-oaks. These woods divide the plain of Caypha from the land of Nazareth and the desert of Mount Tabor. Mount Carmel, an elevated chain of mountains, which commences at the course of the Jordan, and ends perpendicularly above the sea, begins to show itself on our left. Its dark green ridge contrasts with the sky of deep blue, in which heated vapours are floating, like the light smoke which issues from the mouth of an oven. Its sides are dressed in a vigorous and hardy vegetation. There is every where thick brushwood, surmounted here and there by the projecting heads of oaks. Grey rocks, cut by nature into strange and

colossal forms, at intervals pierce this verdant layer, and throw back the dazzling rays of the sun. Such is the aspect we have on our left far as the eye can reach; at our feet, the valleys which we follow sink in gentle slopes, and begin to open on the beautiful plain of Caypha. We scale the last detached hills which separate us from it, and we lose sight of it only to immediately regain it. These detached hills between Palestine and the coast of Syria, have at once the most agreeable and the most solemn positions that we have contemplated. Here and there, in the forests of oaks abandoned to nature, are extensive glades, covered with a sward as velvety as our western meadows; in the rear, the peak of Tabor rises into the fiery sky, like a majestic altar crowned with green garlands; beyond, the blue tops of the mountains of Jelboe, and the hills of Samaria, oscillate in the indistinct horizon. Mount Carmel throws its large and heavy shadow on one side of the scene, and the eye following it, falls on the sea which terminates the whole, as the sky in the finest landscapes. How many sites have I not selected in my mind to erect a house, an agricultural fortress, and to found there a colony, with some friends from Europe, and a few hundreds of those youths, disinherited from all future prospects in our too thickly peopled countries! The beauty of the places, the serenity of the sky, the prodigious fertility of the soil, the variety of the tropical products for which the earth can be tasked, the facility of procuring labour at a low price, the proximity of two immense, fruitful, watered, and unappropriated plains, the nearness of the sea for the exportation of produce, the security which might be easily obtained against the Arabs of Jordan by raising slight fortifications at the passes of these hills—all has made me select this part of Syria for the agricultural and civilising enterprise on which I have since resolved.

Same date, evening.—We have been surprised by a storm in the middle of the day. I have seldom seen any thing so terrible. The clouds rose like towers perpendicularly above Mount Carmel; they speedily enveloped the long peak of that chain of mountains; and the mountain itself, lately so serene and brilliant, was by degrees immersed in dark rolling billows, split at intervals by streaks of fire. In a few moments the whole horizon dropped and contracted upon us. The thunder gave no claps; it was one continued, awful, and deafening roll, like the roar of the waves on a beach during a violent tempest. The lightning gushed like actual torrents of fire from the sky, on the black sides of Carmel; the oaks on the mountain, and those on the hills beside us, bent like reeds. The wind, which rushed from the gorges and caverns, would have overthrown us, if we had not quitted our horses, and found some degree of shelter behind a rock in the dry bed of a torrent. The dried leaves, lifted up by the storm, flew over our heads like clouds, and the branches of trees fell thickly around us. I remembered the Bible, and the prodigies of Elias, the exterminating prophet, on his mountain; his grotto was not far distant.

The tempest was over in half an hour. We drank the water of its rains, collected in the felt coverings of our horses. We reposed a few moments nearly half way from Nazareth to Caypha, and we then resumed our route, skirting the foot of Mount Carmel, which we had on our left, with a vast plain and a river on our right. Carmel, which we thus followed for nearly four hours, presented to us every where the same severe and solemn aspect. It is a gigantic, and almost perpendicular wall, entirely covered with brushwood and c. riferous herbs. On no part is the rock bare; some blocks, detached from the mountain, have rolled into the plain. They are as citadels, given by nature to serve for foundation and shelter to the villages of the Arab husbandmen. We fell in with only one of these villages, two hours or thereabouts before perceiving the town of Caypha. The houses are low, without

covered with a terracing, which protects. On the top, the Arabs erect a second. Reported by trunks of trees, where they ho summer. These terraces were filled

with men and women, who looked at us passing, and yelled out imprecations on us. The appearance of this people is ferocious; not one of them, however, durst descend from his height to insult us at closer quarters.

At seven o'clock we drew near to Caypha, the white domes, minarets, and walls of which present, as do all the towns of the East, a brilliant and gay appearance at a certain distance. Caypha is seated at the foot of Carmel, on a bank of white sand on the shores of the sea. This town forms the extremity of an arc, the other extremity of which is St Jean d'Acre. A gulf two leagues wide separates them. This gulf has one of the most delightful shores that the eye of a mariner can fall upon. Acre, with its fortifications breached by the cannon of Ibrahim Pacha, and of Napoleon, with its handsome but battered mosque, and its dome pierced to the day, with the sails which enter and leave its port, draws the eye to a scene which is one of the most important and distinguished in the annals of war. At the bottom of the gulf, a vast cultivated plain stretches, Mount Carmel throwing its huge shadow over it. Then Caypha, like a twin-sister of Acre, lies on the other side of the gulf, advancing into the sea, with its slender mole, at which some Arab brigs are moored; above Caypha, is a forest of large olive-trees, and yet higher, a road cut in the rock leading to the summit of the peak. Two vast edifices crown the mountain; the one a pleasure-house of Abdallah, Pacha of Acre; the other the convent of the monks of Carmel, recently erected by the alms of Christianity, and surmounted by a large tri-coloured flag, announcing to us the asylum and protection of Frenchmen; a little lower than the convent are immense caverns, hollowed in the granite of the mountain, which are the famous grottoes of the prophets. Such is the landscape which struck us on entering the dusty and narrow streets of Caypha. The inhabitants looked in astonishment and alarm on our long caravan defiling. We knew no one, nor had we a resting-place or hospitality to claim. Chance threw in our way a young Piedmontese, who performed the functions of vice-consul at Caypha, since the taking and destruction of Acre. M. Bianco, Sardinian Consul in Syria, had written to him on our behalf, and had requested him to receive us, if we should pass through Caypha. He saluted us, informed himself of our names, and conducted us to the gate of the small ruined house, in which he lived with his mother and two young sisters. We left our horses and Arabs to encamp on the sea-shore near the town, and we entered the abode of M. Malagamba—such was the name of this young and amiable vice-consul, the only European who remains upon the desolate field of battle, since the complete ruin of Acre by the Egyptians.

A small court and wooden staircase lead to a little terrace covered with palm-leaves; behind this terrace two bare rooms, surrounded only by a divan, the sole indispensable furniture of rich and poor in all the East; a few flower-pots on the terrace; an aviary of pretty grey doves, tended by the sisters of M. Malagamba; shelves round the walls, on which are arranged, in order, cups, pipes, liquor-glasses, silver perfume-pans, and wooden crucifixes, inlaid with mother-of-pearl, made at Bethlehem—such is the entire furniture of this poor habitation, in which a forsaken family represents, for an allowance of 1000 piastres [about £12, 10s. sterling], one of our European powers.

Madame Malagamba, the mother, received us with the ceremonies usual in the country. She presented us with perfumes and scented water, and we were scarcely seated on the divan, wiping the perspiration from our brows, than her daughters, two heavenly apparitions, issued from the adjoining room, and presented to us orange water and sweetmeats, on plates of Chinese porcelain. The empire of beauty over our souls is such, that, although parched with thirst, and exhausted by a twelve hours' march, we should have been gazing in mute contemplation at the two young girls, without carrying the glasses to our lips, if their mother had not, by her entreaties, urged us to accept what her daughters offered us. The whole East was

there, such as I had dreamed it in my young days, when the thought was filled with enchanted ideas of its features and its poëts! One of the young girls was but a child; she was simply the graceful accompaniment of her sister, as an image reflected by another. After having attended to all the calls of the most simple, but nevertheless the most poetic, hospitality, the young girls came and seated themselves by the side of their mother, on the divan opposite to us. This is the picture which I wish I could pourtray in words, to preserve it in my notes as I see it in my mind; but we have a capacity for feeling beauty in all its shades, in all its delicacies, in all its mysteries, and we have but one vague and abstract word to tell what beauty is. In this consists the triumph of painting; it presents at one touch, it preserves for ages that ravishing impression of a female visage, of which the poet can only say, "*She is beautiful*," and we must believe him on his word—but his word does not paint!

The young girl, then, was seated on the carpet, her legs folded under her, her elbow resting on her mother's knees, her face a little thrown back, now lifting her blue eyes to express to her mother her artless wonder at our appearance and words, now casting them on us in a graceful scrutiny, then sinking them involuntarily, and concealing them beneath her long silken and jet-black eyelashes, whilst a virgin blush suffused her cheek, or an ill-suppressed gentle smile played on her lips. Our singular costume was new to her, and the strangeness of our manners caused in her an always-recurring astonishment; her mother in vain made signs to her not to testify her surprise, for fear of giving us offence; the simplicity and ingenuousness of her impressions depicted them, in spite of her, on an artless face of sixteen, and her mind was displayed in each expression of her features with such a grace and such clearness, that her thoughts could be detected beneath her pure skin before she was herself conscious of them. The play of the sun's rays, glancing through foliage upon limpid water, is less varying and less transparent than her countenance. We could not draw our eyes from it, and were sufficiently reemitted by the contemplation of that face, which none of us will ever forget.

Mademoiselle Malagamba has that sort of beauty that can be found only in the East; the shape moulded as it is in the Greek statues; the soul revealed in the glance, as it is in the races of the south; and the artlessness in expression, as it exists only amongst primitive tribes. When these three conditions of beauty meet in one female face, and harmoniously blend on features in the first blossom of youth; when the pensive and straying thought brightens, with a soft but lustrous moisture, eyes through which the workings of the heart are read, for innocence has nothing to veil; when the delicacy of the form, the virgin symmetry of the outlines, the elegance and flexibility of the shape, reveal to the eye that voluptuous sensibility of being born to love, and so mingle soul and sense, that we know not, as we gaze, whether we feel or but admire—then is beauty perfect, and we experience at its aspect that complete satisfaction of the senses and the heart, that harmony of gratifications which is not what we call love, but which is the love of the intellect, of the artist, of genius for a perfect work. We say to ourselves—here it is good; and we cannot tear ourselves from that place on which we had just before seated ourselves with indifference, so much is the beautiful the light of the understanding and the invincible allurements of the heart!

Her oriental costume added yet more to the charms of her person; her long flaxen hair, slightly yellowed, was plaited on her head in a multitude of tresses, which fell down on both sides over her naked shoulders; a confused collection of pearls, of golden sequins, of white and scarlet flowers, was scattered on her locks, as if a handful had been taken from a casket, and thrown at hazard on her head, leaving the shower of jewels and flowers to settle as it might. All was suitable; nothing can disfigure a girl of fifteen. Her bosom was uncovered, according to the custom of the Arabian females; a tunic

of muslin, embroidered with silver flowers, was tied with a shawl round her waist; her arms were passed through hanging sleeves open to the elbow, from a vest of green cloth, the skirts of which hung loosely over the person; wide pantaloons with a thousand folds completed this costume; whilst her ankles were encircled with two bracelets of carved silver. One of these anklets was ornamented with small silver bells, from which every movement of her feet drew a noise. No poet has ever described so ravishing a vision. The Haidée of Lord Byron, in *Don Juan*, has something of Mademoiselle Malagamba, but she is far removed from that perfection of grace, innocence, soft bashfulness, voluptuous languor, and dazzling serenity, which are mingled in her yet infantine features. I engrave it on my memory to paint it hereafter, as the type of pure beauty and love, in the poem where I shall consecrate my impressions.

It would have been a beautiful subject for a picture, if we had had a painter in our party, this travelling scene! Our Turkish costumes, rich and picturesque; our arms of all sorts scattered on the floor around us; our hounds crouched at our feet; those three female forms sitting cross-legged on an Aleppo carpet in front of us; their attitudes full of simplicity, novelty, and carelessness; the expression of their countenances, whilst I related to them my travels, or we drew a comparison between our European usages, and the species of hospitality which they tendered us; the pans of perfume burning in a corner, scenting the air of evening; the antique form of the vases in which they handed us sherbet and aromatic drinks—all this, in the midst of a dilapidated chamber, open towards the sea, and into which the branches of a palm-tree, growing in the court, thrust themselves through the wide openings without panes. I regret that I do not convey this scene to my friends, as I bear it in my own mind.

Madame Malagamba, the mother, is a Greek, born in the isle of Cyprus; she there married, when fourteen years old, M. Malagamba, a rich Frank merchant, who was at the same time consul at Larnaca. Losses and revolutions carried off M. Malagamba's fortune; he came to Acre in search of a petty post of consular agent, and there died, leaving his wife and four children in the most absolute privation. His son, a young man, remarkable for his honesty and intelligence, was employed by some consuls, and at length obtained the situation of consular agent for Sardinia at Caypha. It is with the slender emoluments of this precarious employment that he maintains his mother and his sisters. The eldest sister of Mademoiselle Malagamba, equally beautiful as she whom we have so much admired, it was stated to us, had inspired such a passion in one of the young monks of the convent of Caypha, who had enjoyed opportunities of seeing her from the terrace of the convent, that he had flown to an English ship, had embraced the Protestant faith, to enable him to demand her in marriage, and had attempted, under different disguises, all means to carry her off. It was believed that at this period he was still concealed in some town on the coast of Syria, in order to put his project in execution; but the Turkish authorities guarded the safety of the family; and if the monks, who exercise over the brethren the most arbitrary and unrelenting sway, should discover the fugitive, he would expiate, in perpetual captivity, the insane love this fatal beauty has lighted in his heart. We did not see this sister.

The night was falling, and it became necessary at last to tear ourselves from the enchantment of this reception, and to proceed in search of an asylum at the convent of Mount Carmel. M. Malagamba had gone to notify to the fathers the numerous guests who were approaching. We arose, and were compelled, in obedience to the usages of the country, to permit Madame and Mademoiselle Malagamba to put their lips to our hands; and we again got on our horses.

Mount Carmel begins to rise at a few minutes' march from Caypha. We ascended it by a pretty fair road, cut in the rock, on the very edge of the hill: every step that we made discovered to us a new horizon upon the

sea, upon the hills of Palestine, and upon the shores of Idumæa. Half-way up, we met one of the fathers of Carmel, who, during forty years, has inhabited a little house which serves as a sort of hospital for the poor in the town of Caypha, and who mounts and descends the mountain twice in the day, in order to pray with his brothers. The mild expression of serenity of mind, and gaiety of heart, which shone in his features, struck us. These marks of peaceable and invariable happiness are never perceived but in men of rude and simple life, and of kind-hearted dispositions. The ladder of happiness is one of descent: it is more abundant in the humble situations of life than in elevated stations. God gives to some in internal felicity what he grants to others in splendour, renown, and fortune. I have, on repeated occasions, seen proof of this. Enter a saloon, seek out the man whose countenance expresses the most of inward content, and ask his name: it is one unknown and neglected by the world. Providence reveals itself every where.

At the gate of the beautiful monastery, which rises at present, all newly built and of dazzling whiteness, upon the most pointed summit of the peak of Carmel, two fathers awaited our coming. They were the sole inhabitants of this vast and magnificent retreat of cenobites. We were welcomed by them as countrymen and friends. They placed at our disposal three cells, each provided with a bed—a rare piece of furniture in the East—a chair, and a table. Our Arabs took up their quarters with the horses in the large inner courts of the monastery. We were served with a supper of fresh fish, and vegetables grown amongst the rocks of the mountain. We passed a delightful evening, after so many fatigues, seated on the wide balconies which command the sea and the caverns of the prophets. A calm moonshine glittered on the waves, the murmur and freshening scent of which reached us at our elevation. We determined on passing the following day in this asylum, to rest our horses, and refit our stock of provisions. We were about to enter a new country, where we should find neither town nor village, and very seldom springs of sweet water. We had the prospect of five days in the desert.

October 22.—A day of rest, passed at the monastery of Mount Carmel, or in going over the scenes of the mountain and the grottoes of Elias and the prophets. The principal of these grottoes, evidently cut out of the hardest rock by the hand of man, is a chamber of prodigious height; the only view from it is over the boundless sea, and the only noise that is heard comes from the breakers continually dashing against the ledges of the promontory. Tradition recounts that this was the school in which Elias taught the knowledge of the mysteries, and of sacred poetry. The place was admirably chosen; and the voice of the aged prophet, the instructor of an innumerable generation of prophets, must have had a majestic echo in the hollow bosom of the mountain, which he illustrated by so many prodigies, and to which he has left his name! The history of Elias is one of the most marvellous relations of sacred antiquity; he is the giant of the sacred bards. Recalling his life, and his terrible vengeance, it seems as if this man had the thunder of the Lord for a soul, and that the element on which he was borne to heaven was the one in which he was brought forth. It forms a fine lyric or epic feature in the poem of the ancient mysteries of Judaic civilisation. On the whole, the era of the prophets, considering it historically, is one of the least intelligible in the existence of this fugitive race. We discern, however, especially in the epoch of Elias, the intent of that singular organisation of the body of prophet. It was evidently a saintly and lettered class, always in opposition to the king, sacred tribunes of the people, exciting or calming them by songs, parables, or denunciations; raising factions in Israel, as eloquence and the press inflame them amongst us; combating with each other, sometimes with the sword of the tongue, at others with stonings and weapons, exterminating each other from the face of the earth. We see Elias destroying them by hundreds;

then yielding in their turn, and giving place to other leaders of the people. Never has poetry, properly so called, played so grand a part in the political drama, or in the destinies of civilisation. Reason or passion, as they were false or true prophets, spoke by their mouths only in the energetic and harmonious language of images. They were not orators, as at Athens or Rome; an orator is too much a mortal!—theirs were hymns and lamentations: the poet is divine!

What an ardent, impassioned, and wild imagination, does it not suppose in a people under such dominion of the poetic word!—and must we not be astonished, that, independently of the high religious import these effusions bear, they should be so perfect, so inimitable a monument of genius and elegance? The rewards of poets then were society itself. Their inspiration submitted the people to them; they drew them at their pleasure to crime or heroism; they made kings tremble, or cast cinders on their heads; or, awakening patriotism in the hearts of their countrymen, they made them triumph over their enemies, or recalled to them, in exile and slavery, the hills of Sion, and the freedom of the children of God. I am surprised, that amongst all the great dramas that modern poetry has drawn from the history of the Jews, it has never yet conceived the marvellous action of the prophets. It is a beautiful song of oecumenical history.

Same date.—I am returned from a solitary walk over the odoriferous slopes of Carmel. I was seated under an arbutus, a little above the perpendicular path which reaches to the top of the mountain and finishes at the convent, contemplating the sea, which separates me from so many things and beings that I have known and loved, but which does not part me from their memory. I recalled my past life; I remembered similar hours spent on so many different shores, and with such dissimilar reflections; I asked myself if it were indeed I who was there, at the isolated peak of Mount Carmel, a few leagues from Arabia and the desert, and wherefore I was there, and whither I went, whither returned, and what hand conducted me; and what it was that I sought, knowingly or unknowingly, in these perpetual wanderings through the world. I could scarcely make of myself a single being, in such opposite and unforeseen phases of my short existence; but the connected, lucid, and immediate impressions of all the individuals whom I have loved and lost, all centered in the same breast with a profound sorrow, and proved too well that the unity which I discovered not in my life, was sufficiently sensible in my heart!—and I felt my eyes grow moist in pondering on the past, where I already saw five or six tombs in which my happiness was so many times engulfed! Then following my instinct, when my feelings become too powerful, and are ready to turn my brain, I raised them in a pious flight towards God, towards that Infinite Being who receives, absorbs, and restores all. I prayed to him, I submitted myself to his will, always beneficent. I said to him, "All is good, since you have willed it; look on me still; continue to lead me by your ways, and not by mine; conduct me whither you will, and as you will, provided I feel myself conducted by you; provided you reveal yourself from time to time to my darkness by one of those brightenings of the soul, which show us, like the lightning, a momentary horizon in the midst of our profound night; provided I feel myself sustained by that immortal hope which you have left on earth, like the voice of those who are no more; provided I find them again in you, and they know me again, and we love each other in that ineffable union we shall form—you, they, and we! This is sufficient for me still to advance, to march even to the end, in this road which seems so endless. But grant that the path be not too rough for feet already wounded!"

I arose more buoyant, and set myself to collect some handfuls of the sweetly-smelling herbs with which Carmel is all perfumed. The fathers in the convent make from them a sort of tea, more strongly scented than the mint and sage of our gardens. I was disturbed in my reflections and herborising by the steps of two

es, whose iron shoes echoed upon the smooth rock the pathway. Two females, enveloped from head to foot in long white cloaks, were seated on the asses; a young man held the bridle of the foremost of these animals, and two Arabs marched behind, bearing on their heads large baskets of reeds, covered over with apkins of embroidered muslin. It was M. Malagamba, his mother, and his sister, who were ascending to the monastery to offer me provisions for the journey, which they had prepared during the night. One of the baskets was filled with little loaves, yellow as gold, and of an exquisite flavour—a precious gift in a country where bread is unknown. The other was filled with fruits of all kinds, with some bottles of excellent wine of Cyprus and Lebanon, and with innumerable sweetmeats, the delight of the orientals. I received with gratitude the present of these amiable women. I sent the Arabs forward with the baskets to the monastery, and we seated ourselves to converse for a moment on the misfortunes of Madame Malagamba. The place was charming; it was under two or three great olive-trees, which overshadowed one of the basins which the spring of the prophet Elias has worn, as it falls from rock to rock into a small ravine of the mountain. The Arabs had stretched the carpets of the asses on the bank which surrounds the spring, and the two ladies, who had cast back their long veils over their shoulders, and were seated on the rustic divan on the edge of the water, in their richest and most brilliant costume, formed a group worthy the eye of a painter. I was myself seated opposite to them, on a ledge of the rock from which the spring was tumbling. Many tears flowed from the eyes of Madame Malagamba, as she related to me the period of her prosperity, her fall into misfortune, her present distresses, her flight from Acre, and her maternal anxieties for the prospects of her son and her charming daughters.

Mademoiselle Malagamba listened to this recital with the tranquil indifference of earliest youth. She amused herself by collecting a nosegay from the flowers in which she was seated; only, when the voice of her mother faltered as she spoke, and tears rolled from her eyes, she threw her arm around the neck of her mother, and wiped away her tears with the muslin kerchief, embroidered with silver, which she held in her hand; then, when a smile returned to the visage of her mother, she resumed her infantine distraction, and began anew her assortment of her nosegay. I promised these unfortunate females to remember them, and their unexpected hospitality, on my return to Europe, and to solicit from my friends at Turin some advancement for the young consular agent at Caypha. Hope, although very distant and uncertain, returned to the heart of Madame Malagamba, and the conversation took another turn. We spoke of the manners of the country, and of the monotonous life led by the Arab women, whose habits the European females, resident in Arabia, are obliged also to follow. But Mademoiselle Malagamba and her mother had never experienced any other sort of life, and were surprised at the contrary account I gave them of affairs in Europe. To live for a single man, and with a single thought, in the privacy of their apartment; to pass the day on a sofa plaiting their hair, or arranging, in graceful order, the numerous jewels with which they decorate themselves; to breathe the fresh air of the mountain or the sea, from the top of a terrace, or through the attics of a grated window; to make a few turns beneath the orange and pomegranate trees of a small garden, and to sit in a reverie on the edge of a basin, which the spouting water stirs with its murmur; to tend the household, and make with their own hands the bread-paste, the sherbet, and the sweetmeats; once a-week to pass the day at the public bath, in company with all the young girls of the town, and sing a few stanzas from the Arabian poets, accompanying themselves on the guitar—such is the entire existence of females in the East. Society does not exist for them; therefore they have none of the factitious passions of self-love which society produces; they are wholly devoted to love when they are young and beau-

tiful, and afterwards to domestic cares and to their children. Are such customs as valuable as others?

Whilst we were thus talking on chance topics, my dragoman, a young man, born in Arabia, and well versed in Arabic literature, had been searching for me round the convent, and discovered me seated near the fountain. He brought to me another young Arab, who had learnt my arrival at Caypha, and had come from St Jean d'Acre to make acquaintance with a poet from the west. This young man, born in Lebanon, and educated at Aleppo, was already celebrated for his poetic talent. I had myself often heard of him, and I had got several of his compositions translated for me. He brought me some pieces, the translation of which I shall afterwards give. He seated himself beside us near the fountain, and we conversed a long time, with the assistance of my dragoman. However, the day was dropping, and it behoved us to separate. "As we are both poets," said I to him, "and as hazard has brought us together from two such opposite points of the world on so delightful a spot, in so sweet an hour, and in presence of so ravishing a beauty, we ought to celebrate by some verses, each in his own tongue, our meeting, and the impressions which the moment inspires." He smiled, and drew from his girdle the inkstand, and pen of reed, which an Arab writer no more quits than the trooper his sword. We both retired a few paces to meditate on our verses. He had finished long before me. I need not say that all language suffers when put into another tongue; but here is the translation of his poetry:—

"In the gardens of Caypha there is a flower which the rays of the sun seek through the arbores of palm-leaves.

This flower has eyes more soft than the gazelle, eyes which resemble a drop of water from the sea in a shell.

This flower has so delicious a fragrance, that the chief who flies before the lance of another tribe, on his mare more rapid than the fall of waters, feels it in his flight, and stops to inhale it.

The gust of the simoom destroys all other perfumes on the clothes of the traveller, but it cannot remove from the heart the odour of this wonderful flower.

We find it on the banks of a stream, which flows without a murmur at its feet.

Young maiden, tell me the name of thy father, and I will tell thee the name of this flower."

The following are my verses, which I caused to be translated into Arabic by my dragoman:—

Clear-mirrored fount! when on thy verdant ledge

The pensive Lilla comes her form to lay,

And casts her bending image o'er thy edge,

Like star of midnight in a tideless bay,

A gentle shiver curls thy sleeping waves,

No more thy bed of sand or reeds is seen,

But joyful light thy liquid bosom paves,

And heaven is sought but in thy glassy sheen.

Thou'rt but a shade of lovely things the while,

Of eyes than thine own border-flowers more blue,

Of teeth of pearl, that 'twixt two rose-lips smile,

And globes, by pure sighs moved, of snowy hue;

Hair twined with flowers, and bending with their weight,

And corals, heightening every native charm—

Bright pearls, which one might think to seize on straight,

Like sands of gold, by plunging in the arm.

Source of this shade, my lands are o'er thee placed,

Lest all should be dispelled by some chance blast,

And, envious of the bank, my lips would taste

The happy waves through which thy shape has past.

But Lilla, laughing, seeks her mother's side,

And then the fount is but a small dark pool:

In vain I taste it—bitter is its tide,

Tarnished by vase-stirred sand, of insects full.

What thou dost for these waters, sweet young flower,

My soul has ever felt from beauty's might:

While basking in its smile, joy rules the hour,

But when its glance is veiled, then cometh night!

It was rather unfortunate, that the young girl for whom we made verses in Arabic and French understood neither language, and had acquired but an indifferent portion of Italian.

October 23.—At sunrise we quitted, fresh and active, the convent of Mount Carmel, and its two excellent monks, and we proceeded by the precipitous paths which lead from the peak to the sea. There we entered the desert, which stretches between the Syrian Sea, the coasts of which are in general flat, sandy, and indented with small bays, and the mountains which continue the ridge of Carmel. These mountains sink by insensible degrees as they approach Galilee; they are black and bare; the rocks stand out from the covering of soil and shrubs which still remains; their appearance is sad and sombre; they have only their glittering reflection, and the ideal majesty of the past. The chain, which continues about ten leagues, is broken at intervals, and some short valley is opened to the eye; at the bottom, or on the sides of one of these valleys, we perceive distinctly the ruins of a fortified castle, and a large Arab village, stretching under the walls of the castle; the smoke from the houses rises, and is wafted along the sides of Carmel, and rows of camels, black goats, and red cows, wind down from the village to the plain which we are traversing. Some Arabs on horseback, armed with lances, and simply clad in their white woollen cloak, with their legs and arms bare, march at the head and on the sides of these pastoral troops, which are led to the only spring which we have met for four hours. The wells were formerly discovered, and dug by the inhabitants of the towns situated on the seashore; the present race of Arabs have abandoned these towns ages ago; the fountain alone remains, and they make this journey of an hour or two every day, to fetch water, and let the cattle drink. We marched all the day over the remains of walls and mosaics, which break through the sand; the route is strewn with ruins, which attest the splendour and immense population of these shores in remote times.

We had seen since the morning, in the horizon before us, on the edge of the sea, a prodigious column, on which the rays of the sun were glittering, and which seemed to grow larger, and spring from the waves, in proportion as we approached. On drawing near, we find that this column is a confused mass of magnificent ruins, belonging to different eras; we distinguish, first of all, an immense wall, perfectly similar, from its form and the chiselling of its stones, to a portion of the Coliseum at Rome. This wall, of a prodigious height, comes out alone, in a slanting direction, upon a heap of other ruins of Greek and Roman construction, and we soon discover behind it the elegant and open remains of a Moorish monument, a church, or a mosque, or perhaps both in turn; then a series of other remains of divers ancient buildings yet standing, and in good preservation. The sandy road which our guides pursued, led us pretty near this curious relic of the past, the existence, name, and date of which we were completely unacquainted with. About half a mile from this group of monuments, the sea-coast rises, and the sand turns to rock; this rock has been cut by the hand of man, on all sides for about a mile in circumference. It might be called a primitive town, scooped out of the rock, before mankind had learnt the art of raising stones from the ground, and erecting dwellings on its surface; it is, in fact, one of those subterranean towns of which the earliest histories speak, or at least one of those vast *necropolises*, the cities of the dead, which in every direction undermined the earth or the rocks, in the vicinity of the immense cities of the living; but the form of the rocks, and of the numberless caverns cut in their sides, indicates rather, in my opinion, the abodes of a living people. These caverns are of great extent, with elevated entrances; several broad steps lead to these entrances; openings are pierced also in the rock, to give habitations, and these entrances and openings, windows, open upon streets deeply cut in the hill. We tracked several of these streets, in which the rats mark the

traces of chariot wheels. A multitude of eagles and vultures, and innumerable flocks of starlings, started at our approach from the shade of these hollowed rocks. Climbing plants, wall-flowers, clusters of the myrtle and the fig, have taken root in the soil of these stone streets, and carpet the long avenues. In some places the ancient inhabitants had entirely levelled the hill, and dug canals, to bring water from the sea, and open the prospect upon a part of the gulf which is formed behind the town. It is a landscape of an entirely novel character, at once solemn and harsh, as we look upon the rock—smiling and bright, when we gaze upon the aerial streaks on the blue ocean, and upon the multitude of plants, springing spontaneously from the crevices of the granite.

We winded for some time through these wonderful labyrinths, and arrived at last at the foot of the great wall and the Moorish monuments, which we had before us; there we stopped an instant to deliberate. These ruins have an evil reputation; bands of Arab robbers frequently conceal themselves there to pillage and massacre caravans. We had been warned at Caypha to avoid them, or to pass them in battle array, and permitting none of our men to stray from the body of the caravan. Curiosity had prevailed; we had been unable to resist the desire of visiting monuments, of which ancient and modern history knows nothing. We were ignorant whether they were deserted or inhabited. When arrived near the outer wall which still encircles them, we perceived a breach by which we might penetrate. At the same moment a group of Arabs on horseback appeared, lance in hand, upon the sand which was yet between us and the opening, and came down upon us. We were taken by surprise, but were however ready; we had in our hands our double-barrelled guns primed and cocked, and pistols in our belts. We advanced upon the Arabs; they stopped short. I separated from the caravan, giving orders for them to remain under arms, and I advanced with my two companions and my dragonn. We opened a parley with them, and the sheik, with his principal officers, escorted us themselves as far as the breach, and gave orders to the Arabs inside to respect us, and to permit us to examine the monuments. I nevertheless judged it prudent to take only a part of our troop into the interior; the rest remained encamped at a gunshot from the hill, ready to come to our aid if we should fall into an ambuscade. This precaution was not useless, for we found within the walls a population of two or three hundred Arabs or Bedouins, including women and children. There was only one passage to get out of the ruins, and we might have been easily taken and butchered, if the barbarians had not been held in awe by the force which staid outside, and which they supposed more considerable than it was in reality. We had taken care not to deploy our whole body, and some mounkres were kept back on purpose, stationed on a detached hillock where they might be seen.

As soon as we had got through the breach, we found ourselves in a labyrinth of paths turning round the crumbling ruins of the great wall, and the other ancient edifices that we successively discovered. These paths or streets had no regular formation, but the steps of the Arabs, the camels, and the goats, had beaten them at hazard amongst the rubbish. The families of the tribe had built nothing themselves, they had simply taken advantage of all the cavities which the displacing of monstrous blocks had caused here and there, to shelter themselves within, some under the tops of columns or capitals, arrested in their fall by other ruins, and others under an awning of black goat-skin stretched from one pillar to another, and thus forming a roof. The sheik himself, his wives and children, who occupied doubtless the palace of the village, had their abode at the entrance of the town, amidst the ruins of a Roman temple upon a very high elevation, standing above the path by which we entered. Their dwelling was formed by an immense block of sculptured stone, which hung almost perpendicularly, supported at one of its angles by other blocks, rolled pell-mell together, and stopping each other, as it

were, in their fall. This confused mass of stones seemed in reality as if giving way, and about to crush the women and children of the scheik, who showed their heads above us, thrust out of this artificial cavern. The females were not veiled; they had no other garment than a chemise of blue cotton, which left the neck and legs uncovered: this chemise is bound round the body by a belt of leather. They appeared to us handsome, notwithstanding the rings which pierced their nostrils, and the fantastic tatooings with which their cheeks and throats were furrowed. The children were naked, sitting on or bestriding the blocks of chiselled stone which formed the terrace of this frightful dwelling; and some black goats, with long pendant ears, had climbed to the side of the children, up the wall of the grottoes, and gazed at us passing, or bounded over our heads, clearing, from block to block, the deep path in which we were walking. We saw some camels lying here and there in the cool hollows, formed in the interstices of the ruins, and showing their pensive and tranquil heads over the trunks of the shivered columns and capitals. At every step the scene was novel, and drew our attention more powerfully. A painter would have found a thousand subjects of an unrecognised picturesque, in the ever varying and striking manner in which the dwellings of the tribe were mingled and confounded with the remains of theatres, baths, churches, and mosques, which strew this spot of earth. The less of human labour in working an asylum amidst this chaos of a desolate town, the more the habitations spring from the strange accidents of the monuments in their fall, so much is the poetry and imposing effect of the scene enhanced. Women were milking their she-goats on the steps of an amphitheatre; flocks of sheep were jumping one by one from the deep window of an emir's palace, or of a Gothic church, of the time of the Crusades. Some Arabs, seated cross-legged, were smoking their pipes under the carved arch of a Roman fabric, and the camels had their straps attached to the Moorish piazzas of a harem gateway.

We descended from our horses, to visit in detail the principal remains. The Arabs opposed great obstacles, when we testified an inclination to enter the circuit of a temple at the end of the town, upon a rock near the edge of the sea. We had a new dispute at each court, at each wall that we had to get over to reach it; we were obliged to employ even threats to force them to yield up the passage. The women and children retired, pouring on us a flood of imprecations; the scheik drew back a moment, and the other Arabs testified by their features and gestures the strongest marks of discontent; but the air of indecision and ill-disguised timidity which we detected in their manners, encouraged us to insist; and we entered, partly by leave and partly by force, into the interior of this last and most astounding of the monuments.

I cannot tell what it is; there is something of every order in its construction, form, and ornaments; I am inclined to believe that it is an ancient temple converted by the Crusaders into a church, at the time when they had possession of Cesarea in Syria and its neighbouring coasts, and that the Arabs have at a later period turned it into a mosque. Time, which sports with the productions and thoughts of men, now changes it to dust, and the knee of the camel bends upon those flags on which the knees of three or four generations in religion have bent in their turns, before different gods. The foundations of the edifice are evidently of Grecian architecture, in the era of its decline; at the spring of the arches it takes the Moorish fashion; windows originally Corinthian have been changed with much art and taste into Moorish windows in ogive, divided by light columns joined to each other; what remains of the arches is bordered with arabesques, of exquisite fineness and delicacy. The edifice has eight sides, and each of its projecting angles caused by this octagon form, contained most probably an altar, if we should judge from the niches which decorate the walls where such altars must have been erected. The centre part of the monument was also occupied by a principal altar;

it is easily perceived, from the elevation of the ground in this portion of the temple. This elevation would be caused by the steps which ran round the altar. The walls of this church are half fallen down, leaving to the eye vistas upon the sea, and the reefs which skirt it. Climbing plants hang in leafy and flowery tufts from the tops of the broken arches, and birds with scarlet necks, and flocks of small blue swallows, were chirping in these aerial arbours, or fluttering along the cornices. Nature takes up her hymn where man has ended his.

On leaving this unknown temple, we passed on foot through the different alleys of the village, tumbling at each step over curious relics, and discovering unlooked-for scenes amidst this medley of savage manners, and the beautiful testimonials of extinct civilisation. We saw a great number of Arab women and girls occupied, in the small enclosures of their huts, on the different employments of a pastoral life. Some were weaving stuffs of goat-hair; others were engaged in grinding barley or baking rice. They are in general very pretty, tall, strong, the complexion burnt by the sun, but with all the appearance of vigour and health. Their black hair was covered with strings of silver piales; they had ear-rings and necklaces enriched with the same ornament. They uttered yells of surprise as they saw us pass, and followed us beyond their houses. None of the Arabs offered us the least present; we did not deem it expedient to offer any ourselves; and we departed through the outer wall with precaution. Not an individual of the tribe followed us, and we went to pitch our tents about a mile from the great wall, at the bottom of a small gulf likewise encircled by ancient walls, it having formerly formed the harbour of this unknown town. The heat being extreme, we bathed in the sea, behind an old mole, which the waves have not yet completely swamped, whilst our sails prepared our tents, gave the horses a feed of barley, and lighted a fire against an arch, which had, doubtless, served as a gate to the port.

The Arabs call this place by a name which signifies *cut rock*. The crusaders style it, in their chronicles, *Castel Peregrino* (Castle of Pilgrims); but I have not been able to discover the designation of the intermediate town, Greek, Jewish, or Roman, to which the great ruins, which were so attractive to us, belonged. On the following day we continued to skirt the shores of the sea as far as Cesarea, where we arrived towards the middle of the day; in the morning, we had crossed a river which the Arabs called Zirkha, which is the river of crocodiles, according to Pliny.

Cesarea, the ancient splendid capital of Herod, has not a single inhabitant; its walls, reared by Saint Louis during his crusade, are, nevertheless, unbroken, and would still be available as excellent fortifications to a modern town.* We passed the deep ditch which surrounds them, by a stone bridge, nearly in the middle of the enclosure, and we penetrated into the maze of stones, of uncovered vaults, of ruined edifices, of marble and porphyry fragments, with which the site of the ancient town is thickly strewn. We roused three jackals from their lair in the rubbish amongst which our horses' feet rang in echoes; we sought for the fountain which had been mentioned to us, and found it, with difficulty, at the eastern extremity of the ruins. There we encamped. Towards evening, a young Arab herd arrived, with a numerous flock of cows, sheep, and goats; he consumed nearly two hours constantly pumping water from the fountain for these animals, who waited in patience for their turn, and retired, in order, after having satisfied their thirst, as if they had been led by shepherds. The boy, perfectly naked, was mounted on an ass; he was the last to leave the ruins, and he told us that he thus came every day, about two leagues, to water the flocks of his tribe, which was established in the mountain. This was the only incident that met us at Cesarea, in that city where Herod, according to Josephus, had accumulated all the wonders of Grecian

* Cesarea stands on the coast of the Mediterranean, about twenty-five miles south from Acre.]

and Roman art, and where he had cut an artificial harbour, which served for shelter to all the marine of Syria. *Cæsarea* is the town in which Saint Paul was held a prisoner, and made, in his defence, and in that of youthful Christianity, that beautiful speech which is preserved in the 26th chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. *Cornelius* the centurion, and Philip the evangelist, were from *Cæsarea*, and it was likewise from the port of *Cæsarea* that the apostles embarked, on their voyage to Greece and Italy, to sow the Gospel.

We passed the evening in going through the ruins of the town, and in collecting fragments of sculpture, which we were afterwards obliged to leave on the spot, from deficiency of means for transport. A beautiful night was passed under shelter of the aqueduct of *Cæsarea*.

The route continued over a sandy desert, covered in some places with shrubs, and even with thickets of holly-oaks, which served for pasture to the Arabs. *M. de Parsceval* fell asleep on his horse, and the caravan got in advance of him. When we perceived that he had fallen behind, two musket shots were heard in the distance; we set off in a gallop to go to his assistance, firing off pistols to scare the Arabs: he had fortunately not been attacked, having only fired his two shots at the gazelles which were scouring the plain. We arrived in the evening, without having found a single drop of water, near the Arab village of *El-Mukhalid*. An immense scyamore, thrown like a natural tent over the side of a naked and pulverous hill, enticed us to its shade. Our Arabs went to the village to inquire the direction of the fountain, which was pointed out to them. We all ran there, drank, bathed our heads and arms, and returned to our camp, where the cook had lighted a fire at the foot of the tree. Its trunk is already calcined by the successive fires of the thousands of caravans which have in their turns enjoyed its shade. All our tents and all our horses were collected beneath its prodigious branches. The sheik of *El-Mukhalid* came to present me melons; he seated himself under my tent, and asked me for news of *Ibrahim Pacha*, and for remedies for his wives and for himself. I gave him some drops of eau-de-Cologne, and invited him to sup with us. He accepted; we had the greatest difficulty in the world to get quit of him.

The night is suffocating. I cannot remain in the tent; I arise and go to seat myself near the fountain, under an olive-tree. The moon lightens all the chain of the mountains of Galilee, which gracefully waves at the horizon, about two leagues from the place in which I am encamped. It is the most beautiful outline of a horizon that has ever attracted my observation. The first shoots of Persian lilac, which droop in clusters in spring-time, have not a more pure violet hue than these mountains, at the hour in which I contemplate them. As the moon scales the heavens, and draws nearer, their tints darken and grow more purple; they appear, in motion, like heavy waves seen in a beautiful sunset at sea. All these mountains have, furthermore, a name and a place in the first history which our infant eyes have perused on the lap of our mothers. I know that Judea is there, with its ruins and its prodigies; that Jerusalem is seated behind one of those hills; that I am separated from it by only a few hours' march; that I thus draw nigh to one of the most desired objects of my long journey. I enjoy this effusion, as man always enjoys it, every time he is about to consummate any design, however insignificant, to which some passion has excited him. I remain an . . . were imprinting these o'lines, these tints, thus transparent and rosy sky, this solitude, this silence, on my recollection. The dampness of night falls and wets my mantle; I return to the tent, and sleep.

It was scarcely an hour that I had slept when I was awakened by a slight noise. I raised myself on my elbow, and looked around me. One of the corners of the tent was raised, to let the night-bird have entrance; the moon fully lighted the interior. I saw an jackal advancing cautiously, and looking with his fiery eyes. I seized my musket;

the movement alarmed him, and he scampered off in a gallop. I again fell asleep. Awakened a second time, I saw the jackal at my feet, poking his snout into the folds of my mantle, and on the point of seizing my beautiful greyhound, which slept on the same mat with me—a charming animal, which has not quitted me a day for eight years, and which I would defend as a part of my life, at the peril of existence. I had fortunately covered it up with a skirt of the mantle, and it slept so profoundly that it had heard nothing, felt nothing, and suspected not the danger it was running: one second later, the jackal had borne it away and slaughtered it in its burrow. I uttered a scream, and my companions awoke. I was already out of the tent, and had fired off my musket; but the jackal was fled, and in the morning no trace of blood bore witness to my vengeance.

We depart with the first rays which tinge the hills of Judea; we follow the undulating ridge out of sight of the sea. The heat fatigues us greatly, and the most profound silence reigns during the march. At eleven o'clock we arrive, overcome with thirst and weariness, on the steep banks of a river, which slowly rolls its loomy waters in a deep hollow, lined with tall reeds; the waters are not perceptible until they are reached. Troops of wild buffaloes are lying among the reeds and in the river, and show their heads above the stream. They pass the scorching hours of the day thus motionless: they gaze at us without stirring. We pass the river at a ford, and attain a forsaken khan. This river is at present named by the Arabs *Nahr-el-Arsouf*. The ancient *Apollonia* should be placed near here, unless its position be determined by another river, which we passed an hour afterwards, and which is now called *Nahr-el-Petrus*.

We lay down on our mats, in the cool and dark vaults which alone remain of the old khan. Scarcely were we seated round a dish of cold rice, which the cook had brought us for breakfast, than an enormous serpent, eight feet long, and thick as the arm, glided out of a hole in the old wall which overshadowed us, and came rolling amongst our legs. We hastened to fly towards the entrance of the vault, but it was there before us, and slowly disappeared, making its tail vibrate like the string of a bow, amongst the reeds growing on the banks of the river. Its skin was of the most beautiful deep blue. We felt repugnance in resuming our place of rest, but the heat was so excessive that we were obliged to submit; and we slept on our saddles, careless as to any similar visits that might interrupt our repose.

At four o'clock in the afternoon, we remount our horses. I perceive, upon a height at a little distance from the river, an Arab horseman, with a gun in his hand, and accompanied by a young slave on foot. The Arab appeared to be hunting; he stopped his horse every moment, and looked at us defiling, with an air of doubt and hesitation. All at once he puts his mare in a gallop, comes up to me, and, addressing me in Italian, asks me if I am not the traveller who is at present journeying through Arabia, and whose speedy arrival at Jaffa the European consuls have announced. I tell him my name; he jumps from his horse, and comes to kiss my hand. "I am," said he to us, "the son of *M. Domiani*, French Vice-Consul at Jaffa. Informed of your arrival, by letters brought from Saïde by an English vessel, I came, some days ago, to hunt gazelles on this route, in order to find you, and conduct you to my father's house. Ours is an Italian name; our family is originally from Europe, but from time immemorial has been established in Arabia. We are Arabs, but we have French hearts, and should regard it as a disgrace and an insult to our feelings if you accept hospitality in any other house than ours. Recollect, that we have met you first, and that, in the East, he who first meets a stranger has the privilege of being his host. I tell you of this, because many other families of Jaffa have been informed of your journey, by letters brought in the same ship, and they will come to meet you as soon as my slave shall have proclaimed your arrival in the town."

Scarcely had he ended his discourse, than he said a

few words in Arabic to the young slave, who, mounting his master's mare, disappeared, in the twinkling of an eye, behind the sand-hills which bounded the horizon. I gave M. Damiani one of my led horses, which accompanied me without being bestrode, and we slowly took the road to Jaffa, which we did not yet perceive. After two hours' march, we saw, on the other side of a river which remained for us to cross, about thirty horsemen, clad in the richest costumes, armed with glittering weapons, and mounted upon Arab chargers of faultless beauty, prancing on the strand of the river. They were urging their horses even into the water, uttering cries and firing pistols, as a salute to us. They were the sons, relations, and friends of the principal inhabitants of Jaffa, who had come to meet us. Each of them came up to me, and delivered his compliment, to which I replied through the medium of my dragoman, or in Italian, to those who understood it. They ranged themselves around us, and flying here and there, upon the sand, they presented us with the spectacle of throwing the djerid, in which the Arabs exert all the vigour of their horses, and all the dexterity of their bodies. We drew near to Jaffa, and the town began to rise before us, on a hill which reaches to the sea. The first glance of it is magical, when approached from this side of the desert. The foundations of the town to the west are bathed by the sea, which is always rolling large foaming waves on the rocks which surround the harbour; on the north, by which side we arrived, it is encompassed with delicious gardens, which seem to spring by enchantment from the desert to crown and overshadow its ramparts. We proceed beneath the lofty and odoriferous branches of a forest of palms, of pomegranates loaded with their red berries, of marine cedars with jagged leaves, of citrons, olives, figs, and lemons, large as the walnut-trees of Europe, and stooping beneath their fruits and blossoms. The atmosphere is but a perfume raised and spread by the breeze from the sea; the ground is white with orange-blossoms, which the wind sweeps like the dead leaves of autumn with us. From point to point, Turkish fountains of various-coloured marble, with their brass cups attached by chains, offer their limpid water to the wayfarer, and are always surrounded by a group of women, who wash their feet, and pour the water into pitchers of ancient models. The town lifts its white minarets, its indented terraces, its balconies in Moorish ogive, from out the midst of this sea of sweet-scented plants; whilst to the east it rises immediately from the pale sand, which stretches behind it over the immense desert separating it from Egypt.

Near one of these fountains, we discerned a third cavalcade, at the head of which was advancing M. Damiani the elder, mounted on a white mare. He is consular agent for several European nations, and is one of the most important personages in Jaffa. The grotesqueness of his costume made us smile; he was dressed in an old sky-blue robe, lined with ermine, and bound by a sash of crimson silk; his bare legs issued from wide pantaloons of dirty muslin, and he was crowned by an enormous three-cornered hat, worn smooth by time, and greased with sweat and dust, attesting numerous services during the Egyptian campaign. But the cordial and patriarchal welcome of our old vice-consul stopped the smile on our lips, and gave place to the gratitude we expressed to him. He was accompanied by several of his sons-in-law, sons, and grandsons, all on horseback like himself. One of his grandsons, twelve or fourteen years old, who frisked round his grandsire on an Arab mare without a bridle, presented the most admirable picture of a boy that I have seen in my life.

M. Damiani went before, and conducted us, through a thick crowd pressing around our horses, to the door of his house, where our other newly acquired friends bade us farewell, and left us to the care of our host.

The house of M. Damiani is small, but admirably situated at the top of the town, commanding three sea views along the coasts of Gaza and Askalon towards Egypt, and the shore of Syria on the north. The rooms are surmounted by open terraces, on which the sea-

breeze plays, and whence we discover, ten leagues at sea, the smallest sail that crosses the Gulf of Damietta. The rooms have no windows, as the climate renders them superfluous. The atmosphere has always the warmth of our finest days in spring; an ill-fixed shutter is the only rampart interposed between the weather and the inhabitants. The birds of the air partake these abodes, which man has prepared for himself; and in the saloon of M. Damiani, hundreds of small swallows, with red necks, were perched beside the porcelain and silver cups, and the stalks of pipes arranged on the wooden shelves running round the room. They were flying all day above our heads, and came, during supper, clustering on the branches of the brass lamp which lighted the repast.

The family of M. Damiani is composed of himself—something between the patriarch and the Italian merchant, but the patriarch greatly predominant; of Madame Damiani, the elder, a handsome Arab woman, the mother of twelve children, but still preserving, in her shape and complexion, the brilliancy and freshness of Turkish beauty; of several young daughters almost all remarkably pretty; and three sons, the eldest of whom we already knew. The two others were equally obliging and useful. The females did not appear in the apartments; they only showed themselves once in dresses of ceremony, and bespangled with their richest jewels, at a repast of which they partook with us. The remainder of the time they were occupied in preparing our food, in a small inner court, where we saw them as they came and went. The young men, educated in the respect which oriental customs teach sons to evince towards their father, never sat down with us at table. They stood behind their father, watching that the guests were well provided for.

We had scarcely entered the house before we received visits from a great number of the inhabitants, who came to congratulate us, and tender their services. Coffee and pipes were brought, and the evening was passed in conversations extremely interesting to us, whom curiosity so much excited. The governor of Jaffa, whom I had sent to compliment by my interpreter, was himself not long in coming to pay us a visit. He was a young and handsome Arab, clothed in the most brilliant costume, whose manners and language bespoke his elevation of mind and elegant usages. I have seen very few appearances so beautiful as his. His black beard fell down in shining folds, and spread out like a fan over his breast; his hand and fingers, glittering with enormous diamonds, were perpetually playing with his beard, and passing and repassing through it, to smooth and arrange it. His look was haughty, mild, and open, like that of all the Turks in general. We feel that these men have nothing to hide; they are frank because they are powerful, and they are powerful because they never rely on themselves and a vain skill, but always on the image of God, who directs all—on that providence which they call fatality. Place a Turk amongst ten Europeans, you will always recognise him by his lofty aspect, by the gravity impressed on his features by habit, and by the noble candour of his expression. The governor had received from Mahomet Ali and Ibrahim Pacha letters which strongly recommended me to him. I have these letters. I gave him another, which I carried with me from Ibrahim, to read. This is the sense of it:—

"I am informed that our friend [here my name] is arrived from France, with his family and several travelling companions, in order to traverse the countries subject to my arms, and to learn our laws and manners. My desire is, that thou and all my governors of towns or provinces, the commanders of my fleets, the generals and officers in command of my armies, will give him all marks of friendship, will render him all the services that my affection for him and for his nation call for from me; you will provide him, if he desires it, with houses, horses, victuals, such as he and his suite may be in need of. You will procure for him means to visit all the parts of our dominions which he may desire to see; you will give him escorts as numerous as his

safety, for which you will answer with your head, shall demand; and even if he should find any difficulty in penetrating certain provinces, by the acts of the Arabs, you will cause your troops to march to guard his excursions," &c.

The governor put this letter to his forehead, after having read it, and returned it to me. He asked me what he could do to obey the injunctions of his master, and wished to be made acquainted with the places I desired to visit. I named Jerusalem and Judea. At these words, he, his officers, the Messieurs Damiani, with the fathers of the convent of the Holy Land at Jaffa, who were present, cried out, and told me that the thing was impossible; that the plague had just broken out, with the most alarming virulence, at Jerusalem, at Bethlehem, and on all the route; that it was even at Ramla, the first town we had to pass in going to Jerusalem; that the pacha had just ordered quarantine on all that came out of Palestine; that, supposing that I should be sufficiently rash to penetrate there, sufficiently happy to escape the plague, I should not, perhaps, be able to return into Syria for several months; in fine, that the convents in which strangers receive hospitality in the Holy Land were all closed, that we would not be received in any of them, and that there was an absolute necessity for postponing the journey that I projected into the interior of Judea, to another epoch and a more favourable season.

This intelligence afflicted me excessively, but did not shake my resolution. I answered the governor, that although I was born in another religion than his, I did not the less adore the sovereign will of Alla; that in his creed it was called fatalism, and in mine providence, but that these two different words gave expression to but one meaning: "God is great, God is the master!" (*Alla kerim*)—that I had come from a great distance, over many seas, mountains, and plains, to visit the springs whence Christianity had flowed over the world, to see the holy town of the Christians, and compare sites with history; that I was too far advanced to recoil, and postpone to the uncertainty of times and things a project almost accomplished; that the life of man was but a drop of water in the ocean, a grain of sand in the desert, and was not worth the trouble of counting; that, furthermore, what was written was written, and that if Alla wished to preserve me from the plague in the midst of the infected in Judea, it was equally easy for him as to save me from the waves in the midst of the tempest, or from the balls of the Arabs on the banks of the Jordan; that, in consequence, I persisted in my wish to penetrate into the interior, to enter Jerusalem itself, whatever peril I might encounter; but what I decided for myself I neither could nor would for others; and that I left all my friends, all my servants, all the Arabs who accompanied me, masters of themselves, to follow me or to remain at Jaffa, according to the inclination of their hearts. The governor then cried out against my submission to the will of Alla, and told me that he would not allow me to expose myself alone to the dangers of the route and the plague, that he would choose out of the troops in garrison at Jaffa some courageous and disciplined soldiers, whom he would place entirely at my command, and who would guard my caravan during the march, and my tents during the night, in order to preserve us from contact with the infected. He likewise dispatched, on the very instant, a horseman to the governor of Jerusalem, who was his friend, to announce to him my journey, and to recommend me to him; and he then retired. We afterwards held a consultation, my friends and myself; our domestics even were called to the council, to decide upon what each would do. After some hesitation, all resolved with unanimity to tempt fortune, and to run the chance of the plague, rather than renounce the project of seeing Jerusalem. Our departure was fixed for the second day from this. We slept on the mats and divans of M. Damiani's saloon, and we awoke to the chirping of numberless swallows flying over our heads in the

received, to the governor, and to the superior of the convent of the Holy Land at Jaffa—a venerable Spanish monk who has lived in Jaffa since the time the French were there, and who certified to us the truth of the poisoning of the infected.

Jaffa, or Yaffa, the ancient Joppa of the Scriptures, is one of the earliest and most celebrated ports in the universe. Pliny speaks of it as an antediluvian city. It was there, according to tradition, that Andromeda was chained to the rock and exposed to the monster of the deep; it was there Noah built the ark; it was there that the cedars of Mount Lebanon were landed, by order of Solomon, to serve in the building of the temple. Jonas the prophet embarked there 862 years before Christ. Saint Peter there resuscitated Tabitha. The town was fortified by Saint Louis in the time of the crusades. In 1799, Bonaparte took it by assault, and massacred the Turkish prisoners. It has a bad harbour, for small vessels only, and a very dangerous road, as we ourselves found on our second voyage at sea. The population of Jaffa, composed of Turks, Arabs, Armenians, Greeks, Catholics, and Maronites, may be estimated at from five to six thousand souls. Each communion has its own church. The Latin convent is a magnificent building. It was undergoing an additional embellishment at the period of our visit, but we did not partake the hospitality of its brotherhood. Their extensive apartments were not thrown open for us, or for any of the strangers whom we met at Jaffa. They are empty, whilst the pilgrims obtain with difficulty shelter in some miserable Turkish khan, or the burdensome hospitality of some poor Jewish or Armenian roof.

Immediately from the walls of Jaffa, the great desert of Egypt opens. Having decided upon proceeding to Cairo by this route, I dispatched a courier to El-Arich to hire dromedaries to carry us through the desert. The journey from Jaffa to Cairo can thus be accomplished in twelve or fifteen days. But it is beset with difficulties and privations. The orders of the governor of Jaffa and the kindness of the principal inhabitants of the town, in communication with those of Gaza and El-Arich, materially mitigated them for me.

The governor sent us some horsemen, and eight foot-soldiers, selected from the bravest and best disciplined of the Egyptian troops that remained in garrison. They took up their quarters that very night at our gate. At break of day we were on horseback. We found at the gate of the town leading to Ramla, a crowd of persons, of all the denominations in Jaffa, on horseback. They performed the djerid around us, and accompanied us as far as a splendid fountain, overshadowed by sycamores and palms, which we reached after an hour's march. They there discharged their pistols in our honour, and resumed the road to the town. It is impossible to describe the freshness and magnificence of the vegetation which appears on both sides of the road on leaving Jaffa. On the right and on the left, it is one continued orchard of all the fruit-trees and flowering shrubs of the East, divided into portions by hedges of myrtle, jessamine, and pomegranates, and irrigated by streams of water, flowing from the handsome Turkish fountains of which I have already spoken. In each of these enclosures is an open pavilion or a tent, under which the families to whom they belong, pass a few weeks in spring and autumn. Three stakes and a piece of cloth form a country-house for these fortunate families. The women sleep on mats or cushions under the tents, and the men lie in the open air, under the arch of citrons and pomegranates. The water-melons and figs, of thirty-two different kinds, which shade these enchanted spots, furnish food for the table, increased at rare intervals by a lamb caught up in the family, and which is sacrificed, as in biblical times, on days of solemnity. Jaffa is the place in all the East which a lover of nature and solitude would select to pass his winters. The climate is an intermediate medium between the devouring heats of Egypt, and the autumnal rains of the coasts of Syria. If I could choose my habitation, I would reside at the foot of Lebanon, at Saïde, Beirut, or Latakia, during the spring and autumn; in the heights of Be-

was passed in returning the visits we had

banon during the heats of summer, cooled by breezes from the sea and from the valley of cedars, and by the vicinity of the snows; and amidst the gardens of Jaffa in the winter. Jaffa has something in its landscape more impressive, solemn, and variegated, than any that I have beheld. The eye rests only upon a boundless sea, blue as the sky above it, upon the immense flats of the Egyptian desert, where the horizon is intercepted only by the figure of a camel, advancing with a cloud of sand, and upon the green and golden branches of the numberless orange-groves crowding round the town. The costumes of the inhabitants and travellers who fill the roads, are picturesque and interesting. There are Bedouins, from Jericho or Tiberias, clad in large plaids of white wool; Armenians in long robes striped with blue and white; and Jews from all parts of the earth in every variety of dress, distinguished by their long beards, and noble and majestic features—a royal people, ill at ease in their slavery, in whose eyes you read the remembrance and conviction of high destinies, beneath the apparent humility of their deportment, and the lowliness of their present lot. There are also Egyptian soldiers in red jackets, reminding one of our French conscripts by the vivacity of their eye, and the alertness of their steps. In conclusion, there are Turkish agas passing with haughty looks along the road, mounted on horses of the desert, and followed by Arabs and black slaves; poor families of Greek pilgrims seated in a corner, eating out of a wooden bowl boiled rice or barley, which they husband with care for the journey to the Holy City; and of miserable Jewish women, only half-clothed, and toiling beneath the prodigious weight of packs of rags, and driving before them asses, bearing panniers crammed with children of all ages.

We journeyed on in the gayest mood, trying, occasionally, the speed of our horses against that of the Arab steeds bestrode by the Messieurs Damiani, and the son of the Sardinian Vice-Consul. These were two young men, sons of a rich Arab merchant of Ramla, now established at Jaffa, who had agreed to accompany us as far as Ramla, and they had sent their slaves forward to prepare their father's house and supper for us. We were also accompanied by another individual, who had voluntarily joined our caravan, and who astonished us by the strange magnificence of his European costume. He was a short young man, of from twenty to twenty-five years old, with a jovial and ludicrous cast of features, but subtle and intellectual. He wore an immense turban of yellow muslin, a green coat cut in the form of our court dresses, with a standing collar and wide skirts, embroidered with broad lacings of gold on all the seams; close pantaloons of white velvet, and boots turned down, ornamented with a pair of spurs fastened by silver chains. A kangiar served him as a hunting knife, and a pair of pistols, encrusted with silver chasings, were stuck in his belt, and rattled against his breast.

He had come from Italy in his infancy, and had been cast by I know not what stroke of fortune into Egypt, but had resided for some years at Jaffa or Ramla, exercising his profession among the scheiks and Bedouins of the mountains of Judea, who had not yet made his fortune. His conversation greatly amused me, and I should have wished to take him with me to Jerusalem, and to the mountains of the Dead Sea, which he appeared to know perfectly; but having lived in the East for many years, he had contracted the invincible terror, common amongst the Franks, for the plague, and my offers failed to seduce him. "In times of plague," said he to me, "I am no longer a physician; I am acquainted with but one remedy for it—to get away quick enough, to go far enough, and to remain long enough, to prevent the disease reaching you." He seemed to look upon us with pity, as victims predestined to find death at Jerusalem, and out of the great number of persons composing our caravan, he reckoned he should see very few on our return. "A few days ago," said he, "I was at Acre; a traveller returning from Bethlehem knocked at the door of the convent of the brotherhood of Saint Francis, which was opened to

him. There were seven inmates; on the second day the gates of the convent were built up by order of the governor. The pilgrim and the seven monks were all dead within twenty-four hours."

We now began to perceive the tower and minarets of Ramla, which rose before us out of a wood of olive-trees, the trunks of which were as large as those of our most aged oaks.

Ramla, anciently Rama Ephraim, is the ancient Arimathæa of the New Testament; it contains about 2000 families. Philip the Good, Duke of Burgundy, founded a Latin convent there, which still subsists. The Armenians and Greeks also possess convents for the succour of pilgrims of their nations going to the Holy Land. The old churches have been converted into mosques; in one of the mosques is the tomb, in white marble, of the Mameluke Ayoud-Bey, who fled from Egypt on the invasion of the French, and died at Ramla. On entering the town, we inquired if the plague had already extended its ravages so far, and we learnt that two monks, arrived from Jerusalem, had just died of it; the convent was under quarantine. Our friends from Jaffa conducted us to their house, situated in the middle of the town. An Arab, who had been a tinker, as we were told, but an amiable and excellent man, occupied half the house, and exercised the functions of consular agent, for I know not what European nation; this gave him the right of having a European flag on his roof, the most certain safeguard against the *avaries* (exactions) of the Turks and Arabs. A good supper awaited us, and we had the pleasure of finding chairs, beds, tables, and other European utensils, whilst we brought with us a store of fresh bread, for which we were indebted to the kindness of our hosts.

On the following morning, we took leave of all our Jaffa and Ramla friends, who were to accompany us no farther, and we departed with our solitary escort of Egyptian troopers and foot soldiers. I thus arranged the order of march: two horsemen about fifty paces in advance of the caravan, to keep off the Arabs or Jewish pilgrims whom we might meet, and hold them at a distance from our men and horses; on our two flanks, to the right and left, the foot soldiers, with ourselves marching one by one in a line, and the baggage placed in the midst. A small troop of our best horsemen formed the rear-guard, with orders to permit neither man nor beast to fall behind. On the appearance of any suspicious-looking Arabs, the caravan was to come to a halt, and place itself in order of battle, whilst the troopers, the interpreters, and myself, were to make the necessary observations. In this manner, we had little to fear from the Bedouins and the plague, and I can aver, that this order of march was observed by our Egyptian soldiers, Turkish horsemen, and my own Arabs, with a scrupulous obedience and attention, which would have done honour to the best disciplined corps in Europe. We preserved it for more than twenty-five days we were *en route*, and in the most embarrassing positions. I had never any occasion to address a reprimand to a single individual; it was to these precautions we were indebted for safety.

A short time after sunset, we arrived at the end of the plain of Ramla, close to a fountain hollowed in the rock, which watered a small enclosure of gourds. We were at the foot of the mountains of Judea; a little valley, a hundred paces broad, opened on our right, into which we advanced. It is here that the Arab brigands of the mountains commence their dominion. As the night was closing in, we judged it prudent to fix our camp in this valley; we pitched our tents about 200 paces from the fountain. We set an advanced guard upon a knoll which commanded the road to Jerusalem, and, whilst supper was preparing, we went in pursuit of the partridges on some hills in view of our tents. We shot some of them, and disturbed, in the bosom of the rocks, a multitude of small eagles at roost. They arose winding and shrieking above our heads, and came back again after we had fired at them. All animals are alarmed at the flame and explosion of firearms; the eagle alone appears to hold them in disdain,

and sport with the peril, either because it is ignorant of it, or braves it. I admired, from the top of one of these hills, the picturesque appearance of our camp, with the piqueets of Arab horsemen on the knoll, the horses scattered around our tents, the moultries, or grooms, seated on the ground cleaning the harness and arms, and the light from the fire shining through the canvass of a tent, and spreading its tiny smoke in the breeze. How I should enjoy this nomadic life under such a sky, if I could bear with me all those whom I love and regret on earth! The whole world belongs to pastoral and wandering tribes, such as the Arabs of Mesopotamia. There is more of poetry in one of their migrations, than in whole years of our town-existences. By seeking too much from civilised life, man nails himself to localities; by detaching himself from them, he will lose innumerable superfluities which usage has converted into necessities. Our houses are voluntary prisons. I should wish that life was a perpetual journey like this; and if I were not bound to Europe by the affections, I would extend it as long as my strength and fortune lasted.

We were on the confines of the tribes of Ephraim and Benjamin. The well near which our tents were fixed is still called the Well of Job.

We departed before daylight, and followed for two hours a narrow, barren, and rocky valley, celebrated for Arab depredations. Of all the surrounding country it is the most exposed to their attacks; they can approach by a variety of small winding gorges concealed behind the uninhabited hills, lie in ambush behind the rocks and shrubs, and fall unexpectedly on the caravans. The famous Abougosh, chief of these mountainous Arab tribes, holds the key of the defiles leading to Jerusalem; he opens or blocks them at his pleasure, and seizes travellers for ransom. His capital is a few leagues from us at the village of Jeremiah.* We expected every instant to see his bands, but we met no one except a young aga, a relation of the governor of Jerusalem, mounted on a beautiful mare, and accompanied by seven or eight horsemen. He saluted us with politeness, and drew up with his suite to permit our passing, without coming in contact with our horses or garments.

About an hour from Jeremiah, the valley contracts still more, and the trees meet with their branches over the road. There are an ancient fountain and the remains of a ruined kiosk. We ascended for an hour by a steep and broken path hollowed in the rock, winding through woods, and all at once perceived the village and church of Jeremiah at our feet, on the other side of the hill. The church, now a mosque, appeared to have been built with splendour, in the epoch of the kingdom of Jerusalem under the Lusignans. The village is composed of from forty to fifty houses, hanging on the slopes of two hillocks which skirt the valley. Some scattered fig-trees and vineyards display a degree of cultivation, flocks are grouped around the houses, and some Arabs, clothed in handsome robes, are smoking their pipes on the terrace of the principal dwelling, about a hundred paces from the road we are descending. Fifteen or twenty horses, saddled and bridled, are tied in the court-yard. As soon as the Arabs deserv us, they come down from the terrace, mount on horseback, and slowly advance towards us. We met them on a large open spot in front of the village, shaded by five or six beautiful fig-trees.

They were the renowned Abougosh and his family. He, along with his brother, came towards me, his followers remained in the background. I instantly rode mine halt also, and went forward with my interpreter. After the accustomed salutations and endless compliments, which precede all conversations with the Arabs, Abougosh asked me if I were not the Frank emir, whom his friend, Lady Stanhope, the queen of Palmyra,

had put under his protection, and in whose name she had sent to him the superb vest of cloth of gold which he wore, and which he displayed with pride and gratitude. I was quite ignorant of this gift of Lady Stanhope, made so obligingly in my name; but I replied, that I was certainly the stranger whom that illustrious lady had confided to the generosity of her friends in Jeremiah, and that I was about to visit the whole of Palestine where the sway of Abougosh was owned, and begged him to give the necessary orders, so that Lady Stanhope might have no reproaches to make him. At these words he got off horseback, as well as his brother; he called to some of his suite, and ordered them to bring mats, carpets, and cushions, which he caused to be spread under the branches of a large fig-tree in the very field where we were, and besought us, with so much earnestness, to dismount, and seat ourselves on this rustic divan, that it was impossible for us to refuse. As the plague prevailed at Jeremiah, Abougosh, who knew that Europeans were exposed to quarantine, was careful not to touch our clothes, and fixed his divan, and that of his brother's, opposite us at a certain distance; as for us, we accepted only the straw and rush mats, because they are held not to communicate infection. Coffee and sherbet were brought us. We conversed on general topics a pretty long time, and Abougosh then begged me to withdraw my suite, as he did his own, in order to communicate to me some secret intelligence, which I cannot here impart. After a confidential conference of some minutes, he recalled his brothers, and I my friends. "Do they know my name in Europe?" he asked me. "Yes," I replied; "some say that you are a robber, pillaging and massacring caravans, carrying Franks into slavery, and the ferocious enemy of Christianity; whilst others maintain that you are a valiant and generous chief, repressing the robberies of the mountaineers, making the roads sure, protecting caravans, and the friend of all the Franks who are worthy your attention." "And you," said he to me laughing, "what will you say of me?" "I will say what I have seen," I answered—"that you are as powerful and hospitable as a prince of the Franks, that you are calumniated, and that you deserve to have all the Europeans for friends, who, like me, have experienced your good will and the protection of your sword." Abougosh appeared delighted. He and his brother asked me afterwards a great number of questions as to our European usages, our habiliments, and our arms, which they greatly admired; and we then separated. At the moment of leaving him, he gave orders to one of his nephews and some horsemen to place themselves in the van of our caravan, and not to quit me all the time that I remained at Jerusalem, or in the environs. I thanked him, and we parted.

Abougosh reigns in reality over about 40,000 Arabs in the mountains of Judea, from Ramla to Jerusalem, from Heron to the mountains of Jericho. This dominion, which has descended in his family for several generations, is secured only by his power. In Arabia they do not discuss the origin or legitimacy of government; they recognise and obey it whilst it exists. A family is more ancient, more numerous, richer, and braver, than others; the chief of this family naturally becomes paramount in his tribe; the tribe itself being better governed, more skilfully or valiantly led to war, attains incontestible supremacy. Such is the origin of all the dominations of chiefs or tribes which are acknowledged in the East. The sway is extended and perpetuated as a natural consequence; all proceeds from the family—and once the fact of this ascendancy recognised and incorporated into manners and customs, there is nothing to contest it; obedience becomes a filial and religious duty. It requires great revolutions and continued misfortunes to overthrow a family; and this nobility, which may be styled self-created, is preserved through ages. We do not perfectly comprehend the feudal system, until after visiting these countries; we there see how all those families were formed in the middle ages, all those local lordships which ruled over castles, villages, and provinces. It is the first step in

* [Travellers generally call the chief village or capital of Abougosh, Kariatoomah; but it is situated in the valley where Jeremiah the prophet is understood to have composed his Lamentation and it is on this account, probably, that M. de Lamartine has given the appellation of Jeremiah.]

civilisation. As society advances, these petty powers are absorbed in larger; municipalities arise to protect the rights of towns against the waning power of the feudal families. Great kingdoms are then consolidated, which destroy in their turn the useless municipal privileges, and other social phases open out with innumerable phenomena, the whole of which are yet unknown to us.

We were already far from Abougosh, and his subjects of organised brigands. His nephew marched before us on the route to Jerusalem. At about a mile from Jeremiah, he quitted the road, and turned to the right into rocky paths, which cut a mountain covered with myrtle and turpentine trees. We followed after him. The news from Jerusalem, as given us by Abougosh, were such that it was absolutely impossible for us to enter it. The plague was increasing every hour; sixty to eighty deaths occurred daily; all the hospitals and convents were closed. We had come to the resolution of going first of all to the desert of Saint John the Baptist, about two leagues from Jerusalem, on the most precipitous mountains of Judea, to ask an asylum for a few days at the convent of Latin monks who reside there, and afterwards to act according to circumstances. It was into the route towards this solitude that Abougosh's nephew led us. After marching for two hours through frightful roads, and under a devouring sun, we found, on the other side of the mountain, a small spring and the shade of some olives, where we came to a halt. The position was sublime! We looked over the black and deep valley of turpentine, where David slew the Philistine giant with his sling. The situation of the two armies is so apparent in the encircling of the valley, and in the slopes and disposition of the ground, that it is impossible for the eye to hesitate. The dry torrent, on whose banks David picked up the stone, drew its chalky line through the middle of the narrow valley, and pointed out, as in the recital of the Bible, the separation of the two armies. I had neither the Bible nor any book of travels in my hand, nor any person to give me an account of the place, and the ancient name of the valley and the mountains; but my boyish imagination had so vividly and with such truth conceived the form of the localities, the physical aspect of the scenes of the Old and the New Testament, from the descriptions in the holy books, that I recognised, at a glance, the valley of turpentine, and the battle-field of Saul.* When we got to the convent, I had only to hear the exactitude of my ideas confirmed by the fathers. My fellow-travellers could not believe it. The same thing had occurred to me at Sephora, in the midst of the hills of Galilee. I had pointed out with my finger, and called by its name, a hill surmounted by a ruined castle as the probable place of the Virgin's birth. On the following day, the same was repeated with respect to the residence of the Maccabees at Modin; on passing the foot of a sandy mountain, with the remains of an aqueduct on the top, I recognised it as the tomb of the last illustrious citizens of the Jewish people, and I judged correctly without knowing it. The imagination of man is more accurate than is understood; it does not always dream, but proceeds by instinctive assimilations of things and ideas, which give to it results more sure and clear than science and logic. Except the valleys of Lebanon, the ruins of Balbek, the shores of the Bosphorus at Constantinople, and the first view of Damascus from the heights of Anti-Lebanon, I have never encountered a scene, the first glance at which was more a recollection! Have we lived twice, or a thousand times? Is our memory but a dulled mirror, which the breath of God makes bright? Or rather, have we in our imagination a power of presentiment, and of seeing before we see in reality? Questions not to be solved!

At two o'clock in the afternoon, we descended the

* [It is called the valley of Elah in the Bible. "And Saul and the men of Israel were gathered together and pitched by the valley of Elah, and set the battle in array against the Philistines, and the Philistines stood on a mountain on the one side, and Israel stood on a mountain on the other side, and there was a valley between them."]

steep slopes of the vale of turpentine, passed the dry bed of the torrent, and mounted, by steps cut in the rock, to the Arab village of Saint John the Baptist, which we had seen before us. Some Arabs, with ferocious countenances, looked at us from the terraces of their houses; the women and children crowded round us in the narrow streets of the village; and the monks, alarmed at the tumult which they desecrated from their roof, at the multitude of our horses and men, and of the plague which we might be bringing in our train, refused to open the iron gates of the monastery. We turned back again, to proceed to encamp on a hill near the village, cursing the hard-hearted monks. I sent my dragoman to speak with them again, and to address to them the reproaches they so richly merited. During this interval, the whole population came down from the roofs, the sheiks surrounded us, and mingled their savage yells with the neighing of our affrighted horses; a horrible confusion reigned in the whole caravan, and we cocked our guns. The nephew of Abougosh, who had mounted to the roof of a house near the convent, harangued in turn the monks and the people. At length we obtained, by a capitulation, entry to the convent; a small iron door was opened for us, through which we passed, one by one, in a stooping posture, and we unloaded our horses to enable them to follow us. The nephew of Abougosh and his Arab troop remained outside, and encamped at the gate. The monks, pale and agitated, trembled at the idea of touching us; we reassured them, by giving our word that we had not come in contact with any person since we left Jaffa, and that we should not enter Jerusalem as long as we remained in the asylum we borrowed from them. Upon this assurance, their excited countenances resumed tranquillity; they led us to the vast corridors of the monastery, and introduced each of us into a small cell, provided with a bed and a table, and ornamented with a few Spanish engravings of pious subjects. They made our soldiers, Arabs, and horses, take up their quarters in an uncultivated garden of the convent; barley and straw were thrown to them from the walls, whilst sheep and a calf, sent as presents by Abougosh, were killed for us in the street. During the time that my Arab cook, in conjunction with the serving-monks, prepared our meal in the kitchen, each of us retired to his cell to catch a moment's repose, or contemplate the extraordinary prospect which surrounds the monastery.

The Convent of Saint John, in the desert, is a branch of the Latin Convent of the Holy Land at Jerusalem. Those monks whose age, infirmities, or more intense desire for solitude, fit for cenobites of a severer cast, are sent to this house. It is a large and handsome building, surrounded by gardens dug in the rock, with court-yards and presses to make the excellent wine of Jerusalem. There were twenty monks when we came there; the greatest number were old Spaniards, who had passed the largest portion of their lives in the exercise of the functions of a priest, either at Jerusalem, Bethlehem, or some of the other towns of Palestine. Some were novitiates, but recently arrived from their convents in Spain; the eight or ten days that we passed with them impressed us with high conceptions of their character, their charity, and the purity of their lives. The superior, especially, was the most perfect model of Christian virtues; simplicity, mildness, humility, unshaken patience, a kindness always full of grace, a zeal always in place, indefatigable attentions to the brotherhood and to strangers, without distinction of rank or wealth, an enlightened faith, active and contemplative at the same time, serenity in disposition, speech, and countenance, which no contradiction could disturb. He presented us with one of those rare examples of what the perfection of the religious principle can produce on the mind of man; the mortal was there only in his visible form, the soul was already transformed into something superhuman, angelic, deified, which shuns admiration whilst commanding it. We were all equally struck, masters and domestics, Christians or Arabs, with the pervading sanctity of this excellent monk: his mind appeared possessed by all the fathers and brethren

of the convent; for, in different degrees, we perceived in all a portion of the qualities of the superior, and this abode of charity and peace left in us an undying recollection. The monkish state, in the present age, has always appeared to me contrary to reason and common sense; but a consideration of the Convent of Saint John the Baptist would tend to destroy these ideas, if it were not an exception, and if what is repugnant to nature, to family, and social ties, ever could be a justifiable institution. As for the convents of the Holy Land, they are not exactly to be viewed in this light; they are useful to the world by the asylum which they afford to pilgrims from the West—by the example of Christian virtues they may give to people who know not these virtues—and, finally, by the connection which they alone keep up between certain portions of the East, and the nations of the West.

The fathers disturbed us towards evening, and conducted us to the refectory, where our servants and theirs had prepared our repast. The meal, like that of every day we spent in the convent, consisted of omelets, of pieces of mutton strung on an iron skewer and roasted before the fire, and of a rice pilau. We tasted, for the first time, the excellent white wine made from the vines in the vicinity; it is the only wine known in Judea. The brotherhood of Saint John the Baptist are the only persons who know how to make it, and they furnish all the convents in Palestine. I bought a small cask of it, which I sent to Europe. During the repast, all the monks walked up and down the refectory conversing in turns with us; the superior watched that nothing was wanting to us, served us often with his own hands, and went to fetch us, from the repositories of the convent, liqueurs, chocolate, and all the dainties still remaining from the last cargo dispatched from Spain. After supper, we accompanied them to the terrace of the monastery; it is the habitual promenade of the monks in times of plague, and they frequently remain thus shut up, for several months in the year. "But," said they to us, "this seclusion is less painful than you may think, for it gives us the right of shutting our gates to the Arabs of the country, who torment us at all other times with their visits and demands. When the quarantine is removed, the convent is always full of these insatiable people, and we prefer the plague to the necessity of entertaining them." I easily believed them, when I had myself come to know these Arabs.

The village of Saint John in the desert is situated on a detached hill, surrounded on all sides by deep and gloomy precipices, the bottoms of which are hidden from sight, falling down the almost perpendicular rock beneath the windows of the convent. The rocks are scooped into deep caverns by nature herself, which the ascetics of the first ages dived into to lead the life of eagles or pigeons. Here and there on slopes, somewhat less grim, vine-plants are seen twining up the trunks of small fig-trees, and creeping along the rock. Such is the appearance of all these solitudes. A grey tint, speckled with yellowish green, covers the whole landscape; from the roof of the convent, the eye plunges on all sides into bottomless abysses. A few mean dwellings of Mahometan and Christian Arabs, are scattered on the peaks under the shadow of the monastery. These Arabs are the most ferocious and perfidious of mortals. They acknowledge the authority of Abougosh, at whose name the monks grow pale. They could not understand by what seduction or influence that chief had welcomed us so frankly, and given his own nephew for our guide; they suspected in it some high diplomatic purpose, and never ceased inquiring about my protection from the tyrant of their tyrants. On the approach of night, we descended, and passed the evening in agreeable conversation with the amiable superior and the good Spanish fathers. They were strangers to every thing; no intelligence from Europe pierces these inaccessible mountains. They were perfectly at a loss to comprehend the recent French revolution. "Eh," said they, at the our relation, "provided the king of France and he protects the convents of the Holy Land." They showed us their chapel, a

beautiful small nave, built on the spot where the forerunner of the Christ was born, ornamented with an organ, as well as with several mediocre paintings of the Spanish school.

In the morning, we could not resist the desire of gaining at least a distant glimpse of Jerusalem. We made our arrangements with the monks; it was agreed that we should leave at the monastery a part of our people, horses, and baggage; that we should take with us only the horsemen of Abougosh, the Egyptian soldiers, and the Arab domestics, who were indispensable, to take charge of our saddle-horses; that we should not enter the town; that we should content ourselves with making the circuit of it, avoiding all contact with the inhabitants; and that, if, by accident or otherwise, such contact should occur, we would not again seek to enter the convent, but should withdraw our effects and people, and encamp in the environs of Jerusalem. These conditions were accepted, and without other guarantee than our word and veracity, we departed.

JERUSALEM.

On the 28th October, at five o'clock in the morning, we prepare to leave the desert of Saint John the Baptist. We await the dawn on horseback, in the court of the convent, enclosed with high walls, in order that we might avoid coming in the dark upon the infected Arabs and Turks of the village and of Bethlehem. At half past five we are on our march. We scale a mountain beset with enormous grey rocks, detached in blocks as if parted with the hammer. A few creeping vines, with the yellow leaves of autumn, hang along the small cleared spots in the intervals of the rocks, and immense protrusions of stone, similar to those spoken of in the Song of Songs, rise up amidst these vines. Fig-trees, the branches of which are already despoiled of their leaves, are sprinkled on the edges of the vines, and their blackened fruit is strewn upon the rocks. On our right, the desert of Saint John, in which the voice—the voice crying in the wilderness—is received, sinks into a terrific abyss between five or six high black mountains, and in the intervals, left by their stony peaks, the horizon of the Egyptian Sea, covered with a gloomy vapour, opens to our eyes. On our left, and quite near to us, is the ruin of an ancient tower or castle, on the point of a lofty knoll, which is crumbling into decay like all around it. Other ruins, like the arches of an aqueduct, are seen descending from this castle down the slopes of the hill; some vines are growing from their feet, and casting on the falling arches their pale and yellow tinge. One or two turpentine trees spring isolated from amidst these ruins. It is Moab, the palace and tomb of the last heroic men of sacred history—the Maccabees. We leave behind us these remains glittering in the highest rays of morning. These rays are not confounded in a vague confusing light, in a dazzling and universal radiance, as in Europe; they break from the tops of the mountains which hide Jerusalem from us, like streaks of fire variously tinted, united at their centre, and diverging in the atmosphere they depart from it. Some are of a gently-silvered tinge, others of a dull white; now of a delicate vermilion, growing faint at the edges, now of a burning red like the flames of a conflagration, divided, and yet harmoniously agreeing, by their successive and merging tints. They resemble a dazzling rainbow, whose arch is broken and mingled in the atmosphere. This is the third time that this beautiful phenomenon of the rising or the setting of the sun has offered itself to us in this guise, since we have been in the mountainous regions of Galilee and Judea; it is the dawn or twilight as the old masters represent them, which seem false to those who have not seen the reality. As the day advances, the distinct brightness, and the azure or heated hue of each of these luminous streaks, diminish, and are lost in the general glare; and the moon, which hung above our heads, yet red and fiery, wanes, assumes the colour of pearl, and sinks into the depth of heaven,

like a silver ring disappearing as it descends into deep water.

After ascending a second mountain, higher and more naked still than the first, the horizon expands all at once upon the right, and gives a view of the whole space which stretches between the last peaks of Judea on which we stand, and the high mountainous chain of Arabia. This space is already overspread with the fleecy and waving light of morning. Beyond the lesser hills, beneath our feet, broken and split into grey and crumbling blocks of rock, the eye distinguishes nothing but this dazzling expanse, so similar to a vast sea that the illusion was perfect; and it appears to us as if we can discern those patches of deep shade, and those smooth and silvery sheets, that the rising sun brightens or darkens on a calm sea. On the edge of this imaginary ocean, a little on the left, and about a league from us, the sun glitters on a square tower, on a lofty minaret, and on the broad yellow walls of some buildings which crown the summit of a low hill, the hill itself concealing from us their base; but from the spires of the minarets, the battlements of the more elevated walls, and the black and blue summits of the domes rising behind the tower, and the great minaret, we recognise a town of which we can perceive only the more elevated part, and which descends down the sides of the hill: it can be none other than Jerusalem. We believed ourselves much farther removed from it, and each of us, afraid to inquire of our guide lest the illusion should be destroyed, enjoyed in silence this first glance cast stealthily upon the town; and all conveyed to me the name of Jerusalem!

It was so; it stood out, sombrely and heavily, from the blue depths of heaven, and the black sides of the Mount of Olives. We reined in our horses to behold it in this mysterious and awe-inspiring appearance. Each step that we had to make, in descending into the deep and gloomy valleys which were below our feet, would conceal it again from our eyes. Beyond those lofty walls and domes, a high and broad hill arose upon a second outline, darker than that which bore and concealed the town, bounding and terminating our horizon. The sun left in the shade its western side, but settling with its vertical rays on its peak, like a large cupola, it appeared to make its transparent summits float in the air, and the uncertain limit of earth and sky was marked only by a few large black trees, planted on the most elevated point, through which the rays of the sun were passing—it was the Mount of Olives! It was those very olives themselves, the venerable witnesses of so many days, written on earth and in heaven, watered by divine tears, and by the bloody sweat, and by so many other tears and agonies since the night which has consecrated them! We had a confused view of some others forming dark spots on the declivities, and then the walls of Jerusalem intercepted the horizon and hid the foot of the Sacred Mount.

Nearer to us, and immediately beneath our eyes, was nothing but a stony wilderness, which serves as an approach to the city of stones. These immense embedded stones, of a uniform ashy grey, extend from the spot where we stood to the gates of Jerusalem. Hills sink and rise, narrow valleys encircle and wind amongst their roots, and even expand here and there, as if to deceive the eye of man, and promise him vegetation; but all is of stone, hills, valleys, and plains. There is a layer, ten or twelve feet thick, of bedded rocks, with intervals between them, large enough only for reptiles to creep, or to break the leg of a camel, plunging down. If we represent to ourselves high walls of colossal stones, like those of the Coliseum or the great Roman theatres, falling in a single piece, and covering, with their enormous and sunken sides, the earth which sustains them, we shall have an exact idea of the layer and description of rock which is every where gathered on these nearest ramparts of the city of the desert. The nearer we approach, the more the stones crowd together, and rise, like perpetual avalanches, ready to fall upon the wayfarer. The last steps that are made before opening upon Jerusalem, are hollowed through a dismal

and immoveable avenue of these rocks, which rise ten feet above the head of the traveller, and permit only a sight of the sky immediately above.

We were in this last and mournful avenue, and marched in it for a quarter of an hour, when the rocks, retiring on a sudden to the right and left, brought us face to face with the walls of Jerusalem, upon which we verged before we were aware. A space of a hundred paces was alone between us and the gate of Bethlehem. This interval, barren and undulating, like the banks which surround fortified places in Europe, extended to the right into a narrow vale, sinking in a gentle slope, and to the left were five old olive trunks, half bent beneath the weight of age and of the sun; trees that might be called petrified, like the sterile soil from which they sprang with such effort. The gate of Bethlehem, commanded by two towers, with Gothic battlements, deserted and silent as the gates of a ruined castle, was open before us. We remained a few minutes in motionless contemplation; we burned with desire to pass it, but the plague was at its highest state of intensity in the city; and we had been received at the Convent of St John the Baptist, on the most express and formal promise not to enter it. We did not enter; but turning to the left, we slowly descended, skirting the high walls built behind a deep ravine or ditch, in which we perceived, from time to time, the stone foundations of Herod's ancient enclosure. At every step we met Turkish burial-places, whitened with tomb-stones, surmounted by a turban. These cemeteries, which every night the plague was peopling, were filled, here and there, with groups of Turkish and Arab women, weeping for their husbands or their fathers. Some tents were fixed on the tombs, and seven or eight women, seated or on their knees, holding beautiful infants to the breast, were uttering, at intervals, harmonious lamentations, funeral songs, or prayers, the religious melancholy of which accorded wonderfully with the desolate scene before our eyes. These women were without veils: some were young and pretty. They had at their sides baskets full of artificial flowers, and painted in brilliant colours, which they planted round the tombs, watering them with their tears. They bent down, from time to time, towards the earth, recently disturbed, and chanted to the dead some verses of their lament, appearing to speak to him in a low voice; then, remaining silent, with the ears close to the monument, they had the appearance of waiting and listening for the reply. These groups of women and children, seated there the whole day to weep, were the only sign of life and human occupancy that appeared to us in our circuit round the walls. No noise, no smoke arose; and some pigeons, flying from the fig-trees to the battlements, and from the battlements to the edges of the sacred pools, gave the only movement, the sole murmur, in this mournful compass.

Half-way down the descent which conducted us to Kedron and the foot of the Mount of Olives, we saw a deep, open grotto, not far from the ditch of the town, under a hillock of yellow rock. I would not stop at it; I wished to see Jerusalem, and nothing but Jerusalem, entirely, and with uninterrupted purpose, together with its valleys and hills, its Jehoshaphat and its Kedron, its temple and its sepulchre, its ruins and its horizon!

We afterwards passed before the gate of Damascus, a beautiful monument of the Arab taste, flanked with two towers, opened by a broad, high, and elegant ogive, and surmounted by battlements in arabesque, in the form of stone turbans. Then we doubled, to the right, the angle of the walls, which form, on the northern side, a regular square, and having on our left the deep and gloomy valley of Gethsemane, the bottom of which is occupied and filled by the dry torrent of Kedron. We followed, to the gate of Saint Stephen, a narrow path, touching the walls, interrupted by two pools, in one of which Christ cured the palsy. This pathway hangs upon the edge of a narrow margin, which surmounts the precipice of Gethsemane and the valley of Jehoshaphat; at the gate of Saint Stephen it is interrupted in its course by the perpendicular terraces which bore

Solomon's temple, and sustain at present Omar's mosque; and a rapid and wide declivity sinks all at once to the left towards the bridge which crosses Kedron, and leads to Gethsemane and the Garden of Olives. We passed this bridge, and dismounted once more from our horses in front of a charming edifice, of the composite order, but of a severe and antique character, which is, as it were, buried in the lowest depths of the valley of Gethsemane, and fills its entire breadth. It is the assigned tomb of the Virgin, the mother of Christ; it belongs to the Armenians, whose convents were the most ravaged by the plague. We did not, therefore, enter the sanctuary of the tomb. I contented myself with falling on my knees upon the marble step of the outer court of this handsome temple, and invoking the blessing of her whom every mother early teaches her child to piously and affectionately worship. On rising, I perceived behind me an enclosure, of about an acre in extent, touching, on one side, the high bank of the brook Kedron, and rising gently, on the other, to the base of the Mount of Olives. A low wall of stones, without cement, surrounded this field, and eight olive trees, separated from each other thirty or forty paces, covered it almost entirely with their shade. These olives are some of the largest trees of the species that I have ever met with; tradition carries their age to the memorable date of the Saviour's agony, who had selected them to hide his divine anguish. Their appearance would confirm, if necessary, the tradition which consecrates them; their prodigious roots, like the accumulations of centuries, have lifted up the earth and stones which covered them, and, rising several feet above the level of the soil, offer to the pilgrim natural seats, on which he can kneel or sit, to gather the holy thoughts which descend from their silent branches. A knotty trunk, grooved and hollowed by age into, as it were, deep wrinkles, rises like a large column from these groups of roots, and, as if overcome and bent by the weight of years, leans to the right or to the left, and droops its vast interwoven branches, which the axe has a hundred times pruned, to restore to youthful vigour. These old and ponderous branches, which are bent downwards, bear others of less mature age, which stand erect towards heaven, and send out shoots, one or two years' old, topped by clusters of leaves and small blue olives, which fall like celestial relics on the foot of the Christian traveller. I separated from the caravan, which had halted round the Virgin's tomb, and I seated myself, for a moment, on the roots of the most lonely and aged of these olives; its branches intercepted the view of the walls of Jerusalem, and its large trunk concealed me from the observation of the shepherds who were feeding their flocks on the slopes of the Mount of Olives. I could only see the deep and rugged ravine of Kedron, and the tops of some other olives, which fill up the breadth of the valley of Jehoshaphat. Not a murmur arose from the waterless brook; not a leaf shook upon the tree; I closed my eyes, and carried back my thoughts to that night, the eve of the redemption of the human race, in which the Divine Messenger had drained the dregs of the cup of agony, before receiving death from the hands of men, as the reward of his celestial revelation. I asked my part of that salvation which he had borne to the world at so high a sacrifice; I represented to myself the flood of anguish which must have poured upon the heart of the Son of Man, when he contemplated, at one view, all the miseries, darknesses, woes, vanities, and wickednesses, in the lot of mortals; when he wished to remove that load of crimes and griefs under which all humanity, bowed down and groaning, passes into the narrow vale of tears; when he found that not even truth and consolation could be imparted to mankind, but at the price of his life; when, recoiling with affright from the shadow of death, which he already felt upon him, he said to his father, "Let this cup pass from me!" and I, a miserable, ignorant, insignificant

also cry at the foot of the tree of human woe! Oh Lord! Let all these cups of bitterness be mine, and be poured by you into that cup indeed for us all! He, he had the force to

drink it to the dregs. He had known and seen you; he knew wherefore he was about to drink it; he knew the immortal life that awaited him in the depths of his three days' tomb; but I, oh Lord, what know I but the woe which tears my heart, and the hope which he has taught me?"

I arose, and gazed in admiration on this spot, divinely predestined and chosen for the most agonising scene in the passion of the Saviour. It was a valley, narrow, entombed, and deeply sunk; closed on the north by the gloomy and bare ridges which bore the tombs of the kings; overshadowed on the west by the sombre and colossal walls of a city of iniquities; overcast on the east by the peaks of the Mountain of Olives, and traversed by a torrent which rolled its bitter and yellow waters over the broken rocks of the valley of Jehoshaphat. At a few paces distant, a black and naked rock stood out like a promontory from the foot of the mountain, and, suspended over Kedron and the vale, bore some old tombs of kings and patriarchs, carved in huge and fantastic architecture, and shot out like the bridge of death over the vale of tears!

At that period, doubtless, the slopes of the Mount of Olives, now nearly bare, were irrigated by the water of the pools and the yet flowing stream of Kedron. Gardens of pomegranates, oranges, and olives, covered with a thicker shade the confined valley of Gethsemane, which is hollowed, like a nest of sorrow, in the narrowest and darkest depth of Jehoshaphat. The man of opprobrium, the man of grief, might hide himself there among the roots of trees, and the rocks of the torrent, under the triple shadow of the city, the mountain, and the night. He might hear from there the stealthy steps of his mother and his disciples, who were in search of their son and their master; the confused noises, the brutish acclamations of the city, which arose above his head, in stupid joy at having vanquished truth and chased away justice; and the murmuring of Kedron which flowed beneath his feet, and which was soon to see its city overthrown, and its springs destroyed, by the ruin of a wicked and blind nation. Could the Saviour have chosen a more fitting place for his tears? Could he have moistened with his bloody sweat a land more ploughed with miseries, more soaked with sadness, more drowned with lamentations?

I remounted my horse, and in a quarter of an hour I climbed up the Mount of Olives, turning my head every instant to see something more of the valley and the city; every step that my horse made on the path leading up the mount, disclosed to me a quarter, an edifice more of Jerusalem. I reached the summit, crowned by a mosque in ruins, covering the place where Christ ascended into heaven after the resurrection. I descended a little on the right of this mosque to arrive at two broken columns, lying on the ground at the feet of some olive trees, upon a level, which looks, at the same time, on Jerusalem, Sion, and the valleys of Saint-Saba, which lead to the Dead Sea. The Dead Sea itself was glittering between the peaks of the mountains and the vast horizon, furrowed with numerous ridges terminating at the mountains of Arabia. Here I seated myself: behold the scene before me!

The Mount of Olives, on the summit of which I am sitting, descends in a sudden and steep declivity to the deep abyss which divides it from Jerusalem, and which is called the valley of Jehoshaphat. From the bottom of this gloomy and narrow vale, whose naked sides are streaked with white and black stones, the dismal stones of death, arises an immense and broad hill, whose precipitous inclination resembles that of a high tottering rampart; no tree can fix its roots, not even moss can hang its filaments; the declivity is so steep, that the soil and the stones are perpetually sinking down, and nothing is presented to the eye but a surface of dry and withered earth, like heaps of ashes. About the middle of this hill, or natural rampart, high and strong walls of broad stones, unchiselled on their exterior, are planted, their Roman and Hebraic foundations concealed under the ashes which are collected round their bases, and elevated fifty, a hundred, and

farther on, two and three hundred feet high. The walls are pierced by three gates, two of which are built up; and one of them, open before us, seems as void and deserted as if it gave entrance to an uninhabited town. The walls rise also above these gates, and support a wide and extensive terrace, which stretches two-thirds of the length of Jerusalem, on the side which looks to the east; this terrace, computed by the eye, may be 1000 feet long, and 600 to 700 wide; it is almost perfectly level, except at its centre, where it sinks insensibly, as if to recall to the eye the shallow valley which formerly separated the hill of Sion from the city of Jerusalem. This magnificent platform, doubtless prepared by nature, but evidently finished by the hand of man, was the sublime pedestal on which arose the Temple of Solomon; it bears, at the present day, two Turkish mosques; the one, El-Sakara, in the centre of the platform, on the very site where the temple must have stood; the other, at the south-east extremity of the terrace, touching the walls of the town. The mosque of Omar, or El-Sakara, an admirable edifice of Arabian architecture, is of immense dimensions, with eight sides, and built of stone and marble. Each front is ornamented with seven arcades terminated in ogive; above this first range a terraced roof stretches, whence springs another tier of narrower arcades, crowned by a graceful dome covered with copper, formerly gilded with gold. The walls of the mosque are decorated with a blue enamel; to the right and to the left extend broad partition walls, terminated by light Moorish colonnades, corresponding to the eight doors of the mosque. Beyond these detached colonnades, the platform continues and terminates, on one of its sides, at the north part of the town, on the other, at the walls on the south. Lofty cypress trees, scattered as if by chance, olives and green plants growing here and there between the mosques, heighten the effect of their elegant architecture, and the dazzling colour of their walls, by their pyramidal form and sombre verdure.

Above the two mosques and the site of the temple, all Jerusalem stretches out and spouts up, if I may say so, before us, without the eye losing a roof or a stone, like the plan of a town in relief which an artist exhibits on a table. The city, not as it has been represented to us, a shapeless and confused heap of ruins and ashes, on which a few Arab huts are erected, or Bedouin tents planted—not like Athens, a chaos of dust and crumbled walls, in which the traveller vainly seeks the outline of edifices, the track of streets, the image of a town—but a city brilliant in aspect and colouring!—offering nobly to the eye its unbroken and embattled walls, its blue mosque with white colonnades, its thousands of resplendent domes, on which the rays of an autumnal sun fall and are reflected in dazzling vapour; the façades of houses, tinted by the suns of summer with the yellow and golden hue of the edifices of Pæstum or of Rome, its old towers, the guardians of its walls, in which not a stone, not a loop-hole, not a battlement, is deficient; and from the midst of this ocean of houses, and multitude of little domes surmounting them, a black and elliptic dome larger than the others, towered over by another white dome—it is the Holy Sepulchre and Calvary. They are confounded, and, as it were, drowned, in the immense labyrinth of domes, edifices, and streets which surround them, and it is thus difficult to account for the site of Calvary and that of the sepulchre, which, according to the ideas given us by the Gospel, should be found upon a detached hill, beyond the walls, and not in the centre of Jerusalem! The city, contracted on the side of Sion, has been doubtlessly enlarged towards the north, to embrace within its compass the two spots which cause its shame and glory, the place of punishment of the Just, and that of the resurrection of the God in Man!

Such is the town from the height of the Mount of Olives! It has no horizon behind it, neither to the west, nor to the north. The outlines of its walls and towers, the points of its numerous minarets, the arches of its shining domes, stand out naked and bluntly on the blue sky of the east, and the city, thus borne and presented

on its wide and elevated site, appears still to glitter in all the ancient splendour of its prophecies, or to wait but a word to start in full lustre from its seventeen successive ruins, and to become that *New Jerusalem*, which rises from the wilderness brilliant with brightness!*

It is the most wondrous vision that the eye can have of a town which is no more; for it seems yet to be, and to shine as a town full of youth and life; but if we regard it with greater attention, we feel that it is in fact but a beautiful image of the city of David and of Solomon. No noise is heard from its squares and streets; no longer are there roads which lead to its gates from the east and the west, from the north and the south; there are only a few paths winding at hazard amongst the rocks, in which we meet some half-clad Arabs mounted on their asses, and some Damascus camel-drivers, or some women from Bethlehem or Jericho bearing on their heads a pannier of Engaddi grapes, or a basket of pigeons, which they go to sell, at morning, under the turpentine-trees, beyond the gates of the city. We were seated all day in front of the principal gates of Jerusalem; we made the circuit of the walls in passing before all its other gates. No one entered, no one came out; the beggar even was not seated in the gateway; the sentinel did not show himself on his post—we saw nothing, we heard nothing: the same blank, the same silence at the portals of a city, with thirty thousand souls, during twelve hours of the day, as if we had passed before the dead walls of Pompeii or Herculænum! We saw but four funeral parties issue in silence from the Damascus gate, and wind along the walls towards the Turkish cemeteries; and from the gate of Sion, as we passed it, only a poor Christian, dead that morning of the plague, whom four grave-diggers were carrying to the burying-place of the Greeks. They went close past us, cast the body of the infected on the ground wrapped in his clothes, and set themselves in silence to dig his last bed under the feet of our horses. The ground all around the town had been recently disturbed for similar burials, which the plague was every day multiplying; and the only noise heard beyond the walls of Jerusalem, was the monotonous wailing of the Turkish women who were lamenting their dead. I know not if the plague was the sole cause of the desertion of the roads, and of the profound silence around Jerusalem and within it. I do not believe it was, because the Arabs and Turks do not attempt to escape the inflictions of the Almighty, convinced that they can reach them everywhere, and that no route avoids them. A sublime conviction on their part, but one which leads to disastrous consequences!

To the left of the platform of the temple, and the walls of Jerusalem, the hill which sustains the town sinks all at once, widens, and extends in gentle slopes, supported at intervals by terraces of loose stones. On its summit, some hundreds of paces from Jerusalem, are a mosque and a group of Turkish edifices, nearly similar to a European village overtopped by its church

* [It is very necessary to recollect, that the Jerusalem of the present day does not perhaps possess a single dwelling, or piece of wall, which belonged to the ancient city, so much as it been altered and destroyed. After its last great destruction under the Roman emperor Adrian, in the year 118, it was rebuilt in a new style; and about the year 300, when Constantine was converted to Christianity, the city was greatly extended by that monarch, and his mother Helena. By this last-mentioned pious woman a number of Christian churches were erected, and at this time the spots celebrated in the Gospel history began to be consecrated and dignified with chapels and shrines, so that the original appearance of many of them was lost. The Saracens and Turks afterwards effaced many of the works of Helena, but latterly, by the plantation of monasteries in Palestine, and the flocking thither of pilgrims, almost all the spots consecrated by the sufferings of Christ have been re-adorned, and are now under the roofs of religious structures. This alteration of the original aspect of these scriptural scenes has been condemned by every traveller who has written on the subject. The present settled population of Jerusalem, Turks, Jews, and Christians, is reckoned at about 15,000.]

and its steeple. If is Sion! It is the palace! It is the tomb of David! It is the place of his inspirations and of his enjoyments, of his life and of his repose! A place doubly sacred to me, whose heart this divine songster has so often touched, and whose imagination he has so often charmed. He is the first of sentimental poets!—the king of lyrics! Never has the human chord resounded with harmony so stirring, so penetrating, and so solemn! Never has the poetic thought been raised so high, or sung so justly! Never has the soul of man expanded before men and before God in expressions and sentiments so tender, so sympathetic, and so bewildering! All the most secret agonies of the human heart have found voice and utterance on the lips and on the harp of this man! And if we go back to the remote period in which such psalms were sung on earth, if we reflect that the lyric poetry of the most civilised nations then celebrated only the praises of wine, love, blood, and the victories of the muses, and the coursers in the games of Elis, we are impressed with a profound astonishment at the mystic accents of the kingly prophet, who speaks to the Lord-Creator as friend to friend, who understands and lauds his wondrous deeds, who applauds his justice, who implores his mercy, and seems an anticipating echo of the evangelical poetry, repeating the gentle words of the Saviour before hearing them. Prophet or not, according as he may be considered by the philosopher or the Christian, none can refuse to the poet-king an inspiration which was given to no other mortal! Read Horace or Pindar after a psalm! For myself, I cannot!

I, a humble poet in a time of decay and silence, I would, if I had lived at Jerusalem, have chosen the spot for my residence, and the tomb for my repose, precisely where David has chosen his at Sion. It has the most beautiful prospect of Judea, of Palestine, and of Galilee. Jerusalem is on the left, with the temple and its buildings, on which the eyes of the king or the poet could fall without being seen from them. Before him the fertile gardens, stretching down the expiring slopes, might conduct him to the bed of the torrent, whose foam and murmur were dear to him. Beyond, the valley opens and widens: fig-trees, pomegranates, and olives, overshadow it. It was upon some of these rocks, suspended over the flowing water, in some of these re-echoing grottoes, cooled by the water-air, at the foot of some of those turpentine-trees, the ancestors of that which shades myself, that the sacred poet doubtless came to catch the whisper which inspired him so melodiously! May I not find it also to express the sadness of my heart, and of that of the human race in this unsettled age, as he sang his hopes in an age of youthfulness and faith? But there is no longer poetry in the heart of man, for despair is not tuneless. Unless a new inspiration shall descend upon our gloomy times, the lyres will remain mute, and man will pass in silence between two gulfs of doubt, without having loved, or prayed, or sung!

But I return to the palace of David. The view plunges on the ravine, at that time verdant and irrigated, of Jehoshaphat; a wide opening in the hills to the east leads from slope to slope, from ridge to ridge, to the basin of the Dead Sea, which reflects the evening rays, in its heavy and dull waters, like a thick Venetian glass, which imparts a leaden tint to the light which falls upon it. It is not what the imagination has figured to itself, a petrified lake in a mournful and monotonous landscape. It is from here one of the most beautiful of the Swiss or Italian lakes, its tranquil waters reflecting under the shadow of the high mountains of Arabia, which stretch, like other Alps, out of sight behind it, between the elevated, pyramidal, indented, and glittering peaks of the concluding mountains of Judea. Such is the prospect from Sion!

There was another scene in the landscape of Jerusalem that I would have engraved in my memory, but I have neither pencil nor inspiration. It is the valley of Jehoshaphat—a valley celebrated in the traditions of Jews, Christians, and Moslems, agree in placing the terrible scene of

the last judgment—a valley which has already witnessed on its banks the greatest scene in the evangelical drama—the tears, the agonies, and the death of the Saviour!—a valley, through which the prophets have passed, in their turns, uttering a cry of woe and terror, which seems still to echo!—a valley, which is destined to hear the stupendous noise of the torrent of souls rolling before God, and coming of themselves to their fatal judgment!*

Same day.—We returned to the Convent of Saint John in the wilderness, without having violated any stipulation in the compact concluded with the monks. We were received with a confidence and reliance which affected us; for if we had not been men of honour, if one of our Arabs only had escaped our watchfulness, and had communication with those who bore the infected all around us, we should have brought death perhaps to the whole community.

October 29.—At five o'clock in the morning, we departed from the wilderness of Saint John, with all our horses, escort, Arabs of Abougosh, and four horsemen, sent by the governor of Jerusalem. We pitch our camp at two gunshots from the walls, on the side of the Turkish burial-ground, all covered with little tents, in which the women come to lament. These tents are full of women, children, and slaves, bearing baskets of flowers, which they plant for the day around the tombs. Our horsemen, from Naplous, alone enter the city, to inform the governor of our arrival. Whilst they carry our message, we remove our shoes, boots, and cloth gaiters, which are susceptible of catching infection, and we cover our feet with morocco Turkish shoes; we rub ourselves with oil and garlic, a preservative which I have thought of, from the well-known fact at Constantinople, that the dealers and carriers of oil are less subject to the plague. In half an hour we perceive, issuing from the Bethlehem gate, the *kiaya* of the governor, the interpreter of the convent of Latin monks, five or six horsemen, clad in brilliant costumes, and carrying gold or silver-headed canes, our own Naplous troopers, and some young pages on horseback. We go forward to meet them; they form a circle round us; and we enter the Bethlehem gate. Three plague-corpses issued from it at the same moment, and their bearers dispute with us for an instant the passage, under the sombre arch of the gate. Immediately after clearing it, we find ourselves in a suburb, composed of small and wretched houses, and of some uncultivated gardens, the walls of which have fallen down. We follow, for a moment, the broadest road in this suburb; it leads us to one or two petty streets equally gloomy, narrow, and filthy; we perceive in these streets only the carriers of the dead, who pass with hasty steps, or range themselves against the walls, at the command, and under the raised sticks, of the governor's janissaries. Here and there are some dealers in bread and fruits, covered with rags, seated on the door-way of small shops, with their baskets on their knees, and crying their merchandise, after the manner of market people in our great towns. From time to time a woman

* [The Valley of Jehoshaphat, though only a narrow rocky glen, is one of the most interesting localities in the immediate neighbourhood of Jerusalem. It lies on the east of the city, and through it flows the small rivulet or brook Kedron, a tributary of the Dead Sea, which lies some miles distant in an easterly direction. "Stopping for a moment among the tombs in the Turkish burying-ground, we descended towards the bridge across the brook Kedron, and the mysterious Valley of Jehoshaphat. Here I was, indeed, among the hallowed places of the Bible. Here all was as nature had left it, and spared by the desecrating hand of man; and as I gazed upon the vast sepulchral monuments, the tombs of Abraham, Zechariah, and Jehoshaphat, and the thousands and tens of thousands of Hebrew tombstones covering the declivity of the mountain, I had no doubt I was looking upon that great gathering-place where, three thousand years ago, the Lord buried his dead under the shadow of the Temple of Solomon; and where, even at this day, in every country where his race is known, it is the dearest wish of his heart that his bones may be laid to rest among those of his long-buried ancestors."—*Stephens's Incidents of Travel.*]

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

veiled appears at the wooden bars of a window, or a boy opens a low and dark door, and goes to purchase for the family the day's provision. The streets are every where obstructed with rubbish, heaps of filth, and, above all, with loads of blue cloth, or stuff shreds, which the wind sweeps about like dead leaves, and with which we are unable to avoid contact. It is from the filth and rags with which the streets of eastern towns are covered, that the plague is chiefly communicated. Hitherto we had seen nothing in the streets of Jerusalem which proclaimed the residence of a nation—no symptom of wealth, activity, or life—the exterior aspect had deceived us, as we had been so frequently before deceived in other towns of Greece and Syria. The most miserable hamlet on the Alps or Pyrenees, the most obscure alleys of our suburbs, abandoned to the lowest classes of the population, have more cleanliness, luxury, and elegance, than the deserted streets of the queen of cities. We only met a few Bedouins, mounted on Arab mares, whose feet slid or plunged into the holes with which the pavement is well supplied. These men have not the noble and chivalric air of the Arab sheiks of Syria and Lebanon; they have, on the contrary, the ferocious countenance, the vulture-eye, and the costume of brigands.

We were stopped in our progress, through streets similar to each other in all particulars, from time to time, by the interpreter of the Latin convent, who, showing us a Turkish house in ruins, an old gate of worm-eaten wood, or the remains of a Moorish window, said to us, "There is the house of Veronica—there the gate of the Wandering Jew—there the widow of the Praetor?" words which only excited in us a painful impression, belied as they were by the evidently modern appearance, and by the palpable improbability of such arbitrary demonstrations—pious frauds, of which no one is guilty, because they date from a remote period, and they have been repeated perhaps for ages to the pilgrims, whose ignorant credulity had first originated them. We were shown, at last, the roof of the Latin convent, but we could not enter. The monks keep quarantine; the monastery is closed in times of plague. A small house, which depends on it, alone remains open for strangers, under the direction of the monk, who is priest, or vector, of Jerusalem; it possesses but one or two rooms, which are occupied; and we pass on. We are led into a small square court, surrounded on all sides by high arcades surmounted by terraces—it is the court of a convent. The monks come out upon the terraces, and converse a few moments with us in Spanish and Italian. None of them speak French; those whom we see are almost all aged men, with a mild, venerable, and contented aspect. They come us with gaiety and cordiality, and appear greatly to regret that the prevalent edamity interdicts all communication with guests, exposed as we are to take and impart the plague. We give them news from Europe, and they offer us all the comforts that the country affords. A butcher kills sheep for us in the court. They lower us fresh bread by a cord from the terrace. We receive from them, by the same means, a store of crosses, chaplets, and other pious curiosities, of which they always keep abundant supplies. We hand them, in exchange, some alms, and letters with which their friends in Cyprus and Syria had charged us for them. Every object that passes from us to them is first subjected to a rigorous fumigation, then plunged into a pitcher of cold water, and at last hoisted to the top of the terrace in a brass basin, suspended by a string. These poor monks appear more terrified than we at the danger which surrounds them. They have so often had experience that a slight neglect in the observation of the sanitary rules carries off in a few hours a retiree convent, that they adhere to them with scrupulous fidelity. They are unable to comprehend how we should throw ourselves voluntarily, and with gay hearts, into this ocean of contagion, a single spray from which turns them pale. The priest of Jerusalem, on the contrary, forced by his duty to partake the risks of his parishioners, wishes to persuade us that there is no plague.

After half an hour's conversation with these monks, the bell calls them to mass. We return them our thanks; they give us their good wishes for a safe journey. We send to our camp the stores and provisions we have obtained, and leave the court of the convent.

After traversing some other streets similar to those which I have just described, we come upon a small square, looking to the north upon a corner of the Hill of Olives. On our left, some steps of descent lead us to a courtyard, on which stands the front of the church of the Holy Sepulchre. The church of the Holy Sepulchre has been so often and so well described, that I will not describe it afresh. It is, especially on the exterior, a vast and splendid monument of the Byzantine era; its architecture is solemn, imposing, and rich, for the period in which it was constructed; it is a worthy memento raised by the piety of men over the tomb of the Son of Man. Comparing this church with any of the same epoch, we find it superior in every respect. Saint Sophia, much more colossal, is also much more barbaric in its form; it is but a mountain of stones, flanked by hills of stones. Saint Sepulchre, on the contrary, is an airy and chiselled euphonia in which the artistic and graceful workmanship of the doors, windows, capitals, and cornices, gives to the mass the inestimable value of skilful labour, a value which the stone has been carved to rendered worthy of making part of a monument, elevated to the grandest of human ideas; in which the very belief that has reared it, is written in the details as well as in the entirety of the edifice. It is true, that the church of the Holy Sepulchre is not such, at the present day, as Saint Helena, mother of Constantine, constructed it; the kings of Jerusalem retouched and embellished it with the ornaments of that architecture, half western, half Moorish, the taste and models for which they had picked up in the East. But such as it now is, on its exterior, with its Byzantine body, and Greek, Gothic, and Arabic decorations, with its very rents, the marks of time and barbarism, remaining on its façade, it presents no repugnant contrast to the thoughts we bear to it, or to the thoughts which it expresses; we do not experience, on beholding it, that distressing impression of a grand conception ill executed, of a sublime recollection profaned by the hands of men; on the contrary, we exclaim involuntarily, "This is what I expected! Man has done all he could. The monument is not worthy of the tomb, but it is worthy of the mortal race, anxious to do honour to the great sepulchre." We enter the arched and sombre vestibule of the nave with this solemn feeling.

On entering the vestibule, which opens directly on the court, we perceive, to the left, in the hollow of a wide deep niche, the divan which the Turks have there established; they are the guardians of the Holy Sepulchre, and they alone have the right of opening and shutting it. When I passed, five or six venerable Turks, with long white beards, were sitting cross-legged on this divan, covered with rich Aleppo carpets; coffee-cups and pipes were beside them on the carpets; they saluted us with dignity and grace, and gave orders to one of the watchers to accompany us into all parts of the church. I saw nothing in their countenances, their words, or their gestures, of that irreverence with which they are accused. They do not enter the church, they remain at the door; they speak to the Christians with the gravity and respect which the place and the object of the visit require. Possessors, by right of conquest, of the sacred monument of the Christians, they do not destroy it, they cast not its ashes to the winds; they preserve it; they maintain order, regularity, and a silent reverence in it, which the Christian communions, who dispute amongst themselves, are very far from guarding. They watch, in order that the relic, common to all that bears the name of Christian, may be preserved for all, in order that each communion may enjoy, in its turn, the opportunity of worship at the Holy Tomb. Without the Turks, this tomb, which is claimed by the Greeks, the Catholics, and the innumerable ramifications of the Christian idea, would have been a hundred times an object of contest amongst these rival and bitter creeds,

would have passed in exclusive possession from the one to the other, and would, without question, have been interdicted to the enemies of the triumphant communion. I see nothing in this to accuse and malign the Turks. The pretended brutal intolerance of which the ignorant accuse them, is only manifested in forbearance and respect for what other men venerate and adore. Wherever the Mussulman perceives the idea of God in the mind of his fellow-creature, he bows and respects. He believes that the idea sanctifies the form. They are the only tolerant people. Let Christians interrogate and ask themselves, in good faith, what they would have done if the destinies of war had delivered to them Mecca and the Kaaba? Would they have allowed the Turks to come from all parts of Asia and Europe to venerate in peace the monuments preserved of Islamism?

At the bottom of the vestibule we found ourselves under the large cupola of the church. The centre of this cupola, which the local traditions assert is the centre of the world, is occupied by a small monument, as one precious stone is encased in another. This interior monument is an oblong square, adorned with pillars, a cornice, and cupola, of marble, the whole in bad taste, and of a laboured fantastic design. It was reconstructed in 1817, by a European architect, at the expense of the Greek Church, which now possesses it. All around this interior erection, the great external cupola extends without obstruction. We make the circuit freely, and find between the pillars large and deep chapels, which are each consecrated to one of the mysteries of Christ's passion. They all contain some real or supposititious evidences of the scenes of the Redemption. The part of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, which is not under the cupola, is exclusively reserved to the sect of Greeks; a separation of painted wood, covered with the pictures of the Greek worship, divides one nave from the other.* Notwithstanding the absurd profusion of bad paintings, and of all sorts of ornaments with which the walls and the altar are surcharged, the whole has a solemn and religious effect; we feel that adoration in various forms has possessed this sanctuary, and accumulated all that superstitious but fervent generations have believed most precious before God. A staircase cut in the rock leads to the top of Calvary, where the three crosses were planted. Thus Calvary, the Sepulchre, and several other sites of the action of the Redemption, are found gathered under the roof of a single edifice of moderate extent. This appears little conformable to the recitals of the Evangelists, and we are very far from expecting to find the tomb of Joseph of Arimathea cut in the rock beyond the walls of Sion, fifty paces from Calvary, the place of executions, and contained within the enclosure of modern walls; but such are the traditions, and they have prevailed.† The mind does not contest, on such a scene, a few paces of difference between historical probabilities and traditions, nor whether it were here or there, since it is certainly not far from the positions pointed out.

* [On the 12th of March 1808, a great portion of the edifice was destroyed by fire, which consumed the Armenian chapel, the cells of the Franciscans, the chapel of the Virgin, and the great dome. It likewise destroyed many of the fine marble columns and mosaic works of its founder, St Helena. The sepulchre itself was not injured. The present building was commenced immediately afterwards, and finished in September 1810. It happened that, at the time of the conflagration, the funds of the Terra Santa [Roman Catholic missionaries] were very low, and that at this epoch the attention of the Church of Rome was otherwise engaged, and the devotional fervour of Christians in Europe (according to the report of the monks) somewhat relaxed. The consequence was, that the Greeks, backed by their co-religionists, the Russians, having offered to defray the expenses of reconstruction, were put in possession of what was esteemed the most valuable portions of the edifice.—*Robinson's Travels in Palestine and Syria.*]

† [The first founders of the church, in order to reduce the rocky inequalities of Calvary to a plain area, were obliged to cut away several parts of the rock, and to elevate others, taking care that none of those parts of the hill which were reckoned to be more immediately concerned in our Lord's passion, should be altered or diminished.—*The same authority.*]

After a moment of profound and silent meditation in each of these sacred places, induced by the recollection which it individually recalled, we descended again to the enclosure of the church, and we entered the interior monument, which serves as a stone curtain or covering to the sepulchre itself. It is divided into two small sanctuaries. In the first is shown the stone on which the angels were seated when they answered the holy women: "He is not there; he has risen." The second and last sanctuary contains the sepulchre, yet covered with a sort of sarcophagus of white marble, which surrounds and entirely conceals from the eye the substance of the primitive rock, out of which the tomb was hollowed. Gold and silver lamps, kept perpetually burning, light this chapel, and frankincense is burned night and day. The air is warm and scented. We entered it one by one, separately, without permitting any of the servants of the temple to follow us. We were separated by a curtain of crimson silk from the first sanctuary. We were unwilling that observation should interrupt the solemnity of the place, or the intensity of the impressions which it might inspire in each, according to his tone of mind and according to the measure and nature of his belief in the great event which this tomb recalls; each of us remained in it a quarter of an hour, and no one came out with dry eyes.

Whatsoever was the form which internal meditation, the perusal of history, the effects of time, the changes in the human heart and mind, might have given to the religious sentiment within him; whether he had preserved the very letter of Christianity, the teaching of his mother; whether he possessed but a philosophic Christianity, according to its spirit; whether Christ were to him a crucified God; whether he saw in Him only the most holy of men apotheosised for his virtue, inspired by supreme truth, and dying to testify to His father; whether Jesus were in his eyes the Son of God, or the Son of Man; divinity made man, or humanity made divine—Christianity is still always the religion of his remembrances, his heart, and his imagination; and let it be ever so evaporated in the whirlwind of the age and of life, so that the mind which has once imbibed it preserves but the first impression, the visible appearance of the places and monuments of his original creed must renew in him all such feelings, and make him shudder with solemn awe. For the Christian or the philosopher, for the moralist or the historian, this sepulchre is the boundary which separates two worlds, the ancient and the modern; it is the departing point of an idea which has revived the world, of a civilisation which has changed all things, of a word which has echoed throughout the globe. This sepulchre is the tomb of the old world, and the cradle of the new. Upon no rock here below has so vast a superstructure been founded; no tomb has been so fruitful; no doctrine buried three days, or three ages, has shivered in so triumphant a manner the stone that man had rolled upon it, and given the lie to death by so astounding and eternal a resurrection!

I entered in my turn, and the last, into the Holy Sepulchre, my mind besieged by these overwhelming ideas, my heart moved by such inward emotions as remain mysteries between man and his soul, between the reflecting insect and the Creator. These emotions cannot be written down; they exhaled amidst the smoke of the consecrated lamps, amidst the perfume of the censers, amidst the vague murmur of sighs; they fell with the tears which start to the eyes at the recollection of the first names we have lisped in our infancy, of the father and the mother who taught us them, of the brothers, the sisters, and the friends, with whom we hummed them. All the pious thoughts which have stirred the soul in all the epochs of life, all the prayers which have sprung from the heart and the lips, in the name of him who teaches us to pray to his father and ours; all the joys and afflictions of which these prayers were the expression, re-awaken in the receptacles of the heart, and produce, by their vibration and tumultuousness, that overpowering of the intellect, and that melting of the heart, which find no words, but are resolved into moistened eyes, a heaving chest, a forehead lowly

bent, and a mouth which silently presses the sepulchral stone. I remained thus a long time, praying to Heaven, to the Father, in the very place where the most divine of prayers first mounted to Heaven; praying for my father here below, for my mother in another world, for all those who are, or who are not, with whom the invisible link has never been broken. The communion of love never dies; the names of all the beings whom I have known, loved, by whom I have been loved, passed from my lips in the prayer at the Holy Sepulchre. Last of all, I prayed for myself; my prayer was ardent and vigorous. I asked for truth and courage, before the tomb of him who brought the greatest truth into the world, and died with the most perfect devotedness to that truth of which God had constituted him the Word; I will for ever remember the words which I murmured in that critical moment of my moral life. Perhaps I was favourably heard: a powerful ray of reason and conviction fell upon my mind, and separated more distinctly the light from the darkness, error from truth. There are moments of life when the thoughts of men, long vague and doubtful, unsettled as the waves, at length reach a point at which they are stayed, and returned upon themselves in new conformations, and in a direction contrary to that which has impelled them there. This was for me one of those moments: he who dives into hearts and thoughts knows it, and I myself will comprehend it one day. It was a mystery in my life which will be revealed hereafter.

Same date.—On leaving the church of the Holy Sepulchre, we follow the Mournful Way, of which M. de Chateaubriand has given so poetical an itinerary. Nothing imposing, nothing proved, nothing probable; ruins of modern construction pointed out by the monks to pilgrims, as the undoubted vestiges of the different stations of Christ. The eye cannot entertain even a doubt, and all confidence in these local traditions is preliminarily destroyed by the history of the first years of Christianity, in which Jerusalem did not preserve one stone upon another, and in which the Christians were afterwards banished from the city for many years. Jerusalem, with the exception of its pools and the tombs of the kings, does not contain a single monument of any of those great events; some sites are, of course, ascertainable, such as the position of the temple, marked by its terraces, and bearing, at present, the immense and beautiful mosque of Omar-el-Sakara, the Mount of Sion occupied by the Armenian convent, and the Tomb of David. But it is only with history in the hand, and with a critical eye, that the greater part of the sites can be ascertained with sure precision. Except the terraced walls, over the valley of Jehoshaphat, not a stone gives evidence of its era by its form or colour; the whole is reduced to powder, or modern. The mind wanders in uncertainty over the city, without knowing where to settle; but the city taken altogether, marked by the circumscribed hill which bears it, by the different valleys which encircle it, and especially by the deep vale of the Kedron, is a monument as to which the eye cannot be deceived. It is surely there that Sion was placed: a strange and unfortunate situation for the capital of a great people!—it is rather the fortress of a small tribe, chased from the earth, and taking refuge with its God and its temple upon a soil which none was interested to dispute with it, upon rocks which no roads could render accessible, in waterless valleys, in a rude and unfruitful climate, having for horizon nothing but mountains calmed by the internal fire of volcanoes, the mountains of Arabia and Jericho, and a tainted sea, without shore and without navigation, the Dead Sea. Such Judea, such the home of that people whose destiny has been to be proscribed at every epoch of their history, and from whom the nations have wrested even this capital of their proscriptions, perched like an eagle's nest on the top of this group of mountains; and yet this people carried with them the grand idea of the unity of God, and the truth of this elementary conception sufficed to separate them from other nations, and to render them proud of their persecutions, and resolute in their saving doctrines.

Same date.—After having gone through the different quarters of the city, all equally dismantled with those by which we had entered, we descended in the direction of the famous mosque which holds the place of Solomon's Temple. The governor of Jerusalem has his seraglio in a building adjoining the gardens and walls of the mosque. We went to make him our visit of thanks. The court of the seraglio was surrounded by grated dungeons, in which we perceived some robbers of Jericho and Samaria, who were awaiting their deliverance, or the sword of the Pacha. Troopers, seated at the feet of their horses, scheiks of the desert, and Arabs from Naplous, were grouped, here and there, upon the steps, or under the corridors, waiting the hour of audience. The governor having learnt our arrival, sent to us his son, with a request to enter. This young man, about thirty years of age, was the most handsome of the Arabs, and perhaps of men, whom I have seen in the course of my life. Vigour, gracefulness, intelligence, and mildness, were mingled with such harmony in his features, and were expressed in his blue eye with such attractive evidence, that we stood quite amazed at his appearance. He was of Samaria. The governor of Jerusalem, his father, is the most powerful of the Naplous Arabs. Persecuted by Abdallah, Pacha of Acre, and often at war with him, during the dominion of the Turks he had been forced to fly with his family to the mountains beyond the Dead Sea: the victory of Ibrahim Pacha over Abdallah had restored him to his country. He had recovered his riches and influence, he had chased his enemies from the land; and the Pacha of Egypt, to supply the deficiency of Egyptian troops in Judea, had intrusted to him the government of Jerusalem and Samaria. He had no other troops but some hundreds of horsemen, of his own tribe, by whose aid he maintained tranquillity, and the sway of Ibrahim, over all the surrounding population.

We entered the divan, a large saloon without any ornament but a few carpets upon mats, with pipes and coffee cups on the ground. The governor, surrounded by a great number of slaves, by armed Arabs, and by some secretaries on their knees, writing on their hands, was engaged in administering justice, and dispatching orders. He arose at our approach, and came towards us. He caused the carpets of the divan to be removed, as they are susceptible of imparting infection, and Egyptian mats, which do not communicate it, were substituted. We seated ourselves, and pipes and coffee were presented to us. My dragoman made the governor the usual compliments; and I thanked him myself, for all the pains he was good enough to take in order that strangers like ourselves might visit, without danger, the places consecrated by their religion. He answered me, with a smile, that he only performed his duty; that the friends of Ibrahim were his friends; that he was answerable for every hair in their heads; that he was ready not only to do for me what he had already done, but also to march himself, if I wished it, with his troops, and accompany me wherever my curiosity or my religion inspired me with the desire of going, within the limits of his government; that such was the order of the pacha. He afterwards inquired from us news of the war, and as to the interest that the powers of Europe took in the fortune of Ibrahim. I answered him, in a manner to satisfy his secret inclinations—"that Europe admired in Ibrahim Pacha a conquering civiliser; that on this account it took an interest in his victories; that it was time that the East should participate in the benefits of a better administration; that the Pacha of Egypt was the armed missionary of European civilisation in Arabia; that his bravery, and the tactics he had learnt from us, insured him a certain victory over the Grand Vizier, who was advancing against him into Carmania; that, according to all appearance, he would gain a great victory, and march upon Constantinople; that he would not enter it, because the Europeans would not yet permit him, but that he would make peace with their mediation, and retain Arabia and Syria in permanent sovereignty." This prophecy touched the heart of the old rebel of Naplous; his looks

drank up my words; and his son and friends stretched their heads over mine, so as not to lose a syllable of the conversation, which was to them an augury of a long and peaceable possession of rule over Samaria. When I saw the governor in so happy a humour, I signified to him my desire, not to enter the Mosque of Omar, as I knew that such a proceeding was opposed to the manners of the country, but to contemplate the exterior.

"If you require it," answered he, "all shall be opened to you, but I should run the risk of deeply enraging the Mahomedans of the city. They are still ignorant; they believe that the presence of a Christian within the circuit of the mosque would cause them to incur great dangers, for a prophecy has declared that every thing that a Christian shall ask of God in the interior of El-Sakara, he will obtain; and they do not doubt that a Christian would pray from God the ruin of the religion of the prophet, and the extermination of the Moslems. For myself, I believe it not; all men are brothers, since they adore, each in his own tongue, the common father; he does not give to some at the expense of others; he makes the sun shine on the worshippers of all prophets; men know nothing, but God knows all; *Allah kerim!*" (God is great!) and he bowed his head, smiling.

"God preserve me," said I to him, "from abusing your hospitality, and exposing you to danger in order to satisfy a traveller's vain curiosity! If I were in the mosque of El-Sakara, I would pray not for the extermination of any people, but for the enlightening and the happiness of all the children of Allah."

At these words he arose; he conducted us through a corridor to a window of his seraglio, which opened upon the exterior courts of the mosque. We could not so well seize the whole of the building from this position as may be done from the top of the Mount of Olives; we saw only the walls of the cupola, some Moorish porticoes of the most elegant architecture, and the tops of the cypresses which grow in the interior gardens. I took leave of the governor, informing him that my project was to pass eight or ten days encamped in the environs of the city, and to depart to-morrow on an excursion to the Dead Sea, to the Jordan, to Jericho, and even to the foot of the mountains of Arabia-Petrea; that I should return several times into the interior of Jerusalem; and that I had nothing to ask from him but a sufficient number of horsemen to guarantee our safety in the different excursions that we proposed to make in Judea. We went out of the city by the Bethlehem gate, near which our tents were fixed, and in the evening we visited all the remarkable or consecrated spots around the city walls.

Same date.—The evening was passed in going over the slopes which extend to the south of Jerusalem, between the tomb of David and the valley of Jehoshaphat. These slopes are the only part outside the city which has any appearance of a trifling vegetation. At sunset I seated myself in front of the Mount of Olives, four or five hundred feet above the fount of Siloam, near where were the gardens of David. Jehoshaphat was at my feet; the high terraces of the temple were a little above me on the left; I saw the beautiful cypresses which raise their pyramidal heads above the porticoes of the mosque El-Aksa, and the dome-like orange trees which overshadow the fountain of the temple called the Orange Fountain. This fountain recalled to my memory one of the most delightful oriental traditions, invented, transmitted, or preserved by the Arabs. It is thus they recount that Solomon chose the site of the temple:—

"Jerusalem was a ploughed field; two brothers possessed that part of the ground where the temple is now erected. One of these brothers was married and had several children, the other lived alone; they cultivated in common the field which they had inherited from their mother. The time of the harvest being come, the two brothers hid their sheaves, and placed them in two equal heaps, each they leave on the field. During the night, the brother who was unmarried said to himself, 'My

brother has a wife and children to succour; it is not just that my portion should be as great as his; I will take from my heap some sheaves, and add them to his; he will not perceive it, and will not thus be able to refuse.' And he did as he had determined. The same night the other brother awoke, and said to his wife, 'My brother is young, and lives alone companionless; he has no person to assist him in his labour, or console him in his fatigue; it is not just that we should take from the common field as many sheaves as he; let us rise and carry secretly to his heap a certain number of sheaves; he will not take notice of them to-morrow, and therefore cannot refuse to take them.' And they did as they had determined. In the morning each of the brothers went to the field, and was much surprised to see that the two heaps were still equal; neither of them could inwardly give account of this prodigy. They did the same thing for several nights in succession; but as each of them bore to his brother's heap the same number of sheaves, the heaps always remained equal, until one night both placed themselves on watch to ascertain the cause of the miracle, and met each other carrying the sheaves destined for the other.

Now, the place where so good a thought had entered the heads of two men at one time, and had been so perseveringly pursued, must be a place agreeable to God, and men blessed it, and chose it to build thereupon the house of God."

What a charming tradition! How it breathes the simple goodness of patriarchal manners! How ancient and natural is the inspiration which falls on men to consecrate to God a place in which virtue has germinated on the earth! I have heard amongst the Arabs hundreds of legends of this nature. The atmosphere of the Bible is breathed in all parts of the East.

The aspect of the valley of Jehoshaphat is conformable to the destination which Christian ideas assign it. It is like a vast sepulchre, too narrow, however, for the multitudes of the human race that are there to be gathered. Surmounted on all sides by mournful monuments; entombed at its southern extremity in the rock of Siloa, all pierced by sepulchral caves like a withered henry-comb; having, for its dismal terminations, the tombs of Jehoshaphat and of Absalom, cut like pyramids in the living rock, and overshadowed, on one side, by the black ridges of the Mount of Olives, on the other, by the walls of the demolished temple; it was a place naturally exciting a holy terror, and destined, at an early date, to become the place of execution for a large city, and in which the imagination of the prophets might place, without effort, the scenes of death, resurrection, and judgment. We figure to ourselves the valley of Jehoshaphat as a vast hollow in the mountains through which the Kedron, a large and black torrent with mournful waters, flows in a dismal murmur; in which wide gorges, open to the four winds, expand to give entrance to the four torrents of the dead, pouring from the east, the west, the north, and the south; with enormous slopes stretching, as in an amphitheatre, to give space to the innumerable children of Adam coming to assist, each for himself, in the final catastrophe of the grand drama of humanity;—nothing of all this! The valley of Jehoshaphat is only a natural moat hollowed between two hills, a few hundred feet high, one of which bears Jerusalem, and the other the peak of the Mount of Olives; the ramparts of Jerusalem crumbling down have filled up the greater part of it; there is no gorge at its termination; the Kedron, which issues from the ground some paces above the valley, is but a torrent formed in winter by the dripping of the rains from some olive fields below the tombs of the kings, and is crossed by a bridge in the middle of the valley opposite one of the gates of Jerusalem; it is a few paces across, and the valley at that spot is not wider than its stream. This waterless brook simply marks out a steep bed of white shells, at the bottom of the ravine. In a word, the valley of Jehoshaphat is perfectly similar to a moat, cut at the foot of the lofty fortifications of a large town, into which the sewer of the town discharges, during winter, its putrefactions, on which a few poor

people of the suburbs dispute for a speck of earth to plant cabbages, and where the goats and asses without owners go to browse, on its steep sides, the grass poisoned by filth and dust. Sprinkle this ground with tombs belonging to all the creeds on earth, and you will have before your eyes the Vale of Judgment.

Same date.—Behold the fountain of Siloam, the only spring in the valley, the source of inspiration to kings and prophets! I do not know how so many travellers have had difficulty in discovering it, and continue to dispute amongst themselves as to the site it occupies. It is there, quite full of limpid and pleasant water, freshening the heated and dusty air of the valley with its watery exhalation, having twenty steps cut in the rock, on whose summit stood the Palace of David. These steps, worn by the tread of women coming from the village of Siloa to fill their pitchers, are slippery as marble. I went down them, and seated myself for a moment on the moist flags; I listened to the gentle dripping of the spring, I washed my hands and face in its waters, and I repeated the verses of Milton, to invoke, in my turn, his inspirations so long ago silenced. It is the only place in the environs of Jerusalem where the traveller can moisten his finger, quench his thirst, and rest his head under the shadow of the cool rock, and of two or three tufts of verdure. Some small gardens, planted with pomegranates and other small trees by the Arabs of Siloa, form around the fountain thickets of pale verdure. It nourishes them with its superfluous waters. The valley of Jehoshaphat finishes there. Beyond, a small plain with a gentle slope draws the eye into the wide and deep gorges of the volcanic mountains of Jericho and Saint-Saba, and the Dead Sea closes the prospect.

Banks of the Jordan beyond the plain of Jericho. some leagues from the falling of the river into the Dead Sea.—Yesterday, the 30th October, we left Jerusalem at seven in the morning, with the whole caravan: to wit six soldiers of Ibrahim Pacha, the nephew of Abongol and four of his horsemen, and eight mounted Arabs of Naplous, sent by the governor of Jerusalem. We made the circuit of the town, descended to the bottom of the vale of Jehoshaphat, mounted again as we went along the Mount of Olives, leaving on our right the Hill of Offences, and traversed, at its southern extremity, the mountainous chain which continues that of the Mount of Olives. We arrived at the village of Bethany, yet peopled by some Arab families, and we distinguished there the remains of a Christian monument. There was a good spring. An Arab drew water for an hour to satisfy the horses, and to fill the jars hung from the saddles of our mules. There was no more water as far as Jericho, ten or twelve hours' march. We left Bethany at four in the afternoon. We had a descent of two hours by a wide road, with artificial slopes, cut in the precipitous sides of mountains succeeding each other without interruption. This is the only trace of a road which I have seen in the East. It was the route to Jericho, and the fertile fields watered by the Jordan. It led to the possessions of the tribes of Israel, who had amongst them the whole course of that river, and the plain of Tiberias, as far as the environs of Tyre, and the foot of Lebanon. It conducted into Arabia, Mesopotamia, and through them into Persia and India, countries with which Solomon had established his great commercial relations. It was he, doubtless, who made this road. It was likewise by this route that the Jewish people passed at first when they descended from Arabia Petraea, passed the Jordan, and came to take possession of their heritage. After departing from Bethany, we met neither houses nor cultivation; the mountains are completely bare of vegetation; rotting but rock, or the dust of rock; a blackish ashy colour prevails, like a winding-sheet for the dead, over the whole of this land. From time to time the mountains are broken, and split into narrow and deep gorges—abysses to which no path conducts, in which the eye can distinguish nothing but the incessant repetition of the same scenes that surround it. Almost all these mountains have a volcanic appearance; the stones, rolled

in their sides or on the road, by the winter rains, resemble blocks of lava hardened and cracked by centuries. Occasionally in the distance, we see on some hill tops, that slight yellowish and sulphureous tint which we perceive on Vesuvius and Ætna. It is impossible to hold out long against the dismal and horrible impression that this landscape produces. It oppresses the heart and afflicts the eyes. When on the summit of one of these mountains, and the horizon opens for an instant to the vision, as far as the eye can reach we see only the black chains, the conical or broken peaks, piled one above the other, and standing out of the raw-blue of heaven; a boundless labyrinth of avenues, of mountains in all forms, torn, broken, split into gigantic portions, connected with each other by chains of hills similar to themselves, with bottomless ravines, where we expect at least to hear the noise of a torrent, but in which all is still and silent, and only rarely is described a tree, a plant, a flower, a little moss; the ruins of a world laid in ashes, the outburst of a land on fire, petrified into waves of gravel and stone.

At the bottom of the ravine we found the walls of a ruined caravanserai, and a spring, protected by a small wall, loaded with sentences from the Koran. The spring trickled drop by drop into the stone basin; our Arabs in vain applied their lips to it. We let our horses rest a moment under shelter of the caravanserai. We had been descending for so long a time, that we believed ourselves on the level of the plain of Jericho, and of the Dead Sea. We gained some repose, exhausted with the heat and fatigue of the journey. Our Arab troopers flattered us with the hope of getting in a few hours to Jericho; but the day was sinking every minute, and twilight added its horrors to the gloom of the ravines in which we toiled. After an hour's march at the bottom of this valley, we found ourselves once more upon the steep declivities of a fresh chain of mountains, which seemed to us the last before coming upon the plain of Jericho. The night entirely hid the prospect from us; we had just light enough to distinguish at our feet the appalling precipices, down which the least false step of our horses would hurl us. Our jars were exhausted; we were parched with thirst; one of our troopers from Samaria told the dragonman that he knew a spring in the neighbourhood; we decided upon halting where we were, if a little water could in reality be obtained. After attempting for about half an hour, the Samaritan returned, and said that he had not been able to find the spring. It was necessary to march on; there yet remained a four hours' journey. We placed the Arabs from Naplous at the head of the caravan. Each horseman was ordered to follow, step by step, him who preceded, without losing track. The most profound silence reigned throughout the company; the night had become so dark, that it was impossible to see even the head of our horses; each followed his companion by the noise of his steps. At every instant the whole caravan was stopped, from the foremost ranks probing the road for fear of being precipitated into the abyss. We all got off horseback to grope our way better; we were twenty times obliged to stop, on account of exclamations issuing from the front or the rear of the caravan; a horse had tumbled, or a man had fallen. We were often on the point of stopping altogether, and waiting, motionless in our places, until this long and dreary night had passed; but the van kept moving, and it was necessary to follow.

After three hours had been spent in this anxious condition, we heard loud cries and musket-shots at the front of the caravan; we imagined that the Arabs of Jericho had attacked us, and we prepared to fire at hazard; but being passed from mouth to mouth, the intelligence came to us, that the Naplousians were shouting for joy, and had fired off their pieces because we had cleared the bad part of the road. We felt, in fact, the route becoming a little more level under our feet, and I jumped on horseback. My young Arab stallion, smelling water not far off, grew restive, and, in the strife, fell with me into a hollow. The night was

so dark, that no one saw my predicament; I kept hold, however, of the bridle, and reseating myself in the saddle, I let the animal follow his instinct, ignorant whether I were on the edge or in the bottom of a ravine, hollowed in the plain. He shot forward in a gallop, neighing, and stopped not until he reached the banks of a wide stream, of little depth, and lined with prickly shrubs. Whilst he was slaking his thirst, I heard, on my left, the shouts and pistol-shots of the Arabs, who had just discovered my disappearance, and were seeking me in the plain. I saw a light glittering through the leaves of the shrubs; I urged my horse towards it, and in a few minutes I found myself at the door of my tent, pitched on the edge of this very rivulet. It was already midnight; we ate a morsel of bread, steeped in water, and slept without knowing where we were, unable to conceive by what prodigy we had emerged so suddenly from the solitude, without shade or spring, on a brook which, by the light of our torches, and the fires of the Arabs, appeared to us like an Alpine stream, with its drooping willows, and its tufts of reeds and cresses.

If Tasso had possessed, as M. de Chateaubriand pretends, a local inspiration whilst composing his "Jerusalem Delivered" (and I confess, that great admirer as I am of Tasso, it is not on this account I should praise him, for it is impossible to have worse conceived the localities, and more mistaken manners than he has done; but what signify localities and manners?—poetry does not lie in them—it is in the heart); but if he had been so inspired, it would have been, beyond doubt, on the banks of this stream he had made Hermione arrive, flying on her courser, abandoned to himself, and let her meet that Arcadian, and not Arab, shepherd, of whom he has given so ravishing a description.

We awoke, like her, to the warbling of a thousand birds fluttering on the branches of the trees, and the roaring of the waters over their bed of flints. We issued from our tents to observe the spot to which the night had brought us. The mountains of Judea, which we had traversed the previous day, were to the east of us, about a league from our camp; their chain, every where sterile and indented, stretched out of sight to the south and north, and at intervals we perceived vast gorges, which opened on the plain, from which were pouring the nocturnal vapours like large billows, and spreading in sheets of mist over the undulating sands of the shores of the lake Asphaltides. To the west, a wide desert of sand separated us from the banks of the Jordan, which we were unable to discern, from the Dead Sea, and from the blue mountains of Arabia Petraea. These mountains, viewed at this hour and distance, seemed to us, from the playing of the shadows on their tops, and in their intervening valleys, to be strewed with cultivation, and covered with immense forests; the chalky ravines which intersected them, gave an idea of the fall and dazzling effect of waters from a cascade. There was nothing of the sort, however; when I approached them, I found that they presented, on a larger scale, the same barren and withered aspect as the mountains of Judea. Around us, all was smiling and fresh, though uncultivated; water gives animation to every thing, even to the desert; and the dwarfish trees, which were scattered, like artificial shrubberies, in small groups upon its banks, recalled to us the sweetest spots of our own country.

We mounted our horses; we could not be more than an hour from Jericho, but we perceived neither walls nor smoke in the plain, and we knew not very well in what direction to proceed, when a troop of Bedouins, mounted on superb horses, came out from between two hills, and advanced curvetting towards us. It was the sheikh, and the principal inhabitants of Jericho, who, informed of our approach by an Arab of the governor of Jerusalem, sought us in the desert, to place themselves in our suite. We were acquainted with the Arabs of the desert of Jericho only by the reputation for ferocity and brigand habits which they enjoy in all Syria; we were not too sure at first whether they came as our enemies; but nothing, during several

days that they remained with us, denoted any evil intention on their part. Overawed by terror at the name of Ibrahim, whose emissaries they conceived us to be, they gave us all that their country afforded—a free desert, water from their fountains, and a little barley and *doura* for our horses. I thanked the sheikh and his friends for the escort which they came to offer us; they joined our troop, and flying here and there on the flanks, amongst the hillocks of sand, appeared and disappeared with the swiftness of the wind. I remarked a horse distinguished for its shape and fleetness, bestrode by the sheikh's brother, and I empowered my dragoman to purchase it for me at whatever cost. But as such offers cannot be made directly, without committing a species of outrage on the delicacy of the owner of the horse, it required several days' negotiation to render me possessor of this beautiful animal, which I designed for my daughter, and which, in fact, I gave to her.

JERICHO.

After an hour's march, we were beyond all doubt at the foot of the ramparts of Jericho. These ramparts were twenty feet high, and fifteen or twenty broad, formed of faggots of thorns piled one above the other, and arranged with admirable care to prevent the passage of man or beast. They were fortifications which might not have fallen at the sound of the trumpet, but which a spark of the shepherd's fire, or the fox of Samson, would have consumed.* This fortress of dried thorns had two or three wide gates always open, which the Arab sentinels doubtless watched during the night. On passing before these gates, we saw on the roofs of some mud huts all the women and children of the city of the wilderness, grouped in attitudes the most picturesque, pressing and leaning upon each other to see us pass. These women, whose shoulders and legs were naked, had for their only garment a piece of blue cotton cloth, bound at the waist by a leather girdle, the arms and legs clasped by several rings of gold and silver, with the hair frizzled and floating on the neck. Some had their hair wove into tresses, and entwined with piastres and sequins in great profusion, falling like a cuirass on their breast and shoulders. There were some remarkably handsome, but they have not that air of softness, of timid modesty and voluptuous languor, of the Arab women of Syria. But they are not women; they are the companions of barbarians; they have in their eyes and attitudes the same fire, the same audaciousness, and the same ferocity, as the Bedouin. Several negroresses were amongst them, and did not appear slaves. The Bedouins espouse indifferently black or white women, and colour makes no difference in rank. These females uttered savage cries and yells of laughter as we passed; the men, on the contrary, seemed to chide their indiscreet curiosity, and exhibited towards us nothing but gravity and respect.

Not far from the thorn walls, we passed near to two or three houses of the sheikhs. They are built of mud, dried in the sun, a few feet high. A terrace covered with mats and carpets is the principal apartment; the family remains there almost the whole day and night. Before the door is a large seat of dried mud, on which a carpet is stretched for the chief. He assumes his station there from sunrise, surrounded by his principal slaves, and visited by his friends. Coffee and pipes are in constant requisition. A large courtyard, filled with horses, camels, goats, and cows, encircles the house. There are always two or three beautiful mares kept saddled and bridled for the excursions of the master.

We staid only a few moments near the mud palace of the sheikh, who offered us water, coffee, pipes, and a calf and several sheep, which he caused to be killed

* [According to the accounts of travellers, Jericho is now a mean hamlet, of no kind of importance. "It consists," says Mr Stephens, "of fifty or sixty miserable Arab houses, the walls of which on three sides are of stones, piled up like the stone fences of our farmers, most of them not so high as a man's head, and the front and top either entirely open, or covered with brush."]

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

for our use. We received presents, likewise, of dried doura, chickens, and water-melons. We took our departure, preceded by the sheik and fifteen or twenty of the chief Arabs of the town; we observed several fields of maize and doura well cultivated in the environs. A few groves of orange and pomegranate trees, and some beautiful palms, also surround the houses scattered about the town, and then all becomes once more wilderness and sand. The desert is an immense plain, with several elevations, which sink successively, as far as the river Jordan, by regular gradations like the steps of a natural staircase. The eye can distinguish only one complete plain; but after marching an hour, we come all at once on one of these terraces, which we descend by a rapid slope, and march another hour, when there is a fresh descent, and thus the whole way. The soil is a white compact sand, covered by a concrete and saline crust, produced doubtless by the fogs from the Dead Sea, which, on their evaporation, deposit this salt crust. There is no stone or earth, except on approaching the river or the mountains; there is, on all sides, a vast horizon; and we distinguished, from an immense distance, an Arab galloping over the plain. As this desert is the theatre of their attacking, pillaging, and massacring the caravans going from Jerusalem to Damascus, or from Mesopotamia to Egypt, the Arabs take advantage of some detached hills formed by the moving sand, and have also erected artificial ones, to hide themselves from the observation of the caravans, and to desery them from afar; they hollow out the sand on the summit of these hills, and there burrow with their horses. As soon as they perceive their prey, they dart with the rapidity of the falcon; they go to apprise their tribe, and return all together to the attack. Such is their only industrial occupation, such their only glory; civilisation with them is murder and pillage, and they attach as much importance to their successes in this species of exploit, as our conquerors to the acquisition of a province. Their poets, for they have poets, celebrate in their verses these scenes of barbarity, and deliver down, from generation to generation, the honoured memory of their courage and their crimes. The horses have a considerable share of the glory assigned them in these recitals: here is one, which the sheik's son related to us on the way:—

“An Arab and his tribe had attacked in the desert the caravan of Damascus; the victory was complete, and the Arabs were already occupied in loading their rich booty, when the troops of the pacha of Acre, coming to meet this caravan, fell suddenly upon the victorious Arabs, slew a great number of them, made the remainder prisoners, and, having tied them with cords, conducted them to Acre to present them before the pacha. Abou-el-Marsch, the Arab of whom he spoke, had received a ball in his arm during the combat; as his wound was not mortal, the Turks had fastened him on a camel, and having obtained possession of his horse, led off both horse and horseman. The evening before which they were to enter Acre, they encamped with their prisoners in the mountains of Saphad; the wounded Arab had his legs bound together by a leathern thong, and was stretched near the tent where the Turks were sleeping. During the night, kept awake by the pain of his wound, he heard his horse neigh amongst the other horses fastened around the tents according to oriental usage. He recognised his neigh, and, unable to resist the desire of speaking once more to the companion of his life, he dragged himself with difficulty along the ground, by the assistance of his hands and knees, and came up to his courser. ‘Poor friend,’ said he to it, ‘what wilt thou do amongst the Turks? Thou wilt be immured under the arches of a klan, with the horses of an aga or of a pacha; the women and the children will no longer bring thee the camel’s milk, or the barley or the doura in the hollow of their hands; thou wilt no longer run free in the desert, as the wind of Egypt; thou wilt no more divide the waters of the Jordan with thy breast, and cool thy skin as white as their foam; therefore, if I remain a slave, remain thou free!—go,

return to the tent, which thou knowest; say to my wife that Abou-el-Marsch will return no more, and put thy head under the curtains of the tent to lick the hands of my little children.’ Whilst speaking thus, Abou-el-Marsch had gnawed through with his teeth the cord of goat-hair which fetters Arab horses, and the animal was free; but seeing its master wounded and bound at its feet, the faithful and sagacious steed understood by instinct what no language could explain to him. He stooped his head, smelt his master, and, seizing him with his teeth by the leathern thong which he had about his body, went off in a gallop and bore him to his tent. On arriving and placing his master on the sand, at the feet of his wife and children, the horse expired from fatigue. All the tribe wept for him, the poets have celebrated him, and his name is constantly in the mouths of the Arabs of Jericho.”

We have no idea of the degree of sagacity and attachment to which the habit of living with the family, of being caressed by the children, fed by the women, rebuked or encouraged by the voice of their master, tends to raise the instinct of the Arabian horse. The animal is by his very breed more sagacious and tame than the breeds of our climates; it is the same with all animals in Arabia. Nature or heaven has given them a stronger instinct, a greater attachment to man than amongst us. They remember better the days of Eden, when they submitted voluntarily to the control of the king of nature. I have myself frequently seen in Syria, birds caught in the hand by children, and perfectly tamed by the evening; not requiring either cage, or a thread to the leg, to retain them with the family which adopts them, but flying at freedom upon the orange and mulberry trees in the garden, return at the call and perch themselves on the fingers of the children, or the heads of the young maidens.

The horse of the sheik of Jericho, which I bought and mounted, knew me at the end of a few days as its master. He would not allow himself to be mounted by any other, and cleared the whole caravan to come to my call, though my tongue was a strange one to him. Gentle and affectionate with me, and accustomed to the caresses of my Arabs, he walked quietly and discreetly in his rank in the caravan, when we met only Turks, Arabs dressed in the Turkish fashion, or Syrians; but if he chanced, even a year after, to spy a Bedouin mounted on a horse of the desert, he became all at once another animal; his eye grew fiery, his neck swelled, his tail was raised and lashed his sides like a whip; he reared on his haunches, and thus proceeded for a long time, under the weight of his saddle and of the person upon him; he did not neigh, but uttered a warlike cry, like that from a brass trumpet; such a cry as all the other horses were alarmed at, and stopped with their ears cocked listening to it.

Same date.—After five hours’ march, during which the river always seemed farther off than ever, we arrived at the last level, at the foot of which it flowed; but although we were not more than two or three hundred paces distant, we still perceived only the plain and the desert before us, and no trace either of valley or river. It is this illusion of the desert, I suppose, which has caused some travellers to say and believe that the Jordan rolls its muddy waters over a bed of flints, and between banks of sand, in the desert of Jericho. These travellers had not been able to reach the river itself; and seeing from a distance a vast sea of sand, they were unable to conceive that a cool, shady, and delicious oasis, was hollowed between the levels of this monotonous desert, and that the full stream, and murmuring course of the Jordan, was overhung with a verdure which the Thames might envy; yet such is the fact. We stood in astonishment and rapture, when, arrived at the edge of the last level, which sinks all at once beneath the feet, and is scooped into a perpendicular fall, we had before our eyes one of the most delightful vales whereon they had ever rested. We urged our horses down with a gallop, irresistibly attracted by the novelty of the sight, and by the charms of freshness, moisture, and shade, of which the valley was redolent. All around

were swards of the most lovely green, on which were growing tufts of rushes in flower, and bulbous plants, whose glittering shoots sprinkled the turf with various tints; thickets of shrubs with long flexible twigs, bending like bunches of flowers around their multifarious trunks; large Persian poplars with a slight foliage, not rising in pyramids, like our clipped poplars, but throwing freely out on all sides their sinewy branches, like those of oaks, and their smooth white bark glittering in the restless rays of the morning sun; groves of willows of all species, and of large osiers, so entwined that it was impossible to penetrate them; and so much were the trees crowded, and so multiplied was the underwood crawling at their feet with their twigs matted in tresses, that an inextricable net-work was formed. These woods stretched on both sides along the banks of the river far out of sight.

We were obliged to descend from our horses, and fix our camp in one of the glades of the wood, and to make our way on foot to the stream of the Jordan, which we heard without seeing. We penetrated with difficulty, sometimes struggling with the thickets of wood, sometimes with the long grass, sometimes with the high rushes; at length we reached a spot where the turf was open to the water, and we steeped our hands and feet in the river. It may be a hundred, or a hundred and twenty feet broad; its depth appears considerable, and its course is as rapid as the Rhone at Geneva. Its water is of a faint blue, slightly muddied by the grey earth it passes through and hollows, immense banks of which we heard, from time to time, falling into its stream. Its shores are perpendicular, but it fills them to the rushes and trees which border them. The roots of these trees, undermined by the water, hang and trail along the sides; frequently being entirely uprooted, and no longer supported by the earth, they bend over the river with all their leaves and branches, which dip into it, and throw, as it were, an arch of verdure from one bank to the other. From time to time one of these trees is carried away with the portion of soil which sustains it, and floats all leafy down the current, with the underwood torn up, and adhering to the branches, its nests under water, and the birds still hopping amongst its leaves; we saw several of these pass during the few hours that we remained in this charming oasis. The woods follow the windings of the Jordan, and deck it every where with an everlasting garland of branches and leaves, which bend into the water, and make its rustled surface murmur. A countless multitude of birds inhabit these impenetrable forests. The Arabs warned us not to go without our arms, and to be careful as we advanced, because this entangled underwood is the resort of lions, panthers, and leopards. We saw none, but we frequently heard, in the gloom of the thicket, growls and noises similar to those which large animals make in diving into the depths of woods. We went over the accessible parts of the shores of this beautiful river for an hour or two. In some places, the Arabs of the savage tribes in the mountains of Arabia Petraea, at the bottom of which we were, had set the forest on fire, in order to penetrate it, or carry off the wood. There remained a great quantity of trunks, only calcined at the bark, but new shoots had sprung around the burnt trees, and the climbing plants of this fertile soil had already so entwined the dead and young trees, that the forest was there more novel, without being less fast or luxuriant. We gathered an ample stock of willow and poplar branches, as well as of other trees with long twigs and beautiful rinds, whose names I am ignorant of, to make presents of them to our friends in Europe, and we rejoined the camp, which the Arabs had shifted during our ramble, on the shores of the river.

They had found out a situation yet more delightful and convenient to pitch our tents, than all those that we had just traversed. It was on a bank of turf, as smooth as if it had been pastured by a flock of sheep. Here and there were shrubs with broad leaves, and a few tufts of young planes and sycamores, scattered so as to cast a shade upon the grass, and keep ourselves

and our horses cool. The Jordan, flowing not twenty paces from us, had worn a small shallow bay in the middle of this glade, and its waters wound round the feet of two or three great poplars. An accessible path led down to the river, and permitted us to take our thirsty horses to it, and to go ourselves and bathe. We there fixed our two tents, and made the day's halt.

On the following day, the 2d of November, we continued our route, drawing towards the highest mountains of Arabia Petraea, leaving and again joining the Jordan, according to the sinuosities of its course; and we approached the Dead Sea. Not far from the course of the river, on a spot of the desert which I know not how to design, there are the remains, still imposing, of a castle of the crusaders, built by them apparently to protect this route. This ruin is deserted, and may serve to shelter the Arabs when in ambush waiting for the caravans. In the midst of the ocean of sand, it has the appearance of the hulk of an abandoned vessel on the horizon at sea. On drawing near the Dead Sea, the ground becomes more level, and descends with an insensible slope towards the shore; the sand gets spongy, and the horses, sinking at each step, proceed with difficulty. When we at length perceived the reflection of the waves, we could not restrain our impatience; we set off at a gallop to throw ourselves into the waters, which were reposing on the sand before us, resplendant as molten lead. The sheikh of Jericho and his Arabs, who always followed us, imagining that we wished to run the djerid with them, scampered off also, at the same time, in all directions over the plain, and returning upon us with loud cries, brandished their long reedy lances, as if they would have pierced us; then, stopping their horses short, and throwing them on their haunches, they let us pass, and again set off in a sweep to return as before. I arrived the first, owing to the speed of my Turcoman steed; but when twenty or thirty paces from the sea, the sand mixed with soil is so wet and marshy, that my horse sank up to the belly, and I was apprehensive of being swallowed up. I drew back the way I had come, and, getting off our horses, we went on foot to the shore.

The Dead Sea has been described by several travellers. I took no note of its specific gravity, or of the relative quantity of salt its waters contain. It was not science or criticism that I was come in search of. I had come to it simply because it was on my route, and because it was in the middle of a celebrated desert, celebrated of itself for the engulging of towns, which formerly arose where I now saw its motionless waters. Its shores are flat to the east and west; the high mountains of Judea and Arabia enclose it, and descend almost to its edges on the north and south. Those of Arabia, however, are somewhat more distant from it, especially near the mouth of the Jordan, where we stood. The shores are completely deserted; the air is infected and unhealthy. We ourselves found its influence, during the few days we passed in this desert. A great depression on the head, and a feverish sensation, attacked us, and did not quit us until we were rid of its atmosphere. There was not an island to be seen. Yet, at sunset, from the top of a sand-hill, I thought I could distinguish two islands at the extremity of the horizon on the Idumean side. The Arabs knew nothing of them. The sea is, in this part of it, at least thirty leagues long, and they never venture to follow its shore so far. No traveller has ever been able to circumnavigate the Dead Sea; it has never been explored at its other extremity, or on its two shores of Judea and Arabia. We are, I believe, the first who have enjoyed the full liberty of exploring it on the three sides; and if we had had a little more time on our hands, there was nothing to prevent our getting pine planks from Lebanon, Jerusalem, or Jaffa, and constructing on the spot a sloop, and sailing, in security, all the coasts of this wondrous inland sea. The Arabs, who do not generally permit travellers to approach it, and whose prejudices are opposed to any attempt at navigating it, were then so devoted to our least wishes, that they would have offered no obstacle to our enterprise. I should have put it in

execution, if I had foreseen the welcome that these Arabs gave us. But it was too late; we must have returned to Jerusalem, and brought carpenters to build the vessel; all this would have taken us, together with the navigation, at least three weeks, and our days were numbered. I renounced the scheme, therefore, not without pain. A traveller, in the same circumstances as myself, will be easily able to accomplish it, and to throw on this natural phenomenon, and on this geographical question, the light that criticism and science have desired for so long a time.

The aspect of the Dead Sea is neither sad nor mournful, except to the thought. To the eye it is a dazzling lake, whose wide and silvery surface reflects the light and the firmament like a Venetian mirror. Mountains, rising in beautiful domes, throw their shadow upon its banks. They say there are neither fish in its bosom nor birds on its shores. I know not; I saw no gulls, or any of those pretty white birds, like sea-doves, which skim all the day over the waves of the sea of Syria, and follow the caïques (skiffs) on the Bosphorus: but at a few hundred paces from the Dead Sea, I fired at and shot some birds, similar to the wild drakes which rise from the marshy shores of the Jordan. If the air of the sea were mortal to them, they would not come so near to brave its mephitic vapours. I likewise did not perceive those ruins of engulfed towns, which are seen, as it is said, at a little depth beneath the waters. The Arabs who accompanied me asserted that they had beheld them sometimes. I followed, for a great distance, the banks of this sea, both on the Arabian side, where the Jordan falls into it (this river is there in truth what travellers describe it, a ditch of dirty water in a bed of mud), and on the Judean side, where the shores rise, and occasionally assume the appearance of the slight downs abutting on the ocean. The surface of the water everywhere presents the same aspect—it is shining, blue, and motionless.* Men have faithfully preserved the faculty given them by God in Genesis, of calling things by their names. This sea is beautiful; it glitters, it pours upon the desert which surrounds it the reflection of its waters; it attracts the eye, and it rouses the thought; but it is dead—motion and noise are no more. Its waves, too heavy for the wind, are still, and no white foam plays on the pebbles of its shores: it is a sea of petrification. How was it formed? Apparently, as the Bible says, as also probability, forming the vast centre of the volcanic chains which stretch from Jerusalem into Mesopotamia, and from Lebanon to Hama, a crater has opened in its middle at the time when seven cities crowded the plain. The towns have been overthrown by the earthquake; the Jordan, which, according to all probability, then flowed through this plain, and fell into the Red Sea, arrested all at once by the volcanic eminences thrown up from the earth, and swallowed up in the craters of Sodom and Gomorrah, has formed this sea, corrupted by salt, sulphur, and bitumen, the ordinary ailments or products of volcanoes. Such is the fact, and such probability! This adds not to, or detracts from, the action of that sovereign and eternal will which some call a miracle, and others ascribe to nature. Nature and

miracle—are they not one?—and is the universe any thing but a miracle from perpetuity and at all moments?

Same date.—We returned by the northern side of the Dead Sea, in the direction of the valley of Saint-Saba. The desert is much more diversified in this part; it is obstructed with immense hills of earth and sand, which every moment we have to wind round or scale. The line of our caravan undulates upon these hills, like an extended fleet in a heavy sea, where the different ships are seen and lost by turns in the hollows of the waves. After three hours' march, sometimes over small unbroken plains, where we proceeded in a gallop, sometimes upon the edge of deep ravines of sand, down which some of our horses rolled, we perceived before us the smoke from the houses of Jericho. The Arabs parted from us, and flew towards this smoke. Two only remained to point out the road. On approaching Jericho, the chief amongst the Arabs came back to us. We encamped in the midst of a field, shaded by a few palm-trees, and where a brook flowed. Our tents were soon pitched, and we found a supper prepared, thanks to the presents of all sorts which the Arabs had brought to our camp. The Arab who rode the beautiful horse which I desired to carry away, appeared to admire the Turcoman horse which I had ridden the preceding day. The conversation being skillfully drawn to the subject of our several steeds, they praised many of mine. I proposed to him to exchange his Arab for my Turcoman; we debated the whole evening what further sum was to be given by me; but nothing was fixed. Every time that I came up to his price, he testified so great a grief at parting with his horse, that we went to bed without concluding a bargain. On the following day, at the moment of starting, all the horses being already caparisoned and mounted, I again made advances. He at length determined himself to mount my Turcoman horse, and he galloped him across the plain. Captivated by the brilliant qualities of the animal, he sent me his by his son. I paid 900 piastres, mounted the horse, and departed. All the tribe seemed to view his leaving with regret; the children spoke to him, the women pointed to him with their fingers, the sheik returned often to look at him, and to make him certain cabalistic signs, which the Arabs have always the precaution to make to the horses which they sell or buy. The animal himself appeared to understand the separation, and sadly drooped his head, shaded by a superb mane, casting a mournful and unquiet eye to the right and the left upon the desert. The eye of the Arab horses is a perfect tongue. By their beautiful eye, the fiery pupil of which starts from the blood-veined white of the orbit, they express and comprehend all things.

I had ceased for several days to mount that horse amongst my stud which I preferred to all the rest. From the numberless superstitions of the Arabs, there are seventy good or bad signs in the horoscope of a horse; and this is a science which all the men of the desert possess. The horse of which I speak, which I called Lebanon, because I had purchased him in those mountains, was a young and splendid stallion, tall, strong, high-spirited, untiring, and sagacious, displaying no vice in the fifteen months which I rode him; but he had on his chest, by the accidental conformation of his beautiful ashy-grey skin, one of those ears of corn which the Arabs have placed in the number of unfortunate signs. I had been forewarned of it, on buying him, but I took him, from the very natural reasoning, that a sign unfortunate for a Mahometan was one favourable to a Christian. They found this an unanswerable argument, and I mounted Lebanon every time that I had to make longer or worse journeys than usual. When we approached a town, or a tribe, and the people came out to meet the caravan, the Arabs, or the Turks, struck with the beauty and strength of Lebanon, commenced to compliment me, and to admire him with longing eyes; but after a few moments' consideration, the fatal sign, which was a little covered by the silk collar, and the amulet suspended round the neck, which every horse always carries, was discovered, and the Arabs, drawing near me, changed countenance, appeared grave and

* [The water of the Dead Sea, or Lake Asphaltides, has been frequently analysed, and is found to be of a greater specific gravity than common water; in other words, it is more dense and better able to buoy up objects, than water of an ordinary kind. Still, this density is not remarkable. The specific gravity is only 1.211, and it is perfectly transparent. In 100 grains are the following substances in solution:—Grains of muriate of lime 3.920, of muriate of magnesia 10.246, muriate of soda 10.330, sulphur of lime 0.054—total 24.500. It thus appears that about a fourth part of the 100 grains is foreign substances. The taste is a bitter salt. Mr Stephens mentions that he bathed in the Dead Sea, and that he felt the buoyant property to be much greater than that of either fresh or salt water. It has been alleged, among other idle tales regarding this mysterious lake, that birds cannot fly over it and live; but this is completely disproved by various recent travellers, one of whom saw swallows skimming along its surface. The Dead Sea has no outlet; its waters are carried off entirely by evaporation.]

afflicted, and gave me signs not to mount that horse again. This was of little importance in Syria; but in Judea, and amongst the tribes of the desert, I feared that it might jeopardise my consideration, and destroy the respect and obedient feeling which attended us. I ceased, therefore, to mount him, and he was led by the hand in the suite. I do not doubt, we owed a considerable portion of the deference and fear which were manifested around us, to the beauty of the dozen or fifteen Arab horses which we rode, or which followed us. A horse in Arabia is the fortune of a man; it supposes every thing, it supplies the place of every thing. They formed a high idea of a Frank who possessed so many horses, equally beautiful with those of their sheik and the pacha.

We returned to Jerusalem by that same valley which we had traversed at night on coming. Before entering the first gorge of the mountains, we saw evident traces of ancient buildings upon a wide table-land commanding the plain, and we supposed that there might be the true site of the ancient Jericho. It requires a great progress in civilisation to build towns in the plain. We are never deceived when we search for ancient cities on the heights.

It was in this gorge that the touching parable of the Samaritan places the scene of the murder and the charity. It appears, from the times of the Gospel, these valleys have had a bad reputation.

This was a fatiguing day, from the monotony of a fourteen hours' march, and the excessive heat of the sun, reverberated by the precipitous sides of the ravines. We met no one during these fourteen hours but an Arab shepherd, who was tending an innumerable flock of black goats on the top of a hill.

Encamped near the Pool of Solomon, under the Walls of Jerusalem: November 2.—We wished to consecrate a day to prayer in the place to which all Christians turn in praying, as the Mahomedans turn towards Mecca. We engaged the monk who fulfilled the functions of priest at Jerusalem, to celebrate for our living and dead relations, for our friends of all times and of all places, and also for ourselves, the commemoration of the grand and mournful sacrifice which had moistened this land with the blood of the Just, in order that charity and hope might grow from it. We assisted at it in such moods as our recollections, sorrows, losses, desires, and different degrees of piety and faith, inspired to each. We chose for our temple and altar the grotto of Gethsemane, in the hollow of the valley of Jehoshaphat. It was into this cavern, at the foot of the Mount of Olives, that Christ retired, according to tradition, to escape from the persecution of his enemies, and the importunity of his disciples; it was here that he communed with his heavenly thoughts, and prayed to his father, that the too bitter cup which he had himself filled, as we all fill ours, might pass away from his lips: it was here that he said to his three friends, on the eve of his death, to remain on the watch, and not to sleep, and he was obliged thrice to awaken them, so prone is the zeal of human charity to grow dull; it was here, in fine, that he passed those terrible hours of the agony, the ineffable strife between life and death, between the mind and instinct, between the soul, anxious to be freed, and the matter resisting, because it is blind! It was here that he sweated blood and water, and that, wearied at combating with himself without the victory of the soul giving peace to his thoughts, he spoke those final words which evince the man and the God, those words which are become the wisdom of all the wise, and which ought to be the epitaph on all lives, and the sole motto of all created things—"My father, let thy will be done, not mine."

The locality of this grotto, cut in the rock of the Kedron, is one of the most probable, and best justified by its appearance, of all those which the popular piety in its credulity has assigned for each of the scenes in the great evangelical drama; it is the very valley resting in the shadow of death, the abyss hid under the city, the hollow the most profound, and by the most shunned of men, in which the

Saviour, who had all men for his enemies, because he came to attack all their falsehoods, could seek an occasional shelter, and retire within himself to meditate, to pray, to suffer! The impure brook of Kedron flows at some paces' distance. It was then but a sewer of Jerusalem. The Mount of Olives there bends over to meet the hills which bear the tombs of the kings, and forms, as it were, a projecting angle, on which thickets of olive, turpentine, and fig trees, together with those fruit trees which poor people always cultivate, even in the crevices of the rocks, in the neighbourhood of a large town, would conceal the entrance of the grotto. Furthermore, this spot was not disturbed, and rendered incapable of being distinguished by the ruins in which Jerusalem was buried. The disciples who had watched and prayed with Christ could return and say, marking the rock and the trees, "It was here!" A valley is not obliterated like a street, and the smallest rock endures longer than the most majestic of temples.

The grotto of Gethsemane, and the rock which covers it, are at present surrounded by the walls of a little chapel, kept locked, the key of which is in the hands of the Latin monks of Jerusalem. This grotto, and the seven olive-trees, in the adjoining field, belong to them. The door cut in the rock opens on the court of another pious sanctuary, which they call the Tomb of the Virgin. This belongs to the Greeks. The grotto is deep and lofty, and divided into two cavities, which communicate by a sort of subterranean portico. There are also several altars, hollowed out of the living rock; they have not disfigured this sanctuary, thus formed by nature, with so many artificial ornaments as the other sanctuaries of the Holy Sepulchre. The arch, the floor, and the walls, are the rock itself, dripping, as it were weeping, with the dampness of a cavern enveloped by earth. They have only appended, above each altar, a bad representation in copperplate, painted a flesh-colour, and as large as life, of the agony of Christ, with the angels, who are presenting to him the cup of death. If they tore away these wretched figures, which destroy the forms which the pious imagination loves to create for itself in the shadow of the grotto—if they permitted the eyes, moistened with tears, to ascend freely, and without sensible images, towards the thoughts of which that night is so full—this grotto would be the most unpolluted and holy relic on the hills of Zion; but men must always spoil what they touch! Alas! if they had contented themselves with altering and injuring the mere stones and remains of these visible scenes! But how many dogmas, doctrines, and sects, have they not made from that religion of reason, simplicity, love, and humility, which the Son of Man taught them at the price of his blood! When God permits a truth to come upon the earth, men begin by cursing and stoning him who bears it; then they seize upon this truth, which they have been unable to kill with him, because it is immortal; his spoil is their inheritance; but like the precious stone, which the malefactors carried off from the heavenly pilgrim, they encase it with so many errors, that it becomes undistinguishable, until the light breaks afresh upon it, and, after many ages, separating the diamond from its setting, wisdom proclaims—Behold the truth! Behold the lie! Here is the reality!—there is the counterfeit! It is on this account that all religions have two natures, the association of which astonishes the mind; a popular nature, with miracles, legends, and shameful superstitions, the impure alloy with which ages of ignorance and darkness have mixed and adulterated the doctrine of heaven; and a rational and philosophical nature, which is effectual in removing the human rust, and presents religion to an eternal and incorruptible light, which is reason, reflects it pure and unmixed, and illuminates all things and all intelligence with that blaze of truth and love, by which we see and adore the self-evident being, God.

Same date.—There remains, not far from the grotto of Gethsemane, a small corner of land, yet shaded by seven olive-trees, which popular traditions describe as the same trees under which Jesus lay and wept. These

olives, in fact, bear on their trunks and prodigious branches the date of the eighteen centuries which have elapsed since that awful night. Those trunks are of enormous compass, and are formed, like those of all old olives, by a vast number of stems, which seem incorporated into the tree, and are covered by the same bark, resembling a cluster of cemented columns. Their branches are almost withered, but still produce a few olives. We collected those which strewed the earth beneath the trees; we made some fall with a pious discretion, and we filled our pockets with them, to carry as relics of this locality to our friends. I imagine that it is sweet for the Christian mind to pray whilst grasping with the fingers the olive stones of those trees, whose roots Jesus has perhaps watered and fructified with his tears, when he himself prayed for the last time on earth. If they are not the same trunks, they are in all probability offshoots from those sacred trees. But there is nothing to show that they are not identically the same stocks. I have traversed every part of the world where the olive grows; this tree exists for ages, and nowhere have I found any larger, although planted in a rocky and arid soil. I have likewise seen, on the summit of Lebanon, the cedars which Arab traditions carry back to the age of Solomon. There is nothing impossible in it; nature has given to certain vegetables a longer existence than to empires; certain oaks have seen many dynasties pass away, and the acorn which we trample with our feet, the olive-kernel which I rub in my hand, the cedar-apple which the wind scatters, will reproduce, flourish, and cover the earth with their shadows, when hundreds of generations which follow us shall have restored to the earth that morsel of dust which they have borrowed in their turns. But creation does not thereby mark its contempt for us. The relative importance of beings is not measured by the duration, but by the intensity of their existence. There is more of life in one hour of thought, of contemplation, of prayer, or of love, than in the entire existence of a purely physical man. There is more of life in a thought which pervades the world, and ascends to heaven in a space of time not to be counted, in the millionth part of a second, than in the eighteen centuries of vegetation in the olives which I lean upon, or in the two thousand five hundred years of Solomon's cedars.

Same date.—Breakfasted, seated on the steps of the fountain of Siloam. Wrote some verses, tore them, and cast the fragments into the spring. Words are poor weapons. The most beautiful verses are those which we cannot express. The diction of every language is insufficient, and every day the heart of man finds in the delicacies of his sentiments, and the imagination discovers in the impressions of visible nature, things which the mouth cannot embody for want of words. The heart and the thought of man are like a musician driven to play infinitely varied music on an organ which has but a few notes. It is more advisable to be silent. Silence is a refined poetry at certain moments. It is felt by the soul, and appreciated by God. And that is enough.

Same date.—On proceeding again up the valley of Jehoshaphat, I passed near the sepulchre of Absalom. It is a block of rock cut in the very body of the mountain of Silon, attached to the primitive rock upon which it is based. It is about thirty feet in height, and twenty broad on all its sides. I say so at hazard, for I measure nothing; the rule is useful only to the architect. Its form is a square pedestal, with a Greek doorway in the middle, a Corinthian cornice, with a pyramid at the summit. The character is neither Roman nor Greek. The effect is solemn, monumental, and novel, as the Egyptian monuments. The Jews had no architecture of their own. They borrowed from Egypt, Greece, but chiefly, I believe, from India. The key of the whole is to be found in India; the birth of philosophy and the arts appears to me to date from there. It preceded and brought forth Assyria, Chaldaea, Mesopotamia, Syria; the great cities of the desert, as Babel; then Egypt; then the islands such as Crete

and Cyprus; then Etruria; then Rome; then came night; and Christianity, fostered at first by the Platonic philosophy, afterwards by the ignorant barbarism of the middle ages, has given birth to our civilisation and modern arts. We are young, and have scarcely yet reached the age of virility. A world new in thought, in social forms and arts, will spring, probably in a few centuries, from the great ruin of the middle ages, which we are promoting. We know that the intellectual world bears its own fruit, the outburst of which will be made amidst convulsions and agony; language, written and multiplied by the press, by exciting discussion, criticism, and inquiry, by drawing the vigour of all intellects to every point of fact or argument in the world, invincibly leads humanity to the age of reason. Revelation will come to all by all. The divine light, which is reason and religion, will penetrate through all the circles of humanity. A beautiful book might be made of the history of the divine spirit in the different phases of humanity; the tracing of divinity in man, when the religious principle is found first acting in the earliest records of humanity by instincts and blind impulses; then singing by the voice of poets, the *mens divinior*; then manifesting itself on the tables of legislators, or in the mysterious initiations of the Indian, Egyptian, Hebrew theocracies. When its mythological forms, worn out by time, exhausted by the credulity of mankind, are cast from the human spirit, we see it disseminated and taught in the great schools of philosophy in Greece and Asia Minor, and in the Pythagorean sects, but seeking in vain for universal symbols, until Christianity embodied all speculative and disputed truth in those two grand practical and incontestible truths: adoration of an only God; charity and good will amongst men. Christianity itself, obscured and alloyed with errors, like every doctrine rendered popular by the credulousness of the ages it has passed, appears destined to be itself transformed, to come out more rational and pure from the load of mysteries with which it is enveloped, and to unite its divine illuminations with those of religious reason, which it has been the first to generate, and to raise so high in the horizon of humanity.

Same date.—A little above the entrance to the valley of Kedron, on the north of Jerusalem, we traversed some fields of a reddish and more fertile earth, covered with a wood of olives. About five hundred paces from the city, we came to the edge of a deep quarry, into which we descended. On the left, a block of rock, profusely sculptured, stretched the whole breadth of the quarry, and below it was a narrow opening, half closed by earth and stones. A man could scarcely crawl into it by creeping. We entered it; but as we had neither steels nor torches, we almost immediately came out again, and did not visit the interior chambers; they were the sepulchres of the kings. The frieze, magnificently sculptured, and of beautiful Grecian workmanship, on the exterior rock, would mark the most flourishing epoch of the arts in Greece for this decoration of the monuments; yet it perhaps belongs to the age of Solomon, for who can know what that great prince had borrowed from the genius of India or of Egypt?

November 3.—The plague, which rages more and more in Jerusalem and its environs, will not allow us to enter Bethlehem, the convent and sanctuary of which were closed. We mounted our horses, however, in the evening, and after traversing a level of about two leagues, which extends to the east of Jerusalem, we arrived upon a height, a short distance from Bethlehem, whence we had a complete view of the whole of this little town. We had scarcely seated ourselves, when a numerous cavalcade of Bethlehemite Arabs came and requested to be presented to me. After the usual compliments, they told me that they were deputed to me by the population of Bethlehem, with the prayer that I would obtain a diminution of the tribute which Ibrahim Pacha had laid upon their town, as they knew from report, and the Arabs of Abougosh their chief, that Ibrahim Pacha was my friend, and would certainly

not refuse if I solicited indulgence for them. As the Arabs of Bethlehem are the most detestable race in the country, always at war with their neighbours, always making exactions on the Latin convent of the town, I replied to them with gravity, after making them severe reproaches for their rapines, "that I would have respect for their prayer, and would present it to the pacha, but only on condition that they respected Europeans, pilgrims, and especially the convents of Bethlehem and of Saint John in the wilderness; and that, if they permitted the slightest domestic violation with regard to these poor monks, it was the determination of Ibrahim to exterminate them to the last man, or to drive them into the deserts of Arabia Petrea." I added, and it seemed to make a lively impression, "that if the forces of Ibrahim Pacha were insufficient, the pachas of Europe had decided to come themselves and reduce them to reason." In the meantime, I engaged them to pay the tribute. From that day to the hour of my departure, I had constantly in my suite, in spite of all endeavours to dismiss them, a certain number of the Bedouin sheiks of Bethlehem, Hebron, and the desert of Saint John, who never ceased imploring me for the reduction of tribute.

We returned to the camp in the valley of the Pool of Solomon, under the walls of Sion, and received a visit from Abougosh, who came with his uncle and brother to inquire after our health. I gave him coffee and pipes, and we conversed an hour at the door of my tent, each seated under an olive-tree.

Same date.—A courier from Jaffa brought me letters from Europe and Beirut, and put them into my hands, beneath the ramparts of Jerusalem. These letters reassured me as to the health of my daughter; but as she added, at the foot of her mother's letter, that she was resolutely opposed to my going into Egypt, at this moment, I altered my route, and countermanded my caravan of camels at El-Arisch, determining to return by the coast of Syria. We struck our tents; I sent a present of 500 piastres to the convent, besides 1500 that I had paid for chaplets, relics, crucifixes, &c.; and we proceeded once more to the wilderness of Saint John.

The general aspect of the environs of Jerusalem may be described in a few words: mountains without trees, valleys without water, ground without verdure, rocks without awe or grandeur; blocks of grey stone piercing a brittle soil full of cracks; now and then a fig-tree, and a gazelle or jackal crawling furtively amongst the interstices of the rocks; a few vine plants creeping over the ashy or reddish earth; at far distances a thicket of pale olives, casting a speck of shade down the precipitous sides of a hill; at the horizon a turpentine or black carob-tree, standing out, sad and solitary, from the blue sky; the walls and grey towers of the fortifications of the city, appearing from a distance on the crest of Sion: such is the land. And the sky is pure, clear, deep, in which the smallest cloud never floats, and which is never coloured with the purple of evening or morning. On the side of Arabia, a wide ravine descends between the black mountains, and conducts the eye to the dazzling waters of the Dead Sea, and the blue horizon of the mountain-peaks of Moab. Not a breath of wind murmurs on the battlements, or among the dry branches of the olive-trees; not a bird singing, or a cricket chirping in the bladeless vales; a complete, perpetual silence in the city, on the roads, in the fields. Such was Jerusalem, during all the days that we passed under its walls. I heard but the neighing of the horses around our camp, clanking at the heat and digging up the dust; soil with their feet, and from time to time the doleful chant of the muezlin, crying the hour from the top of the minaret, or the tuncful lamentations of Turkish mourners, accompanying, in long files, the dead to the different cemeteries outside the city, Jerusalem, where we go to visit one sepulchre, is indeed itself the tomb of a people, but a tomb without cypresses, inscriptions, or monuments, with its stones broken and pounded, the ashes of which seem to cover the surrounding earth with sorrow, silence, and sterility. We several times cast our eyes on quitting it, from the height of

every eminence whence we could still perceive it; and we saw, for the last time, the crown of olives which rises on the famous mount, which floated a long time in the horizon, after we had lost sight of the city, gradually sunk into the sky, and finally disappeared, like the pale flowers which are cast into a grave.

Nevertheless, we must again return there; but, alas! no more with the same sentiments, no more to weep over the miseries of others, but there to groan for our own woes, and to shed tears for ourselves, on that land which has already drunk up and dried so many.

Yesterday I had fixed my tent in a rocky field, where a few trunks of knotty and stunted olives were standing, under the walls of Jerusalem, some hundreds of paces from the tower of David, a little above the fountain of Siloam, which still trickles down the worn flags of its grotto, and not far from the tomb of the poet-king, who has so repeatedly sung of it. The high and black terraces which formerly sustained the Temple of Solomon, arose on my left, crowned by the three blue cupolas, and the light and airy colonnades of the Mosque of Omar, which now hovers over the ruins of the Temple of Jehovah. The city of Jerusalem, ravaged by the plague, was inundated with the rays of a dazzling sun, reflected upon its thousand domes, its white marbles, its gilded towers, and its walls, polished by centuries and the salt winds of the lake Asphaltides. No noise arose from its expanse, mute and mournful as the bed of one in the last agony; its wide gates were open, and there were seen, from time to time, the white turban and red mantle of the Arab soldier, a useless watcher at these deserted gates. Nothing entered, nothing came out; the morning breeze alone raised the dust on the roads, and deluded us, for a moment, with the idea of a caravan; but when the gust of wind was past, when it had died away, whistling over the battlements of the tower of the Pisans, or the three palm-trees of the house of Chaiaphas, the dust fell, the desert reappeared, and the step of no camel or mule sounded on the stones of the road. Only, every quarter of an hour, the dead whom the plague had carried off were brought out, borne by two naked slaves, on a litter, to the tombs scattered all around us. Sometimes a long train of Turks, Arabs, Armenians, Jews, accompanied the dead body, and defiled amongst the olive trunks, singing, and afterwards returned, with slow steps, and in silence, into the city. But most frequently the dead were brought out singly; and when the two slaves had scooped out a few hands' breadth of the sand or earth, and laid the plague-body in its last bed, they sat down upon the barrow they had just raised, divided between them the raiment of the defunct; and, lighting their long pipes, smoked in silence, looking at the smoke from their chibouques mounting in a light blue column, and gracefully losing itself in the limpid and transparent air of these autumnal days. At my feet, the valley of Jehoshaphat stretched like a vast sepulchre; the drainage of Kedron ploughed it with a white rent, all scattered with large flints, and the sides of the two hills which hem it were all blanched with the tombs and sculptured turbans, the usual monuments of the Moslems. A little to the right, the hill of Olives sank, and gave sight to the horizon expanding beyond the chains of naked mountains of Jericho and Saint-Saba, sprinkled with volcanic cones; the eye turned there of its own accord, attracted by the azure and silvery brightness of the Dead Sea, which shone at the foot of these mountains; and behind all, the blue mountains of Arabia Petrea bounded the horizon. But bounded is not the word, for these mountains appeared transparent as crystal; and we saw, or believed we saw, far beyond, an indistinct and undefined horizon still stretching, and floating in the ambient vapours of a purple and cerulean-tinted atmosphere.

At mid-day, the hour in which the muezlin watches the sun from the highest gallery of the minaret, and chants the time and prayer; a living, animated voice, feeling what it says and sings—much superior, in my opinion, to the unconscious sound of the bells of our cathedrals. My Arabs had given barley, in sacks of

goat-hair, to my horses, tethered at intervals round my tent with iron-rings about their legs. These beautiful and tractable animals were motionless, their heads drooping, and overshadowed by their long thick manes, and their grey skins shining and steaming under the rays of a perpendicular sun. The men had collected themselves under the shade of the largest of the olive-trees; they had stretched on the earth their Damascus mats, and were smoking, whilst relating to each other tales of the desert, or singing the verses of Antar.

Antar, that sample of the wandering Arab, at once a shepherd, warrior, and poet, who has described the whole desert in national poetry, epic as Homer, plaintive as Job, amorous as Theocritus, philosophic as Solomon! His verses, which soothe or stimulate the imagination of the Arab as much as the drugged smoke of the hookah, were re-echoed in guttural sounds by the animated group of saïs; and when the poet had accurately or strongly touched the sensitive chord of these men, so savage and yet so lively in their impressions, a slight murmur from their lips was heard; they clasped their hands, raised them above their ears, and, bowing their heads, exclaimed, "Allah! Allah! Allah!"

Afterwards, the recollection of hours thus passed in hearing these verses, which I was not able to understand, induced me to seek with care for some fragments of the popular Arab poems, and especially of the heroic poem of Antar. I succeeded in obtaining a certain number, and I had them translated by my dragoman during the winter evenings I spent on Lebanon. I myself began to understand a little Arabic, but not sufficient to read; my interpreter translated portions of the poem into common Italian, and I afterwards rendered them, word for word, into French. I preserve these poetical essays, utterly unknown in Europe, and I shall insert them at the end of this book. We see from them that poetry is of all places, of all times, and of all grades of civilisation.

The poem of Antar is, as I have said, the national poetry of the wandering Arab—it is the holy book of his imagination. How many times have I seen groups of Arabs, seated cross-legged round the fire of the bivouac, stretching their necks, listening with attentive ears, fixing their fiery eyes upon their companion, who was reciting to them some passages of these admirable productions, whilst a cloud of smoke rising from their pipes, formed above their heads an obscuring fantastic atmosphere, and the horses, leaning their heads upon them, seemed also attentive to the cadenced voice of the speaker! I used to seat myself not far from the circle and also listen, although I did not comprehend; yet I comprehended the sound of the voices, the play of the features, the shuddering of the auditors, I knew that it was poetry, and I imagined for myself affecting, dramatic, and wondrous actions, which I recited to myself. It is thus that on hearing melodious or impassioned music, I think they are words I hear, for the poetry of tuneful language reveals and utters to me the poetry of written language. Is it, indeed, necessary to speak every thing? I have never read poetry comparable with that poetry which I heard in the, to me, unintelligible language of these Arabs—the imagination always surpassing the reality. I thought the primitive and patriarchal poetry of the desert was open to my understanding; I saw the camel, the horse, the gazelle; I saw the oasis raising its palm tops of yellow green above the immense plains of the desert, the combats of warriors, and the young Arab maidens captured and rescued in the strife, and recognising their lovers in their champions. This reminds me that I have always had more pleasure in reading a foreign poet in a detestable mean translation than in the original itself; because the most divine original always leaves something to desire in the expression, and the bad translation indicates but the thought, the poetic design; because the imagination itself illustrating this design with words which it finds as transparent as the idea, enjoys a perfect satisfaction of its own creation. The thought being boundless, it conceives it so in the expression—the delight is thus also boundless. To give

ourselves this gratification, we must, in a certain degree, be musicians or poets; but who is not so?

Antar, at once the hero and the poet of the wandering Arab, is little known by us—we know his history imperfectly—we are ignorant even of the precise date of his existence. Some learned persons assert that he lived in the sixth century of our era. Local traditions carry him back much farther. Antar, according to the traditions gathered in part from his poem, was a negro slave, who obtained his liberty by his exploits and virtues, and gained his mistress Abta by love and heroism. The poem of Antar is not, like that of Homer, written entirely in verse; it is in poetic prose, of the purest and most classical Arabic, intermingled with verses. What is a singularity in this poem, is, that the portion written in prose is infinitely superior to the lyrical fragments which are interspersed. The poetic part presents the far-fetchedness, affectation, and style of literature in its decline; on the contrary, nothing is more simple, more natural, and more truly impassioned, than the recitative. All the Arab poetry, ancient or modern, that I have read, participates more or less in this unfortunate far-fetched tone of thought distinguishable in the poetry of Antar; if there is no play on words, there is at least the play on ideas and images, more fitted to amuse the mind than touch the heart. Art requires ages to arrive at the simple and sublime expression of nature. With the Arabs, verses are but an ingenious medium for trifling with their minds or their feelings. I except some religious poems, written about thirty years ago by a Maronite bishop of Mount Lebanon. I possess some fragments of them worthy the places which inspired them, and the sacred subjects to which this pious anchorite exclusively consecrated his masculine genius. These religious poems are more solemn, and more from the soul, than any of that sort I know in Europe; something of the accent of Job, the grandeur of Solomon, and the melancholy of David, remains in them.

I regret that no experienced orientalist has translated for us the whole of Antar; it would be better than a book of travels, for nothing represents manners so well as a poem. It would invigorate also our own inspirations, by the novel ideas which Antar has drawn from his solitudes; furthermore, it would be amusing as Ariosto, affecting as Tasso. I do not doubt that the Italian poetry of Ariosto and Tasso is twin-sister of the Arabic poetry; the same alliance of ideas that produced the *Alhambra*, Seville, Grenada, and some of our cathedrals, gave birth to *The Jerusalem*, and the charming dramas of the poet of Reggio. Antar is more interesting than *The Thousand and One Nights*, because he is less marvellous. The whole interest is drawn from the human heart, and the true or probable adventures of the hero and his lover. The English have an almost complete translation of this delightful poem; we possess but a few beautiful fragments, scattered in our literary reviews. The reader will scarcely perceive, in the imperfect version placed at the end of this book, the admirable beauties of the original.

A few paces from where I sat, a young Turkish female was weeping for her husband over one of those little monuments of white stone, with which all the eminences round Jerusalem are sprinkled. She appeared scarcely eighteen or twenty years old, and I never beheld so ravishing an image of grief. Her profile, which her veil thrown back permitted me to see, had the exquisite outlines of the most beautiful heads of the Parthenon, but at the same time the softness, gentleness, and graceful languor of the Asiatic women, a beauty much more feminine, much more voluptuous, and fascinating to the heart, than the severe and masculine beauty of the Grecian statues; with hair of a bronzed and gilded blonde, a colour much esteemed in this land of the sun, of which it is, as it were, a true reflection. Her hair, shook loose from her head, fell around her, and literally swept the ground; her breast was entirely uncovered, according to the custom of females in this part of Arabia; and when she stooped to embrace the turban, or to put her ear to the tomb, her

two naked nipples touched the earth, and left their print in the dust, like the mould of the lovely breast of the buried Atala, which the sand of the sepulchre still delineated, in the beautiful epic of M. de Chateaubriand. She had strewed with all sorts of flowers the tomb and the earth around; a handsome carpet of Damascus was stretched under her knees; on the carpet there were some vases of flowers, and a basket filled with figs and barley cakes; for she had to pass the entire day thus mourning. A hole hollowed in the earth, and which was judged to correspond with the ear of the dead, served to convey her voice towards that other world, in which he was at rest whom she came to visit. She stooped every moment towards this opening; she sang some words mingled with sobs; then she placed her ear as if she waited the answer; and again commenced to sing and weep as before. I attempted to get at the meaning of the words that she thus murmured, which reached me where I sat; but my Arab dragoman could not catch or render them. How I regret it! How many secrets of love and grief, how many sighs expressive of the whole life of two souls torn from each other, these broken sentences drowned in tears must have contained! Oh! if any thing could rouse the dead, it would be such words lisped by such a mouth!

Two yards from this female, under a piece of black cloth attached to two reeds stuck in the earth, by way of a parasol, her two young children were playing with three black Abyssinian slaves, seated like their mistress on the sand, which was covered by a carpet. These three women, all young and beautiful also, in the slender shapes and aquiline profiles of the negroes of Abyssinia, were grouped in different attitudes, like three statues taken from a single block. One of them had her knee on the ground, and held on the other one of the children, who was stretching out its arms towards its weeping mother. The second had her two legs folded under her, and her two hands clasped, like the Magdalene of Canova, upon her blue apron. The third was standing leaning a little over her companions, and moving her body from side to side, cradled in her bosom the most infantine of the children, which she in vain strove to lull to slumber. When the sobs of the youthful widow were heard by the children, they began to cry, and the three slaves, responding with a sigh to the grief of their mistress, commenced singing the monotonous airs of their country to appease the children.

It was a Sunday; two hundred yards from me, within the thick and lofty walls of Jerusalem, I heard issuing in gusts, the distant and feeble echoes of the vespers from the cupola of the Greek Convent. The hymns and psalms of David arose after three thousand years, sung by foreign voices and in a new tongue, upon the same hills which had inspired them; and I saw on the terraces of the convent some old monks moving about, with their breviaries in their hands, and muttering those prayers, now repeated through so many ages, in different languages and metres.

And I was there also to sing all these things; to study history at its cradle; to discover at its source the unknown stream of a civilisation and a religion; to inspire myself with the genius of the localities, and the hidden sense of histories and monuments, upon those spots whence the modern world took its departure; and to foster with a wisdom more real, and a philosophy more truthful, the solemn and reflective poetry of the epoch in which we live.

This scene, thrown by hazard before my eyes, and remembered as one of my thousand impressions during my travels, presented me with almost the whole purposes and phases of every poetry. The three black slaves lulling the children with the artless and infantine songs of their country, was the pastoral and imitative poetry of the infancy of nations; the young Turkish widow weeping for her husband, with songs and sobs, the elegiac and impassioned poetry, the poetry of the heart; the Arab soldiers, and monks, reciting the warlike and pious fragments of Antur, the epic and the

Greek monks chanting the psalms on their solitary terraces, the sacred and lyrical poetry of ages of enthusiasm and religious renovation; and I, meditating in my tent and reviewing historical facts, or the thoughts of all the earth, the poetry of philosophy and meditation, the offspring of an era in which mankind studies and reasons on itself, even in the songs with which it amuses its leisure hours. Such is all past poetry; but what will be the future?

November 4.—We passed the evening and the night at the convent of Saint John, to take leave of the excellent monks, whom we shall certainly never forget; the recollection of humble and unmixt virtues remains in the soul, like the perfumed odours of a temple. We gave to these good fathers an alms, scarcely sufficient to indemnify them for the expenses we had occasioned them; they thought nothing of the peril we had caused them to run; they begged me to recommend them to the terrible protection of Abougosh, whom I was to see again at Jeremial. We departed before daylight, in order to avoid the importunity of the Bedouins of Bethlehem and of the desert of Saint John, who continued to follow me, and began even to use menaces. By eight in the morning, we had cleared the high mountains which are topped by the tomb of the Maccabees, and we were seated under the fig-trees of Jeremial, smoking a pipe and taking coffee with Abougosh, his uncle, and his brothers. Abougosh loaded me with fresh marks of regard and kindness; he offered me a horse, which I refused, not wishing to make him any present myself, because it would have seemed an acknowledgment of the tribute which he ordinarily imposes on pilgrims, and from which Ibrahim has emancipated them. I placed under his protection the monks of Saint John, Bethlehem, and Jerusalem. I knew afterwards that he had in fact gone to deliver them from the outrages of the Bedouins of the desert; he had little idea, doubtless, when I asked his protection for some poor Frank monks exiled to his mountains, that eight months afterwards he should have to implore mine for the freedom of his own brother, carried captive to Damascus, and that I should be fortunate enough to be of service to him in my turn. Having drunk coffee and refreshed our horses, we started, escorted by the whole population of Jeremial, and proceeded beyond Ramla, to encamp in a superb olive wood which surrounds that town. Worn out with fatigue, and without provisions, we asked hospitality from the monks of the convent of the Holy Land; they refused us as infected persons, which we might very easily have been. We did without supper therefore, and we slept to the noise of the sea-breeze rustling amongst the branches of the olive-trees. It was here that the Virgin, Saint Joseph, and the Infant, passed the night in the fields, in the flight to Egypt. This recollection sweetened our couch.

Departed from Ramla at six in the morning, and came to breakfast at Jaffa, with M. Damiani. The day was passed in resting ourselves, and preparing provisions to return into Syria by the coast.*

Nothing can be more delightful than travelling in a caravan when the landscape is beautiful, when the horses, freshened by rest, march briskly over a firm and sandy soil; when the scenes vary and quickly succeed each other; when the sea, above all things, rolls at your horses' feet, and sends to your cheek the fresh breeze from its rolling waves, or dashes upon you sandy flakes of foam. This pleasure we experienced in skirting the charming gulf which separates Caypha from Acre. The desert formed by the plain of Zabulon was concealed on the right by the thickets of tall reeds, and by the palm-trees, which separate the strand from the country. We trod a route of white and fine sand, continually watered by the waves breaking upon it. The gulf, shut in on the east by the lofty point of the cape of Mount Carmel surmounted by its monastery, and to the west by the white walls of St Jean d'Acre in ruins, resembled a vast lake, on which the smallest vessels

* [The author means that he is now returning northwards along the coast of the Mediterranean.]

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

might sport with impunity. It is not so, however; the coast of Syria, every where dangerous, is most so in the Gulf of Caphia; the ships which take refuge there, and cast anchor on its bottom of soft sand, in order to escape a tempest, are frequently thrown on the coast; sad and picturesque wrecks proved this too well; the entire shore is bordered with the hulks of vessels buried in the sand; some of them yet show their broken prow, where sea-birds build their nests; others have only their masts out of the sand, which, motionless and leafless, resemble those funeral crosses which we plant on the ashes of those who are no more. A few of them have even their rigging yet hanging on the masts, but rotted with the salt vapour from the sea. The Arabs do not meddle with these ruins of shipwrecked vessels; time and the winter tempests are required to complete their destruction, or the sand to cover them up.

We saw there, as in the other gulfs of Syria, how the Arabs take fish. A man holding a small unfolded net above his head ready for casting, advances some paces into the sea, and chooses an hour and place at which the sun is behind him, and throws its light upon the water without dazzling him. He waits until the waves, heaped and rising upon each other, break on the ledge or the sand. He observes, with a piercing and practised eye, whether the wave carries any fish with it, and he throws his net at the very moment it breaks, and would drag back what it brings by its reflux. The net falls, the wave retires, and the fish remain. It requires the weather to be a little rough to pursue this sort of fishing on the coast of Syria; when the sea is calm, the fisher discovers nothing; it is when the wave rises to the sun that it becomes transparent.

The infected odour of battle-fields announced to us the neighbourhood of Acre; we were not more than a quarter of an hour from its walls. It is a heap of ruins; the domes of the mosques are full of holes, the embattled walls are breached with immense gaps, and the towers have fallen into the harbour. It had just endured a year's siege, and been taken by assault by Ibrahim's 40,000 soldiers.

The politics of people in the east are ill understood in Europe. We imagine them to have designs, when they are but caprices; plans, when they are but passions; and to look to a future, when to-day and to-morrow embrace the whole foresight. We have perceived, in the aggression of Mahomet-Ali, a premeditated and long progressive ambition; it was but the seduction of fortune, which, from one step to another, led him almost involuntarily to shake the throne of his master, and to conquer half his empire; a fresh opportunity may carry him still farther.

The quarrel originated in the following manner:—Abdallah, Pacha of Acre, a young inconsiderate man, raised to the pachalik by a caprice of favour or hazard, had revolted against the Grand Signior; being overcome, he had solicited the protection of the Pacha of Egypt, who secured his pardon from the Divan.* Abdallah, soon forgetting the gratitude which he owed to Mahomet, refused to execute certain conditions sworn to in the period of his misfortunes. Ibrahim marched to coerce him; he found at Acre an unexpected resistance; his anger was roused; he demanded from his father fresh troops, which were sent, and they were also repulsed. Mahomet-Ali grew tired, and recalled his son; but Ibrahim resisted, and declared his intention of dying under the walls of Acre, or of reducing it to the power of his father. He at length broke open the gates of the town, at a great sacrifice of men. Abdallah, being taken prisoner, prepared himself for death; Ibrahim sent for him to his tent, and having addressed to him a few bitter sarcasms, dispatched him to Alexandria. Instead of the bow-string or the sabre, Mahomet-Ali sent him his own horse, made him enter in triumph, seated him by his side on the divan, complimented him on his valour and fidelity to the sultan, and gave him a palace, slaves, and large revenues.

* [This is another use of the word divan. It here represents the supreme privy-council of the sultan, and the executive organ of the Ottoman government.]

Abdallah deserved this treatment for his bravery. Shut up in Acre with 3000 Turks, he resisted for a year the whole of the Egyptian land and sea forces. The fortune of Ibrahim, like that of Napoleon, vacillated before this rock. If the Grand Signior, in vain solicited by Abdallah, had sent him a few thousand men at the proper time, or had even sent to the Syrian coasts two or three of those fine frigates which were uselessly lying at anchor before the pavilions of the Bosphorus, Ibrahim had been repulsed; he would have retreated into Egypt, convinced of the impotency of his rage. But the Porte was faithful to its system of fatalism; it permitted the ruin of its pacha to be accomplished. The bulwark of Syria was overthrown, and the Divan awoke not from its torpor before it was too late. However, Mahomet-Ali wrote to his general to return; but he, a man of courage and enterprise, determined to test to the uttermost the weakness of the sultan and his own fortune. He advanced. Two brilliant victories, weakly disputed, that of Homs in Syria, and that of Konia in Asia Minor, rendered him absolute master of Arabia, of Syria, and of all those kingdoms of Pontus, Bitlynia, and Cappadocia, which at present compose Carannania. The Porte might yet have cut off his retreat, and, disembarking troops in his rear, have retaken possession of the towns and provinces where he could not leave sufficient garrisons; a body of 6000 men thrown into the defiles of Taurus and Syria had imprisoned Ibrahim amidst his victories, and made prey of him and his army. The Turkish fleet was infinitely more numerous than that of Ibrahim, or rather the Porte had an immense and magnificent fleet; Ibrahim had only two or three frigates. But from the commencement of the campaign, Kalil-Pacha, a young man of elegant manners, the favourite of the sultan, and named by him Capitan-Pacha (High Admiral), had retired from the seas before the small force of the Egyptian; I had seen him with my own eyes quit the harbour of Rhodes, and shut himself up in the road of Marmorizza, upon the coast of Carannania, at the bottom of the Gulf of Maeri. Once entered with his ships into this port, the entrance of which is singularly narrow, Ibrahim, with two vessels, could prevent him coming out. He, in fact, came out no more, and all winter, when the military operations were the most important and decisive on the coasts of Syria, Ibrahim's fleet alone appeared in those seas, and carried him, without obstacle, reinforcements and munitions of war. But, however, Kalil-Pacha was neither a traitor nor a coward; but thus go the affairs of a people who remain lethargic when all is in motion around them. The fortune of nations lies in their genius; the genius of the Ottomans now trembles before that of the weakest of their pachas. The rest of the campaign, which recalls that of Alexander, is well known. Ibrahim is incontestably a hero, and Mahomet-Ali a great man; but all their fortune rests upon their own two heads: take away these two men, and there is no more an Egypt or an Arab empire, there are no longer Maccabees for Islamism, and the East will return to the West, by that invincible law of nature which gives empire to intelligence.

Same date.—The sand which borders the Gulf of Acre became more and more revolting. We began to perceive the bones of men, horses, and camels, scattered on the beach, whitening in the sun, and washed by the foam of the waves. At every step these mournful relics multiplied before our eyes. The whole strand was covered with them, and the noise of our horses' feet disturbed bands of wild dogs, hideous jackals, and birds of prey, engaged for the last two months in gnawing the remains of the horrible feast, which the cannon of Ibrahim and Abdallah had made ready for them. Some dragged in their flight the limbs of men, others those of horses; and some eagles, perched on the bony heads of camels, rose at our approach with enraged cries, and hovered, spite of our musket-shots, over their disgusting prey. The high grass, the reeds, and the shrubs of the shore, were equally strewed with these wrecks of men and animals. But war was not

the sole cause of this destruction. The typhus fever, which had desolated Acre for several months, finished what arms had spared; there scarcely remained twelve or fifteen hundred persons in a town containing from twelve to fifteen thousand souls, and every day they threw from the walls, or into the sea, fresh corpses, which the waves cast on the shores of the gulf, or the jackals dragged amongst the bushes. We went as far as the eastern gate of this unfortunate town. The atmosphere was not respirable; we entered not, but turning to the right along the battered walls on which some slaves were at work, we traversed the field of battle in its whole extent, from the walls of the town to the country house of the pachas of Acre, built in the middle of the plain, nearly two hours' distance from the sea-side. On approaching this house, which had a splendid appearance, flanked with elegant kiosks of an Indian architecture, we saw long furrows a little deeper than those which the plough makes in our strong soils. They were stretched over a space half a league long, and nearly as broad, and the ground thrown up was one or two feet above the level of the earth. It was the site of Ibrahim's camp, and the tomb of 15,000 men, whom he had caused to be buried in these sepulchral trenches. We marched a long time with much labour over this soil, which covered with a slight layer so many victims of the ambition and waywardness of the thing they call a hero.

We urged our horses forward, their hoofs clashing every moment against the dead bodies, and crushing the bones which the jackals had disinterred, and we proceeded to encamp about an hour's march from this dismal spot, in a charming part of the plain, watered by a running stream, over-shadowed with palms, oranges, and lemons, and out of reach of the breeze from Acre, or its pervading exhalations. This grove, thrown like an oasis amidst the nakedness of the plain of Acre, had been planted by the preceding pacha, the successor of the famous Djezzar-Pacha. Some poor Arabs, sheltered in huts of earth and mud, furnished us with oranges, eggs, and chickens. We slept there.

On the following day, M. de Laroyere could scarcely rise from his mat and mount his horse; his members, numbened by pain, were tortured by the least movement. He felt the first symptoms of the typhus, which his medical science taught him to distinguish better than we could. But the place offering us neither an abode nor resources to restore an invalid, we hastened to remove from it before the malady became more serious, and we went fifteen leagues from there to sleep in the plain of Tyre, on the banks of a river shaded by immense reeds, not far from an isolated ruin, which seemed to belong to the era of the crusades.* The motion and heat had relieved M. de Laroyere. We laid him under the tent, and went to shoot the wild ducks and geese, which rose in clouds from the banks of the river. We killed as many of these birds as sufficed for our whole caravan.

On the following day we met on the sea-shore—a delightful spot, shaded by marine cedars and magnificent plane-trees—a Turkish aga, who was returning from Mecca with a numerous suite of men and horses. We established ourselves beneath a tree near the fountain, at a little distance from the tree under which the aga was breakfasting. His slaves were walking his horses about. I was struck with the symmetry and light step of a young Arab stallion, of pure breed. I instructed

*[Tyre, which M. de Lamartine does not seem to have entered, is now a poor small town, situated on a low promontory projecting into the sea. It was visited by Mr Stephens, who thus speaks of it. "On the extreme end of a long, low, sandy isthmus, which seems to have crawled out as far as it could, stands the fallen city of Tyre, seeming at a distance, to rest on the bosom of the sea. A Turkish soldier was stationed at the gate. I entered, under an arch so low that it was necessary to stoop on the back of my horse, and passed through dark and narrow streets, sheltered by mats stretched over the bazaars from the scorching heat of a Syrian sun. A single fishing-boat was lying in the harbour of the crowning city, whose merchants were princes, whose traffickers were the honourable of the earth."]

my dragoman to enter into conversation about him with the aga. We sent him, by way of presents, some of our provisions, and a pair of pistols, and he presented us in return with a Persian yatagan. I ordered my horses to be paraded before him, to lead the conversation in a natural manner to that topic. We succeeded in that object, but the difficulty was to make the proposition that he should sell his horse to me. My dragoman informed him that one of my companions was so ill, that he could not get a horse of a sufficiently easy pace to carry him. The aga then said, that he had one upon whose back he could drink a cup of coffee at full gallop, without letting fall a drop. This was the beautiful animal which I had admired, and which I ardently longed to possess for my wife. After a long circumlocution, we finished by striking a bargain, and I carried off the horse, which I called El Kantara, in memory of the place and the fountain where I had purchased him. I got on him that very moment to complete the rest of the journey. I never bestrode an animal of such easy motion. I felt neither the elastic movement of his shoulders, nor the treading of his hoof upon the rock, nor the slightest pull of his head on the rein. Raising his feet like a gazelle from his prominent chest, one might have believed it was a bird, sustaining itself on its wings, and skimming the ground. He was swifter also than any Arab horse I tried him against. His colour was a pearly grey. I gave him to my wife, who would never mount any other during our sojourn in the East. I will always regret this finished creature. He was born in Khorassan, and was only five years old.

In the evening, we arrived at Solomon's Well. On the morrow, early, we entered Saïde, the ancient Sidon, escorted by the Franks of the town and the sons of M. Girardin, our excellent vice-consul at Saïde. We found also at Saïde M. Cottafago, whom we had known at Nazareth, and his family. He had just built a house in the town, and was occupied with preparations for the marriage of one of his daughters. The ancient Sidon offering no longer any vestige of its former grandeur, we gave ourselves entirely to the amiable attentions of M. Girardin, and to the pleasure of talking with him about Europe and the East. Become a patriarch in the land of patriarchs, he and his family presented to us the image of the patriarchal virtues, and recalled to us likewise their manners.

The typhus fever showed itself with all its symptoms in the increasing illness of M. de Laroyere. Being unable any longer to mount on horseback, we freighted a boat to transport him by sea to Beirout. We departed with the rest of the caravan. I sent a courier to Lady Stanhope, to thank her for her obliging proceedings in my favour with respect to the chief Abougosh, and to beg her to seize any occasions that might present themselves to announce my coming to the Arabs of Bkaa, Balbek, and Palmyra.

November 5.—Slept at a miserable deserted hovel, on the borders of the sea; wrote some verses during the interval in my Bible; overjoyed at approaching Beirout, after a journey so happily accomplished; intercepted an Arab courier, with a letter from my wife; all well, Julia in flourishing health—both waiting for me to go and pass some days at the monastery of Antoura, on Lebanon, with the Catholic patriarch who had come to invite us. At four in the afternoon, a frightful storm arose; the clouded sky seemed to fall all at once on the mountains to our right; the thunder from the dark clouds meeting on the peaks of Lebanon, was confounded with the roaring of the sea, which was like a plain of snow, ploughed up by a furious hurricane. The rain did not fall, as in the West, in drops more or less continuous, but in unbroken and weighty streams, which strike and sink down both man and horse, like the blow of the tempest. The day completely disappeared; our horses toiled through torrents filled with rolling stones, and were every instant on the point of being carried off their legs into the sea. When the sky rose again, and light reappeared, we found ourselves on the skirts of the pines of Fakardin, half a league from the town.

Animals have their country as well as men; those of my horses who remembered this locality from having often carried us to it, although wearied with a journey of 300 leagues, neighed, cocked their ears, and bounded with joy upon the sand. I left the caravan to defile slowly through the pines; I urged Lebanon to the gallop, and arrived, my heart trembling with anxiety and joy, in the arms of my wife. Julia was amusing herself in a neighbouring house with the daughters of the Prince of the Mountain, who had been appointed governor of Beirut during my absence; she saw me arrive from the top of the terrace. I heard her crying, as she came, "Where is he? Is it really he?" She entered, threw herself into my arms, covered me with caresses, and ran round the room, her beautiful eyes all brilliant with tears of delight, exclaiming, "Oh, how happy I am! Oh, how happy I am!" and came again to seat herself on my knees, and to embrace me. There were two young Jesuit monks of Lebanon in the room, on a visit to my wife; it was long before I could address to them a word of politeness. They themselves were mute before this artless and impassioned expression of the love of a child for its father, and before the heavenly lustre which her bliss added to her dazzling beauty, and they remained standing, awed into silence and admiration. In the meantime our friends and suite arrived, and filled the mulberry fields with the horses and tents.

Several days of rest and happiness were passed in receiving the visits of our friends in Beirut. The sons of the Emir Beshir, called down from the mountains by the orders of Ibrahim, to occupy the country, which threatened to rise in favour of the Turks, were encamped in the valley of Nahr-el-Kelb, about an hour's march from us.

November 7.—The Sardinian consul, M. Bianco, connected for many years with these princes, invited us to a dinner he gave them. They arrived, clothed in magnificent caftans (robes), woven throughout with thread of gold; their turbans were composed of the richest stuffs of Cachemire. The eldest of the princes, who commanded the army of his father, had a poignard, the hilt of which was entirely encrusted with diamonds of inestimable value. Their suite was numerous and novel; among a great number of Mussulman and black slaves, there was a poet, quite similar by his attributes to the bards of the middle-ages. His duties consist in singing the virtues and exploits of his master, in composing tales for him, when he calls upon him to beguile the time, and in standing behind him, during meals, to improvise verses, a sort of toasts in his own honour, or in that of the guests whom the prince designs to distinguish. There was likewise a Catholic Maronite chaplain, or confessor, who never quits him, even at table, and to whom alone the harem-gates are thrown open: he was a monk of jovial and martial aspect, exactly such a person as we call chaplain of a regiment. The confessor, on account of his ecclesiastical character, was seated at table, but the poet remained on his legs.

These princes, and especially the eldest, did not appear at all embarrassed at our manners, or the presence of European ladies. They conversed with us with the same graceful address, the same propriety, the same freedom of spirit, as if they had been bred in the most elegant court in Europe. Oriental politeness is always on a level with ours, because it is of a much older date, and originally more pure and unalloyed. To an unprejudiced eye, there is no comparison between the nobleness, the decorum, and the solemn grace of the Turkish, Arabic, Indian, or Persian manners, and our own. In us may be perceived a young people, scarcely emancipated from a harsh, gross, and imperfect civilisation; but they are the children of a noble family, the inheritors of ancient wisdom and virtue. Their nobility, which is but the descent of primitive worth, is written on their foreheads, and impressed on all their customs; and, more than all, there is no mob amongst them. The moral civilisation, of which alone I am speaking, is everywhere on a level. The shepherd and the emir are of the same family, speak the same

language, have the same usages, and are joint inheritors of the same grand traditions which form the moral atmosphere of a people.

At dessert the wines of Cyprus and Lebanon were profusely circulated; the Christian Arabs, and the family of the Emir Beshir, which is Christian, or believes itself to be so, drink wine without scruple on occasions. Toasts were drunk to the success of Ibrahim, to the enfranchisement of Lebanon, and to the friendship between the Franks and Arabs. The prince proposed a toast to the ladies present at the fête; and his bard, being ordered by the prince to make verses for the occasion, sang in recitative, and at the full pitch of his voice, some of the following purport:—

"Let us drink the juice of Eden, which makes drunk and rejoices the heart of slave and prince. It is the wine of those plants which Noah himself planted, when the dove, instead of the branch of olive, brought him from heaven a cutting of vine. By virtue of this wine, the poet instantly becomes a prince, and the prince a poet.

Let us drink it to the honour of those young and beautiful Franks, who come from the country where every woman is a queen. The eyes of the women of Syria are soft, but they are veiled. In the eyes of the daughters of the west, there is more intoxication than in the transparent cup which I drink.

To drink wine and behold the visages of women are double sins for the Moslem; for the Arab they are double enjoyments and praises to God."

The chaplain appeared enchanted with these verses, and joined in the repetitions of the bard, laughing and drinking off his glass. The prince proposed to us the spectacle of a falcon hunt, a habitual diversion amongst all the princes and sheiks of Syria. It was from thence the crusaders brought the custom into Europe.

November 9.—The climate, with the exception of some gusts of wind upon the sea, and some storms of rain about the middle of the day, is as fine as in the month of May in France. As soon as the rains begin, a fresh spring follows; the walls of the terraces which support the cultivated slopes of Lebanon, and the fertile hills in the environs of Beirut, are so covered with vegetation in a few days, that the earth is completely concealed under the moss, grass, brushwood, and flowers; the green barley carpets all the fields, which were nothing but dust on our arrival; and the mulberries, which open their second buds, form around the houses groves impenetrable to the sun. We perceive the roofs of houses scattered in the plain at intervals, rising out of this ocean of verdure, and Greek and Syrian women, in their rich and brilliant costume, like queens, taking the air on the pavilions of their gardens. Narrow footpaths, hollowed in the sand, conduct from house to house, from hill to hill, through these continued gardens, which reach from the sea to the foot of Lebanon. Following them, we come all at once to the portals of the houses, where we discover the most enchanting scenes of the patriarchal life; there are the women and the young girls seated under the mulberry or the fig-tree before their door, embroidering rich woollen carpets, with varied and bright colours, or, having attached the ends of a silken thread to distant trees, wind it slowly up, walking and singing from tree to tree. The men, on the other hand, walk backwards from the trees, occupied in weaving silk stuffs, and throwing the shuttle, which another returns to them. The children are lying in cradles of rushes, or on mats under the shade, and some are hanging on the branches of the orange-trees. The large sheep of Syria, with their long trailing tails, too heavy to move, are extended in the holes which are cut expressly for them in the fresh earth before the door. One or two goats, with long pendant ears, like those of our hunting dogs, and sometimes a cow, complete the rural scene. The horse of the master is always there likewise, covered with its splendid harness, and ready to be mounted; he makes part of the family, and appears to take an interest in all that is done, in all that is said, around him; his countenance is animated like that of a human being;

when a stranger appears, and speaks to him, he cocks his ears, curls his lips, contracts his nostrils, turns his head to the wind, and scents the unknown who caresses him; his soft and pensive eyes glitter like two red coals under the beautiful long mane hanging down his forehead.

The Greek, Syrian, and Arab cultivators who dwell in these houses at the foot of Lebanon, have nothing savage or barbarous about them; better educated than the peasants in our provinces, they all can read, and all understand two languages, Arabic and Greek; they are mild, laborious, peaceable, and decorous; occupied all the week in the labours of the field, or the working of silk, they refresh themselves on Sundays, by assisting with their families in the long and showy rites of the Greek or Syrian creed; they return afterwards to their houses to enjoy a repast, somewhat more sumptuous than on ordinary days; the women and girls, adorned in their richest clothes, their hair plaited, and all strewed with orange-flowers, scarlet wall-flowers, and carnations, seat themselves on mats before the doors of their dwellings, with their friends and neighbours. It is impossible to describe with the pen, the groups so redolent of the picturesque, from the richness of their costume and their beauty, which these females then compose in the landscape. I see amongst them daily such countenances as Raphael had not beheld, even in his dreams as an artist. It is more than the Italian or Greek beauty; there is the nicety of shape, the delicacy of outline, in a word, all that Greek and Roman art has left us as the most finished model; but it is rendered more bewitching still, by a primitive artlessness of expression, by a serene and voluptuous languor, by a heavenly clearness, which the glances from the blue eyes, fringed with black eyelids, cast over the features, and by a smiling archness, a harmony of proportions, a rich whiteness of skin, an indescribable transparency of tint, a metallic gloss upon the hair, a gracefulness of movement, a novelty in the attitudes, and a vibrating silvery tone of voice, which render the young Syrian girl the very *houri* of the visual paradise. Such admirable and varied beauty is also very common; I never go into the country for an hour, without meeting several such females going to the fountains or returning, with their Etruscan urns upon their shoulders, and their naked legs clasped with rings of silver. On a Sunday, the men and boys seat themselves on mats stretched at the foot of some spreading sycamore, at a short distance from a fountain;—this is their complete relaxation. There they remain motionless for hours, relating marvellous tales, and drinking from time to time a cup of coffee or fresh water. Others go to the tops of the hills, and there, grouped under the vine or olive trees, appear to enjoy with ecstasy the sea-view which these heights command, the transparency of the atmosphere, the singing of the birds, and all those instinctive pleasures of the pure and simple mind, which our populations have lost in the blustering drunkenness of the tavern, and the stupefactions of revellings. Never were more beautiful scenes in the creation so prolific of elastic and agreeable impressions; here nature is in truth a perpetual hymn to the bounty of the Creator, and no false refinement, no spectacle of misery or vice, disturbs for the stranger the enchanting melody of this hymn; men, women, birds, animals, trees, mountains, sea, sky, climate—all are beautiful, natural, splendid, and disposing to religion.

November 10.—This morning I went early to wander with Julia upon the hill which the Greeks name Saint Demetrius, about a league from Beirut, going towards Lebanon, and following obliquely the curve of the sea shore. Two of my Arabs accompanied us, one as a guide, the other to lead Julia's horse by the head, and to catch her in his arms if the animal grew frisky. When the paths became too steep, we quitted our horses for a moment, and scaled on foot the natural or artificial terraces which form verdant steps all the way up Saint Demetrius. In my boyhood, I had led to myself this terrestrial paradise, this all nations have in their remembrance,

either as a charming dream, or as the tradition of a more holy epoch; I had followed Milton in his ravishing descriptions of the enchanting abode of our first parents; but here, as in all other things, nature far outstrips imagination. God has not permitted man to dream any thing so beautiful as he has made. I had dreamed an Eden—I can say I have seen it.

When we had continued half an hour, proceeding under the arched nopal-trees, which line all the pathways on the plain, we began to mount by still narrower and steeper paths to the successive table-lands, whence the view of the country, the sea, and Lebanon, opens out yet more considerably. These table-lands, which are of moderate breadth, are all encompassed by forest-trees unknown to our climate, and the names of which I unfortunately am not acquainted with; but their trunks, the form of their branches, the strange appearance of their pyramidal or dishevelled tops, give to this edging of vegetation a grace and novelty which sufficiently pourtray Asia. Their leaves, likewise, are of all forms and tints, from the black verdure of the cypress to the grey green of the olive, and the yellow of the citron and the orange; from the broad leaves of the Chinese mulberry, one of which is sufficient to shade the sun from the face of a child, to the slight slips of the tea-tree, the pomegranate, and other innumerable shrubs with a foliage resembling parsley, which interpose, as it were, a light drapery of vegetable lace-work between the horizon and the beholder. The ground under these woods is covered with flowers from verdant plants growing beneath their shade. The interior part of the levels is sown with barley, and at every angle two or three palm-trees, or the sombre and rounded dome of the colossal carob-tree, indicate the place where an Arab husbandman has built his cottage, encircled by vine-plants, by a ditch surmounted with green hedges of Indian figs, loaded with their prickly fruit, and by a little grove of orange-trees, scattered with carnations and wall-flowers for the ornament of his laughter's hair. When the road conducted us to the door of these houses, concealed like nests amongst this waving verdure, the countenances of their happy and amiable inhabitants never betrayed any surprise, sulkiness, or anger. They saluted us with the pious salutation of the orientals, *Saba-el-kair*, ("May the day be a blessed one for you!") Some of them entreated us to rest under their palm-tree, and brought us, according to their condition, a mat or a carpet, and offered us fruits, milk, and flowers from their garden. We sometimes accepted their presents, and promised to return and bring them some European production. But their politeness and hospitality were perfectly disinterested; they like the Franks, because they can cure maladies, are acquainted with the virtues of the different plants, and adore the same God as themselves.

We mounted from one level to another; the same scenes, the same enclosures of trees, the same vegetation upon the land they encircle. But from height to height the magnificent horizon expanded, the lower levels stretched in variegated colouring, and the rows of shrubs, seeming grouped together by the distance, formed clumps and dark spots below us. We traversed these table-lands from hill to hill, occasionally descending into the valleys which separate them—valleys a thousand times more shaded and more delightful even than the hills, being completely veiled by the trees of the terraces which rise above them, and buried in a redundant and odoriferous vegetation, yet having at their terminations a straitened glimpse of the prospect over the plain and the sea. As the plain grew out of sight when we reached the more elevated of these valleys, they appeared to open immediately on the beach, their dark trees standing out from the blue waves; and we amused ourselves, when seated at the foot of a palm-tree, by observing the sails of the vessels, which were in reality four or five leagues from us, glide slowly from one tree to another, as if they were sailing on a lake, and the valley was directly on its shore.

We came at last, in our wanderings, to the most perfect and enchanting of these landscapes. It was one

of the higher valleys, open to the east and west, and entombed in the folds of the last chain of hills which advances into the great valley in which the Nahr-el-Beirout flows. No words can describe the profuse vegetation which carpets its bed and sides; although its slopes on both sides are of rock, they are so clothed with plants of all sorts, dripping with the humidity, as it distils drop by drop, so covered with clusters of heath, fern, sweet-smelling herbs, rushes, ivy, and shrubs, rooted in their imperceptible clefts, that we could not doubt it was the live rock that thus vegetated. It is a bushy carpeting one or two feet thick, a velveting of wedged vegetation, variegated in tint and dye, strewn throughout with clusters of unknown flowers, of a thousand forms and a thousand odours, now sleeping motionless, like flowers painted on a rug laid down in a drawing-room, and then, when the sea-breeze glides over them, rising with the herbs and twigs, amongst which they are blown like the silky hair of an animal stroked backwards, diversified with waving hues, and resembling a river of leaves and blossoms gushing in perfumed waves. There rise from them gusts of bewitching odour, multitudes of insects with coloured wings, and innumerable birds fluttering and perching on the neighbouring trees. The air is filled with their voices, mingled with the buzzing of wasps and bees, and with that dull murmur from the earth in spring time, which we imagine, with reason perhaps, to be the noise of its thousand vegetations. The drops of dew fall from every leaf, and glitter upon every sprig of grass, as the sun rises, and his rays glance above the lofty trees and piled rocks which encompass the valley.

We breakfasted there, on a stone at the edge of a cavern, where two gazelles had taken refuge on hearing our steps. We were careful not to disturb the asylum of these beautiful creatures, which are in the deserts what the lamb is in our meadows, or tame doves on the roofs or in the courts of our dwellings.

All the valley was enveloped with the same foliage and vegetation; we could not restrain an exclamation at each step; I do not recollect ever to have seen so much life in nature, thus accumulated and overflowing, in so small a space. We followed this vale in all its length, seating ourselves, from time to time, where the shade was coolest, and brushing the dew-drops from the grass with our hands, and raising odours and clouds of insects from its bosom. How great is God!—how inexhaustible and infinite must be the spring whence all this life, and beauty, and bounteousness, flow! If there be so much to see, to admire, to be astounded and overpowered at, in a single petty corner of nature, what will it be when the curtain of worlds shall be lifted up for us, and we shall contemplate the whole of boundless creation! It is impossible to see and reflect, without being filled with the internal conviction of a God. All nature is sprinkled with the glittering fragments of the mirror in which God reflects himself!

On arriving near the western mouth of the vale, the sky opens, its declivities become less steep; the snows shining on the tops of Lebanon rise into the sky undulating with heated vapours. We draw our eyes from these eternal snows to the black rings of pines, cypresses, and cedars, and to the deep ravines reposing in the shade like nests; then to the perpendicular rocks, tinged with a golden colour, at the foot of which extend the high Maronite convents and the villages of the Druzes, the whole being finished by olive forests, which die away in descending to the borders of the plain. The plain, which stretches between the hills where we stood and the roots of Lebanon, may be a league wide. It is winding, and we could only catch about two leagues of its length; the rest was concealed from us by knolls covered with woods of black pines. The Nahr-el-Beirout, or river of Beirout, which pours, some miles off, from one of the most deep and rocky of the gorges of Lebanon, divides the plain in two. It flows gracefully in a full stream, sometimes confined by its banks lined with reeds, sometimes widening between verdant slopes, and forming little lakes glittering in the plain. It is covered with vegetation; and we perceive asses, horses, goats, black buffaloes, and white cows,

scattered in flocks along the river, and Arab shepherds passing over a ford upon the backs of camels. We also distinguished at a greater distance Maronite monks, clad in their long black robes and cowls, ploughing their fields upon the first ridges of the mountain. We heard the bell of the convents, which called them from time to time to prayer. Then they stopped their oxen, and, placing their rods against the handle of the plough, and throwing themselves on their knees for some minutes, they gave their team wind, whilst they breathed their souls to heaven.

Proceeding onwards, and commencing to descend towards the river, we suddenly descried the sea, which the sides of the valley had hitherto concealed from us, and the wide mouth of the Nahr-el-Beirout, which flows into it. Not far from its mouth, a Roman bridge, almost in ruins, with very elevated arches, but without parapets, crosses the river; a long straggling caravan from Damascus, going to Aleppo, was passing it at that very moment. We saw the travellers, one by one, some upon a dromedary, others upon horseback, issue from the reeds which overshadow the abutments of the bridge, slowly scale the summit of the arches, intercept, for a moment, the blue sea with their beasts of burden, and their brilliant and fantastic costumes, then descend from the ruin, and disappear with their file of asses and camels under the reeds, rose-laurels, and planes, which hang over the other bank of the river. A little farther we saw them again appear on the sandy beach, where the waves were rolling their foam to the very feet of their horses. Immense perpendicular rocks, standing out from an advanced point, finally concealed them, and being prolonged into the sea, shut up the horizon on that side. At the mouth of the river, the sea was of two colours—blue and green in the expanse, and twinkling with restless diamonds; yellow and dirty where the waters of the river came in contact with its waves, and tinged them with the red sand which they constantly carry down with them into the bay. Seventeen ships, at anchor in the roads, were rocking amidst the heavy swell which always prevails there, and their masts rose and sank like long reeds bending to the wind. Some had their masts naked as trees in winter; others, with their sails spread to be dried by the sun, resembled those large white sea-birds, which float in the air without their wings seeming to vibrate. The gulf, more dazzling than the sky above it, reflected a portion of the snows of Lebanon, and the monasteries, with their indented walls, standing on the advanced ledges. A few fishing-boats were passing in full sail, and making towards the river as their harbour. The valley below our feet, the slopes towards the plain, the river flowing under the conical arches of the bridge, the sea with its little bays in the rocks; the prodigious block of Lebanon, with the numberless varieties of its structure; the pyramids of snow, penetrating like cones of silver into the depths of the sky, where the eyes seek them as they would stars; the insensible hummings of the insects around us, the songs of the thousands of birds on the trees, the murmurings of the breeze, and the almost human wailings of the camels of the caravans; the heavy and regular echo of the waves breaking on the beach, at the mouth of the river; the meandering and green banks of the Nahr-el-Beirout on the right; the broken and gigantic Lebanon in front of us; the lustrous and serene arch of heaven, intercepted only by the peaks of the mountain, or by the tops of the large trees; the warmth, the perfume of the atmosphere in which all seemed to float, like an image in the transparent water of a Swiss lake: all these prospects, all these noises, all these shades, all this clear light, all these impressions, formed of this scene the most sublime and enchanting landscape upon which my eyes have ever gazed! What was it, then, for Julia? She was all emotion, all trembling with inward sensation and pleasure; and I rejoiced in impressing such a spectacle upon her young imagination! God exhibits himself here better than in the lines of a catechism; he is depicted in features worthy of himself; the sovereign beauty, the pervading bounteousness of nature in its perfection, reveal him

as he is, to the mind of a child; the physical material loveliness is transferred into a sentiment of moral perfectibility. To the artist are shown the statues of Greece to inspire him with the instinct of the beautiful. To the virgin mind must be shown the grand and beautiful scenes of nature, in order that the idea it forms of its author shall be just and worthy!

We remounted our horses at the foot of the hill, near the margin of the river. We crossed the bridge, and ascended some wooded eminences to the first monastery on Lebanon, which stood, like a fortified castle, on a granite rock. The monks recognised me from the reports of their Arabs, and received me into the convent. I went over the cells, the refectory, and the chapel. The monks, returning from labour, were busied in mnyoking the oxen and buffaloes in the large courtyard, which had all the appearance of a farmyard, being filled with ploughs, cattle, dunghills, poultry, and all the accompaniments of rustic life. The labour was going on without bustle or noise, as by men animated with a spirit of decorum, though not under any severe or rigorous control. Their countenances were mild, serene, and expressive of peace and contentment, such as a community of husbandmen should be. When the bell for repast sounded, they entered the refectory, not all together, but one by one, or in couples, as they finished the work they were engaged on at the time. The meal consisted, as upon all other days, of two or three cakes of meal, dried, rather than baked, on hot stones, of water, and of five olives preserved in oil; occasionally a little cheese or sour milk is added. Such is the entire nourishment of these carnobites, which they take standing or squatted on the floor. The furniture used in Europe is altogether unknown to them. After joining in their dinner, and eating a piece of dough, and drinking a glass of excellent Lebanon wine which the superior placed before us, we revisited some of the cells, which are all alike, being small rooms five or six feet square, each containing, for its whole furniture, a rush mat and a carpet, with images of the saints nailed against the walls, an Arab bible, and a few Syrian manuscripts. A long thatched gallery served as an approach to all these chambers. The view which is enjoyed from the windows of the monastery is beautiful; the lower slopes of Lebanon, the plain and river of Beirout, the waving tops of pine-forests, and then the sea, enclosed by its capes and rocks into gulfs and bays, with white sails traversing it in all directions: such is the prospect always before the eyes of these monks. We received from them some presents of dried fruits and wine in leathern bottles, which were placed on the backs of asses; and we quitted them to return by a different road to Beirout.

We descended by a steep path, cut through the blocks of yellow and soft freestone, which covers the first tiers of Lebanon. In the interstices of the rock a few shrubs and herbs take root, with flowers similar to the tulip of our gardens, but considerably larger. We disturbed several gazelles and jackals, which were sheltered in the hollows of the rocks. A great number of partridges, quails, and woodcocks, flew up at the noise of our horses' steps. Arrived in the plain, we again met the vine, barley, and palm tree. We passed nearly halfway across it, in the midst of this rich vegetation, until we came to the foot of a wide hill, covered with a forest of Italian pines, with various glades, where we saw flocks of camels and goats browsing. This hill concealed from us the Nahr-el-Beirout, which we were intent upon crossing at its southern part. We diva under the branches of these beautiful and lofty pines, and after winding for about a quarter of an hour beneath their shade, we suddenly heard loud shouts, and the noi- of a multitude of men, women, and children, coming towards us, playing drums, bagpipes, and flutes. In an instant we were surrounded by five or six hundred Arabs of strange aspect. The chiefs, clad in magnificent costumes, but dirty and ragged, advanced towards us, at the head of their musicians, and, bowing, addressed to us some apparently respectful compliments, which we could not, however, understand. Their gestures

and shouts, backed by those of the whole tribe, assisted us in interpreting their meaning. They prayed, and, indeed, forced us to follow them into the interior of the forest, where their camp was pitched. It was one of those tribes of Kurds who come from the provinces bordering on Persia to pass the winter, sometimes in the plains of Mesopotamia, sometimes in those of Syria, carrying with them their families and flocks. They take possession of a wood, a plain, or a hill, and fix themselves there for five or six months. Much more barbarous than the Arabs, their invasions and neighbourhood are much feared; they are the armed gypsies of the East.

Encompassed by this crowd of men, women, and children, we marched to the din of their savage music and their yells, whilst they regarded us with a curiosity half good-natured and half ferocious. We soon reached the middle of their encampment, and stopped before the tent of one of the sheikhs of the tribe. They made us descend from our horses, which they gave to the charge of some young Kurds, and brought us carpets of Carmania, on which we seated ourselves at the foot of a tree. The slaves of the sheikh presented us pipes and coffee; the women of the tent brought camel's milk for Julia. The appearance of this camp of nomade barbarians, in the midst of a gloomy forest of pines, merits a description.

The forest at this spot was thin, and interspersed with broad glades. At the foot of each tree a family had its tent. These tents were for the most part nothing but a piece of black cloth, made of goats' hair, fastened to the trunk of the tree by a cord, and supported on the other side by two posts stuck in the earth. The cloth did not always cover the whole space occupied by the family; but a rag was drawn to the side where the sun or wind was beating, to shelter the tent and the fire lighted on the hearth. No furniture was visible excepting black earthen jars, lying on their sides, used by the women to carry water, some goat-skin bottles, sabres, and long guns, suspended in bundles to the branches of the trees; with mats, carpets, and men and women's clothing, thrown here and there upon the ground. Some of them had two or three square boxes of red painted wood, with gilded nails to contain their effects. I saw only two or three horses in the whole tribe. The greatest number of the families had at their tent-door a camel stretched on the ground, and ruinating with its high thoughtful head, a few fine goats with long black silky hair and pendant ears, a few sheep and buffaloes. Many of them had likewise one or two splendid white greyhounds of great height. These dogs, contrary to the custom of the Mahomedans, were fat, and in good condition; they seemed to know their master, therefore I presumed that they were used for the chase. The sheikhs appeared to enjoy an absolute authority, and the least sign from them established order and silence. Some children having committed, through curiosity, some slight indiscretions towards us, they ordered them to be instantly seized by the men who surrounded them, and carried to a distance from us, into another quarter of the camp. The men were in general tall, strong, handsome, and well made; their dress depicted negligence rather than poverty. Several of them had silken vests, interwoven with gold or silver threads, and blue silk pelisses, lined with rich furs. Their arms were also distinguished for the chasings and inlayings of silver which adorned them. The women were neither confined nor veiled; they were, indeed, half naked, especially the young girls from ten to fifteen years old. Their chief garment was a pair of wide trousers, which left the legs below the knees and the feet bare. Almost all of them had rings of silver above their ankles. The upper part of the body was covered by a chemise of cotton or silk stuff, bound at the waist, and leaving the breast and neck open. Their hair, generally very black, was plaited in long tresses, hanging to the heels, and ornamented with pieces of money. They had likewise round their hips and throats strings of piastres, which clinked at every movement they made. These females were not so tall, fair, modest, or

graceful, as the Syrian women, nor had they the ferocious aspect of the Bedouin women; they were in general short, lean, and of a tawny complexion, but gay, lively, cheerful, dancing and singing to the sound of the music, which had never for an instant ceased its animating strains. They seemed in no way embarrassed with our observation, nor exhibited any shame at their appearing almost naked before the men of their tribe; the men appeared to exercise little authority over them, contenting themselves with laughing at their indiscreet curiosity concerning us, and pushing them gently away. Some of the young girls were pretty and engaging; their black eyes were painted with henna on the margin of the lids, which gives an infinite vivacity to the look. Their legs and hands were likewise painted a mahogany colour; whilst their teeth, white as ivory, had their brilliancy increased by contrast with their lips tattooed in blue and their tawny cheeks—the whole giving to their countenances and their laugh a wild though not ferocious character; they resembled young Provencal or Neapolitan girls, with a higher forehead, freer step, franker smile, and more natural manners. As we do not see such countenances twice in our lives, they impress themselves strongly on the memory.

When we had had a complete view of their camp, and of themselves, we made a sign that we wished to remount our horses. They were immediately brought to us, and, as they were alarmed at the strange appearance and shouts of the crowd, and the noise of the tambours, the sheik ordered two of his wives to carry Julia to the edge of the forest, to which point the whole tribe accompanied us. When mounted on horsback, they offered us a goat and a young camel, which we declined, but gave them a handful of Turkish piastres, which the young maidens divided amongst themselves to add to their necklaces, and two gazzis of gold to the wives of the sheik.

At a little distance from the forest, we regained the river, and crossed it at a ford. Under the rose-bays which line its banks, we again fell in with about a hundred of young girls belonging to the tribe of Kurds, who were returning from Beirut, where they had been purchasing earthen-jars, and some pieces of stuff, for one of their companions who was about to be married. They had stopped there to dance under the shade, each holding in her hand some object destined for the bride. They pursued us for a long time, uttering savage cries, and clinging to Julia's robe, and the manes of our horses, to obtain some pieces of money. We threw them some, and they fled through the river towards the camp.

After crossing the Nahr-el-Beirout, and the other half of the plain, shaded by young palms and pines, we came to the hills of red sand, which stretch to the east of Beirut, between the sea and the vale of the river. This is a portion of the Egyptian desert, thrown up at the foot of Lebanon, and surrounded by a magnificent cultivation. Its sand is red as ochre, and as fine as an impalpable dust. The Arabs allege that this desert of red sand has not been brought there by the winds, or cast up by the waves, but has sprung from a subterranean torrent, which communicates with the deserts of Gaza and El-Arisch; they pretend that there are springs of sand as well as of water, and show, to confirm their opinion, the colour and substance of the sea sand, which certainly in no degree resembles that of this desert. Howsoever the case may be, this sand, vomited by subterranean streams, or brought there by the high winds of winter, stretches for five or six leagues round, and rises into hills, or is scooped out into valleys, shifting their forms at every tempest. After proceeding for some time in these undulating labyrinths, it is impossible to know where we are; the hills hide the horizon on all sides, and there is no pathway traced upon the surface. The horse and the camel pass over it, without leaving a more imperishable mark than a boat upon the water—the least breeze effaces all. Some of the hills were so steep that our horses could scarcely scale them, and we advanced with cau-

tion, for fear of being caught in the numerous quicksands in this desert. No trace of vegetation is discoverable, except some large roots of bulbous plants, which our horses occasionally kick from under their hoofs. These moving solitudes convey a sad and mournful impression; they are like a noiseless tempest, but with all its images of death. When the simoom, or wind of the desert, rises, these hills move like the waves of a sea, and, folding over in silence upon their deep valleys, engulf the camels of the caravans. They are gaining, every year, upon the cultivated portions of land which surround them, and you see, near their margins, palms and fig-trees standing out, withered from their surface, like the masts of a ship, with the hull beneath the waves. We heard no noise but the distant and heavy fall of the billows, breaking a league from us upon the shelvages. The setting sun tinged the tops of these sandy mountains with a colour similar to burning iron just brought from the furnace, or, falling into the valleys, rendered them like the passages of a building in conflagration. As we, from time to time, reached the top of a hill, we saw the white peaks of Lebanon, or the sea, with its fringe of foam skirting the Gulf of Saïde, and then we suddenly replunged into the ravines, and saw nothing but the sky above our heads.

I followed Julia, who often turned her lovely face towards me, all hectic with emotion and fatigue, and I read in her eyes as they fell on me, as if interrogatively, her impressions of terror, enthusiasm, and pleasure. The noise from the sea grew greater, and announced to us the shore; we came upon it all at once, elevated, and sinking perpendicularly under our horses' feet. It stood at least 200 feet above the sea; the ground, solid, and resounding beneath our feet, although covered with a slight layer of white sand, indicated the rock which had succeeded to the sand of the desert. It was, in fact, the rock which lines all the coasts of Syria. We had by chance arrived at one of the points on the coast where the shock of the waves upon the rock presents to the eye the most singular spectacle. The incessant beating of the billows, or earthquakes, had torn at this spot, from the continued line of rock along the shore, stupendous blocks, which, projecting into the sea, had been worn and polished by the waves for ages, and had assumed the most grotesque forms. Before us was one of these blocks, at a distance of 100 feet, rising from the sea above the level of the shore, which the sea, by perpetually breaking on it, had at last succeeded in cleaving through the centre, and forming a gigantic arch, similar to the span of a triumphal monument. The interior walls of this arch were as smooth and shining as Parian marble; the waves, as they retired, left them visible to the eye, all gushing with the foam drawn back by the receding waters; then the sea returning, rushed with the noise of thunder up the sides to the very top of the arch, and, urged by the shock, spouted up in torrents of bubbling foam above the summit of the rock, whence it fell down in streams of spray. Our horses shuddered with affright at each of these shocks, and we could not tear ourselves away from this combat between two elements. For half an hour or more the coast is diversified with these magnificent sports of nature; there were towers covered with martins' nests, natural bridges joining the shore and the rocks, and under which the roaring of the waves is heard in passing. In certain places the rocks were pierced by the action of the waves, and the foam came spouting out under our feet as from the pipes of a fountain. The sea was high at this moment; it came in wide and lofty blue columns, and fell upon the rocks with such fury as to shake the bank, and make us think we saw the rocky arch before us tottering as if about to yield. After the silent and awful solitudes that we had just traversed, the boundless prospect of the ocean at the hour of evening, when the first gloom is beginning to fall on its gulfs; the stupendous breaks of the coast, and the tumultuous rage of the waves, scattering large rocks as a bird scatters with its claws grains of sand; the force of the breeze on our foreheads, and on the manes of our horses; the terrible

subterranean echoes which multiplied the deafening roar of the tempest; all affected our minds with impressions so varied, solemn, and powerful, that we could not speak, and tears of emotion glittered in Julia's eyes.

We silently returned to the desert of red sand, and crossed it in its narrowest part, drawing near to the hills of Beirut, and we found ourselves, at the going down of the sun, under the great pine forest of the Emir Fakir-el-Din. There Julia, recovering her voice, turned to me, and said with ecstasy, "Have I not had the most beautiful ride it was possible to have in the world? Oh! how great is God, and how good to me, to allow me so young to behold such glorious scenes!"

It was night when we descended from horseback at the gate of our house. We projected other excursions, previous to our journey to Damascus.

POPULATIONS OF LEBANON.

THE MARONITES.

The Maronites, of whom I am about to speak, have an unknown origin. History, so incomplete and fabulous in all that concerns the earliest ages of our era, leaves in doubt the different causes which are assigned for their institutions. They have very few books, which are without order or arrangement; but as it is always necessary to lean towards what a people knows of itself, rather than to the vain suppositions of the traveller, I will give the epitome of their own relations.

A holy hermit, named Marron, lived about the year 400. Theodoric and Chrysostom make mention of him. He lived in the desert; and his disciples having spread themselves over the different regions of Syria, built several monasteries, the chief of which stood in the vicinity of Apanica, on the fertile banks of the Orontes. All the Syrian Christians who were not then infected with the heresy of the Monothelites, took refuge in these monasteries, and from this circumstance received the name of Maronites. Volney, who lived several months amongst them, has collected the best information as to their origin; it is nearly similar to what I myself drew from local traditions. Whatever it may have been, the Maronites form at present a tribe governed by the purest theocracy which has resisted the effects of time—a theocracy which, perpetually menaced by the tyranny of the Mahomedans, has been forced into moderation, and served to propagate principles of civil liberty, which are ripe for development amongst this people. The tribe, which, according to Volney, was in 1784 composed of 120,000 souls, at present reckons more than 200,000, and is increasing every day. Its territory comprehends 150 square leagues; but it has no certain limits, for it extends over the sides of Lebanon, or into the valleys and plains which surround it, in proportion as the increased population found new villages. The town of Zarkla, at the mouth of the valley of Bkaa, towards Balbek, which twenty years ago had not above 1000 or 1200 inhabitants, contains now 10,000 or 12,000, and is likely to augment.

The Maronites are subject to the Emir Beschir, and form, with the Druzes and Metualis, a sort of despotic confederation under the government of this emir. Although these three nations differ in origin, religion, and manners, and are never amalgamated in the same villages, the defence of a common liberty, and the strong and politic arm of Beschir, keep them united. They cover with their numerous habitations the space comprised between Latakia and Acre on one side, and Damascus and Beirut on the other. Of the Druzes and Metualis I shall speak separately.

The Maronites occupy the most central valleys, and most elevated chain of the principal group of Mount Lebanon, from the environs of Beirut as far as Tripoli in Syria. The slopes of these mountains, which tend towards the sea, are fertile, and watered by many rivers and inexhaustible torrents. Their produce is silk, oil, barley, and wheat. The heights are almost inaccessible, the rock everywhere pierces the mountain, and the indefatigable activity of this people, who

have no sure asylum for their religion but upon these peaks and precipices, has rendered the rock itself fertile. They have raised in tiers up to the loftiest crests, to the eternal snows themselves, walls of terraces formed from blocks of loose rock; to these terraces they have brought the little vegetable earth which the waters carry into the ravines, and have even piled up stones to render their dust fertile by mixing it with this portion of soil; and have thus made of all Lebanon a garden covered with mulberries, fig-trees, olives, and corn. The traveller cannot recover from his astonishment, when, after having climbed for a whole day up the perpendicular sides of mountains, which are but masses of rock, he finds on a sudden, in the hollow of a gorge, or on the platform of a pyramid of mountains, a handsome village built of white stone, peopled by a numerous and rich race, with a Moorish castle in the centre, a monastery in the distance, a torrent rolling its foaming water at the foot of the village, and all around a horizon of vegetation and verdure, where the pines, chestnuts, and mulberries, overshadow the vine, or fields of maize and wheat. These villages are sometimes suspended almost perpendicularly one above the other; one can throw a stone from one village to the other, and hear the voices in each, yet the declivity of the mountain requires so many windings and turnings in the road of communication, that one hour, or even two hours, are needed to pass from one hamlet to the other.

In each of these villages is found a sheikh—a sort of feudal lord, who has the government of the district. But this administration of government and justice, summarily exercised, and with the simplest formalities, is neither absolute nor without appeal. The supreme administration belongs to the emir and his divan (council). An appeal lies in part to the emir, in part to the bishops. There is a conflicting jurisdiction between the emir and ecclesiastical authority. The patriarch of the Maronites alone possesses the right of decision in all cases where the civil law is opposed to the spiritual, as in marriages, licences, and divorces. The prince observes great caution in his conduct towards the patriarch and the bishops, for the authority of the clergy is prodigious and incontestible. This clergy is composed of a patriarch, elected by the bishops, and confirmed by the pope, of a legate from the pope sent from Rome, and residing at the monastery of Antoura, or Kanoubin, of the bishops, superiors of monasteries, and priests. Although the Romish church has imperatively maintained the law for the celibacy of priests in Europe, and several of its writers affect to regard this rule of its discipline as an article of faith, it has been obliged to yield this point in the East; and whilst they continue fervent and levout Catholics, the priests of the Maronites are married. This power of marriage, however, extends neither to the monks, who live in communities, nor to the bishops. The secular clergy and the curates alone make use of this privilege. The seclusion in which the Arab females live, the simplicity of the patriarchal manners of this people, and custom, remove every inconvenience from this usage of the Maronite clergy; and far from being hurtful, as it is generally asserted, to the purity of sacerdotal manners, to the respect of the people for the minister of religion, or to the precept of confession, it may be said with perfect truth, that in no country of Europe is the clergy so stainless, so exclusively bound up in its pious ministry, so venerated, and so influential amongst the people, as it is here. If we wish to behold what the imagination pictures of the era of early and pure Christianity, if we wish to see the simplicity and fervour of the primitive faith, disinterestedness in ministers of charity, the sacerdotal influence without abuse, authority without tyranny, poverty without mendicancy, dignity without pride, constancy in prayer and watchings, sobriety, elasticity, and manual labour, we must come among the Maronites. The most rigid philosopher would not find any reform necessary in the public and private life of these priests, who are at once the models, the counsellors, and servants of the people.

There are about two hundred Maronite monasteries, of different orders, on Mount Lebanon. These monasteries are peopled with twenty to five-and-twenty thousand monks. But these monks are neither rich, nor mendicants, nor oppressors, nor extortioners. They are collections of simple and laborious men, who, wishing to devote themselves to a life of prayer and freedom of spirit, renounce the cares of rearing a family, and consecrate themselves to God and the earth in one of these retreats. Their existence, as I have before mentioned, is that of laborious peasants. They tend the cattle and the silk-worms; they break the rock, and build with their own hands the terraces and walls of their fields; they dig, plough, and reap. The monasteries possess little land, and only receive as many monks as they can sustain. I have lived a long time amongst this people, I have often visited these communities, and I have never heard of any scandal committed by a monk. There is not a murmur raised against them; each convent is but a small farm, the servants of which are voluntary, and receive as wages only a roof, an anchorite's food, and the prayers of their church. Useful labour is so much the law of man, it is so entirely the condition of happiness and virtue here below, that I have never met one of these cenobites whose features did not bear the impress of peace of mind, contentment, and health. The bishops possess an absolute authority over the monasteries comprised in their jurisdictions, which are of small compass, as each village has its prelate.

The Maronites, whether descended from the Arabs or Syrians, partake all the virtues of their clergy, and form a peculiar people in the East. One would imagine them a European colony, thrown by chance amongst the tribes of the desert. Their countenances, however, are Arab; the men are tall, handsome, of a frank and haughty aspect, with an intellectual and mild smile; their eyes blue, nose aquiline, beard blonde, gestures noble, voice solemn and guttural; their manners are respectful without humiliation, and their costumes and weapons splendid. When you pass through a village, and see the schekik seated at the door of his turreted mansion, his beautiful horses tethered in the court, and the principal men of the village clothed in their rich pelisses, with their girdles of red silk, stuck full of yatagans and kangars, with silver handles, their heads covered with immense turbans, composed of various coloured stuffs, with a broad lappet of purple silk falling down their shoulders, you might believe you beheld a race of kings. They love the Europeans as brothers, they are connected with us by a community of religion, the strongest of all ties; they conceive that we protect them, by our consuls and ambassadors, against the Turks. They receive our travellers, missionaries, and young interpreters, who go to perfect themselves in the Arabic language; as relations are welcomed by a family amongst us; the traveller, the missionary, and the interpreter, alike become the cherished guests of the whole nation. They are lodged in the monastery, or in the house of the schekik; they are provided with every thing in abundance, that the country produces; they are conducted to the falcon-hunts, introduced to the society of their women, addressed with respect, and ties of friendship formed with them which are never broken, and which are bequeathed by the heads of families to their children.

I have little doubt, that if this people were better known, if the magnificent country they inhabit were more frequently visited, many Europeans would go and establish themselves among the Maronites. Beauty of locality, perfection of climate, moderateness of price for all necessities, conformity of religion, hospitable manners, individual safety and tranquillity, all concur in rendering desirable a habitation amongst these people; and as to myself, if a man could uproot himself at a jerk, if he were not bound to live where Providence has indicated his dwelling and his tomb, to serve and love his fellow-countrymen—if an involuntary exile should ever be my lot, I should nowhere find it so sweet as in one of these quiet Maronite villages, at the foot,

or on the sides of Lebanon, in the bosom of a simple, religious, benevolent population, with the view of the sea and the lofty snows, enjoyed under the palm or orange tree, in the garden of a monastery. A most complete police, the result of religion and manners rather than of legislation, reigns throughout the whole extent of the country inhabited by the Maronites; you may travel alone, and without a guide, by day or by night, without fearing robbery or violence. Crimes are almost unknown amongst them; the stranger is sacred with the Mahomedan Arab, but yet more so with the Christian Arab; his door is open to him at every hour; he kills his kid to do him honour; he abandons his mat to give him place.

In each village is a church, or chapel, in which the ceremonies of the Catholic faith are celebrated in the Syrian form and tongue. The Gospel is read by the priest, turning towards his assistants, in Arabic. Religions, which endure longer than tribes of people, preserve their sacred language when nations have lost theirs.

The Maronites are brave, and naturally warlike, like all mountaineers. They take arms, to the number of thirty or forty thousand men, at the call of the Emir Beshir, either to defend the inaccessible routes of their mountains, or to pour into the plain, and make Damascus or the towns of Syria tremble. The Turks dare not penetrate into Lebanon, when these races are at peace amongst themselves; the Pashas of Acre and Damascus have never come there but when intestine dissensions called them to the one party or the other. I do not know whether I deceive myself, but I believe that high destinies are reserved for this Maronite people—a people pure and primitive in their manners, and their religion; a people who possess the traditional virtues of the patriarchs, decorum, a little liberty, and much patriotism, and who, by the similitude of religion and the relations of commerce, are every day becoming more impregnated with Western civilisation. Whilst all around them is perishing from weakness or the exhaustion of age, they alone seem youthful and endowed with fresh vigour. In proportion as Syria is dispeopled, they will descend from their mountains, found commercial cities on the margin of the sea, cultivate the fertile plains, where now roam the jackal and the gazelle, and establish a new empire in these countries, where the old dominion is on the point of expiring. If a man of intellect should arise amongst them, either from the ranks of the influential clergy, or from the bosom of one of the families of the emirs or schekiks whom they hold in veneration, and he should understand the future, and form an alliance with one of the European powers, he might easily re-enact the wonders of Mahomet-Ali, Pacha of Egypt, and leave behind him the veritable germ of an Arabian empire. Europe is much interested in seeing this idea realised. They would form a colony ready made upon these fine shores, and Syria, repopled by a Christian and industrious nation, would enrich the Mediterranean with a commerce which now languishes, would open the route to India, drive back the nomade and barbaric tribes of the desert, and revive the East. There is a greater futurity here than in Egypt: Egypt has but one man, Lebanon a nation!

THE DRUZES.

The Druzes, who with the Metualis and Maronites form the principal population of Lebanon, have long passed for a European colony, left in the East by the crusaders. Nothing is more absurd. Religion and language are the things which are longest preserved amongst a people. The Druzes are idolaters, and speak Arabic; they are therefore not descended from a Frank and Christian parentage. What is more probable is, that they are, like the Maronites, an Arab tribe of the desert, who, having refused to adopt the religion of the prophet, and being persecuted by the new believers, took refuge in the inaccessible solitudes of the high Lebanon, in order to defend their gods and liberty. They have prospered; they have frequently had predominance

over the tribes inhabiting Syria; and the history of their chief, the Emir Fakar-el-Din, whom we convert into Fakardin, has rendered them celebrated, even in Europe. It was at the commencement of the seventeenth century that this prince appeared.

Being named governor of the Druzes, he gained the confidence of the Porte. He repulsed the ferocious tribes of Balbek, delivered Tyre and Saint Jean d'Acre from the incursions of the Bedouin Arabs, put to flight the Aga of Beirout, and fixed his capital in that town. In vain the Pachas of Aleppo and Damascus threatened him, or denounced him to the Divan; he bribed his judges, and triumphed by artifice or force over all his enemies. However, the Porte, so frequently warned of the progress of the Druzes, took at last the resolution to repress them, and prepared a formidable expedition. The Emir Fakar-el-Din wished to temporise. He had formed alliances, and concluded treaties, with the princes of Italy; he went in person to solicit the succour which these princes had promised him. He left the government in the hands of Ali, his son, took shipping at Beirout, and fled to the court of the Medicis at Florence. The arrival of a Mahomedan prince in Europe aroused attention. The report was spread that Fakar-el-Din was a descendant of the princes of the house of Lorraine; and that the Druzes took their origin from the comrades of a Count de Dreux, who had remained in Lebanon after the Crusades. It was of no consequence that Benjamin of Tudela makes mention of the Druzes before the era of the Crusades; the politic adventurer himself propagated an opinion likely to interest the sovereigns of Europe in his fate. After nine years' sojourn in Florence, the Emir Fakar-el-Din returned into Syria. His son Ali had repulsed the Turks, and preserved entire the provinces conquered by his father. He surrendered to him the command. The Emir, corrupted by the elegancies and enjoyments of Florence, forgot that he reigned by inspiring his enemies with respect and terror. He built at Beirout magnificent palaces, and adorned them, like the palaces of Italy, with statues and paintings, which are repugnant to the prejudices of the orientals. His subjects grew discontented; the Sultan, Amurath IV., sent once more the Pacha of Damascus, with a powerful army, against him. While the pacha descended from Lebanon, a Turkish fleet blockaded the port of Beirout. Ali, the eldest son of the emir, and governor of Saphad, was slain in opposing the Pacha of Damascus. Fakar-el-Din sent his second son to implore peace, on board the admiral's vessel. The admiral retained the youth a prisoner, and refused all negotiation. The emir fled in consternation, and shut himself up, with a small number of devoted friends, in the inaccessible rock of Nikka. The Turks, after having uselessly besieged him for a whole year, retired. Fakar-el-Din was again free, and retook the road to the mountains, but, betrayed by some of the companions of his fortune, he was delivered to the Turks, and conducted to Constantinople. Prostrated at the feet of Amurath, that prince at first treated him with generosity and benevolence. He gave him a palace and slaves; but shortly afterwards, upon some suspicions of the Sultan, the brave and unfortunate emir was strangled. The Turks, who content themselves with removing the man who causes them umbrage, and respect the customs of tribes, and the traditional legitimacies of families, allowed the posterity of Fakar-el-Din to reign. It is only a hundred years ago that the death of the last descendant of the famous emir caused the sceptre of Lebanon to fall to another family, that of Chab, originally from Mecca, the present chief of which, the old Emir Desclat, now governs these countries.

The religion of the Druzes is a mystery which no traveller has been able to penetrate. I have known several Europeans living for a number of years amongst this people, who have confessed to me their ignorance regarding it. Lady Stanhope herself, who is an exception to others from her habitual residence in the very midst of this tribe, and from the attachment with

which she is regarded by men whose language she speaks, and whose manners she follows, has also told me, that to her the religion of the Druzes was a mystery. The greatest number of travellers who have written upon them, allege that their creed is but a Mahomedan schism. I am perfectly convinced that they are egregiously deceived. There is one thing certain, that the religion of the Druzes permits them to assume the creeds of all persons with whom they are in communication, and from this circumstance has sprung the idea that they were schismatic Mahomedans. The only fact that is ascertained with certainty upon the subject, is that they worship the calf. Their institutions are in some respects similar to those of the people of antiquity. They are divided into two *castes*, the *Akkals*, or those who know, and the *Dyahels*, or those who do not know; and, according to his caste, a Druze practises such or such a form of religion. Moses, Mahomet, Jesus, are names which they hold in veneration. They assemble one day in the week, each in the place assigned to the degree of initiation to which he has advanced, and fulfil their rites. Guards are stationed during the ceremonies, to watch that no profane person may approach the initiated. Death is instantly dealt out to any rash invader of the sanctity. Women are admitted to these ceremonies. The priests, or Akkals, are married, and form a hierarchy. The chief of the Akkals, or the sovereign pontiff of the Druzes, resides in the village of El-Mutna. After the death of a Druze, the people collect round the tomb, and evidence is received as to the life of the deceased. If the testimony be favourable, the Akkal exclaims, "May the All-Powerful be merciful to him!" If the testimony, on the contrary, be condemnatory, the priest and his assistants preserve a gloomy silence. The people in general believe in the transmigration of souls; if the life of a Druze has been good, he will revive in a man favoured by fortune, brave, and the idol of his countrymen; if he has been wicked or a coward, he will return under the form of a camel or dog.

The schools for children are numerous, directed by the Akkals. They are learnt to read the Koran. Sometimes, when the Druzes are few in number in a village, and schools are wanting, they let their children be instructed with those of Christians, and when they initiate them at a later date into their mysterious rites, they efface all traces of Christianity. The women are as eligible to the sacerdotal office as the men. Adultery and divorces are frequent amongst them. Hospitality is sacred with the Druzes, and no menace or promise will induce one of them to deliver even to his prince the guest who has sought the protection of his doorway. At the period of the battle of Navarino, the Europeans inhabiting the towns of Syria, fearing the vengeance of the Turks, retired during several months amongst the Druzes, and lived there in perfect safety. All men are brothers, and their moral code is that of the Gospel, but they observe it better than we. Our words are evangelical, but our actions Pagan.

In my opinion, the Druzes are one of those tribes whose origin is lost in the darkness of time, mounting to an antiquity extremely remote. In physical appearance they have a considerable resemblance to the Jews, and the worship of the calf leads me to believe that they are descended from those tribes of Arabia Petrea, who led the Jews to that species of idolatry, or that they have a Samaritan parentage. At present, accustomed to a sort of fraternity with the Christian Maronites, and abhorring the yoke of the Mahomedans; and being numerous, rich, capable of discipline, and attached to agriculture and commerce, they would easily form a united body with the Maronite tribe, and progress with equal rapidity in civilisation, provided their religious ceremonies were respected.

THE METUALIS.

The Metualis, who compose about a third of the population of the low Lebanon, are Mahomedans of the sect of Ali, the prevailing sect of Persia, whilst the

Turks adhere to that of Omar. This schism in the Moslem creed occurred in the 36th year of the Hegira; the partisans of Ali curse Omar as a usurper of the Caliphate, and regard Hussein and Ali as saints. Like the Persians, they neither drink nor eat with the followers of any other religion than their own, and break the glass or plate that has been used by a stranger. They look upon themselves as defiled if their garments touch ours; but as they are weak, and generally contemned in Syria, they accommodate themselves to circumstances, and I have had several of them in my service who did not pay a rigorous observance to these intolerant precepts. Their origin is ascertained; they were masters of Balbek towards the sixth century, and their tribe increasing, extended to the sides of the Anti-Lebanon, round the desert of Bkaa, which at a later date they passed, and mingled with the Druzes in that part of the mountain which stretches between Tyre and Saïde. The Emir Youssef, uneasy at their proximity, armed the Druzes against them, and drove them back towards Saphad and the mountains of Galilee. Daher, Pacha of Acre, courted them, and made an alliance with them in 1760, and they were then sufficiently numerous to furnish him 10,000 horsemen. At that period they took possession of the ruins of Tyre, now a village on the sea-shore called Sour, combated with valour the Druzes, and completely defeated the army of the Emir Youssef, composed of 25,000 men. Their force was only 500, but rage and thirst for vengeance converted them into heroes; and the intestine disputes which divided the Druzes between the Emir Mansour and the Emir Youssef, contributed to their success.

They abandoned Daher, Pacha of Acre, and their separation precipitated his destruction and death. Djazzar-Pacha, his successor, took a cruel vengeance upon them. From the year 1777, Djazzar, master of Saïde and Acre, laboured without intermission at the extermination of this tribe. His persecutions drove them to a reconciliation with the Druzes, and they entered into Youssef's party. Though reduced to 700 or 600 combatants, they did more for the common cause than the 20,000 Druzes and Maronites united at Deir-el-Kammar. They, unassisted, stormed the fortress of Mar-Djebba, and put 300 Arnauts to the sword. Driven from Balbek in the following year, after a desperate resistance, they took refuge, to the number of 500 or 600 families, amongst the Druzes and Maronites. They subsequently again descended into the plain, and at the present day still occupy the magnificent ruins of Heliopolis (Balbek); but the greater part of the nation remained upon the declivities, and in the valleys of Lebanon towards Sour. The principality of Balbek, in these latter years, became the subject of a bitter contest between two brothers of the family Harfousch, Djadja and Sultan. They dispossessed each other by turns of that heap of ruins, and lost in the war upwards of eighty members of their own family. Since 1810, the Emir Djadja has finally reigned over Balbek.

THE ANSARIAS.

Concerning the nation of the Ansarias, which occupies the western chain of Lebanon and the plains of Latakia, Volney has given the most correct information. I can add nothing to it. Like the Druzes, they are idolaters, and envelope their religious ceremonies with the darkness of an initiatory process; but they are more barbarous. I will only concern myself with that part of their history which goes back to the year 1807.

At that period, a tribe of the Ansarias, feigning a quarrel with their chief, quitted his territory in the mountains, and went to ask an asylum and protection from the Emir of Maszyad. The emir, eager to take advantage of so favourable an opportunity to weaken his enemies by division, welcomed the Ansarias, with their Scheik Mahmoud, into the walls of Maszyad, and pushed his hospitality to such a pitch, as to dislodge a portion of the inhabitants to make room for the fugitives. During several months all remained tranquil;

but one day, when the greatest part of the inhabitants of Maszyad had left the town to labour in the fields, at a given signal the Ansarias fell upon the emir and his son, slew them, seized upon the castle, put to death all the Ismaelians who were in the town, and then set fire to it. On the following day, a great number of Ansarias came to join the perpetrators of this detestable conspiracy at Maszyad, the secret having been preserved by a whole people for nearly five months. About 300 Ismaelians perished, and the rest fled for refuge to Hama, Homs, and Tripolis.

The religious practices and manners of the Ansarias have induced Burekhardt to conclude that they were an exiled tribe from Hindostan. It is quite certain that they were established in Syria long before the conquest of the Ottomans. The worship of the dog, which appears to have been in great repute among the ancient Syrians, and to have given its name to the Nahr-el-Kelb, the River of the Dog, near the ancient Berytus, is still preserved, it is said, amongst some of the Ansarian families. This tribe is going to decay, and might be easily driven away or subjected by the Druzes and Maronites.

JOURNEY CONTINUED.

November 18.—I have arrived from an excursion to the monastery of Antoura, one of the grandest and most celebrated on Lebanon. On quitting Beirout, we preceded for an hour along the banks of the sea, beneath a canopy of trees of all foliages and forms. The greater part were fruit-trees, figs, pomegranates, oranges, aloes, and fig-sycamores; the last a gigantic tree, the fruit of which, in prodigious quantity, and similar to small figs, did not grow at the extremity of the branches, but were sticking to the trunk and branches like pieces of moss. After crossing the river by the Roman bridge, the appearance of which I have described above, we followed a sandy plain to Cape Batroun, formed by an arm from Lebanon projected into the sea. This arm is but a rock, in which a road has been cut in ancient times, whence the view is magnificent. The sides of the rock are covered, in several places, with Greek, Latin, and Syrian inscriptions, and with figures sculptured out of the rock itself, the object and signification of which are now lost. It is probable that they have reference to the worship of Adonis, formerly prevailing in these districts; he had, according to tradition, temples and funeral ceremonies near the spot where he perished. It is believed that this spot was on the banks of the river that we had just passed.

After descending from this elevated and picturesque road, the country suddenly changed its aspect. The eye fell into a narrow and deep gorge, traversed by another river, the Nahr-el-Kelb, or River of the Dog. It flows in silence between two perpendicular walls of rock, two or three hundred feet high. In certain places it completely fills the valley, and in others leaves a narrow margin between its waters and the rock. This margin is covered with trees, sugar-canes, reeds, and brushwood, which form a green thick shade upon the banks, at intervals extending over the river itself. A ruined khan is perched upon a rock at the edge of the water, opposite a narrow bridge, which we crossed with trembling. In the sides of the rocks walling up this ravine, the Arabs have, with great perseverance, hewed out steps to serve as pathways, which hang almost plump over the river, which we were compelled, however, to climb up, as well as descend, on horseback. We abandoned ourselves to the instinct and sure-footedness of our horses, but we could not forbear shutting our eyes at certain points, to avoid growing dizzy at the frightful declivities, the slipperiness of the rocky steps, and the depth of the abyss yawning below. A few years ago, the late legate from the pope to the Maronites was precipitated down these precipices by a false step of his horse.

At the mouth of this pass we found ourselves on an elevated table-land, covered with crops, vineyards, and

small Maronite villages. We perceived, on a knoll before us, a handsome new house of Italian architecture, with a portico, terraces, and balustrades. It was the residence which Monsignor Lozana, bishop of Abydos, and present legate of the Holy See in Syria, had caused to be built for his winter habitation. In the summer he lives in the monastery of Kanoubin, the residence of the patriarch, and the ecclesiastical capital of the Maronites. That convent, being at a much higher elevation on the mountain, is almost inaccessible, and nearly buried in snow during the winter. Monsignor Lozana, a man of refined manners, cultivated mind, profound erudition, and strong and quick intellect, has been most happily chosen by the court of Rome to cultivate the political objects and influence of Catholicism amongst the dignified Maronite clergy. He would have ably filled a similar mission at Vienna or Paris; he was the representative of those Roman prelates, the inheritors of the grand and noble diplomatic traditions of that government where brute force is extinct, and where personal ability and dignity are all-prevailing. Monsignor Lozana is a Piedmontese; he is not likely to remain long in these solitudes; Rome will employ him to greater advantage upon a more stormy arena. He is one of those men who justify fortune, and whose high career is legible on his energetic and intellectual countenance. With these people he very wisely assumes an oriental luxury and imposing costume and manners, as without these illusions the people of Asia can conceive neither sanctity nor power. He has taken the Arab costume; his prodigious beard, carefully combed, falls in golden folds on his purple robe, and his full-blood Arab mare rivals in docility and beauty the finest mare of a desert sheikh. We shortly perceived him coming towards us, followed by a numerous suite, his horse curvetting on the precipices along which we advanced with so much precaution.

After the first compliments, he conducted us to his delightful villa, where a collation was prepared for us, and shortly after he accompanied us to the monastery of Antoura, where he provisionally resided. Two young Lazarist priests, arrived from France since the revolution of July, are at present the only occupiers of this beautiful and immense convent, which was built at a former date by the Jesuits. The Jesuits have, at several periods, attempted to establish their mission and influence amongst the Arabs, but they have never succeeded, and do not appear destined to be more successful in our own days. The reason is plain; there is no political spirit in the religion of men in the East; completely separated from the civil power, it gives neither influence nor action to the state. The state is Mahomedan; Catholicism is unfettered, but it has no human means of dominion; and as it is above all things by human means that the system of the Jesuits has attempted to operate, and has operated religiously, this country is perfectly unsuited to them. Religion is there divided into orthodox or schismatic communities, whose creed is part of the hereditary family-blood and character. Abhorrence and irreconcilable hatred exist among the different Christian communities, much more than between the Turks and Christians. Conversions are impossible where a change of creed is an opprobrium, branding, and perhaps leading to extermination, a tribe, a village, or a family; and, as to the Mahomedans, it is altogether unheard-of that one of them is converted. Their religion is a practical deism, the moral code of which is the same in principle with that of Christianity, save the dogma of the divinity of man. The Mahomedan creed is a belief in divine inspiration, manifested in a man more wise, and more favoured with the celestial emanation, than the rest of his fellow creatures; at a later date some miraculous deeds as to the mission of Mahomet were mingled, but these legendary miracles form no part of the foundation of the religion, and are altogether rejected by the enlightened Turks. All religions have their legends, and traditions, their popular side. The philosophy of Mahomedanism is quite free from these fables; it contains nothing but resignation

to the will of God, and charity towards men. I have known a great number of Turks and Arabs, deeply religious, who only admitted so much of their religion as was human, and according to reason. They did not coerce their reasoning faculties to receive dogmas from which they recoiled in disgust. Theirs was a practical and contemplative theism. Such men are not to be converted—men sober down from the marvellous dogma to the simple, but do not ascend from the simple dogma to the marvellous.

The interference of the Jesuits was attended with other inconveniences to the Maronites. By the very nature of their institution, they easily rouse party spirit and religious factions in the clergy, and in the people at large—they create, by the very ardour of their zeal, either enthusiasm or hatred—nothing remains in moderation with them. The Maronite clergy, although simple and good, could not see with a complacent eye the establishment amongst them of a religious order, which strove to withdraw a part of the Catholic population from their spiritual dominion. The Jesuits, therefore, exist no longer in Syria. Only lately two young fathers, the one a Frenchman, and the other a German, have arrived, upon the invitation of a Maronite bishop, to act as professors in a school which he had founded. I knew these two excellent young men, both of whom were full of faith, and burning with a disinterested zeal. They neglected nothing to propagate amongst the neighbouring Druzes some idea of Christianity; but the result of their exertions went not beyond baptising little children, surreptitiously and unknown to the parents, in families where they introduced themselves under pretext of giving medical advice. They appeared to me little inclined to submit to the somewhat ignorant usages of the Maronite bishops in conveying instruction, and I have an opinion that they will return into Europe without having succeeded in naturalising a taste for an improved education. The French father was worthy of being a professor in Rome or Paris.

The convent of Antoura has passed to the Lazarists, since the extinction of the order of Jesuits. The two young fathers who resided in it had often visited us at Beirut. We had found their society as agreeable as it was unexpected; virtuous, guileless, modest, solely occupied in severe and enlightened studies, well versed in all the affairs of Europe, and partaking the mental movement which was abroad, the universality and learned tone of their conversation was so much the more charming to us, in proportion to the rarity of its occurrence in the desert. When we passed an evening with them, talking of the political events in our country, of the intellectual systems which were falling or which were rising in vance, of the writers who were disputing supremacy in the press, of the orators who conquered by turns in the tribune, of the doctrines of the *Future*, or of those of the Simonians, we might have believed ourselves conversing two leagues from Paris with men who had just left that capital. They were at the same time models of sanctity, and of an artless and pious fervour. One of them was labouring under severe indisposition: the piercing air of Lebanon was gnawing his lungs, and contracting the number of his years. He had but a word to write to his superiors to obtain his recall to France, but he would not charge his conscience by so doing. He consulted M. de Laroyere, whom I had with me, and asked him if he could, in his capacity of physician, give him a formal and conscientious opinion that the air of Syria was mortal to his constitution. M. de Laroyere, whose conscience was as severely scrupulous as that of the young monk, did not venture to express his opinion so explicitly, and the man of religion was silent, and remained at his post.

These ecclesiastics, lost in so vast a monastery, where there was not a single Arab besides themselves to wait upon them, received us with that cordiality which a common country inspires to those who meet far from it. We passed two days with them, each of us having a pretty large cell with a bed and chairs, very unusual pieces of furniture on these mountains. The monastery

is situated in the hollow of a valley at the edge of a pine wood, at mid-height up Lebanon, and having, by a gorge in the valley, a glimpse of the boundless prospect over the coasts and Sea of Syria. The remainder of the landscape consists of peaks of grey rock surmounted with villages or monasteries. A few fir, orange, and fig trees, are growing here and there amidst the rocks, and in the vicinity of the torrents and springs. It is a locality worthy of Naples and the Gulf of Genoa.

The convent of Antoura is in the neighbourhood of a nunnery of Maronite females belonging to the chief families of Lebanon. From the windows of our cells we saw those of the young nuns, whom the arrival of a company of strangers in their vicinage appeared greatly to interest. These female convents have here no social utility. Volney speaks, in his travels in Syria, of this convent near Antoura, where a woman, named Hindia, exercised horrible atrocities on her novices. The name and history of Hindia are still well known on these mountains. Imprisoned for many years by order of the Maronite patriarch, her repentance and good conduct procured her liberty. She died a short while ago, in great reputation for sanctity among some Christians of her sect. She was a fanatic by design, or from imagination, who succeeded in fanaticising a certain number of simple and credulous persons. The land of Arabia is the land of prodigies; every thing takes root, and every fanatic may become a prophet in his turn. Lady Stanhope is an additional proof of the fact. This disposition for the marvellous is owing to two causes—to a strongly developed religious sentiment, and to a want of equilibrium between the imagination and the reason. Phantoms are seen only in the dark; there are always miracles in a land of ignorance.

The terrace of the convent of Antoura, on which we walked for some hours during the day, is overshadowed by magnificent orange-trees, mentioned by Volney as the most beautiful and ancient in Syria. They are still flourishing; in appearance similar to our walnut-trees of half a century, they droop over the garden and roof of the convent in a clustering and odoriferous canopy, and bear on their trunks the names of Volney, and of some English travellers, who had passed, like us, some moments at their feet.

The group of mountains in which Antoura is placed, is known under the name of Kosrouan, or of the chain of Castravan. This district extends from the Nahr-el-Kebir to the Nahr-el-Kelb, and comprises the country properly so called, of the Maronites. This territory belongs to them, and it is here only that their privileges prevail, although from day to day they are extending into the country of the Druzes, and carrying with them their laws and manners. The principal product of these mountains is silk. The *miri*, or land-tax, is assessed upon the number of mulberry-trees each possesses. The Turks exact from the Emir Beschir one or two *miri* in the year as tribute, and the emir collects several besides for his own benefit. However, notwithstanding the complaints of the Maronites as to their excessive taxation, these imposts are not to be compared with what we pay in France or England. It is not the extent of the tax, so much as its arbitrariness and irregularity, which oppresses a nation. If taxation in Turkey was legal and fixed, it would not be felt; but where it is not determined by the law, there is no property, rather property is uncertain and unproductive; the riches of a people lie in the beneficial constitution of property. Each sheik of a village assesses the imposts in his jurisdiction, and takes to himself a portion of it. At bottom these people are happy. Their rulers fear them, and dare not establish themselves in their provinces; their religion is free and respected; their convents and churches crown the summits of their hills; their bells, which they love as the sound of liberty and independence, ring in the valleys day and night to prayer. They are governed by their own chiefs, selected from their principal families, according to usage or hereditary right. A strict but equitable police maintains order and security in the villages; property is ascertained, secured, and transmitted from father to

son; commerce is in activity; their manners are simple and uncorrupted. I have never seen any people in the world bearing on their features a greater appearance of health, independence, and politeness, than these men of Lebanon. The education of the people, though limited to reading, writing, arithmetic, and the catechism, is universal, and gives to the Maronites a legitimate superiority over the other Syrian tribes. I can only compare them to the peasants of Saxony and Scotland.

We returned to Beirout by the sea shore. The mountains which skirt the coast are covered with monasteries, constructed in the style of the Florentine villas of the middle ages. A village is perched on each eminence, surmounted by a forest of spreading pines, and traversed by a torrent falling in a brilliant cascade to the foot of a ravine. There are little fishing ports along the whole of this indented coast, filled with boats moored to the jetties or the rocks. Vineyards, barley fields, and mulberry groves, descend from the villages to the sea. The towers of the monasteries and churches rise above the sombre verdure of the fig-trees and cypresses. A beach of white sand divides the foot of the mountains from the clear and blue waves. Two leagues of this country might deceive the eye of the traveller; if he could forget he was 800 miles from Europe, he might think himself upon the margin of the Lake of Geneva, between Lausanne and Vevey, or on the enchanting banks of the Saone, between Maçon and Lyons; but the edging of the picture is more majestic at Antoura; and when his eyes are raised, he sees the snowy peaks of Samnin piercing the sky, and glittering like streaks of fire.

NOTE

BY THE EDITOR OF THE ORIGINAL EDITION.

The journal of the author was here interrupted. At the commencement of December he lost his only daughter. She was carried off in two days, at the moment her health, disordered in France, appeared completely re-established by the air of Asia. She died in the arms of her father and mother, in the country house in the suburbs of Beirout, where M. de Lamartine had fixed his family to pass the winter. The vessel, which he had sent back to Europe, was not to return to the coasts of Syria until the month of May 1833, in order to take up the travellers. They remained six months in Lebanon after their sad disaster, overwhelmed by the blow which Providence had directed against them, and without any comfort in their grief but the tears of their fellow-travellers and friends.

In the month of May the ship "The Alceste" returned to Beirout, as had been arranged; but the travellers, wishing to spare the unfortunate mother any additional pangs of sorrow, did not embark on board the vessel which had conveyed them in happiness and hope with the charming child they had lost. M. de Lamartine had got the body of his daughter embalmed, in order to carry it to Saint-Point, where, at her last moments, she had testified her desire to be buried. He entrusted this sacred deposit to "The Alceste," which was to sail in company with him, and he chartered another vessel, the brig "Sophia," Captain Coulonne, for himself, his wife, and his friends.

The journal of his remarks was not resumed for four months after his loss. Before quitting Syria, he visited Damascus, Balbek, and other remarkable places, which form the subjects of the notes which commence with the date of the 28th March 1833.

[The translator of the present edition considers this to be the place most appropriate for the introduction of the following poem, which M. de Lamartine wrote on the death of his beloved daughter. It appears at a different and less suitable part of the other editions of the work.]

GETHEMANE, OR THE DEATH OF JULIA.

I from the breast have been a man of grief,
My heart, in place of blood, rolls tears alone,
Or, rather, from my tears springs no relief,
Since God has changed them, in their fount, to stone;
Gall is my honey, sadness is my joy;
For me the tombs a brother's tie possess,
And nothing can my steps aside debar
But sights of ruin and distress!
Green fields and laughing skies if I espy,
Or sweet vales opening to embrace the sea,
I pass, and, smiling bitterly, I cry,
"A place for bliss, but, ah! not bliss for me!"
My spirit's echo will but groans repeat,
My soul's true home is where men ever weep—
A land with mortal dust and tears replete,
Is such a couch as fits my sleep.

You ask me wherefore—but were I to tell,
The bitter gulf would be but stirred anew.
And sobbings only would my lips expel—
Yet pierce my heart, and all will come to view!
There, in each fibre, death has plunged a knife,
Slow torture lies in every pulsing vein,
Its chambers teem with things that know no life—
My soul is but one mighty grave!

While yet beside Christ's chosen place of birth,
I did not ask each hallowed mount and field,
Where, at his feet, the poor flung palms on earth,
Or where the Word was by his voice revealed:
Where loud hosannahs hailed his conquering path,
Or, wet with holy tears from woman's eye,
His hand, the while it wiped his brow's hot bath,
Caressed the little child then nigh;—

"Lead me," I cried, "unto the place of tears!—
To that sad garden, where the Man of Grief,
By God forsaken and his earthly peers,
Swate bloody drops, as in the mortal throes;
There leave me, for I too would prove the whole
Concentrated anguish that an hour may feel:
Pain is the worship of my hope-reft soul—
This is the altar where I kneel!"

There is, upon Mount Olive's dusty base,
Beneath the shade of Zion's crumbling walls,
A place from which the sun withholds its rays,
Where scanty Kedron o'er its channel crawls;
There hath Jehoshaphat its graves scooped out,
And ruins, 'stead of grass, earth bears alone,
And trailing roots from hollow olives sprout
Around the tombstones, thickly strewn.

Between two rocks there stands a darksome grove,
Where Jesus once foretasted death's whole power,
When, rousing thrice the sleepers near the spot,
He said, "Watch ye! for fearful is the hour!"
The trembling lip, upon the blood-stained earth,
Seems yet the droppings of the cup to taste;
The sweat, to which that sacrifice gave birth,
May yet upon the rocks be traced.

There sat I, while my hands sustained my head,
And mused what thoughts had filled that heavenly mind,
And numbered all the tears myself had shed,
Whose flow had left a furrowed track behind;
I raised again, and weighed my burdens all,
And sounded of my griefs the whole abyss—
When of a dream my soul became the titfall,
And what a dream, great God, was this!

I late had left, beneath a mother's wing,
My child, my girl, my treasure, and my care—
Whose brow fresh charms yet came to cheek each spring,
Although her soul was ripe for heavenly air.
Her form was one that could not leave the eye,
For by its light her trace might followed be:
And never father saw her passing by,
But threw an envying glance on me.

Sole relic she of my storm-torn career,
Sole fruit of many flowers, love's single birth,
Sweet as a welcome-kiss, or parting tear,
Perpetual blessing of my wandering heath,
A sunny ray that gave my casement light,
A bird that sipped the food my own lips broke,
A sigh of music near my couch by night,
A kind caress when I awoke!

More, more she was; my mother's form she bore,
In her's my mother's looks would still revive;
Through her the past became the past no more,
My former joy, though changed, she kept alive;
Ten happy years were echoed from her tongue,
Our household air was by her step made bright,
Tears from my eyes her simple glance oft wrung,
Her smile filled all my heart with light.

Her brow would shadow back my lightest thought,
Her pure blue eye reflected still my own,
And o'er that orb my cares a dimness brought,
As when a shade across a pool is thrown:
But all her own heart's thoughts were lively, sweet,
And graveness rarely on her lips abode,
Save when she knelt before her mother's feet,
And prayed with folded hands to God.

I dreamt that to these scenes I had her led,
And that upon my knee the fair thing leant,
And, while my arms enclosed her feet and head,
That tenderly to hers my brow was bent:
Turned back upon my arm in half-eclipse,
Her head's soft burnished gold lay strewn the while,
And her white teeth shone bright between her lips,
Half-parted ever with a smile.

Ever to me, to me her look she raised,
To breathe her spirit and draw forth my soul,
And of the love that in my own eye blazed,
God only can compute the sunless whole;
My lips for fondness knew not where to press,
Yet still she sought them, like a toying child,
And oft those lips of their beloved caress,
By turning mouth and cheek, beguiled.

Then unto God my raptur'd heart exclaimed,
"Father! while these light-shedding eyes I see,
With hymns of praise alone shalt thou be named!
Her life of flowers is life enough for me!
On her my share of thy best gifts bestow,
Cast on her path all coming hopes of mine,
Prepare her bridal couch, and open throw
The arms that wait her at the shrine!"

While thus by prayer and dreamy joy possessed,
My eye and heart, meanwhile, had failed to note,
That heavier on my arm her forehead prest,
And o'er her feet a stony chill had shot;
"My Julia! why, oh why art thou so pale?
Why this moist brow? wherefore this changing hue!
Speak—smile, my angel! ah, thou feign'st this ail!
Re-ope my book—those eyes of blue!"

But on her rosy lip death's purple fell,
The half-formed smile was blasted in its spring,
More and more laboured grew her bosom's swell,
Like the last flappings of a folding wing;
Pressing her heart, I watched its beatings wild,
And when, in sighs the soul at length took flight,
My heart felt dead within me, like a child
That dies before it sees the light.

Bearing within my arms my more than life,
I rose upright and walked away anon,
Staggering like one just hurt in mortal strife,
And laid my child on the cold altar stone;
To her shut eyes my lip I closely prest,
Nor was her brow of all its warmth bereft,
But still appeared like some sweet sonnet's nest,
Which yet the bird hath newly left.

And thus, while one eternal hour went by,
Ages of anguish seemed o'er me to pass,
Grief filled my heart's void space, and made me cry,
"My God, I had but her! my all she was!"
For his one love were all my loves combined,
The very dead she had to me brought back,
Sole fruit which on the tree was left behind,
By the dark storm which swept my track.

The sole link was she in my broken chain,
The one spot of blue in all my heaven!
That in our house more sweet might be its strain,
A name of music we to her had given;
She was my world, my source of motion—sound,
A voice that bore enchantment every where,
The charm to which my eyes were ever bound,
Morn, eve, and night, my joy and care:

The glass in which my heart itself could see,
 My purest days had on her brow a place,
 A ray of lasting bliss conferred on me—
 Lord! all thy gifts assembled in one face!
 Sweet burden, by her mother on me thrown,
 Eyes and a soul like mine in brightest day,
 Life of my life, voice echoing my own,
 A living heaven in my way!

Take her, and satisfy, relentless fate,
 Thy quenchless thirst for agonies and death!
 Lo! on thy shrine, I lay her beauteous weight,
 And now, if emptied, break my cup of wrath!
 My girl, my child, my breath of life! one tress,
 Behold! I sever from the golden chains
 That bound me yesterday to her caress:
 And now no more to me remains! —

A stifling sob now woke me; all the rock
 Whereon I sat, seemed clothed with sweat of blood,
 My cold hand gave my brow an icy shock,
 And on my cheeks two frozen tear-drops stood.
 As flies the eagle to its nest, I fled!
 Low sobs I heard, as I my home drew nigh;
 Love but delayed for me the hour of dread—
 She waited but for me to die!

Now all is still within my lifeless home,
 Two weeping eyes ever my own oppose,
 I know not what I seek, nor where I roam.
 My arms on nothing ope, on nothing close.
 One colour all my days and nights now wear,
 Prayer in my bosom was with hope laid low;
 But bear, my soul, God's chastening bravely bear,
 And kiss the hand that gave the blow!

JOURNEY IN SYRIA CONTINUED.

On the 28th March I left Beirut for Balbek and Damascus. The caravan was composed of twenty-six horses, and eight or ten Arabs on foot, as domestics and escort.

On quitting Beirut, we proceeded by deep roads through a red sand, the margins of which were festooned with all the flowers of Asia in the beauty and fragrance of spring; with nopsals, a prickly shrub, with clusters of flowers yellow as gold, somewhat similar to the yellow broom of our mountains; vines, hanging from tree to tree, and beautiful carobs—a tree, with leaves of a dark green and bronze colour, interwoven branches, and a trunk of dusky, smooth, and shining bark, the most beautiful tree in these climates. In half an hour we reached the summit of the promontory forming the Cape of Beirut, which terminates in a rounded point jutting into the sea, and at its base is a wide plain, traversed by the Nahr-el-Beirut. This plain, well watered and cultivated, planted in all parts with beautiful palm-trees, green mulberries, and pines with wide and bushy tops, dies away under the first ridge of Lebanon. At the culminating point of the plain of Beirut, the magnificent wood of Fakar-el-Din, or Fakardin, extends. It is the promenade of Beirut, where the Turkish and Arab horsemen, and the Europeans, go to exercise their horses, and run courses of the djerid. It was where I went myself every day to pass some hours on horseback, sometimes galloping over the desert sands which rise above the blue waters of the Syrian Sea, sometimes slowly walking in a deep reverie, under the avenues of pines which cover a considerable portion of the promontory. It is the most beautiful spot that I know of in the world, with its gigantic pines, whose vigorous trunks, slightly bent by the ocean winds, and rearing their wide and rounded branches in leafy canopies, are grouped in clusters of two or three, or scattered singly, at intervals of twenty paces, over a golden sand, glittering here and there through the green turf sprinkled with anemones. They were planted by Fakar-el-Din, whose wonderful adventures have spread his fame in Europe, and still preserve his name. I grieved every day at seeing a hero of modern times overthrow these trees, which had been planted by so renowned a character. Ibrahim Pacha had ordered several of them to be cut down for his

marino; but there still remained enough to render the promontory distinct to the eye of the mariner, and to excite the admiration of a man captivated by the beautiful scenes of nature.

It is from here, according to my idea, that we have the most splendid view of Lebanon. We are at its feet, but yet sufficiently distant to be beyond reach of its shadow, and for the eye to canvass it in all its height, to plunge into the darkness of its gorges, to desery the foam of its torrents, and to freely glance among the lowest peaks which flank it, each bearing a Maronite convent, rising from out thickets of pines, cedars, or black cypresses. Sannin, the highest and most pyramidal peak of Lebanon, commands all the lower peaks, and forms, with its eternal snow, the majestic termination on which the violet, rose, and gold, are mingled in hue, of the mountainous horizon which floats in the firmament, not like a solid body, but as a vapour, a transparent steam, through which we think the other side of the sky is to be distinguished—a ravishing phenomenon of the mountains of Asia, which I have seen in no other region, and which affords me enjoyment every evening, without my being able to explain the cause. On the southern side, Lebanon gradually sinks to the projecting cape of Saïde, formerly Sidon, in descending peaks crowned here and there, where they rise above the others and the mass of the Lebanon chain, with snow, and following, like the battlements of a ruined town, now ascending, now falling, the line of the sea-coast, and dying away in the mist to the west, towards the mountains of Galilee, and the banks of the Sea of Genesareth, otherwise the Lake of Tiberias. On the northern side we perceived a bay of the sea, spreading like a peaceful lake upon the plain, half concealed by the green terraces of the beautiful hill of Saint Demetrius, the most graceful hill in Syria. In this bay, whose junction with the sea is not perceptible, a few vessels are always lying at anchor, and gently heaving on the ripple, which lashes with its foam amongst the mastie-trees, laurel-roses, and nopsals, on the shore. Over the river of Beirut, which runs through the plain, all redolent to life and verdure, a bridge, constructed by the Romans, and restored by Fakar-el-Din, throws its picturesque arches.

This was the scene of the last excursion I made with Julia. She had mounted, for the first time, a horse of the desert, which I had brought for her from the Dead Sea, with an Arab domestic to hold its bridle. We were alone; the day, although in November, was brilliant in clearness, warmth, and verdure. Never had I seen this sweet child in such an ecstasy of enjoyment with nature, so buoyant with the bliss of existence and of sensation. She turned to me every instant with an exclamation; and when we had completed the round of the hill of Saint Demetrius, traversed the plain, and reached the pines, where we paused, "Is this not," said she, "the longest, the most beautiful and delightful ride I have ever had in my life?" Yes, alas! and also the last! A fortnight afterwards, I walked alone and in tears, under those same trees, having in my heart but the sweet image of the most lovely creature that Heaven has ever given me to behold, to possess, and to mourn. I saw nothing; nature was no longer animated for me, by what the feeling of my child rendered doubly charming. I looked again; she alone still filled my eyes, but my heart was moved no more; or if she stirred it in my reverie for a few seconds, it fell as quickly cold and broken into the depth of desolate sadness and bitter woe, in which the will of God had plunged it by such irreparable bereavements.

To the west, the eye was arrested by slight hillocks of sand, red as the glare of a conflagration, whence arose a white and roseate vapour, like that from the mouth of a heated oven; and then, following the line of the horizon, it skipped over this desert, and fell upon the deep blue sea, which closed the whole, mixed in the misty distance with the sky, so that their limits were indecisive. The hills, the plain, the sides of all the mountains, bore an infinite number of small isolated houses, each of which had its mulberry grove, its gigantic

pine, and its fig-trees, whilst here and there, in groups more striking to the eye, were pretty villages, or monasteries, rising on their rocky pedestals, and casting back, far into the sea, the yellow tints of the eastern sun. Two or three hundred monasteries are scattered over the peaks and promontories, and in the ravines, of Lebanon. It is the most religious country in the world, and the only one perhaps where the monkish system has not been attended with the abuses which have in other regions destroyed it. The monks, poor and industrious, and living upon the labour of their own hands, are, properly speaking, but pious husbandmen, asking from the government and people only the corner of the rock they cultivate, and the enjoyment of solitude and contemplation. Their existence in the midst of Mahomedan countries perfectly explains the creation of those first asylums of rising Christianity, when suffering and persecuted, and the prodigious multiplication of such retreats for religious freedom in times of barbarity and persecution. Such was the reason of their prevalence, and such it still remains for the Maronites; and thus these monks have continued what they ought to have been every where, and what they can no longer be, except by a rare exception, any where else. If the present state of society and religion is still compatible with monastic orders, they are not such as were originated at another epoch for different wants and necessities; each era must produce its own social and religious creations; the wants of these times are quite distinct from those of the first ages. Modern monastic orders can effect only two objects better than governments and individual exertions—the education of mankind, and their solacement in corporal sufferings. Schools and hospitals, such are the only functions that are left for them to assume in the movement of the present era; but to be suited for the first, they must themselves participate in the intelligence they would spread abroad; they must be more enlightened and more truly moral than the people whom they would educate and improve.

We began to ascend Lebanon, by paths through yellow and brownish rocks, slightly tinted with rose-colour, which give to the mountain at a distance that rose and violet hue which is so enchanting to the eye. There is nothing striking until two-thirds of the way up the mountain, when we came to the top of a promontory which advanced into a deep valley. One of the most beautiful prospects which was ever presented to the human eye to scan in the works of the Almighty, is the valley of Hamman. It was beneath our feet, commencing by a black and profound ravine, hollowed almost like a grotto in the highest rocks, and under the snows of the most elevated ridge of Lebanon. We could distinguish it, at the first glance, only by the torrent of foam which descended through it from the mountains, and traced in its deep gloom a luminous furrow in constant motion. It widened insensibly as its torrent rolled from one cascade to another, when, suddenly turning to the west by a graceful and winding sweep, like a rivulet falling into a river, or itself expanding into a large stream, it grew into a wide valley, extending, upon an average width of half a league, between two mountain chains. It proceeded towards the sea by a regular and gentle slope, sinking or rising into hillocks, according to the obstacles which the rocks presented to its course. On such hillocks were villages, parted by waving hollows and extensive table-lands, encompassed by black firs, bearing on their cultivated platform hand and arm monasteries. In the hollows were spread the waters from its thousand cascades, rolling onwards in a glittering and roaring stream. The two sides of Lebanon which walled in the valley, were themselves covered with fine groups of firs, with convents and highly-perched villages, whose blue smoke floated down the precipices. At the hour in which this valley appeared to me, the sun was setting on the sea, and its rays, leaving the ravines and hollows in a mysterious gloom, were only lingering on the convents, the roofs of the villages, the branches of the firs, and the peaks of the loftier rocks rising above the body of the valley; the waters were falling from the edges of

the two flanks of mountain, and leaping in foaming spouts from the ledges of the rock in their descent, thus lining the sites upon which the villages, convents, and fir woods, were standing, with two encircling arms, white as snow or silver. The noise of the cataracts, like that from a cathedral-organ, was reverberated on all sides, and stunned the ear. I have very rarely felt, with so much profoundness, the distinguishing sublimity of mountain-views; a sad, solemn, soothing beauty, of an entirely different nature to the beauty of the sea or of plains; an effect which concentrates the heart instead of opening it, seeming to partake the religious sentiment evoked by sorrow; a melancholy contemplation, far from the religious emotion of happiness, which is expansion, love, and joy.

Along the sides of the steep hill which we were following, the cascades fell over our heads, or glided into the interstices of the rocks, which they have worn—water-spouts from the sublime mountain-roof, filtering incessantly through the whole extent of its ledge. The weather was stormy, the wind groaning through the firs, and bringing every moment flakes of snow, to variegate the fleeting ray of the March sun. I cannot forget the novel and picturesque effect produced by the passing of our caravan along one of these streaming ravines. The sides of the mountain were scooped out like a deep bay of the sea between high rocks; a torrent, interrupted by some blocks of granite, filled with its boiling and roaring foam this rent in the mountain; the froth of the cascade, which was falling from above, was carried in gusts by the wind over the two banks of arid grey soil which enclosed the gorge, and fell by a rapid inclination to the bed of the torrent over which we had to pass. A narrow cornice, cut in the side of the hill, was the only path by which we could descend to the torrent to cross it. We could only pass one by one along this cornice. I was one of the last of the caravan. The long file of horses, mules, and travellers, descended successively to the bottom of the gulf, winding, and completely disappearing, in the dark mist from the waters, and reappearing indistinctly on the other side, climbing the opposing bank, first enveloped and veiled in a sombre vapour, pale and saffron as a sulphuric exhalation, then in a white and gentle vapour, like the silvery steam from water, and at length emerging, as they scaled the precipice, into the sun, and gleamed upon by its glittering and painted rays. It was a scene of Dante's Hell realised to the eye in one of the most awful phases that his imagination could have invented. But what poet excels nature!—who invents after God?

The village of Hamman, belonging to the Druzes, where we were going to sleep, already appeared through the upper opening of the valley which bears its name. Built on a ledge of sharp-pointed and splintered rocks, it is commanded by the house of the sheikh, itself situated on a more elevated point in the middle of the village. Two torrents, deeply sunk in the rocks, and obstructed by rough masses, breaking the currents into foam, divide the village in all quarters; they are crossed by fir-trunks, on which a little soil has been thrown, and are without any thing in the shape of parapets. The houses, like all those of Lebanon and Syria, present, at a distance, a regular, picturesque, and architectural appearance, deceptive to the eye at the first glance, giving them the semblance of groups of Italian villas, with their terraced roofs, and their balconies decorated with balustrades. But the residence of the Hamman Sheikh surpassed, in elegance and grandeur, all that I had seen of that sort, except the palace of the Emir Beschir at Deir-el-Kammar. We could only compare it to one of our most interesting Gothic castles of the middle ages—such, at least, as their ruins lead us to conceive them, or painting represents them. Projecting windows, decorated with balconies; a wide and lofty gateway mounted by an arch, also projecting, thrown over the gateway; two stone benches, sculptured in arabesque, and joined to the two sides of the gate; seven or eight steps, winding circularly down into a wide terrace, overshadowed by some immense sycamores, where

water was flowing into a marble fountain. Seven or eight armed Druzes, in their noble costumes of brilliant colours, with head-dresses of gigantic turbans, and in martial attitudes, appeared waiting the orders of their chief; some negroes, clad in blue vests, and some young slaves or pages, seated, or sporting on the steps of the gateway; and, in fine, under the arch of the grand gate, the scheik, seated with pipe in hand, covered with a scarlet pelisse, and observing us pass, in an attitude of conscious power and calm dignity. Add to these, two young and lovely females, the one leaning on her elbow at a window of the edifice, and the other standing on a balcony above the door. Such was the scene we witnessed.

We slept at Hamman, in a room which had been prepared for us some days previously. We arose before the sun, and commenced scaling the last peak of Lebanon. The ascent lasted an hour and a half. At length we were among the snows, and pursued, along the elevated track, the gorge which leads to the opposite side of Lebanon, a plain slightly diversified by undulating hills, as at the summit of the Alps. After two hours' toilsome march through two or three feet of snow, we discovered the lofty and still snowy peaks of Anti-Lebanon, then its arid and naked sides, and, last of all, the wide and beautiful plain of Bkaa, making a continuation of the valley of Balbek to the right. This plain commences at the desert of Homs and Hama, and ends only at the mountains of Galilee towards Saphad, where it gives passage to the Jordan in its course to the Sea of Genesareth. It is one of the most lovely and fertile plains in the world, but cultivation is rare upon it. For ever infested by the wandering Arabs, the inhabitants of Balbek, of Zakla, and of the other villages of Lebanon, scarcely dare to sow the ground. It is watered by a great number of streams from inexhaustible springs, and presented to the eye, when we saw it, more the appearance of a marsh, or of a half-dried lake, than of land.

In four hours we achieved the descent of Zakla, where the Greek bishop, a native of Aleppo, received and gave us some rooms. We departed on the 30th, to traverse the plain of Bkaa, and to pass the night at Balbek.

RUINS OF BALBEK.

On quitting Zakla, a pretty Christian town at the foot of Lebanon, on the margin of the plain immediately facing Anti-Lebanon, we at first skirted the roots of Lebanon in our progress to the north. We passed near a ruined edifice, upon whose remains the Turks have built a dervish's hut, and a mosque of imposing and picturesque effect. According to the Arab traditions, it is the tomb of Noah, whose ark rested on the peak of Sannin, and who dwelt in the vale of Balbek, where he died and was buried. Some relics of ancient arches and structures, of the Greek or Roman times, confirm these traditions. We see at least, that in all periods this spot has been consecrated by some great recollection; the stone is there testifying for history. We passed on, not without carrying back our minds to those ancient days when the sons of the patriarch, those new men born of a single man, inhabited the primitive abodes, and founded civilisations and edifices which have remained problems for us.

We took seven hours to traverse, in an oblique direction, the plain which leads to Balbek. At the passage of the river which divides the plain, our Arab escort wished to compel us to turn to the right, and sleep in a Turkish village three leagues from Balbek. My dragonman could not make himself be obeyed, and I was forced to urge my horse to a gallop on the other side of the river, to induce the two leaders of the caravan to follow us. I advanced upon them, sword in hand; they fell from their horses at the menace, and accompanied us with murmurs.

On drawing near to Anti-Lebanon, the plain rises and becomes more dry and rocky. Anemones and snow-drops were as plentiful as pebbles under our feet. We began to desery an immense mass, which stood out in black relief from the white sides of Anti-Lebanon. It was Balbek, but we could distinguish nothing yet.* At last we reached the first ruin. It was a small octagon temple, supported on columns of red Egyptian granite, evidently cut from more lofty columns, some having arched capitals, and others no trace of the arch, and having been, in my opinion, transported, cut, and erected there in very modern times, to bear the enpola of a Turkish mosque, or the roof of a dervish's dwelling; this must have been in the time of Fakar-el-Din. The materials are splendid; in the chiselling of the cornice and the dome, there are traces of some appreciation of the arts; but these materials are clearly fragments of ruins, readjusted by a weaker hand and a corrupted taste. This temple is a quarter of an hour's march from Balbek. Impatient to behold what remotest antiquity has left us of the beautiful, the grand, and the mysterious, we pressed forward our wearied horses, whose hoofs began to clash against blocks of marble, trunks of columns, and prostrated capitals. All the walls enclosing the fields in the vicinity of Balbek are raised with these relics; our antiquaries would find each stone an enigma. Cultivation began to reappear, and large walnut-trees, the first that I had seen in Syria, arose between Balbek and us, and continued to the very ruins of the temples, which their branches still concealed from us. They came at last. Properly speaking, it is not a temple, an edifice, or a ruin; it is a ridge of architecture, which springs suddenly from the plain, at some distance from the real ridges of Anti-Lebanon.

Our people crept along amidst the ruins to the Arab village, which is called Balbek. We skirted one of the sides of this hill of ruins, on which a multitude of graceful columns arose, gilded by the setting sun, and recalling to the mind the yellow and dull hues of the marble of the Parthenon, or of the Coliseum at Rome. Amongst these columns, there were some in long elegant rows, still bearing their capitals untouched, their cornices richly sculptured, and extending along the marble walls which encompassed the sanctuaries. Others were leaning entire against these walls, which sustained them like a tree whose roots have been loosened, but whose stem is still healthy and strong. But the greatest number were scattered in immense heaps of marble or stone upon the slopes of the hill, in the deep ditches which surround it, and even in the bed of the river flowing at its foot. At the summit of the sony eminence, six columns of a more gigantic size stand isolated, not far from the lower temple, and yet preserve their capital cornices; we shall hereafter inquire to what these bear testimony, in their isolation from the other edifices. On prolonging our stroll along the foot of the monuments, we found the columns and architectural remains conclude, and we saw nothing but prodigious walls, built of enormous stones, and almost all bearing traces of sculpture; the relics of another era, of which they made use at the remote epoch when they reared the temples which are now in ruins.

We went no farther this day. The road turned from the ruins, and conducted us to a small house constructed amongst the rubbish. It was the palace of the bishop of Balbek, who, clad in a violet pelisse, and surrounded by some Arab peasants, came to meet us, and lead us to his humble porch. The smallest peasant's hut of Bourgoyne or Auvergne possesses more luxury and elegance than the episcopal palace of Balbek. A hotel without window or door, badly cemented, and the roof partly crumbling, giving admission to the rain upon the mud floor—such the edifice. At the end of the court, however, a well-built new wall, with a door and window

* [Balbek is situated about thirty miles east, or inland, from the coast of Syria, and forty miles in a northerly direction from Damascus.]

in ogive, of Moorish architecture, and the projections of which were composed of stones admirably sculptured, attracted my eye. It was the church of Balbek, the cathedral of this town, where other gods had had such splendid asylums. It served as a chapel for the few Christian Arabs who live upon these ruins of so many creeds, and who come to adore, under a purer form, that same divinity, the conception of whom has stirred men of all ages, and led them to raise up so many stones, and so many ideas.

We deposited our mantles under this hospitable roof, and piquetted our horses upon the green sward, which extended between the priest's house and the ruins. We lighted a fire of brambles to dry our clothes, soaked with moisture, and supped in the bishop's little court upon a table composed of stones from the temples, whilst in the neighbouring chapel the litanies of evening prayer were chanted in plaintive tones, and the solemn and sonorous voice of the prelate was uttering pious exhortations to his flock. The congregation was composed of a few Arab herdsmen and some females. When these peasants of the desert issued from the church, and lingered to observe us, we saw upon their countenances nothing but friendly and benevolent expressions; we heard only obliging and affectionate words, those affecting greetings, those artless wishes of primitive races, who have not yet made a vain formula of the salutation of man to man, but who have concentrated in a small number of words, applicable to the different meetings of morning, noon, and evening, all that hospitality can wish the most engaging and the most efficacious to its guests, all that one traveller can wish to another for the day, the night, the route, and the return. We were Christians—it was sufficient for them. A common religion is the most powerful sympathy for man—a common creed amongst men is more than a common country!—and the Christians of the East, lost in the Mahometanism which surrounds them, which menaces and sometimes persecutes them, always look upon the Christians of the West as actual protectors and future liberators. Europe is not sufficiently aware how potent a lever it possesses, in these Christian populations, to raise the East whenever it may carry thither its political observation, and bring to this land, which approaches a necessary and inevitable change, the liberty and civilisation of which it is so worthy and capable. It is time, in my opinion, to throw a European colony into the heart of Asia, to carry back modern civilisation to the regions whence ancient civilisation sprang, and to form a great dominion from the shreds of the Turkish empire, which crumbles under its own weight, and which has no successor but the desert, and the dust of the ruins amidst which it is wrecked. Nothing is more easy than to raise a new monument upon this neglected soil, and to open to fruitful races of men those inexhaustible sources of prosperity, which Mahometanism has destroyed by its execrable administration. When I say execrable, I do not mean to accuse Mahometanism of a brutal ferocity, which is far from its nature, but of a culpable indifference, of an irremediable fatalism, which, without destroying any thing, leaves all to perish around it. The Turkish population is robust, orderly, and moral; its religion is neither so superstitious nor so exclusive as it has been represented to us; but its passive resignation, the abuse of its faith in the sensible reign of providence, extinguishes the faculties of man by referring all to God. God acts not for man, whose duty it is to act on his own account—he is the spectator and judge of human actions—Mahometanism has assumed the divine part; it has constituted itself the inactive spectator of the divine action, crosses its arms, and, in this quiescence, man perishes by his own voluntary sloth. Nevertheless, we must render justice to the creed of Mahomet, which is highly philosophic, having imposed but two great duties on men—prayer and charity. These two great ideas are, in fact, the two grandest truths in all religion. Mahometanism has derived no liberation from them, which other creeds have wholly excluded from their dogmas. Under

this head, it is more advanced towards religious perfection than most of the religions which insult and condemn it. The faith of Mahomet might, without effort or difficulty, become part of a system of civil and religious liberty, and form a material element of a great social confederation in Asia. Mahometanism is moral, patient, resigned, charitable, and tolerant, from its very nature; all these qualities will fit it for the necessary amalgamation in the countries where it now predominates, and in which enlightenment, and not extermination, is required. It is accustomed to live in peace and harmony with the Christian creeds, which it has allowed to exist, and freely to perform the functions of their faith, in the very bosom of its most holy cities, such as Damascus and Jerusalem. Supremacy is of little importance to it; provided it enjoys the right of prayer, with justice and tranquillity, it needs nothing more. Our European civilisation, utterly human, political, and ambitious as it is, can easily afford it a place for the mosque, and a seat in the shade or the sun.

Alexander conquered Asia with 30,000 Greek and Macedonian soldiers; Ibrahim has overturned the Turkish sway with 30,000 or 40,000 Egyptian youths, acquainted only with the mode of loading a piece, and marching in step. A European adventurer, with 5000 or 6000 soldiers from Europe, might easily destroy Ibrahim, and conquer Asia, from Smyrna to Bassorah, and from Cairo to Bagdad, by progressive advances, by taking the Maronites of Lebanon for the centre of his operations, by introducing organisation behind him in proportion as he progressed, and by making the Christians of the East his instruments of action, administration, and recruiting. The Arabs of the desert even would be with him, whenever he could subsidise them. They have no creed but gold; their objects of worship are the sword and money. With such inclinations, they might be detained a sufficient time to render their subsequent submission an inevitable necessity—they will themselves promote it. They will then be driven back, with their tents, far into the desert, which is their only country, and they will be drawn, by slow degrees, to a milder state of society, of which they have not hitherto had any example around them.*

We arose with the sun, whose first rays fell upon the temple of Balbek, and imparted to those mysterious ruins that brilliancy of renewed youth which nature can render at its pleasure, even to what time has destroyed. After a hasty breakfast, we departed to touch with our hands what we had as yet only seen with our eyes. We slowly approached the artificial ridge, the better to observe the different architectural masses which composed it. We came at last to the northern extremity, under the shadow of the gigantic walls which on that side envelope the ruins. A beautiful stream, overlapping its granite bed, flowed at our feet, forming here and there small rivulets of running and limpid water, which murmured and foamed round the immense stones fallen from the walls and the sculptured blocks sunk in its channel.

We crossed the torrent of Balbek by the stones which time had thrown down for a bridge, and mounted through a narrow and steep breach to the terrace which went round the walls. At every step, at every stone that we laid our hands on or our eyes surveyed, admiration and astonishment drew from us an exclamation of surprise and wonder. Each stone in the outer wall was at least eight to ten feet long, five or six broad, and of many high. These enormous blocks rested with-

* [The scheme of conquering and colonising Syria and Egypt is a very favourite one with Frenchmen. Of course, it is France alone that is meant under the general name of Europe. Very few Frenchmen conceive there is any other power in Europe but themselves. Volney gives vent to this very doctrine of De Lamartine, and the well known Bonaparte embraced it in all its extent. There is no doubt that these fine countries would be redeemed from their present unsettled and unproductive condition, by an industrious and enlightened people getting possession of them, but the rapidity and facility of their occupation would be found very different from what Lamartine supposes.]

out cement one upon the other, and almost all bore traces of sculpture, after the Indian or Egyptian style. At the first glance, it is apparent that those crumbling stones have originally been applied to a very different purpose than forming a wall for a terrace or enclosure, and that they are the precious materials of primitive monuments, which have been used at a later date to encompass the erections of Greek and Roman epochs. It was a habitual, and I am inclined to believe a religious, custom amongst the ancients, when a sacred edifice was destroyed by war or time, or more advanced art was wishful to renew and perfect, to avail themselves of the materials of the old, for the necessary constructions of the restored monuments, with the intention, doubtless, of preventing stones, upon which the shadow of the gods had fallen, from being profaned by vulgar adaptations, and also, perhaps, from respect for their ancestors, and in order that the labours of the different eras might not be buried under the earth, but might be perpetuated as a testimony of the piety of men, and of the successive progress of the arts. It is thus in the Parthenon, where the walls of the Acropolis, rebuilt by Pericles, contain the materials of the temple of Minerva. Many modern travellers have been led into error, from being ignorant of this pious usage of the ancients, and have taken for barbarous constructions of the Turks or the crusaders, edifices composed in this manner from the most remote antiquity. Some of the stones of the wall were even twenty and thirty feet long, and seven or eight high.

When we reached the summit of the breach, we knew not where to rest our eyes. All around were marble doors of a prodigious height and breadth; windows or niches bordered with most admirable sculpture; arches worked with exquisite ornaments; pieces of cornices, entablatures, and capitals, thick as dust beneath our feet; domes springing above our heads—all was mystery, confusion, and disorder; the masterpieces of art, the relics of ages, inexplicable wonders were around us! Scarcely had we cast an admiring glance on one side, than a new object attracted us to another. Every interpretation we gave to the form and the religious meaning of the monuments, was destroyed in succession. We lost ourselves uselessly in a labyrinth of conjectures; we cannot reconstruct by imagination the sacred edifices of a time or of a people, with whose religion and manners we are not fundamentally acquainted. Time bears its secrets away with it, and leaves enigmas to puzzle and deceive human wit. We promptly abandoned the scheme of building up a system on the subject of these ruins; we contented ourselves with beholding and admiring, without comprehending aught but the colossal potency of human genius, and the vigour of the religious idea which had been able to rear such masses, and to accomplish so many admirable works.

We were still separated from the second scene of the ruins by the interior buildings, which intercepted the view of the temples. According to all appearance, we were but in the abodes of the priests, or on the sites of some chapels consecrated to unknown peculiar rites. We cleared these monumental constructions, much more richly worked than the outer wall, and the second scene of the ruins was before our eyes. Much wider and longer, more decorated still, than the one we had left, it presented to us an immense platform, in an oblong square, the level being often broken by the remains of raised pavement, which appeared to have belonged to temples utterly destroyed, or to temples without roofs, in which the sun, the object of adoration at Balbek, could behold his altar. All around this platform extended a series of chapels, decorated with niches admirably sculptured, with friezes, cornices, and the most finished workmanship, but the workmanship of an age already corrupted with regard to the arts; the taste for a superfluity of ornaments, which betrayed the decay of the Greeks and Romans, is strongly marked. But to experience this sense, the eye must have been already exercised by the contemplation of the pure monuments of Rome or Athens; any other eye would be fascinated

by the splendour and finish of the ornaments. The only failing is a superabundant richness; the stone is crushed beneath its own weight of luxury. Eight or ten of these chapels still remain almost uninjured, and they seem to have always existed thus open to the square they are built round, where the mysteries of the worship of Baal were doubtless celebrated in the open air. I will not endeavour to describe the thousand astonishing objects

high each of these temples, each of these stones, offers to the eye of the beholder. I am neither a sculptor nor an architect; I am ignorant even of the name that stone assumes when in this or that position, in this or that form. I should speak very badly in unknown jargon; but that universal language which the beautiful speaks to the eye, even of the ignorant, which the mysterious and ancient speak to the understanding and soul of the philosopher—that I understand; and I never understood it better than in this wilderness of marbles, chisellings, and mysteries, which block up this wondrous court.

And yet it was nothing to what we were immediately to discover. By multiplying in the mind the remains of the temples of Jupiter-Stator at Rome, of the Coliseum, and the Parthenon, this architectural scene might be conceived; the marvel mainly consisted in the prodigious heaping together of so many monuments, so many rich structures, and so much workmanship, within one enclosure and under one view, in the middle of the desert, and on the ruins of a city almost unknown. We withdrew slowly from this spectacle, and proceeded towards the south, where the six gigantic columns reared their heads above the horizon of ruins. To arrive there we were obliged again to clear the outer walls, and the steps, pedestals, and foundations of altars, which everywhere obstructed the space between these columns and us. We reached their bases at last. Silence is the only language of man, when what he feels surpasses the ordinary measure of his impressions. We thus remained mute when contemplating these columns, and surveying with the eye their diameter and height, and the admirable sculpture of their architraves and cornices. They are seven feet in diameter, and more than seventy feet high; they are composed of only two or three blocks, so perfectly joined together that it is scarcely possible to distinguish the lines of junction; their material is a stone of a slightly gilded yellow, of a colour between a marble and sandstone. The sun was then beating on one of their sides, and we seated ourselves for a moment beneath their shade; huge birds, like eagles, disturbed by our noise, flew above their capitals whereon they had built their nests, and returning to perch themselves on the cornices, pecked them with their beaks and shook their wings, as if they were the animated ornaments of these wonderful structures. These columns, which some travellers have taken for the remains of an avenue, 104 feet long and 56 wide, formerly leading to a temple, appeared very evidently to me to have been the exterior decoration of that temple. On examining with an attentive eye the small temple, which remains entire close to them, it is clear that it has been erected on the same model. It seems to me probable, that after the ruin of the first temple by an earthquake, the second has been constructed on a similar design, that part of the materials preserved from the first were used in the second construction, that the proportions only were diminished as too gigantic for a decaying epoch, and that the columns broken by the fall were changed, but that those which time had spared were allowed to subsist as a sacred memento of the ancient temple. If it were otherwise, the remains of other large columns would remain round the six which are still standing. Everything indicates, on the contrary, that the area which encompasses them has been empty and cleared of rubbish from the most remote antiquity, and that a splendid court was used for the ceremonies of some worship around them.

We had opposite to us, on the south, another temple, on the edge of the platform, about forty paces distant. It is the most entire and magnificent monument at Balbek, and, I venture to say, in the whole world. If

you rear again one or two columns of the peristyle, which have fallen aslant, with their tops still leaning on the unbroken walls of the temple; if you return to their places some of the enormous blocks which have fallen from the roof into the vestibule; if you lift up one or two sculptured portions of the inner door, and recompose the altar with the relics which strewed the ground, giving to it again its form and place; you might recall the gods, and lead back the priests and people; they would recognise their temple as complete, untouched, and brilliant, as on the day when it issued from the hands of the architect. This temple is of inferior proportions to that which the six colossal columns recall. It is surrounded by a portico sustained by columns of the Corinthian order, each of them being five feet in diameter, and forty-five feet in shaft, and composed of three cemented blocks. They are at nine feet distance from each other, and the same space from the interior wall of the temple. A rich architrave and a beautifully sculptured cornice runs round their capitals. The roof of this peristyle is formed of large blocks of stone cut by the chisel into concave hollows, in each of which is represented the figure of a god, a goddess, or a hero. We recognised a Ganymede carried off by the eagle of Jupiter. Some of these blocks had fallen to the ground at the bases of the columns, which we measured; they were sixteen feet wide, and nearly five feet thick!—they are the tiles of these monuments.

The inner gate of the temple, formed of equally enormous blocks, is twenty-two feet wide; we could not measure its height, because other blocks have fallen at that spot and half choke it up. The appearance of the sculptured stones which compose the front of this gate, and its disproportion with the other parts of the edifice, lead me to presume that it is the gate of the great overthrown temple, which has been fixed in this later one; the mysterious sculptures with which it is decorated, are, in my opinion, of a very different epoch from that of the Antonines, and of an infinitely less chaste workmanship. An eagle, holding a caduceus (wand) in its claws, stretches its wings over the gateway, and hangs from its beak festoons of ribbons or chains. The interior of the monument is adorned with pillars and niches of the richest and most profuse sculpture. We bore away some of the fragments which covered the ground. Some of the niches are perfectly uninjured, and appear to have been just finished by the artist. Not far from the entrance of the temple, we found large openings and subterranean stairs which led us into lower constructions, the use of which cannot be assigned with certainty, but every thing is there equally vast and magnificent. They were doubtless the abodes of the pontiffs, the colleges of the priests, the halls of initiation, perhaps also royal dwellings. They receive light from all or from the flanks of the platform on which they abut. Fearing we might lose ourselves in these labyrinth, we visited only a small portion of them; they seem to extend over the whole space of the hill.

The temple which I have just described, is placed at the south-west extremity of the monumental hill of Balbek, and forms the angle of the platform. On issuing from the peristyle, we found ourselves on the edge of the fall. We were able to measure the Cyclopean stones which form the pedestal of this group of monuments, and found them to be about thirty feet above the level of the plain of Balbek. This pedestal is constructed of stones whose dimensions are so prodigious, that if they were not attested by travellers worthy of belief, the minds of men in our days would reject them for their improbability. The imagination of the Arabs even, daily witnesses of these wonders, does not attribute them to human power, but to that of genii or supernatural beings. When we consider that these blocks of hewn granite are in some instances fifty-six feet long, fifteen or sixteen feet broad, and of an unknown thickness, and that these prodigious masses are piled upon the other, twenty or thirty feet above the ground; that they have been cut out of far-distant quarries, conveyed here, and hoisted to such a height to form the pavement for temples, we recoil before

such a proof of human capacity. The science of our days has nothing which explains it, and we need not be surprised that people take refuge in the supernatural.

These masses are evidently of a different date from the temples. They were mysteries to the ancients as well as to us. They belong to an unknown era, possibly antediluvian, and have in all likelihood, borne a variety of temples, sacred to a successive variety of creeds. To the simple eye, five or six generations of monuments are apparent upon the hill of ruins at Balbek, all of different epochs. Some travellers and some Arab writers attribute these primitive substructions to Solomon, 3000 years before the present time. They say he built Tadmor and Balbek in the desert. The history of Solomon fills the imagination of the orientals; but this supposition, at least, concerning the gigantic substructions of Balbek, is utterly improbable. How could a king of Israel, who possessed no port on the sea, lying ten leagues from his mountains, who was reduced to borrow the ships of Hiram, king of Tyre, to bring him cedars from Lebanon, have extended his dominion beyond Damascus, and as far as Balbek? How could a prince, who, intending to build the temple of temples, the house of the only God, in his capital city, employed in its erection fragile materials, incapable of resisting time, or leaving any durable record, have raised, a hundred leagues from his kingdom, in the midst of deserts, monuments built of such imperishable materials? Would he not have rather employed his power and wealth at Jerusalem? And what remains at Jerusalem indicative of such monuments as those at Balbek? Nothing: Solomon can therefore have had nothing to do with them. I am disposed rather to believe that these colossal stones have been raised, either by the first race of men, whom all primitive histories call giants, or by the men before the flood. It is asserted that, at no great distance, in a valley of Anti-Lebanon, human bones of enormous size are discovered, and this report prevails generally among the neighbouring Arabs, that the English consul-general in Syria, Mr Farren, a man of superior information, proposes to make an immediate visit to these mysterious sepulchres. The traditions of the East, and the monument, elevated upon the so-called tomb of Noah, a short distance from Balbek, assign this locality as the residence of the patriarch. The first men sprung from him may have long preserved the stature and force which mankind possessed before the total or partial submersion of the globe, and these monuments may be their work. Supposing even that the human race never exceeded its present proportions, the degrees of intelligence may have altered. Who can certify to us that this new youthful intellectual capacity had not invented mechanical processes, so perfect as to

like a grain of sand, such masses as an army of 100,000 men could not now overturn? Whatever may be the fact, some of these Balbek stones, which are sixty-two feet long, twenty broad, and fifteen thick, are the most prodigious masses that humanity has ever lifted. The largest stones in the pyramids of Egypt do not exceed eighteen feet, and these are peculiar blocks, placed in certain positions, to give a finishing of special solidity.

Turning the northern angle of the platform, we found the walls which support it in as good a state of preservation, but the materials composing them less astonishing. The stones, however, are in general twenty to thirty feet long, and eight or ten wide. They are much older than the higher temples, are covered with a grey tinge, and pierced here and there by holes at their angle of junction. These crevices are lined with swallows' nests, and tufts of flowering shrubs hang from them. The solemn and gloomy colour of the stones of the base forms a strong contrast with the rich and golden hue of the temple-walls and rows of columns on the summit. At sunset, when the rays glance between the pillars, and fall in fiery streams between the friezes and architraves of the capitals, the temples glitter like pure gold on a basement of bronze.

We descended by a breach formed at the southern angle of the platform. There some columns of the

small temple have rolled with their architraves into the torrent, which flows past the Cyclopean walls. These enormous shafts, thrown at hazard in the bed of the stream, and on the steep bank of the ditch, have remained, and will doubtless for ever remain, where time has deposited them. A few walnut and other trees have taken root between the blocks, and cover them with the che The la are like reeds of a day's growth, beside these columns, twenty feet in circumference, and capitals, one of which is sufficient to cover half the bed of the torrent.

On the northern side, an immense tunnel in the sides of the platform yawned before us. We descended into it. The light which penetrated it by the two extremities enabled us to see sufficiently. We followed it in all its length of 500 feet, reaching under the whole extent of the temples. It is thirty feet high, and the walls and arch are formed of blocks, which astonished us by their size, even after those which we had just contemplated. They are of unequal proportions, but the greatest number were from ten to twenty feet long. The stones of the arch are joined without cement; we were unable to divine its purpose. At the western extremity this tunnel has a branch higher and wider, which is prolonged under the platform of the small temples which we had first visited. Here we emerged into daylight, upon the torrent, split into streams among the innumerable heaps of architecture rolled from the platform, and among beautiful walnut-trees, growing in the dust of the marble. The other ancient edifices of Balbek, scattered before us in the plain, attracted our attention, but nothing had power to interest us after what we had just inspected. We threw a superficial glance, as we passed, upon four temples, which would be considered wonders at Rome, but which are here like the works of dwarfs. These temples, some of an octagon form, and very elegant ornaments, the others square, with peristyles of columns formed of Egyptian granite, and even of porphyry, appeared to me of the Roman epoch. One of them had served as a church in the first ages of Christianity, and the Christian symbols still remain. It is now uncovered, and in ruins. The Arabs despoil it, as they have occasion for a stone to support their roofs, or of a trough to water their camels.

A messenger from the emir of the Balbek Arabs met us on the plain. He came on the part of the prince to greet us on our happy arrival, and to beg us to assist at a course of the djedid, a species of tournament, which he intended to give in our honour, to-morrow morning on the plain near the temples. We testified our acknowledgments to him, and accepted the invitation; and I dispatched my dragonman, escorted by some of the janissaries, to make a visit to the emir in my name. We returned to the bishop's to rest after the day's labour; but scarcely had we eaten a piece of cake and rice-dumplings, prepared by our grooms, than we were all wandering, without guides and at large, round the hill of ruins, or in the temples, the route to which we had learnt in the morning. Each of us fixed himself on the ruin or at the point of view which he chanced to fall upon, and called aloud upon his companions to come and enjoy the contemplation with him; but as we could not go to one object without losing another, we at last abandoned ourselves each to his own course of discovery. The shades of evening, which were slowly falling from the mountains, and covering, one by one, the columns and ruins with their gloom, added an additional mystery, and an effect even more picturesque, to the magical and mysterious works of man and time. We felt what we were in comparison with the mass and eternity of these monuments—like the swallows, which nestle a season in the interstices of these blocks of stone, ignorant for or by whom they have been there collected. The ideas which have reared these masses, and accumulated these heaps, are unknown to us; the dust of the marble that we tread upon knows more than we, but can tell us nothing; and in a few ages, the generations who shall come to visit, in their turn, the remains of our monuments of

the present era, will likewise ask, without being able to answer, why we have built and sculptured. The works of man endure longer than his thoughts; movement is the law of the human understanding; finality is the dream of pride and ignorance; God is a goal which recedes, in proportion as humanity approaches; we are always advancing, but never arrive; the great divine image which mankind has endeavoured, since its infancy, to fix definitely in its imagination, and to imprison in its temples, expands and breaks loose from the narrow conceptions and limited temples, and leaves the deserted fanes and altars to crumble, whilst it calls man to seek and behold it, where it manifests itself more and more energetically, in thought, mind, virtue, nature, and the infinite universe!

Happy he who has wings to hover over past ages, to stand without giddiness upon the wonderful monuments of men, to fathom the abyss of thought and human destiny—to trace with the eye the course of the human mind progressing through this dim light of successive systems of philosophy, religion, and government—to soar aloft, and, like the mariner in the midst of the ocean looking out for land, foretell to what period of time he himself may live, and to what manifestation of truth and holiness God may call the generation of which he forms a unit!

Balbek, March 29, midnight.—I went yesterday to the hill of temples, by the light of the moon, to think, to weep, and to pray. God knows that I weep, and will weep as long as memory and a tear remain to me. After praying for myself, and for those who are part of myself, I prayed for all mankind. This stupendous overthrown monument of humanity, on the wrecks of which I was seated, inspired me with such strong and ardent sentiments, that they almost of themselves escaped in verse, the natural language of my thoughts when they master me. I wrote out in the morning, at the very spot and on the very stone where I conceived them, the following verses:—

VERSES WRITTEN AT BALBEK.

Mysterious deserts! 'neath whose mounds are strewn
The bones of cities, now by name unknown;
Huge blocks, by ruin's torrent tumbled o'er;
Vast bed of life, whose stream now flows no more,
Ye temples, for whose marble bases, hills
Were rent like trees beneath the woodmen's bills;
Ye gulfs, through which whole river-floods might stray;
Columns, 'mong which the eye can find no way;
Pillar and arch, a long, dark, alleys host,
Where, as in clouds, the wandering moon is lost;
Capitals, whose sites the eye would vainly tell;
Great characters, imprinted on earth's shell—
To touch you, and your mysteries to test,
A pilgrim comes from the far West!

The path, by which his bark the billows ranged,
A hundred times had its horizon changed;
He cast his life on the abyssal deeps,
His feet are worn upon the mountain steep;
His tent hath felt the fiery eastern sun,
His friends grew faint before the goal was won;
And e'en his dog, if ere he reach his land,
Will recognise no more his voice or hand;
And from him, on his travel, has been riven
His eye's sole star, the child who gave his heaven
Its all of light and immortality:
Childless, without memorial, he must die!
And now, upon these mighty wrecks he sits,
And heareth but the mocking wind by fits:
A load upon his brow and bosom rests—
Thought, heart, no longer there are guests!

I had passed the summits of Sannin, covered with eternal snows, and had descended on the other side of Lebanon, crowned with its diadem of cedars, into the bare and sterile desert of Heliopolis, at the termination of a long and toilsome day. In the distant horizon before us, on the last descents of the black mountains of Anti-Lebanon, an immense group of yellow ruins, gilded by the setting sun, stood out from the gloom of the mountains, and reflected back the rays of evening.

Our guides pointed to them with their fingers, and exclaimed, "*Balbek! Balbek!*" It was, in fact, the marvel of the desert, the fabulous Balbek, which sprang thus brilliant from its tomb to tell us of ages of which history has lost count. We proceeded slowly with our wearied horses, our eyes fixed on the gigantic walls, on the dazzling and colossal columns, which seemed to increase in compass and in height as we drew nigh. A profound silence reigned throughout our caravan—each feared to lose an impression of that hour by whispering his sensations to another. The Arabs even were silent, and seemed awed by the powerful and solemn feeling arising from a spectacle which levels all minds. We reached at last the nearest shafts and blocks of marble, which earthquakes have thrown more than a mile from the site of the monuments, like leaves torn and hurled from the tree by a whirlwind. The deep and wide quarries which rip up, like gorges in a valley, the black sides of Anti-Lebanon, yawned with their abysses before us. These vast hollows of stone, the walls of which still show the deep traces of the chisel, exhibit various gigantic blocks half detached from their bases, and others completely hewed on the four sides, which seem to be waiting for the waggons and arms of a giant race to move them. One of these masses was sixty-two feet long, with a breadth of twenty-four, and a thickness of sixteen feet. One of our Arabs, descending from his horse, glided into the quarry, and creeping up this stone, by clinging to the jaggings of the chisel, and the moss which has taken root in them, scaled the pedestal, and ran to and fro upon its platform uttering savage yells; but such a mass would crush the man of our times—man would sink before his own work—sixty thousand men would need their united powers to simply raise this stone, and the platforms of Balbek contain some still more colossal, reared twenty-five and thirty feet above the ground, to support colonnades proportioned to their bases.

We pursued our route between the desert on the left, and the undulations of Anti-Lebanon on the right, skirting a few small fields, cultivated by the pastoral Arabs, and the bed of a large torrent winding amidst the ruins, with fine walnut-trees rising on its margins. The Acropolis, or artificial hill, which bears all the great monuments of Heliopolis, appeared to us by glimpses through the branches, and above the heads of the large trees. At length we beheld it in its full extent, and the whole caravan stopped as by an electrical instinct. No pen, no pencil, can depict the impression which this first view produced in the mind. Under our feet, in the bed of the stream, amidst the fields, and around the trunks of the trees, were blocks of red or grey granite, of blood-streaked porphyry, of white marble, and of yellow stone, transcendent as the marble of Paros; shafts of columns, sculptured capitals, architraves, cornices, entablatures, pedestals; the scattered members of statues, fallen with their faces to the ground; all these, mingled in confusion, grouped in heaps, scattered and streaming on all sides like the lava of a volcano vomiting forth the wrecks of an empire. Scarcely was there a path to creep through these sweepings of the arts, so covered they the earth. The iron-shod hoofs of our horses struck fire at every step, from the polished acanthus of the cornices, or from the snowy neck of a female statue. The waters of the Balbek river alone made way amongst the fragments, and washed, with their murmuring foam, the broken marbles, which stood as obstacles to their course.

Beyond this surmount of marble relics arose the Hill of Balbek, a platform 1600 paces long, and 700 feet broad, built entirely by the hands of men, of hewn stones, some of which are fifty to sixty feet long, and fifteen to sixteen high, but the greatest part from fifteen to thirty in elevation. This hill of granite was seen by us at its eastern extremity, with its immeasurable foundations and walls, in which three pieces of stone give a horizontal line of 180 feet and near 4000 feet of superficies; and with the windows of its subterranean tunnels, in which the torrent boils and sinks, and whence the winds and water cast a murmuring noise similar to the distant

clang of our large cathedral bells. On this prodigious platform, the outlines of the great temples stood out in relief from the rose-tinted blue of the horizon. Some of these monuments seemed entire, as if fresh from the artists' hands; others offered nothing but portions still standing, isolated columns, slanting walls, and dismantled pediments. The eye was lost in the bewildering mazo of colonnades belonging to the different temples, and could not observe, above these elevations, where this multitude of stones ended. The six gigantic columns of the great temple, still bearing majestically their rich and colossal entablature, soared above the whole scene, dim in the blue sky of the desert, like an aerial altar for the rites of giants.

We stopped but for a few minutes, to take slight cognisance of what we had come to behold through so many perils and dreary distances; and, assured of possessing on the morrow the spectacle which dreams could not picture to us, we proceeded onwards. The day was falling, and we needed an asylum, either under the tent, or under some portion of the ruins, to pass the night, and rest ourselves after a fourteen hours' tedious journey. Leaving the mountain of ruins and platform of whitened relics on our left, and passing over some grass enclosures, cropped by goats and camels, we directed our steps towards a smoke, rising a few hundreds of paces from us, out of a group of ruins interspersed with Arab huts. The ground was uneven and hilly, and echoed under the feet of our horses, as if the substructions we were treading over would open in chasms beneath us. We came to the door of a low building, half concealed by slabs of fallen marble, with narrow windows, without glass or shutters, formed of marble and porphyry badly jointed with a little cement. A small stone projection rose one or two feet above the flat roof of the cottage, and a tiny bell was hung in it, waving in the wind. It was the episcopal palace of the Arab bishop of Balbek, who guards in the deserta little flock of twelve or fifteen Christian families, of the Greek communion, enveloped by wildernesses and ferocious tribes of wandering Arabs. So far, we had not beheld a single living being but the jackals, who were lurking among the columns of the great temple, and the little swallows, with red necks, clinging to the cornices of the platform, and seeming the ornaments of an oriental architecture. The bishop, aroused by the noise of our caravan, soon came forth, and, bowing on the threshold, offered us hospitality. He was a handsome old man, with silvery locks and beard, a grave and placid countenance, and a pleasing musical voice, perfectly in accordance with the idea of a priest, as painted in a poem or romance, and in all things worthy of showing his calm, resigned, and benignant face, on this scene of solemn ruins and meditation. He made us enter a small inner court, strewn with beautiful statues, and pieces of mosaic and antique vases, and giving up to us his house—that is to say, two small, low rooms, without furniture or doors—he retired, and left us, according to Eastern custom, masters of his dwelling. Whilst our Arabs were busied fixing in the earth around the house the iron pegs to attach by ring the horses' legs, and were lighting a fire in the court to prepare a plan for us, and to bake barley cakes, we went out to cast a second glance upon the monuments which surrounded us. The high temples stood before us like statues on their pedestals, the sun striking them with a last faint ray, dropping slowly from one column to another, like the light of a lamp borne by the priest far into the depths of the sanctuary. The thousand shadows of the porticoes, pillars, colonnades, and altars, were moving beneath the soaring elevations, and obscured by degrees the brilliant glare of the marble and sandstone upon the Acropolis. Farther in the plain was an expanse of ruins ending only with the horizon; one might have called them waves of stone, broken against a ledge, and carrying their white foam over a wide-stretching strand. Nothing arose above this sea of wrecks; and the night, which was descending from the already darkened heights of the mountain-chain, closed round and successively enveloped them in its

gloom. We remained a few minutes pondering in silence upon this spectacle, and then returned, with slow steps, to the bishop's little court, now lighted up by the Arabs' fire.

Seated on fragments of cornices and capitals, serving for seats in the court, we hastily ate the sober meal of a traveller in the desert, and remained for some time, before retiring to sleep, conversing on what filled our thoughts. The fire was extinguished, but the moon rose, round and brilliant, in the clear sky, and falling through the battlements of a high wall of white stone, and the indentations of a window of Arabian architecture, which bounded the court towards the desert, lighted up the enclosure with a lustre which made all the ruins radiant. We fell into a silent reverie; what were our sensations, at that hour, in that spot so far from the actual world, in the midst of an extinct world, in the presence of so many mute evidences of a past which was unknown, but which overturned all our petty theories of history and human philosophy—what arose in our minds or hearts, concerning our systems and creeds, and perhaps also our individual recollections and feelings—God only knows, for our tongues did not venture to express them; they feared to profane the solemnity of that hour, of that luminary, of the very thoughts themselves; we were silent. Suddenly, murmuring sound, with impassioned accents, like sweet and amorous wailing, issued from the ruins behind the high wall pierced with openings, the top of which seemed to us as if tottering for a fall; this vague and confused murmur swelled, grew stronger and higher, and we distinguished a song, sustained by several voices in chorus—a monotonous, melancholy, and affecting song, which alternately rose and fell, died away, and was renewed, answering to itself: it was the evening prayer which the Arab bishop was putting up with his little flock, within the ruined walls of what had been his church, recently overthrown by a tribe of idolatrous Arabs. Nothing had previously prepared us for this music of the soul, whose every note is: sentiment or an aspiration of the human heart, in the solitude in the depths of the wilderness, springing thus from silent blocks, heaped up by earthquakes, barbarians, and time. We were struck with awe, and accompanied the accents of that holy poetry with rapturous thought, prayer, and all our inward poetic workings until the litanies, with their monotonous burden, were finished, and the last sighs of the pious voices had sunk into the usual silence of these ancient relics.

Same date.—The temples made us forget the djeri, which the prince of Balbek wished to exhibit for us; we passed the whole morning in going over them again. At four o'clock, some Arabs came to inform us that the horsemen were in the plain beyond the monuments, but that, out of patience with our tardiness, they were at the point of withdrawing; that the prince concluded this spectacle had few charms for us, since we were so long in going to it, and therefore he invited us to proceed to his residence when our curiosity was satisfied, where he was arranging another species of amusement. Such toleration on the part of a chief of a fierce tribe of Arabs, the most feared in the desert, astonished us. In general, the Arabs, and even the Turks, do not allow strangers to visit alone the ruins of ancient edifices, as they believe these remains contain prodigious treasures, guarded by genii or demons, and that Europeans know the magic terms which throw them open. As they are solicitous that these hoards of wealth should not be carried off, they observe the Franks in these regions with great vigilance; but here, on the contrary, we were left entirely to ourselves; we had not even an Arab guide with us, and the children of the tribe had retired to a distance from respect. I am ignorant of the cause of this deference on the part of the emir of Balbek; perhaps he took us for emissaries of Ibrahim Pacha. The fact is, we were too few to excite fear in a tribe of 500 or 600 men, used to arms and living by plunder, and yet they dared not interrogate us, or interfere with any of our projects; we could have remained a month in the temples, made excavations, and carried

away the most precious fragments of these sculptures, without encountering opposition from any one. I regretted exceedingly, as at the Dead Sea, that I had not been previously aware of the feeling of these tribes respecting us; I would have taken with me workmen and camels of burden, and enriched science and museums.

On leaving the temples, we went to the palace of the mir. An interval of deserted ruins, of less importance, separates the hill of the great monuments, or the Acropolis of Balbek, from New Balbek, inhabited by the Arabs. It is but a heap of huts, a hundred times overthrown in incessant wars. The population have burrowed as they could in the cavities formed by so many remains; branches of trees or roofs of straw cover their dwellings, the doors and windows of which are frequently composed of pieces of most admirable sculpture.

The space occupied by the ruins of the modern town is very considerable. It stretches out of sight, and whitens two low hills which undulate above the great plain; the effect is sad and harsh. These modern relics recall to the mind those of Athens, which I had seen a year before. The dull and raw whiteness of the walls thrown to the earth, and of the scattered blocks, has none of the majesty or the gilded tint of ruins of veritable antiquity; it resembles more an immense strand covered with sea-foam. The palace of the emir consists of a pretty large court, surrounded with low buildings of different forms, the whole being quite similar to a miserable farmyard in our most impoverished provinces. The gate was guarded by a certain number of armed Arabs; a crowd was pressing at the entrance, but the guards made room for us, and introduced us to the interior. It was already filled by the chiefs of the tribe, and a great concourse of people. The emir and his family, with the principal sheikhs, dressed in magnificent caftans (robes) and pelisses, which were, however, very ragged, were seated on a balcony, above the crowd, affixed to the largest building. Behind them were some attendants, armed men, and black slaves. The emir and his suite rose up on our approach, and we were assisted to mount some high steps, formed of irregular blocks, which served as a staircase to the balcony. After the usual compliments, the emir made us sit on the divan beside him, pipes were brought, and the spectacle began.

A music resulting from drums, timbrels, shrill fifes, and iron triangles, struck with an iron rod, gave the signal. Four or five performers, dressed in the most grotesque fashion, some as men, others as women, advanced into the middle of the court, and executed the most extravagant and lascivious dances that the eyes of the barbarians could support. These senseless dances lasted more than an hour, interspersed occasionally with a few words and gestures, and alterations of costume, which seemed to denote a dramatic intention; but one thing only was intelligible, namely, the horrible and disgusting depravity of the public manners, as indicated by the movements of the dancers. I turned away my eyes; the emir himself appeared to blush at the scandalous pleasures of his people, and made, like me, gestures of indignation; but the shouts and applause of the rest of the spectators always rose loudest when the most filthy obscenities were given in the figures of the dance, thus encouraging the actors.

They danced on, until, overcome with fatigue, and streaming with perspiration, they could no longer maintain the continually increasing quickness of the measure, but rolled on the earth, whence the attendants removed them. The women did not assist at this spectacle; but those of the emir, whose harem looked on the court, enjoyed it from their rooms, and we saw them through the wooden bars crowding to the windows to get a view of the dancers. The slaves of the emir brought us sherbet and sweetmeats of all sorts, as well as an exquisite drink composed from the juice of the pomegranate and orange flowers, well iced, and in crystal cups. Other slaves presented us with muslin napkins, embroidered with gold, to dry our lips. Coffee

was likewise repentedly served, and pipes incessantly renewed. I conversed for half an hour with the emir. He appeared to me a man of good sense and intellect, much beyond what the gross pleasures of his people would lead one to imagine. He was about fifty years old, of a handsome countenance, and possessed of the most dignified and noble deportment, and of a most grave politeness, all which things the lowest of the Arabs preserve, either as a gift of the climate, or as a heritage of ancient civilisation. His costume and his arms were very sumptuous. His beautiful horses were standing in the courtyards and on the road, one of the finest of which he offered to present to me. He interrogated me, with the most delicate discretion, touching Europe, Ibrahim Pacha, and the object of my journey to the midst of these deserts. I answered with a feigned reserve, so as to lead him to the belief that I had in reality a totally different object from that of visiting columns and ruins. He offered me all his tribe as an escort to Damascus, over the chain of Anti-Lebanon, which I wished to traverse. I only accepted a few horsemen to serve as guides and protectors, and I withdrew, followed by all the sheiks, on horseback, to the door of the bishop's house. I gave orders for departure in the morning, and we passed the evening in conversation with our venerable host, whom we were soon to leave. A few hundreds of piastres, which I presented to him as alms for his flock, repaid the hospitality which we had received from him. He took upon himself the task of sending off a camel loaded with some fragments of sculpture, which I wished to transport to Europe. He faithfully acquitted himself of this commission, and on my return into Syria, I found these precious relics already arrived at Beirut.

March 31.—We left Balbek at four in the morning. The caravan is composed of our usual number of monks, Arabs, servants, and escort, and of eight Balbek horsemen, who march two or three hundred paces in advance of the caravan. The day commenced to break just as we cleared the first hill, mounting to the chain of Anti-Lebanon. The entire hill is excavated by enormous deep quarries, from which the prodigious monuments we had been contemplating were drawn forth. The sun began to gild their summits, and they glittered beneath us in the plain like blocks of gold. We could not draw our eyes away; twenty times we stopped before the view of them was lost. Finally, they disappeared for ever under the hill, and we saw nothing over the desert but the black or snowy peaks of the mountains of Tripolis or Latakia, which were lost in the firmament.

The mountains which we are passing over, as yet of moderate elevation, are entirely bare, and almost deserted. The soil in general is poor and sterile, and, where cultivated, is of a red colour. There are pretty vales, with gentle and undulating slopes, where the plough might work without obstacle. We meet neither travellers, nor villages, nor inhabitants, until the middle of the day. We halt beneath our tents at the entrance to a deep gorge, where a torrent, now dry, flows. We find a spring under a rock, with abundant and delicious water. We fill with it the jars suspended to our horses' saddles. After two hours' rest, we resume our march.

By a steep and rugged path, we skirt the flank of a lofty mountain of naked rock for nearly two hours. The valley, which keeps sinking most considerably to our right, is ploughed by the broad bed of a waterless river, and on the other side a mountain of grey rock, completely stripped of vegetation, rises like a perpendicular wall. We begin to descend towards the other outlet of this gorge. Two of our horses, loaded with luggage, roll down the precipice. The mattresses and divan-carpets, which form their burden, deaden the fall, and we succeed in recovering them. We encamp at the end of the gorge near an excellent well. The night was passed in the midst of this labyrinth, in the mountains of Anti-Lebanon. The snow is not more than fifty yards above our heads. Our Arabs have lighted a fire of brambles beneath a grotto, ten yards from the hillock where our tent is pitched. The glare from the fire

penetrates the canvass and lightens the interior of the tent, where we are sheltering ourselves against the cold. The horses, although covered with their felt sheets, neigh from suffering. We hear during the whole night the Balbek horsemen and Egyptian soldiers, shivering under their mantles. We ourselves, though wrapped up in mantles and thick woollen blankets, feel insupportable the bitter iciness of this Alpine atmosphere. At seven in the morning we mount on horseback, with a resplendant sun, which soon makes us throw off our mantles, and afterwards our caftans. At eight we pass by a large Arab village on an elevated level, the houses in which are commodious, and the yards filled with cattle, as in Europe. We take care not to tarry. The inhabitants are enemies of the Arabs of Balbek and Syria. They belong to tribes almost independent, which hold an intercourse chiefly with the populations of Damascus and Mesopotamia. They seem rich and industrious; all the plains around are under cultivation, and we perceive men, women, and children, in the fields. They are ploughing with oxen. We encounter several sheiks well mounted and equipped, either going to or coming from Damascus; their countenances are savage and fierce; they look upon us with a sinister expression, and pass on without saluting us. The children shout at us with malicious yells. In a second village, two hours beyond the first, we obtain by purchase, with great difficulty, a few chickens and some rice for our dinner. At six in the evening we pitch our camp on an elevated spot above a mountain gorge, which falls towards a river which we can see glittering in the distance. A small torrent bounding into the ravine, suffices us to slake our horses' thirst. In front of us, at the outlet of the gorge, perpendicular rocks rise in pyramidal groups lost in the sky. The climate is still severe; no vegetation is seen on the acclivities. The grey or black tinge of the rock contrasts with the brilliant transparency of the firmament into which the peaks pierce.

April 1.—We were on horseback by six o'clock. The weather was magnificent. We travelled the whole day without a halt, between steep mountains, separated only by narrow ravines, down which torrents of melted snow were rolling. Not a tree, not a piece of moss, was on the mountain-flanks. Their strangely broken and splintered forms gave an idea of human monuments. One of them rose high and perpendicular on all sides, like a pyramid; its base might be a league round. We could not discover how it was possible it could be scaled. No trace of a pathway or of steps was visible, and yet caverns were hollowed out by human labour in all parts of it, and of all sizes. A number of cells, both great and small, had sculptured entrances of different forms cut with the chisel. Some of them, which opened immediately above our heads, had small terraces, fashioned in the rock itself before the doorways. We saw the remains of chapels or temples, and columns still standing, on the rock; it seemed a human hive forsaken. The Arabs allege that it was the Christians of Damascus who hollowed out these caves. I believe a fact that it is one of those Thebais in which the early Christians took refuge in the times of heretising or of persecution. Saint Paul founded a great church at Damascus, which, after flourishing a long time, underwent the same vicissitudes and persecutions as all the other churches in the East.

We left these mountains to the left hand, and shortly, altogether behind. We made a rapid descent, down almost impracticable precipices, to an open and extensive valley. A charming river flowed through it. Vegetation again appeared on its banks; willows, poplars, and large trees, with their branches bent in a fantastic manner, and bearing black foliage, were growing in the interstices of the rock which lined the river. By an insensible, though unvarying descent, we followed these enchanting margins for a whole hour. The river kept murmuring and foaming below us. The lofty mountains, which sided the gorge through which the river flowed, struck back and rounded into wide and wooded knolls, whereon the rays of the setting sun were falling.

It was the first glimpse of Mesopotamia; more and more clearly we perceived the broad valleys which stretch and open into the great desert plain between Damascus and Bagdad. The valley in which we were, rounded gently off into wider compass. On both sides of the river traces of cultivation were perceptible, and we heard the distant bleatings of flocks. Orchards of apricots as large as walnuts skirted the road. Shortly, to our great surprise, we saw hedges, as in Europe, dividing the orchards, and gardens of pot-herbs, and fruit-bushes in flower. Wooden barriers or gates opened at intervals on these lovely enclosures. The road was broad, level, and well maintained, like one in the vicinity of a large French town. None of our party was aware of the existence of this enchanting oasis in the bosom of the inaccessible mountains of Anti-Lebanon. We were evidently drawing close to a town or village, whose name we knew not. An Arab trooper whom we fell in with, told us that we were in the environs of a large village, called Zebdani. We already saw the smoke rising from it amongst the tops of the great trees scattered in the valley. We soon entered the streets of the village, which were wide and straight, having a foot pavement of stone on each side. The houses alongside of them were large, and surrounded by yards full of cattle, and by gardens well irrigated and stocked. The women and children came to the doors to see us pass, and welcomed us with open and smiling countenances. We inquired if there was a caravanserai where we might shelter ourselves for the night, and were answered in the negative, inasmuch as Zebdani not being on any route, no caravans pass through it. After wandering some time in the streets, we came to an open space on the banks of the river. There a house of larger dimensions than the others, with a terrace running along it and encompassed by trees, proclaimed the residence of the sheik. I went to the gate with my dragoman, and asked for a house to pass the night in. The slaves went to inform the sheik, who immediately came out. He was a venerable old man, with a white beard and a frank and obliging countenance. He offered me his whole house, with an earnestness and grace such as I never met with elsewhere. In an instant his numerous slaves, and the chief people of the village, took hold of our horses, led them to an extensive shed, unloaded them, and supplied them with barley and straw. The sheik ordered his women to retire from their apartments; and having first introduced us to his divan, where we were served with coffee and sherbet, abandoned to us all the rooms of his house. He inquired if I wished his slaves to prepare our repast. I begged him to allow my own cook to spare them that trouble, and simply to provide me with a calf and some sheep, to supply the deficiencies in our stock since we left Balbek. In a few minutes the sheep and calf were brought, and killed by the village butcher; and whilst our people prepared supper, the sheik presented to us the principal inhabitants of the district, his relations, and friends. He even asked permission to introduce his women to Madame de Lamartine. They ardently desired, he said, to see a European lady, and to inspect her garments and jewels. In fact, they soon after passed through the divan we were sitting in, covered with their veils, and entered my wife's apartment. There were three of them; one, already advanced in years, seemed the mother of the other two. The young ones were remarkably pretty, and evinced the most perfect respect, reverence, and attachment for the elder one. My wife gave them some small presents, and they did the like on their parts.

During this interview the venerable sheik conducted us to a terrace, which he had erected close to his house, on the margin of the river. Piles, fixed in the bed of the river, supported a floor, covered with a carpet; a divan went round, and an enormous tree, similar to those I had seen on the edge of the road, overshadowed the whole terrace and river. There the sheik, like all the Turks, passed his leisure hours, in the murmur and coolness of the waters bubbling before his eyes, in the shade of the tree, and amidst the song of a thousand

birds peopling its branches. A bridge of planks connected the house with this suspension-terrace. It was one of the most beautiful situations I have beheld in my travels. The view reached to the rounded and sombre eminences of Anti-Lebanon, surmounted by the black rock pyramids, or the snowy peaks; fell with the river, and its foaming waters, between the undulating branches of the various trees which lined its course; and was lost with it in the sinking plains of Mesopotamia, which advanced, like verdant gulfs, into the windings of the mountains.

When the supper was ready, I invited the sheik to honour us with his company. He accepted with great good will, and appeared much amused at the European manner of eating. He had never seen any of the utensils of our tables. He drank no wine, and we did not urge him. The conscience of a Mahomedan is as much to be respected as our own. To make a Turk sin against the law which his religion imposes, has always appeared to me as wicked and disgraceful as to tempt a Christian from the path of duty. We spoke a long time about Europe and our customs, of which he seemed a great admirer. He entertained us with a dissertation on his mode of governing his village. His family had reigned for ages over this favoured canton of Anti-Lebanon; and the perfect system of property, agriculture, safety, and decency, which we had admired in passing through the lands of Zebdani, was entirely owing to this excellent race of sheiks. Thus it is throughout the East. All is exception and anomaly. Good is perpetuated as well as evil. We could judge, from this enchanting village, what these provinces might be, if restored to their natural fertility.*

The sheik greatly admired my arms, and especially a pair of capped pistols, ill disguising the satisfaction that their possession would cause him. But I was not able to make him the offer. They were my pistols for combat, which I was determined to keep by me until my return to Europe. I presented him with a gold watch for his wife. He received this gift with all the polished reluctance which we should have exhibited in Europe on a like occasion, and affected even to be completely satisfied, although I could not doubt his predilection for the brace of pistols.

A quantity of cushions and carpets was brought for us to sleep on. We stretched ourselves on the divan where the sheik slept himself, and we were lulled to repose by the murmur of the river as it swept beneath us.

On the following day, we departed at sunrise, and passed through the other half of the village of Zebdani, which was still more beautiful than the one we had seen the previous evening. The sheik gave us some horsemen of his tribe as an escort to Damascus. We dismissed the troopers of the Balbek emir, who would not have been very safe on the territory of Damascus. We continued for an hour in roads lined with quick-set hedges, as broad, and kept in as good repair, as in France. A canopy of apricot and pear trees overspread the way; to the right and left orchards stretched without end, and then came cultivated fields full of labourers and cattle. All the orchards were irrigated by rivulets, which fall from the mountains on the left. The mountains were topped with snow. The plain was extensive, and our view was limited only by the groves of flowering trees. After marching for three hours, as

* [Dr Richardson, who visited Damascus in 1819, and in travelling thence to Balbek, passed through Zebdani, and stopped a night there, like M. de Lamartine, informs us that this village belonged then to Ahmed Bey, son of Abdallah, formerly pacha of Damascus, and was administered, in his absence, by a sheik called Dahr Etel. As M. de Lamartine has erred so considerably in placing Zebdani in an unfrequented part of the route, and in describing it as utterly, even by name, unknown to his Arab guides, when, in point of fact, it is precisely the half way station, the perpetual and notorious resting-place, between Damascus and Balbek, the probability is that M. de Lamartine is also incorrect in ascribing to the inhabitants of Zebdani (who amount to about 6000) an hereditary and independent race of sheiks or governors.]

if in the midst of the most delightful landscapes of England or Lombardy, with nothing to remind us of the desert and barbarism, we entered upon a more stérile and harsh country. Vegetation and cultivation almost entirely disappeared. Hills of rock, scantily covered with a yellow moss, stretched in front of us, bounded by grey mountains more elevated, but equally bare. We came to a halt at the foot of these mountains, far from human habitation. We passed the night there on the edge of a torrent deeply entombed, which resounded like endless thunder in a rocky gorge, and poured down its muddy waters, mixed with flakes of snow.

To horse at six in the morning. This was our last day's journey, and we assumed the complete Turkish costume to escape being recognised as Franks in the environs of Damascus. My wife appeared as an Arab woman, and a long veil of white linen enveloped her from head to foot. Our Arabs also prepared their best attire, and pointed out to us the mountains which we had yet to clear, exclaiming, "*Seham! Seham!*" It is the Arab name of Damascus.

The fanatical population of Damascus, and the surrounding country, render these precautions necessary on the part of Franks venturing to visit that city. The Damascenes alone amongst the orientals, nourish more and more religious hatred and horror of the European name and costume. They alone have refused to admit consuls, or even consular agents, for Christian powers. Damascus is a holy, fanatical, and free city—nothing must pollute it.

In spite of the menaces of the Porte, in spite of the more powerful intervention of Ibrahim Pacha, and a garrison of 12,000 Egyptian or foreign soldiers, the people of Damascus have obstinately refused access within the walls to the English consul-general in Syria. Two terrible seditions have arisen in the city, on the mere rumour of the consul's approach. If he had not turned back, he would have been torn in pieces. Things are still in this state; the arrival of a European in the Frank costume would be the signal of a fresh rising, and we were not without apprehension that the report of our journey might have reached Damascus, and have exposed us to serious danger. We had taken every possible precaution. We were clothed in the strictest Turkish fashion. A solitary European, who has assumed the Arab manners and costume, and who passes for an Armenian merchant, has exposed himself for many years to the risk of residing in such a town, to be of assistance to the commerce of the maritime districts of Syria, and to such travellers as destiny drives into these inhospitable regions. This is M. Baudin, consular agent for France and all Europe, formerly an agent of Lady Stanhope, whom he accompanied in her first journeys to Balbek and Palmyra, and afterwards employed by the French government to buy horses in the desert. M. Baudin speaks Arabic like a native, and has formed friendly and commercial connections with all the wandering tribes of the deserts surrounding Damascus. He has married an Arab woman of European descent. He has lived for ten years in this city; and notwithstanding the numerous relations that he has opened up, his life has been repeatedly threatened by the bigoted fury of the inhabitants. Twice, flight alone saved him from certain death. He has built a house at Zarkle, a small Christian town on the sides of Lebanon, and there he takes refuge in times of popular commotion. M. Baudin, whose life is perpetually in danger at Damascus, and who forms the sole means of communication in this great capital, the only link for the policy and commerce of Europe, receives from the French government, in reward for his exalted services, the trifling revenue of 1500 francs (£62, 10s. sterling), whilst the consuls in the sea-ports of the Levant, enjoying full security, and all the luxuries of life, receive large and enviable allowances. I cannot comprehend the indifference and injustice of the European powers, and the French government in particular, in neglecting and impoverishing a young man so intelligent, honest, courageous, and active, and who renders, and might render yet more,

the greatest services to his country. They will lose him!

I made the acquaintance of M. Baudin in Syria the preceding year, and I had arranged with him my journey to Damascus. As he was informed of my departure and my impending arrival, I dispatched an Arab to him this morning, to inform him of the hour at which I should reach the neighbourhood of the town, and to beg him to send me a guide to direct my steps and proceedings.

By nine in the morning, we were on the side of a mountain strewed with the country-houses and gardens of the Damascenes. A picturesque bridge crosses a torrent at its foot. We perceive several files of camels, bearing stones for fresh constructions: every thing gives token of the approach to a great capital. An hour later, we observe, on the summit of an eminence, a small isolated mosque, the residence of a solitary Mahometan; a fountain flows near the mosque, and brass cups, chained to the masonry of the fountain, afford the traveller a means of satisfying his thirst. We halt for a moment at this spot, under the shade of a sycamore; the roads are already thronged with travellers, peasants, and Arab soldiers. We resume our horses; and after mounting a few hundreds of paces, we enter a deep defile, enclosed on the left by a sandstone mountain, rising perpendicularly above our heads, and on the right by a ledge of rock from thirty to forty feet high; the descent is rapid, and the loose stones slip under the horses' feet. I was proceeding at the head of the caravan, a few yards behind the Arabs of Zebdani; they suddenly stopped, and uttered cries of joy, whilst pointing to an opening in the side of the defile. I came up, and my eyes fell, through the break in the rock, on the most magnificent and surprising landscape that ever stunned the human mind.

It was Damascus and its boundless desert, some hundreds of paces below my feet. My eyes first embraced the city, surrounded by its ramparts of yellow and black marble, flanked by its innumerable square towers, at regular distances, crowned by its chiselled battlements, commanded by its forest of minarets in all forms, and intersected by the seven branches of its river, and numberless rivulets from it, stretching, out of view, into a labyrinth of flower gardens, pushing its vast quarters here and there into the enormous plain, every where shaded and covered by the forest, ten leagues round, of apricots, sycamores, and trees of all shapes and varieties of foliage, seeming, from time to time, to be lost under the canopies of the trees, and then reappearing, farther on, in wide clusters of houses, suburbs, and villages—a labyrinth of gardens, orchards, palaces, reams, in which the vision was bewildered, and could at quit one enchantment to be spell-bound by another. We stood still, all crowded at the narrow opening in the rock, peered like a window, and surveyed, sometimes with exclamations, sometimes in perfect silence, the magic spectacle, which expanded thus suddenly and uninterruptedly before us, at the termination of a route hurried through so many rocks and barren solitudes.

I at the margin of another desert, which has its bounds only at Bagdad and Bassorah, and requires forty days to pass over.* At length we moved on; the parapet of rocks, which intercepted the view of the plain and the city, insensibly diminished, and shortly left us

* [From this very spot, which is called Kobat-el-Nassr, or Arch of Victory, a local tradition asserts, that the celebrated Mahomet, the founder of the Moslem creed, surveyed the city and plain of Damascus, and, struck with wonder at the spectacle, exclaimed, "There is but one paradise intended for man, and man is determined not to have mine in this world, I will not enter it." There is no doubt that Damascus is one of earth's most ravishing localities, and scarcely needed Mahomet's authority to be ranked as a terrestrial paradise. But that arch-impostor never beheld Damascus, for it was not taken by his warlike disciples until two years after his death, under Abubeker, his successor. He can only must therefore be considered as an invention of the fanatics of this city, which, having been for ages venerated as the holiest seat of the creed, required additional sanctification by the presence of the prophet himself.]

in full enjoyment of the whole prospect. We were not more than five hundred yards from the walls of the suburbs.

Studded around these walls are charming kiosks and country-houses, of purely oriental form and architecture, glittering, like a golden girdle, round Damascus. The square towers, which flank the walls and project beyond their outline, are pierced with openings sculptured in arabesque, with thin columns like twisted reeds, and surmounted by battlements rounded in the shape of turbans. The walls are cased with yellow and black stone or marble, alternated in elegant taste. The tops of the cypresses, and of other high trees which rise up from the gardens and the interior of the city, shoot above the walls and towers, and crown them with a sombre verdure. The countless cupolas of the mosques and palaces, in a town of 400,000 souls, multiply by reflection the rays of the setting sun, and the blue and sparkling waters of the seven channels glitter and disappear by turns, as they wind in the streets and gardens. The horizon, behind the town, was boundless as the sea, and was mingled indistinguishably with the fiery sky, which threw heated reflection from the sands of the desert was still saddening. On the right, the broad and lofty hills of Anti-Lebanon retired, one behind the other, like prodigious shadowy waves, sometimes projecting like promontories into the plain, sometimes opening like deep gulfs, in which the plain was entombed, with its forests and large villages, some of which contain near 30,000 inhabitants. The branches of the river, and two large lakes, were resplendant in the glaze of the universal verdure, in which Damascus is, as it were, swallowed up. On our left, the plain was much wider; and it was only at a distance of twelve or fifteen leagues that we met again the mountain-peaks, white with snow, which were brilliantly reflected in the blue of the heavens, like clouds upon the ocean. The city is entirely surrounded by orchards of fruit trees, in which the vines spring up, as at Naples, and run garlands among the fig, apricot, pear, and cherry tree. Beneath the trees the foamy, fertile, and well-irrigated land is carpeted with barley, wheat, maize, and all the vegetable plants indigenous to the soil. Small white houses peep, here and there, through the foliage of the groves, being the residences of gardeners, or places of recreation to the families of the proprietors. Through the orchards are scattered flocks of sheep, camels, doves, and all that enlivens nature's fairest scenes. They are generally two or three acres in extent, and are divided from each other by clay walls, dried in the sun, or by pretty quickset hedges. A multitude of umbrageous roads, following streams of running water, meander amongst these gardens, pass from one suburb to the other, and lead to a gate of the city; they run for twenty or thirty leagues around Damascus.

We proceeded for some time in silence, amid this bewildering maze of orchards, uneasy at not seeing the guide come whom we expected. At length we came to a stand still, when he appeared. He was a Syrian or Armenian, ill clad, and wearing a black turban, as the Christians in Damascus are all compelled to do. He came up to the caravan with frankness, spoke a few words, gave a sign, and instead of entering the city by the suburb and gate which were before us, we followed him along the walls, of which we almost made the circuit, through this labyrinth of groves and kiosks, and entered by an almost deserted gate near to the Armenian quarter. M. Baudin's house, in which we had been kindly provided with a lodging, was in this quarter. At the outer gate of the city, not a word was addressed to us; and after passing through it, we kept for some time by the side of high walls with grated windows, the other side of the street being occupied by a canal of running water, which was used for turning several mills. At the end of this street we found our progress arrested, and I heard a dispute between my Arabs and the soldiers who guarded a second interior gate, for all the quarters have a separate and distinct gate. I was anxious to remain unknown, and to let our caravan pass for one of merchants from Syria; but the wrang-

ling being prolonged, and becoming more and more vociferous, and the crowd beginning to close in upon us, I put spurs to my horse, and darted to the head of the caravan. It was the guard of the Egyptian troops, who, having remarked two fowling-pieces which my Arab domestics had only partially concealed under the sheets of my horses, refused to permit us to enter; an order of Scherif-Bey, present governor of Damascus, prohibited the introduction of arms into the city, in which an insurrection, and the massacre of the Egyptians, were subjects of nightly apprehension. Fortunately, I had in my breast a recent letter from Ibrahim Pacha. I drew it forth, and handed it to the officer who commanded the guard. He read it, carried it to his forehead and lips, and allowed us to proceed, with many excuses and compliments. We defiled into a number of dirty and narrow alleys, of confusing irregularity. Little low houses, whose mud walls seemed ready to crumble upon us, lined these streets. We spied at the windows, through the blinds, the ravishing features of young Armenian girls, who, attracted by the clatter of our long file of horses, looked at us passing, and addressed to us words of salutation and amity. We stopped at length at a small low and narrow gate, in a lane where one could scarcely pass, and descended from horseback. We went through a dark elliptical corridor, and found ourselves, as if by enchantment, in a court, paved with marble, overshadowed by sycamores, cooled by two Moorish fountains, and surrounded by marble porticoes and saloons richly adorned; we were in M. Baudin's residence. His house is like the abodes of all the Christians in Damascus, a hotel on the outside, and a delightful place within. The tyranny of the fanatical populace forces these unfortunate people to hide their wealth and comfort under the appearances of misery and want. Our baggage was unloaded at the gate, the court was filled with our clothes, tents, and saddles, and our horses were conducted to the khan in the bazaar.

M. Baudin gave each of us a handsome room, furnished in the oriental manner, and we reposed on his divans, and at his hospitable table, after the fatigues of so long a journey. A man, known and esteemed, met in the midst of an unknown and alien race, is a country of himself, at least so we felt when residing with M. Baudin. The charming hours that glided away in conversation about Europe and Asia at evening-tide, to the glimmering of his lamp, and the bubbling of the water in his court, remain in my memory and my heart as one of the sweetest solaces in my travels.

M. Baudin is one of those rare individuals whom nature has made fit for all things; a clear and rapid intellect, a sound and firm heart, and indefatigable activity, are his endowments. Europe or Asia, Paris or Damascus, earth or sea, he can accommodate himself to every change, and find happiness and contentment every where, because his mind is resigned, like that of an Arab, to the great law, which forms the groundwork of Christianity and Islamism—submission to the will of God; and also because he has within him that ingenuity and activity of mind, which is the second soul of a European. His language, countenance, and manners, assume all the phases that chance requires. When with us, talking about France and our restless politics, one would take him for a man arrived the day before from Paris, and returning to it on the morrow; when in the evening, seated on his divan, between a merchant of Bassorah and a Turkish pilgrim from Bagdad, smoking a pipe or hookah, idly passing through his fingers the amber beads of an oriental chaplet, a turban on his forehead, Turkish shoes on his feet, uttering a word in the half hour on the value of coffee or figs, one would assuredly take him for a slave-merchant, or a pilgrim returning from Mecca. There is no man complete but he who has travelled much, and who has varied many, many times the order of his cogitations and existence. The confined and changeless ideas which a man contracts in a regular life, and in the monotony of his own country, are moulds for diminutive casts; mind, philosophy, religion, character, all

qualities are more exalted, more just, more distinct, with him who has surveyed nature and society under several aspects. There is an optical focus for the material and intellectual world. To travel in search of wisdom was a great saying of the ancients, which we never comprehended. They travelled not in a mere search after unknown dogmas and philosophic lessons, but to see and compare all things. For myself, I am constantly astonished at the narrow and contracted medium in which we regard things, institutions, and races; and if my mind has been enlarged, my grasp of observation expanded, and I have learnt to exercise toleration in all things, I owe it entirely to my having so frequently changed my scenes and points of view. To study the past in history, mankind in personal travel, and God in nature, is the great school. We study every thing in our miserable books, and compare all things with our own petty local ideas. And who has produced our ideas and our books?—Men as petty as ourselves. Let us open the book of books: let us live, behold, travel! The world is a book, a leaf of which we turn at every step, and he who has perused but one of them, what can he know?

DAMASCUS.

April 2.—Attired in the most complete Arab costume, I have traversed this morning the principal quarters of Damascus, accompanied only by M. Baudin, for fear that a more numerous party of strange faces might draw attention to us. We, first of all, went through the gloomy, dirty, and tortuous streets of the Armenian quarter. One might imagine it one of the most wretched villages of our provinces. The houses are built of mud, pierced towards the street by a very few small grated windows, with red painted shutters. They are low dwellings, and the flat-arched doors resemble those of stables. A filthy dunghill and a pool of stinking water are almost invariably before the doors. We entered, nevertheless, into some of these habitations belonging to the principal Armenian merchants, and I was astonished at their internal richness and elegance. After passing the door-way, and along a dark corridor, we come to a court, adorned with superb spouting fountains of marble, and canopied by sycamores or Persian willows. The pavement of the court is of large flags of polished stone or marble, and the walls are festooned with vines. These walls are cased with white and black marble, and five or six doors, sculptured in arabesque, and with marble facings, lead to the same number of rooms or saloons, which contain the male and female members of the family. These apartments are large and arched, and are bored by a great number of small windows, high up in the walls, to let the external air have free play. Almost all of them have two levels; the first and lowest for the attendants and slaves, the second, raised a few steps, and divided from the first by a balustrade of marble or cedar-wood beautifully carved. In general, one or two sparkling fountains of water murmur in the middle or the corners of the room. The basins of the fountains are set with vases of flowers, and tame swallows or doves come of their own accord to sip and perch on their margins. The walls, to a certain height, are marble, and higher up are stuccoed and painted in a great variety of colours, and frequently with gilded mouldings, profusely decorated. The furniture consists of magnificent Persian or Bagdad carpets, which entirely cover the marble or cedar floor, and of numerous silk cushions and mattresses, spread in the middle of the saloon, for the members of the family to sit or lean against. A divan, covered with costly stuffs and much finer carpetings, goes round the end and sides of the room. The women and children are generally seated cross-legged, or stretched at length upon the divan, occupied in the different labours of the household. The cradles of the smaller children are on the floor amongst the carpets and cushion. The master of the house has always one of these saloons for himself alone, in which he receives strangers. He is usually

found seated on his divan, with an inkstand, having a long handle, placed on the floor at his side, and a sheet of paper laid on his knee or left hand, writing or calculating the whole day, for commerce is the only occupation and passion of the inhabitants of Damascus.

Wherever we went to return the visits that had been made us the previous evening, the master of the house received us with politeness and cordiality, called for pipes, coffee, and sherbet, to be handed to us, and conducted us into the saloon occupied by the women. However high the idea I entertained of the beauty of the Syrian women, or the conception left in my mind by that of the Roman and Athenian females, the sight of the Armenian women and young girls of Damascus outstripped them all. Almost everywhere we met faces that the European pencil has never drawn, eyes to which the serene play of the soul imparts a line of sombre azure, and casts rays of softened moisture, such as I have never seen glitter in eyes before; features of such delicacy and purity, that the most skilful and persuasive hand could give no imitation; and a skin so transparent, and at the same time so suffused with lively tints, that the softest hues of the rose-bud could not shadow forth its subdued freshness. The teeth, the smile, the natural sweetness of expression and movement, the clear, melodious, and silvery tone of the voice—all is harmonious in these beautiful creatures. They conversed with elegance and a modest reserve, but without embarrassment, and as if accustomed to the admiration they inspire. They appear to preserve their beauty for a long time in this conservative climate, and in an indoor existence of quiet leisure, where the factitious passions of society consume neither mind nor body. In almost all the houses into which I was admitted, I found the mother as handsome as the daughters, although the latter seemed fifteen or sixteen years old; they enter the marriage state at twelve or thirteen. The costume of these ladies is the most elegant and imposing that we have yet admired in the East. The head uncovered, and the luxuriant hair bound in tresses, interwoven with flowers, passing in several folds upon the brow, and falling in long plaits on both sides of the bare neck and shoulders; pieces of gold and strings of pearls scattered in festoons upon the hair, and on the crown a small cup of carved gold; the breast almost naked; a short vest, with wide and open sleeves, of silk stuff, worked in gold or silver; a pair of wide white pantaloons, falling in folds to the ankle; the naked foot fitted in a slipper of yellow morocco; a long silk robe of brilliant colour, descending from the shoulders, open in front, and clasped round the waist by a sash whose ends fell to the ground.

I could not draw my eyes from these fascinating females; our visits and conversations were always considerably prolonged, and I found them as amiable as beautiful. The customs of Europe, the dresses and habits of females in the West, formed the general subject of discourse. They appeared in no wise to envy the existence of our ladies; and when we converse with these charming creatures, when we find in their language and manners that gracefulness, and perfect artlessness, that benevolence, serenity, and peace of mind and heart, which are so faithfully preserved in the family life, we know not what they have to envy in our women of the world, who know every thing except what produces happiness in the domestic circle of a family, and who waste in a few years, amid the tumultuary movement of our societies, their mind, their beauty, and their health. These Eastern females occasionally visit amongst themselves, and they are not entirely debarred from the society of men; but this intercourse is limited to a few young relations or friends of the family, out of whom a bridegroom is at an early age chosen for them, with reference to their own inclinations as well as to family projects. This bridegroom, when affianced, mixes from time to time like a son in the domestic recreations.

I met one of the principal Armenians in Damascus on one of these visits, a very distinguished and well-informed man. Ibrahim had placed him at the head

of his nation in the municipal council, which at that time governed the city. This man, although he had never been out of Damascus, had very just and logical ideas on the political state of Europe, and more especially of France, on the general movement of the human mind at this epoch, on the impending changes in modern governments, and on the probable futurity of civilisation. I never conversed with any one in Europe whose views on these subjects were more precise and intelligent, which is the more extraordinary, as he was acquainted only with Latin and Greek, and had never been able to read those western works or journals, where such questions are brought to the level of those who echo without understanding them. Neither had he enjoyed any opportunity of conversing with the enlightened men of our climes. Damascus is a region without relations with Europe. He had accomplished the whole by means of geographical maps, and some striking historical and political facts, which had penetrated thus far, and which his natural and reflective genius had interpreted with a surprising sagacity. I was delighted with this individual, and remained part of the morning in conversation with him. I engaged him to come in the evening, and every day. He perceives, like myself, what Providence seems intending for the East and for the West, by the inevitable conjunction of these two divisions of the globe, giving to each space, movement, energy, and enlightenment.

This gentleman has a daughter fourteen years old, who is the most divine creature we have ever beheld; her mother, still young, is also quite charming. He presented to me his son, a boy of twelve, whose education gives him considerable occupation. "You should send him into Europe," said I to him, "and let him have an education such as you regret for yourself. I will watch over it." "Alas!" he replied, "I am constantly thinking upon it, and it has long engaged my thoughts; but if the state of the East does not change, what service shall I have rendered my son by raising him, from his knowledge, above his age, and the country where he must live! What will he do at Damascus when he comes back with European science, manners, and taste for liberty? When a man must be a slave, it is better never to have known any state but slavery."

After these different visits, we quitted the Armenian quarter, separated from another quarter by a gate, which is closed every evening. I entered a fine wide street, formed by the palaces of the chief agas of Damascus, who are the nobility of the land. The fronts of these palaces towards the street are like long prison or hospital walls, mere grey mud walls; few or no windows, whilst at intervals is a great gate opening on a court, where numbers of grooms, servants, and black slaves, are lying under the porch. I visited two of these agas, friends of M. Baudin. The interior of the palace is admirable; a vast court, ornamented with superb spouting fountains, and planted with trees, which overshadow it; saloons more beautiful and richly decorated than even those of the Armenians. Several of these saloons had cost 100,000 piastres* in the ornaments; Europe has nothing more magnificent; every thing is in the Arabian style; some of these palaces have eight or ten saloons of this description. The agas of Damascus are in general the descendants or sons of pachas, who have employed, in the decoration of their dwellings, the treasures amassed by their forefathers; it is the nepotism of Rome under another form. There are several of them, and they fill the principal posts in the government under the pachas sent by the Grand Sultan. They have vast territorial possessions in the villages which surround Damascus. Their luxury consists in palaces, gardens, horses, and women; on a signal from the pacha their heads fall, and these fortunes and prized possessions pass to some new favourite of fortune. Such a government naturally conduces to enjoyment and resignation; voluptuousness and fatalism are the two inevitable results of oriental despotism.

The two agas whose houses I visited, received me with most refined politeness. The brutal fanaticism of the lower classes in Damascus does not reach their height. They knew that I was a European traveller, and they believed me an ambassador on a secret mission, to obtain intelligence for the kings of Europe touching the quarrel of the Turks with Ibrahim Pacha. I testified to one of them my desire to see his choicest horses, and to purchase some if he would dispose of any. He immediately ordered his son and equerry to conduct me to his immense stable, where he reared thirty or forty of the most beautiful animals of the Desert of Palmyra. Nothing so admirable had ever appeared to my eyes. They were in general horses of great height, of dark grey or roan colour, with manes like black silk, eyes, stretched apart to the sides of the head, of a deep chestnut colour, and of a vigorous and clean make. Their shoulders were broad and flat, and their chests like the swan's.

As soon as these horses saw me enter, and heard a strange language spoken, they turned their heads towards me, shuddered, neighed, and intimated their surprise and alarm by oblique and furtive glances, and by a folding of their nostrils, which imparted to their fine heads a most intelligent and extraordinary expression. I have already had occasion to remark how much more prompt and developed is the instinct of animals in Syria than in Europe. An assembly of believers, surprised in the mosque by a Christian, could not have more vividly portrayed, in attitude or countenance, their indignation and terror, than did these horses on seeing a strange face, and hearing an unknown language. I caressed some of them, and examined all. I had them taken out into the yard, but I knew not on which to fix my choice, almost all of them being equally perfect. At length I decided on a young white stallion, three years old, which seemed to me the pearl of all the horses of the desert. The price was debated between M. Baudin and the aga, and struck at 6000 piastres (about £70), which I paid to the aga. The horse had only recently been brought from Palmyra, and the Arab who had sold him to the aga had received 5000 piastres, and a magnificent mantle of silk and gold. The animal, like all the Arab horses, bore his genealogy at his neck suspended in a hair purse, and several amulets to preserve him from the evil eye.

We now went over the Damascus bazaars. The great bazaar is about half a league long. The bazaars are long streets covered in with high wood-work, and lined with shops, stalls, magazines, and cafés. The shops are narrow, and go only a short way back; the merchant is seated in front with his legs doubled up below him, and the pipe in his mouth or the hookah at his side. The magazines are stored with merchandise of all sorts, and particularly with Indian manufactures, which are brought in great profusion to Damascus by the caravans from Bagdad. Hair-dressers invite the passengers to enter and have their heads shaved, and their stalls are always filled with customers. A crowd, as great as that in the galleries of the Palais-Royal, but infinitely more picturesque in appearance, moves about the bazaars the whole day. There are agas, clad in long pelisses of crimson silk turned up with marten-fur, with sabres and poignards, enriched with precious stones, stuck in the girdle. They are followed by five or six attendants, servants or slaves, who march in silence behind them, and carry their pipes and hookahs. They go and sit part of the day on the outer divans of the coffee-houses, built on the banks of the streams that flow through the city. There, under the shade of beautiful plane-trees, they smoke and chat with their friends, this being the only place of intercourse, except the mosque, used by the Damascenes. Here are arranged, almost in silence, the frequent seditions which deluge the city with blood. The fermentation goes on untidily for a long time, and then boils over at an unexpected moment. The people fly to arms under the auspices of some particular party headed by one of the agas, and the government passes for a period into the hands of the conqueror. The vanquished are put to death, or flee

* [Upwards of £1000 sterling.]

into the deserts of Balbek or Palmyra, where the independent tribes give them refuge.

The officers and soldiers of the Pacha of Egypt, dressed almost like Europeans, drag their sabres on the pavement of the bazaar. We met several of them, who accosted us and spoke in Italian. They are on their guard at Damascus; the people eye them with horror; each night may witness the rising. Scherif-Bey, one of the most able men in the army of Mahomet Ali, commands them, and at present governs the city. He has formed a camp of 10,000 men outside the walls on the banks of the river, and keeps a garrison in the castle. He himself occupies the seraglio. Intelligence of the least check in Syria to Ibrahim, would be the prelude to a general insurrection and a merciless strife at Damascus. The 30,000 Armenian Christians who live in the city are kept in the greatest alarm, for they would all be massacred if the Turks gained the supremacy. The Mahomedans are exasperated at the equality which Ibrahim Pacha has established between them and the Christians. Some of the latter abuse the toleration they enjoy, and insult their enemies by an open violation of their usages, which embitters their fanaticism. M. Baudin is prepared at the first signal to seek refuge at Zarklé.

The Arabs of the Great Desert, and of Palmyra, are in crowds in the city, and through the bazaars. They have no garment but a large robe of white wool, which they fold round them after the fashion of ancient statues. Their complexion is tawny, their beard black, their eyes ferocious. They stand in groups before the shops of the tobacco-dealers, and before those of saddlers and armourers. Their horses, ready saddled and bridled, are tethered in the streets and open squares. They hold in contempt the Egyptians and Turks, but in case of a rising they would take part against Ibrahim's troops. That commander has been able to drive them but a day's journey from Damascus; he marched in person against them with artillery on his route to this city. They are now his foes. I will speak more at length of these unknown populations of the Great Desert and the Euphrates.

Each species of commerce and industry has its separate quarter in the bazaars. There are the armourers, whose magazines are far from displaying the magnificent and renowned weapons which Damascus formerly supplied to the Levant trade. That manufacture of surpassing sabres, if it ever existed at Damascus, has fallen into complete oblivion: their blades are now of very ordinary temper, and in the armourers' shops are exhibited old weapons almost valueless. I sought in vain for a sword and dagger of the ancient temper. Such sabres now come from Khorassan, a province of Persia, and even there they are manufactured no longer. There remains a certain number, which are transferred from hand to hand as precious relics, and are considered of inestimable value. The blade of that which was presented to me as a gift, cost the pacha 5000 piastres (£60). The Turks and Arabs, who rank these blades as more precious than diamonds, would give all they possess for such a weapon; their eyes sparkle with enthusiasm and veneration when they behold mine, and they carry it to their foreheads as if they adored so finished an instrument of death.

The jewellers display no art or taste in the arrangement of their precious stones or pearls, but they possess immense stocks of them. All wealth in the East is moveable, fit to be buried in the earth, or carried on the person. There is a great number of these jewellers; they make little show, keeping their whole stock in small caskets, which they open when a jewel is asked for.

The saddlers are the most numerous and ingenious workmen of the bazaars. They far surpass the Europeans in the taste, elegance, and richness of the luxurious caparisons which they fashion for the horses of the Arab chiefs, or agas. The saddles are covered with velvet and silk, worked with gold and pearls. The real morocco collars, passing round the neck like a rein, are likewise ornamented with silver or gold buttons

and clusters of pearls. The bridles, infinitely more graceful than ours, are also of various-coloured morocco, and studded with clumps of silk and gold. All these things, in comparison with Europe, are at very moderate prices. I bought two of the most superb of these bridles for 120 piastres (about £2).

The provision-stores present the most order, elegance, neatness, and attraction for the eye. The front of the shops is supplied with a multitude of baskets, filled with vegetables, dried fruits, and leguminous berries, whose name I know not, but which have an admirable shape and glossy colour, and glitter like small pebbles above the water. Cakes of bread, of all thicknesses and qualities, are spread on the shop-boards. There is a numberless variety of them, for the different hours and meals of the day, always kept hot, and of exquisite flavour. Nowhere have I witnessed such perfection in the preparing of bread as in Damascus; and it costs scarcely anything. There are eating-houses also for the merchants and promenaders of the bazaar to dine in. There are no tables or covers in them, but small pieces of mutton stuck on skewers as large as a walnut, and roasted in the oven, are sold, which the purchaser places on one of the cakes or muffins I have spoken of, and eats them off his hand. The numerous fountains in the bazaar abundantly supply the liquid which alone the Arabs drink. A man may plentifully sustain himself in Damascus for two piastres, or about fourpence a-day. The inhabitants do not spend the half of that sum. An agreeable house may be had for 200 or 300 piastres a-year (£2 or £3). With an income of 300 or 400 francs (£13 or £17), a person would be perfectly at his ease here, as indeed throughout Syria.

In going round the bazaar, I came to the division of box and trunk makers. Here is the chief industry displayed, for the whole furniture of an Arab family consists in one or two chests to hold the clothes and jewels. The majority of these trunks are of cedar-wood, painted red, with ornaments designed in gilded nails. Some are admirably carved in relief, and covered with very elegant arabesques. I bought three of them, which I forwarded by the caravan of Tadmor ulous. The perfume of the cedar-wood scents the whole bazaar; and the atmosphere, charged with a thousand different odours, exhaled from the shops of workers in wood, from the stores of spices and drugs, from the boxes of amber or odoriferous gums, from the confectioners, and from the pipes incessantly smoking in the bazaar, reminded me of the sensation I found the first time I walked through Florence, where the frames of cypress-wood fill the streets with a somewhat similar fragrance.

Scherif-Bey, governor of Syria for Mahomet Ali, quitted Damascus to-day. News of the victory of Konia, gained by Ibrahim over the Grand Vizier, arrived in the night. Scherif-Bey takes advantage of the impression of terror which paralyses the Damascenes, to go to Aleppo. He leaves the government of the city to an Egyptian general, assisted by a municipal council, formed of the principal merchants of the different nations. A camp of 6000 Egyptians and 2000 Arabs remains at the gates of the city. The appearance which this camp presents is extremely picturesque; tents, of all shapes and colours, are pitched under the shade of the large fig trees on the banks of the river. The horses, generally of great beauty, are tied, in long rows, to cords stretched from one end of the camp to the other. The undisciplined Arabs are in all the strange varieties of their races, weapons, and costumes; some are like unto kings or patriarchs, others to robbers of the desert. The fires of the bivouac throw up a blue smoke, which the breeze wafts over the river or the gardens of Damascus.

I was present at the departure of Scherif-Bey. All the principal agas of Damascus, and the officers of the regiments which still remain, were collected at the seraglio. The immense courts, which envelope the crumbling walls of the castle and seraglio, were filled with slaves, holding by the hand the finest horses in the city, superbly caparisoned. Scherif-Bey was taking breakfast in the interior apartments. I did not enter, but re-

mained, with some Egyptian and Italian officers, in the paved court. From there, we saw the crowd outside, the agas arriving in groups, and black slaves passing with large pewter dishes, on their heads, holding the different pilas of the repast. The horses of Scherif-Bey were in the court—by far the most beautiful animals that I had seen, even at Damascus. They were Turcomans, of a race infinitely larger and stronger than the Arabians; they resemble the great Norman horses, with finer and more sinewy limbs, a smaller head, and the large, eager, proud, and mild eye of the Eastern steed. They were all of a brown bay, and with long, flowing manes; the true Homeric chargers. At mid-day, Scherif went forth, accompanied by a prodigious cavalcade for two leagues from the city.

In the midst of the bazaars stands the finest khan in the East, the khan of Hassad-Pacha. It is an immense cupola, whose bold springing arch recalls that of St Peter at Rome: it is in like manner borne on granite pillars. Behind the pillars are magazines and staircases, leading to the higher flats, on which are the merchants' rooms. Every merchant of consideration hires one of these rooms, and keeps in it his costly merchandise and his books. Guards are placed, day and night, to watch over the safety of the khan; large stables are on one side, for the horses of travellers and caravans; fountains of spouting water keep it always cool: it is, in a word, a sort of exchange for the trade of Damascus. The gate of this khan, opening on the bazaar, is a piece of Moorish architecture, the richest in detail, and most imposing in effect, that can be seen in the world. The Arabian architecture is there found complete; yet the khan has only been erected forty years. A people whose architects are capable of designing, and the workmen of executing, such a monument as the khan of Hassad-Pacha, are not dead to the arts. These buildings are generally erected by rich pachas, who leave them to their family, or the city which they wished to benefit. They produce large revenues.

A little farther, I saw from a gate of the bazaar the great court or churchyard of the principal mosque in Damascus. It was formerly a church consecrated to Saint John of Damascus. This temple appears of the era of the Holy Sepulchre at Jerusalem: heavy, vast, and of that Byzantine style which imitates the Greek whilst degrading it, and seems as if built with remains of other buildings. The great doors of the mosque were closed with ponderous curtains, and I could not see the inside. A Christian incurs the peril of death if he profane a mosque by entering it. We tarried but a moment in the court, pretending to drink at the fountain.

The caravan from Bagdad arrived to-day. It was composed of 3000 camels. It has encamped at the gates of the city. I bought some packages of Mecca coffee, which cannot be procured elsewhere, and some Indian shawls.

The caravan to Mecca has been suspended by the war. The Pacha of Damascus is charged with the duty of conducting it. The Wahabites have several times dispersed it. Mahomet-Ali has driven them back to Medina. The last caravan, attacked with cholera at Mecca, exhausted with fatigue, and in want of water, was almost entirely destroyed. Forty thousand pilgrims perished in the desert. The dust of the desert, which leads to Mecca, is the dust of men. It is hoped that the caravan will start this year under the auspices of Mahomet-Ali, but, before many years, the progress of the Wahabites will put a final extinguisher on the pious pilgrimage. These people are the first great armed reformers of Islamism. A sage in the vicinity of Mecca, named Aboul-Wahab, undertook the project of restoring the Moslem faith to the purity of its primitive dogmas, and of extirpating, first by words, then by the arms of those Arabs whom he had converted, the popular superstitions, which, through credulity or imposture, pervert all religions. His design was to constitute the religion of the East a practical and rational deism. To accomplish this, little was required, for Mahomet never gave himself out as a God, but as a

man full of the Spirit of God, and his doctrine embraced only the unity of God, and charity towards men. Aboul-Wahab himself did not allege he was a prophet, but a man enlightened by reason alone. This time reason fanaticised the Arabs, in the same manner as falsehood and superstition had done. They armed themselves in his name, conquered Mecca and Medina, and despoiled the objects of adoration which had been substituted for the simple veneration due to the prophet. Thus 100,000 armed missionaries threatened to change the face of the East. Mahomet-Ali has opposed a momentary barrier to their invasions; but Wahabism subsists and spreads in all the three Arabias, and, on the first opportunity, these purifiers of Islamism will penetrate to Jerusalem, to Damascus, and even into Egypt. Thus human systems perish by the very arms which propagated them. Nothing is impenetrable to the progressive light of reason, that gradual and incessant revelation to humanity. Mahomet issued from the same deserts as the Wahabites, to overthrow idols and establish the worship without sacrifices of the only and immaterial God. Aboul-Wahab comes in his turn, and, crushing popular credulities, restores Mahometanism to pure reason. Each age lifts a corner of the veil which conceals the grand image of the God of Gods, and perceives him, through all the perishable symbols, alone, eternal, evident in nature, and speaking his oracles in the conscience.

Damascus, April 3.—Passed the day in the city and the bazaars. Recollections of Saint Paul are familiar to the Christians of Damascus. They show the ruins of the house whence he escaped in the night suspended in a basket. Damascus was one of the first regions in which he sowed the word destined to change the world. This word bore rapid fruit. The East is the land of creeds, prodigies, and also superstitions. The great idea which has worked in the imaginations of all eras there, is that of religion. The whole people, their manners and laws, are founded on religion. The West has never been similarly influenced. Why? A less noble race, the offspring of barbarians, who still feel their origin. Things are not in their place in Europe. The chief of human ideas is subordinate to all others. Countries of gold and iron, bustle and uproar. The East, the country of profound meditation, intuition, and adoration! But the West marches with giant strides; and when religion and reason, which the middle ages severed in darkness, shall be united in truth, enlightenment, and love, the religious spirit, the divine inflation, will again become the soul of the world, and will bring forth its prodigies of virtue, civilisation, and genius. May it be so!

Damascus, April 4.—There are 30,000 Christians at Damascus, and 40,000 at Bagdad. The Christians of Damascus are Armenians or Greeks. A few Catholic priests tend those of their communion. The inhabitants of Damascus tolerate Catholic monks. They are used to their dress, and look upon them as orientals. I have often seen two French Lazarist priests, who inhabit a small convent buried in the miserable quarter of the Armenians. One of them, the Father Poussous, comes to pass the evenings with us. He is an excellent, pious, well-informed, and amiable man. He conducted me to his convent, where he instructs the children of poor Christian Arabs. The love of doing good is the sole motive which detains him in this human desert, where he is in perpetual apprehension for his safety. He is nevertheless gay, serene, and content. He receives, from time to time, by the Syrian caravans, intelligence and remittances from his superiors in France, and likewise some Catholic newspapers. He has lent them to me, and nothing seems more strange than to read this saintly or political rubbish, issuing from the quarter of Saint-Sulpice, on the borders of the desert of Bagdad, behind Lebanon and Anti-Lebanon, near Balbek, in the centre of an immense hive of other men, filled with totally different ideas, and where the clatter that we make, and the names of our great men for the year, never penetrate. Vanity of vanities, except to serve God, and mankind for God! Never is this truth more

vivid than when travelling, and witnessing how potty is the movement which a sea arrests—the noise that a mountain intercepts—the renown that a strange language cannot even pronounce? Our immortality is elsewhere than in the false and contracted fame of our names here below.

We have dined to-day in the company of a venerable Damascus Christian, upwards of ninety years old, and enjoying all his faculties, physical and moral. An excellent and admirable old man, bearing in his features that serene expression of benevolence and virtue, which the consciousness of a pure and pious life, drawing to its close, always imparts. He loads us with services of all kinds. He is perpetually on the move for us as if he were a young man. The Father Poussous, his companion, two merchants of Bagdad, and a great Persian lord, going to Mecca, composed the agreeable society of the evening, on the divans of M. Baudin, in the midst of tobacco vapours, which obscured and scented the air. With the assistance of M. Baudin and M. Mazoyer, my dragoman, we conversed with sufficient facility. The most perfect cordiality and unaffectedness reigned in this soiree of men from the four extremities of the world. The manners of India and of Persia, the recent events in Bagdad, and the revolt of the pacha against the Porte, were the subjects of our discourse. The inhabitant of Bagdad had been obliged to fly through the forty days' desert, on his dromedaries, with his treasures, and two young Franks. He was impatient for advices from his brother, whose death he painfully apprehended. A letter was brought to him from his brother whilst he was talking with us. He was safe, and coming with the rear-guard of the caravan, which was still expected. He shed tears of joy. We also wept, both on his account and on account of sad reminiscences which arose as to our own misfortunes. These tears, shed in unison by eyes which it was so unlikely should have met on the hearth of a common friend, in the middle of a city where we all were but wayfarers, these tears joined our hearts!—and we loved as friends those men whose very names have found no resting-place in our memories!

April 5.—A terrible storm during the night. The high room, with many paneless windows, in which we slept, rocked like a vessel in a squall. The rain penetrated, in a few seconds, the mud roof which covers the terrace of the room, and flooded the floor. Fortunately our mattresses were on boards, raised upon boxes, and our blankets were thick; but in the morning our clothes were floating in the chamber. Similar storms are frequent at Damascus, and often sweep away the houses, whose foundations are certainly not on a rock. The climate is cold and damp during the winter months. Heavy snow-storms fall from the mountains. This last winter, half of the bazaars fell in from the weight of the snows, and the roads were blocked up for two months. The heat of summer, they say, is insupportable. Hitherto we have had no symptom of its fierceness. We light, almost every evening, pans of fire, called *mangales* in Damascus.

I have bought a second Arab stallion from a Bedouin, whom I encountered at the gate of the city. I caused the Arab to be followed, so as to enter on the negotiation in a suitable and natural manner. The animal, although less in height than the one I bought from the aga, is stronger, and of a rarer colour, the peach-flower. He is of a race whose appellation signifies *chief of the hoof*. I got him for 4000 piastres. I mounted him for a trial. He is not so gentle as the other Arabian horses. His character is vicious and intractable, but he seems indefatigable. I will have *Tadmor* led (it is the Arab name of Palmyra, which I have given to the aga's horse) by one of my sons on foot. I will ride *Scham* on the mule. *Scham* is the Arab name of Damascus.

A chief of a tribe, on the route to Palmyra, has arrived here on the summons of M. Baudin. He undertakes to conduct me to Palmyra, and bring me safe and sound back, but on the condition that I am alone, and

son as a hostage at Damascus until my return. We enter into consultation. I had a violent desire to see the ruins of Tadmor; but as they are less astonishing than those of Balbek, as it will require at least ten days to go and return, and as my wife cannot accompany me, and as, moreover, the time for rejoining our vessel, which was to wait for us on the coast, has now come, I renounce with regret this incursion into the desert, and we make our preparations to depart on the morrow.

April 6.—Departed from Damascus at eight in the morning; traversed the town, and the bazaars blocked with people; heard some murmurs and injurious apostrophes; they take us for a reinforcement of Ibrahim's. Issued from the town by another gate than that by which we arrived; skirted the delightful gardens by a road on the margin of a stream, canopied by superb trees; scaled the mountain whence we had enjoyed so divine a prospect of Damascus; halted to contemplate it once again, and to impress the everlasting picture. I understand that the Arab traditions fix the site of the lost paradise at Damascus, and assuredly no place on the earth more perfectly recalls Eden. The vast and fruitful plain, the seven branches of the blue river which irrigate it, the majestic frame of the mountains, the dazzling lakes which reflect the heavens on the earth, the geographical position between two seas, the delicious climate—all indicate, at least, that Damascus has been one of the first towns built by the children of men, one of the natural halts for wandering humanity in primitive times; it is one of those cities described by the finger of God on the earth, predestined for a capital, like Constantinople. They are the only two cities which have not been thrown arbitrarily on the map of an empire, but invincibly pointed out by the configuration of the localities. As long as the earth shall contain empires, Damascus will be a great city, and Stamboul the capital of the world.*

At the edge of the desert, at the mouth of the plains of Celo-Syria, and the valleys of Galilee, of Idumea, and of the coasts of the Sea of Syria, Damascus was needed as a charming resting-place for the caravans to India. Commerce has attracted industry; Damascus is like Lyons, a vast manufactory; the population reaches, according to some, 400,000—according to others, only 200,000 souls. I know not which is correct, and it is impossible to know; we can only conjecture, as in the East no exact census has ever been taken, and the eye is thus the only judge. From the crowds that inundate the streets and bazaars, from the multitude of armed men who dart from the houses on the signal of a revolution or insurrection, from the extent of ground covered by the city, I am inclined to believe that the number within the walls may rise to from 300,000 to 400,000 souls. But if the city be not arbitrarily limited, if to the number of inhabitants be added all those who people the immense suburbs and villages which are confounded to the vision with the houses and gardens of this prodigious agglomeration of mortals, I believe that the district of Damascus maintains a million of souls. I cast on it a last regard, with inward prayers for M. Baudin, and the excellent men who had guarded and beguiled our sojourn, and a few steps of our horses lost us for ever its trees and minarets.

The Arab who was by the side of my horse pointed out to me, at the horizon, a large lake glittering at the base of the mountains, and related to me a tale, which I partially understood, and which my dragoman fully interpreted.

There was a herd who watched the she-camels of a village on the banks of this lake, in a desert and uninhabited part of this high mountain. One day whilst watering his flock, he perceived that the water of the

* [What M. de Lamartine means by describing Constantinople as the capital of the world, in all time past and coming, cannot be exactly indicated. Since the city attracted the notice of Constantine the Great, it has always been a metropolis, but generally the metropolis of weak and vicious empires. Previous to his reign, it was never a city of importance; its future destiny

lake was escaping by a subterranean passage, and he closed it up with a large stone, but at the same time let fall his crook. Some time after, a river grew dry in one of the provinces of Persia. The sultan, seeing his country menaced by famine, in consequence of the deficiency of water for the irrigations, consulted the sages of his empire; and on their counsel he dispatched ambassadors into the neighbouring kingdoms, to ascertain for what reason the source of his river had been diverted or drained. These envoys bore the crook of the herd, which the river had carried with it. The herd was at Damascus when these ambassadors appeared there; he recognised his crook which had fallen into the lake, and immediately comprehended that his lake was the source of the river, and that the prosperity and life of a whole people were in his hands. "What will the sultan do for him who restores him his river?" he asked of the envoys. "He will give him," answered they, "his daughter and half his dominions." "Gladly," he rejoined, "and before you get back, the lost river will water Persia, and gladden the heart of the sultan." The herd returned to the mountains, removed the great stone, and the waters, resuming their course through the subterranean channel, refilled the bed of the river. The sultan sent a fresh embassy with his daughter to the fortunate camel-herd, and gave him the half of his kingdom.

These marvellous traditions are preserved with implicit faith by the Arabs; none of them doubt the reality, because the imagination never doubts.

April 7.—Encamped yesterday evening on the brow of a high mountain, after eight hours' march through a hilly, bare, sterile, and chilly country. We were followed by a caravan less numerous than ours, belonging to the eadi of Damascus, who is sent every year from Constantinople, and was now returning to embark at Alexandretta. His wives and children travelled in a double pannier slung upon the back of a camel, one wife and some little children being in each division, the whole carefully veiled. The eadi marched at some distance behind his women, accompanied by slaves, on horseback. This caravan went past us, and proceeded to encamp farther on.

A rough day's work of ten hours, through pinching cold, and completely deserted valleys. Our course for an hour was in the bed of a torrent, where large stones rolled from the mountains, interrupting our horses at every step. I mounted my beautiful horse Tadmor for an hour or two, to rest Scham. Notwithstanding two days' fatigue, this splendid animal bounds like a gazelle over the rocky pathway of the desert. He passes in an instant the swiftest horses of the caravan. He is mild and sagacious as the swan, having also its whiteness and arched chest. I intend to carry him to Europe, together with Scham and Saïde. As soon as I get off him, he breaks loose, and caners off to rejoin the Arab. Mansours, who takes care of and leads him; he puts his head on the man's shoulders like an affectionate dog; there is complete brotherhood between the Arab and the horse, as between us and the dog. Mansours and Daher, my two principal Arab sâis, whom I engaged at Beirut, and who have been in my service nearly a year, are the most faithful and quiet of men; steady, indefatigable, intelligent, attached to their masters, and horses, and always ready to combat with us if any peril threatens. What may not an able chief effect with such a race of men? If I had the fourth part of the wealth of certain bankers in Paris or London, I would regenerate the face of Syria in ten years. All the elements of improvement are there; a hand only is wanted to concentrate them, an interval to lay a foundation, a mind to lead opinion.

Slept in a sort of isolated hostelry, standing on an elevated plain, amid severe cold. We found a little wood to light a fire in the low room, where we stretched our carpets. Our Damascus provisions were exhausted; we got a little of the barley meal intended for the horses kneaded, and ate the sour and black cakes produced from it.

We departed at daybreak, marched twelve hours

through a sterile and unpeopled country, and arrived at a small village, where we found a shelter, some fowls, and rice. We have been drenched with rain the whole day. We are not more than eight hours' march from the valley of Bkaa, which we will come upon at its eastern extremity, being much lower than Balbek.

April 7.—At three in the afternoon we came in sight of the desert of Bkaa. The caravan halts and hesitates. The plain, from the point we have reached, as far as the foot of Lebanon, which stands out like a wall on the other side, resembles an immense lake, out of which rise up blackened islets, the branches of trees with their trunks under water, and heaps of ruins on a hill three leagues from us. How shall we venture without guides, trusting to chance, into this inundated plain? It is, however, quite necessary, as there is a risk of not being able to pass it to-morrow, for the rain continues, and torrents of water pour from all sides into the desert. We march for two hours on the highest parts of the plain, which bring us near the hill, whereon the great ruins of a temple appear. We leave on our left hand these unknown remains of a town, a contemporary of Balbek, but at present nameless. Shafts of gigantic columns have rolled down the sides of the hill, and are imbedded in the mud under our feet. The day wanes, the rain increases, and we have no time to mount to the temple. This temple being passed, we proceed with the water up to our horses' knees. Our ranks are perpetually sliding down and tumbling into the ditches with our baggage, and the monks extricate them with great labour. We send forward an Arab twenty yards in front of the caravan, to try the footing; but having reached the middle of the plain, the place where the Balbek stream has hollowed out its bed, the ground fails us, and we are compelled to pass over an interval of thirty or forty feet by swimming. My Arabs, plunging into the water, and I adding up the horses' heads, succeed in getting my wife over, and an English lady's-maid who attends her. We ourselves swim over, and all attain the opposite bank. Night is almost at hand; we hasten to traverse the rest of the valley, whilst sufficient twilight remains to guide us. We pass near one or two hamlets, inhabited by a ferocious tribe of Balbek Arabs. If they attack us at this moment, we shall be at their mercy, as all our pieces are unfit for firing. They look at us from the tops of their terraces, and descend not into the camp. At last, at the moment that the night closes upon us, the plain begins to rise, and we are hard and dry on banks which touch Lebanon. We proceed in the direction of a distant light, which glitters three leagues from us, in a mountain-gorge—it must be the town of Zarklé. Overcome with weariness, shivering with cold and wet to the skin, we reach at length the lower slopes of the hill on which the town is placed. There, in a sudden muster-roll, we find that one of our friends, M. de Capuas, is missing. We stop, call out, and fire round; no answer is returned. We dispatch two horsemen to go and seek him, and proceed to Zarklé. It takes us an hour to wind up a river which passes through the town, and to find out the only bridge which crosses from one quarter to the other. Our exhausted horses can scarcely sustain themselves on the slippery pavement of the steep bridge, which is without parapets. At last, the house of the Greek bishop receives us. Fires of brambles are lighted in the huts that surround the court. The bishop lends us some mats and carpets. We get ourselves dried. The two Arabs sent in quest of our friend return with him. He is borne almost fainting to the hearth, and revives. We discover at the bottom of our boxes, soaked with rain, a bottle of rum; the bishop procures some sugar, and we restore our dying comrade with a few glasses of punch, whilst the Arabs are getting a pilau prepared for us. The poor bishop has absolutely nothing but shelter to offer us. The curiosity of the women and children of Zarklé is so insatiable, that they crowd into the court every instant, and force open the doors of our rooms, to see the two Frank females. I am obliged to place two armed Arabs at the gate of the court to prevent entrance.

The following day we reposed at Zarklé, in order to get our clothes dried, and to lay in fresh provisions, as our own were spoiled by the wetting of the preceding evening. Zarklé is a town wholly Christian, founded a few years ago in a gorge, on the lowest roots of Lebanon. It owes its rapid and prodigious growth to the persecuted families of the Armenian and Greek Christians of Damascus and Homs. It reckons about 8000 to 10,000 inhabitants, possesses a considerable trade in silk, and augments every day. Protected by the Emir Beshir, the sovereign of Lebanon, it is no longer disturbed by the inroads of the tribes of Balbek and Anti-Lebanon. The inhabitants, industrious, agricultural, and energetic, keep in admirable cultivation the hills which slope down from the town to the plain, and venture even to cultivate the nearest portions of the desert.

The appearance of the town is very extraordinary. It is a confused collection of black houses, built of mud, without symmetry or regularity, on the steep declivities of two hills, separated by a river. The gorge through which the river descends, before flowing through the town and into the plain, is a broad profound hollow of perpendicular rocks, parted to give passage to the torrent, which falls from level to level by three or four cascades, in wide-spreading sheets, embracing the whole width of the platform, which rise in successive gradations. The foam of the torrent completely covers the rocks, and the roar of its waterfalls fills the streets of Zarklé with a dull and incessant murmur. Some houses, of rather elegant construction, gleam, amongst the verdure of poplars and tall vines, above the cascades. Amongst them is the house of refuge of our friend M. Baudin, and there is also a convent of Maronite monks. The river, after passing the houses of the town, which are grouped and suspended on its high banks, and hang over its bed in the most fantastic manner, goes to water the confined lands and meadows into which the careful industry of the inhabitants distributes its waters by numerous channels. A lining of high Persian poplars extends along its course, far out of sight, and directs the eye, by the verdant avenue, to the desert of Balbek, and the snowy peaks of Anti-Lebanon.

Almost all the inhabitants are Syrian or Damascus Greeks. The houses resemble the miserable huts of Savoy or Breisian peasants; but in every house you see a shop and a work-room, where saddlers, armourers, watchmakers even, are labouring, with rude instruments, at their respective occupations. The people seemed kind and hospitable. The appearance of strangers, far from alarming or exciting them, was by no means disagreeable to them. They offered us all the little services which our situation required, and appeared proud of the increasing prosperity of their town. Zarklé seems the preface to a large commercial town, destined to rival Damascus in the trade between the Christian and Mahomedan races. If the death of the Emir Beshir does not impair the singleness of dominion which renders Lebanon powerful, Zarklé, in twenty years, will be the first town in Syria. All are sinking, it alone increases; all are buried in sleep, it alone is up and working. The genius of the Greeks bears with it everywhere the principle of activity inherent in that European race. But the activity of the Asiatic Greek is advantageous and fruitful; that of the Greeks of the Morea and the isles is a mere unproductive agitation. The air of Asia tempers the Greek blood, and there they become a singularly mild population, but elsewhere they are often barbarous. The same consequence ensues with regard to the physical beauty of the race. The Greek women of Asia are the masterpiece of the creation, the personification of all grace and voluptuousness of expression in the eyes. The Greek women of the Morea have tall, less but cold features, and eyes whose harsh and sonorous glare is not sufficiently softened by the delicious languor of the soul and sensibility of the heart. The eyes of the one are a fiery coal, those of the Asiatics are a flame, wreathed in moistened vapours.

The poor Greek bishop of Zarklé is of an Aleppo family, in which city he passed his life, amid the elegance

and softness of manners prevailing in Aleppo, the Athens of Asia. He finds himself, as it were, an exile in this town, where he has no society or mental resource. His deportment has preserved the exquisite refinement of the Aleppians; but, in the extreme beggary of his condition, he can only afford us a squalid lodging. We conversed in Italian with him. On our departure, I made him an alms of 500 piastres (£6), for his flock or for himself—for he seemed in a state bordering on destitution. A few Arab and Greek books, thrown in confusion about the room, and an old box containing his pelisses and episcopal habiliments, were his whole possessions.

I took guides at Zarklé, to pass over Lebanon by unknown routes. The ordinary track was blocked up by the prodigious quantity of snow that had fallen during the winter. We ascended, at first, by rather gentle slopes, over hills planted with vines and mulberries. We soon arrived at the region of rocks and bedless torrents, of which we crossed at least thirty in the course of six hours. They rush down declivities so steep, that they have no time to hollow out a bed; they are sheets of foam, gliding over the naked rock with the rapidity of a bird upon the wing.

The sky was obscured with clouds, which already intercepted the light, although the day was but little advanced. We were completely enveloped in rolling clouds of mist; and we frequently could not distinguish the foremost ranks of the caravan, shrouded in these gloomy canopies. The snow likewise began to fall in large flakes, covering the road, which our guides vainly sought to track. We could scarcely hold up our exhausted horses, whose iron shoes slid down the precipitous ledges we were compelled to wind along. The magnificent prospect of the valley of Balbek, and the peaks of Anti-Lebanon, with the extensive ruins of the temples of Baal gleaming in the light, appeared to us only at intervals, between the gusts of snow: it seemed as if we were sailing in the sky, and that the pedestal whence we saw the earth was no longer part of it. But the resounding winds, which had been at rest in the profound and lofty gorges of the mountains, began to give out mournful and cavernous echoes, like the roaring of a high sea after the tempest is spent; they came out like thunder-shocks, sometimes over our heads, sometimes in the lower parts beneath our feet, hurling like withered leaves, large masses of snow and volleys of stones, and even blocks of rock, as if they had been propelled from the mouth of some huge cannon. Two of our horses were struck, and rolled, baggage and all, into the ravine. None of us were hurt; my young Arab stallions, who were led by the hand, were paralysed with terror. They stopped short, raised up their nostrils, and moaned with guttural cries, like the rattling in the human throat. We walked close together, to catch and assist each other in case of accidents. The darkness became every moment greater; and the snow, beating in our eyes, took away the little light that remained to guide us. The blasts of wind filled the whole ravine through which we were toiling, with whirlpools of snow, which arose in pillars to the sky, and fell in vast sheets, like the spray of huge waves breaking on the cliffs. For some moments we could not draw breath; our guides stopped, hesitated, dubious of their way, and fired their guns to give us the direction; but the howling wind permitted no sound, and the report of fire-arms scarcely equalled the crack of a whip.

In proportion as we penetrated into this deep gorge of the highest crests of Lebanon, we heard with terror a harsh, continued, deadening roar, which grew louder every moment, and formed the bass in this horrible concert of the unbridled elements. We knew not whence it came, or its cause; it seemed as if a portion of the mountain was loosened, and precipitated in torrents of rock. The thick clouds, obliterating the sun, hid every thing before us. In the midst of our bewilderment, horses without riders, mules and camels without burdens, came rushing past us, flying to the snowy flanks of the mountain. Shortly, Arabs, shouting at the pitch

of their voices, appeared, pursuing them; they advised us to halt, pointing with their hands to a building standing against a massive rock, forty or fifty yards above us, which the clouds had completely shrouded from our view. A column of smoke, and the glimmer of a fire, came from this cabin, whose roof of large cedar-branches had been half torn away by the hurricane, and was hanging down the wall. It was the *khan* of Murad-Bey, the only asylum that was open to us on this part of Lebanon; a poor Arab dwells in it during the summer, to provide barley and shelter to the caravans of Damascus, which go by this route into Syria. We descended, with difficulty, by some rocky steps, concealed under snow a foot thick; and we found the stream, which flows a hundred yards below the *khan*, and which we had to pass, in order to scale the higher region of the mountain, was suddenly become a prodigious torrent, rolling in its waters blocks of stone and fragments shivered by the tempest. Overtaken on its banks by the whirlwind, and half buried under the snow, the Arabs whom we had encountered had thrown the loads off their camels and mules, and left them on the rocks, to save themselves in the *khan*.

We found it filled with these men and their cattle; there was no room for us or our horses. However, under lee of a mass of rock, much larger than the house, the wind was less boisterous; and the clouds of snow, borne from the peaks of Lebanon, and passing over our heads to beat upon the vale, became less overwhelming, and gave us, at intervals, a glimpse of the sky, in which the stars were already twinkling. The wind suddenly fell; we dismounted from our horses, and sought to prepare a shelter, not only for the night, but for several days perhaps, if the torrent, whose roar we heard, without being able to see it, continued to intercept the passage. Under the walls of the dilapidated *khan*, and a portion of the cedar-branches which had shortly before composed its roof, was a space of about ten square feet, heaped with snow and soil. We swept away the snow, and got to a soft clay, where it was impossible to lay our carpets. We tore from the roof some branches of trees, which we stretched in hurdles on the saturated earth; and these bundles prevented our mats from being soaked in the water. Our mattresses, carpets, and mantles, formed a second layer; and having lighted a fire in a crack of the rock, we thus passed the long and dreary night of the 7th and 8th of April, 1833.

At intervals, the hushed hurricane was again roused, and then it seemed as if the mountain would fall upon itself: the enormous rock against which the *khan* was built shook like the trunk of a tree bent by the blast; and the roaring of the torrent filled the air with frightful howlings. But at last we sank to sleep, and late in the morning we awoke to the brilliant rays of a serene sun, glittering on the snow. The Arabs, our companions, had departed; they had successfully attempted the passage of the torrent. We saw them, at a distance, winding up the hills, whither we had to follow them. We likewise started. We marched, for four hours, along an elevated valley, whence we could see nothing but snow below and sky above us, as at the summit of Mont Blanc. The dazzling of its silence, the danger of every step, in these deserts of fresh-drifted snow, without the track of a pathway, under the passage over these soaring pillars of the earth, the dorsal spine of a continent, a solemn and religious period. We observe, involuntarily, every point of the horizon and the firmament, every phenomenon of nature. I saw one which struck me as a beautiful image, and which I had never before observed. Immediately at the summit of Lebanon, on the sides of a peak half shaded from the morning beams, I perceived a magnificent rainbow, not springing like an aerial arch, uniting the heavens to the mountain-crest, but couched upon the snow, and winding in concentric circles, like a serpent of resplendent colours: it was, as it were, the nest of the rainbow, caught on the most inaccessible height of Lebanon. In proportion as the sun rose, and grazed the flanks with his rays, the circles of the rainbow, with

a thousand undulating tints, appeared to move and rise up; the ends of the luminous bows did, in fact, start from the earth, mounted towards the sky for a few yards, as if attempting to leap up to the sun, and then dissolved into whitened vapour and liquid pearls, which floated over us.

When beyond the region of snows, we sat down to dry our soaked shoes in the sun. We began to perceive the deep and black valleys of the Maronites. Two hours afterwards, we had descended to the village of Hamana, situated at the top of the magnificent valley of that name, and where we had before slept, in going to Balbek. The *scheik* procured us three houses in the village. The evening sun was gleaming under the large leaves of the mulberry and fig trees; men were returning with their ploughs from labour; women and children were loitering in the alleys about the houses, greeting us with hospitable smiles; the flocks were strolling from the fields with their tinkling bells; pigeons and fowls were crowded on the roofs of the terraces, and the bells of the two Maronite churches were slowly ringing through the cypress branches, to notify the pious ceremonies of the morrow, which was Sunday. We had the aspect, movement, and calmness of a beautiful village in France or Italy suddenly before us, at the threshold of the precipices of Lebanon, the deserts of Balbek, the inhospitable streets of Damascus. Never was transition, perhaps, so rapid and delightful; we determined to pass the Sunday amongst these excellent people, and to rest ourselves a day after our long fatigues.

The village market furnished us abundantly with provisions. The women came to visit us throughout the day. They are infinitely plainer than the Syrian females of the sea coasts. They are of the pure Maronite race, all possessing vigour and health, but the features too marked, the eyes somewhat dull, the complexion too highly coloured. Their dress is a pair of white pantaloons, with a long robe of blue cloth above, open in front, and leaving the bosom bare. Necklaces of numberless plaisters hang round the neck, on the breast, and over the shoulders. The married women complete this costume by a silver horn, a foot, and sometimes a foot and a half long, which they fix on their plaited hair a little obliquely above the forehead. This horn, sculptured and carved, serves to suspend from the extremity of it a muslin veil, with which they often cover the face; they never lay this horn aside, even to sleep. This grotesque custom, the origin of which can be found only in the aberrations of the human understanding, disfigures and renders heavy all the movements of the head and neck.

April 9.—Departed from Hamana in a misty morning, at five o'clock. Marched two hours on the precipitous and naked slopes of the ridges of Lebanon, which descend towards the plains of Syria. The valley which we leave on our left, sinks and widens more and more below us. It is about two leagues wide, and one at least in depth. The transparent vapours of the morning float like billows of the sea on its horizon, and there appear above them nothing but the lofty cones of the hills, the tops of the cypress-trees, and the towers of Maronite villages and monasteries; but in a little time the breeze from the sea, which rises and mounts insensibly with the sun, slowly scatters these vapoury waves, and rolls them in white sheets to settle on the peaks of snow, on which they form light greyish shadows. Then appears the entire valley. Oh that the eye had a language to point with a single word as it sees at a single glance! I would I could for ever preserve in my memory the incomparable aspect and impressions of the Valley of Hamana! I stand above one of the thousand torrents which plough its sides with their leaping foam, and rush amidst the masses of rock, the hanging meadows, the trunks of cypress-trees, the branches of poplars, the wild vines, and the black carob-trees, into the bottom of the valley, and join the central stream, which flows throughout its length. The valley is so deep, that I do not distinguish the bottom; I can only hear ascend, at intervals, the roaring of its

waters, the rustling of the leaves, the bleating of flocks, and the distant peals of the monastery bells. The shade of morning is still resting on the bed of the gorge from which the principal torrent plunges. Here and there, around some knolls, I perceive the white line of foam it traces in the darkened gloom. On the same side of the valley as that on which we stand, I distinguish, at distances of a quarter of a league from each other, three or four wide plains, as if destined by nature for pedestals; their flanks are perpendicular, and of a grey granite. These plains, half a league in circumference, are entirely covered with groves of cedars, firs, and broad-headed pines; the morning rays wind and gleam between their erect trunks. Their black and motionless foliage is intercepted at times by light columns of blue smoke, rising from the huts of the Maronite husbandmen, and by the small open towers in which the village bells are suspended. Two large monasteries, with walls glittering like bronze, rise on two of these plains. They resemble the fortresses of the middle ages. At the foot of the convents we perceive some Maronite monks, clothed in their black cowls, at work amidst the vineyards and chestnut orchards. Two or three villages, grouped around the rocky eminences, are seated lower down, like bee-hives on the trunks of old trees. At the side of each hamlet are distributed thickets of a paler verdure; they are pomegranates, figs, or olives, which commence at this height in the valley to bear fruit. Beyond, the eye plunges into the impenetrable gloom of the gorge. If it clears this darkness, and settles on the opposite side of the mountain, it perceives perpendicular walls of granitic rock springing to the clouds. Above these walls, which seem battlemented by nature, we discern table-lands of the most brilliant vegetation, the tops of fir-trees hanging upon the edges of the ravines, wide-spreading sycamores, forming shadows on the sky, and behind this undulating verdure the bellfries of villages and monasteries, access to which seems altogether impracticable. In other places, the granite flanks of the mountains are broken into slopes, where the vision is lost in the darkness of the forests, and can distinguish only, at distant spots, luminous and immovable streaks, which are the beds of torrents and pools formed from the springs. In other directions the rocks suddenly intermit; large rounded bastions flank them as if with eternal fortifications, and crown their angles with towers and turrets.

Elevated valleys, which the eye penetrates with difficulty, open, and dive amongst the hills of snow and forests; thence descends the principal stream of Hamana, which we see gushing at first like a brook from the mighty roof of snow; then losing itself in the hollows of re-echoing cascades, from which it branches out into seven or eight dazzling channels, again to disappear behind the black rocks and peaks, and then coming forth in a single line of foam, winding and turning, according to the obstructions of the ground, along the gentle or steep declivities of the hills. At length it plunges into the principal valley, falling in a sheet 100 paces wide, and 200 feet in height. The spray, which rises, and which is carried far and wide by the wind, describes floating rainbows on the tops of the broad pines which skirt the fall.

To my left, the valley, sinking towards the shores of the sea, expands, and offers to the gaze the wooded and more cultivated flanks of its hills, and the river meanders among the eminences, crowned with convents and villages. Farther on, the palms of the plain lift up their heads behind low hills of olives, and break the long line of gilded sand which borders the sea. The eye is finally lost in the indecisive and remote space between the sky and the ocean.

The details of this magic landscape are not less bewitching than the sweeping glance comprising the whole. At every turn of the rocks, on every summit to which the path leads you, you discover a new horizon, where the water, the trees, the rocks, the ruins of bridges or aqueducts, the snows, the sea, or the fiery sand of the desert, grouped in startling attitudes, force an excla-

mation of surprise and amazement. I have seen Naples and its islands, the valleys of the Appenines and the Alps, those of Savoy and Switzerland, but the valley of Hamana, and some other valleys on Lebanon, efface all these recollections. The enormity of the masses of rock, the multifarious waterfalls, the purity and depth of sky, the expanse of sea which terminates the horizon, the picturesque effect of the villages and convents, suspended like human nests on heights which the eye fears to scan; in a word, the novelty and variety in colour of the vegetation, the majestic canopies of the large trees, whose trunks resemble columns of granite—all this marks, vivifies, solemnises the landscape, and transports the soul with emotions more profound and religious than the Alps even. Every landscape into which the sea does not enter as an element, is incomplete. Here, the sea, the desert, the sky, are the sublime frame-work of the picture, and the ravished eye recurs at frequent moments from the depths of centennial forests, from the margins of shaded springs, from the summits of the aerial peaks, from the peaceable scenes of rural or cenobitic life, to the blue expanse ploughed by vessels, to the cliffs of snow floating in the sky near the stars, or to the yellow and gilded sands of the desert, where the caravans of camels draw out their long serpentine files. It is this incessant contrast which produces the solemn thoughts and impressions that render Lebanon the mountain of prayer, poetry, and ecstasy!

At noon we encamped under our tents half way up Lebanon, to pass the burning heat of mid-day. An Arab courier is brought to me, who was going to Damascus in search of me. He brings me a packet of letters from Europe, which announce my election to the Chamber of Deputies. A new affliction added to so many others! I had unfortunately desired this trust at a former epoch, and had myself solicited a confidence which I cannot now decline without ingratitude. I will go; but how fervently do I wish that this cup might pass from me! I have no longer any individual future in this drama of the political and social world, the principal scene of which lies amongst us. I have none of those passions for glory, power, and fortune, which are the impelling motives of politicians. The only interest which I will carry to those heated deliberations, will be that of my country and of humanity. Country and humanity are abstract beings to men who seek to enjoy the present hour, and to secure the triumph, at all hazards, of a family, an order, or party. What avails the calm and impartial voice of philosophy in the tumult of facts which are jumbled and opposed to each other? Who looks to the future and its boundless space, beyond the dust of the actual strife? It matters not; man selects neither his path nor his work; God assigns him his task by circumstances, and from his own convictions. It must be accomplished! But I foresee for myself nothing but a moral martyrdom in the sorrowful task which is imposed upon me. I was born for action. Poetry in me has been but delayed action; I have conceived and expressed ideas and sentiments from the incapability of acting. But now action has no longer any charms for me. I have penetrated human affairs too deeply not to understand their purpose! I have lost too many of those beings for whom my active life might have been advantageous, not to be disgusted with all that appertains to action. A life of contemplation, of philosophy, of poetry, and of solitude, would be the only couch on which my heart could find repose before breaking altogether.

RETURN TO BEIROUT, AND DEPARTURE FOR THE CEDARS OF LEBANON.

April 10.- Arrived here yesterday. Passed two hours at the Franciscan convent, near the tomb where I have buried all my future. The brig *Alceste*, which was to carry these dear remains to France, is not yet in view. I have to-day chartered another brig for our

own accommodation. We shall sail in consort; but the mother will be spared the anguish of being in the same room with the corpse of her child! Whilst the necessary arrangements are being prepared for the transport of so many passengers in the brig of Captain Coulonne, we shall proceed to visit Kosrouan, Tripolis in Syria, Latakia, Antioch, and the Cedars of Lebanon, on the last tops of the mountains behind Tripolis.

We received this morning numerous visits from our Beirut friends. The governor, Habib Barbara, a Maronite prince, our neighbour in the country, who has shown us since our arrival, and especially since our bereavement, the affection of a sincere friend; M. Bianco, the Sardinian consul; and M. Borda, a young and amiable Piedmontese, attached to that consulate in the deserts of the East by a strange destiny, whilst his information, his tact, and character, would render him a distinguished diplomatist in the most polished capital of Europe; M. Laurella, Austrian consul; Mr Farren, consul-general, and Mr Abbot, special consul, for England in Syria; a young French merchant, M. Humani, whose society has been equally profitable and agreeable since our arrival here; M. Caillé, a French traveller; M. Jorelle, first dragoman to the consulate, a young man educated in France, taken at an early age into the East, and who is as perfect master of the Turkish and Arabian languages as of his mother-tongue—a man of the strictest probity, active, intelligent, and obliging from instinct, who conceives it a favour to ask a service from him; in fine, M. Guys, French consul in Syria, the respectable representative of the national faith in countries where his character is held in veneration, but whose very recent arrival did not permit us to see so much of him as his colleagues.

We bear with us the names of all those who have overwhelmed us with civility and sympathy, during a year's sojourn amongst them, in order that we may forever preserve for them, in different degrees, remembrance, interest, and gratitude. If I had not received yesterday's letter, if I had not an aged father, whose collection is incessantly urging my return to France, if I had a place of exile to choose in the world wherein to finish my weary days, in the bosom of solitude and melanchant nature, I should remain where I am.

April 13.—Departed this morning at four o'clock with the same caravan which I had formed for Damascus; skirted the sea-coast as far as Cape Batroun, through localities already described; slept at Dgebil in a khan out of the town, on an eminence commanding the sea. The town is remarkable only for a mosque of Christian architecture, and which was once a church, probably erected by the counts of Tripolis. It is surmised that Dgebil is the ancient land of the Gibleites, who furnished King Hiram with the blocks of stone intended for the building of Solomon's Temple. The father of Adonis had his palace there, and the worship of the son was the prevailing rite in all the neighbouring districts of Syria. On the left of the town is a castle, remarkable for the elegance and construction of its different styles of fortification. We descended into the town, to inspect the little harbour, in which some Arab ships were swinging. The town is almost exclusively inhabited by Maronites. A very handsome Arab lady, loaded with finery, came to visit my wife in the caravan-serai, to whom we made some trifling presents.

On the following day, we continued to skirt the coast, and the foot of the mountains of Castravan, which are washed by the sea. We slept under our tents, on a beautiful site on the borders of the territory of Tripolis. The road quits the coast, and turns abruptly to the right, diving into a narrow valley, watered by a rivulet. About a league from the sea, the valley is drawn completely together, and closed by a rock 100 feet high, and 500 or 600 feet in circumference. This block, either placed by nature, or hewn out of the sides of the mountain which grazes it, is surmounted by a Gothic castle in good preservation, a habitation for jackals and eagles. Steps cut in the rock lead, by a succession of terraces, covered with towers and battlements, to the highest flat, on which a donjon, bored with ogived

windows, is reared. Around the castle, the towers, and the battlements, vegetation has sprung up; large sycamores have taken root in the halls, and throw out their wide branches above the ruinous roof; creeping-plants, matted in huge clusters, ivy clinging to the windows and doors, weeds partially concealing the stones, give to this fine monument of the middle ages the appearance of a castle of moss and ivy. A beautiful fountain spouts at the foot of the rock, overshadowed by three of the most splendid trees that can be seen; they are species of elms, and one of them sufficed to cover, with its shade, our tents, our thirty horses, and the scattered groups of Arabs.

The following day, we ascended by a steep track along a white and slippery hill, where the horses could scarcely keep their feet. From the summit we had a boundless view of all the western sea-board of Syria, as far as the Gulf of Alexandretta and Mount Taurus, and a little to the right, of the plains of Aleppo, and the hills of Antioch, with the course of the Orontes. Three hours' march led us to the gates of Tripolis; we were expected, and, a league from the town, we met a cavalcade of young Frank merchants of different nations, and some officers of Ibrahim's army, who came out to welcome us.* The son of M. Lombart, a French merchant established at Tripolis, offered us hospitality in the name of his father. We were apprehensive of putting him to expense, and therefore went to the convent of the Franciscan friars. A single monk was the solitary tenant of this large abode, and he gave us accommodation. We passed two days at Tripolis; dined with M. Lombart, and found great pleasure in meeting a French family, in which every countryman is received with open arms. We passed an hour in the evening at the house of the Messieurs Katchifisse, Greek merchants and Russian consuls, of a family established from time immemorial at Tripolis, where it possesses a magnificent palace. Madame and the Misses Katchifisse are the three most celebrated ladies in Syria for their beauty and accomplished manners, the latter presenting a piquant blending of Asiatic reserve with the graceful freedom of the Greeks, and the finished good-breeding of the most refined ladies of Europe. They received us in an immense saloon, lighted by a dome, and cooled by a basin of gushing water. They were seated on a semicircular divan, which ran round the bottom of the room, and was entirely covered with rich carpets, the latter being strewed with hookahs, pipes, and vases of flowers, and of sherbet. These three females, decked in oriental costume, presented the stage-able picture each in her individual style of beauty, that the eye could contemplate. We passed a delightful evening in their company, and promised to visit them again on our return.

The Scheik of Eden, the last inhabited village on Lebanon, was maternal uncle of M. Mazoyer, my interpreter. Apprised by his nephew of our arrival at Tripolis, the venerable scheik came down from the mountains, with his eldest son and a part of his followers. He paid me a visit at the Franciscan convent, and invited me to his house at Eden. It is not more than three hours' march from Eden to the cedars of Solomon, and if the snow, which was still lying upon the mountain, could be passed, we might proceed from there to visit those secular trees, which have always formed the glory of Lebanon, and were contemporary with the great monarch. We accepted his invitation, and our departure was fixed for the morrow.

At five in the morning we were on horseback. The caravan, now more numerous than before, was headed by the Eden scheik, an estimable old man, whose elegant manners, noble and easy politeness, and splendid dress, were far from bespeaking a mere Arab chief; he seemed a patriarch marching in the van of his tribe.

* [Tripoli, or Tripolis, is a sea-port on the coast of Syria, situated on a plain at the foot of the branches of Mount Lebanon, at the distance of seventy-five miles north-west of Damascus. It contains about 16,000 inhabitants. This Tripoli must not be confounded with Tripoli in Barbary, near Tunis and Algiers.]

He was mounted on a mare of the desert, whose dark-bay colour and streaming mane would have rendered her a courser worthy of a hero of "The Jerusalem;" his son and chief followers caracolled on splendid stallions around him. We came next, and the rear was brought up by the long file of our moulkes and saïs.

The route out of Tripolis affords a most agreeable prospect. It winds along the banks of a river enclosed by two hills, and shaded by the most beautiful trees and orange groves. A kiosk, or café, built beneath those trees, offers its perfumed terrace to promenaders, who resort there to smoke and take coffee, and enjoy the coolness of the flowing stream. From there, a vista allows a sight of the sea, which is half a league from the town, of the handsome square towers, built by the Arabs on the flanks of the harbour, and of the numerous vessels lying in the roads. We traversed a wide plain, cultivated and planted with olives. On the first acclivity which rises from this plain towards Lebanon, in the midst of a forest of olives and fruit trees of all sorts, we encountered a prodigious concourse of men, women, and children, lining the road. They were the inhabitants of a large village, embosomed in this forest, which belongs to the sheik of Eden. He passes the winter in this village on the plain, and the summer at Eden. These Arabs saluted their chief with great respect, and offered us refreshments, whilst a certain number of them proceeded in company with us, to drive the sheep and calves, and assist us in clearing the mountain precipices. For the four subsequent hours we marched, sometimes in deep valleys, sometimes on the brows of sterile mountains, and we came to a halt on the edge of a torrent, which falls from the heights of Eden, bringing with it heaps of half-melted snow. The sheik had ordered aargo fire to be kindled under shelter of a rock, and we breakfasted and rested our horses in this place. The ascent afterwards became so rapid over bare rocks, smooth as polished marble, that it is not possible to conceive how the Arab horses succeeded in climbing up, and much more in coming down them. Four Arabs on foot surrounded each of our horses, and assisted them with their hands and shoulders. Notwithstanding this aid, several slipped down the rock, but without receiving any serious injury. This frightful road, or rather this almost perpendicular wall, conducted us, after two hours' toil, to a rocky table-land, whence the view fell upon a wide inner valley, and the village of Eden, which is built at its highest extremity, and in the snowy region. Above Eden there is only an immense pyramid of naked rock, the ultimate peak in this district of Lebanon, on which is a small chapel in ruins. The blasts of winter keep continually gnawing this rock, and detaching huge blocks from it, which roll even to the village; all the fields in the vicinity are strewn with them, and the castle of the sheik himself is encompassed with them on all sides. This castle, to which we were drawing near, is of complete Arab architecture; the windows are double ogived arches, separated by their spiral columns of elegant workmanship; the gateway is arched, and flanked by two elevated settles of carved stone, and the posts even of the gate are covered with arabesques. The sheik was the first to dismount, to be ready to receive us at the portal of his residence. His youngest son, with a silver perfuming pan in his hand, burnt spices before our horses, and his brothers sprinkled our hair and clothes with scented essences. A magnificent repast awaited us in the hall, where whole trees were crackling on the hearth. The finest wines of Lebanon and Cyprus, and a prodigious quantity of game, gave zest to the banquet. Our Arabs feasted as sumptuously in the court of the castle. In the evening, we strolled through the environs of the village; the snow still covered part of the fields. On all sides we discerned the marks of careful culture; the smallest spot of vegetable earth, between the rocks, had its vine or its walnut. Numberless springs gushed up from the soil, and artificial canals conducted the water into the fields. Some fields on a slope were supported by terraces constructed of immense blocks. We descried a monastery below the rock on our left, and

several villages, quite close to each other, on all the sides of the valley.

Same date.—The sheik dispatched three Arabs on the road to the cedars, in order to ascertain if the snow would allow our reaching those trees. They reported, on their return, that access is impracticable, there being fourteen feet of snow in a narrow valley which must be passed to get at the cedars. Wishing to get as near them as possible, I begged the sheik to give me his son and some horsemen. I left my wife and caravan at Eden, and mounted the most powerful of my horses, Scham, and we set off at sunrise. We proceeded for three hours on the crests of mountains, or in plains swamped with melting snow, and arrived on the margin of the Valley of the Saints, a profound gorge into which the eye plunges from the elevated rock, a valley more closed in, more gloomy and solemn, than even that of Hamana. At the head of this valley, where, by a continued ascent, it reaches the snows, a magnificent sheet of water falls a height of 100 feet, stretching a width of 200 or 300 yards. The whole valley resounds with this fall, and the whirl of the torrent it feeds; the foam streams on all parts of the rock on the mountain sides. Almost out of sight, at the bottom of the ravine, we spied two villages, the houses in which were scarcely distinguishable from the rocks hurled forward by the torrent. The branches of the poplars and mulberries appear in the distance, like tufts of rushes or long grass. We descended to the village of Bescherai by a path hewn in the rock, and so steep, that it seems inconceivable that men should hazard themselves upon it. Many fatal accidents occur. A stone thrown from the crest we were winding down, would fall on the roofs of these villages, which we did not however reach in less than an hour's continued descent. Above the cascade and the snow, immense fields of ice modulate like vapours of alternate green and blue, and about a mile to the left, in a sort of semicircular vale, formed by the highest cliffs of Lebanon, we perceive a large black spot on the snow. It is the renowned group of cedars; they crown, like a diadem, the brow of the mountain, and look down upon the out-branchings of the numerous large valleys which fall from it; the sea and the sky are their horizon. We urged our horses through the snow, to come as near as possible to the group, but when within 500 or 600 yards of it, our horses sank up to their shoulders, convincing us that the report of the Arabs was true, and that we must renounce the project of touching with our hands those relics of centuries and of nature. We got off horseback, and seated ourselves on a rock to contemplate them.

These trees are the most celebrated natural monuments in the universe. Religion, poetry, and history, have equally consecrated them. The Holy Scriptures celebrate them in several places. They form one of the images which the prophets use with especial preference. Solomon was desirous to devote them to the adorning of the temple he erected to the only God, doubtless on account of the fame for magnificence and sanctity which these prodigies of vegetation possessed at that era. These are certainly they, for Ezekiel speaks of the cedars of Eden as the most beautiful on Lebanon. The Arabs of all creeds have a traditional veneration for these trees. They attribute to them not only a vegetative vigour which gives them an eternal existence, but also a soul, which endows them with marks of sagacity and foresight, similar to those arising from instinct in animals, or from intellect in men. They know beforehand the seasons, they move their vast branches like arms, they stretch them out, or draw them in, raise them to the heavens, or bend them to the earth, according as the snow is about to fall or to melt. They are divine beings in the form of trees. This is the only spot on the chain of Lebanon where they grow, and here they take root far above the region where all considered vegetation ceases. All this strikes with astonishment the imagination of people in the East, and I am not quite sure that science itself would not be surprised.

But, alas! Bassin languishes, Carmel and the flowers

of Lebanon are fading. These trees are diminished every age. Travellers formerly counted thirty or forty, afterwards seventeen, and at a later date but twelve. There are not more than seven which from their massiveness can be presumed contemporaries of the biblical era. Around these aged witnesses of times past, who know the history of the earth better than history herself, who would tell us, if they could speak, of so many empires, religions, and human races, swept away, there still remains a small forest of younger cedars, which appear to me to form a group of 400 or 500 trees or bushes. Every year in the month of June, the inhabitants of Besherni, Eden, Kanobin, and the other villages in the neighbouring valleys, mount to the cedars, and celebrate mass at their feet. How many prayers have resounded under these branches! And what more sublime temple, what altar nearer the heavens! What fane more majestic and holy, than the loftiest level of Lebanon, the trunks of the cedars, and the canopy of those sacred branches which have shaded, and still shade, so many human generations, pronouncing the name of God, in different syllables, but acknowledging him every where in his works, and adoring him in the manifestations of nature! And I also prayed in sight of these trees. The melodious breeze which was sounding through their echoing branches played in my hair, and congealed on my eyelids tears of sorrow and adoration.

We again mounted our horses, marched three hours on the table-lands which command the valleys of Kadiska, and descended to Kanobin, the most celebrated of all the Maronite monasteries, situated in the valley of the Saints. We had a sight of the monastery of Deir-Serkis, now abandoned to one or two monks. Burekhardt, in 1810, found there an old Tuscany hermit, who was come to finish his days there, after having been a missionary in India, Egypt, and Persia.

Our first view of the monastery of Kanobin was from the summit of a cliff which projected into the valley like a promontory. I gave my horse to the Arabs, and I lay down on the ground at the point of a rock, whence the eye plunged perpendicularly into the abyss of the Vale of Saints. The river Kadiska, rolled at the foot of this rock; its bed was one continued stream of foam, but I was at such a height that its roar did not reach me. Kanobin was founded, say the Maronite monks, by Theodosius the Great. The entire Valley of the Saints resembles a huge natural nave, whose arch is the heavens, its pillars the crests of Lebanon, and its chapels the imnumerable cells of the anchorites hollowed in the flanks of the rock. These hermitages are suspended over precipices which seem unapproachable. They are like swallows' nests, at all elevations in the walls of the valley. Some are mere grottoes scooped out of the stone, others are small huts built amongst the roots of trees growing on the projecting cornices of the mountain. The great convent is below, on the bank of the torrent. It is peopled by forty or fifty Maronite monks, who are occupied in the labours of husbandry, and in printing elementary books for the education of the people. Excellent men, the sons and fathers of the people, not living on the sweat of others, but working night and day for the advantage of their brethren; simple men, who desire no wealth, no fame in this world! To labour, pray, live in peace, die in grace, and unknown of men—therein is comprised the whole ambition of the Maronite monks.

Same date.—Yesterday I was the guest of the Sheikh of Eden, a Maronite Arab village, situated under the sharpest pointed cliff of the mountains, on the extreme verge of vegetation, and uninhabitable except in summer. The respectable old man had come to seek me, with his son and some of his servants, even as far as Tripolis, and had received me in his castle of Eden, with the dignity, kindness of heart, and elegance of address, that one might imagine would have been displayed by an old lord of the court of Louis XIV. Whole trees were consumed on the large hearth; sheep, kids, and deer, were heaped in piles in the vast halls, and bottles of the golden wine of Lebanon, a hundred years old, were

drawn for us and our escort. After delaying some time to study these enchanting Homeric manners, poetical as the places where we found them, the sheik gave me his eldest son and some Arab horsemen, to conduct me to the cedars of Solomon, the renowned trees which still render sacred the highest peak of Lebanon, and which have been venerated for ages as the last evidences of the glory of Solomon. I will not describe them here. On our return from this excursion, so memorable for a traveller, we got entangled in the windings of the rocks, and in the numberless high gorges with which this group of Lebanon is splintered in all directions, and we suddenly found ourselves on the margin of an enormous precipitous wall of rock, sinking some thousand feet in depth, and hemming in the Valley of Saints. The sides of this granite rampart were so perpendicular that even mountain-goats could not have scaled them, and our Arabs were obliged to crawl on their hands and knees, and stoop over the abyss to perceive its base. The sun was sinking, and we had toiled many hours, and several more were required to retrace our lost route, and regain Eden. We dismounted from our horses, and giving ourselves up to a guide who knew, at a little distance, a path of the rock cut by the Maronite monks, the immemorial occupants of this valley, we clung for some time along the edges of the cornice, and at last descended over the slippery steps to a platform, detached from the rock, which commanded the whole prospect.

The valley, at its highest extremity, sank from the foot of the snows, and from the cedars, which formed a black cloud upon them, by wide and gentle slopes, rounding into swards of yellow and delicate green, like that on the high crags of Jura or the Alps: a multitude of foaming rivulets, issuing, on all sides, from the dissolving snow, ploughed these grassy banks, and united in a single body of whirling waves at the foot of the lowest declivity. There the valley fell, all at once, 400 or 500 feet deep; and the torrent was precipitated with it, in a wide volume, now covering the rock, as if with a liquid and transparent curtain, now leaping and shooting into arches, and falling at last on large sharp-pointed blocks of granite, hurled from the summit, where it was broken into floating sheets, and roared like everlasting thunder; the blast of the fall reached even us, carrying with it the spray of a thousand fountains, like a vapoury mist, throwing it over the whole valley, or hanging it like dew upon the leaves of the shrubs, and the rough points of the rock. Advancing towards the north, the Valley of Saints diverged more and more, and expanded into greater width, when, about two miles from where we were standing, two bare and frowning mountains gradually approached towards each other, scarcely leaving an opening of a few yards between their two extremities, where the valley was terminated and lost amid its green banks, hanging vines, poplars, cypresses, and milky torrent. Above these two mountains that thus strangled it, we could perceive, at the horizon, what seemed a lake of deeper blue than the sky—it was a portion of the Syrian Sea, enclosed in a curiously-formed gulf by other mountains of Lebanon. This gulf was twenty leagues from us, but the transparency of the atmosphere brought it, as it were, to our feet; and we distinguished even two ships under sail, which, hanging between the blue of heaven and that of ocean, and lessened by the distance, seemed two swans gliding on the horizon. This spectacle seized us so irresistibly at first, that we did not dwell upon the details of the valley; but when the first dazzling shock was over, and our eyes could pierce the floating vapours of evening, and the waters, a scene of another description opened by degrees before us.

At each winding of the torrent, where the gurgling stream left a point of land, a Maronite convent stood out, with its walls of red-tinted brown, from the ashy grey of the rock, and sent its spiral snake amongst the branches of poplars and cypresses. Around the convents, small enclosures, won from the rock or the torrent, were cultivated like the well-tilled gardens of our country-houses, and, straggling here and there, we per-

ceived the Maronites themselves, with their black cowls, returning from the labours of the field—some with the spade on their shoulder, some leading Arab colts, and others, again, holding the handle of the plough, and directing their oxen amongst the mulberry-trees. Several of these habitations of prayer and labour were suspended, with their chapels and grottoes, upon the projecting cliffs of the two mountains; some were hollowed out, like the caves of wild beasts, in the rock itself; we could only discern the door-way, surmounted by an open ogive, where a bell was hung, and some narrow terraces, hewn under the canopy of the rock, where the aged and infirm monks came to breathe the air, and enjoy a little sunshine. To some of the precipitous ledges the eye could discover no access, but on even those were a convent, an oratory, or a hermitage, and some anchorites winding amid the rocks and shrubs, working, reading, or praying. One of these convents contained an Arab printing-press, for the instruction of the Maronite people; and we saw, on the terrace, a crowd of monks, moving to and fro, and spreading out, upon bunches of reeds, the white sheets of damp paper. Nothing can describe, unless it be the pencil, the concourse and picturesque effect of these retreats; each stone seemed to have become a cell, and every grotto to have its hermit; every spring was full of movement and life; every tree had its anchorite under its branches; wherever the eye fell, it saw the valley, the mountain, and the precipices, grow, as it were, into animation under its gaze, and a spectacle of existence, prayer, and contemplation, stand out from the eternal masses, or mingle with them, giving sacredness to all around.

But in a little while the sun drooped, the labours of the day ceased, and all the black figures, scattered in the valley, retreated into the grottoes or the monasteries. The bells sounded, on all sides, the hour for congregating to the evening service; some ringing with the force and vibrating tone of a high wind upon the seas, and others tinkling, like the chirpings of birds in a field of corn, plaintive and indistinct as sighs in the desert. The bells answered each other from the two opposite sides of the valley; and the thousand echoes of the grottoes and precipices multiplied them in confused and reverberating murmurs, mingled with the roar of the torrent, and the numberless resounding falls of the springs and cascades with which the mountain-sides were furrowed. Then came a moment of silence, and a fresh echo, more soft, melancholy, and solemn, filled the valley: it was the chant of psalms, which, rising all at once from every monastery and church, from every oratory and rocky grotto, mounted to us in a confused and vast murmur, resembling one single melodious lament uttered by the whole valley, as if it had just found a soul and a voice. A perfume spread through the air, which angels might have breathed; we stood mute and overjoyed like those celestial spirits, when, hovering over the globe they believed: desert, they heard ascend from these same regions the first prayer of mankind. We felt how the voice of man can give life to nature in her dearest aspect, and what song will be at the end of time, when all the emotions of the human heart, concentrated in the single sentiment of poetry, shall be here below but one hymn of adoration!

April 12.—Returned to Tripolis with the scheik and his tribe. I gave his son a piece of silk to make a divan. Passed a day in going over the delightful environs of Tripolis, and then started for Beirut by the sea coast. Consumed a few days in embarking our baggage on board the brig I had chartered, "The Sophia." We made preparations for a visit to Egypt, and uttered our adieux to our Frank and Arab friends. I gave away several of my horses, and sent off six of the most beautiful under the conduct of an Arab equeerry, and three of my best aids, by the route of Syria and Carmania, to meet me on the 1st of July on the shore of the Gulf of Maré, opposite the Isle of Rhodes, in Asia Minor.

At sunrise, on the 15th April, we left the house where Julia embraced us for the last time, and I quitted

us for heaven. We kissed the pavement of her chamber a thousand times, and steeped it with our tears! This house was for me like a consecrated relic. I looked at it again on all sides; on the birds, the doves, her horse, the garden, the two young Syrian girls who came to play with her, and who lived under our windows in the garden. They had arisen before daylight, and, dressed in their richest apparel, were weeping. They stretched out their hands towards us, and plucked the flowers from their hair. I gave each of them, as a memento of foreign friends whom they would never again behold but in their thoughts, a necklace of pieces of gold, to be worn on their marriage. One of them, called Anastasia, was the most beautiful female I had seen in the East.

The sea was like a mirror. The boats which contained our friends who accompanied us on board, followed ours. We weighed anchor with a light breeze from the east. The coasts of Syria, lined with their fringe of sand, disappeared with the heads of the palm-trees. The white peaks of Lebanon were in view for a long time. During the night we doubled Cape Carmel, and at sunrise we were off the heights of Saint Jean d'Acre, with the Gulf of Caypha before us. The sea was beautiful, and its waves were ploughed by a host of dolphins sporting round the vessel. Every thing in nature wore an appearance of gladness and joy, as well as on the waves around that bark which bore hearts dead to all joy and serenity. I passed the night on deck—with what thoughts! My heart knows!

We skirted the low coasts of Galilee; Jaffa glittered like a rock of chalk in the horizon, on its beach of white sand. We made towards it, intending to remain there some days, as my wife, and those of my friends who could not accompany me in my journey to Jerusalem, were unwilling to pass so near the sacred tomb, without bearing to it some additional groans. In the evening the wind freshened, and we cast anchor at seven o'clock in the stormy roadstead of Jaffa. The sea was too high to hoist a boat out, and it was not till the next day that we all disembarked. A caravan was prepared by the care of my old friends, the Messieurs Damiani, the French agents at Jaffa. It started at eleven to proceed as far as Ramla, and there pass the night. I was left alone in the house of M. Damiani.

I passed five days in wandering alone through the environs. The Arab friends with whom I had formed an acquaintance in my two first visits, took me to the gardens they had around the town. I have already described these gardens. They are groves of oranges, citrons, pomegranates, and figs, trees as large as walnuts in France, surrounded on all sides by the Desert of Gaza. A family of Arab peasants resides in an adjoining cabin, and there are cisterns or wells, a few camels, goats, sheep, pigeons, and chickens. The ground is strewn with oranges and lemons fallen from the trees; a tent is fixed on the margin of one of the irrigating canals, and carp is here laid out. The tent is open towards the sea to receive the breeze, which prevails from ten in the morning until the evening, which contracts a perfume as it passes under the orange branches, and scatters showers of orange flowers. The tops of the minarets of Jaffa are seen from there, as well as the vessels sailing between Asia Minor and Egypt. I should have wished to remain here; Jaffa, shut out from the whole world, on the edge of the great Egyptian desert, whose sand forms white banks around these orange groves, beneath a sky always pure and warm, would be an admirable abode for a man sick of life, and who desires but one spot under the sun.

The caravan returned. I asked of Madame de Lamartine some account of Bethlehem and the surrounding localities, which the plague had prevented me from visiting in my first journey. The relation she gave me I shall insert here.

NARRATIVE OF MADAME DE LAMARTINE.

"On leaving the gardens of Jaffa, we spurred our horses to a gallop over an immense plain, then covered

with yellow and blue thistles. Large flocks, tended by an Arab trooper armed with a long lance, as in the Pontine Marshes, were cropping at intervals the scarce provender amongst the grass that the sun had not entirely scorched. Farther onwards to our right, and the same as at the entrance to the desert of El-Arisch, some lumps of mud, covered with dried grass, were stuck in the ground, like hay-cocks drenched in the storm before the husbandman could secure them: it was a village.

As we drew near, we saw naked children issue from the cones, which served as habitations, and some women, their hair streaming, partially clad in a deep blue chemise, quitted the fire they were kindling on two stones to prepare their food, and mounted to the top of their huts to see us defile past.

After a four hours' march we arrived at Ramla, where we were expected by the agent of the Sardinian consulate, who had the kindness to lend us his house, females not being received in the Latin convent. In the evening we visited an ancient tower, a quarter of a mile from the town, called the Tower of the Forty Martyrs, now inhabited by turning dervishes. It was a Friday, the day of ceremony for their rites. We remained to witness them. About twenty dervishes, dressed in long robes and peaked caps of white felt, were squatted in a circle, within an enclosure, surrounded by a low balustrade; he who appeared to be the chief, a venerable person, with a long white beard, was placed, as a mark of distinction, on a cushion higher than the others. An orchestra, composed of a *nâhi*, or bassoon, a *shoubabe*, a species of clarinet, and two small conjoined drums, called *nacariate*, played airs utterly discordant to our European ears. The dervishes got up, one by one, with great gravity, passed before the superior, saluted him, and commenced to swing themselves round, with their arms extended, and their eyes raised to heaven. Their motion was slow at first, but grew quicker by degrees, assumed an extreme rapidity, and finished by forming, as it were, a whirlpool, by which the eye was confused and dazzled. As long as we could observe them, their countenances seemed to express great exaltation, but at last we could distinguish nothing. How long this strange waltz continued, I cannot precisely tell, but it was for a time that seemed to me incredible. By degrees, however, the number of turners diminished; exhausted with fatigue, they leaned against each other, and sank back into their original attitudes. Those who continued last seemed striving to turn as long as possible; and I experienced a painful sensation at witnessing the efforts made by an old dervish, panting and staggering at the end of the trial, to keep it up longer than the rest. During this exhibition, our Arabs talked to us of their superstitions. They asserted that a Christian, by continually reciting the *Belief*, could force a Mussulman to turn, by an irresistible impulse, until he died; that there were many examples of it, and that upon one occasion the dervishes having discovered the person who was employing this spell, compelled him to recite the *Belief* backwards, and thus destroyed the charm at the moment the turner was about to expire. We fell into a train of sad reflections upon the imbecility of human reason, which gropes in blindness for the route to heaven, and so often misses the way. These grotesque extravagances, which degrade, in some degree, the human understanding, had nevertheless a design worthy of respect, and a noble motive. It was man wishing to honour God; it was the imagination striving to exalt itself by physical movement, and to reach, as is effected by opium, that divine reverie, that complete annihilation of feeling and of self, which allows it to believe that it is lost in the infinite unity, and that it is in communion with God! It was originally perhaps a pious imitation of the motion of the stars turning before God; it was perhaps the produce of that same enthusiastic and impassioned exaltation, which, at a former period, made David dance before the ark of the Lord. Some of us imitated the wife of the royal poet, and were tempted to deride the dervishes. They seemed to

them out of their senses, as to men who were ignorant of the fundamental part of our creed might appear some of the monkish observances, the mendicancy of our friars, and the flagellations of certain of the ascetic orders. But however absurd a religious practice may be to the cold eye of reason, a more profound and exalted reflection always finds in it something to respect—the motive which inspires it. Nothing which concerns the idea of God is ridiculous. It is sometimes atrocious, often insensate, but always serious. The conscience of the dervish is at peace when he has accomplished his pious waltz, and he believes that his twirlings have done honour to the divinity. But if we do not look upon him as ridiculous, we are sometimes disposed to regard him with pity, and I am not sure that we are not equally wrong in both cases. Where would we ourselves be without the lessons of Christianity, which have illumined our reason; would we be more rational than this man? History can supply the answer. We find one Plato for tens of thousands of idolaters.

On coming out of the tower, we entered into the galleries of a ruined cloister, which led to a subterranean church. We descended by several steps under an elliptic arch, supported by a handsome colonnade. The appearance of an underground church has always struck me with an effect at once imposing and affecting. The mysterious darkness, and the solitude of these silent vaults, carry back the imagination to the first era of the creed, when the Christians retreated into deep caverns, to conceal their mysteries from profane eyes, and to shelter themselves from persecution. In the East the majority of these churches appear built to embellish these primitive asylums, and to adorn, with all the richness of architecture, the humble retreats in which the faith was so long entombed, as if to revenge, by a brilliant reparation, the humiliations and sufferings imposed by pagan domination. But the period of persecution must have revived for the unfortunate Christians, since the name of this monument, the Forty Martyrs, would lead to the conclusion that it had been used as a refuge by the faithful, without being successful in protecting them; and now all is in ruins. The naves and colonnades, built by emperors, have not commanded more respect from the conquerors than the humble grottoes of the first disciples of the cross; the arches are used for stables, and the cloisters for barracks.

There were still some tombs of the time of the Crusades, but the night prevented us from tarrying any longer; we were obliged to return to our lodging, and prepare our caravan for the morrow. The Aga of Ramla gave us an escort, and ordered the *caravans* in chief not to leave my side for an instant in the defiles of the mountains we were about to enter, and to follow my directions in all particulars. The respect of the Mahometans for European females forms a singular contrast to the dependent state in which they keep their own. We had every reason to be gratified at the extreme attention and solicitous politeness of this janissary. Keeping his eye constantly on the Arab mare I was riding, he seemed alarmed when I ventured to urge it forward, and was lost in surprise that I could preserve my equilibrium in the precipitous roads we had to scale. He was of great utility to us afterwards, when we met in the midst of these gorges a host of pilgrims returning from Jerusalem, who blocked up the passage. He compelled them to yield us the least difficult part of the road, among the blocks of granite and the roots of shrubs which lined the ravine and prevented us from rolling over the precipice. Without his authority, the long file of the procession might have tumbled us headlong down, if the rear had given impetus to the head of the column.

Quitting Ramla, the route continues through the plain for two leagues. We stopped at Jacob's well; but not having a pitcher to draw up the water, which was far down, we continued our way. This whole region preserves such vivid traces of the biblical times, that we are not at all surprised at, or find the least difficulty in admitting, the traditions which give the name of Jacob

to a well which still exists, and we expect to see the patriarch watering the flocks of Rachel, rather than entertain any doubt of his identity. It is only after reflection that we are seized with astonishment or doubt, when the lapse of 4000 years, and the various phases which humanity has undergone, present themselves to the imagination, and cause one's faith to stagger; but on the other hand, in a plain where water is found at long intervals of three or four hours, a well or a spring must have been as important an object in past ages as at present, and thus its name may have been as religiously preserved as that of the towers of David, or the cisterns of Solomon. We shortly entered upon the mountains of Judea; the road became difficult, sometimes along the edge of a precipice, leaving to the horses just room enough for their feet; sometimes fragments of rock, rolled and heaped across the path, formed a rough staircase, which Arabian horses alone are capable of clearing; but however toilsome the track, it presented no danger comparable to that incurred on the route to Hamana.

At the summit of the first peak, we turned round for an instant to enjoy a magnificent view over all the country that we had just traversed, as far as the shore beyond Jaffa. Although all was still around us, the horizon on the sea, red and lowering, announced to an experienced eye the coming tempest; already portentous waves were heaving the ships in the roadstead; we attempted to distinguish ours, and thought of those who had remained on board. My sad forebodings were far from chimerical. On the following day several vessels were thrown on this dangerous coast, and ours, after having for a long time dragged its anchor, snapped its cable in the midst of a frightful squall. After this momentary halt, we descended the other side of the mountain to have others again to scale, sometimes over avalanches of stones, which slide from under our horses' feet, and at other times along the margin of a narrow cornicing. The hills on both sides were often well wooded; the bright green of the beautiful clusters of strawberry bushes and wild laurels, formed a strong contrast to the meagre foliage of the mastics and olives. Water is frequently the only ingredient wanting to render the landscape complete.

But a spectacle of a different complexion was in wait for us. A procession of numberless pilgrims of all nations, returning from Jerusalem, was defiling immediately in front of us, from the top of a dry and naked mountain, and winding down to the gorge which we were traversing. No words can describe the picturesque effect of this scene, the variety of colour, of costumes, of attitudes; from the rich Armenian to the poorest mendicant monk, every thing contributed to embellish it. After admiring the general effect, we had full leisure to examine the details, during the two hours that elapsed in our mutually passing each other. Now we saw a monk, perched on his hands on a rock, and sitting on a red and golden saddle, the bridle of his horse held by two sons, and followed by a crowd on foot, a cavalcade resembling the triumphal march of a papal legate in the middle ages; then came a poor family, the father of which, with his pilgrim's staff in his hand, led a mule loaded with little children; the eldest, perched on the neck of the animal, held a cord by way of bridle, and a taper as a standard. The other children, crowded in panniers slung on each side, were gnawing the remains of consecrated bread; the mother, pale and attenuated, kept up with difficulty, suckling an infant fastened to her breasts by a broad girdle. A long file of neophytes followed, each holding a enormous paschal taper, according to the Greek custom, and chanting psalms in a nasal and monotonous tone. Farther on were Jews with red turbans, long black beards, and penetrating and sinister-looking eyes, seeming internally to curse a creed which had disinherited them. How came they amongst this crowd of Christians? Some of them had taken advantage of the caravan to visit the tomb of David, or the valley of Tiberias, and others were speculating on making money by annihilating the multitude with provisions. The crowd on foot

was interspersed at intervals by camels loaded with enormous bales, and accompanied by their moukres in the Arab costume, a vest and wide pantaloons of brown cloth streaked with blue, and a yellow kerchief on the head. Next appeared the Armenian families; the women, concealed under the large white veil, were travelling in a *tactrean*, a sort of cage borne upon two mules; the men, in long robes of a deep colour, their heads enveloped with the great square calpack of the inhabitants of Smyrna, were leading their sons by the hand, whose grave, reflective, and calculating aspect, gave no appearance of the sprightliness of childhood. Greek sailors, and the captains of pirate vessels, who had come from the ports of Asia Minor and the Archipelago, with ship-loads of pilgrims, as a slaver with negroes, were swearing in their energetic tongue, and urging on the march to get their human cargoes re-embarked as quickly as possible. A sick child was carried on a litter, with its parents by its side, weeping their disappointed hopes of the miraculous cure, which they had anticipated from their pious pilgrimage. Alas! I also wept; I had hoped and prayed like them; but more unfortunate than they, I had not even uncertainty as to the extent of my misfortune.

At the end came a crowd of wretched ragged Copts, men, women, and children, dragging themselves along as if just discharged from an hospital. The whole troop, scorched by the sun, and panting with thirst, were struggling to keep up with the caravan, and to avoid being left behind in the defiles of the mountains. I blushed at seeing myself on horse-back, escorted by janissaries, encompassed by devoted friends, who secured me from every danger, every difficulty, whilst a faith so lively had led such a multitude of individuals to brave fatigues, maladies, and privations of all sorts. They were indeed true pilgrims. I was but a traveller.

Between this first chain of mountains and the last heights which command Jerusalem, are the pretty vale and village of Jeremiah. We had just passed before the old Greek church, which, like many others, is now a stable, when we saw about fifty Arabs, disposed semi-circularly on the side of the hill, and squatted under beautiful olive-trees. In the middle of the circle, and on a small elevation above the rest, sat the chief, the famous Abougosh. Standing by his side, we saw his brother and his son, loaded with their arms, and holding pipes; their horses, tied to the trees behind them, completed the picture. On the appearance of our caravan, he sent his son to speak with our dragoman, who marched in front. Having learnt that the escort was conducting to Jerusalem the wife of the Frank emir, whom he had seen six months before, he sent to beg us to stop and take coffee. We were in no mood to refuse the invitation, and having distributed provisions for the halt to our camels and moukres, we suffered ourselves to be conducted to a short distance from the group of Arabs. There our dignity required that we should stop, until they, in their turn, moved towards us. Abougosh rose, and came to meet M. de Parseval. After honouring us with many marks of politeness, and offering us coffee, he requested a private conversation with me. I caused my companions to retire a few paces, and by the medium of the interpreter, he communicated to me, that one of his brothers was a prisoner of the Egyptians, and that, as he understood M. de Lamartine had great weight in the councils of Ibrahim Pacha, he begged me to solicit his intervention on his behalf, so that he might recover his liberty. We were certainly very far from enjoying the credit that he imagined; but chance so willed it, that I had it in my power to render him service by putting his cause pleaded before the commander of the Egyptian army.

On drawing near to Jerusalem, the sight of the walls was intercepted by a large encampment of troops belonging to Ibrahim Pacha. The sentinels came forward, examined us, spoke to our dragoman, and then opened the passage for us through the camp. We soon found ourselves in front of the general's tent. The curtains being drawn back, we discovered him stretched on a divan of cashmere, surrounded by his officers, some

standing, and others seated on Persian carpets. Their garments of glaring colours, lined with beautiful furs, and embroidered with gold, their glittering arms, the black slaves who were presenting them coffee in silver cups, formed for us a brilliant and novel spectacle. Around the tents, saïs were walking some splendid Arab stallions about, to allow the foam to dry on their shining skins. Others fastened with shackles were neighing impatiently, pawing the ground, and darting fiery glances on a squadron of cavalry about to depart. The Egyptian troops, composed of young conscripts, miserably clad in a scanty red uniform, half European, half Asiatic, formed a striking contrast to the Arabs, enveloped in their ample draperies. Yet it was these short, ugly, ill-made Egyptians, who were marching from conquest to conquest, and making the sultan tremble at the gate of Constantinople!

We entered the holy city by the Bethlehem gate, turning immediately to the left to reach the quarter of the Latin convent. Females not being received in that establishment, we took possession of a house generally uninhabited, but which serves for strangers when the convent of the Holy Land is full. We stretched our mattresses upon benches arranged for that purpose, hoping to repose ourselves after the emotions of the journey, and to recover strength to support the new and more exciting ones in store. But, assailed by thousands of insects, mosquitoes, fleas, and bug—which had doubtless long out of pasture in these deserted chambers, or which was far worse to suppose, had been left there by some of those ragged pilgrims whom we had met on the road, all hope of sleep was banished, and the night passed over in vain attempts to shield ourselves from attack, by continual change of place. One of our travelling companions, disregarding our exhortations to patience, fled for refuge to the convent. The principal came to see us, and told us, that if he had been apprised of our situation, he would have made arrangements for a more comfortable lodging, and promised to have every thing in order for the following night. I apologised to him, assuring him that we needed nothing, and I had reason to thank for our susceptibility to be on the side of peace and self-denial.

and the great utility of his office in the convent of
 I here below was
 soon to finish by martyrdom, at the moment perhaps
 when he flattered him- self that he could enjoy some
 repose in his native country. Having embarked shortly
 after our departure, to return into Spain, he was mas-
 saced, with fifteen other monks, by some Greek sailors
 not far from the coasts of Cyprus. A Mahometan boy,
 who alone escaped from the carnage, followed and
 denounced the assassins, who were arrested in Cy-
 prus. The principal was scarcely fifty years of age.

On the following day, as soon as the sun rose, we commenced our visit to the sacred places. But I must here stop, and be silent on the deep emotions that these spots caused in me, because they are all personal to myself. Nor will I speak of the appearance of the streets of Jerusalem, which are already described by my companions. I shut up within my own bosom all the sensations of my mind; I needed not to write them down, for they are too profound ever to be effaced from my recollection. If there be any localities in the world which have the mournful power of arousing all that is sad and sorrowful in the human heart, and of responding to internal anguish by, so to express myself, a material lamentation, they are those where I pondered. Every step that is taken echoes in the depths of the soul like the voice of woe, and every look falls on a memento of holy grief, which absorbs our individual sorrows in those ineffable agonies of humanity, which were here suffered, expiated, and consecrated.

We departed from Jerusalem at five in the morning, in order to arrive at Bethlehem at the hour at which they repeat mass in the grotto of the Nativity; an old

Spanish monk, with a long beard, wrapped up in a *mashlah*,* with wide black and white stripes, his feet trailing on the ground, being mounted on a very diminutive donkey, led the way, and served as a guide. Although it was the month of April, an icy wind blew with violence, and threatened to overturn both me and my horse. It was a squall from the tempest on the Sea of Jaffa, which reached even here. The dust which was whirled about almost blinded me; I abandoned the reins of my mare to the Arab sâis, and drawing my mashlah around me, I buried myself in the reflections to which the route I was traversing, and the objects consecrated by tradition, naturally gave rise. But these objects are all too well known for me to linger on their description; the olive of the prophet Elias, the fountain where the star appeared to the magi, the site of Rama, whence issued the voice of woe that was echoed in my own bosom, all excited in me sensations too profound for transmission to paper.

The Latin convent of Bethlehem had been closed for eleven months by the plague, but for some time there had been no fresh victims; and when we presented ourselves at the small low gate which serves as an entrance to the monastery, it was opened for us. After having passed, one by one, stooping under the narrow doorway, our first emotion was that of surprise, at finding ourselves in a majestic church; forty-eight marble columns, each of a single block, ranged in two rows on each side, formed five naves, surmounted by a massive frame of cedar-wood; but we looked in vain for the altar or the pulpit; all was broken, ruined, despoiled; and a wall, rudely cemented, divided this beautiful monument of the birth of the cross, and thus concealed the part reserved for worship, the possession of which the different Christian sects still dispute amongst themselves. The nave belongs to the Latins, but it serves merely as a vestibule to the convent; they have walled up the large gate, and the low postern by which we had entered was constructed to protect these venerated relics from the profanation of the hordes of Arab brigands, who used to penetrate on horseback even to the foot of the altar, to levy exactions on the monks. The superior received us with cordiality; his mild, calm, and sweet countenance was equally distant from the austerity of the anchorite, and the jovial indifference of which the monks are accused. He asked several questions respecting the country that we had passed on our way, and the Egyptian troops that were encamped so near them. Eleven months' seclusion had rendered him eager for news; and he was extremely rejoiced to learn that Ibrahim Pacha extended protection to the Christian population of Syria.

After a few moments' rest, we got ready to hear mass in the Chapel of the Manger. They lighted a feeble lantern, and we descended, preceded by the brethren, to a long labyrinth of subterranean corridors, which we had to traverse in order to reach the sacred grotto. These vaults are full of tombs and memorials;—here

‡ The large mantle of the bedouin Arab is so called.

1 [Bethlehem is a small village situated a few miles south from Jerusalem, on the face of a rising ground, "at the southern side of a deep valley, trending east and west. Standing upon an acclivity, the lower part of the rock is excavated, and usually serves as a stable for cattle. So much for the place of Nativity being under ground."—*Robinson*. Over the cavern, pointed out by tradition as the scene of the birth of the infant Jesus, a convent and church have been erected, and the cavern itself forms a subterranean chapel, into which strangers are conducted by the monks attached to the establishment; it is called the Chapel of the Manger. "The walls of the convent contain all that is most interesting in Bethlehem, but outside the walls also are places consecrated in Bible history. Standing on the high table of ground in front of the convent, one of the monks pointed out the fountain where, when David was thirsting, his young men procured him water; and in the rear of the convent is a beautiful valley, having in the midst of it a ruined village, marking the place where the shepherds were watching their flocks at night, when the angel came down and announced to them the birth of the Saviour. The scene was pastoral as it had been eighteen hundred years before."—*Steeple's Incidents of Faith.*]

the tomb of Saint Jerome, there that of Santa Paula,* of Saint Eustachius, and the pit of the Innocents. But nothing could arrest our attention at this moment; the dazzling light from thirty to forty lamps, under a small arch at the end of the passage, showed us the altar raised on the place of the Nativity, and two steps lower, on the right, that of the Manger. These natural grottoes are partially covered with marble, to protect them from the indiscreet piety of the pilgrims, who were wont to batter down the walls to carry away the fragments; but we could still touch the naked rock behind the slabs of marble with which it is lined; and the vault in general yet presents the irregularity of its primitive form. Ornaments have not here, as in some other sacred places, altered nature in such a manner as to induce doubts touching their identity, but serve merely to preserve the natural formation. On considering these arches and hollows in the rock, we immediately recognise that they must have served for stables to the flocks which the shepherds guarded in the plain, which is yet covered with green pastures, extending to a great distance beneath the rocky table-land, which the church and convent crown like a citadel. The outer opening of the vaults which communicated with the pasture-land has been closed up; but a few paces beyond, another cavern of the same kind can be visited, which undoubtedly was used for a similar purpose.

We assisted at the mass. The tone in which my mind unfortunately found itself, renders me unable to express what these localities and ceremonies were so well calculated to inspire; every thing within me was resolved into a deep and mournful emotion. An Arab woman, who came to have her newly-born baptised on the altar of the Manger, increased my affliction. After mass we returned to the convent, not by the subterranean corridor, but by a wide and commodious staircase, which ended at the cross of the church, behind the wall of separation of which I have spoken. This staircase formerly belonged equally to the two Greek and Latin communions: at present, the Greeks alone enjoy it, and the fathers of Bethlehem were vehement in their complaints to us of this usurpation. They wished to impose on us the task of giving effect to their remonstrances in Europe; and we could with difficulty convince them, that, although French, we possessed no authority to compel a restitution of their rights.

The two lateral naves, which gave the form of a cross to the ancient church, are now turned into chapels, the one belonging to the Armenians, and the other to the Latins. In the centre is the chief altar, placed immediately above the grotto; the choir is separated from it by a grating and a wall of gilded wainscoting, which conceals the sanctuary of the Greeks.

The Greek church, in the East, is much richer than the Roman; with the latter, all is lowly and meek—with the former, pomp and show. The rivalry which arises from their respective positions, produces an extremely painful impression: it is grievous to behold wrangling and discord, in places which should inspire only charity and love.

The foundation of the church is attributed to Saint Helena, as well as of most of the other Christian edifices in Palestine. But it is objected, that having visited Syria at an advanced time of life, she could not have got so many structures completed; yet it is not a question of time or space, as it is quite evident that her creative will and pious zeal may have ruled the commencement of monuments which were terminated after her death.

On our return to the convent, an excellent repast was offered us in the refectory by the superior, at which we quitted with regret, wishing to avail ourselves of

the hours that remained to visit the surrounding localities. On descending towards the plain, we were shown a grotto, where tradition alleges that the Holy Virgin was concealed before her departure for Egypt. On some heights which command Bethlehem, we perceived the remains of towers which mark different encampments of the crusaders, and which still bear the names of those heroes. We passed them on the left, and descended by rugged and disagreeable roads.

After an hour's march, we came to a small narrow and enclosed valley, watered by a limpid rivulet. It is the garden of Solomon, sung in the Song of Songs. In truth, it is the only spot amidst the rocky summits which encompass it where any culture could flourish, and this valley must in all times have been a delightful garden, tilled with the greatest care, and presenting, with its lovely and humid verdure, the most striking contrast to the stony dryness of all around it. It is perhaps half a league long. We pursued the course of the meandering stream, shaded by willows, at times skirting its grassy banks, at others bathing the feet of our horses in its transparent waters upon the polished pebbles of its bed, and occasionally crossing from one bank to the other by a plank of cedar. We at length reached the foot of the rocks, which form the natural barrier of the valley. A peasant offered to serve as guide in conducting us up the ascent, but insisted upon the necessity of our dismounting, and giving our horses to his assistants, who, by taking a long round, would bring them to us at the top.

We turned to the right, and continued a painful ascent for near an hour. When arrived at the summit, we found the most beautiful remains of antiquity that we had yet seen; three immense cisterns, hollowed in the live rock, and following the slope of the mountain, one above the other, as on terraces. The walls are as clean, and the edges as sharp, as if they had been just finished. Their banks, covered with flags like a quay, echoed under the horses' feet. These beautiful basins, filled with transparent water on the top of an arid mountain, astonish the mind, and give a high idea of the power which conceived and executed so vast a project; they are likewise attributed to Solomon. Whilst I was engaged in contemplating them, my companions measured them, and found each about 400 feet long and 165 wide; the first is the longest, the last the widest, having at least 200 feet at the mouth, and enlarging to the top. Above the highest of these gigantic cisterns, a small spring, concealed under some tufts of grass, is the signal fountain of the Bible, and is the sole feeder of the reservoirs which anciently poured into aqueducts, conveying the water to the temple at Jerusalem; the remains of these aqueducts occurred frequently on our route. At a short distance, old battlemented walls, probably of the crusading era, surrounded an enclosure, where tradition supposes that Solomon had a palace for his women. There scarcely remain any vestiges of it, and the place, covered with dung and filth, is now used as a yard to which the shepherds and the cattle retire in the night when staying on the mountains, in the pasture season, as on the Alps in Switzerland. We returned to Jerusalem by an ancient road, wide and paved, called the Way of Solomon, which is shorter and more direct than the one we had taken in the morning; it does not pass by Bethlehem. The night was well advanced when we entered beneath the arched gate of the pilgrims.

On the 25th April, after having visited for the last time the holy tomb, we requested the ecclesiastic who accompanied us to lead us round the exterior of the church, to give us a right conception of the inequalities of the ground, which might explain the union of the sepulchre and of Calvary in the same monument. This circuit is difficult, because the church is encompassed with buildings which obstruct the communication; but by going through some court-yards and houses, we succeeded in satisfying ourselves upon the points which interested us. We afterwards mounted on horseback to go round the walls of the town, and visit the tombs

* [This was a noble Roman Lady who founded several monasteries about Bethlehem, which are now in ruins. She was the mother of Eustachius. Saint Jerome, as is well known, translated the version of the Bible adopted by the Church of Rome, and called the Vulgate. The story, in which he translated it is likewise shown in this passage, as also the spot where Joseph waited until the Virgin Mary was delivered of her son.]

of the kings. To the north of Jerusalem, going out by the Damascus gate, about half a league off, we found an excavation in the rock forming a court nearly twenty feet deep, closed on three sides by walls of rock cut with the chisel, offering the appearance as if carved with their sculptures out of the stone itself, representing doorways, pilasters, and friezes, of beautiful workmanship. We may presume that the gradual accumulation of soil has choked up several feet of this excavation, for the opening which exists on the left to enter into the sanctuary is so low, that we could only get through it by crawling. We succeeded in introducing ourselves with extreme difficulty, and in getting the torches lighted. Clouds of bats, aroused by our invasion, assailed us, and fought, as it were, to defend their territory; and if retreat had been easy, I believe we should have recoiled before them. By degrees the hubbub ceased, and we were enabled to examine these sepulchral chambers. They are excavated, and cut in the live rock. The angles are as acute, and the walls a glossy, as if the workmen had polished them in the quarry. We visited five of them, communicating with each other by openings, in which were fixed, without doubt, blocks of stone, hewn in the form of doors, which were lying on the ground, giving rise to the conclusion that each chamber had been closed and sealed, when niches, hollowed in the sides to receive the sarcophagi or cinerary urns, were filled. Who were, or who were intended to be, the inhabitants of abodes prepared at such prodigious cost? It is a question still involved in doubt; their origin has been a subject of lively contest. The interior, which is simple, and of great size, may belong to the remotest antiquity; but there is nothing particular date. The sculpture of excellent workmanship and of a pure taste seems to be of the distant epoch of the king of Judah. I have seen Balbek, my ideas have been modified as to the perfection to which the arts had arrived before ascertained eras.

We continued our excursion through some olive fields, and descending again to the Valley of Jehoshaphat, we ascended to the south by the Mount of Sion. The tomb of David, the holy site of the Last Supper, the Armenian church, in which is the stone rolled to the door of the holy sepulchre, determined us to enter by the gate *Bab-el-Dauud*; but when we wished to be subterranean vault, in which tradition places the bones of the royal prophet, the Turks objected, and stated that access was absolutely forbidden. They imagine that immense riches were buried in this royal cave, and that strangers are acquainted with the secret, and come to find and carry them off.

The place of the Last Supper is a large arched room, supported by columns, and blackened by time; if the ancient appearance of a building be considered any proof, it has all the marks of remote antiquity. Situated on Mount Sion, beyond the walls of the city at that time, it is quite possible that the disciples may have retired there after the resurrection, and were there assembled at the time of Pentecost, as the popular traditions assert. Yet the sack of Jerusalem by Titus left scarcely any thing standing but the towers and a part of the walls; but, on the other hand, the sites remained sufficiently well known, and the early Christians must have attached great importance to perpetuating their remembrance, by successive constructions on the identical spots, and often with the fragments of the old monuments. But details upon Jerusalem could be nothing but repetitions, and I quit with regret a subject to which my memory will incessantly revert. I will say but one word, quite apart from religious impressions, on the aspect of the village of tombs (Silon), which, like a beautiful picture, is still present to my mind. The population of savage Arabs, dwelling in the sepulchral caves and grottoes, would offer to a painter a scene of the most original nature. Let him figure to himself the deep valley of Silon, with caverns presenting their openings like the mouths of ovens, scattered one above the other on the side of the rock, and living beings, men, women, and children, issuing out of these sepulchral caves like phantoms from

the house of the dead. I am not aware whether this subject has been treated, but it appears to me to offer to the pencil all the charms of contrast and harmony.

On the 26th April we cast our last look upon Jerusalem, and resumed in sadness the route to Jaffa. On entering the valley of Jeremia, the sounds of a savage music attracted our attention, and we perceived, in the distance, a whole tribe of Arabs defiling on the side of the hill. I sent the dragoman forward, and he returned to tell us that the crowd was assembled for the interment of a chief, and that we might advance without fear. He informed us afterwards that this chief had suddenly died the day before whilst hunting, from having inhaled a venomous plant; but the character of the Arabs of Naplous, whose costume these people wore, induced us to believe that he had fallen a victim to the hatred of some rival chief. Notwithstanding their warlike habits and imposing manners, the credulity of this simple race resembles that of children; the recital of any thing marvellous delights them, and never raises the least doubt in their minds. One of our Arab friends, a man of good information and judgment, has frequently assured us, with every mark of internal conviction, that a schiik on Lebanon possessed the secret of the magic words which had been employed in primitive times to

the gigantic blocks of Balbek, but that he was too good a Christian ever to make use of them, or to divulge them. We pressed our horses forward, and joined the funeral procession. In the middle was the bier, borne on a litter, hid under rich draperies, and surmounted with the turban of the Osmanlis; Arab women, naked to the waist, their long black hair streaming over their shoulders, their breasts bruised, and their arms extended in the air, went before the body, uttering cries, singing doleful ditties, wringing their hands, and tearing their hair; musicians, striking a sort of large drum and tambourins, accompanied the voices with a continued and monotonous roll. At the head of the procession marched the brother of the defunct; his horse, covered with beautiful angora skins, and adorned with red and gold buttons, swinging on the head and chest, was capering to the sounds of the discordant music. Priests, in rich habiliments, were waiting for the cavalcade before the door of a tomb, surmounted with a dome, supported by an open colonnade; immediately opposite them was a ruined church, whose terraced roof was covered with women in long white veils, resembling the priestesses at ancient sacrifices, or the lamenters at the monuments of Memphis. When the brother of the chief approached the tomb, he got off horseback and threw himself into the arms of the principal priest, with the most lively demonstrations of grief; the latter exhorted him to submit himself to the will of God, and to show himself worthy of succeeding his brother in the command of the tribe. In the meantime the cavalcade arrived, deposited the body, arranged itself round the little temple, and the songs were shouted with more vehemence than ever. These mournful performances, this funeral pomp, these hymns of despair uttered in a strange tongue, with strange rites, seemed to us a living memento of those lamentations with which Jeremia had filled this identical valley, and which still echo through the biblical world.²

DEPARTURE FROM JAFFA.

We embark in a high sea, whose enormous waves come like hills of foam against the reef of rocks; we wait a moment under lee of these rocks until the wave has passed, and then pull with all our force into the open sea; but the waves return, and lift us like a cork upon their crests; we fall again as into an abyss, and see neither the ship nor the shore; we are again tossed up, and again tumble downwards, the spray pouring on us like a downfall of rain. We at length arrive at the ship's side, but its heavings were so great that we dare not approach for fear of being struck by the yards dipping in the waves; we wait for an interval of hollow, a rope is fastened, and we reach the deck. The wind is

contrary; we remain, drifting on our anchors, exposed every instant to shipwreck, if the prodigious motion of the billows succeeds in breaking them. We pass the hours in physical and mental anguish amid this frightful rolling. During the evening and the night the wind whistles, like the shrill pipings of an organ, amongst the masts and rigging; the vessel bounds like a bull striking the earth with his horns; the bowsprit plunges into the sea, and seems about to be altogether engulfed each time that the waves lift up the stern; we hear the cries of Arab sailors from some other vessels, which have brought poor pilgrims to Jerusalem. These small craft, some of them loaded with 200 or 300 souls, are striving to beat up against the wind to avoid the coast; they pass close by us; the women utter shrieks, and stretch out their hands to us; huge billows intervene, and carry them to a distance. Many of these vessels succeed in getting off the coast, two are cast on the rocks in the roadstead on the Gaza side; our anchors snap, and we are driven towards the reef in the inner harbour, but the captain throws out another anchor. The wind moderates, and becomes more favourable for us; we sail towards the Gulf of Damietta in a grey hazy atmosphere; all sight of land is lost. During the day we make good way; the sea continues calm, but the portents of a storm attract the attention of the captain and mate. It bursts at sunset; the wind increases with every hour, the waves become more and more mountainous; the ship creaks and labours, the ropes whistle, and vibrate in the gusts like fibres of metal; their shrill and plaintive echoes resemble the lamentations of the Greek women at the funerals of their dead. The sails are reefed, the vessel rolls from one abyss to another, and, as it heaves on its side, the masts seem to fall into the sea like uprooted trees, and the cleaved wave spouts up and washes the deck. Every one, excepting the crew and myself, has gone below; we hear the moanings of the sufferers from sickness, and the rolling of the trunks and furniture clashing against the sides of the cabin. The brig itself, in spite of its strong joists, and the enormous beams which cross from one side of the hull to the other, cracks as if about to part. The blows of the sea upon the stern resound like the reports of cannon; at two in the morning the tempest increases in fury; I tie myself with a rope to the mainmast, to prevent myself being lifted from my feet and washed overboard, when the deck lurches over almost perpendicularly. Wrapped up in my mantle, I survey the sublime spectacle; I descend, from time to time, down the gangway to reassure my wife, stretched in her hammock. The mate, in the midst of this frightful hurricane, quits the deck occasionally to visit the different cabins, and carry succour to the inmates as their occasions require—a man of iron nerve for danger, and of womanish heart for pity. The whole night is passed in this turmoil.

The rising of the sun, which casts a more pale glimmering through the mingled waves and clouds, far from lessening the force of the wind, gives it additional impetus. As far as the eye can carry, we see mountains of foaming water advancing one behind the other. Whilst they are passing, the brig is knocked about in every direction; beaten down by one, lifted up by another; hurled this way by one wave, stopped by another which throws it in a contrary direction, it is tossed first on one side, then on the other; the bow dips in first, as if diving head foremost into a gulf, whilst the wave, which strikes upon the poop, sweeps it from one end to the other. From time to time it is lifted up; the sea, knocked down by the blast, seems to have wave no longer, and to be but a field of whirling foam, or plains between enormous hills, which give the mast a momentary rest; but in a few moments we return to the region of billows, and are rolled afresh from precipice to precipice.

Amid these horrible alternations the day passes away. The captain calls me to a consultation: the coasts of Egypt are low, and we may be cast upon them without seeing them; the coasts of Syria are without safe an-

chorage or harbours; we must submit either to put the sails aback, and heave-to in the midst of this sea, or go before the wind, which blows towards Cyprus. There we should have a roadstead and an asylum, but we are more than eighty leagues from it. However, I give my voice for Cyprus, and the helm is instantly turned; the wind drives us nine knots an hour, but the sea does not fall. A few spoonfuls of cold broth refresh my wife and my companions, who are still extended in their hammocks. I myself eat a morsel of biseuit, and smoke a pipe with the captain and mate, always keeping my original position on deck, near the binnacle, and my hands passed through the ropes to sustain myself against the strokes of the sea. Then comes night, still more terrible; the clouds weigh upon the sea, the whole horizon is torn with lightning, and all is on fire around us. The thunderbolt seems to stream from the crests of the waves confounded with the clouds. Thrice it falls close upon us; once, at a moment when the brig is thrown upon her side by a colossal wave, the yards dip, the masts striking the water, and the spray, which spouts from the concussion, springing like a mantle of fire torn in shreds, which the wind disperses in coils of flame. The whole crew utters an involuntary shout; we seem in the crater of a volcano; the tempestuous effect is the most admirable that I witnessed during this long night. For nine hours the thunder roared without intermission around us; every minute we think the masts are on fire, about to fall upon us, and wrap the vessel in a conflagration.

In the morning the sky is less loaded, but the sea resembles boiling lava; the wind, which is somewhat abated, and no longer sustains the vessel, renders the pitching more tremendous. We must be thirty leagues from the isle of Cyprus. At eleven o'clock, we get a glimpse of land, which grows every hour more distinct; it is Limasol, one of the ports of the island. We put on a press of canvass, to get, as soon as possible, under lee of the shore; as we approach, the sea becomes less boisterous; we sail along the coast at two leagues' offing, and make for the roads of Larnaca, where we already perceive the masts of a great number of ships which have sought shelter like ourselves; the wind again gets up, and drives us there in a few minutes, with such force, that we are afraid of snapping the cable in casting anchor. At last the anchor falls, trails a few fathoms, and holds. The swell is still heavy, but its waves rock us without peril. I see once more the flag-posts of the European consuls in Cyprus, and the terrace of the French consulate, whence our friend M. Bottu gives us signals of recognition. The whole party remains on board; my wife could not encounter, without agonising recollections, that amiable and happy family, in which she had, herself, then so happy, received hospitality fifteen months before.

I go ashore with the captain. I receive from M. and Madame Bottu, and Messieurs Perthier and Guillois, two young Frenchmen attached to the consulate, the touching exhibition of good-will and friendship which I expected from them. I visit M. Mathei, a Greek banker, to whom I am recommended; we send provisions of all sorts to the brig; M. Mathei adds a present of Cyprian wine and Syrian sheep. Whilst I take a walk round the environs of the town with M. Bottu, the lashed hurricane recommences; all communication with the ships in the roadstead is cut off; the waves dash over the quays, and throw their froth to the very windows of the houses. I pass a mournful evening and night on the terrace, or at the window of my room in the French consulate, observing the brig which contains my wife tossing in the billows, fearful every instant that she may part from her anchors, and be cast on the reefs, with all that remains to me of happiness in the world.

At length, by the following evening, the sea is calm; we reach the brig, and pass three hours in the roads, waiting for a fair wind, and in conversation with M. Mathei and M. Bottu. This young and amiable consul was, of all the French agents in the East, he who welcomed his countrymen with the greatest cordiality, and

did greatest honour to his nation. I bear a weight of gratitude and a true friendly regard in the remembrance of his two receptions. He was happy, surrounded by a wife dear to his heart, and by children who constituted his whole happiness. I learnt that death had struck him a few days after our interview; his employment was the only fortune of his family, and this fortune he devoted to his consular duties. His poor widow and lovely children are now at the mercy of France, to which he did so much credit in all his appointments. May France think of them when she remembers him!

April 30.—Set sail; variable breezes; three days taken up in doubling the western point of the island, tacking in with the land. Mount Olympus, and Paphos, and Amathonte, in sight; the appearance of the coasts and mountains of Cyprus, is perfectly ravishing from this side. This island would form the finest colony of Asia Minor; it has only 30,000 inhabitants, whilst it might support and enrich millions. Every where cultivable and fruitful, well wooded and watered, with roadsteads and natural harbours on all its coasts: situated between Syria, Caramania, the Archipelago, Egypt, and the coasts of Europe, it might be the garden of the world.

May 3.—In the morning perceived the first peaks of Caramania; Mount Taurus in the distance, its crests indented and covered with snow, like the Alps from Lyons; the wind soft and changeable; the nights effulgent with stars. Entered during the night into the Gulf of Satalie; the appearance of this gulf resembles an inward sea; the wind is hushed; the vessel deeps as on a lake. On whatever side the look is turned, it falls on the mountainous end of the gulf: ranges of mountains, of all forms and heights, stretch one behind the other, occasionally leaving between their unequal peaks high valleys, where the silvery light of the moon floats; white vapours cling upon their flanks, and their crests are wreathed in a pale purple mist. Behind, the angular summits of Taurus rise with his fangs of snow; low and wooded capes project at intervals into the sea. Small little islets, like vessels at anchor, lie detached, here and there, from the shores. A profound silence reigns, both on sea and land; we hear only the noise of the dolphins as they leap, from time to time, from the bosom of the water, and frisk like lambskins on the greenward. The unbroken waves, veined with gold and silver tints, appear grooved like Ionian columns stretched on the ground; the brig experiences not the gentlest oscillation. At midnight a land-breeze springs up, which drives us slowly from the gulf, and bears us along the coasts of Asia Minor, as far as the height of Castelrozzo; we enter all the gulfs, and almost touch the land. The ruins of this region, which formed several kingdoms—Pontus, Cappadocia, and Bithynia—now empty and deserted, stand out upon the promontories; the valleys and the plains are covered with forests, where the Turcomans come and pitch their tents during winter; in summer, all is solitary, except some points of the coast, such as Tarsous, Satalie, Castelrozzo, and Marmorizza, in the Gulf of Maeri.

May.—The current, which sets in along the coast of Caramania, drives us towards the extremity of that country and the mouth of the Gulf of Maeri. During the night we tack out to sea, to get near the Isle of Rhodes; the captain, fearing the proximity of the Asian coast, in the west wind which is getting up, pushes out to the open sea: we awaken almost in sight of Rhodes. We meet not far from us our consort, the *Alceste*; the calm prevents us nearing her, during the whole day; in the evening, the wind freshens, and carries us to the Gulf of Marmorizza; at midnight, the land-breeze returns, and at daylight we enter the harbour of Rhodes.

We pass three days in rambling over the environs of Rhodes; there are delightful spots on the flanks of the mountain, looking towards the Archipelago. After walking two hours along the beach, I enter into a valley shaded with beautiful trees, and watered by a small rivulet. Following the banks of the stream, fringed with

laurel-roses, I arrive at a small table-land, which forms the last gradation of the valley. There is here a cottage inhabited by an impoverished Greek family, and almost entirely covered with the branches of figs and oranges. In the garden are the ruins of a small temple, dedicated to the nymphs, a grotto, and some scattered columns and capitals, half concealed by ivy and shrubs, upon a green bank 200 or 300 feet wide, with a spring, and two or three sycamores. One of these trees alone over-shadows the whole bank: it is the sacred tree of the island; the Turks respect it; and the unfortunate Greek peasant, having one day cut off a branch, underwent the bastinado, by orders of the pacha. It is false that the Turks injure nature or works of art; they let every thing alone; and their only mode of ruining is by never improving. Above the bank and the sycamores, the hills, which rise perpendicularly, are covered with clumps of firs, and riddled with small torrents, which work ravines in their sides; and finally the high mountains of the island command and overshadow the hills, the green bank, and the spring.

From the margin of the fountain where I am lying, I can see, through the branches of the firs and sycamores, the sea of the Archipelago of Asia, which resembles a lake studded with islands, and also the deep gulfs which lie embosomed between the lofty and sombre mountains of Maeri, all crowned with snowy battlements. I hear nothing but the bubbling of the spring, the rustling of the leaves, the flight of a nightingale, alarmed by my presence, and the plaintive singing of the Greek peasant's wife, who is rocking her child on the roof of the cottage. How delightful I should have found this spot six months ago!

In a path on the high mountains of Rhodes, I encounter a Cyprian chief, dressed in the European fashion, but wearing the Greek bonnet, and a long white beard. I recognise him; his name is Thesens; he is nephew of the patriarch of Cyprus, and had distinguished himself in the war of independence. Having returned to Cyprus after the pacification of the Morea, his reputation, spirit, and activity, attracted the Greek population of Cyprus to him. At the time of the rising, which had just taken place in the island, the peasants in the mountains ranged themselves under his orders; he employed his influence to pacify them; and after having, in concert with M. Bottu, French consul, obtained the redress of some grievances, he dispersed his troop, and took refuge in the French consulate, to escape the vengeance of the Turks. A Greek vessel has cast him on the coast of Rhodes, where he is not safe; I offer him a berth in one of my brigs, which he accepts with alacrity; I will transport him to Constantinople, Greece, or Europe, according to his desire. He is a man who has continually sported his life and fortune with fate; a man of wonderful spirit and audacity, speaking all languages, knowing all countries, possessing an inexhaustible fund of interesting topics, and equally prompt in action as in thought; one of those men whose impulse is from nature, and who soar, like birds in a tempest, with the tumult of revolutions, and subside with them. Nature casts few minds in this mould. Men of such a stamp are generally unfortunate; they are feared and persecuted; they would be admirable instruments if properly employed.

I send a boat to Marmorizza, with a young Greek, who will wait there for my horses, and give orders to my sons to join me at Constantinople. We determine upon going there by sea, visiting the islands on the Asiatic coast, and the shores of the continent.

Set sail at midnight with a light breeze. Doubled Cape Krio on the evening of the first day; a delightful and calm navigation among the islands of Piscopia, Nisyra, and the enchanting Cos, the country of Esculapius. After Rhodes, Cos appears to me the most smiling and graceful island in the Archipelago. Charming villages, shaded with beautiful plane-trees, line its shores, and the town is picturesque, and contains elegant structures. We got bewildered with our two brigs in a labyrinth of small uninhabited islands, covered to the water's edge with meadows of high grass, and beautiful rivulets

running through them ; in almost all of them are small bays, in which ships may anchor in safety. What charming abodes for men who complain of wanting room in Europe ! They possess the climate and fertility of Rhodes and Cos ; an immense continent is at a few leagues' distance. We make endless tacks between the mainland and these islands ; we see the sun glittering on the great ruins of the Greek and Roman towns of Asia Minor. The following day we awake in the Straits of Samos, between that island and Ikaria ; the high mountain, which almost forms of itself the island of Samos, is above our heads, covered with rocks and fir-woods ; we perceive women and children in the midst of these rocks. The population of Samos, at this moment in arms against the Turks, has sent the women for refuge upon the mountain, whilst the men are in the town and on the coasts, ready for action. Samos is like a mountain of Lake Lucerne, illumined by the sky of Asia ; it almost touches the mainland at its base ; a narrow channel is all we can see separating them. The wind carries us into the Gulf of Scala Nova, not far from the ruins of Ephesus ; in the morning we enter the channel of Scio, and anchor in the road of Telesmè, celebrated for the destruction of the Ottoman fleet by Orlof. The delightful island of Scio stretches like a verdant hill on the other side of a large stream ; its whitened houses, towns, and villages, grouped on the unbragous slopes of its heights, gleam amid oranges and vine-leaves, all bespeaking recent prosperity, and a numerous population. The Turkish sway, even with its servitude, had not been able to extinguish the active, industrious, commercial, and cultivating genius of the Greek inhabitants of these beautiful islands. I know nothing in Europe which presents an appearance of greater abundance than Scio—it is a garden sixty leagues in circuit.

We pass a day strolling amidst the ruins and mineral waters of Telesmè.

The sea is still, and we set sail for Smyrna ; a day is occupied in gliding gently along the coast of Scio with a variable breeze ; the woods come down even to the sea ; the gulfs have all their fortified towns, and their harbours filled with small craft ; the least bay has its village ; an innumerable crowd of tiny sails flutter along the shores, bearing Greek mothers and daughters to the churches. On all the acclivities, in all the hill gorges, we see a church or village glittering ; we double the point of the island, and fall in with a wind which assists us into the Gulf of Smyrna. Up to the fall of night, we enjoy the prospect of the beautiful forests and large villages which line the western shore of the gulf. In the night we are becalmed not far from the isles of Vourla, where we see the fires of the French fleet glimmering, which has been lying at anchor there for the last six months. In the morning we descri Smyrna at the bottom of the gulf, resting against an immense hill of cypresses ; high embattled walls crown the upper part of the town, and finely-wooded fields stretch on the left as far as the mountains. There flows the river Mèlius ; recollections of Homer hover on all the shores of Smyrna ; I search with my eyes for that tree on the banks of the then unknown river, where the poor slave deposited her offspring between the reeds—that infant destined to cover, with his own eternal renown, the name of the river, the continent, and the islands. That poet, whom Heaven gave to earth, serves as an image to us of both sacred and profane antiquity ; he was abandoned at his birth on the edge of a river, as the Moses of poetry ; he lived in misery and blindness like those incarnate deities of India, who traversed the world in the habits of mendicants, and were not recognised for gods until their pilgrimage was over. Modern erudition affects to discover a type, and not a man, in Homer ; it is one of these thousand learned paradoxes with which men strive to combat the evidence of internal instinct. To me, Homer is one single individual, a man who has throughout an identical tone of thought, the same emotions of the heart, and similar figures of speech ; the admission of a race of Homers is more difficult to me than the admission of a race of giants. Nature does not create her prodigies in a series ; she

made Homer, and defies all ages to produce so perfect a concentration of reason, philosophy, sensibility, and genius.

I landed at Smyrna, and went round the town and surrounding country, with M. Salzaui, a banker and merchant at Smyrna, a man equally charitable, amiable, and well informed. I intruded upon his goodness for three days, returning every night to sleep on board the brig. Smyrna is not what we expect to see an oriental city ; it is Marseilles on the coast of Asia Minor. The European consuls and merchants lead in their largo and elegant counting-houses a Parisian or London life. The view of the gulf and city, from the height clothed with cypresses, is quite charming ; and on descending from the mountain, we discover on the banks of the river, which I love to take for the Mèlius, a delightful spot not far from one of the gates of the town, where there is a bridge for the caravans. The river is a limpid stream gliding under the calm canopy of sycamores and cypresses ; we seat ourselves on its banks, and Turks bring us pipes and coffee. If these waters heard the first screams of Homer, I delight in hearing them softly murmur amongst the roots of the trees ; I lift them to my lips, and I bathe with them my heated brow. May there a man arise in the western world, capable of composing the epopée of his history, his aspirations, his divine genius ! Such a poem will be as the sepulchre of past ages, where the future may come to venerate extinct traditions, and eternise by its adoration the great acts and thoughts of humanity ; he who performs it engraves his name on the pedestal of the statue which he erects to human nature, and he lives in all the images, with the ideas of which he has filled the world.

This evening I paid a visit to an old man, who lives alone, with two Greek servants, in a small house on the quay of Smyrna ; the staircase, vestibule, and rooms, are full of fragments of sculpture, of plans in relief of Athens, and pieces of marble and porphyry. It is M. Fauvel, our old consul in Greece. Driven from Athens, which had become his country, and whose dust he had all his life been collecting, with filial love, to rear its statue for the world, he now lives in poverty and obscurity at Smyrna ; he has carried his gods with him, and renders them his homage at all hours. M. de Chateaubriand saw him in his youth, happy amid the admirable ruins of the Parthenon ; I saw him in old age and exile, crushed by the ingratitude of men, but firm and gay in his misfortunes, and full of that natural philosophy which enables men to sustain adversity who have their resources in the heart. I passed an hour in delightful forgetfulness, listening to his agreeable chit-chat.

I met at Smyrna a young man of talent whom I had known in Italy, M. Deschaamps, editor of the Smyrna Journal. The lingering remains of Saint-Simonism had been flung by the tempest to Smyrna, reduced to the last extremity, but supporting their reverses with the resignation and firmness of strong conviction. I received on board two remarkable letters from them. We ought not to judge of new ideas by the contempt they inspire at the time ; all great conceptions are received as aliens in the world ; Saint-Simonism has something true, great, and fruitful in it—the application of Christianity to political society, the code of human fraternity. In this point of view I am a Saint-Simonian ; it is not the doctrine that was wrong in this eclipsed but not extinguished sect ; nor was there a want of disciples, but what was needed, in my opinion, was a chief, a master, a regulator. I have no doubt if a man of genius and virtue, a man combining religion and policy with just and extended views, had been placed at the head of this new-born idea, he would have led it into a potent reality. Times of confusion in ideas are favourable seasons for the growth of vigorous and novel thoughts ; society, in the eyes of the philosopher, is in the disorder of a retreat, without direction, aim, or leader ; it is reduced to the instinct of self-preservation. A religious, moral, social, and political sect, possessing a symbol, a rallying word, a defined purpose, a leader, and a spirit, and marching

in compact array straight onwards through these disordered ranks, would inevitably prevail. But it must conduce to the safety and not the ruin of society; attack in it only what is injurious and not what is beneficial; bring back religion to reason and love, and harmonise the science of government, Christian brotherhood, and the system of property, with universal clarity and utility, its only titles and foundations. A legislator was wanting to these men, ardent in zeal, and hungering for an object of faith, but to whom the absurdest doctrines were thrown. The organisers of Saint-Simonism took for their first motto, "War to the knife between us and the systems of family, property, and religion!" They deserved to perish. The world is not to be conquered by the strength of a phrase; it may be converted, moved, worked, and changed; as long as an idea is not practical, it is unfit to be presented to the social community; mankind proceed from the known to the unknown, but never from the known to the ridiculous. It will be taken as the underwork for great revolutions; we see signs on earth and in the heavens; the Saint-Simonians have been one of those agencies, they will be dissolved as a body, and will become, at a later date, the generals and soldiers of the new army.*

May 15.—Leave the Gulf of Smyrna with crowded sails; reach the height of Vourla; in making a tack at the mouth of the gulf, the brig strikes a sand-bank, through the bad seamanship of the Greek pilot; the vessel receives a jerk, which tumbles down the mast, and we remain aground three leagues from land; the rising waves break upon the ship's sides, and we all come upon deck. It is a moment of calm and solemn anxiety, that in which so many beings await the uncertain result of the manœuvres which are put in force; a perfect silence reigns; there is no mark of terror; man is great in great crises! After some minutes spent in useless efforts, the wind seconds our exertions, and backs the keel; the brig is disengaged, and no leak is discerned; we launch into the open sea, the isle of Mitylene our right.

A beautiful day; we draw near the channel which divides the island from the continent; but the wind slackens, the clouds collect on the sea, and at the fall of day the wind bursts from these clouds with lightning. Then comes a furious tempest, with total darkness; the two brigs hang out signals of recognition, and make for the road of Foglieri, the ancient Phœcea, between the rocks which form the northern point of the Gulf of Smyrna. In two hours the force of the wind propels us ten leagues along the coast; every moment the thunder falls and grows on the waves; the sky, the sea, and the echoing rocks of the coast, are illuminated by flashes of lightning, which supply the want of day, and show us our course from time to time. The two brigs almost touch, and we tremble lest they strike together. At last a manœuvre, a bold one at

night-time, sets us in the narrow mouth of the road of Phœcea; we hear on both sides of us the roar of the waves breaking on the rocks; a wrong turn of the rudder would cast us on them in tatters; we are all on the deck mute, and breathlessly expecting our fate to be determined; we cannot see our own masts, the night is so dark. In a moment we feel the brig gliding in smooth water; a few lights are glittering around us on the edges of the basin where we had most fortunately entered, and we cast out our anchor, without knowing in what soundings. The wind roared all night in our masts and yards as if it would carry them away; but the sea was motionless.

We are in the delightful basin of the ancient Phœcea, half a league in circuit, hollowed out like a circular esplanade among the graceful hills covered with small houses painted red, cottages under olive-trees, gardens, creeping vines, and, above all, groves of magnificent cypresses, at the foot of which were sparkling the white tombs of the Turkish cemeteries. We go ashore, and visit the ruins of the city which gave birth to Mitylene. We are received with welcome and politeness in two Turkish houses, and pass the day in their orange gardens. The sea grows calm on the third day, and we leave at midnight the natural harbour of Phœcea.

May 17.—We have followed the channel of Mitylene, on which stood Lesbos, the whole day. A poetical reminiscence of the only woman of antiquity whose voice has had power to penetrate ages. A few verses of Sappho remain, but they are sufficient to establish her as a genius of the first order, as a fragment of the arm, or the trunk of a figure by Phidias, reveals to us the entire statue. The heart which has inspired the stanzas of Sappho must have been a very abyss of passion and imagery. The Isle of Lesbos is still more beautiful in my eyes than that of Scio. The groups of high and verdant mountains, strewed with firs, are more elevated and more picturesquely clustered. The sea creeps more profoundly into its wide internal gulf; the crests of its hills, which hang over the sea, and look upon Asia so nearly, are more deserted and inaccessible. Instead of these numerous villages, scattered in the gardens of Scio, we see but rarely the smoke from a Greek cottage, curling among the tops of the chestnuts and cypresses, and an occasional shepherd, on the point of a rock, guarding flocks of white goats. In the evening we double the northern extremity of Mitylene with a continually fair wind, and we perceive on the horizon before us, in the roseate mist of the sea, two dark spots, Lemnos and Tenedos.

It is midnight; the sea is untroubled as a mirror; the brig glides like a motionless shadow on its resplendent surface. Tenedos rises from the waves on our left, and intercepts the expanse of the waters; on our right, and quite near to us, the low and undulating shore of the plain of Troy stretches like a black reef. The full moon, which rises on the summit of Mount Ida, spotted with snow, sheds a serene and dubious light on the peaks of the mountain, on the hills, and on the plain; and then falls upon the sea, making it glitter to the hull of our vessel, like a reflux at low water, where shadows may not cast themselves. We distinguish the *tumuli*, or small conical hills, which tradition assigns as the tombs of Patroclus and Hector. The large red moon, grazing the undulation of the mountains, resembles the bloody buckler of Achilles. There are no lights visible on the whole coast, except a distant fire, kindled by the shepherds, on a hill-side of Ida; no noise but the flapping of the sail in the absence of wind, which the shaking of the masts causes to resound, from time to time, against the mainyard; all seems dead as the past in this sad and silent scene. Leaning on the shrouds of the vessel, I see these mountains, ruins, and tombs, spring, like shades evoked from an extinguished world, from out the bosom of the sea, with its vaporous wreaths and indecisive outlines, amid the reposing and tranquil rays of the star of night, and vanish as it sinks behind the tops of other mountains. It is another beautiful page of the Homeric poem—it is the ending of every history and every poem—unrecognised tombs,

* [Saint-Simonism originated in the fanatical reveries of the late Claude Henri Comte de Saint : (born 1769, a French nobleman) : his views of the social condition of mankind akin to those which have occasionally been propagated in England. He attempted to set on foot what he called the New Christianity, or the principle of a perfect and holy peace throughout the social organization. Doctrinally, the principle was simply that of practical Christianity, and so far unobjectionable; but it was unfortunately associated with peculiar political dogmas, and also the project of a new and general distribution of property. Society was to be formed only of priests, savans or learned men, and labourers, and the government was to be composed of the chiefs of these classes. Intellectual capacity was to be the only ground of claim for a share of the common property, and all property, at the death of the owner, was to revert to the common stock. Children were to be educated to a certain point, and then each was to become a priest, a savan, or a labourer, according to the talents he seemed to possess, and to receive a share of property accordingly. Such were some of the visionary tenets of the Saint-Simonians, who for years afflicted France with their wild schemes of regeneration. They latterly quarrelled among themselves, and, as might have been expected, have dwindled into insignificance and contempt.]

ruins of no certain appellation, a naked and gloomy land, lighted confusedly by the immortal stars—and new spectators pass in indifference before these shores, and repeat, for the millionth time, the epitaph of all things earthly: Here lies an empire, a town, a people, or a hero!—God alone is great!—and the thought which seeks and adores him, is alone imperishable.

I feel no desire to visit more nearly, and by daylight, the doubtful relics of the ruins of Troy. I like better this nocturnal aspect, which permits the thought to repeople these deserts, illumined only by the pale torch of the moon and the poetry of Homer. Besides, what signify to me Troy, and its gods and heroes? This book of the heroic world is closed for ever.

The land-breeze begins to rise; we take advantage of it to draw nearer to the Dardanelles. Already several large ships, seeking, like ourselves, this difficult strait, approach us; their wide greyish sails float gently and in silence between our brig and Tenedos. I go below, and compose myself to sleep.

May 13.—I awake at daybreak. I hear the quick tracking of the vessel, and the rippling of the waves, sounding like the songs of birds, around the sides of the brig; I open the shutter and see the castles of the Dardanelles, with their white walls, their towers, and their wide openings for cannon, on a chain of low and rounded hills. The channel is scarcely a league broad in this place, and it winds like a beautiful river between the coast of Asia and Europe, which are perfectly similar in appearance. The castles shut up this sea like the two folds of a door, but in the present state of Europe and Turkey it is easy to force a passage by sea, or to make a declaration, and take the forts in the rear; the passage of the Dardanelles is impregnable only when guarded by the Russians.

The rapidity of the current drives us like an arrow past Gallipoli, and the villages which line the channel; we see the isles of the Sea of Marmora frowning in front of us. We skirt the European coast for two days and nights, retarded by northerly winds. In the morning we perceive the Isles of the Princes at the bottom of the Sea of Marmora, in the Gulf of Nicæum, and on our left the Castle of the Seven Towers, and the aerial peaks of the innumerable minarets of Constantinople, which stretch over the seven hills of the city. Every tack nearer we discover some new object. At this first appearance of Constantinople, I experienced a painful emotion of surprise and disappointment. "What?" said I to myself, "are these the seas, the shores, the marvellous town, for which the masters of the world abandoned Rome and the coasts of Naples? Is that the capital of the world, seated on Europe and on Asia, for which all conquering nations have fought by turns, as the symbol of supremacy in the earth? Is that the town which painters and poets imagine as the queen of cities, hovering upon its hills and double sea, girt by its gulfs, its towers, its mountains, and enclosing all the treasures of nature and of Eastern luxury? Is this what they compare to the Gulf of Naples, hollowed into a vast amphitheatre, and bearing in its bosom a city glittering with whiteness?—with Vesuvius losing its gilded crest in clouds of smoke and purple—the forests of Castellammare, dipping their sable foliage into the blue sea, and the Isles of Procida and Ischia, with their volcanic summits and their flanks, yellowed with leafy vines, and whitened with villas, closing the immense bay, like gigantic moles thrown out by God himself at the mouth of that harbour?"

I see nothing to compare with that spectacle, which will ever be impressed on my vision. In fact, it is true on a lovely and delightful sea, but the shores are flat or rise to a monotonous and rounded hills—the shores of the Thracian Olympus, which blanch the horizon, ... but a white cloud in the sky, and are not near enough to impart solemnity to the landscape. At the bottom of the gulf, I see only the same hills rounded at the same level, without rocks, bays, or slopes, and Constantinople, which the pilot points to with his finger, is but a white and circumscribed town, on an extensive eminence on the European coast. Was it worth the trouble to come

so far to be thus disenchanted? I would look no longer. But the endless tacks of the vessel brought us sensibly nearer; we grazed the castle of Seven Towers, an immense block of the harsh style of the middle ages, which flanks towards the sea the angle of the Greek walls of the ancient Byzantium, and we let go our anchor under the houses of Stamboul, in the Sea of Marmora, in the midst of a fleet of ships and boats, kept, like ourselves, out of the harbour by the violence of the north wind.

It was five o'clock in the afternoon, the sky was serene, and the sun brilliant; I began to lose my contempt for Constantinople. The outer walls of this part of the city, picturesquely built from the remains of ancient walls, and surmounted by gardens, kiosks, and small houses of red-painted wood, formed the first feature in the picture; above, house-terraces without number

pyramids like laudis, interspersed with the branches of orange-trees and with the sharp and sable points of cypresses; yet higher, seven or eight great mosques crowned the hill, and, flanked by their open-sculptured minarets and Moorish colonnades, reared into the air their gilded domes, reddened by the refraction of the sun; the walls of these mosques, painted a delicate blue, and the leaden coverings of the cupolas, which rose around their circuit, gave to them the appearance and transparent gloss of monuments of porcelain. Cypress, centuries old, accompanied these domes with their motionless and gloomy tops, and the variously-tinted paintings of the houses of the city, made the vast hill glitter with all the colours of a garden of flowers. No noise issued from the streets, no grating of the innumerable windows was opened, no movement bespoke the dwelling-place of so great a multitude of people; all appeared sunk in sleep under the burning heat of the sun; the gulf alone, ploughed on all sides by sails of all forms and proportions, gave signs of life. We saw every instant, turning out of the golden horn (the opening of the Bosphorus), from the real harbour of Constantinople, vessels in full sail, which passed alongside of us, sailing towards the Dardanelles; but we could not perceive the mouth of the Bosphorus, nor even recognise its position. We dined on deck, in front of this magic spectacle. Turkish enclaves (little boats) came to ask us questions, and sell us provisions; the boatmen told us that there were scarcely any remains of the plague. I sent my letters to the city, and at seven o'clock, M. Truqui, Sardinian consul-general, accompanied by the officers of his legation, came to pay us a visit, and offer us hospitality in his house at Pera. There was no possibility of procuring a lodging in the town, which had suffered from a recent conflagration. The obliging cordiality of M. Truqui, and the favourable impression which he made upon us at first sight, induced us to accept his invitation. The wind still continuing foul, the brig could not weigh anchor this evening, and we slept on board.

CONSTANTINOPLE.

May 20.—At five in the morning I am on deck; the captain has a boat lowered, I get into it with him, and we proceed towards the entrance of the Bosphorus, skirting the walls of Constantinople, which are washed by the sea. After half an hour's sail through a multitude of ships at anchor, we reach the walls of the Seraglio, which form a continuation with those of the city, and compose, at the extremity of the hill on which Constantinople stands, the angle separating the Sea of Marmora from the channel of the Bosphorus and the Golden Horn, or great inner port of Constantinople. It is here that God and man, nature and art, have placed or created in concert the most wonderful view which the human eye can contemplate on earth; I uttered an exclamation of involuntary admiration, and forgot for ever the Gulf of Naples and all its enchantments: comparing any thing to this magnificent and superb prospect, taken as a whole, is to outrage the reason!

The walls which sustain the circular terraces of the immense gardens of the grand Seraglio, were few

paces from us on the left, separated from the sea by a narrow pavement of stone slabs which the waves unceasingly lash, and on which the perpetual current of the Bosphorus forms murmuring ripples, blue as the waters of the Rhone at Geneva; these terraces, which rise by insensible slopes to the palace of the Sultan, the gilded domes of which we see through the gigantic stems of the planes and cypresses, are themselves planted with cypresses and enormous planes, whose trunks soar above the walls, and their branches overleaping the gardens, hang over the sea in leafy canopies, and shade the caïques beneath them, as the rowers linger at intervals below the umbrageous shelter. These groups of trees are divided at certain distances by palaces, pavilions, kiosks, sculptured and gilded gates, opening on the sea, or batteries of brass and bronzed cannon, of fantastic and antique shapes. The grated windows of these marine palaces, which form part of the Seraglio, look upon the waves, and we can distinguish through the blinds the chandeliers and decorations of the ceilings. At every step, elegant Moorish fountains encrusted in the walls of the Seraglio, fall from the garden terraces, and murmur in marble basins for passengers to drink from; a few Turkish soldiers are lying near the fountains, and dogs without owners are wandering along the quay, whilst some are crouched in the canons of enormous calibre.

The farther the boat crept along the walls, the prospect before us expanded, the Asiatic coast drew nearer; and the mouth of the Bosphorus began to be traced by the eye, between hills of darkened verdure on the one side, and on the other seeming painted with all the hues of the rainbow. Here we stopped again to admire. The smiling coast of Asia, distant from us about a mile, stood out on our right all broken by broad and lofty hills, whose summits were sable forests with tapering tops, their flanks, fields encircled by rows of trees and sprinkled with houses painted red, and the sides between them, perpendicular ravines carpeted with verdant plants and sycamores with branches dipping into the water. At a greater distance, the hills still higher, then sank again into green slopes, and formed a wide projecting tongue, on which was placed a seemingly large town; it was Scutari, with its huge white barracks, like a royal palace, its mosques surrounded with their glittering minarets, its quays and bays, lined with houses, bazars, and caïques, lying under the shade of vine-arbours or plane-trees, and the sombre and deep forest of cypresses which crown the town, through whose branches shone, as if with a monarcal lustre, the countless white monuments of the Turkish burial-grounds. Beyond the point of Scutari, which is terminated by a small islet bearing a Turkish chapel, which is called *The Tomb of the young Maiden*, the Bosphorus, like a river between high banks, opened and seemed to shrink between the sombre mountains, whose projecting and retiring angles, ravines, and forests, answered each other on the two margins; and at the foot of which we desisted, as far as the eye could reach, an uninterrupted succession of villages, flotillas at anchor or under sail, little harbours, overshadowed by trees, isolated houses, and large palaces with their gardens of roses down to the sea.

A few strokes of the oars brought us in front and to the point of the Golden Horn, whence we enjoyed, at the same time, the view of the Bosphorus, the Sea of Marmora, and finally of the harbour, or rather the internal sea, of Constantinople. There we forgot Marmora, the Asiatic coast, and the Bosphorus, to contemplate with concentrated gaze the basin of the Golden Horn, and the seven cities suspended on the seven hills of Constantinople, all converging towards the arm of the sea, round which stands the unique and incomparable city, at once town, country, sea, harbour, gardens, wooded mountains, deep valleys, a throng of houses, a swarm of vessels and streets, tranquil lakes, and enchanting solitudes—a view such as no pencil could portray but by details, a prospect, where every stroke of the oar brought to the eye and the mind a new appearance, an imposing and diversified impression.

We pulled towards the heights of Galata and Pera; the seraglio was left behind, and grew larger as we removed, when the eye could embrace more completely the vast outlines of its walls, and the aggregation of its banks, its trees, its kiosks, and its palaces. It would of itself form a large town. The banks of the harbour grew higher as we advanced; the water winded like a canal between the flanks of bending mountains, and expanded when we got farther within it. This harbour bears no resemblance to a port; it is rather a wide river, like the Thames, girded on the two sides by hills crowded with houses, and covered, on both its shores, with an interminable tier of vessels, grouped at anchor along the houses. We passed through this countless multitude of vessels, some at anchor, others, already under sail, turning towards the Bosphorus, the Black Sea, or the Sea of Marmora. These vessels were of all builds, of all sizes, and of all flags, from the Arab bark, whose prow springs and rises like the beak of ancient galleys, up to the three-decker, with its sparkling coppered hull. Flocks of Turkish caïques, managed by one or two rowers with silk sleeves—small boats, which serve as carriages in the marine streets of this amphibious town—were winding amongst these huge masses, crossing and knocking against each other, without upsetting, and elbowing each other, like a crowd in public places; and swarms of albatrosses, similar to beautiful white pigeons, arose from the sea at their approach to settle themselves farther off, and erable in the wave. I will not attempt to give any computation of the ships, barques, brigs, schooners, and boats, which lie or sail in the waters of Constantinople, from the mouth of the Bosphorus and the angle of the Seraglio, to the suburb of Eyoub and the delightful valleys of its Sweet Waters. The Thames at London is not to be compared with it. Let it suffice to say, that independently of the Turkish fleet, and the European ships of war, at anchor in the middle of the channel, the two shores of the Golden Horn are covered with vessels, two or three deep, for we could only get occasional glimpses through these lengthened files of bowsprits turned towards the sea, and all vision was lost at the bottom of the hull, which struck into the land, in the thick forest of masts.

We landed at the foot of the quarter of Pera, not far from a handsome barrack for engineers, the covered terraces of which were loaded with canons and their frames. A beautiful Moorish fountain, constructed in the form of an Indian pagoda, with its marble chiselled and painted in glaring colours, cut like bone-lace on a silk bottom, poured its waters in the middle of a small open square. This square was encumbered with bales, merchandise, horses, dogs without owners, and Turks squatted and smoking in the shade. The boatmen of the caïques were seated in great numbers on the brink of the quay, waiting for their masters, or soliciting passengers; they are a fine race of men, and their costume adds to their appearance. They wear white drawers, with folds as wide as those of a petticoat; a sash of crimson silk binds them round the waist; they have on their heads a small Greek bonnet of red wool, topped with a long silken string, hanging behind the head; the neck and breast naked; a large shirt of raw silk, with wide hanging sleeves, covers the shoulders and the arms. Their caïques are narrow canoes, from twenty to thirty feet long, and two or three broad, made of walnut-wood, varnished and glossy as mahogany. The prow of these boats is as sharp as the iron of a lance, and cuts the sea like a knife. The narrow form of these caïques renders them dangerous and uncomfortable for Franks who are not accustomed to them: they upset at the least sway that an unskillful foot imparts to them. It is better to sit down at the bottom of the boat, like the Turks, and take care that the weight of the body is equally distributed between the two sides. They are of different sizes, capable of containing from one to four or eight passengers, but all are of the same build. They may be counted by thousands in the harbours of Constantinople; and independently of those which are, like hackney-coaches, for

the use of the public at all hours, each individual of good circumstances in the town has one of his own, the rowers of which are his domestics. Every man who has to go about the town on business is obliged to cross the sea several times in the day.

On leaving the square, we entered the dirty and populous streets of the Pera bazaar. In almost every respect, except costume, they present the same aspect as the neighbourhood of our town-markets;—wooden stalls, where pies or meat are cooked for the populace; shops for barbers, tobaccoists, vegetable and fruit sellers; a thick and eager crowd in the streets; all the costumes, and all the tongues, of the East assailing the eye and ear; and, beyond all, the barkings of numberless dogs, which fill the squares and the bazaars, and fight amongst themselves for the refuse that is thrown to the doors. From there we entered a long, deserted, and narrow street, which mounts, by a steep acclivity, to the hill of Pera; the grated windows allow not a single peep into the interior of the Turkish houses, which have an appearance of poverty and desertion; at intervals, the green top of a cypress shoots from an enclosure of grey and ruinous walls, and rises immovably into the transparent atmosphere. White and blue pigeons are scattered on the windows and roofs of the houses, and fill the silent streets with their melancholy cooing. At the top of these streets extends the beautiful quarter of Pera, inhabited by the Europeans, ambassadors, and consuls. It is a quarter perfectly resembling a poor small town in the French provinces. There were some handsome palaces of the ambassadors, built on the sloping terraces of Galata; but we can see nothing now but columns stretched on the ground, sides of blackened walls and destroyed gardens; the flames of the fire have devoured all. Pera has neither character, originality, nor beauty; we cannot perceive from its streets, the sea, or the mills, or the gardens of Constantinople; we must mount to the top of the roofs to enjoy the magnificent prospect with which nature and art have environed it.

M. Truqui received us as his children. His house is large, elegant, and delightfully situated; he placed it entirely at our disposal. The richest furniture, the exquisite fare of Europe, the most affectionate solitudes of friendship, the most soothing and amiable society, are substituted for the carpet or mat of the desert, the pilau of the Arab, the roughness and uproar of a maritime life. I was scarcely installed in his house when I received a letter from Admiral Roussin, French ambassador at Constantinople, who had the kindness to offer us hospitality at Therapia. These touching marks of interest and good-will, received from countrymen with whom we are unacquainted, a thousand miles from home, and amidst isolation and misfortune, leave a profound impression on the memory of travellers.

May 21, 22, and 23.—Passed in the unloading of the two brigs, in repose, and in receiving visits from the principal merchants of Pera; in the enjoyment of M. Truqui's intimate friendship, and in the society of himself and his friends; in excursions through Constantinople, and taking a general view of the city; and, finally, in paying a visit to the ambassador at Therapia.

May 23.—When we suddenly quit the ever-varying and stormy scene of the sea, the dark and restless cabin of a brig, the fatiguing roll of the waves; when we feel our footing sure on a friendly soil, surrounded by men, books, and all the comforts of life; when we have before us fields and woods to ramble through, and the whole existence of a land life to resume after a long disuse, we experience an instinctive and physical sense of enjoyment, which never cloy; any land whatever, even the most wild and far away, is like a native country that we have found again. I have experienced this twenty times on disembarking, even for a few hours, on an unknown and desert coast; a rock that shelters from the blast; a tree that gives shade with its stem or its branches; a ray of the sun, which heats the sand on which we are seated; the lizards which crawl between the stones; the insects which buzz around; the bird approaching in distrust, and uttering a shrill

of alarm;—all this, so indifferent to a man dwelling on the land, is an entire world to the wearied navigator who has just been lowered down the side of a ship. But the ship is there swinging in the gulf on the rough swell, to which we must shortly again resort. The sailors are on the yards, engaged in drying or stitching the rent mainsail; the boat which goes, without ceasing, to and fro, between the ship and the shore, scales the waves, and disappears in their foaming hollows; it brings provisions to land, or carries fresh water from the watering place to the vessel; the cabin-boys wash their coloured shirts, and hang them on the mastic-trees on the beach; the captain observes the sky, and awaits the turn of the breeze to recall the passengers by a cannon-shot to their life of misery, darkness, and motion. Although in a hurry to arrive at our destination, we put up secret vows that the opposite wind may not come too quickly, so that another day may be granted us through necessity to enjoy that inward delight which attaches man to the land. We make friends with the coast, and the small ridge of grass or shrubs which stretches between the sea and the rocks; with the spring hidden under the roofs of some old holly-oak; with the weeds and small wild flowers, which the wind is incessantly shaking into the clefts of the ledge, and which we shall never again behold. When the shot of summons issues from the vessel; when the signal flag is hoisted on the mast, and the jolly-boat is dispatched to bring us on board, we could almost weep.

Leaving this nameless corner of the world, where we have but stretched our cramped limbs for a few hours. I have often felt this innate love of man for any relief whatsoever, even on a solitary, unknown, and savage shore.

But here I experience two opposing sensations, the one sweet, the other painful. First, this pleasure which I have just described, of having a firm hold of the land, a bed which no longer gives way and falls to the ground, a floor which no longer throws one unceasingly from

It to wall, room to walk freely about, large windows open or shut at pleasure without fear of being broken in upon by the lashing waves; the rapture of hearing the wind rustling in the curtains without making the house lurch, the sails bellow, the masts creak, or the sailors run on the deck with a deafening clatter. Furthermore, agreeable intercourse with Europe, travellers, merchants, journals, books, all that puts man in communion of idea and life with man—that participation in the general movement of things and thought, from which we have been so long severed; and beyond all, the warm, attentive, and comfortable hospitality, I will say more, the friendship, of our excellent host, M. Truqui, who seems as happy to bestow on us his attentions, anticipating civilities, and all the comforts that he can procure for us, as we ourselves are happy to accept them. Excellent man! A man rarely to be found, who like I have not a second time encountered in my long travelling career! His memory will be ever sweet to me, so often as I shall recall to my mind these times of pilgrimage, and my thoughts will pursue him to the coasts of Asia, or of Africa, where fortune condemns him to conclude his days.

But when we have enjoyed, almost unconsciously, these first ecstasies of a return to land, we are tempted to regret the uncertainty and perpetual agitation of the seafaring life. At least, the thought has not leisure there to fold back upon itself, and to fathom the abysses of woe which death has hollowed in our hearts! Sorrow certainly is inseparable there, but it is every instant interrupted by some reflection which prevents its weight being so overwhelming; the noise and briskness which are around us; the ever-changing appearance of the deck of the vessel and of the sea; the waves which swell or subside; the wind which changes, freshens, or dies away; the sail which require to be trimmed twenty times a day; the sight of the manoeuvres, in which we ourselves are often called upon in rough weather to lend a hand; the thousand accidents of a tempestuous day or night; the pitching, sails carried away, broken furniture rolling in the cabins; the dull irregular strokes

of the sea against the vibrating planks of the berths, where we are striving to sleep; the hurried steps of the men on watch running from one side to another above our heads; the fluttered chirping of the chickens, which the waves are drowning in their coops bound to the foot of the mast; the crowing of the cocks, as they descry the dawn at the end of a night of gloom and storm; the hissing of the cord, when the log is heaved to try the rate of going; the unexpected, unrecognised, fantastic appearance of some savage or graceful coast which was not thought of the evening before, and which we sail along at the rising of the sun, surveying the height of its mountains, or pointing out with our fingers its towns and villages gleaming like heaps of snow amid plantations of firs;—all this interests more or less the mind, gives a little relief to the heart, dissipates grief and blunts agony, whilst the voyage continues; but the whole falls again upon the mind with all its weight, as soon as we have touched the shore, and sleep in a tranquil bed has restored a man to the intensity of his impressions. The heart, which is no longer beguiled by outward objects, finds itself once more face to face with its bruised sentiments, its despairing thoughts, annihilated future! We know not how we shall support the former life, the monotonous, empty life, of towns and society. It is this which I find so acutely now, as to desire an eternal sailing, a voyage without end, with all its chances and distractions, even the most difficult to be endured. Alas! it is what I read in the eyes of my wife, even more than in my own heart. The suffering of a man is nothing to that of a woman, of a mother; a woman lives and dies upon a single thought, a single sentiment; to a woman life consists in possessing a cherished object, death in losing it! Man lives on all, good or bad; God does not kill him at a single stroke.

May 21. I have surrounded myself with the newspapers and pamphlets recently arrived from Europe, which the civility of the French and Austrian ambassadors sends me in profusion. After having read the whole, I am confirm'd in the ideas which I had borne with me from Europe. I see that affairs altogether progress according to the political foresight, which historical and philosophical analogy enables one to exercise as to the course of events in this our age. The commotion of France is subsiding; Europe, uneasy but timid, looks on with jealousy and hatred, but dares not interfere; it feels by instinct, a prophetic instinct, that it might possibly destroy the existing equilibrium by stirring. I never thought there would be war in consequence of the revolution of July; France must have been abandoned to the counsels of moderation, to initiate attack (and France not aggressive); Europe could scarcely have thrown itself with any gaiety of heart into a revolutionary furnace, where it might be scorched whilst attempting to quench. The government of July has merited well of France and Europe from this solitary fact, of having restrained the impatient and blind ardour of the warlike spirit in France, after the three days. Europe and France would have equally suffered. We had no armies, no public spirit, for there is nothing without unanimity; a foreign war would have instantly excited civil war in the south and west of France, and spoliation would have followed on every side. No government could have maintained itself at Paris, under the revolutionary throes of the centre of the Kingdom. Whilst the shreds of armies, torn by a spontaneous patriotism without guide or check, were being swept away on the eastern frontiers, the south, as far as Lyons, would have mounted the white cockade; the west, as far as the Loire, would have been organised once more into Vendean guerillas; the manufacturing populations of Lyons, Rouen, and Paris, exasperated by the misery into which an interruption of their labour must have plunged them, would have induced an explosion in the middle, and poured in undisciplined masses on Paris and the frontiers, choosing from themselves their chiefs of a day, and imposing their caprices as the plans of campaign. Property, commerce, industry, credit, all had perished at the same time; it would have needed violence to have made loans, or collected taxes.

Money concealed, and credit extinguished, despair had urged to resistance, and resistance to spoliation, to murder, and sacrifices to the populace; once entered upon the shout for blood, there had no longer been any issue but anarchy, a dictatorship, or dismemberment. But all this again would have been rendered more complicated by the sudden and spontaneous movement in various parts of Europe; Spain, Italy, Poland, the banks of the Rhine, Belgium, all had taken fire together, or one after the other; the whole of Europe would have been dragged into a fluctuation of insurrections and forcible suppressions, which at every instant must have changed the face of affairs. We should have entered, ill prepared, into another thirty years' war. The genius of civilisation has willed it otherwise. All has occurred as it ought to have done. There will be no fighting until after preparation for the combat, until after the nations have reconnoitred, calculated, passed in review, and ranged themselves in order of battle; the conflict will be regular, and will have a certain and foreseen result; it will not be a skirmish in the dark.

One judges these things better at a distance, because minor details do not impede the observation, and objects present themselves in important masses. It was on this account that the prophets and utterers of oracles lived in solitude, and far removed from the world; they were sages, investigating affairs in their general relations, without having their minds disturbed by the petty passions of the moment. A politician must often withdraw himself from the scene on which the drama of his era is played, if he would judge correctly and anticipate the result. To prophesy is impossible, for knowledge of futurity belongs only to God; but to foresee is possible, for sagacity is one of man's possessions.

I often ask myself where this great movement in minds and affairs, which, taking its rise in France, stirs up the world, and drags all things by force or inclination into its vortex, will end. I am not one of those who see in this excitement the mere excitement itself, that is to say, the tumult and disorder of ideas, or who believe the moral and political world to be in those final convulsions which precede death and decomposition. It is evidently a duplex movement, embracing both decomposition and organisation; the creative spirit is at work as fast as the destructive spirit overthrows; one opinion replaces another, one form is substituted for another; wherever past institutions crumble, future ones, all prepared, rise up behind the ruins; the transition is difficult and rude, as is every change where the passions and interests of men are in strife during the progress, where the social orders and different nations advance with unequal steps, where some obstinately retrograde whilst the mass push onwards. Confusion, tumult, ruin, obscurity, prevail at intervals, but the winds scatter the cloud of dust which conceals the route and the termination, and those who are on the heights distinguish the march of the columns, descry the land of the future, and perceive the sun, scarcely risen, lighting up vast horizons. I hear unceasingly repeated around me, and even here—"Men have no longer any creeds," abandoned to individual reason; there is no longer a common faith in any thing, whether in religion, government, or the social state. Creeds, a common faith—they are a mere broken spring, the whole machine is disarranged; there is only one mode of saving the nations, that of restoring them their creeds." To restore systems, to resuscitate popular dogmas extinct in the consciences of populations, to re-establish what time has overthrown, is pure nonsense; it is to strive against nature and the tendency of things; it is to march in a path opposed to Providence, and the events which are the marks of his step: we can only arrive at a conclusion by following in the way where God leads events and ideas; the course of time never goes back; we may guide ourselves and guide the world in its powerful current, but we can neither stem it nor make it recede.

[The word "creeds" is here to be understood as embracing social and political, as well as religious systems.]

But is it then true that there is no longer either light in the human intellect, or common creed in the minds of nations, or inward and significant faith in the conscience of the human race? It is a belief repeated without being duly weighed; it has no meaning. If the world had no common idea, faith, or creed, it would not be so much in agitation; from nothing comes nothing, mind rears the monument. There is on the contrary a powerful conviction, a fanatical faith, a confused but undefined hope, an ardent love, a common symbol, although not yet digested, which urges, presses, moves, attracts, condenses, and draws to one focus, all the intellectual powers, all the consciences, and all the moral vigour, of this epoch; these revolutions, convulsions, falls of empires, repeated and gigantic movements in all the estates of old Europe; these echoings in America and Asia; this irreflective and resistless impulse, which imparts, in spite of individual inclinations, so much agitation and concentration to collective energies—all this is not an effect without a cause; it has a meaning, a profound and concealed meaning, but one palpable to the eye of the philosopher. It is precisely what you complain of having lost, what you deny in the existing world; it is a common idea, a conviction, a social law; it is a truth which, having involuntarily penetrated into all minds, and, even unknown to themselves, into the minds of the masses, labours to work itself out in events with the force of a divine truth, that is to say, an invincible force. On this occasion it is general ratiocination; words are its organ, the press is its apostle; it spreads itself over the world with the infallibility and intenseness of a new religion; it strives to reproduce in its own image religion, civilisation, society, and legislation, left imperfect or altered in the errors and ignorance of the dark ages they have passed through; it wishes to repose in religion—an only and perfect God for its dogma, eternal morality for its symbol, worship and charity for its rite; in political affairs—humanity above nationality; in legislation—the equality of man, the brotherhood of man, society as a fraternal exchange of reciprocal services and duties, regulated and guaranteed by law—legislation based on Christianity!

It labours for this, and it effects more than that there are no systems, that there is no common faith in the men of these days—the era of Christianity, never was so great an accomplishment in the world with means so weak! A cross and a precept—such are the two instruments of the greatest civilising movements in the world.

May 25.—This evening I seated myself alone under the eypresses of the bank of the Dead, in a splendid moonlight, which was beating on the Sea of Marmora, and even on the violet outlines of Mount Olympus' eternal snows. These eypresses, which overshadow the numberless tombs of the Mussulmans, descending from the heights of Pera to the edge of the sea, are interspersed with pathways more or less steep, which mount from the harbour of Constantinople to the residence of the turning dervishes. No one was passing at this hour, and I might have believed myself a hundred leagues from a large city, if the thousand noises of evening, borne along by the wind, did not come and die away under the rustling branches of the eypress-trees. All these noises, softened already by the lateness of the hour, the song of sailors from the ships, the strokes of the oars from caïques passing in the waters, the sonnets of the savage instruments of the Bulgarians, the drams of the barracks and arsenals, the voices of women singing their children to sleep in the gated villages, the prolonged murmurs of the popular streets and bazaars of Galata; from time to time the cry of the muezzins from the top of the minarets, or a cannon shot, a signal for return, coming from the fleet anchored at the mouth of the Bosphorus, reverberated by the mosques and hills, and falling into the basin of the Golden Horn, where it found an echo under the motionless willows on the calm waters; all these noises were confounded at moments into a single dull and indistinct buzzing, and formed, as it were, a harmonious music,

in which the human noises, the suppressed respiration of a large city asleep, were mingled, without being distinguishable, with the noises of nature, the distant beating of the waves, and the gusts of wind, which bent the tapering tops of the eypresses. This is one of those impressions the most infinite and oppressive that a poetical mind can encounter. All is commingled together, man and God, nature and society, mental agitation, and the melancholy repose of the thought. We know not whether we still take part in this great movement of animated beings, immersed in joy or suffering, amid this tumult of voices which arises, or in the nocturnal calm of the elements which are also murmuring, and which exalt the mind above cities and empires in sympathy with nature and God.

The Seraglio, a vast peninsula, blackened by its plane-trees and eypresses, projected like a cape of forests between the two seas. The moon was gleaming on its numerous kiosks, and the old walls of the palace of Amurath sprang up like a rock from the dark green of the planes. I had beneath my eyes and in my thought the whole scene where so many unfortunate or glorious dramas had been performed in the course of ages. All these dramas appeared before me with their actors, and their tracks of blood or glory.

I saw a horde issue from Caucasus, propelled by that instinct of pergrination which God implanted in conquering tribes, as he has given it to the bees, which leave the trunk of a tree to throw out fresh swarms. The great patriarchal figure of Othman, in the midst of his tents and his flocks, spreading his people in Asia Minor, advancing by degrees to Broussa, expiring in the arms of his sons, then his lieutenants, and saying to Orchan—

"I die without regret, since I leave a successor such as thou art; go and propagate the divine law, the idea of God, which has come to us from Mecca to the Caucasus—be charitable and merciful as it: it is by such means that princes draw down on their nation the blessing of God! Leave not my body in this land, which is but a route for us, but lay my mortal remains in Constantinople, in the spot which I point out in dying."

A few years later, Orchan, son of Othman, was encamped at Scutari, on those small hills which the wood of eypress now darkens. The Greek Emperor, Cantacuzene, coerced by necessity, gave him the beautiful Theodora, his daughter, as the fifth wife of his seraglio. The young princess crossed, amidst the playing of musical instruments, that arm of the sea where I now saw the Russian fleet riding, and went, like a victim to a useless immolation, to prolong for a few days the duration of the empire. Shortly, the sons of Orchan approach the shore, followed by a few valiant soldiers; in the night they construct three rafts, supported by bladders, and pass the strait under favour of the darkness. The Greek sentinels are asleep. A young peasant, going to his labour at break of day, meets the straying Ottomans, and points out to them the mouth of a subterranean passage which leads to the interior of the castle, and the Turks gain a footing and a fortress in Europe.

Four reigns later, Mahomet II. answered the Greek ambassadors—"I am forming no enterprise against you: the empire of Constantinople is bounded by its walls." But Constantinople thus limited, prevents the sultan sleeping; he sends to arouse his vizier, and says to him, "I demand Constantinople from thee; I can find no sleep on this pillow; God will deliver to me the Romans." In his brutal impatience, he darts his lance into the waves, which threaten to overwhelm his encampment. "Go!" said he to his soldiers, the last day of the assault, "I reserve for myself the town alone; the gold and the women are yours. The government of my largest province to him who shall first mount the ramparts." The whole night, the land and the water were illumined by innumerable fires, which supplied the place of day, until that day dawned which was to deliver to the Ottomans their prey.

During that time, under the sombre cupola of Saint Sophia, the brave and unfortunate Constantine came,

on his last night, to pray to the God of empires, and to receive the sacrament with tears in his eyes; at sunrise he went forth on horseback, amidst the shrieks and groans of his family, to meet death like a hero in the breach. It was the 29th May, 1453.

A few hours afterwards the axe broke open the gates of Saint Sophia; old men, women, young girls, monks, and nuns, crowded that vast cathedral, whose courts, chapels, galleries, vaults, immense pulpits, domes, and platforms, could contain the population of a whole town. A last shriek arose to heaven as the yell of Christianity; in a few minutes 60,000 old men, women, and children, without distinction of rank, age, or sex, were bound in couples, the men with cords, the women with their veils or sashes. These coupled slaves were thrown into ships, carried to the Ottoman camp, insulted, exchanged, sold, or bartered, like beasts of burden. Never were similar lamentations heard on the two banks of Europe and Asia; wives were separated for ever from their husbands, and children from their mothers, for the Turks drove this living booty, by different routes, from Constantinople into the interior of Asia. Constantinople was sacked for eight hours; then Mahomet II. entered by the Holy Roman gate, surrounded by his viziers, his pachas, and his guard. He descended at the outer gate of Saint Sophia, and struck, with his yatagan, a soldier who was breaking the altars. He wished nothing to be destroyed. He transformed the church into a mosque, and a muetzm mounted for the first time upon that same tower, whence I heard him at this very hour chanting to summon the Mussulmans to prayer, and to glorify, in another form, the God who had been adored there the previous evening. From there, Mahomet resorted to the deserted palace of the Greek emperors, and recited on entering it these Persian verses:—

“The spider weaves his web in the palace of the emperors, and the owl screeches at midnight on the towers of Erasiah!”

The body of Constantine was found that very day under heaps of slain. The janissaries had heard: Greek, magnificently clad, and struggling in agony exclaim, “Is there no Christian to be found who will rid me of life?” They had chopped off his head. Two eagles, embroidered in gold on his buskins, and the tears of some faithful Greeks, left no doubt that this unknown soldier was the brave and unfortunate Constantine. His head was exposed, in order that the vanquished might entertain no doubt as to his death or hope of seeing him reappear; he was then buried with the honours due to the throne, heroism, and death.

Mahomet did not abuse his victory. The religious toleration of the Turks was exhibited in his first acts. He granted to the Christians their churches, and the liberty of public worship. He maintained the Greek patriarch in his functions. He himself, seated on his throne, delivered the erosis and pastoral staff to the monk Gennadius, and gave him a richly caparisoned horse. The fugitive Greeks saved themselves in Italy and carried there the taste for polemical disputes, for philosophy and letters. The torch, extinguished at Constantinople, cast its sparks over the Mediterranean, and was rekindled at Florence and Rome. During the thirty years of a reign which was one continued conquest, Mahomet II. added to his empire 200 towns and 12 kingdoms. He died in the midst of his triumphs, and received the name of Mahomet the Great. His memory still hovers over the last years of the nation which he established in Europe, and which will shortly bear his tomb into Asia. This prince had the complexion of a Tartar, an agreeable face, sunken eyes, a deep and piercing look. He had all the virtues and all the vices which policy at different times required.

Bajazet II., the Louis XI. of the Ottomans, threw his sons into the sea, and himself, driven from the throne by Selim, fled with his women and treasures, and died of poison administered by his son. This Selim, as an answer to the vizier who asked him where he should fix his tents, caused him to be strangled. The successor of the vizier put the same question, and met the

same fate; a third pitched the tents, without any interrogation, towards the four points of the universe; and when Selim asked where his camp was, “Every here,” answered the vizier; “thy soldiers will follow thee in whatever direction thou turnest thy arms.”

It is thus I should be served,” replied the terribleultan. It was he who conquered Egypt, and who, seated on a magnificent throne raised on the banks of the Nile, caused to be led before him the entire tribe of the oppressors of that beautiful country, and had 50,000 Mamelukes massacred before his eyes. Their bodies were thrown into the river. All this was done without personal cruelty, but through that sentiment of fatalism which led him to believe in an especial mission; and feeling himself the instrument to accomplish the will of God, he regarded the world as his conquest, and men as the dust of his feet. That same hand, dyed with the blood of so many thousands of men, wrote verses full of resignation, mildness, and philosophy. A piece of white marble still subsists, on which he engraved these sentences:—

“All comes from God; he gives at his pleasure, or refuses us what we ask of him. If any one on earth could accomplish any thing of himself, he would be equal to God.” We read lower down:—“Selim, the servant of the poor, has composed and written these verses.” Conquering Persia, he died with a command to his vizier to make pious restitutions to the Persian families whom the war had ruined. His tomb is placed by the side of Mahomet II., with this proud epitaph:—“On this day, Sultan Selim passed to an eternal kingdom, leaving the empire of the world to Soleyman.”

I saw from hence, glittering amongst the domes of the other mosques, the resplendant cupola of the mosque of Soleyman, one of the most magnificent in Constantinople. He had lost his eldest son, Mahomet, whom he had by the celebrated Roxalana. This mosque recalls a touching evidence of the grief of this prince. To honour the memory of his son, he freed a multitude of slaves of both sexes, wishing thus to associate the sympathies of others with his own sorrow.

In a short time, alas! the neighbourhood of this same mosque was the scene of a terrible drama. Soleyman, excited against a son by another wife, Mustapha, sent for the muphti, and asked him, “What punishment does Zaïr deserve, the slave of a merchant in this city, to whom were confided by the merchant, during a journey, his wife, his children, and his treasures? Zaïr has deranged the affairs of his master, has attempted to seduce his wife, and has laid snares against the children; what punishment does Zaïr merit?”

“The slave Zaïr deserves death,” writes the muphti; “God is great!”

Soleyman, provided with this answer, orders Mustapha to his camp. He arrives, accompanied by Zeangir, a son of Roxalana, but who, far from partaking the hatred of his mother, bore the tenderest friendship for his brother Mustapha. When before the tent of Soleyman, Mustapha is disarmed. He advances alone into the first enclosure, where a complete solitude and mournful silence reign. Four mutes spring upon him, and attempt to strangle him; he throws them down, and is about to escape, and call to his succour the army which adores him, when Soleyman himself, who had observed the struggle between the mutes and his son, lifts up a corner of the curtain of his tent, and casts on them a look sparkling with fury. At his appearance the mutes get up, and succeed in strangling the young prince. His body is exposed on a carpet before the tent of the sultan. Zeangir expires from despair on the body of his brother, and the army contemplates, with a terrified eye, the implacable vengeance of a woman, to whom love has subjected the unfortunate Soleyman. Mustapha had a son ten years old; an order for his death is got by surprise from the sultan by Roxalana. A secret envoy is charged to deceive the vigilance of the mother of this boy. A pretext is feigned to draw her to a country house a short distance from Broussa. The young prince was on horseback preceding his mother's litter. The litter is broken, and the young prince proceeds in

advance, followed by the eunuch charged with the secret order for his death. When scarcely entered into the house, the eunuch, stopping him on the threshold, presents to him the bowstring—"The sultan wills that you die this hour," says he to him. "That order is as sacred in my eyes as that of God himself," replies the boy, and stretches out his head to the executioner. The mother arrives, and finds the palpitating body of her son on the threshold of the door. The insane passion of Soleyman for Roxalana filled the seraglio with more crimes than the palace of Argos had witnessed.

The Seven Towers recall to me the death of the first sultan immolated by the janissaries. Othman, dragged by them into this castle, fell two days afterwards under the dagger of Daoud, the vizier. The latter was himself shortly after conducted to the Seven Towers. They tore off his turban, made him drink at the same fountain at which the wretched Othman had slaked his thirst, and strangled him in the same chamber in which he had killed his master. The *ada** of the janissaries, one of whose soldiers had laid hands on Othman, was broken; and even until the abolition of that corps, when an officer called the 65th *ada*, another officer answered, "May the voice of that *ada* perish! may the voice of that *ada* be annihilated for ever!"

The janissaries, repenting of the murder of Othman, deposed Mustapha, and proceeded to the seraglio, to beg, on their knees, a boy of twelve years of age, to bestow on him the empire. Clothed in a robe of silver cloth, the imperial turban on his head, and seated on a portable throne, four officers of the janissaries lifted him on their shoulders, and promenaded the young emperor in the midst of the people. It was Amurath IV., worthy of the throne, to which revolt and repentance had elevated him when a minor.

There finished the glorious days of the Ottoman empire. The law of Soleyman, which ordained that the sons of the sultans should be prisoners in the seraglio, amongst eunuchs and women, enervated the Ottoman blood, and rendered the empire a prey to the intrigues of the eunuchs or the revolts of the janissaries. At intervals, some fine characters shine out, but they are without power, because they have been accustomed from infancy to be without will. Whatever may be said in Europe, it is evident that the empire is dead, and that even a hero could impart to it but a semblance of life.

The seraglio, now abandoned by Mahmoud, is nothing more than a splendid tomb. How full of dramatic and touching interest would be its secret history, if its walls could relate it!

One of the most affecting and gentle personages of this mysterious drama, is the unfortunate Selim, who, deposed and incarcerated in the seraglio, from not having shed the blood of his nephews, became the instructor of the present sultan, Mahmoud. Selim was a philosopher and poet. The preceptor had been a king, the scholar was destined to be one likewise. During the long captivity of these two princes, Mahmoud, irritated by the negligence of a slave, fell into a passion and struck him on the face. "Ah! Mahmoud," said Selim, "when you have passed through the furnace of the world, you will not get thus excited. When you have suffered like me, you will learn to bear with annoyances, even with those from a slave."

The lot of Selim was unfortunate to the end. Mustapha Baraictar, one of his faithful pachas, having taken arms in his cause, arrived at Constantinople, and presented himself at the gates of the seraglio. The Sultan Mustapha was immersed in pleasures; and at that moment was in one of his kiosks on the Bosphorus. The *Loustanghis* defended the entrance, Mustapha returned to the seraglio; and whilst Baraictar was to him, the gates, with his artillery, demanding that his master Selim should be surrendered to him, that unfortunate prince fell under the pwards of the kishar-aga and his eunuchs. The Sultan Mustapha caused his body to be thrown to Baraictar, who fell upon the corpse, and covered it

with kisses and tears. They sought for Mahmoud, concealed in the seraglio; it was feared that Mustapha had shed the last drop of the blood of Othman; but they at length found him, hid beneath some rolled-up carpets, in an obscure corner of the seraglio. He thought they were seeking him to kill him; he was placed on the throne; and Baraictar prostrated himself before him. The heads of Mustapha's partisans were exposed on the walls; his wives were sewed up in leathern sacks, and cast into the sea. However, a few days afterwards, Constantinople became a field of battle. The janissaries revolted against Baraictar, and again demanded Mustapha for sultan, whom the clemency of Mahmoud had spared. The seraglio was besieged, a conflagration consumed the half of Stamboul; the friends of Mahmoud insisted upon the death of his brother Mustapha, as the only means of saving the life of the sultan and their own; the sentence died upon his lips; he covered his head with a shawl, and fell back on a sofa. They profited by his silence, and Mustapha was strangled. Mahmoud, thus become the last and only scion of Othman's stock, was an inviolable and sacred being to all parties. Baraictar had been killed in the flames, fighting near the seraglio, and Mahmoud began his reign.

The open space of the Atmeidan, which stood gloomily out from here, behind the white walls of the seraglio, witnessed the greatest act of the reign of this prince, the extinction of the janissaries. This measure, which was alone calculated to give fresh youth and life to the empire, has produced nothing but one of the most bloody and lamentable scenes that were ever recorded in a kingdom's annals. It is yet written on all the monuments of the Atmeidan in their fragments, and in the marks of bullets and fire. Mahmoud had made preparations for it like a profound politician, and he put it in execution like a hero. An accident stirred up the last revolt.

An Egyptian officer struck a Turkish soldier; the janissaries gave the signal to revolt by exhibiting their kettles turned upside down; the sultan, informed of events, and well prepared, was with his principal counsellors in one of his gardens at Beschiktach on the Bosphorus. He hastened to the seraglio, and hoisted the sacred standard of Mahomet; the muphti and ulemas, congregated around the sacred banner, pronounced the abolition of the janissaries. The regular troops and the faithful Mussulmans armed themselves, and assembled at the voice of the sultan. He himself advanced on horseback at the head of the seraglio troops; the janissaries, drawn up on the Atmeidan, received him with respect; he went several times through their mutinous ranks, alone, his life every moment at risk, but animated by that supernatural courage which a decisive resolution inspires. That day was to be the last of his existence, or the first of his enfranchisement and power. The janissaries, turning a deaf ear to his entreaties, refused to return to their agas; they spread themselves over all the quarters of the capital, to the number of 40,000 men. The faithful troops of the sultan, the artillery and the *bostanghis*, occupied the approaches to the streets leading to the Hippodrome; the sultan ordered them to fire, but the artillerymen hesitated, when a determined officer, Kara-Dejehemmeni, ran to one of the cannons, fired his pistol in the touch-hole of the piece of ordnance, and mowed down with its grape-shot the nearest groups of the janissaries. The janissaries recoiled, the artillery played upon them from all points, their barracks were consumed by fire, and, huddled in upon this confined space, they perished by thousands by the fating of the walls upon them, by the shot, and by the flames. The execution once commenced, was not stayed until it had reached the last of the janissaries. 120,000 men enrolled in this corps, fell victims in the capital alone to the fury of the people and the sultan. The waters of the Bosphorus rolled their bodies to the Ser of Marmora. Those that were not killed were banished into Asia Minor, and perished on the road. Thus was the empire freed. The sultan, more absolute than any prince ever was, has none but obedient subjects; he may at his pleasure take steps to regenerate the empire, but he is too late; besides, his

* A director, or company.

genius is not equal to his courage. The hour of the fall of the Ottoman empire has struck; it has many points of resemblance to the former Greek empire; and Constantinople is now awaiting fresh decrees of fate. I see from here the Russian fleet, like a floating camp of another Mahomet II., pressing more and more around the city and the harbour, and I descry the fires of the Kalnuck bivouacs on the Asiatic hills. The Greeks return, under the name and in the garb of Russians, and Providence knows the day on which the last assault, given by them to the walls of Constantinople, which is at present the whole empire, will envelope in fire, smoke, and desolation, this resplendent city, now wrapped beneath my eyes in its last slumber.

The finest view of Constantinople is from above our apartments, from the top of a belvedere erected by M. Truquii, on the terraced roof of his house. This belvedere commands the whole group of the hills of Pera, of Galata, and of the eminences which surround the harbour, and its placid waters. We look over Constantinople, and the sea, as if on the back of an eagle. Europe, Asia, the mouth of the Bosphorus, and the Sea of Marmora, are under the eye all at the same time. The city is at our feet. If we had but one glance to cast upon the earth, it would be from here it should be taken. I am unable to understand every time that I ascend there, and I do so several times in the day, passing there whole evenings, how it is that of so many travellers who have visited Constantinople, so few have experienced the dazzling effect which this scene possesses in my eyes, and throws over my mind. How is it that none have described it? Is it because words have neither expansion, nor compass, nor colouring sufficient, and because the only language which the eye can speak is painting? But painting itself has given nothing of all this; it has presented but cold outlines, mutilated scenes, and lifeless colouring. But the countless gradations and varieties of the tints according to the sky and the hour, the harmonious mingling and colossal vastness of the outlines, the fleeting and untangled movements on its different horizons, the fluttering of the sail on its thousand masts, the buzz of life from the population on the shores, the reports of cannon thundering and mounting from the ships, the standards which droop or float from the mast-heads, the multitude of caïques, the vapoury reflection of domes, mosques, and minarets, on the smooth surface of the water: all these things, where are they described? Let us essay the task.

The hills of Galata, of Pera, and three or four other hills, slope from my feet to the sea, covered with towns of different shades; some have their houses painted a blood-red, others black with a throng of blue cupolas variegating the sable hues; between the cupolas spring up groups of verdure, formed by the planes, figs, cypresses of the little gardens appertaining to each abode. Large vacant spaces between the houses are cultivated as fields and gardens, in which we perceive the Turkish women, enveloped in their black veils, and playing with their children and their slaves, under the shade of the trees. Flocks of turtle doves, and white pigeons, hover in the air above these gardens and seem like white flowers poised by the wind, relieving the blue dye of the sea, which forms the bottom of the landscape. We distinguish the streets ascending as they descend towards the sea like ravines, and tower, the tumult of the people in the bazaars, encompassed by wreaths of light and transparent smoke. These towns, or quarters of towns, are separated from each other by verdant promontories crowned with palaces of painted wood, and kiosks of all the various shades of colour, or by deep gorges, where the eye is lost between the hill-sides, and whence we see only the tops of cypresses, and the tapering and glittering points of the minarets, rising up to view. Falling on the sea, the eye is bewildered amid the maze of vessels at anchor or under sail on its blue surface; the caïques, like water-fowls, gliding now in clusters, now alone upon the channel, cross each other in all directions, pulling from Europe to Asia, or from Pera to the point of the Seraglio.

Some large ships of war pass in full sail out of the Bosphorus, salute the Seraglio with a broadside, the smoke from which envelopes them for an instant as if with grey wings, whereout they again emerge with the brilliant whiteness of their sails, and double, appearing to touch, the lofty cypresses and broad plane-trees of the Grand Seigneur's garden, in order to enter the Sea of Marmora. Other ships of war, composing the entire fleet of the sultan, are riding, to the number of thirty or forty, at the entrance to the Bosphorus; their huge forms throw a gloom upon the waters, on the land-side; only five or six in the whole are visible, the hill and the trees concealing the others, whose lofty prows, masts, and yards, seeming entwined with the cypresses, form a circular avenue winding to the bottom of the Bosphorus. There the mountains of the opposite coast, or of the Asiatic shore, compose the back-ground of the picture; they rise higher and greener than those on the European side; thick forests crown them, and extend into the gorges which slopingly divide them; their banks, cultivated like gardens, bear solitary kiosks, terraces, villages, and small mosques, quite shrouded by the branches of the large trees; their bays are full of vessels at anchor, of caïques on the oar, or small boats on the wing; the town of Sentari stretches at their feet on a wide margin, surmounted by their unbragging crests, and encircled by its sable forest of cypresses. An uninterrupted string of caïques and boats, loaded with Asiatic soldiers, with horses, or with Greek gardeners carrying vegetables to Constantinople, extends from Sentari to Galata, and is ever and anon severed, to give way to another file of large ships issuing from the Sea of Marmora.

Returning to the coast of Europe, but to the other side of the channel of the Golden Horn, the first object which the eye encounters, after clearing the blue basin of the channel, is the point of the Seraglio; it is the most majestic, varied, magnificent, and at the same time wild locality, that the eye of a painter could gaze upon. The point of the Seraglio advances, like a promontory or a flattened cape, into the three seas, immediately in front of Asia. This promontory, starting from the gate of the Seraglio, on the Sea of Marmora, and concluding at the grand kiosk of the sultan, opposite the shore of Pera, may be three quarters of a league in circumference; it is a triangle whose base is the palace or the Seraglio itself, its angle projecting into the sea, and its longest side extending along the inner harbour to the canal of Constantinople. From the point on which I stand, I command its entire compass. It is a forest of gigantic trees, whose trunks spring, like the shafts of columns, from the walls and terraces of the enclosure, and stretch their branches over the kiosks, the batteries, and the vessels on the sea; these forests, of a dark gloom, are interspersed with verdant lawns, flowering shrubberies, balustrades, marble terraces, cupolas of gold or bronze, minarets as slim as the masts of a vessel, and the wide domes of the palace, the mosques, and the kiosks which surround the gardens; a view almost similar to that presented by the terraces, the slopes, and the palaces of Saint Cloud,

the Seine, or from the hills of Meudon; but these rural sites are enclosed on three sides by the sea, and surmounted on the fourth by the cupolas of the numerous mosques, and by an ocean of houses and streets, which compose the true Constantinople, or the city of Stamboul. The Mosque of Saint Sophia, the Saint Peter of the Eastern Rome, lifts its massive and gigantic dome above and quite near to the outer walls of the Seraglio; Saint Sophia is a shapeless hill of heaped-up stones, crowned by a dome, which sparkles in the sun like a sea of lead; farther on, the more modern mosques of Aehmet, B. Jazet, Soleyman, and the Sultana, spring into the air, with their minarets divided by Moorish galleries; cypresses as high as the shafts of the minarets accompany them, and every where form a contrast with their sable foliage to the resplendent lustre of the edifices.

At the summit of the flattened hill of Stamboul, wo

perceive, amidst the walls of houses and the shooting minarets, one or two antique mounds, blackened by conflagrations and bronzed by time; they are fragments of the ancient Byzantium, standing on the open space of the Hippodrome or Atmeidan; there also the vast outlines of several palaces belonging to the sultan or his viziers stretch out; the divan, with its gate, which has given its name to the empire; and above this group of buildings, standing bluntly out on the azure horizon of the sky, a splendid mosque crowns the hill and looks upon the two seas; its gilded cupola, struck by the rays of the sun, seems the reflection of a vast burning, and the transparency of its dome and its walls, surmounted with aerial galleries, gives it the appearance of a monument of silver or of blue-veined porcelain. The horizon on this side finishes there, and the eye falls down again on two other large hills, completely covered with mosques, palaces, and painted houses, as far as the bottom of the harbour, where the sea insensibly diminishes in breadth, and is lost to the vision beneath the trees in the Arcadian vale of Sweet Waters. If the eye ascends the channel, it floats over the masts, clustered on the margin of the bank of the arsenal, and under the forests of cypresses which cover the hill-sides; it beholds the tower of Galata, built by a Genoese, rising like the mast of a ship from out an ocean of house-tops, and gleaming between Galata and Pera, like a colossal barrier between two towns; and it returns to finally repose on the placid basin of the Bosphorus, indistinctly gazing between Europe and Asia.

Such are the main features of the picture! But if you add to these principal traits which compose it, the immense frame which encircles and brings it out from the sky and sea, the black outlines of the mountains of Asia, the low and fleecy horizons of the Gulf of Nicomedia, the crests of the Olympic mountains of Broussa, which appear behind the Seraglio beyond the Sea of Marmora, and which crown their vast snows like white clouds in the firmament; if you join to this majestic whole the infinite beauty and colouring of the countless details; if you figure to yourself in thought the varied effects of the sky, the breeze, the shifting hours of the day, on the sea and town; if you imagine the fleets of merchant vessels wearing off from the point of the Seraglio's black forests, to gain the middle of the channel and fall slowly into the Bosphorus, with a continual change of groupings; if the rays of the setting sun come grazing the tops of the trees and minarets, and reddening, as if with the glare of a conflagration, the seas of Scutari and Stamboul; if the wind, which freshens or falls, smooths the Sea of Marmora into a lake of molten lead, or, slightly rippling the waters of the Bosphorus, seems to throw over it the sparkling meshes of a vast silver net; if the smoke of the steam-boats rises and winds in the midst of the large flapping sails of the sultan's ships and frigates of war; if the cannon for prayer resounds in prolonged echoes from the decks of the vessels in the fleet, even to the cypresses in the field of the dead; if the innumerable sounds from the seven towns and the thousand of ships rise in gusts from the city and the sea, and reach you, carried by the breeze, at the column where you survey the scene; if you reflect that this sky is always thus deep and pure, that these seas and natural harbours are always tranquil and safe, that each house on these lengthy shores is near a bay where a ship can run at anchor at all times beneath the very windows, where they construct and launch into the sea three-decked vessels under the very shadow of the plane-trees on the shore; if you recollect that you are at Constantinople, in that queen of Europe and Asia, at the point where these two divisions of the globe meet, at various intervals, either to embrace or struggle; if the night surprise you in this contemplation of which the eye never grows weary; if the lighthouse of Galata, of the Seraglio, and of Scutari, and the lights of the lofty poops of the ships, are illumined; if the stars come out one by one, in clusters, from the blue firmament, and envelope the sable peaks of the coast of

Asia, the snowy crests of Olympus, the Isles of Princes in the Sea of Marmora, the sombre platform of the Seraglio, the hills of Stamboul, and the three seas, as if with a blue net-work, studded with pearls, in which this whole landscape of nature seems to swim; if the softer glare of the heavens, into which the rising moon mounts, leaves sufficient light to distinguish the grand masses in this picture, whilst the details are obliterated or softened down—you have at all hours of the day and night the most magnificent and ravishing spectacle that human eyes can embrace; there is an intoxication in the vision which is communicated to the mind, a dazzling both of the eyes and the thought; such is the spectacle that I have enjoyed every day and every night for some time.

The French ambassador having proposed to me to accompany him in the visit which all the newly-arrived ambassadors have the privilege of making to Saint Sophia, I found myself this morning at eight o'clock at one of the gates of Stamboul, which opens on the sea, behind the walls of the Seraglio. One of the principal officers of the sultan waited for us on the shore, and conducted us first of all into his house, where he had prepared a collation. The apartments were numerous and elegantly decorated, but without any other furniture than divans and pipes. The divans were settled against the windows, which looked on the Sea of Marmora. The breakfast was served in the European style, but the dishes were national. They were plentiful and excellent, but all novel to us. After breakfast, the ladies went to visit the wives of the Turkish colonel, who were removed, on this occasion, to an inner chamber. It was the harem, or women's apartment, in which we had been received. We were all provided with slippers of yellow morocco to put on in the mosque, without which we should have been obliged to take off our boots, and proceed with naked feet. We entered the outer court of the Mosque of Saint Sophia through a file of guards, who kept off the crowd collected to see us. The countenances of the Osmanlis wore a gloomy and discontented expression. The zealous Mussulmans regard the introduction of Christians into their sanctuaries as a profanation. The gates of the mosque were closed after noon.

The great cathedral of Saint Sophia, built by Constantine, is one of the most prodigious edifices that the genius of Christianity has reared on the earth; but we feel, from the barbarous taste that has presided in the construction of this mass of stones, that it is the work of a period of corruption and decay in the arts. It is a confused and coarse memento of a taste which no longer exists, the rough draught of unskilled art. The temple is preceded by a long and wide peristyle, covered in and closed like that of Saint Peter at Rome. Columns of granite of great height, but encased in the walls, and making part of them, separate this vestibule from the court. A large door opens on the interior; the enclosure of the church is decorated on its sides with superb columns of porphyry, Egyptian granite, and the finest marble; but these columns, differing in their size, proportions, and orders, are evidently remains borrowed from other temples, and placed there without symmetry and taste, as the barbarians support a hovel with the mutilated fragments of a palace. Gigantic pillars of various masonry sustain an aerial dome like that of Saint Peter, the effect of which is at least equally majestic. This dome, which was formerly adorned with mosaics, forming pictures on its arch, was plastered over when Mahomet II. seized upon Saint Sophia to convert it into a mosque. Some portions of the plaster have fallen, and allow the ancient Christian decoration to reappear. Circular galleries, connected with immense pulpits, run round the cathedral to the height of the spring of the arch. The appearance of the edifice is beautiful from there; vast, sombre, without ornament, with its rugged arches and bronzed columns; it resembles the interior of a colossal tomb, the relics of which have been dispersed. It inspires awe, silence, meditation, or the instability of the works of men who build in honour of ideas which they believe

eternal, and whose monuments succeeding ideas come, with a book or sword in hand, to dwell in or destroy. In its present state, Saint Sophia is like a large car-van-serai of God. There are the columns of the temple of Ephesus, there are the likenesses of the apostles, with their golden glories, on the arch, looking on the lamps suspended from the *imam*.

On quitting Saint Sophia, we went to visit the seven principal mosques of Constantinople; they are much smaller, but infinitely more beautiful. We feel that Mahometanism had its peculiar style—its style all prepared and conformable to the luminous simplicity of its creed—when it raised these simple, regular, superb temples, without curtains for its mysteries, and without altars for its victims. These mosques are all similar, except in size and colour. They are preceded by large courts, encircled with cloisters, in which are the schools and the lodgings of the *imams*. Magnificent trees overshadow these courts, and numerous fountains impart the murmur and delicious freshness of their waters. Minarets, of admirable workmanship, rise like four aerial barriers at the four corners of the mosque. They spring above their domes; small circular galleries, with a parapet of stone, of open sculpture like net-work, surround, at different heights, the slim shaft of the minaret; there, the metzlim, who cries the hour, and calls the city to the constant thought of Mahometanism, the thought of God, places himself, at the different hours of the day. A portico, opening on the gardens and courts, and raised a few steps, leads to the door of the temple. The interior is a square, or round court, surmounted by a cupola supported by elegant pillars, or beautiful fluted columns. A pulpit is fixed to one of the pillars. The frieze is formed by verses of the Koran, written in ornamental characters on the wall. The walls are painted in arabesques. Strings of iron pass from one pillar to the other in the mosque, and bear a multitude of lamps, ostrich-eggs, and bunches of ears of corn, or of flowers. Mats of rush and rich carpets cover the slabs of the court. The effect is simple and imposing. It is a temple where a God dwells: it is a house of prayer and contemplation, where men assemble together before the only and universal God. What is a religion if religion does not exist in this religion. Mahomet preached to barbarous tribes, amongst whose ceremonies were used to conceal the Deity. The rites are very simple; an annual festival, ablutions and prayer at the five divisions of day—that is all. No dogmas, but belief in a creatrix and rewarder—God. Images are suppressed, from fear lest they might tempt the weakness of human imagination, and set a remembrance into culpable adoration. No priests, or at least every one of the faithful is able to perform the functions of the priest. The sacerdotal body was formed much later, and from corruption. Every time that I entered the mosques, on this or any other day, I found a small number of Turks, seated cross-legged, or kneeling on the carpets, and praying with all the outward signs of fervour and complete mental absorption.

In the court of the Mosque of Bajazet, I saw the empty tomb of Constantine. It is a porphyry vase of prodigious size; it would contain twenty heroes. The lump of porphyry is evidently of the Grecian epoch. It is likewise some fragment torn from the Temple of Diana at Ephesus. Ages lend their temples like their tombs, and mutually render them deserted. Where are the bones of Constantine? The Turks have enclosed his sepulchre in a kiosk, and do not permit its profanation. The tombs of the sultans, and their families, are in the gardens of the mosques which they have constructed, under kiosks of marble, overshadowed by trees, and perfumed with flowers. Water murmurs in jets, near or in the kiosk; and the obligation of remembrance is so immortal amongst the Mussulmans, that I have never passed before one of these tombs without finding nosegays of flowers, freshly plucked, deposited on the door or on the windows of these numerous monuments.

I have just returned from an excursion up the canal

of Constantinople to the mouth of the Black Sea. I wish to sketch for myself a few features of this enchanting scene. I did not believe that sky, earth, sea, and man, could in concert produce such ravishing landscapes. The transparent mirror of the sky or the sea can alone reflect them in full entirety; my imagination sees and preserves them thus, but my memory can hold and paint them only by a few successive details. Let us, then, describe view by view, cape by cape, bay by bay, at each stroke of the oar. It would take years for a painter to convey even one of the shores of the Bosphorus. The landscape changes at every glance, and every variation is equally beautiful. What can I tell in a few words?

Conducted by four Arnaut rowers into one of those long caïques which cleave the sea like a fish, I embarked alone, at seven in the morning, with a pure sky and a brilliant sun. An interpreter, stretched in the boat, between the rowers and me, mentioned to me the names and objects. We skirted at first the quays of Tophana, with its artillery barrack; the quarter of Tophana, rising in gradations of painted houses, like bunches of flowers, grouped around the marble mosque, died away under the lofty cypresses of the great field of the dead in Pera. That curtain of sombre forest terminates the hills on that side. We glide through a crowd of vessels at anchor, and of countless caïques rowing to Constantinople with the officers of the seraglio, the ministers and their kiyas, and the families of the Armenians, whom the hour of labour calls to their counting-houses. These Armenians are a race of superb men, nobly and simply attired in a black turban, and a long blue robe clasped to the body by a shawl of white cashmere. Their forms are athletic, their countenances intelligent, but common-place; their complexions are tawny, eyes blue, and beards flaxen. They are the Swiss of the East; industrious, peaceable, and steady like them; but, like them, calculating and avaricious, they let out their genius for traffic to the sultan and his subjects for hire; there is nothing heroic or warlike in this race of men. Commerce is their calling, and they pursue it under all masters. They are the Christians who have the greatest sympathy with the Turks. They prosper, and accumulate the wealth which the Turks take no trouble about, and which has escaped the grasp of the Greeks and Jews; they have all things here in their own hands. They are the dragomans of all the pachas and viziers. Their women, whose features, equally regular but more delicate, recall the calm beauty of the English females, or the peasants of the Helvetic mountains, are greatly to be admired, as well as their children. The age is full of them. They bring from their country-houses baskets of flowers, which are displayed on the prow.

We begin to doubt the point of Tophana, and to glide under the shadow of the large vessels of war, belonging to the Ottoman fleet, riding on the European coast. These enormous masses sleep there, as if on a lake. The sailors, dressed like the Turkish soldiers, in red or blue vests, are lazily stretched on the shrouds or bathing around the hull. Great boats, loaded with troops, are going to and fro between the shore and the vessels; and the elegant barge of the capitan-pacha, propelled by twenty oars, shoots past us like an arrow from a bow. The admiral, Tahir-Pacha, and his officers, are clothed in brown frock-coats, and their heads are covered with fez, large bonnets of red wool, which they draw over their foreheads and eyes, as if ashamed of having hid aside the noble and graceful turban. These men have a melancholy and resigned aspect, as they smoke their long amber-tipped pipes. There are about thirty ships of war, of admirable build, which seem quite ready for sea; but there are neither officers nor sailors; and this magnificent fleet serves merely as a decoration to the Bosphorus. Whilst the sultan is complacently surveying it from his kiosk of Beglerbeg, situate opposite to it on the Asiatic side, the two or three frigates of Ibrahim Pacha are in undisturbed possession of the Mediterranean; and the Samian schooners sweep the Archipelago.

At a short distance from these vessels, on the European bank, I pass beneath the windows of a long and magnificent palace belonging to the sultan, at present uninhabited. It seems a palace for amphibious beings; the waves of the Bosphorus, whenever so little stirred by the breeze, lash the windows, and throw their spray into the rooms of the ground floor. The front steps dip into the water; the grated doors give access to the sea, even into the gardens and courts. Here are provided boat-houses for the caïques, and baths for the sultanas, who can bathe in the sea under the shelter of the curtains of their saloons. Behind these marine courts, gardens of shrubs, lilies, and roses, rise in successive terraces, bearing grated and gilded kiosks. These flowery lawns are continued to extensive woods of oaks, laurels, and planes, which cover the slopes, and rise with the rocks to the summit of the hill. The apartments of the sultan are open, and I see through the windows the richly gilded mouldings of the ceilings, the crystal lustres, the divans, and the curtains of silk. Those of the harem are closed by thick gratings of elegantly sculptured wood.

Immediately following this palace is an uninterrupted succession of palaces, houses, and gardens, belonging to the chief favourites, ministers, or pachas, of the Grand Signor. All repose on the sea as if to inhale its freshness. Their windows are open; the owners are seated on the divans in vast saloons, all glittering with gold and silk; they smoke, chat, and sip sherbet, as they look upon us passing. Their apartments open on successive terraces, surcharged with trelliced arbours, shrubs, and flowers. The numerous slaves, in rich costumes, are generally seated on the steps of the stairs, which are washed by the sea, and the caïques, furnished with rowers, are at the edge of these stairs, ready to receive and bear away the lords of these dwellings. The harems every where form a wing, separated by gardens or courts from the apartments of the men. They are grated. I can only occasionally discover the head of a pretty boy, who presses against the interstices of the trellice-work, interwoven with creeping flowers, to get a glimpse of the sea, and the white arm of a woman, drawing the blinds apart or closer. All these palaces and houses are of wood, but very richly worked, with projecting eaves, galleries, and balustrades without number, and all drowned in the unbragous canopies of large trees, in creeping plants, and in the clusterings of jessamines and roses. All are bathed by the current of the Bosphorus, and have inner courts, where the water of the sea penetrates and flows with a perpetual renewal, and where the caïques are under sheds. The Bosphorus is every where so deep, that we pass sufficiently near the margin to inhale the scented air of the flowers, and to refreshen our boatmen under the shade of the trees. The largest vessels also sail as close as we, and frequently the yard-arm of a brig or a ship gets entangled in the branches of a tree, in the trellice of a vine, or even in the blinds of a casement, and floats on, bearing with it shreds from the foliage or the house. These abodes are only separated from each other by clumps of trees on small projecting ridges, or by angular rocks, covered with ivy and roses which descend from the crests of the hills, and advance a few feet into the waves. Occasionally, however, a deeper and wider bay is scooped out between two hills, divided and cleaved by the hollow bed of a torrent or a rivulet. Then a village stretches on the levelled banks of the creek, with its beautiful Moorish fountains, its mosque, with gilded or azure cupolas, and its slight minaret, confounding its peak with the leafy branches of the plane-trees. The small painted houses rise like an amphitheatre on the two sides and at the bottom of these little gulfs, with their fagades a flock of a thousand trees. On the top of the hills large villas are reared, flanked with hanging gardens and copses of wide-spreading firs, closing the horizon.

At the foot of these villages is a beach or a granite quay, a few feet broad. The beaches are planted with sycamores, vines, and jessamine, forming bowers even on the sea, in which the caïques lie under shade. Mul-

titudes of boats, and merchant galliots of all flags, are riding at anchor. They are moored in front of the house or the warehouses of the trader, and frequently a plank thrown from the deck of the vessel to the window of the building serves to transport the merchandise. A crowd of children, and venders of vegetables, dates, and fruits, flock upon the quays; it is the bazaar of the village and of the Bosphorus. Sailors, of every costume and language, are grouped in the midst of the Osmanlis, who are smoking, squatted on their carpets near the fountain, or around the trunk of a plane-tree. No view of the villages of Lucerne or Interlaken can give an idea of the exquisite loveliness and picturesqueness of these little bays in the Bosphorus. It is impossible to avoid tarrying a moment to contemplate them. These towns, harbours, or villages, are met almost every five minutes on the first half of the European coast, that is to say, during two or three leagues. They become more rare afterwards, and the landscape assumes a harsher aspect, from the increasing height of the hills and the depth of the forests. I speak here only of the coast of Europe, because I will describe on my return that of Asia, which is still more beautiful; but it must be borne in mind, in order to form an exact idea, that this coast of Asia is but a few strokes of the oar from me; that often we are as near the one as the other, when holding the middle of the current in places where the canal narrows and bends, and that the same scenes which I am describing as in Europe, fascinate the eye every time it falls on the Asiatic shore.

But I return to the bank, which I am almost touching. There is a spot, beyond the last of these natural harbours, where the Bosphorus is enclosed, like a deep and rapid river, between two rocky capes which descend perpendicularly from the heights of its double mountains; the canal, in its windings, seems to the eye altogether hemmed in—it is only as we advance that we see it folding round and turning behind the European cape, when it expands and hollows out into a lake, bearing on its shores the towns of Therapia and Bayındere. From the base to the top of these two capes of rocks, clothed with trees and scattered tufts of vegetation, half ruined fortifications mount and throw out large white battlemented towers, with draw-bridges and donjon-keeps, in the style of the most admired constructions of the middle ages. These are the famous castles of Europe and Asia, whence Mahomet II. besieged and menaced Constantinople so long a time before he succeeded in carrying it. They rise, like two white phantoms, out of the sable bosom of the pines and cypresses, as if to scare approach to the two seas. Their towers and turrets hanging above the vessels in full sail, the long twigs of ivy, which droop like the mantles of warriors upon their half-ruined walls, the grey rocks which sustain them, their angles jutting out of the forest with which they are enveloped, and the huge shadows which they cast upon the waters, render their site one of the most characteristic points of the Bosphorus. It is there that it loses its exclusively lovely character, to assume an aspect by no means beautiful and sublime. Turkish cemeteries stretch at their feet, and the turbans, sculptured in white marble, gleam at intervals amid the clustering foliage, washed by the wave. Happy are the Turks!—they always rest in their most preferred locality, under the shade of the tree they have loved, on the edge of the stream whose murmur has charmed them, visited by the doves they nurtured when alive, embathed in the flowers they have planted. If they possess not the earth during their lives, they hold it after death, and they do not shovel the remains of those whom they have loved into those human sewers, whence disgust repels the sacredness and piety of remembrance.

Beyond the castles, the Bosphorus widens; the mountains of Europe and Asia rise more savage and desert. The shores of the sea alone are still sprinkled here and there with white cottages, and with small rustic mosques, perched on an eminence near a fountain, and under the canopy of a plane-tree. The village of Therapia, the residence of the French and English ambassadors, skirts the beach a little farther; the high

forests which command it, throw their shadows over the terraces and lawns of the two palaces; little valleys meander, shut in between rocks, and form the demarcation between the two powers. Two frigates, an English and a French one, lying at anchor in the canal, in front of each palace, are there to attend the orders of the ambassadors, and carry to the fleets of the Mediterranean messages of war or peace.

Buynkdere, a charming town at the bottom of the gulf which the Bosphorus forms, where it takes the bend before losing itself in the Black Sea, stretches like a curtain of palaces and villas on the flanks of two sombre mountains. A beautiful quay separates the gardens and the houses from the sea. The Russian fleet, composed of five ships, three frigates, and two steam-vessels, is anchored before the terraces of the Russian palace, and forms a town upon the waters, in front of the houses and delightful shady groves of Buynkdere. The boats which are bearing orders from one vessel to another; the detachments going towards land to get water at the fountains, give the sick a walk on the shore; the yachts of the young officers, watched against each other like race-horses, their sails laid over by the wind, dipping into the sea; the firing of cannon, which re-echoes in the deep valleys of Asia, and announces fresh vessels entering from the Black Sea; a Russian camp pitched on the sides of the mountain of the Giant, opposite the fleet; the beautiful meadow of Buynkdere on the left, with its group of wonderful planes, one of which can overshadow a regiment; the magnificent woods appertaining to the Russian and Austrian palaces, which undulate on the brows of the hills; a multitude of elegant houses decorated with balconies, which line the quays, with roses and lilacs hanging in festoons from the edge of the terraces; Armenians with their children incessantly arriving or departing in their caïques, full of boughs and flowers; the arm of the Bosphorus getting more sombre and narrow as we see it stretching towards the misty horizon of the Black Sea; other chains of mountains entirely despoiled of villages and houses, and rearing up into the clouds with their black forests, seeming the fearful limits between the storms of the sea of tempests and the insidious serenity of the waters of Constantinople; two forts fronting one another on each shore, crowning with their batteries, their towers, and their battlements, the advanced heights of two gloomy capes; in fine, a double line of rocks, dotted with copses, dying away into the blue waves of the Euxine: such is the prospect of Buynkdere! Add to this the perpetual transit of a string of shipping coming to Constantinople, or issuing out of the canal, according as the wind blows from the north or the south; these vessels are so numerous at times, that one day, in returning with my caïque, I counted nearly 200 in an hour. They sail in flocks, like birds migrating to another climate; if the wind shifts, they tack from one shore to the other, veering under the windows or trees of Asia or Europe; if the breeze freshens, they heave-to in one of the innumerable bays, or under the point of the small headlands of the Bosphorus; in a short time they again set all sail. The landscape, enlivened and modified by these fleets of vessels under sail or at anchor, and the different positions which they take up along the banks, changes every instant in its aspect, and renders the Bosphorus a wondrous kaleidoscope.

Arrived at Buynkdere, I took possession of the delightful house on the quay, in which M. Truqui has insisted upon offering me a double hospitality. We shall pass the summer there.

It would appear, after the description of this coast of the Bosphorus, that nature could not surpass herself, and that no landscape could bear away the palm from that with which my eyes are filled. I have skirted the Asiatic shore, on returning this evening to Constantinople, and I find it a thousand times more enchanting than the European. The coast of Asia owes scarcely any thing to man; nature has accomplished all. There is no Buynkdere, nor Therapia, nor ambassadorial palace, nor town of Armenians or Franks; there are

only mountains, gorges separating them, small vales, carpeted with meadow grass, hollowed out between the roots of the rocks, rivulets winding in them, torrents whitening them with their foam, forests hanging upon their flanks, creeping into their ravines, and descending to the margins of the numerous gulfs on the coast; a variety of forms and tints, of foliage and verdure, such as the pencil of a landscape painter never delineated from imagination. A few isolated houses, inhabited by sailors or gardeners, scattered at irregular distances on the beach, or perched on the glades of a wooded hill, or clustered on the rocky headland, where the current wafts you, lashing itself into ripples blue as the sky of night; a few white fishing sails creeping into the deep bays, and gliding from one plane-tree to another, like a bleached damask folded by the laundress; countless swarms of white birds pecking on the borders of the meadows; eagles hovering from the mountain heights above the sea; unfathomable creeks, entirely closed in by rocks, and the trunks of gigantic trees, whose boughs, loaded with leaves, bend over the waters, and form alcoves on the sea, into which the caïques dive. One or two villages concealed in the shade of these creeks, with their gardens spreading behind them on the green slopes, and their clumps of trees at the foot of the rocks, with their boats cradled in the placid water at their doors, their flocks of pigeons on the roofs, their women and children at the windows, their old men seated under the umbrageous plane at the foot of the minaret; husbandmen returning from the fields in their caïques; others filling their boats with green faggots, myrtle, or flowering heaths, to dry them for firing in the winter, so concealed behind these loads of pendant verdure, drooping over the sides and dipping into the water, that we can perceive neither boat nor rower, and we believe we see a portion of the bank, detached from the land by the current, floating at hazard upon the sea, with its foliated boughs, and its sweet-scented flowers.

The shore presents this aspect as far as the castle of Mahomet II., which on this side also seems to close the Bosphorus, like a Swiss lake. Beyond, it changes character; the hills, less harsh, lower their crests, and hollow out more gently their narrow valleys; Asiatic villages extend, more beautified and crowded; the calm waters of Asia, like a charming plain, overshadowed by trees, and sprinkled with kiosks and Moorish fountains, open to the eye; numerous Constantinople carriages, a sort of cage of gilded wood, placed on four wheels and drawn by two oxen, are scattered on the lawns; Turkish women descend from them veiled, and seat themselves in groups at the foot of the trees, or on the banks of the sea, with their children and their black slaves; parties of men are reclining at a distance, taking coffee and smoking pipes; the various dyes of the men and children's garments, and the dusky colour of the women's veils, form beneath these trees a most fantastic mosaic of tessellated colouring to fascinate the eye; oxen and buffaloes for the yoke are grazing in the meadows; the Arab horses, covered with trappings of velvet, silk, and gold, are paraded near the caïques, which are landing in shoals full of Armenian and Jewish females; these latter seat themselves unweaved on the grass at the edge of the rivulet; they compose a link of women and young girls, in various costumes and attitudes; there are some of ravishing beauty, which the strange diversity of the head-dresses and apparel considerably heightens. I have often thus seen several women from the Turkish harems divested of their veils; they are almost all of low stature, extremely pale, with pensive eyes, and an emaciated sickly appearance. Speaking generally, the climate of Constantinople, notwithstanding all its apparent claims to salubrity, appears to me unhealthy; the women, at least, are far from meriting that reputation for beauty which they enjoy; the Armenian and Jewish women alone appear to me handsome. But still, how different from the beauty of the Jewesses and Armenians of Arabia, and especially from the indescribable charms of the Greek women of Syria and Asia Minor!

A little farther on, completely on the margin of the waters of the Bosphorus, rises the magnificent new

palace, at present inhabited by the sultan. Begler-bey is an edifice in the Italian taste, mingled with Indian and Moorish designs; an immense centre of several stories, with wings and inner gardens; large parterres, planted with roses, and watered with spouting fountains, stretch behind the buildings between the mountain and the palace; a narrow granite quay separates the windows from the sea. I leisurely passed under this palace, where so many cares and apprehensions keep watch beneath marble and gold. I perceived the sultan seated on a divan in one of the kiosks on the sea; Achmet-Pacha, one of his young favourites, was standing near him. The sultan, attracted by the European costume, pointed us out to Achmet-Pacha, as if asking him who we were. I saluted the lord of Asia in the oriental mode, and he very graciously returned my salutation. All the blinds of the palace were open, and we saw the rich decorations of this magnificent and delightful residence brilliantly sparkling. The wing inhabited by the women, or the harem, was closed; it is very extensive, but the number of the women who dwell therein is unknown. Two caïques, completely covered with gilding, and mounted with twenty-four rowers each, were at the palace gate on the sea; these caïques are an honour to the most exquisite taste in design as displayed in Europe, and to the sumptuousness of the East. The prow of one of them, which projected at least twenty-five feet, was formed by a swan of gold, with expanded wings, which seemed as if it bore an olden bark on the waves; a silk pavilion, supported on columns of gold, formed the poop, and rich Cashemire shawls served as a seat for the sultan; the prow of the second caïque was an arrow of feathered gold, which seemed flying, as if struck from the bow, over the sea.

I lingered a long time out of sight of the sultan, to admire this palace and these gardens. All appears arranged in perfect taste. I know nothing in Europe which presents to the eye more magnificence and magical effect in royal abodes; all seemed to spring from the hands of the artist entire, radiant with lustre and gorgeousness; the roofs of the palace were masked by gilded balustrades, and the chimneys even, which disfigure the outlines of all our public edifices in Europe, were columns gilded and fluted, whose elegant capitals added an architectural decoration to the building. I am attached to this prince, who passed his infancy in the gloom of the Seraglio dungeons; menaced every day with death; instructed in misfortune by the sage and unfortunate Selim; elevated to the throne by the death of his brother; brooding for fifteen years in the silence of his own thoughts over the enfranchisement of the empire, and the restoration of Islamism by the destruction of the janissaries; executing his purpose with heroism and the calmness of fatalism; unceasingly braving the prejudices of his people to regenerate them; bold and unmoved amid peril; mild and merciful when he can consult his heart, but wanting support around him; without instruments to execute the good he meditates, unappreciated by his subjects, betrayed by his pachas, despoiled by his nightours, abandoned by fortune, without which man can effect nothing; aided by his own acts the ruin of his throne and empire; giving himself up in the end to pleasure, and hastening to enjoy, in the voluptuousness of the Bosphorus, his modicum of existence, and his phantom of sovereignty! A man of good intentions and correct purpose, but a man of insufficient genius and of too weak a purpose; resembling the last of the Greek emperors, whose place he occupies, and whose destiny he seems to represent; worthy of another people and a better era; and capable at least of dying like a hero! On one occasion he was a great man. History presents no page comparable to that which records the destruction of the janissaries: it was a revolution, the most vigorously meditated, and the most heroically accomplished, of which I know any example. Mahmoud illustrates this page, but why is it the only one? The most difficult part was effected; the tyrants of the empire struck down, there needed but the will to follow up the blow, to invigorate the empire

by civilising it. Mahmoud stopped short. Is it because genius is more rare than heroism?

After the palace of Begler-bey, the coast of Asia again becomes woody and deserted as far as Scutari, which glitters, like a garden of roses, at the extremity of a cape, at the entrance to the Sea of Marmora. Opposite the verdant point of the Seraglio presents itself to the eye, and between the European coast, crowned with its three painted towns, and the quay of Stamboul, all radiant with its cupolas and minarets, expands the immense port of Constantinople, where the ships, moored to the two shores, leave only a wide thoroughfare to the caïques. I glide through this labyrinth of vessels, like a Venetian gondola under the shadows of palaces, and I step on shore at the bank of the dead, beneath an avenue of cypresses.

May 29.—I have been conducted this morning, by a young man of Constantinople, to the market for slaves.

After having traversed the long streets of Stamboul, which run, side by side, with the streets of the old Seraglio, and passed by several magnificent bazaars, enumbered with a countless throng of merchants and buyers, we mounted by small narrow streets to a miry square, from which the gate of another bazaar opened. Thanks to the Turkish costume in which we were attired, and to the perfection in the idiom of my guide, they permitted us to enter this human market. How many a sad and successive revelations to the reason of man have been needed, in order that force should cease to be a right in his eyes, and slavery be once a crime and a blasphemy to his intelligence! What a progress!—and how many does it not promise! How many things there are which shock not us, but which will be incomprehensible abominations in the eyes of our descendants! I thought on these things whilst entering into this bazaar where they sell life, soul, body, another's liberty, as we sell an ox or a horse, and where they look upon themselves as legitimate possessors of what they have thus purchased! How many conceded rights are there of this nature, of which we take no account! They are legitimate, however, for we cannot ask of man more than he knows. His convictions are to him truths; he possesses none other. God alone has them all with him, and distributes them to us in proportion to, and according to the advance of, our progressive understandings.

The slave-market is a vast uncovered court, surrounded by a roofed-in portico. Beneath this portico, round which runs a wall breast-high towards the court, doors open into the chambers where the merchant-keep the slaves. These doors remain open, in order that the purchasers, as they walk about, may see the slaves. The men and women are kept in separate divisions; the women are unveiled. Besides the slave-shut up in these low chambers, there was a great number grouped in the gallery under the portico of the court. We commenced by surveying the different groups. The most remarkable was a cluster of young Abyssinian girls, to the number of twelve or fifteen; leaning against each other, like antique figures of caryatides supporting a vase upon their heads, they formed a circle with all their faces turned to the spectators. Their visages were generally of great beauty. Their eyes were of the hue of almonds, their noses aquiline, their lips small, their cheeks of a delicate and oval contour, and their long black hair as glossy as the wing of a dove. The pensive, sad, and languishing expression of countenance perceptible on the Abyssinian females, renders them, in spite of the copper colour of their complexions, a race greatly to be admired; they are tall, slim in shape, and erect as the shoots of the reeds in their beautiful country. Their arms are of a ravishing mould. These young girls had no other garment than a long chemise, of coarse, yellowish cloth. They had on their legs circlets of blue glass beads, strung on their legs, motionless, their heads supported on the palms of their hands, or on their knees, they looked at us with an expression as mild and pensive as the eye of the kid or the lamb, which the peasant holds by a cord and exposes in a village fair; sometimes one

of them spoke a word, and then smiled. There was one who held a little infant in her arms, and who was weeping, because the merchant wished to sell it without her to a dealer in children. Not far from this group were seven or eight negroes, from eight to twelve years of age, pretty well dressed, with every appearance of health and happiness; they were playing together at an eastern game, the instruments of which are little pebbles, which they dispose in different combinations in small holes made in the sand; whilst so occupied, the merchants and dealers were walking round them, taking them in turns by the arm, examining them with attention from head to foot, feeling them with their hands, and making them show their teeth to judge of the age and state of health, after which the boys, interrupted for a moment in their play, returned to it with eagerness.

I afterwards passed under the covered porticoes filled with a swarm of slaves and buyers. The Turks who drive this trade were walking about, superbly dressed in furred pelisses, and with long pipes in their hands, through the different groups, with inquisit and pre-occupied countenances, and watching, with a suspicious eye, the slightest glance cast into the interior of their magazines of men and women; but taking us for Arabs or Egyptians, they durst not however interdict our access to any chamber. Itinerant vendors of small cakes and dried fruits were going round the gallery, selling the slaves a little nourishment. I slipped a few piastres into the hands of one of them, in order that he might distribute his basket amongst a group of little negro children, who eagerly devoured these confectionaries.

I remarked an unfortunate negress, eighteen or twenty years old, singularly beautiful, but of a sad and chagrined aspect. She was seated on a bench in the gallery, richly attired, and her face unveiled, in the midst of a dozen of other negroesses in rags, exposed for sale at very low prices; she was holding on her knees a fine little boy, three or four years of age, likewise very handsomely dressed. This child, who was a mulatto, had the most beautiful features, the most graceful mouth, and the most intelligent and haughty eyes, that it is possible to imagine. I crossed him, and gave him cakes and sugar-plums, which I purchased at a neighbouring stall; but his mother, tearing out of his hand what I had given him, cast it, with anger and disdain, on the pavement. She held down her head and wept; I thought it was from apprehension of being sold separately from her son, and, touched with her melancholy fate, I begged M. Morlach, my obliging conductor, to buy her, with her boy, on my account. I would have taken them away together, and would have educated the child whilst leaving it with the mother. We addressed ourselves to a broker of M. Morlach's acquaintance, who entered into a negotiation with the owner of the beautiful slave and her child. The owner, at first, gave every token of being disposed to sell her, and the poor creature began to sob more violently, and the little boy commenced weeping, passing his arms round the neck of his mother. But this bargaining was a mere pretence on the part of the merchant; and when he saw that we gave, without hesitation, the high price which he put upon the couple, he took the broker aside, and confessed to him that the slave was not for sale; that she was the slave of a rich Turk, who was the father of the child; that she was of too haughty and intractable a disposition in the harem; and that, to correct and humble her, her master had sent her to the bazaar, as if to get rid of her, but with secret directions not to sell her. This mode of correction is often adopted; and when a Turk is displeased, his most ordinary menace is the threat of sending to the bazaar. We therefore passed on. We looked into a great number of the compartments, each containing four or five women, almost all black and ugly, but with appearance of good health. The greatest part seemed indifferent to their situation, and even solicited purchasers; they chatted and laughed amongst themselves, making critical observations on the figures of those who were bargain-

ing for them. One or two were weeping, and concealing themselves in the bottom of the room, and came forward with resistance to place themselves for examination on the bench, where they were in general seated. We saw several removed, who went in quietly with the Turk who had bought them, taking their little bundle folded in a kerchief, and covering their faces with their long white veils. We were witnesses of two or three acts of mercy which Christian charity might envy the good Mussulmans. Turks come to purchase old slaves, rejected from the houses of their masters on account of their old age and infirmities, and take them away with them. We asked for what these wretched women could be useful. "To please God," replied the broker; and M. Morlach gave me to understand that several Mahometans thus sent into the markets to buy up poor infirm slaves of both sexes, to support them from charity in their houses. The spirit of God never utterly abandons man.

The last chambers that we visited were half closed, and they disputed our entry for some time. There was only one female slave in each, under the guard of a woman. They were young and beautiful Circassians, fresh imported from their native land. They were dressed in white, with a remarkable elegance and vanity. Their beautiful features testified neither chagrin nor astonishment, simply a disdainful indifference. The charming white slaves of Georgia and Circassia are become extremely rare, since the Greeks no longer supply the seraglios, and Russia has forbid the traffic in women. However, the Georgian families still rear their daughters for this degrading commerce, and contraband dealers penetrate at intervals, and carry off cargoes of them. The price of these lovely creatures reaches 12,000 or 20,000 piastres (£120 or £200 sterling), whilst black slaves of ordinary beauty do not bring more than 500 or 600 francs (£20 or £25), and the most handsome 1000 or 1200 (£40 or £50). In Arabia and Syria they may be had for 500 or 600 piastres (£6 or £8). One of these Georgians was of perfect beauty; the features delicate and sensitive, the eyes mild and melancholy, the skin of matchless whiteness and lustre. But the countenances of the females of that country are far from possessing the charm and purity of those of the Arabs; the North is perceptible in their visages. She was sold before our eyes, for the haven of a young pacha in Constantinople.

We departed with afflicted hearts and moistened eyes from this scene, which is renewed every day and every hour in the towns of the East, and we returned in sadness to the bazaar of Stamboul. Behold the effect of stationary legislations! They consecrate ancient barbarisms, and give the stamp of antiquity and legitimacy to all crimes. Those who cling fanatically to the past, are equally culpable and equally disastrous to humanity as those who are fanatics as to the future. The first sacrifice mankind to their ignorant prejudices and recollections, the last to their anticipations and haste. If man acted, thought, and believed, as his fathers did before him, all human nature would be reduced to fetichism and slavery. Reason is the sun of humanity; it is the infallible and perpetual revelation of divine laws applicable to societies. We must keep moving to follow it, under the penalty of remaining in evil and darkness; but we must not go in advance of it, lest we fall down the precipices. To understand the past without useless regret, to bear with the present, and availing to ameliorate it, to hope for the future by making preparations for it—such is the rule of wise men and beneficent institutions. The sin against the Holy Ghost is the combat of certain men against all amelioration of things; a selfish and irrational effort to keep back the moral and social world, which God and nature are always propelling onwards. The past is the sepulchre of a humanity gone by; we ought to respect it, but we should not shut ourselves within it and prefer it as our abode.

The great bazaars for different articles of merchandise, and especially that for spices, are long wide arched galleries, lined with foot-pavements, and shops full of

all sorts of commodities. Armouries, horse-trappings, jewellery, eatables, leather manufactures, Indian and Persian shawls, fabrics of Europe, carpets of Damascus and Caranania, essences and perfumes of Constantinople; hookahs and pipes of all forms, and different degrees of splendour; amber and coral carved after the fashion of the orientals, to smoke through; packages of cut tobacco, folded like reams of yellow paper; stalls of pastry, inviting the appetite by its form and variety; handsome confectioners' shops, with a prodigious variety of sugar-plums, preserved fruits, and sweetmeats of all sorts; magazines of drugs, whence a perfume exhales which scents the whole bazaar; Arab mantles, wove with gold and goat-hair; women's veils, embroidered with spangles of gold and silver. In the midst of all this, an immense and incessantly renewed throng of Turks, with pipes at the mouth or in the hand, followed by slaves, of women enveloped in veils, accompanied by negresses carrying lovely children, of pachas on horseback, moving with a slow pace through this crowded and silent concourse, and of Turkish carriages, closed with gilded trellice-work, conducted by coachmen on foot with long white beards, and full of women, who stop from time to time to bargain at the doors of the jewellers' shops. Such is the picture of the whole of these bazaars. They would be several miles in length, if they were united in a single arcade. As people are squeezed and elbowed against each other in these bazaars, and as the Jews hang out and sell the clothes of plague-patients in them, they are the most active instruments of contagion. The plague broke out a few days ago in Pera with five or six fatal cases, and we passed with uneasiness through this crowd, which to-morrow may decimate.

June 18.—The days are passed in our retreat at Buyukdere, with the Bosphorus and the Black Sea beneath our eyes, in study and reading. The evenings are devoted to excursions in caïques to Constantinople, to Belgrade and its incomparable forests, to the Asiatic shore, to the mouth of the Euxine, or to the valley of roses, situated behind the hills of Buyukdere. I often go there. This delightful valley is watered by a spring, where the Turks come to lull their senses with the murmur and refreshing coolness of the water, the perfume of roses, and the song of nightingales. Over the fountain are five immense trees, and a leafy café under their shade. Beyond, the valley contracts and leads to a slope of the mountain, where two small artificial lakes, reservoirs for the water which falls from a spring, sleep under the vast arches of plane-trees. The Armenian females come in the evening with their families, to sit on their banks and take supper. There are enchanting groups around the trunks of the trees; young girls dancing together; the orientals, in the fruition of their decorous and placid pleasures—all gives token that the mind is luxuriating in its own contemplations. They feel nature with more ecstasy than we. In no region has the tree or the fountain more devout adorers. There is a profound sympathy between their souls and the beauties of the land, the sea, and the sky. When I return in the evening from Constantinople in my caïque, and skirt the banks of the European shore by the light of the moon, there is a chain, a league in length, of women, and young girls, and children, seated in silence by groups on the edges of the granite quay, or on the parapets of the garden terraces; they pass there hours of pure delight, contemplating the sea, the woods, the moon, and breathing the calm of night. Our populations have no feeling for these natural sensualities; they have palled their sensations; they need factitious pleasures, and vices alone can excite them. Those to whom nature still speaks sufficiently loud to be understood and adored, are dreamers and poets—those poor wretches, whom the voice of God in his works, nature, love, and silent meditation, suffice.

I meet at Buyukdere and Therapia several persons whom I had previously known, amongst the Russians and diplomatists; amongst them Count Orloff and M. de Boutenief, Russian ambassador at Constantinople, a charming moraliser, a philosopher, and a statesman.

The Baron de Sturmer, Austrian internuncio, overwhelms me with civility. There is fresh political news from Europe. This is at present the important point. The Russians encamped in Asia, and at anchor under our windows: will they retire? For myself, I have no doubt of it. We are never in a hurry to seize upon a prey which cannot escape us. Count Orloff made me read an admirable letter yesterday, which the Emperor Nicholas had written to him. The following is its purport: "My dear Orloff!—When Providence has placed a man at the head of forty millions of people, it is that he may give the world, from his lofty station, an example of probity and fidelity to his word. I am that man. I will show myself worthy of the mission which I have received from God. As soon as the difficulties between Ibrahim and the sultan are smoothed, wait not a single day, but send back my fleet and army."

This is noble language, a position well assumed, a generosity fruitful in return. Constantinople will not fly away, and necessity will bring back the Russians, whom political probity withdraws for the moment.

June 20.—I have become acquainted here with an amiable and distinguished man, one of those men who are superior to their evil fortune, and who can avail themselves of the wave which threatens to overwhelm, to reach the shore in safety. M. Calosso, a Piedmontese officer, compromised, like many of his comrades, in the attempted military revolution of Piedmont in 1820, proscribed like the others, without asylum or sympathy in any quarter, came to Turkey. He presented himself to the sultan to drill his cavalry; he became his favourite, and military guide. Honest, skilful, and reserved, he himself moderated a dangerous predilection which might expose him too much to envy. His modesty and frankness pleased the pachas of the court and the ministers of the divan. He has made himself friends on all sides, and knows how to preserve them by the merit which first gained them. The sultan has raised him to dignity, without requiring his abjuration of his nationality or faith. He is now Rustem-bey with all the Turks, and an obliging and amiable Frank with all the Franks. He has visited me here, and offered all that his influence at the divan and the Seraglio can enable him to procure for me; unrestrained access, and the friendship of some of the principal officers of the court, facilities for seeing and learning every thing, which no Christian traveller has ever been able to obtain, not even the ambassadors. I have made preparations, with his assistance, for a complete inspection of the Seraglio, where no one has penetrated since Lady Mary Wortley Montague. We shall to-morrow make an attempt to survey together that mysterious abode, which he himself has not yet seen, but where he has connections with the first officers of the palace.

We began by paying a visit to Namuk-Pacha, one of the young favourites of the sultan, who had invited me to breakfast at his quarters in Scutari, and who had placed his horses at my disposition to visit the mountains of Asia. Namuk-Pacha was this day on duty at the palace of the sultan, at Begler-bey, on the banks of the Bosphorus. We disembarked there. From the station and favour possessed by Rustem-bey, we were permitted to pass the guards, and examine the environs of the imperial residence. The sultan was preparing to proceed to a small mosque in a European village on the other side of the Bosphorus, in front of Begler-bey. His caïques, superbly equipped, were moored along the quay, which borders the palace, and his Arab horses, of great beauty, were held ready in the courts by the saïs, for the sultan to mount in traversing the gardens. We entered a wing of the palace, separated from the main body of the building, in which the pachas, the officers on duty, and the staff of the palace, are quartered. We passed through vast saloons, where a crowd of military men, clerks, and slaves, were moving about. All was in motion as in a ministerial office, or in a European palace on a day of ceremony. The interior of this part of the palace was not furnished at all magnificently; divans, carpets, walls painted in fresco, and crystal lustres, were the sole decorations. The oriental costumes, the

turban, the pelisse, the wide pantaloons, the girdle, and the caftan of gold, being abandoned by the Turks for a miserable European costume, ill cut, and ridiculously worn, has changed the grave and imposing aspect of this people into a wretched parody on the Franks. The diamond star, which glitters on the breasts of the pachas and the viziers, is the only decoration which distinguishes them, and which recalls their former magnificence.

We were conducted through several saloons crowded with people, to a small apartment which looks on the outer gardens of the palace. There Namuk-Pacha came and joined us, sat down with us, caused pipes and sherbet to be brought, and introduced us to several of the young pachas, who possess with himself the favour of the sultan. Some colonels of the Nizam, or regular troops of the guard, came in and took part in the conversation. Namuk-Pacha, who had recently returned from his embassy to St Petersburg, spoke French with taste and fluency. His manners, formed on the Russian model, were those of an accomplished European diplomatist. He appeared to me of a sprightly and subtle intellect. Kalil-Pacha, who was then Capitain-Pacha (High Admiral), and who has since married the daughter of the sultan, spoke French equally well. Achmet-Pacha is also a young well-bred Turk, who has all the manners of a European. Nothing in this palace reminded me of an Asiatic court, except the black slaves, the eunuchs, the grated windows of the harem, the delightful shades, and the blue waters of the Bosphorus, on which our eyes fell when they wandered over the gardens. We conversed with discretion, but with freedom, on the state of the negotiations between Egypt, Europe, and Turkey; on the progress made, and to be made, by the Turks in tactics, in legislation, and in gaining weight in the political views of the different powers relatively to Turkey. Nothing in the conversation drew us to the reflection that we were talking concerning those who are called barbarians, with barbarians, and that the ear of the Grand Seigneur himself, that shadow of Allah, might be struck by the murmur of our discourse. There could not have been more close reasoning, more profound views, or more elegant language, displayed in a saloon in London or Vienna. These young men, eager for information and advancement, spoke of their position and of themselves with a noble and touching modesty.

The hour of prayer drawing nigh, we took leave of our hosts, adjourning till another occasion the request for our presentation to the sultan in person. Namuk-Pacha gave us in charge to a colonel of the imperial guard, whom he directed to guide and introduce us into the outer court of the mosque, which the sultan intended to visit. We crossed the Bosphorus accordingly, and were posted near the door of the small mosque on the steps leading up to it. A few minutes afterwards we heard the reports of the cannons from the fleet and the batteries, which announce to the capital every Friday that the sultan is going to the mosque, and we saw the two imperial caïques put off from the Asiatic coast, and shoot across the Bosphorus like arrows. No luxury in horses and carriages can approach the oriental sumptuousness of these gilded caïques, whose prows spring, like eagles of gold, twenty feet in front of the body of the caïques, and the twenty-four rowers in which, raising and lowering with a simultaneous movement their long oars, represent the flapping of two huge wings, and raise at every stroke a foaming swell, which lashes up against the sides of the caïque; and finally, the splendour of the silken pavilion, decorated with gold and plumes of feathers, the curtains of which are drawn back to allow a sight of the Grand Seigneur seated on a throne of Cashemire shawls, with his admirals and pachas at his feet. On reaching the shore, he sprang briskly to his feet, supporting his hands on the shoulders of Achmet and Namuk Pachas. The band of his guard, drawn up opposite to us, on the square of the mosque, struck up a flourish of drums and trumpets, and he advanced with rapid steps between two rows of officers and spectators.

Sultan Mahmud is about forty-five years of age, of middle height, and of an elegant and stately figure. His eye is blue and mild, his complexion dark and dusky, his mouth graceful and intellectual; his beard, black and glossy as jet, falls in thick folds upon his breast. It is the only remnant of the national costume that he has preserved; in other respects, except the want of a hat, he might be taken for a European. He wore pantaloons and boots, a brown surtout, with a collar embroidered with diamonds, and a small bonnet of red wool surmounted by a cluster of precious stones. He rather limped in his gait, and his look was uneasy. Something had annoyed him, or had strongly engaged his attention, for he spoke with vehemence and ill humour to the pachas who accompanied him. He slackened his pace when he was near us on the steps of the mosque, cast on us a gracious glance, and slightly moved his head, commanding Namuk-Pacha at the same time, by a gesture, to take the petition which a Turkish woman in a veil stretched out to him. He then entered the mosque, where he remained about twenty minutes. The military band played during the whole time portions of Mozart and Rossini's operas. When he came out of the mosque, his countenance was more open and serene, he bowed to the right and left, walked slowly towards the sea, and jumped with a smile on his lips into the caïque. In the twinkling of an eye we saw him touch the Asiatic shore, and re-enter the gardens of Begler-bey.

It is impossible to avoid being struck with the physiognomy of Mahmud, and offering up secret vows for a prince whose features bespeak such a masculine determination and profound sensibility. But alas! these vows fall coldly back on the heart, when we reflect on the gloomy future which awaits him. If he were in reality a truly great man, he might avert his destiny, and vanquish the fatality which encompasses him. There is yet time; so long as a nation is not utterly extinct, there remains in it, in its religion, and its nationality, a principle of energy and resurrection which an able and powerful intellect may render fruitful, stir up, regenerate, and guide to a glorious transformation; but Mahmud is a great man only in heart. Intrepid in facing danger and death, the main-spring of his determination relaxes when it becomes necessary to act and reign. Whatever may be his lot, history will pity and honour him. He has attempted great things; he felt that his people were extinguished if he did not regenerate them; he has applied the axe to the dead branches of the tree, but has not known how to give sap and life to what remained standing of the healthy and yet vigorous trunk. Is it his fault? I think it is. What remained to accomplish was nothing, compared to the destruction of the janissaries; nothing could resist him in Turkey. Europe, timid and blind, favoured him by its cowardice and inertness. Favourable circumstances are now lost; the time is past. The audacious Ibrahim has worked to his own advantage the unpopularity of the sultan; Russia has been accepted as protector; this disgraceful protection from a natural enemy against a revolted slave has irritated Islamism, and Mahmud has nothing now to depend upon but his personal courage. Surrounded by parasites and traitors, an insurrection may hurl him from the throne, and involve the empire in its final anarchy. Turkey hangs upon the life of Mahmud; the empire and he will perish on the same day. He is a prince of a grand and fatal destiny, who thus involves with him the two fairest portions of Europe and Asia!

June 21.—At eleven o'clock we landed on the bank of the old Scraglio, and entered the streets which encompass it. I visited in passing the Divan of the Porte, a vast palace occupied by the viziers, where political discussions relative to the empire are held. There is nothing remarkable about it but the impression of the scenes of which it has been the theatre—nothing in the character of the edifice recalls so many sanguinary dramas. It is a large building of painted wood, with an outer staircase, and covered with a projecting roof, carved after the manner of the Indians or

Chinese. The rooms are bare, and covered with mats. We descended into the place where the redoubtable *porte* (door) of the Seraglio opens so often to vomit forth the bleeding heads of viziers, and even of sultans. We met with no obstacle in passing this door. The public has admission into the first court of the Seraglio. This immense court, planted with clumps of beautiful trees, slopes towards the left to the magnificent Hall of the Mint, a modern building without any thing of the oriental character. The Armenians, who have charge of the coinage, received us, and showed us the coilers in which the jewels they fabricated for the Seraglio were kept. Numberless pearls and diamonds, the silly wealth that ruins an empire! As soon as a state becomes civilised, these ideal representations of riches are exchanged for the sterling and productive wealth wrought from agriculture and commerce. I staid here only a few minutes, and we advanced into the last court of the Seraglio, which is inaccessible to every one except those employed in the Seraglio, and the ambassadors on the days of their presentation at court. It is lined with several wings of palaces, and with kiosks, separated from each other; lodgings for the eunuchs, the guards, and slaves; fountains and trees distribute shade and coolness. When arrived at the third gate, the soldiers on guard under the arch obstinately refused to let us enter. It was in vain that Rustem-bey explained to the Turkish officer in command who he was; the latter answered by opposing the trust with which he was charged, and by the allegation that his head would be in jeopardy if he allowed me to pass. We accordingly turned upon our heels with much chagrin, in order to retrace our steps, when we were happily accosted by the *kesnedar*, or grand treasurer, who was returning from the Mint to his own apartments in the interior of the Seraglio. As he was a friend of Rustem-bey, the occasion of our embarrassment was explained to him, when he told us to follow him, which having with alacrity obeyed, we were introduced without any difficulty into the court of the *icoglans*. This court, which is not so large as the others, is formed by several small palaces in the form of kiosks, with very low roofs, which project seven or eight feet beyond the walls, being supported by small columns, or Moorish pillars, of painted wood. Indeed, the columns, the pillars, the walls, and the roofs, are all of carved wood, painted of various colours. The courts and gardens, which stretch in the intervals between the kiosks, irregularly scattered over the ground, are planted with trees of great beauty and age without order, their branches waving over the edifices, and shrouding the roofs and terraces. The right wing of these buildings contains the kitchens, a huge erection, whose numerous chimneys and smoky walls give token of the purpose for which it is destined. We may have some idea of the vastness of this building, when we learn that the sultan feeds all the individuals attached to the court and the palace, and that the number of mouths is at least 16,000 daily.

A little in front of the kitchens is a delightful little palace, surrounded by a gallery, or portico, on the ground floor, which is appropriated to the pages, or *icoglans*, of the Seraglio. It is here that the sultan causes the sons of the court families to be reared and educated, as well as young slaves destined for the occupations of the Seraglio or the empire. This palace, which was formerly the residence of the sultans themselves, is decorated both within and without by a profusion of carvings, sculptures, and gilded mouldings, executed in pretty good taste. The ceilings are as rich as those of the most superb palaces in France or Italy, and the floors are in mosaic. It is divided into several saloons of nearly the same size, lined on both sides with niches and stalls of carved wood, bearing considerable resemblance to those stalls of beautiful workmanship which are found in the chancels of our ancient cathedrals. Each of them forms a chamber for an *icoglan*. At the bottom is an alcove, where he folds up his cushions and carpets, and hangs or locks up in his chest of gilded wood, his various garments. Above

these stalls runs a sort of gallery, projecting, divided, ornamented, and decorated, which contains as many stalls as the lower room. The whole is lighted by cupolas, or small windows, at the top of the edifice. The young *icoglans*, who had all formerly been pupils of Rustem-bey, received him with such joy and demonstrations of attachment as were truly affecting. A father, who had been long expected, could not have been more affectionately greeted upon his coming. The excellency of heart displayed by these youths touched him even to tears; I was myself much moved at so spontaneous and frank an outburst of affection and gratitude.

They took hold of his hands, they kissed the hem of his surtout—"Rustem-bey! Rustem-bey!" exclaimed they to each other, and then all ran up to their friend, panting and colouring with delight. He could not extricate himself from their caresses, they addressed to him such charming phrases: "Rustem-bey, why have you not come to see us for so long a time? You were our father, and we languish in your absence. All that we know we owe to your instructions. Allah and the sultan have sent you to make men of us, when we were but slaves, and the sons of slaves. The name of the Osmanlis was a reproach and a byword in Europe; now we know how to defend it and render it honourable; but, pray, tell the sultan that he must send you to us again, as we are pining in listlessness and melancholy."

Five or six of these young people, with mild, open, intelligent, and handsome features, took us by the hand and led us every where. They subsequently took us to their room for recreation; it is a kiosk surrounded with gushing fountains, which fall from the walls into marble basins, divans running round it, and a staircase concealed in the thickness of the walls conducting to the offices, where numerous slaves for the service of the *icoglans* keep always ready for them fire for their pipes, coffee, sherbet, and iced water. They play at all sorts of games in this saloon; several were engaged at chess. They ordered us sherbet and ices, and, stretching ourselves on the divans, we conversed a long time, concerning their studies and advancement in knowledge, concerning the political state of Europe, and the destinies of the empire. They talked wonderfully; they shuddered with indignation at the present state of the nation, and offered up prayers for the success of the sultan in his schemes of innovation. I have never witnessed a more lively ardour for the regeneration of a country, than that which lighted up the eyes and warmed the words of these young men. The young Italians to whom one speaks of independence and enlightened ideas, do not burst into more enthusiasm. Their countenances were radiant with animation whilst we discoursed with them. The oldest might be twenty or twenty-two years of age, and the youngest twelve or thirteen. Except at the military hospital for orphans of sailors at Greenwich, I have never beheld faces more calculated to excite admiration than those of some of these youths. They were extremely unwilling to let us leave them, and accompanied us, as far as it was permitted them to go, into the gardens, courts, and kiosks around. The eyes of one or two of them were moistened with tears, when they took leave of Rustem-bey.

The *kesnedar*, whilst we were thus engaged, had gone to give orders to the eunuchs and guards of the gardens and palaces, not to interfere with our rambles, and to let us penetrate wherever we desired. At the bottom of the court, a little beyond the hall of the *icoglans*, a large palace shut up the view and the passage. It was the one which the sultans themselves inhabit, and was surrounded, like all the kiosks and edifices that we had visited, by a gallery covered by a prolongation of the eaves. The numberless doors and windows of the apartments opened on this gallery. The palace was only one story high. We entered into the large saloons which serve as a vestibule, and give access to the different apartments. These rooms are irregular, forming a labyrinth of pillars, supporting the roof and ceilings, and arranged into vast circular corridors. The pillars,

ceilings, and walls, are of wood, painted and carved in Moorish ornaments. The doors of the imperial apartments were open; we saw several of them, all nearly similar in arrangement, and the decoration of the mouldings and gildings of the ceilings. Cupolas of wood or marble, pierced with small openings in arabesque, through which a soft and subdued light stole upon the walls; wide low divans running round the sides; no furniture or seats, but carpets, mats, and cushions; windows down to within half a foot of the floor opening on the courts, the galleries, the terraces, and the gardens: this was the whole. On the side of the palace opposite to that whereby we had entered, stretched a terraced platform, built of stone, and paved with slabs of marble. A beautiful kiosk, where the sultan seats himself when he receives the ambassadors, is separated from the palace a few yards, and reared a few feet in elevation upon this platform; it resembles a small Moorish chapel. A divan goes round it, and windows are on all sides, whence the view of Constantinople, the harbour, the Sea of Marmora, and the Bosphorus, is unrestrained, and perfectly admirable. Marble fountains gush and spout in jets upon the open gallery, between the kiosk and the palace. It is a delightful spot. The shrubs and rose-bushes of the small gardens, which cover the lower terraces, creep on the balustrades and carvings, spreading their perfume around. A few pictures in marble and wood are suspended on the walls, representing views of Mecca and Medina. I examined them with great curiosity. They are, as it were, plans without perspective, perfectly conformable to what Alibey reports of Mecca, the kaaba, and the disposition of the different sacred monuments of the holy town. They prove that that traveller really went and visited them.

What he says of the circular gallery which surrounds the area of the different mosques, is attested by these paintings. There is a portico which reminds one of that at Saint Peter's in Rome.

Pursuing the platform of the palace to the left, along a narrow balcony supported by high terraces, is the harem, or palace of the sultanas. It was closed; there remained in it only a few odalisques. We did not approach very near this abode forbidden to the gaze. We saw nothing but the grated windows and the delightful balconies encircled with trellis-work, and blinds interspersed with flowers, where the women pass their days contemplating the gardens, the city, and the sea. Our eyes fell upon a multitude of flower-plots, enclosed with marble walls, watered by spouting fountains, and symmetrically planted with all sorts of scented flowers and odoriferous herbs. These small gardens, to which the descent is by staircases, and which run from one to the other, have sometimes elegant kiosks in them. It is in these charming localities that the women and children of the harem stroll and enjoy nature.

We had reached the slope of the Seraglio, which commences to fall towards the harbour and the Sea of Marmora. This is the most elevated spot of this matchless site, whence the eye takes in all the hills and all the seas of Constantinople. We lingered a long time surveying the prospect. It is the converse of the view which I have described from the belvedere of Pera. Whilst we were upon this terrace of the palace, the hour for meals struck, and we saw a great number of slaves pass, bearing on their heads large pewter trays which contained the dinners of the officers, the clerks, the eunuchs, and the women of the Seraglio. We partook of some of these dinners. They comprised pilans, fowls, koubes, small balls of rice and hashed meat, pieces of roasts on a vine leaf, cakes of bread like wafers, and a pitcher of water. Wherever the slave met his master, he deposited the dinner, sometimes in the corner of a room in the palace, sometimes on the terrace under the projecting roof, or in the gardens under a tree in the vicinity of a fountain.

The kesnedar came in search of us, and conducted us into the kiosk where he slept, in front of the treasury of the Seraglio. This treasury, in which are buried the incalculable riches collected since the founding of the empire, is a large stone building, preceded

by a covered portico. It is not very high above the ground, the doors being low, and the chambers subterranean. Immense coffers of red-painted wood contain the gold and silver coins. A certain number is extracted every week for the service of the empire. There were several of them standing under the portico. We did not ask admission to it, but we were told, that, independently of the gold and silver monies, this kesné contains heaps of pearls and diamonds. This is very probable, as it is the custom of the sultans to make continual deposits, and to draw out only upon the last extremities of the state. But as the value of these precious stones is only conventional, if the sultan wished to make use of them by bringing them into the market for sale, he would lower the price by the excessive supply; and this resource for recruiting his finances, which appears so immense, might in reality prove a very precarious one.

The kesnedar, a frank, lively, and intellectual personage, took me into the apartment which he occupies. I found there, for the first time in Turkey, some degree of luxury in the furniture and conveniences of Europe. The divans were high, and covered with silk cushions; there were tables and wooden shelves around the room, and upon these shelves registers, books, charts, and a terrestrial globe. We were served with sweetmeats and sherbet. We conversed upon the arts and sciences of Europe, compared to the state of knowledge in the Ottoman empire. The kesnedar appeared to me as well informed and as free from prejudices as a European. He understood all that was going on; he desired the success of Mahmoud in his attempts at amelioration; but being old, and having passed his life in the confidential employments of the Seraglio under four sultans, he seemed to entertain little hope, and to resign himself with philosophic indifference to the future. He led a quiet and solitary life, in the depths of this abandoned Seraglio. He subjected me to a long interrogation upon all topics; philosophy, religion, poetry, the popular errors of Europe, the governments of the different states, whether monarchical or republican, systems of politics and tactics—all was passed in review by him, with a correctness of judgment, and appropriate and sensible reflections, which showed me that I had to do with one of the most distinguished men of the empire. He brought me a sphere and a terrestrial globe, and desired that I would explain to him the motions of the stars and the divisions of the earth. He took notes of every thing I said, and appeared quite enchanted. He begged me to stay supper with him, and to pass the night. We had great difficulty in resisting his entreaties, and we could only overcome his urgency, by telling him that my wife and friends, knowing I was in the Seraglio, would be in terrible alarm, if they did not see me reappear. "You are, in fact," said he to me, "the first Frank who has ever entered it, and that is a good reason why you should be treated as a friend in it. The sultan is great, and Allah is for all!" He accompanied us to the inner staircase, which descends from the platform of the sultan's palace into the maze of little gardens appertaining to the harem, of which I have spoken, and delivered us to the care of a chief of the bostanghis, who conducted us from kiosk to kiosk, from parterre to parterre, all covered with flowers, and all watered by spouting fountains, as far as the gate in a high wall, which separates the interior gardens of the Seraglio from the extensive outer lawns. There we found ourselves at the foot of enormous plane-trees, which rise more than a hundred feet high, opposite the walls and elevated balconies of the harem. These trees form a forest cut into groups by verdant glades, and beyond them are fruit trees and large vegetable gardens cultivated by negro slaves, who have their cabins under the branches. Rivulets of water irrigate these cultivated tracts. Not far from the harem is an old and magnificent palace of Bajazet abandoned to ivy and owls. It is of stone, and of an admirable Arab architecture. They might easily restore it, and it of itself would be worth the whole Seraglio together, but tradi-

tion bears that it is peopled by evil spirits, and no Osmanli ever penetrates into it. As we were alone, I entered into one or two subterranean vaults of this beautiful palace, which were choked with fragments and stones; the walls and staircases which I had time to inspect, seemed of the most elegant workmanship. Having reached one of the gates in the outer walls of the Seraglio, we retrograded, still under a forest of planes, sycamores, and cypresses, the largest that I have ever seen, and we made the tour of the exterior gardens. They brought us back to the borders of the Sea of Marmora, where are two or three superb palaces which the sultan occupies during the summer. The apartments open on the stream of the canal, and are perpetually cooled by the breeze. Farther on, grassy hills bear small mosques, kiosks, and sheets of water enclosed by marble parapets, and shaded by gigantic trees. There we seated ourselves, amongst the flowers and the jets of murmuring water. The high walls of the Seraglio were behind us, upon a sloping lawn terminating at the sea; between the sea and us a fringe of cypresses and planes, lining the exterior wall; through this curtain of foliage, the waters of the Sea of Marmora, the isles of Princes, vessels under sail, their masts gliding from tree to tree, and Scutari, reddened by the rays of the setting sun. The gilded peaks of the Mount of Giants, and the snowy summits of the mountains of Phrygia, formed the frame of this divine picture.

Such, then, is the interior of this mysterious abode, the most beautiful on earth, the scene of so many bloody dramas, where the Ottoman empire was cradled and grew to maturity, but where it will not die, for since the massacre of the janissaries Mahmoud no longer inhabits it. A man of mild manners, and prone to enjoyment, these blood-stained events of his reign have disgusted him. Perhaps, also, he does not find himself quite safe in the midst of the fanatical population of Stanhoul, and prefers having a foot on Asia and his fleet, amid his thirty palaces on the banks of the Bosphorus. The general character of this admirable residence consists not in its vastness, nor its convenience, nor its magnificence, for it is a series of tents of gilded wood pierced with holes. The character of the palace is in accordance with that of the Turkish people—a feeling and love for nature. The instinct for beautiful sites, glittering seas, umbrageous shades, springs of water, extensive prospects, closed by the snowy peaks of mountains, is the predominant one of this people. We perceive in it the recollections of a pastoral and agricultural race, which loves to recall its origin, and whose tastes are all simple and instinctive. These people have placed the palace of their sovereigns, the capital of their imperial city, on the slope of the most beautiful hill in the empire, and perhaps in the whole world. This palace has neither the interior luxury nor the shrouded voluptuousness of a European palace; it has only vast gardens, where trees grow free and eternal as in an untraversed forest, where waters murmur, where doves coo; chambers, pierced with numerous windows, always open; terraces hovering over the gardens and the sea, and grated kiosks, where the sultans, seated behind their blinds, can enjoy both solitude and the enchanting prospect of the Bosphorus. It is the same throughout Turkey; rich and poor, high and low, have but one want, one feeling, in the choice and arrangement of their dwellings—to enjoy the view of a beautiful landscape; or if the situation and poverty of their house cannot afford it, to have at least a tree, birds, a sheep, and pigeons, in a plot of ground around the cabin. Thus, wherever there is an elevated, salubrious, or agreeable site in the landscape, a mosque, a santoun, or a Turkish hovel, is found there. There is not a situation in the Bosphorus, an eminence, or a smiling bay, on the European or Asiatic coast, on which a vizier or a pacha has not laid out a villa and a garden. To sit under the shade, in front of a magnificent prospect, with beautiful foliage above their heads, a fountain near at hand, the country or the sea before the eyes, and there to pass hours and days in vague and listless con-

templation—such is the enjoyment of the Mussulmans. This explains the choice and arrangement of their houses, and likewise why these people remain inactive and silent, until passions rouse them and restore them to their native energy, which they allow to slumber, but never to be extinguished. They are not loquacious as the Arabs; they attach little importance to the pleasures of display and society; those of nature satisfy them; they dream, meditate, and pray. They are a nation of philosophers; they draw all from nature, and refer all to God. God is for ever in their thoughts and in their mouths, not as a cold idea, but as a palpable, clear, and practical reality. Their virtue lies in the perpetual adoration of the divine will; their dogma is fatalism. With this faith they conquered the world, and they lose it with the same facility and the same tranquillity.

We issued by the gate which opens on the harbour, and I entered the beautiful kiosk on the quay, where the sultan seats himself when his fleets depart or return from an expedition, and fire salutes to their master.

June 22.—Two of my friends quit me, and depart for Europe; I remain alone at Buyukdere, with my wife and M. de Campos.

June 25.—We have passed two days at Belgrade, a village in the midst of the forest of that name, four leagues from Constantinople; an immense forest of oaks, which covers the hills situated between the Bosphorus and the Sea of Marmora, at an equal distance from each, and stretches almost without interruption to the Balkan. The scene is as wild and graceful as in any of the forests of England, with a beautiful Greek village seated in a wide vale in the middle of the forest; Arcadian meadows, and a river flowing through the trunks of the oaks. There are magnificent artificial lakes formed in the basin of the elevated ridge to retain the waters, and feed the fountains of Constantinople. We were entertained at the house of Monsieur and Madame Alcon, French bankers, established from father to son at Constantinople, who possess a delightful villa at Buyukdere, and a shooting-box in the village of Belgrade—a charming family, uniting elegance of manners, dignity of sentiment, and cultivation of mind, with the affluence, grace and simplicity of the East. I met at Constantinople a perfect Frenchman, in the person of M. Salzani, the brother of my banker at Smyraa, an honest, amiable, and intelligent man, who treated us as countrymen and friends. In general, the Frank society of Constantinople, composed of the members of the embassies, of the consulates, of the families of the dragomans and merchants of the different European nations, is considerably above the reputation it gains. Constituted as if in a small town, it has all the faults usually found in confined societies, scandal, and silly jealousies; but there is probity, information, elegance, and a graceful and cordial hospitality for strangers. They are equally versed in the affairs of Europe as the saloons of Vienna or Paris; they strongly participate in the activity of life which urges on the West. There are men of merit, and women of great accomplishments and virtues, in this society. I have seen saloons in Pera, Buyukdere, and Therapia, which we might have taken for the most distinguished assemblies of our large cities in Europe, if we had not cast our eyes on the Bosphorus, or on the Golden Horn, which was glittering, at the foot of the gardens, amongst the foliage of the trees.

June 29.—We make excursions in the Sweet Waters on the European side. At the bottom of the harbour of Constantinople, the hills of Eyoub, and those upon which Pera and Galata are situated, draw insensibly together, and leave merely a narrow bay between their shores. On the left extends the suburb of Eyoub with its mosque, where the sultans, on their accession to the throne, go to gird on the sabre of Mahomet, an act of religion in the Moslem despotism, serving as a coronation of blood, and a consecration of force. This mosque rises gracefully in a pyramidal form above the painted houses of the suburb, and the tops of its minarets are mingled at the horizon with the lofty and crumbling

Greek walls of Constantinople. On the banks of the channel, a beautiful palace of the sultan stretches along the waters. The windows are on a level with the stream, and the wide-spreading clustering branches of the trees in the garden, surmount the roof, and are reflected in the sea. Beyond, the sea is nothing but a river passing between two lawns. Gardens and woods cover these lovely slopes. A few Bulgarian shepherds play on the pipes, seated upon the rocks, guarding the horses and goats. At length, the river becomes nothing but a rivulet, the sides of which are touched by the oars of the caïques, and where the roots of superb elms, growing on the edges, impede the navigation. An immense meadow, shaded with clumps of plane-trees, extends on the right. To the left, wooded and verdant slopes rise up, and in front, the eye is lost between the leafy and irregular avenues of the trees which hang over the rivulet, and meander with it. Thus ends the beautiful harbour of Constantinople; thus ends the vast, the lovely, and the stormy Mediterranean. You run aground in an unbragous creek at the bottom of a gulf, on a grassy and flowery bank, far from the noise and commotion of the sea and the city. Oh! the life of a man thus finished, would end well! May God grant such an end to the life of my friends, who now take part and shine in the human strife! Silence after uproar, mild twilight after the glare of day, repose after agitation! A rest in the shade and in solitude to reflect upon the past life, and to die in peace and good-will with nature and mankind. For myself, I put up no prayer, I ask not even that; my solitude will be neither so sweet nor so calm.

Having lauded from the caïque, I followed the banks of the stream, to a kiosk which I saw gleaming amid the trees. At every step, I discovered a group of Armenian and Turkish women taking refreshments under the trees, and surrounded by their beautiful children playing on the sward. Saddle-horses superbly caparisoned, and *arabes*, (Constantinople carriages,) yoked with oxen, were scattered on the meadow. The kiosk is fronted and encircled by a rivulet, and by pieces of water where swans were floating. The gardens are small, but the whole meadow is a garden. The present sultan often came here formerly to pass the hot season. He loved this charming residence, because it pleased a favourite odalisque. Love had found a place in that heart after the massacres of the Atmeidan. In the midst of the voluptuousness of the harem, the beautiful odalisque died here. Since that event, Mahmoud has abandoned the place. The tomb of the odalisque is often, they say, visited by him, it alone consecrating the gardens of the deserted palace. The day was passed in the retreats of the valley, under the shade of the trees. I wrote verses to V—.

July 3.—I embarked this morning for Constantinople. I ascended the Bosphorus, and entered the Sea of Marmora; and after following for two hours the exterior walls which separate Stamboul from this sea, I disembarked at the foot of the castle of Seven Towers. We had neither *teskeré* nor guide. The Turkish soldiers, after many difficulties, permitted us to enter the first court of this fortress of blood, where the dethroned sultans were dragged by the populace, to await the death which is not long delayed when the people are both judges and executioners. Six or seven imperial heads have rolled on the steps of this staircase. Thousands of more vulgar heads have covered the battlements of the tower. The keeper refused to let us penetrate farther. Whilst he went to ask the orders of the commandant of the castle, the door of a low and arched room in the tower moved on its hinges. I made a few steps, and heard a growl which made the vault vibrate; I found myself face to face with an enormous chained lion. The lion sprang towards a beautiful greyhound which followed me, but it eluded his grasp, and crouched between my legs. The lion reared on his hind paws, but his chain kept him against the wall. I went out, and shut the door. The keeper came to tell me that his head would be unsafe on his shoulders if he introduced me into the interior. I therefore retired,

and issued from the enclosure of the town by a gate in the ancient walls, which opened into the country.

The walls of Constantinople commence at the castle of the Seven Towers, on the Sea of Marmora, and extend to the summits of the hills above the suburb of Eyoub, at the extremity of the harbour, and to the Sweet Waters of the European shore, thus encircling all the ancient city of the Greek emperors, and the town of Stamboul of the Turkish sultans, on the only side of the triangle which is not protected by the sea. On this side, there is nothing to defend Constantinople but the gentle slopes of its hills, which fall and die away into a beautiful cultivated plain. There was constructed that triple row of walls, where so many assaults miscarried, and behind which the miserable Greek empire so long deemed itself invulnerable. These astonishing walls still exist, and they are, after the Parthenon and Balbek, the most majestic ruins that can attest the seat of an empire. I followed their base along the outer side, this morning. They are stone terraces of fifty to sixty feet in height, and in some places from fifteen to twenty feet broad, covered with hewn stone of a greyish-white colour, and often entirely white, seeming as if just finished by the tools of the workmen. The ancient moats still divide you from them, choked with rains and a luxuriant vegetable soil, where trees and wall plants have taken root for ages, and form an impenetrable glais. It is a wild forest thirty or forty yards wide, crowded with birds' nests and reptiles. Sometimes this forest entirely conceals the sides of the walls and of the square towers with which it is flanked, and allows only a glimpse of the elevated battlements. At intervals, the wall reappears in its full height, and reflects with a dazzling lustre the rays of the sun. It is broken from the top by breaches of all varieties of form, in which vegetation springs as in the ravines of mountains, and falls confounded with the verdure of the moat. Almost everywhere its summit is crowned with a vegetable growth, which projects and forms a padding of plants, capitals of twisted and matted weeds and ivy. Here and there, from the centre of the towers, heaped with stones and dust, springs a plane or a yepress, which throws out its roots through the fissures of this pedestal. The weight of the boughs and leaves, and the gusts of wind with which these aerial trees are unceasingly struck, cause their trunks to incline towards the south, and they hang like uprooted trees with their vast branches strewn with a countless multitude of nests. Every 300 or 400 paces, we encounter a double tower of splendid architecture, with enormous arches over the gateway between the towers. The greatest number of these gates are now walled up, and the vegetation which has enveloped all, walls, gates, battlements, and turrets, composes in these places the most fantastic and engaging conjunctions with the ruins and workmanship of man. There are curtains of ivy which fall from the top of the towers like the folds of prodigious mantles; there are canes forming verdant bridges, with a span of fifty feet from one breach to another; there are plots of wallflowers scattered on the perpendicular walls, which the wind shakes like waves of blossoms; thousands of shrubs form undulating battlements of foliage in all varieties of tint. Out of all this, issue swarms of birds, when one throws a stone against the sides of the carpeted walls, or into the choked abysses at one's feet. We saw also a great number of eagles, which roost in the towers, and hover in the air all day above the eyries where their young are deposited.

July.—The same solitary life at Buyukdere. In the evenings on the sea or in the Valley of Roses. M. Truqui pays visits every week. Kind hearts are the only things which possess the virtue of consoling. God has gifted them with the only balm which there is for the incurable wounds of the heart—sympathy.

Yesterday, Count Orloff, commanding the fleet and army of Russia, and ambassador extraordinary from the Russian emperor to the Porte, celebrated his success and his departure by a military fête, given to the sultan on the Bosphorus. The gardens of the Russian embassy at Buyukdere cover the wooded flanks of a

hill which closes the gulf, the sea washing its base. From the terraces of the palace there is a view of the Bosphorus, in its double course towards Constantinople and the Black Sea. The whole day the cannon of the Russian fleet, lying at the foot of the gardens before our windows, was firing minute guns, its masts streaming with flags, conformed to the eye with the green leaves of the large trees on the two shores. The sea was covered, from the morning, with small vessels and caïques, bearing from Constantinople 15,000 or 20,000 spectators, who spread themselves into the kiosks, the meadows, and on the rocks in the vicinity. A great number remained in the caïques, which, filled with Jewish, Armenian, and Turkish women, dressed in brilliant colours, floated, like clusters of flowers, here and there on the sea. The camp of the Russians, on the flanks of the Mountain of Giants, half a league from the fleet, stood out, with its white and blue tents, from the sombre verdure and scorched declivities of the mountain. In the evening, the gardens of the Russian embassy were illuminated by thousands of lamps, suspended on the branches of the woods. The vessels, also illuminated on all their masts, yards, and rigging, resembled fire-ships whose batteries have been sprung. Their sides kept vomiting streams of flame, and the camp of the disembarked troops, lighted by huge bonfires, on the capes and eminences of the Asiatic mountains, was reflected in luminous streaks in the sea, and cast the glare of a conflagration upon the whole bed of the Bosphorus.

The Grand Seigneur arrived in the midst of this sparkling scene in a steam-boat, which drew up under the terraces of the palace, to enjoy the spectacle which was offered him. He was seen on the deck of the vessel, surrounded by his vizier and his favourite pachas. He remained on board, and sent the grand vizier to partake of Count Orloff's supper. Immense tables, laid out under the long avenues of plane-trees, and other tables, placed in all the arbours of the gardens, were covered with gold and silver, which multiplied, by reflection, the blaze from the illuminated trees. At the darkest moment of the night, a little before the rising of the moon, a display of fireworks, exhibited on the water from a raft placed in the middle of the Bosphorus, at an equal distance from the three shores, sprang into the air, flew over the waves, and spread a reddened glare upon the mountains, on the fleet, and on the innumerable crowd of spectators in the caïques which covered the sea. Never did a more beautiful spectacle strike upon the eyes of man; one might have imagined that the arch of night was torn asunder, and gave a glimpse of some fairy world, with elements, mountains, seas, and skies, of unknown forms and hues, and thousands of vapoury and fleeting shadows stealing over waves of light and fire.

Then all returned into silence and darkness. The lamps, extinguished as if by a breath of wind, disappeared from all the yard-arms and port-holes of the ships, and the moon, rising from an elevated valley, between the crests of two mountains, spread its milder light upon the sea, and set in relief, upon a back-ground of pearls, the huge black masses of the vessels, and the spectral forms of their masts, yard-arms, and shrouds. The sultan took his departure in the small steam-boat, whose column of smoke trailed along the sea, and vanished in silence, like a shade come to witness the destruction of an empire.

It was not Sardanapalus, illumining the ruins of his subverted throne with the blaze of his funeral pile. It was the master of a tottering empire, driven to ask from his enemies support and protection against a revolted vassal, and witnessing their glory and his own humiliation. What could the old Osmanlis think when they saw the lights from the camp of the barbarous Christians, and the blaze of their fires, burst on the sacred mountains of Asia, fall on the domes of their mosques, and lie beat on the very walls of the old Seraglio. What thought Mahmoud himself, under the assumed smile upon his lips? What adder was gnawing his heart? Ah! there was something within profoundly

sad, something to break the heart, enough to turn his heroism into remorse! And there was also something profoundly consoling for the thought of the philosopher who recognises providence and loves mankind. It was that progress of time and events which was causing an immense empire to crumble into ruins, an obstacle to the civilisation of half the East, and which was bringing, step by step, towards these beautiful regions, a race of men less worn out, a government more humane, and a religion more progressive.*

July.—I have dined to-day at the house of Baron Sturmer, in the company of the prince royal of Bavaria, who is returning from Greece, and is staying a few days at Constantinople. This young prince, eager for information, and possessing the good sense to forget, in appearance, the throne which awaits him, seeks the conversation of men who have no interest to flatter him, and judges for himself after hearing them. He himself is very brilliant in conversation. "The king my brother," said he to me, "still hesitates in the choice of his capital. I should like to hear your opinion." "The capital of Greece," I replied to him, "is pointed out by the very nature of the event which has reconstructed it a country. Greece is a resurrection. When we resuscitate an object, we must reproduce it with its form and name, with its complete individuality. Athens, with its ruins and its recollections, is the symbol of recognition of Greece. She must rise again at Athens, or she will never be any thing more than she is now—an impoverished tribe scattered upon the rocks of the Peloponnesus and the Isles."

July.—The Russian fleet and army have departed. They now know the road, and they have accustomed the eyes of the Turks to see them. The Bosphorus remains deserted and inanimate.

My Arab horses arrive through Asia Minor. Tadmor, the most beautiful and high-spirited of them all, perished at Magnesia, near the end of the route. The sais wept for him, and still weep whilst giving me the account of his death. He had excited the admiration of all the towns of Caramania through which he had passed. The others are so thin and worn out, that they would need a month's rest before they were in a state to undertake the journey through European Turkey and Germany. I have sold the two best to M. de Boutenief for the stables of the Emperor of Russia, and the three others to different individuals in Constantinople. I will always regret Tadmor and Saïde.

I have concluded a bargain with some Turks of Stamboul and the suburb of Eyoub, who are the owners of those vehicles which carry the women in the streets of Constantinople; they are to provide me with five arabas, each drawn by four horses, to convey my wife and me, M. de Campas, my domestics and luggage, in twenty-five days to Belgrade. I have hired two Tatars to direct the caravan, moultes, and mule-drivers, to carry the beds, kitchen utensils, boxes of books, &c., and finally six saddle horses for ourselves, if the roads are unfit for the arabas. The price of all these horses and carriages is about 4000 francs (£160). An excellent interpreter accompanies us on horseback. Our departure is fixed for the 25th July.

July.—We departed from Constantinople in the night at two o'clock. The horses and equipages waited for us in the Eyoub suburb, upon a small open space not far from a fountain shaded with plane-trees. A Turkish café was near at hand. A crowd assembled to see us start, but we experienced no insult nor missed any article. Honesty is the virtue of the populace; in Turkey it is least common in the palaces. The Turks

*[It is certainly a melancholy circumstance to find M. de Lamartine a dupe of the high-sounding pretences and theatrical flourishes with which Europe has been nauseated since the reign of Elizabeth of Russia, concerning the *magnanimity*, the *probity*, the *humanity*, and other exalted virtues of that most subtle and encroaching power. But, from Voltaire downwards, French philosophers seem singularly disposed to crouch in sycophancy before power and wealth, and have their minds taken captive by bombast and flattery, in dealing out which the Russian government acts upon the pure French model.]

who were seated under the trees before the café, and the boys who were passing, assisted us in loading our arabas and horses, and picked up and brought us any things which fell or which we forgot.*

We commenced our march with the rising of the sun on horseback, and scaled the long, solitary, and hilly streets of the suburb of Eyyoub to the Greek walls of Stamboul. We issued from the walls upon a naked and deserted hill, surmounted by a superb barrack. Two battalions of the *nyzam djedid* (regular troops) were at exercise before the barrack. M. Truqui and the young Greeks in his consulate accompanied us thus far. We embraced that excellent man, who had been a ministering angel to us in our days of desolation, as we separated from him. When in despair, a friendship of two months is one of many years. May God reward and console the last days of that man of comfort! Who knows if we shall see each other again here below! We were departing upon a long and hazardous peregrination. He remained sad and ill, far from his wife and his country. He vainly strove to conceal his tears from us, and ours moistened his trembling hand.

We halted three leagues from Constantinople, to let the heat of the day pass over. We have traversed a country undulated with hills commanding the Sea of Marmora. A few houses scattered in the fields, but no villages. We resumed our route at four o'clock, and still following these low, broad, and naked hills, we arrived at a small town, where our Tatars, who were in advance of us, had got a house ready for us. This house belonged to a charming Greek family, composed of three handsome females and children of striking beauty. They stretched carpets and cushions on the pine floor for the night. My cook contrived to procure rice, fowls, and vegetables, in abundance.

Our caravan was on its legs at three in the morning. One of my Tatars keeps for some hours at the head of the troop; and after the mid-day rest, which we take either on the edge of a fountain or under some hovel of a caravanserai, he receives my orders, and goes off at a gallop to the town or the village where we are to sleep. He bears with him my letters from the grand vizier to the pacha, aga, or ayam (lord), of the villa. These select the best Greek, Armenian, or Jewish house in the place, warning the proprietor to get it prepared for strangers. They cause forage for the thirty-two horses composing our suite to be brought there, and frequently supper for us. The ayam, accompanied by the principal inhabitants, and by some horsemen, if there are any troops in the place, comes to meet us at a certain distance on the road, and escorts us to our lodging. They descend from horseback with us, introduce us to the family, order pipes and coffee to be brought, and, after a few compliments, retire to their own houses, where I shortly afterwards return them their visit.

From Constantinople to Adrianople there is nothing remarkable, nothing picturesque, except the immense extent of the plains, without habitations and without trees, traversed at intervals by a smoken and half-dried river which passes under the arches of a ruinous bridge. In the evening we find with difficulty some poor village, at the bottom of a vale surrounded with orchards. The inhabitants are all Greeks, Armenians, or Bulgarians. The khans of these villages are hovels, almost roofless, into which they crowd men and horses. The route continues thus for five days. We meet no one; it resembles the Syrian desert. Once only we found ourselves in the midst of thirty or forty Bulgarian peasants, dressed like Europeans, with caps of black sheep wool. They were marching towards Constantinople, to the music of two bagpipes. They uttered loud cries on seeing us, and sprang towards us, asking for piastres. They are the savoyards of European Turkey. They were going for the purpose of guarding the horses of

the sultan and the pachas, in the meadows on the waters of Asia, and near Buyukdere. They are the gardeners also of Stamboul.

On the morning of the sixth day, we perceive Adrianople at the termination of the plains, in a beautiful hollow between mountains. The town appears immense, and a beautiful mosque towers above it. It is the finest religious monument in Turkey after Saint Sophia, and was constructed by Bajazet at the time that Adrianople was the capital of the empire. The enclosures, two leagues from the town, are cultivated with wheat, vines, and fruit trees of all sorts. The aspect of the country reminds us of the environs of Dijon or Lyons. Numerous rivulets meander in the plain. We enter a long suburb, and pass into the town amidst a crowd of Turks, women, and children, who squeeze each other to get a look at us; but far from annoying us, they exhibit every mark of politeness and respect. The persons who had come to meet us conduct us to the door of a handsome house belonging to M. Vernazza, Sardinian consul at Adrianople.

We have passed two days at Adrianople, in the agreeable house of this consul. His family is a few leagues in the country, on the banks of the river Maritza, the Ebra of the ancients. We enjoy a ravishing prospect of Adrianople in the evening, from the top of the terrace. The city, almost as large as Lyons, is watered by three rivers, the Ebra, the Arda, and the Tundicha. It is surrounded on all sides by wood and water, and beautiful mountains, extending in chains, enclose this fertile basin. Visit the mosque, an edifice similar to all mosques, but more elevated and extensive. Our art has produced nothing more bold, original, or of finer effect, than this monument and its minaret, a column pierced to the light more than a hundred feet in shaft.

Departed from Adrianople for Philippopolis. The road passes through defiles and hollows, well wooded, and of smiling aspect, although deserted, between the lofty chains of the mountains of Rhodope and Hæmus. We have three days' march, passing some beautiful villages. In the evening, when three leagues from Philippopolis, I perceive in the plain a crowd of Turkish, Armenian, and Greek horsemen, who draw towards us in a gallop. A handsome young man, mounted on a superb horse, arrives the first, and touches my coat with his finger. He draws up alongside of me, and explains to me in Italian, that, being the first to touch me, I must accept his house, whatever entreaties the other horsemen might use to conduct me elsewhere. The kiaya of the governor of Philippopolis afterwards arrives, compliments me in the name of his master, and tells me that the governor has prepared for me a large and commodious house and also supper, and that he hopes to retain me some days in the town; but I am resolute in accepting the house of the young Greek, M. Maurides.

We enter Philippopolis in a cavalcade of sixty or eighty horsemen, which attracts a crowd to the windows and into the streets. We are received by the sisters and the aunts of M. Maurides. The house is extensive and elegant. We are ushered into a beautiful saloon with twenty-four windows, and furnished in the European style, where the governor, and the chief people of the different nations in the town, come to compliment us and take coffee. Three days are passed at Philippopolis, in the enjoyment of the agreeable hospitality of M. Maurides, in going through the environs, and in exchanging visits with the Turks, the Greeks, and the Armenians.

Philippopolis is a town containing 30,000 souls. It is four days' journey from Adrianople, and eight from Sophia. It is situated on the banks of a river, on a hill of isolated rocks, in the midst of a wide and fertile valley. The position of the town is one of the most beautiful that can be imagined; the hill forms a pair of horns, both equally crowned with houses and gardens, and the streets descend in circular windings to lessen the precipitancy to the banks of the river, which flows at the foot of the town, and encircles it with a moat of

* [It would almost seem that the author had made a mistake as to the hour of his departure, as it is not likely that the cafes and streets should be full in the dead of night; but certainly such are his words.]

living water. The aspect of the bridges, the gardens, the houses, the woody plain which separates the river from the mountains of Macedonia, and these mountains themselves, whose sides are riddled with torrents whitening them with foam, and strewed with villages or large Greek monasteries, renders the garden of M. Maurides one of the most admirable sites in the world. The population of the town is composed, in about equal proportions, of Greeks, Armenians, and Turks. The Greeks are in general well informed and commercial; the principal amongst them have their children educated in Hungary. The oppression of the Turks only appears the more onerous afterwards; they sigh after the independence of their brothers in the Morea. I became acquainted with three young Greeks, agreeable youths, and worthy, from their sentiments and energetic spirit, of another lot and another country.

Quitted Philippopolis, and arrived in two days at a pretty town, called Tatar Bazarjik, situated in a cultivated plain; it belongs, as well as the surrounding province, to one of those great Turkish fencible families, five or six races of whom exist in Asia and Europe, who are respected by the sultans. The young prince who possesses and governs Tatar Bazarjik, is the son of the former vizier, Hussein-Pacha. He received us with chivalrous hospitality, and gave us a large, elegant, and commodious house, belonging to an Armenian, just newly constructed on the banks of a stream which surrounds the town. We were scarcely installed, when fifteen or twenty slaves arrived, each bearing on his head a pewter tray, and deposited on the floor, at our feet, a profusion of pilans, pastry, game, and confectionary of all sorts, from the kitchens of the prince. Two horses were also brought as a present to me, which I declined accepting. My suite were well provided with calves and sheep.

On the following day, we got a sight of the Balkan in front of us. These beautiful mountains, well wooded, and interspersed with large villages and highly cultivated tracts, are peopled by the Bulgarians. At the village of Yenikai, I found the principal inhabitants waiting for us, who took the reins of our horses, placed themselves on each side of our carriages, supported them with their hands and shoulders, sometimes lifting them up to prevent the wheels sliding down the precipices, and thus conducted us into the miserable village where my Tatars had preceded me. The houses, scattered on the sides or tops of two hills, separated by pebbly fields and grass-plots. All the mountains were cultivated to their base, and crowned with beautiful forests on their brows; the peaks were of rock. The Bulgarian hovels were built of clay, and covered with leafy boughs. We occupied seven or eight of them, each having but one room, with the bare ground serving for a floor. Our mounks, Tatars, and horsemen, bivouacked in the orchards.

I was attacked by fever and inflammation, the result of sorrow and fatigue, and passed twenty days extended on a mat, in this miserable hut without windows, between life and death. My wife, with admirable devotedness, passed fifteen days and fifteen nights, without closing an eye, at the side of my bed of straw. She sent some Bulgarians into the marshes of the plain to seek for leeches, of which they procured a supply. I had sixty leeches applied to my chest and temples, which reduced the fever, and restored me to recollection. I thought, night and day, upon my wife, who would be abandoned at such a distance from all means of consolation, in the midst of the mountains of Macedonia, if I should happen to die. Oh terrible hours! I called M. de Campas, and gave him my last instructions in case of death; I begged him to have me buried under a tree which I had remarked, when we arrived on the edge of the road, with a single word—*Maya*—on the stone, that word which is superior to all consolation—God.

On the sixth day of the fever, when the danger was already passed, we heard the noise of horses and arms in the court. Some horsemen descended, who

proved to be the young and amiable Greek of Philippopolis, M. Maurides, with a Macedonian physician, and several servants, who were engaged in relieving the horses which had been loaded with provisions, articles of furniture, and medicines. A Tatar, who was passing the Balkan, on his way to Adrianople, had stopped at the khan of Philippopolis, and spread the report that a Frank traveller was ill, and at the point of death, at Yenikai. This rumour reached M. Maurides at ten in the evening; and presuming that this Frank was his late guest, he immediately sent to his friend the physician, assembled his domestics, threw on his horses all that his charitable foresight judged essential to a patient, set off in the middle of the night, travelled without a halt, and came, after two days' journeying, to bring succour, remedies, and consolation, to a stranger who would never see him again. These are traits which refresh the soul, and show the generous nature of man in all places and in all climates. M. Maurides found me almost convalescent; and as business called him back to Philippopolis, he departed the same day, leaving with me the young Macedonian physician. He was a man of talent and information, had pursued his medical studies at Semlin, in Hungary, and spoke Latin. His skill was not needed, for the tenderness, presence of mind, and determined resolution of my wife, had accomplished all; but his society was agreeable during the twenty tedious days we passed at Yenikai, to allow the malady to be completely cured, and to regain strength to mount my horse.

The Prince of Tatar Bazarjik, informed from the first of my illness, gave me equally touching marks of interest and kindness. He sent me every day mutton and veal for my people; and during the whole time of my sojourn at Yenikai, five or six troopers of his guard remained constantly in the court, with their horses all ready, to execute my least desire. The few last days of my convalescence, they accompanied me in excursions to the magnificent valley and mountains in the vicinity of Yenikai. The prince offered me even a present of slaves; and a detachment of his troopers escorted me on my departure, to the limits of his government.

I had an opportunity of studying, in the interior of their families, the manners of the Bulgarians. They are quite the same as those of the Swiss and Savoyard peasants. They are a simple, mild, and laborious race, full of respect for their priests, and of zeal for their religion, which is Greek. The priests are simple laborious peasants also. The Bulgarians form a population of several millions, which is continually increasing; they live in villages and small towns apart from the Turks. One or two Turks, delegated by the pacha or ayam, go through these villages every year to collect the taxes; with that exception, and some exacted labour, they live undisturbed, and according to their own customs. Their dress is like that of the peasants in Germany; the women and girls have a costume nearly similar to the females of the Swiss mountains; they are pretty, lively, and graceful. Their manners appeared to me to be pure, although they ceased to be veiled as in Turkey, and mingle freely with the men. I have witnessed rural dances amongst the Bulgarians, exactly as in our villages in France. They despise and hate the Turks; they are quite ripe for independence, and form, with the Servians their neighbours, the germ of future states in European Turkey. The country which they inhabit would soon be a delightful garden, if the blind and stupid opposition, not of the government but of the administration of Turkey, allowed them to pursue its cultivation with a little more security. They are passionately attached to the soil.

I quitted Yenikai and its good peasants with regret; it is a delightful residence in summer. The whole village accompanied us for a league into the Balkan, and loaded us with good wishes and benedictions. We cleared the first Balkan in an hour; they are mountains very similar to those of Auvergne, and are every where accessible and fit for cultivation. Five hundred workmen might make an excellent carriage-road in a

single season. In three days I arrived at Sophia, a large town in an enclosed valley watered by a stream. A Turkish pacha was residing there, who sent his kiaya to meet me, and gave me the house of a Greek merchant for a lodging. I passed a day there, the pacha sending sheep and calves, and refusing any present in return. There is nothing worthy of remark in the town.

In four days' slow marching, sometimes over mountains of easy ascent, sometimes in valleys and plains of great fertility, but unpeopled, I arrived in the plain of Nissa, the last Turkish town, almost on the frontiers of Servia. I was half an hour in front of the caravan. The sun was scorchingly hot. About a league from the town, I saw a large white tower rising in the middle of the plain, glittering like Parian marble, to which the road conducted me. When I drew near, I gave my horse to a Turkish boy, who accompanied me, to hold, and seated myself under the shade of the tower to repose for a moment. Scarcely had I sat down, when, raising my eyes to the monument which afforded me shelter, I saw that its walls, which had appeared to me of marble or white stone, were formed by regular layers of human skulls. The skulls and visages of men, unfleshed and blanched by the rain and sun, and cemented with some sand and chalk, composed the triumphal arch which overshadowed me. There might be from fifteen to twenty thousand of them; to some the hair still adhered, and waved like weeds and moss under the breeze, which was blowing fresh from the mountains, and, piercing the innumerable cavities of the skulls and faces, made them give out plaintive and lamentable sighs. There was no person near to give me an explanation of this barbarian monument. The boy who held the two horses by their bridles was playing with the morsels of the skulls which had fallen in dust at the foot of the tower; and I was so overcome with fatigue, heat, and sleepiness, that I slept with my back supported against these walls of decapitated heads. On awaking, I found myself surrounded by the caravan, and a great number of Turkish horsemen, come to escort us at our entry into the town. They told me they were the heads of 15,000 Servians, slain by the pacha in the last revolt of Servia. This plain had been the field of death to those generous-minded insurgents; and this monument was their sepulchre. I debated with my eyes and my heart the remains of those heroic men, whose severed heads have become the boundary-stone of the independence of their country. Servia, which we were about to enter, is now free; it was a song of liberty and glory, which the winds of the mountains were uttering round the Servians who had died for their country! They will soon possess Nissa itself;—may they allow this monument to subsist! It will teach their children the value of independence, by showing them the price their fathers have paid for it.

Nissa resembles Sophia, and has no distinct character. We passed a day there. After Nissa, we entered into the beautiful mountains and the immense forests of Servia. These primitive forests extend on all sides as far as the horizon, leaving only a wide serpentine road, which had been recently traversed by Prince Milosch, an independent chief of Servia. For six days we penetrated into these magnificent and perpetual shades, without other object to look at than the endless colonnades of the enormous and towering trunks of beech; the waves of foliage swinging in the wind, and the avenues of hills and mountains, uniformly covered with centenarian oaks. Only, at intervals of five or six leagues, on descending into a somewhat wider valley in which a river winds, large wooden villages, with a few pretty white houses, straggling at the opening of the forest, a small church and a parsonage, stretch along the banks of a stream, in the midst of meadows and patches of melons. The inhabitants, seated on wooden benches before their shops, work at different trades; their countenances, although mild and benevolent, have something of the northern aspect, of energy and haughtiness, which bespeaks a people already free, and altogether worthy of being so. Every

where, we are welcomed with hospitality and respect; the best house in the village is prepared for us; and the clergyman comes to converse with us. We begin to find the furniture of Europe in the houses, the women are no longer veiled, and in the meadows and woods are bands of young men and girls going together to the labours of the field, and singing national airs, which remind us of the "*Ranz des vaches*." These young girls are dressed in a chemise, plaited into numerous folds, which covers the shoulders and bosom, and in a short petticoat, of brown or red woollen. Their healthy redness and gaiety, and the clearness of their complexions and eyes, give them a resemblance to the prettiest maidens of Berne, or of the mountains of Lucerne.

Now our invariable companions in all the Turkish kouaks abandon us; we see no longer the storks, whose large nests, like cradles of reeds, crown the summits of all the domes on the mosques in European Turkey, and serve as roofs to the crumbling minarets; every evening, on arriving in the villages or deserted khans, we saw them in couples roaming around our tent or hut; the young ones, raising their long necks out of the nest like a brood of serpents, opened their beaks to the mother, who, half suspended on her wide wings, distributed amongst them the food which she had procured from the neighbouring marshes, and the male bird, hovering motionless at a great height above the nest, seemed to enjoy the touching spectacle. These beautiful birds have nothing savage about them; they are the guardians of the roof as the dogs of the hearth; they live in peace with the flocks of doves which whiten the domes of the khans and the mosques, and scare not even the swallows. The Turks live in harmony also with all creation, animate and inanimate; trees, birds, or dogs, they respect all that God has made, and extend their charity to those poor animals which are left to starve or tortured amongst. In all the streets, at certain distances, there are troughs of water for the dogs of the quarter, and they often leave pious legacies when dying, to feed the turtle-doves which they nourished when alive.

September 2.—We have issued this morning from the eternal forests of Servia, which continue even to the banks of the Danube. The point at which we get a first glimpse of this king of rivers is an eminence covered with superb oaks. After clearing it, we discover at its base a large lake of blue and transparent water, enclosed in woods and tall reeds, and sprinkled with verdant islets. On advancing, we see the river stretching to the right and left, skirting the steep woody shores of Servia, and losing itself in the plains of Hungary on the right. The last slopes of the forest falling towards the river, present one of the most beautiful localities in the universe. We sleep on the banks of the Danube, in a small Servian village.

On the following day we again quit the river during a four hours' march. The country, like that of all frontiers, is sandy, uncultivated, and desert. Towards noon we scale the sterile hills, from which we have, at last, a view of Belgrade at our feet. Belgrade, so often shattered by bombs, is situated on an elevated bank of the Danube. The roofs of its mosques are riddled, the walls are breach, and the abandoned suburbs are strewn with dilapidated houses and heaps of ruins; the town, like all Turkish towns, descends in narrow and tortuous streets towards the river. Semlin, the first town in Hungary, shines on the other side of the Danube, with all the magnificence of a European town. Its steeples rise fronting the minarets. When arrived at Belgrade, we put up at a small inn, the first that we have found in Turkey. The Prince Milosch sends some of his principal officers to invite me to pass a few days in the fortress where he resides, at a distance of some leagues from Belgrade. I resist their entreaties, and order boats for the passage of the

* [This is the national song of the Tyrolean peasants, with which the British public was made familiar by the Tyrolean minstrels a few years ago.]

Danube. At four o'clock we descend to the river. As we are about to embark, I see a group of horsemen, dressed almost in the European fashion, galloping towards us along the beach; amongst them is the brother of Prince Milosch, the chief of the Servians, who comes, on the part of his brother, to renew his invitation for me to remain a few days at his house. I regret extremely it was not in my power to accept a hospitality so obligingly pressed; but my travelling companion, M. de Campas, had been seriously indisposed for several days, so as to be scarcely able to keep on horseback, and it was absolutely necessary to procure him repose and the resources of a European town, as well as the aid of the physicians of the Lazaretto. I converse half an hour with the prince, who seems a man well informed, affable, and amiable. I express my gratification that he and his noble nation are verging so nearly to a perfectly independent civilisation; and I at length put my foot into the boat which is to transport us to Semlin. The passage occupies an hour; the river, wide and deep, has waves like the sea. We skirt the meadows and orchards which surround Semlin, and on the evening of the 3d we enter the Lazaretto, where we must remain ten days. Each of us has a cell, and a small court planted with trees. I dismiss my Tatars, moulkes, and dragoman, who return to Constantinople. They all kiss my hand in sadness, and I myself cannot quit, without emotion and gratitude, these simple and honest, these faithful and open-hearted servants, who have guided, followed, guarded, and tended me, as brothers would have done for a brother, and who have proved, during the innumerable vicissitudes of an eighteen months' journey in a foreign land, that all religions have their divine moral, all degrees of civilisation their virtues, and all men the sentiment of the just, the good, and the beautiful, engraved in different characters upon their hearts by the hand of God.

NOTE: UPON SERVIA.

Semlin, September 12, in the Lazaretto.—We had scarcely left these forests, where a new and free people are germinating, than we felt regret at not having known more of them. One would like to live and fight with them for their new-born independence, and we inquire with pleasure into the events which have produced it, and the destiny their own virtues and Providence are preparing for them. I will always remember the scene at Jagodina. We were admiring, in a Servian cabin, a young mother suckling twins, whilst a third child was playing on the ground, at her feet, with the yatanag of its father. The priest of the village, and some of the principal inhabitants, were in a circle around us, and spoke to us, with simplicity and enthusiasm, of the increasing prosperity of the nation under its free government, of the forests they were clearing, of the houses that were multiplying in the valleys, and of the numerous schools, filled with children, that were opened in all the villages; each of these men, advancing his head between the shoulders of those in front of him, had on his countenance a proud and happy look at the admiration that we testified; their eyes were animated, their faces coloured with emotion for their country, as if the glory and liberty of all formed the boast of each. At this moment, the husband of the Servian mother in whose house we were lodged, returned from the fields, came up to us, and saluted us with that respect, and at the same time with that boldness of manner, natural to savage tribes; he then mingled with the other villagers, and heard with them the recital that the pope* was giving up of the battles for independence. When the pope came to the battle of Nissa, where 30 standards were wrested from 40,000 Turks by 3000 mountaineers, the father sprang out of the circle, and taking from the arms of his wife his two lovely infants, and raising them towards heaven, "Behold the soldiers of

Milosch!" he exclaimed—"As long as women shall give birth to children, there will be free Servians in the forests of Scumadia!"

The history of this people is written only in popular verses, like the first annals of all heroic races. These songs of national enthusiasm, composed on the field of battle, repeated from rank to rank by the soldiers, and carried to the villages at the end of the campaign, are preserved by tradition. The priest or the schoolmaster writes them, accompanied by simple airs, but vibrating as the hearts of the combatants, or as the voice of a father who greets from afar the smoke from the roof of his children; they become the popular history of the nation; Prince Milosch has had two collections of them printed and distributed. The Servian child learns to read the exploits of his fathers in these touching recitals; and the name of the liberator of Servia is engrafted on his first recollections. A people nourished with such food can never again become slaves. I have often met in the middle of those primitive forests, in profound gorges where we expected to find no other inhabitants than wild beasts, groups of youths and maidens proceeding in company, singing together these national airs, a few words of which our interpreters translated for us. They interrupted their songs for a moment to salute us, and gaze at us defiling past; and when we had disappeared, they resumed their airs, and those sombre avenues of aged oaks, and the rocks which lined the torrent, resounded for a long time with the echoes of those songs, with their full notes and monotonous repetitions, which promise a long happiness to this region. "What do they say," I asked my dragoman, who understood their language, on one occasion. "Hospodar," he answered me, "they are uttering such silly things, that they are not worthy of being repeated to Franks." "But pray translate for me the very words they are singing at this moment," I rejoined. "Well, they are saying, 'May God bless the waters of the Morawa, for they have drowned the enemies of Servia! May God multiply the seed of the oaks of Scumadia, for each of these trees is a Servian!'" "And what do they mean by that?" I asked. "Hospodar," answered the dragoman, "they mean, that during the war, the Servians found the trunks of the oaks a protecting rampart, that their forests were and still are their natural fortresses, that each of these trees is a comrade in battle, and that they love them as brothers; thus, when Prince Milosch, who at present governs them, caused so many trees to be cut down to form, through these forests, the long road that we are following, the old Servians have often cursed him. 'To level trees,' said they, 'is to kill men. In Servia trees and men are friends!'"

Whilst traversing these magnificent solitudes, where, during so many days' march, the eye perceives nothing, on every side that it is cast, but the uniform and dark undulation of the leaves, of the oaks which cover the mountains, and the incessant, a veritable ocean of foliage, from which even the sharp point of a minaret or a steeple peeps not out; whilst descending from time to time into deep gorges, where a river roared, where the fox retired a little to give place to some well-cultivated fields, pretty new houses built of wood, saw-pits and mills erected on the edge of the stream; whilst beholding in dense flocks, under charge of young and beautiful girls, picturesquely clad, coming out of the dole-meads of trees, and returning in the evening to the dwellings, the children leaving the village school, the pope seated on a bench at the door of his neat little house, and the old men entering the common building or the church to deliberate on affairs—I could believe myself in the midst of the forests of North America, at the time that a people was being formed, or a colony established. The countenances of these men testified to the mildness of their manners, the good breeding of an ancient civilisation, and the health and comfort which they enjoy; liberty is stamped on their physiognomies. The Bulgarian is good and simple, but we perceive, that although ready to enfranchise himself, he still bears a remnant of the yoke; in the stoop of his head, and in the accent of his voice, and in the humble re-

* [The parish priests of the Greek church are called by the name of pope.]

signation of his looks, there still lurks a sensible recollection and fear of the Turk; he reminds us of the Savoyard, one of that good-hearted and excellent Alpine race, to whom there is nothing wanting but that dignity of mien and of speech which ennobles all the other virtues. The Servian, on the contrary, recalls the Swiss of the small cantons, where the pure and patriarchal manners of the shepherd are in perfect harmony with the liberty which makes the man, and the calm courage which makes the hero. The young virgins resemble the handsome females of Lucerne and Berne, and their costume is almost the same—very short petticoats of bright colours, and their hair plaited in long tresses, hanging to their heels. Their manners are chaste, like those of all pastoral and religious tribes. Their language is musical, harmonious, and cadenced, as all those which come from the Slavonic. There is little inequality of fortune amongst them, but a general competency. Their only luxury is in having fine arms. Their present government is a species of representative dictatorship. Prince Milosch, the liberator of Servia, has preserved the discretionary power which was vested in him from necessity during the war. Proclaimed prince of the Servians in 1829, the people swore fidelity to him and his successors. The Turks, who have still a part in the administration, and in the garrisons of the fortresses, have also recognised Prince Milosch, and now treat directly with him. He has constituted a senate and district assemblies, which have concurrent power in the discussion and decision of general affairs. The senate is convoked every year: the deputies of the villages assemble in the vicinity of the prince's residence, and they hold, like the men of the heroic times, their deliberations under large trees. The prince descends from his seat, comes up to each of the deputies, interrogates him, hears his answers, takes a note of his complaints or advice, speaks to him concerning affairs, explains to him with calmness his political views, and justifies the measures which have appeared harsh or arbitrary; all this passes with the noble and grave familiarity of husband and wife conversing with their landlords. They are labouring and armed patriarchs. The belief in God presides over all their councils, as at all their combats; they legislate and fight for their altars as well as their forests, but the priests have no influence except in affairs of religion. The principal influence rests with the military chiefs, that nobility of blood which they call *vayvodes*. The sacerdotal domination never commences until the state of war has ceased, and until the soil of the country is ineffectually won for the nation. Up to that point, men honour above all others those who defend them; it is not till afterwards that they honour those who civilise them.

The population of Servia reaches at present to about 1,000,000, and it is rapidly increasing. The mildness of the climate, similar to that of France between Lyons and Avignon; the fertility of the unbroken and deep soil, which is every where covered with the rank vegetation of the Swiss meadows; the numerous rivers and streams, which descend from the mountains, meander in the valleys, and form at intervals lakes in the midst of the woods; the clearing of the forests, which will furnish, as in America, ground for the plough, and inexhaustible materials for building; the mild and pure manners of the people; the protecting laws, which are already enlightened by assimilation to our best European laws; the rights of citizenship, guaranteed by local representation and deliberative assemblies; in fine, the supreme power concentrated, in adequate proportions, in the hands of a man worthy of his mission, Prince Milosch, and transmitting it to his descendants—all these elements of peace, civilisation, and prosperity, promise to carry the Servian population to several millions before half a century. If this nation, as it desires and hopes, becomes the centre of a new Slavonic empire, by its union with Bosnia, a part of Bulgaria, and the warlike hordes of the Montenegrins, Europe will see a new state arise from the ruins of Turkey, and cover those vast and beautiful regions which extend between the Danube, the Adriatic, and

the Balkan. If the difference of manners and of nationality affords too much resistance to this fusion, we shall see at least in Servia, one of the members of that confederation of free states, or European protectorates, destined to fill up the void that the disappearance of the Ottoman empire is about to leave in Europe as well as in Asia. European politics can have no better purpose to satisfy.

September 23.—The history of this people must be sung, and not written. It is a poem which is still progressing. I have collected the principal facts on the spot from the mouths of our Belgrade friends, who come to visit us at the bars of the Lazaretto. Seated under a linden on the grass, in the mild and beautiful sun of these countries, and with the murmur of the Danube in its rapid course close by, and the prospect of the lovely shores and green forests of Servia, opposite the coast of Hungary in front, these men, in a half oriental costume, and with the masculine and calm features of a warlike race, recount to me with simplicity the deeds in which they have taken part. Although still young, and covered with wounds, they seem to have entirely forgotten war, and are occupied only with public improvements, schools for the people, rural and administrative amendments, and the progress to be given to legislation. Modest and zealous, they take advantage of all occasions which are afforded them to perfect their new-born institutions; they interrogate travellers, retain them as long as possible amongst them, and store up all that these men tell them, who have come from such a distance, as if they were the envoys of providence. The following is the account I have gathered of their last years:—

It was in 1804, at the end of long troubles excited by Passwanaglon, Pacla of Widin, and which were suppressed by the force of the janissaries, that the Servians revolted against their tyrants. Three chiefs united together in the central part of Servia, which is called Scumadia, an immense district, covered with impenetrable forests. The first of these chiefs was Kara-George, and the two others, Tanko-Kalish and Wasso-Tchirapish. Kara-George had been a Heyduk. The Heyduks were in Servia what the Klephites were in Greece, a race of independent and adventurous men, living in inaccessible mountains, and descending, upon the least symptom of war, to take part in the conflicts of factions, and to keep up their habits of massacre and pillage. The whole country rose in insurrection, after the example of Scumadia; each canton chose for its chief the bravest and most influential of its *vayvodes*; these, assembled in a council of war, conferred upon Kara-George the title of generalissimo. This title invested him with few prerogatives; but genius, in times of trouble, very quickly gives to a bold man the actual sovereignty. Danger never bargains with courage: Obedience is the instinct of people to audacity and talent.

George Petrowitch, surnamed Kara, or Zrin, that is to say, George the Black, was born about 1765, in a village of the district of Kraganewatz—his father was a labouring peasant and shepherd, called Petroni. Another tradition makes Kara-George be born in France, but it is without probability. Petroni carried his son, when an infant, into the mountains of Topoli. The insurrection of 1787, which Austria was to have supported, having terminated disastrously, the insurgents, pursued by the Turks and Bosniaks, were obliged to take to flight. Petroni, and George his son, who had fought with valour, assembled their flocks, in which their whole wealth consisted, and took the route towards

* I have since had more circumstantial and authentic details of the modern history of Servia, and I am indebted to the kindness of a traveller who had preceded me, and whom I had met at Jaffa in Palestine, M. Adolphe de Caraman, for the communication of these notes upon Servia, which were collected by him during a residence at the house of Prince Milosch. These notes, much more worthy than mine of attracting the attention of the public, by the talent and good faith with which they were digested, were accompanied by a translation of the history of the Servians by a Servian.

the Saave. They were already on the banks of this river, about to seek safety in the Austrian territory, when the father of Kara-George, an old man, enfeebled by years, and more rooted than his son to the soil of his country, turned back to look upon the mountains where he left all the remembrances of his life, and felt his heart break at the idea of quitting them for ever to pass amongst a strange people. Seating himself on the ground, he conjured his son to submit himself to the enemy, rather than go over to Germany. I regret I am unable to give from memory the touching and poetical supplications of the old man, such as they are sung in the popular ballads of Servia. It is one of those descriptions where the feelings of nature, so profoundly experienced and so artlessly expressed, surpass all that the inventive faculty of literary men can borrow from art. The Bible and Homer alone have such pages.

However, Kara-George, at first overcome by the regrets and prayers of his father, had sent back the servants and flocks; and in devotion to the rigour of filial obedience, which is the second religion of the Orientals, he bowed his head under the voice of his father. He was proceeding to resume in sadness the route of slavery, in order that Petroni might yet remain on the Servian soil, when the voices and shots of the Bosniaks announced to him the approach of their enemies, and the inevitable torments with which they would glut their vengeance. "My father," said he, "decide; we have but an instant; arise, throw yourself into the river; my arm will support you, and my body will cover you from the balls of the Osmanlis. You will still live, and pass happier days on the territory of a friendly nation." But the inflexible old man, whom his son strove in vain to move, resisted all his efforts, and determined to die on the land of his nativity. Kara-George, driven to despair, and unwilling that his father's body should fall into the hands of the Turks, fell on his knees, asked the old man's blessing, slew him with a pistol shot, threw his body into the Saave, and, jumping into the river, swam over to the Austrian dominions.

A short while after, he returned into Servia as sergeant-major of a Frank corps. Discontented at being passed over in a distribution of medals of honour, he quitted his corps, and threw himself as a Heyduk into the mountains. Being reconciled with his commander, he accompanied him into Austria when peace was concluded, and obtained the situation of forester in the monastery of Kruschedal. Soon sick of this employment, he went back to Servia, under the government of Hadgi-Mustapha. He returned to his occupation of shepherd, but took up arms whenever any fresh commotion disturbed any district of the country.

Kara-George was of lofty stature, of robust constitution, and of a noble and frank demeanour. Silent and pensive, when he was not stimulated by liquor, or by the sound of arms, or by contradiction in council, he was seen to pass whole days without uttering a syllable.

Almost all men who have performed, or who are destined to perform, great things, are sparing of words. Their communing is with themselves rather than with others. They feed upon their own thoughts, and in these inward musings brace those intellectual and active energies, the development of which constitutes the great character. Napoleon became a babler only when his fate was accomplished, and his fortune on the decline. An inflexible defender of justice and order, Kara-George hanged his own brother, for having attempted the honour of a young maiden.

It was in January 1836, that several armies penetrated at the same time into Servia. Bekir, Pacha of Bosnia, and Ibrahim, Pacha of Scutari, received orders from the Porte to proceed thence with all their forces. Bekir sent two corps of about 40,000 men. Ibrahim advanced by way of Nissa, at the head of a French army. Kara-George, with forces very inferior in number, but animated with an invincible patriotism, and full of confidence in their chiefs, and protected by the forests which shielded their movements, repulsed all the partial attacks of Bekir and Ibrahim. After having over-

thrown Hadgi-bey, near Petzka, he marched on the principal army, which was retiring on Schabaz, came up with and entirely defeated it at Schabaz, on the 8th August 1806. Kulmi and the old Mahomet were slain. The wreck of the army saved itself in Schabaz. The Bosniaks who endeavoured to repass the Drina were taken prisoners. Kara-George, who had with him only 7000 infantry and 2000 cavalry, proceeded with rapidity upon Ibrahim Pacha, who was besieging Daligrad, a Servian town, defended by another chief named Peter Dobrinjas. At his approach, Ibrahim demanded a parley. Conferences were opened at Smaderewo, and a momentary pacification for Servia was the result, on conditions favourable to that country. It was only one of those interludes which give breathing time to the insurrectionary spirit, and insensibly accustom nations to that semi-independence which soon ripens into impatience for liberty. Shortly after, Kara-George, who had not disbanded his troops because the decisions of the Muphti had not sanctioned the capitulations of Smaderewo, marched upon Belgrade, the capital of Servia, a strong town upon the Danube, with a citadel and a Turkish garrison, and invested it. Guscharez-Ali, who commanded the town, obtained from Kara-George permission to retire to Widin down the Danube. Soleyman-Pacha remained in the citadel; but at the commencement of 1807, having marched out with 200 janissaries, who remained with him, in order to rejoin the Turks, he and they were massacred by the very escort that Kara-George had given the pacha to protect his retreat. Kara-George was not accused of this barbarity; it was the result of revenge on the part of the Servians against the corps of janissaries, whose atrocious sway had subjected them to similar executions.

These successes in the war of independence conferred on Servia an entirely municipal constitution. The military chiefs, named wayvodes, were every where substituted for the civil powers. These wayvodes were supported by a cavalry, composed of young men belonging to the wealthiest families, who received no pay, but lived at the expense of the wayvodes, and got part of the booty captured by them. Some of the chiefs had fifty of these young cavaliers around their persons. The most important of them at that time were Jacob Nenadovich, Milenko, Dobrinjas, Ressaava, and, above all, Kara-George.

A senate, composed of twelve members, elected by each of the twelve districts, had to preside over the general interests of this species of armed confederation, and to serve as a counterpoise to those usurped powers. This senate showed itself worthy of its functions. It introduced regularity into the finances, assigned the taxes, set apart the tenth for the pay of the troops, and occupied itself with the education of the people with a zeal and intelligence which indicated thus early a profound instinct for civilisation. They substituted for the routine instruction of the cloisters and convents, popular schools in each town, the capital of a district. Unfortunately, these senators, instead of holding their commission from the whole country, only represented the wayvodes, and were consequently wholly subject to their influence.

Another political deliberative body, composed of the wayvodes and hospodars themselves, retained the most important affairs in their own hands; and the precarious sovereignty was divided between this body and Kara-George. Every year, about Christmas, the wayvodes who were members of it, assembled at Belgrade, and debated, under the eyes of this chief, and in the midst of the intrigues which always surrounded them, concerning peace, war, the form of government, and the distribution of the impost. They gave in their accounts, and made regulations for the administration of justice. The existence and pretensions of this aristocratic body were an obstacle to the complete enfranchisement and rapid development of the resources of Servia. Unanimity is the vital point for an armed people in presence of its enemies; independence can be achieved only by a dictator—civil liberty requires deliberative bodies. If the Servians had been at that

time properly inspired, they would have raised Kara-George above all his rivals, and concentrated power in his hands. The hospodars were well aware that a single chief was necessary; but each of them desired that this chief should be weak, in the hope of controlling him. The choice of the senators was made with this secret view. They thought that this body would be useful to them against George, whilst, on the other hand, George hoped to turn it to his own advantage against the hospodars. Thus dissensions commenced amongst the liberators of Servia.

The most eloquent of the senators, Miladen Milovanovich, had gained, by the force of his words, the chief sway in the senate. Enriched by the pillage of Belgrade, and master of the foreign commerce by the duties of the Danube, of which he had taken the farm, he gave umbrage to Kara-George and his partisans. The senate, stirred up by them, arose in fury against Milovanovich, who retired, vowing vengeance, to Daligrad. He secretly informed George of the underhand intrigues of Russia and the Greeks against him. Kara-George listened to him, recalled him to Belgrade, resolved on war against the Bosniaks, and opened the campaign of 1809 by entering their country.

The same national song which celebrated the commencement of the insurrection, foretold misfortunes when they should attempt to pass the Drina and invade Bosnia. The prediction of the poet was the oracle of God. This campaign was a series of faults, disasters, and losses. Kara-George, assisted by a Russian corps, in vain combated with his habitual heroism. His discouraged soldiers offered a feeble resistance. Defeated by the Turks at Komenitz, he retired to cover Iagodina and the left bank of the Morava, and was indebted to an important diversion by the Russians for the preservation of this portion of territory.

Reverses increased the jealous enmity of the wayvodes against him. They strove to overthrow his power, as soon as it was not supported by the prestige of victory. Jacob Nenadovich was the first who shook his sway. He appeared in the senate on the 1st January, 1810, at the head of 600 young cavaliers, and was named president of the senate. The influence of Russia alone maintained for some time the tottering authority of Kara-George. He advanced against Kurehid, Pacha of Nissa, who had not less than 30,000 men. The plain of Varvarin was the theatre of a sanguinary action, in which 3000 Servians, animated by the voice and example of their general, repulsed this mass of Turks, compelled them to retreat to their entrenchments, and shortly after to return to Nissa. Kara-George immediately advanced towards Lonitz, besieged by 40,000 Ottomans. The town, which had resisted a formidable artillery for twelve days, was about to fall into the power of the besiegers, when the appearance of Kara-George, and the valour of his Servians, forced the Turkish army to repossess the Drina. It was the crowning glory of Kara-George. Through his exertions, Servia, entirely freed, extended its frontiers from the Isle of Poretsch, on the Danube, to the confluence of that river with the Timok. But peace, always more disastrous to the champions of their country than war, brought new intrigues and new dissensions amongst the chiefs, whom the common danger had united. The hospodars wished to lessen the authority of Kara-George, in order that they might entirely denude him thereafter. The plot was revealed to him in time. He availed himself of this attempt, which he repressed with energy, to effect in his own favour a decisive reaction in the diet of 1811. He struck a mortal blow at the influence of the hospodars and wayvodes, by subdividing the districts and multiplying the chiefs, who, too weak to act alone, became thenceforth easy instruments to manage, and who being, furthermore, jealous of the ancient superiority of the wayvodes, leaned upon the authority of the chief magistrate as a support against them, and thus attached their fortune to his. The functions of the senate were altered. Instead of concentrating all power in one body, it was divided into two assemblies, of which one, composed of the least influential members,

formed a sort of judicial magistracy, and the other was invested with the administrative capacity, and became a species of ministry to Kara-George. We cannot avoid admiring in this great man a political instinct as skilful as his glance in battle was sure and comprehensive. In thus calling and retaining near him, in lucrative and honourable functions, his friends, and even his enemies, he separated them from the populations too much accustomed to obey them, and extinguished their seditious oligarchy. A law pronounced banishment against every Servian who gave resistance to this form of constitution. Dobrinjas and Milenko suffered this punishment, and took refuge in Russia. Nenadovich joined the party of George, in consequence of the marriage of his daughter with one of the most powerful partisans of the dictator, Miladen.

The sultan proposed to Kara-George to acknowledge him as hospodar of Servia, under the guarantee of Russia. The Turks were to keep the fortresses and artillery of the Servians. Complicated negotiations dragged on without result up to 1813, when Kara-George, unable to come to an agreement with the Porte, called his countrymen to arms. "You have," said he to them, "vanquished your enemies for nine years with me; you have fought without artillery or fortified places; you have now towns, ramparts, rivers between the Turks and you, 150 pieces of cannon, seven fortresses, forty fortified gates, and your forests, the impregnable asylum of your liberty; the Russians also will march to your aid. Can you hesitate?"

The Turks, commanded by the Pacha of Widin, put themselves in motion. The grand vizier, wishing to profit by the victory of the French at Lutzen, urged the pachas to terminate by a blow this long contest, so humiliating to the Porte. 18,000 Turks advanced against Weliko, whom they besieged in Negotin. Weliko, struck by a cannon ball, was stretched dead. His army, disbanding in affright, saved itself by the marshes, and fled to the Isle of Poretsch. On the south, Kurehid-Pacha, at the head of a numerous army, drove before him Miladen and Sima, the two Servian generals, and encamped under the walls of Schabaz. Servia had never been reduced to such extremity. The enthusiasm of independence seemed stifled under so many reverses, and perhaps also under three years of peace and intestine dissensions. Its nationality and its glory were eclipsed at one and the same time; and Kara-George himself, deserting his station and his country, either because he foresaw the catastrophe inevitable, and wished to save himself for better days, or because his heroism was exhausted, and he cared only for his life and his treasures, passed over to the Austrian territory, with his secretary Janki, and three of his confidants. Thus was for ever eclipsed this Servian hero, who went to die in an Austrian citadel, instead of finding, amongst his compatriots, and on the soil of that country which he had first aroused, the death which had immortalised him!

On learning his flight, the army disbanded, and Smenderwo and Belgrade fell again into the power of the Turks. Servia became a pachalik, and Soleyman, its conqueror, the pacha. The senators had fled; one man alone, then almost a boy, remained faithful to the desperate cause of independence. He was the Wayvode Milosch Obrenovich, who raised the southern districts, and made a demonstration against Oselbiza. But being abandoned by his troops, he was constrained to accept the propositions of the Turks. Soleyman, to whom he was presented, received him with honour. The disarmed Servians were employed to rear with their own hands the fortifications intended to keep down the country. The dispossessed spahis revenged themselves for their nine years' exile, to which the valour of the Servians had driven them, by a more insolent tyranny and oppression. However, the national character was improved by this severe and disgraceful servitude. The fire of the insurrection smouldered. Milosch, who was waiting with an attentive eye for the favourable moment, and who judged it not yet come, energetically repressed the premature attempts of his

friends. The barbarous faithlessness of the *kiaya* of Soleyman-Pacha, was at length more influential with him than the counsels of friendship. Milosch had obtained an amnesty for the insurgents of Jagodina. The Turks, instead of keeping their promise, brought the chiefs of that insurrection to Belgrade, had 150 of them shot, and thirty-six impaled. Milosch, who was himself at Belgrade, had the bitterness of witnessing the punishment of his countrymen. Their blood rose up against him, and shouted in his heart. The Turks perceived his rage, and fearing his vengeance, they took him into custody; but he escaped before he was well arrested, cleared the ramparts, fled into the mountains of Rudnik, there rallied his partisans, and the insurrection spread like wildfire through all the forests of Servia.

Milosch was born in 1780; his mother, Wischnia, was married twice. Her first husband was named Obren. She had by him a son called Milan. Her second husband's name was Tescho. They had several children, one of whom was Milosch. His parents having no fortune, he was at first obliged to conduct the droves of oxen which the rich merchants of the country sent to the markets of Dalmatia. He afterwards entered the service of his maternal brother, Milan, who carried on a trade in cattle. The two brothers loved each other so tenderly, that Milosch took the name of Obrenovich, which was that of the father of Milan.* The commerce of the two brothers prospered. Already rich and possessed of influence at the period of the first insurrection, they took part in it, each according to the nature of his character. Milan, mild and peaceable, remained at home, and superintended the administration of the district. Milosch, eager and intrepid, fought under Kara-George.

When Kara-George changed the constitution of the country, Milan, having taken part against him in the senate, was shot by his orders. Milosch owed in part his present station and renown to this death of his brother. Revenge threw him into the ranks of the discontented. He did not follow the chiefs who fled in 1813. The eyes of men were naturally directed to the only one that remained in the land.

On Palm Sunday, in 1815, Milosch, a fugitive from Belgrade, entered the church of Takowa, where a numerous congregation was assembled. He harangued these people with that natural eloquence which the Servian possesses, and with the all-potent energy of despair, which was already felt by those whom he addressed. Hostilities commenced. Milosch, at the head of some young cavaliers of his district, and 1000 mountaineers, took a tower from the spahis, and two pieces of cannon. At the report of this success, the emigrants returned, the fugitives left their hiding-places in the forests, and the Heyduks descended from the mountains. They attacked the *kiaya* of the pacha, who, at the head of 10,000 Turks, had imprudently encamped on the plains of Morawa. The *kiaya* was killed in the battle; his death spread dismay amongst his troops, and the Turks fled to Sienitz. There a second battle occurred, in which Milosch was victorious, the spoils, women, and artillery of the *kiaya*, falling into the hands of the Servians. Ali-Pacha left Belgrade with all the troops that remained, and advanced to meet Milosch. He was defeated, and retired to Kimpri, under protection of an escort given him by the victor. Adem-Pacha made a capitulation equally disgraceful, shut himself up in Novibazar, and received presents from Milosch. The Pacha of Bosnia came down from the mountains with a fresh and numerous army. He sent Ali, one of his lieutenants, into the Mat-schewai to fight Milosch. Ali was made prisoner, and dismissed to the grand vizier, loaded with presents. The Servians already showed themselves worthy of that civiliation, in the name of which they fought, by their generous conduct, and Milosch treated his enemies as future friends. He felt that he

period for the complete independence of his country was not yet arrived, and that it was better to promote it by treaties than dishonour it by massacres.

On the frontier of the Morawa, Maraschli-Pacha advanced in his turn. A disagreement fortunately reigned between this general and Kurehid-Pacha, formerly grand vizier and Pacha of Bosnia. They formed not their plans in concert, and each desired that the other should suffer reverses, in order to secure for himself the whole honour of the victory, and both wished to enter into negotiation, and carry off the credit of putting an end to the war. Milosch, informed of these dissensions, prepared to take advantage of them; he boldly entered the camp of the Turks, and trusted his person in the hands of the grand vizier. He had an interview with Kurehid, but terms could not be agreed upon. Milosch wished that Servia should preserve her arms, and the pacha agreed to all the conditions except that, which rendered the others insecure. Milosch arose, irritated, to remount on horseback; Kurehid ordered him to be arrested, and the janissaries laid hands upon him; but Ali-Pacha, that lieutenant of Kurehid whom Milosch had vanquished, and released loaded with presents, courageously interposed between the soldiers and Milosch, and represented to Kurehid that Milosch had come to the camp on the faith of his word, that he was bound by oath to let him retire safe and sound, and that he would sooner himself die than that any attempt should be made against the liberty of a man to whom he owed his life. The firmness of Ali-Pacha had its due weight with the vizier and his soldiers, and he was allowed to conduct Milosch out of the camp. "Milosch," said he to him on parting from him, "never trust any one henceforth, not even me! We have been friends; we separate to-day for ever."

Milosch departed with rapidity. Negotiations which he opened with Maraschli-Ali were more fortunate; the arms were yielded; Servian deputies went to Constantinople, and returned at the end of a month, the bearers of a firman of peace conceived in these terms: "In the same manner as God has conferred subjects upon the sultan, so does the sultan confer them upon his pacha." The pacha returned to Belgrade, and the Servian chiefs came to make their submission, through the mediation of Milosch. The fortresses were to remain in the hands of the Turks, the Servians had the privilege of fixing their own imposts, the administration was to be divided between the two parties, and a national senate was to assemble at Belgrade under the auspices of the pacha. Ali, the friend of the Servians, displaced Soleyman-Pacha, their enemy, who was recalled by the Grand Seigneur. Such a state of things could not last; collisions were inevitable. Milosch, still the chief man in his nation, resided at Belgrade with Ali-Pacha, as a vigilant sentinel, ever ready to give his people the signal of resistance or onslaught.

Ali sought to obtain by address the disarming that he could not compass by force; he addressed himself to Milosch, conjuring him to procure the arms of the people. He answered, that he and his friends were ready to lay down their arms, but that it was impossible to wrest them from the peasants. The pacha, rendered indignant, excited against Milosch the president of the Servian chancery, Moler, and the metropolitan Nilselwitz; but the guards of Milosch seized upon these two conspirators at the council board, and compelled the pacha himself, by virtue of his executive power, to order them to execution. The boldness of the Servians increased at this exhibition of weakness on the part of the pacha. Milosch left Belgrade; and to escape the snares with which the Turks, and his enemies amongst the Servians, encompassed him, he shut himself up in the fortified village of Top-schidor, half a league from Belgrade. In 1821, a new attempt was made upon the authority and life of Milosch. The two *vayvodes* who had planned it were put to death. The pacha was suspected of having been the instigator, and the animosity between the two nations grew to a great height.

Circumstances were favourable to the establishment

* ["*Vich*" in Slavonic signifies "the son of;" and the Christian name of the father, with this addition, becomes the surname of the son, as Nicholas, the present emperor of Russia, is called Nicholas Pavlovich, Nicholas, the son of Paul. The name of Milan's father, therefore, was Obren.]

of national power in Serbia. The revolt of the Albanians, and the war of independence in Greece, occupied and weakened the Turks. A nation never conquers its liberty but by concentrating power in a military chief; interest and gratitude lead it naturally to confer a hereditary sway upon him who has organised and defended it. Struggling nations have an instinct for monarchy, they require a safeguard to their contested independence. This instinct was stronger in Serbia, where republican forms were unknown. Milosch himself was impressed with it, and hastened to turn it to account. He extended his authority, and established pretty nearly the constitution of Kara-George. He threw between the people and himself the aristocratic order of the *knevens*, who were entrusted with the administration of the country. Each *kneven* had its *kner*, or province, and the majority of the districts had their *obor-kneven*. Milosch nominated them, fixing at his pleasure the extent of their territory and prerogatives. To obviate every pretext for exactions on the part of the *knevens*, they were paid out of the public treasury. Local courts were established in the towns and villages. A court of appeal sat at Kraguzewatz. Milosch named the judges. Custom was to serve as law, until the digest of the code was ready. The right of pronouncing the punishment of death was reserved to the supreme head of the government.

The slight subsidy paid by Serbia to the Porte, a sort of ransom, the mere memento of its ancient dependence, passes through the hands of the chief, who pays it over to the pacha. The pacha, the vain shadow of an authority which no longer exists, is but a forlorn sentinel of the Porte, to observe the Danube, and give orders to the Turks who occupy the fortresses. In case of war by Turkey against Austria, the Servians are called upon to furnish a contingent of 40,000 men. The clergy, whose influence might have balanced that of Milosch, have lost all weight, by being deprived of the administration of justice, which is remitted to civil tribunals. The popes and monks are amenable, like the rest of the country, to corporal chastisement, and they pay the same taxes. The lands of the bishops are confiscated, and a fixed salary paid to them by the state in lieu. All power is thus concentrated in the hands of the supreme head. The civilisation of Serbia resembles the regular discipline of a vast camp, where a single will is the soul of a multitude of men, whatever may be their functions or grades. In presence of the Turks, this attitude is necessary. The people is always up and in arms, and the chief must be an absolute captain. This state of semi-independence is still disputed by the Turks. The treaty of Akerman in 1827, resolved nothing. A diet was held at Kraguzewatz, where the treaty of Akerman was the subject of discussion. Milosch arose and said:—

“I know that there are people discontented at the punishment inflicted by my orders on some disturbers of the peace. I am accused of being too severe and greedy of power, whilst I have no other object in view than to maintain the tranquillity and obedience which are required by the two imperial courts. It is imputed to me also as a crime that the people pay heavy imposts, without reflecting at how great a cost we have conquered our liberty; and how much more severe is the charge of slavery! A feeble man would sink under the difficulties of my situation. It is only by arming myself with the inflexibility of stern justice for your own protection, that I can fulfil the obligations that I have contracted towards the people, the emperors, my own conscience, and God himself.”

After this discourse, the diet drew up an act which was presented to Milosch, and sent to the Porte, by which the Servians through their chiefs swore perpetual obedience to his highness, Prince Milosch Obrenovich, and his descendants. Thus Serbia paid its debt to Milosch. He now pays his to Serbia. He gives to his country laws as simple as its manners, but laws breathing the enlightened spirit of Europe. He sends, in imitation of ancient legislators, young Servians to visit the large capitals of Europe, and collect information on

legislation and administrative government, to make it available to Serbia. Some foreigners are attached to his court, and are useful to him as interpreters and introducers of the arts of the neighbouring nations. The people, tranquillised and devoted to the pursuits of agriculture and commerce, understand the value of the liberty they have achieved, and progress in numbers, activity, and public virtue. Religion, the sole civiliser of nations which have barbarous laws, has been shorn of its abuses, without losing its legitimate influence. The education of the people is the principal object of the government, and the people lend themselves, with an enthusiastic instinct, to this effort of Milosch to render them worthy of a more enlightened system of government. They seem fully to comprehend that educated nations have alone the faculty of constituting themselves free, and they hasten to arrive at that term. The municipal bodies, formed in the districts as the germ of liberty, prepare them for it. Some exiles banished by the Turks, after the flight of Kara-George, or by Milosch himself, for having conspired with the Turks against him, are still deprived of their country; but every day, by the consolidation of order and the merging of individual opinions in a unanimous patriotism, hastens the moment when they may return, and recognise the happy influence of the hero whom they opposed.

Ten thousand Turks yet occupy the fortresses. The prince could easily chase them away; the whole country would respond to his call. But the presence of these Turks in the fortresses, and their nominal co-sovereignty, exercising no mischievous influence upon Serbia, and, on the contrary, tending to preserve it from internal agitations and intrigues from without, which would inevitably harass the country if it were completely detached from the Ottoman empire, the prince, by an able policy, prefers this state of things to a new and premature war. The people are content with this peace, which permits them to develop all the elements of civilisation. They fear nothing for their real independence. All the inhabitants are armed, and possess the interior of the country, the towns, and the villages. The pacha resides at Belgrade. Milosch, sometimes at Belgrade, sometimes at his castle a mile from that city, resides more frequently at Kraguzewatz. He is there more isolated from the Turks, and occupies the most central point of Serbia. The nature of the country, and his warlike attitude, place him beyond the reach of a surprise. He is now forty-nine years old, and has two sons, the eldest of whom is twelve years of age.

The future destinies of the Ottoman empire will decide the fate of this family and people; but nature seems to call it to a powerful participation in the great events which are preparing in European Turkey, as well as in the Asiatic empire. The popular songs which the prince distributes amongst the people, represent him in the impending future as the glory and mainstay of Serbia, with its ancient heroic king, Stephen Dushan. The adventurous exploits of its Heyduks pass from mouth to mouth, and make the Servians look to the resurrection of a Slavonic nation, of which it has preserved the germ, the language, and the primitive manners and virtues, in the forests of Scunadia.

A traveller like me cannot avoid wishing success to this prayer and expectation; he cannot quit without regret and benedictions those immense virgin forests, those mountains, plains, and rivers, which seem just fresh from the hands of the Creator, and to mingle the luxuriant youth of earth, with the youthfulness of a nation. When he sees those new dwellings of the Servians spring out of the woods, overtop the edge of torrents, or stretch on long yellow ridges at the bottom of valleys; when he hears from a distance the noise of the saw and the flour mills, the tinkling of the bells, newly baptised in the blood of the defenders of their country,* and the cheerful or martial song of the youths and

* [To understand this phrase correctly, it must be borne in mind that bells are revered in the Greek church almost as saints, and are generally baptised and consecrated in great form.]

maidens returning from their toil; when he sees those long rows of children issuing from the schools or wooden churches, the roofs of which are scarcely finished, the accent of liberty, joy, and hope on all their tongues, and youth and elasticity in all their movements; when he reflects upon the great natural advantages which this region secures to its inhabitants, upon the temperate sun which shines upon it, the mountains which shade and protect it like fortresses planted by nature, upon that fine Danube, which bends round to encircle it, and to bear its products to the north and the east—finally, upon the Adriatic Sea, which may soon give it harbours and a marine, and thus draw it near to Italy; when the traveller, furthermore, remembers that he has received, whilst travelling amongst this people, invariable marks of good-feeling and friendly salutations, that no cabin has asked value for its hospitality, that he has been every where welcomed as a brother, consulted as a sage, interrogated as an oracle, and that his words, treasured up by the eager zeal of the popes or the knevens, will remain as a germ of civilisation in the villages he has passed through; he cannot avoid looking back for the last time with affection on the wooded shores, and the ruinous mosques with their domes pierced to the day, from which the wide Danube separates him, and exclaiming, as he loses them from his view, "I should wish to combat with this new-born nation for fruitful liberty!" or repeating those stanzas from one of the popular songs which his dragoman has translated for him:

"When the sun of Servia glitters in the waters of the Danube, the river seems to roll blades of yatagans, and the dazzling muskets of the Montenegrins—it is a river of steel which defends Servia. It is sweet to sit on its banks, and look on the shivered arms of our enemies passing.

When the Albanian wind descends from the mountains, and pours upon the forests of Semmadia, it utters cries like the army of the Turks at the rout of Mosawa—this murmur is sweet to the ears of the free Servians! Dead or living, it is sweet, after the combat, to repose at the foot of that oak which echoes the song of liberty like ourselves!"

[With this account of the struggles of the Servians for liberty, the narrative of M. de Lamartine's travels in the East may be said to terminate, what follows being in a great measure episodic to the work.]

ACCOUNT OF THE RESIDENCE OF FATAÛLA SAYEGHIR

AMONG THE WANDERING ARABS OF THE GREAT DESERT.

Obtained and translated by M. de Lamartine.

PREFACE.

We were encamped in the middle of the desert which extends from Tiberias to Nazareth. We were talking of the Arab tribes that we had encountered during the day, of their manners, and their relations amongst themselves, and with the nations who surround them. We were seeking to pierce the mystery of their origin, of their destiny, and of that astonishing pertinacity in the exclusiveness of race which separates these tribes from all other human communities, and keeps them, like the Jews, not beyond the pale of civilisation, but in a civilisation peculiar and unchangeable as granite. The more I have travelled, the more I am convinced that races supply the grand key to history and manners. Mankind are not so easily educated as philosophers tell us. The influence of government and laws is very far from acting so radically as is thought upon the manners and the instincts of a people: whilst the primitive constitution, the blood of the race, always acts and manifests itself, after thousands of years in the physical forms and moral habits of the family or the tribe. The human race flows by streams in the vast ocean of humanity; but it conmingles its waters very slowly, frequently never, and it comes out, like the Rhone

from the Lake of Geneva, with the flavour and tint of its own wave. There is in this a profundity of thought and meditation; and there is also an important secret for legislators. All that they do, in unison with this spirit of race, succeeds; all that they attempt, in opposition to this natural predisposition, fails. Nature is stronger than they. This idea is not that entertained by present philosophers, but it is palpable to the traveller, and there is more philosophy in 100 leagues of a caravan route, than in ten years of reading and meditation.

I felt myself happy thus wandering at hazard, without other route than my caprice might select, in the midst of deserts and unknown lands. I said to my friends, and to M. Mazolier, my dragoman, that if I were alone, and without family ties, I would lead this life for years and years. I should love never to sleep where I awoke, to move my tent from the shores of Egypt to those of the Persian Gulf, to have at evening no object but the enjoyment of evening itself; to traverse on foot, and survey with the eye and heart, all those unknown regions, and all those races of men so different from my own, and to contemplate humanity, that finest of God's creations, under all its phases. What is required to effect this? A few faithful slaves, or servants, arms, a little gold, two or three tents, and camels. The air of these countries is almost always warm and pure, subsistence easy and cheap, hospitality certain and unceremonious. I would a hundred times prefer years thus spent under different skies, with hosts and friends always new, to the sterile and noisy monotony of life in our capitals. It is certainly more difficult to lead the life of a man of the world at Paris or London, than to traverse the universe as a traveller. The result of the two labours is, however, very different. The traveller dies or returns with a treasure of thoughts and wisdom. The householder of our chief cities grows old without knowing and without seeing, and dies as clogged and obscured with false ideas as the day he came into the world.

"I should wish," said I to my dragoman, "to pass these mountains, to descend into the great desert of Syria, to come up with some of those great unknown tribes which plough it, receive their hospitality for months, pass on to others, study resemblances and differences, follow them from the gardens of Damascus to the banks of the Euphrates and the confines of Persia, and lift up the veil which still conceals all that civilisation of the desert whence our civilisation was brought, and where we must yet find it; but time presses, and we shall only see the margin of that ocean, through whose extent no one has penetrated. No traveller has advanced among those imnumerable tribes, which cover, with their tents and their flocks, the fields of the patriarchs. One man alone has attempted it, but he is no more, and the notes that he had been able to collect, during a ten years' sojourn amongst these people, have perished with him."

I spoke of M. de Lascaris; the following is an account of who M. de Lascaris was:—

Born in Piedmont of one of those Greek families that came into Italy after the conquest of Constantinople, M. de Lascaris was a knight of Malta, when Napoleon came to conquer that island. M. de Lascaris, then very young, followed him into Egypt, and attached himself to his fortune, being fascinated by his genius. A man of genius himself, he foresaw, amongst the first, the high destinies which providence reserved for a young man tempered in the spirit of Plutarch, at an epoch when all characters were worn out, broken down, or belied. He foresaw more—he foresaw that the greatest work for his hero to accomplish was not perhaps the restoration of power in Europe, an operation that the reaction of minds rendered necessary and consequently easy, but that Asia offered a vaster field to the regenerative ambition of a hero—that he had there to conquer, found, and invigorate masses a hundred times more gigantic—that despotism, short-lived in Europe, would be long and eternal in Asia—and that the great man who should effect there orga-

nisation and union, would accomplish much more than Alexander, much more than Bonaparte was able to do in France. It appears that the young warrior of Italy, whose imagination was luminous as the East, unconfinèd as the desert, and grand as the world, had confidential conversations on this subject with M. de Lascaris, and threw a dart of thought towards that horizon which his destiny opened to him. It was but a dart, and I am very sorry for it; for it is evident that Bonaparte was the man for the East, and not for Europe. People will laugh on reading this, it will appear paradoxical to every one; but ask travellers. Bonaparte, whom they endeavour to represent at present as the man of the French revolution and of liberty, never had the least idea of liberty, and rendered the French revolution a mere abortion. History will prove it in all its pages, when it shall be written under other inspirations than those which dictate it now. He was the reaction which arose against the liberty of Europe embodied—a reaction glorious, terrific, startling, and that is all. What do you wish by way of proof? Ask what remains now of Bonaparte in the world, unless it be an ill-written page of battle and of restoration; but of any thing which survives a man beyond his name, there is nothing but a vast renown. In Asia, he would have moved men by millions, and a man of simple ideas himself, he would, with two or three watchwords, have reared a monumental civilisation, which had endured a thousand years after he was gone. But the error was committed. Napoleon chose Europe; only he wished to leave an explorer behind him to observe what there was to do, and to track out the route to India, if his fortune should ever open it to him. M. de Lascaris was this man. He departed with secret instructions from Napoleon, received the money necessary for his enterprise, and established himself at Aleppo to perfect himself in the Arab language. A man of merit, talent, and information, he feigned a sort of monomania as an excuse for his sojourn in Syria, and his persevering intercourse with all the Arabs of the desert who arrived at Aleppo. At length, after some years' preparation, he attempted his grand and perilous enterprise. He visited, with various accidents and in successive disguises, all the tribes of Mesopotamia and the Euphrates, and returned to Aleppo rich in the knowledge that he had acquired, and the political relations he had prepared in advance for Napoleon. But whilst he was thus fulfilling his mission, fortune overthrew his hero; and he learnt his fall the very day that he returned, to convey to him the fruit of seven years of peril and devotedness. This unexpected blow of fate was mortal to M. de Lascaris. He went into Egypt, and died at Cairo, alone, unknown, and abandoned, leaving his notes as his only legacy. It is said that the English consul got hold of these precious documents, which might become so prejudicial to his government, and that they were destroyed or forwarded to London.

"What a pity," said I to M. Mazolier, "that the result of so many years, and of so much patient suffering, should have been lost to us!" "Something remains of it," he answered me; "I was connected at Latakia, my native place, with a young Arab who accompanied M. de Lascaris during all his travels. After his death, void of resources, and deprived even of the moderate salary, considerably in arrears, which had been promised him by M. de Lascaris, he returned, poor and forlorn, to the house of his mother. He is living at present upon a small allowance with a merchant at Latakia. I knew him there, and he has often spoken to me of a collection of notes which he wrote out, at the instance of his patron, in the course of their nomadic life." "Do you think," said I to M. Mazolier, "that this young man would consent to sell me it?" "I believe so," responded he; "and I am the more inclined to the belief, because he often testified a desire to offer it to the French government. But nothing is so easy as to ascertain the fact. I will write to Fatalla Sayeghir, for such is the name of the young Arab. The Tatar of Ibrahim Pacha will deliver him my letter, and we shall have the answer on returning to Saïde." "I

empower you," said I to him, "to negotiate this affair, and to offer him 2000 piastres for his manuscript."

Some months passed before the answer of Fatalla Sayeghir reached me. Having returned to Beirut, I sent my interpreter to Latakia to negotiate personally for the acquisition of the manuscript. The conditions being accepted, and the sum paid, M. Mazolier brought me the Arab notes. In the course of the winter, I got them translated, with infinite difficulty, into the lingua Franca, from which I afterwards translated into French; and I was thus enabled to gratify the public with the result of a ten years' journey which no traveller had before accomplished. The extreme difficulty of this triple translation must serve as an excuse for the style of these notes. The style is of little consequence in this sort of works: facts and manners are every thing. I am quite certain that the first translation is faithful; the author of it has only suppressed some amplifications and events, which were mere tedious repetitions, and afforded no information.

If this account has any interest in a scientific, geographical, and political view, I shall have a request to make: it is that the French government, which so perilous and long an exile was undertaken to enlighten and to serve, should exhibit a tardy gratitude to the unfortunate Fatalla Sayeghir, whose services might at present be so useful to it. I likewise put in a claim for the young and able interpreter, M. Mazolier, who translated these notes from the Arabic, and who accompanied me in my travels in Syria, Galilee, and Arabia, for a year. Well versed in the knowledge of Arabic, the son of an Arab mother, the nephew of one of the most powerful and revered sheiks of Lebanon, having already traversed with me all these countries, familiar with the manners of all these tribes, a man of courage, intelligence, and probity, and devoted in his heart to France, this young man might be of the greatest utility to the government in the ports of Syria. French nationality does not terminate at our frontiers; the country has sons also on shores the names of which she scarcely knows. M. Mazolier is one of these sons. France ought not to forget him. None could better serve her than he in those countries where our civilising, protecting, and even political action, must inevitably make itself felt at no distant interval.

Here follows the recital of Fatalla Sayeghir, literally translated.

STORY OF FATALLA SAYEGHIR.

At the age of eighteen I left Aleppo, my birth place, with a stock of merchandise, to establish myself in Cyprus. Having been rather fortunate in my commercial operations during the first year, I grew attached to the pursuit, and conceived the fatal project of sending a cargo of the productions of the island to Trieste. In a short time my merchandise was embarked, consisting of cotton, silk, wine, sponges, and colomintida. On the 18th March 1809, my vessel, under the command of Captain Chelafinatti, set sail. I was already calculating the advantages to result from my speculation, and rejoicing myself with the idea of large gains, when, in the midst of these pleasing dreams, I received the disastrous intelligence of the capture of my vessel by an English ship of war, which had carried it to Malta. In consequence of this loss, I was compelled to close my ledger, and retire from commerce. Totally ruined, I quitted Cyprus and returned to Aleppo.

A few days after my arrival, I dined at the house of one of my friends, in company with several persons, amongst whom was an ill-dressed stranger, to whom, in spite of his garb, great attention was paid. After dinner, music was introduced, and this stranger, seating himself near me, began to converse with affability. We talked upon music; and at the end of a long conversation, I got up to go and ask his name. I learnt that he was called M. Lascaris de Vintimille, and that he was a knight of Malta. On the following day he called upon me, with a violin in his hand. "My dear boy," said he to me on entering, "I remarked yester-

day how fond you were of music; I consider you already as my son, and I bring you a violin, which I beg you to accept." I received with great joy an instrument which I found exactly suited to me, and I returned my hearty acknowledgments. After two hours' animated conversation, in the course of which he questioned me upon all sorts of subjects, he retired. The next day he returned, and continued these visits for a fortnight; at length he proposed to me that I should give him lessons in Arabic, an hour each day, for which he offered me a hundred piastres a-month. I accepted this advantageous proposal with alacrity; and in six months he began to read and speak Arabic tolerably well. One day he said to me, "My dear son" (he always addressed me thus), "I see that you have a great inclination for commerce, and as I desire to remain some time with you, I will give you occupation which will be agreeable to you. Here is money; buy goods that are most in request at Homs, Hama, and the surrounding districts. We will go and trade in those countries the least frequented by merchants, and you will see that we shall make a good business of it." The desire of remaining with M. Lascaris, and the conviction that this enterprise would be advantageous to us, made me accept his proposition without hesitation, and I commenced immediately to make the purchases, according to a list which he handed me, consisting of the following articles:—red cloth, amber, coral, chaplets, cotton handkerchiefs, shawls of black and coloured silk called *cafics*, black shifts, needles, pins, combs, rings, horse-bits, glass bracelets, and different articles of glass; we joined to these, chemical products, spices, and drugs. M. Lascaris paid for these various articles 11,000 piastres, or 2000 *talaris*.

All the Aleppians who saw me buying these things, told me that M. Lascaris was deranged. In fact, his dress and manners gave support to this idea. He wore a long beard uncombed, a white turban very dirty, a miserable robe or *gombaz*, with a vest above it, a leather girdle, and red shoes without stockings. When he was spoken to, he feigned not to understand what was said. He passed the greatest part of the day in the coffee-house, and ate in the bazaar, which respectable people always avoid doing. He had an object to serve by this manner of proceeding, which I learnt afterwards; but those who did not know it believed him out of his wits. As to myself, I found him full of sense and wisdom, reasoning well upon all subjects—in a word, a very superior man. One day, when all our merchandise was packed up, he called me to him to ask me what they said of him at Aleppo. "They say," answered I, "that you are mad." "And what do you think yourself?" he asked. "I think that you are quite sensible and wise," I replied. "I hope to prove to you so in time," said he; "but in the meantime you must come under an engagement to do all that I command you, without remonstrance, or asking any reasons, to obey me in all things—in a word, I require from you a blind obedience: you will have no reason to repent it."

He then told me to go and get him some mercury. I immediately did as I was ordered. He mixed it with grease and two drugs with which I was not acquainted, assuring me, that by hanging round the neck a piece of cotton steeped in this preparation, we should preserve ourselves from the bites of insects. I said to myself that there were not sufficient insects at Homs or Hama to render such a preservative necessary, and that therefore it must be destined for some other country; but as he had just interdicted me from proffering any observations, I contented myself with asking him upon what day we were to depart, in order that the *moukres* (camel-drivers) might be engaged. "I give you," answered he, "thirty days to arrive yourself. My purse is at your disposal; and yourself, spend as much as you choose; spare nothing." It is a farewell to the world, thought I, that he means me to make; but the profound attachment that I already felt for him prevailed against this sentiment; I thought only upon the present, and employed the time that he had granted me in agreeable diversions. But, alas! the period of

pleasure quickly passes. I soon saw the end of it. M. Lascaris urged me to depart. I yielded to his orders, and, taking advantage of a caravan which was going to Hama, on Thursday, the 18th of February 1810, we quitted Aleppo, and arrived at the village of Saarmin, after twelve hours' march. The following day, we proceeded to Nuarat el Nahaman, a pretty small town, six hours farther. It is famed for its salubrious air and good water, and it is the birth-place of a celebrated Arab poet, named Abou el Hella el Maari, blind from the cradle. He had learned to write by a singular method. He sat in a vapour-bath, whilst they traced with ice the form of the Arab characters on his back. Several traits of an astonishing sagacity are related of him. Amongst others, the following:—Being at Bagdad, in the house of a caliph, to whom he was incessantly vaunting the air and water of his country, the caliph procured some water from the river of Nuarat, and without giving him any hint of the fact, presented it to him to drink. The poet immediately recognising it, exclaimed, "This is, indeed, its limpid water—but where is its pure air?"

To return to the caravan. It stopped two days at Nuarat, on account of a fair that was held there every Sunday. We went to take a walk through the town; and in the tumult occasioned by the fair, I lost sight of M. Lascaris, who had disappeared in the crowd. After searching for him a long time, I discovered him at last in a secluded spot, conversing apart with a ragged Arab. I asked him, with surprise, what pleasure he found in the conversation of such a personage, being unable to understand his Arabic, or to make him comprehend his. "Whenever I have the good fortune to talk with a Bedouin," answered he, "I reckon it as one of the happiest days of my life." "In that case," I observed, "you will be happy to your heart's content, for we shall continually encounter people of this description."

He told me to buy some cakes (the bread of the country) and cheese, and give them to Hettall, as the Bedouin was called, who took leave of us with thanks. On the 22d February we departed from Nuarat-el-Nahaman, and after six hours' march we reached Krau-Cheikria; and on the following day, after nine hours, Hama, a considerable town, where we were completely unknown, M. Lascaris having brought no letters of introduction. We passed the first night in a coffee-house, and the next day hired a room in the khan of Assad-Pacha. When I was commencing to open the bales and prepare the merchandise for sale, M. Lascaris said to me, with a discontented air, "You have nothing in your head but your miserable commerce! If you knew how many things there are more useful and interesting to attend to!" After which I gave up all idea of selling any thing, and went to stroll about the town.

On the fourth day M. Lascaris, walking alone, went as far as the castle, which was falling to ruin. Having examined it attentively, he was imprudent enough to commence taking its dimensions. Four vagabonds, who were loitering under a broken arch, fell upon him, threatening to denounce him as wishing to carry off the treasures, and to introduce the *giaours* into the castle. With a little money the whole affair might have been hushed; but M. Lascaris defended himself, and, escaping out of their hands with great difficulty, came to seek me. He had not had time to finish the recital of his adventure, before two officers of the government entered with one of the denouncers. They seized upon the key of our room, and marched us off, driving us before them with blows as if we had been malefactors. Being brought into the presence of the muetzhim, Selim Beik, distinguished for his cruelty, he interrogated us in the following strain:—"From what country are you?" "My companion is from Cyrus," I answered, "and I am from Aleppo." "What motive brings you here?" "We have come to sell goods." "You tell a lie; your companion has been seen in the castle taking its dimensions, and making a plan; it is to get possession of treasure, or to deliver the place to

the infidels." Then turning to the guards; "Conduct these dogs to a dungeon," he added. We were not allowed to say a word in exculpation. Being carried to prison, we were heavily chained at the feet and neck, and they shut us up in a dark cell, so narrow that we could not turn round. After some time we obtained a little light and some bread, by the application of a tallari. The prodigious quantity of fleas, and other insects, which infested the prison, effectually prevented our closing an eye during the whole night. We had scarcely courage to think of the means by which we might escape from this horrible place. At last I bethought me of a Christian writing-master, called Selim, whom I knew by reputation to be a man capable of rendering us good service. I gained one of our guards, who went to find him, and the following day Selim happily arranged the matter by a gift of sixty tallaris to the muetzim, and fifty piastres to his people. At this price we obtained our liberty. This imprisonment procured us the advantage of an acquaintance with Selim, and several other persons in Hama, with whom we passed twenty days in an agreeable manner. The town is charming; the Orontes runs through it, and renders it lively and animated, and its abundant waters render fruitful a multitude of gardens. The inhabitants are amiable, active, and intelligent; they are much attached to poetry, and cultivate it with success. They have been called the speaking birds, which epithet very forcibly characterises them. M. Lascaris having asked Selim for a letter of recommendation to a man of middling condition at Homs, who might serve us as a guide, he wrote the following epistle:—"To my friend Yakoub, salutation. Those who shall deliver this present writing into your hands are pedlars, who visit your place to sell their goods. Assist them as much as you can, your pains will not be thrown away; they are honest men. Adieu!"

M. Lascaris, well pleased with this letter, joined a caravan which was going to Homs. We left on the 25th March, and arrived, after six hours' marching, at Rastain, which is at present but the remains of a considerable town; there was nothing remarkable to be seen. We continued our route, and at the end of six days more we were at Homs. Yakoub, to whom we delivered our letter, received us favourably, and gave us supper. His trade consisted in making black mantles, called *mashtas*. After supper, some men of his own station came to pass the evening with him, to take coffee, and smoke. One of them, a locksmith, named Naufal, seemed to us an intelligent man. He spoke to us of the Bedouins, of their modes of life, and of making war. He informed us that he passed six months of the year amongst their tribes, putting their arms in order, and that he had a great many friends amongst them. When we were alone, M. Lascaris told me that he had this evening seen all his relations; and when I testified to him my astonishment at hearing that there were Vintimilles at Homs—"The falling in with Naufal," he replied to me, "is more precious in my eyes than meeting the whole body of my connections."

It was late when we retired, and the master of the domicile gave us one mattress and one blanket for us both. M. Lascaris had never slept double in his life, but, from a good disposition, he insisted upon my sharing his bed. Not wishing to contradict him, I placed myself by his side; but as soon as the light was put out, I slipped on to the floor, where, rolling myself in my mantle, I passed the night. When we arose in the morning, we found that we had both been sleeping in the same manner, M. Lascaris having laid down on the floor like myself. He embraced me, saying, "It is a good sign that we have both had the same idea, my dear son; I love to give you this title, which pleases you, I hope, as much as it does me." I thanked him for the concern he manifested towards me, and we went out together to beg Naufal to accompany us through all the town, and to point out to us such curiosities as it contained, promising to indemnify him for the loss of his day's work. The population of Homs is about 3000. The character of the inhabitants is in all respects

the opposite to that of the inhabitants of Hama. The citadel, situated in the centre of the town, is tumbling into ruins; the ramparts, well preserved, are washed by an arm of the Orontes. The atmosphere is very wholesome.

We bought, for forty piastres, two pelisses of sheepskin, similar to those of the Bedouins. These pelisses are weather proof. In order to be more at liberty, we hired a room in the khan, and requested Naufal to remain with us, we agreeing to give him what he would have gained by working in his shop, about three piastres a-day. He was extremely useful to us. M. Lascaris subjected him to an adroit interrogatory, and extracted from him all the hints that he desired; leading him into explanations of the manners, usages, and character of the Bedouins, their mode of receiving strangers, and of treating them. We staid thirty days at Homs, waiting for the period of the return of the Bedouins, who, upon ordinary occasions, quit the environs of this city in the month of October to proceed towards the south, always following the fine weather, water, and pasturage, marching one day, and resting themselves five or six. Some of them thus go as far as Bassorah and Bagdad, and others to Chatt-el-Arab, where the Tigris and Euphrates join together. In the month of February, they begin to return towards Syria, and at the end of April they are perceived in the deserts of Damascus and Aleppo. Naufal gave us all this information, and told us, furthermore, that the Bedouins used a great number of pelisses similar to ours, of black mashtas, and especially of cafies. In consequence, M. Lascaris made me buy twenty pelisses, ten mashtas, and fifty cafies, which I packed into one bale. This purchase cost 1200 piastres.

Naufal having proposed to us to pay a visit to the citadel, the recollection of our misfortune at Hama made us at first hesitate, fearing its recurrence, but on his assuring us that no mischief would happen to us, and that he would answer for our safety, we accepted the proposition, and went to see those ruins, situated on the top of a little hill in the middle of the town. This castle is better preserved than that of Hama. We remarked an obscure and deep grotto in it, from which an abundant spring of excellent water gushed, through an opening, four feet by two, and fell through bars of iron by a second opening. An old tradition was mentioned to us, which related that the passage of the waters having once been stopped up, a deputation from Persia arrived six months after, which procured the removal of the obstruction, and a stipulation that the opening should not be again interfered with, by the payment of a large sum to the government. Now, the entry to this grotto is forbidden, and it is not easy to get introduced into it.

On our return to the khan, Scheik Ibrahim asked me if I had noted down all that I had seen, all that had happened since our departure from Aleppo; and on my answering in the negative, he prayed me to do so, urging me to remember the past, and to keep an exact journal of all in Arabia, in order that he might himself translate it into French. Since that time, I took notes, which he carefully transcribed every day, and returned me in the morning. I put them together, in the hope that they may be useful to me some day, and procure me a slight compensation for my fatigues and privations.

M. Lascaris having determined on departing for the village of Sadding, I engaged Naufal to accompany us; and having joined with some other persons, we departed from Homs with all our merchandise. After a five hours' march, we crossed a wide stream which flows from the north to the south towards the castle of Hasné. This castle, commanded by an aga, serves as a place of halt to the caravan of Mecca coming from Damascus. The water of this stream is pleasant to drink, and we filled our leather bottles with it. This precaution is very necessary, for we find no more water during the seven hours' march that remains to arrive at Sadding. We got there at the going down of the sun. Naufal conducted us to the house of the scheik, Hassaf-Abou-Ibrahim, a venerable old man, the father of nine sons,

all married, and living under the same roof. He received us with cordiality, and presented all his family to us, which, to our great surprise, we found was composed of sixty-four persons. The sheik having asked us if we intended to establish ourselves in the village, or to travel into other parts, we informed him that we were merchants, that war between the great powers having interrupted the communication by sea with Cyprus, we had been desirous of setting up business in Aleppo, but having found many merchants richer than ourselves in that town, we had decided upon carrying our wares into less frequented districts, hoping thereby to drive a better trade. Having afterwards communicated to him the nature of our merchandise, he said to us, "These articles will only serve the Arabs of the desert, and I am very sorry to tell you so, but it will be impossible for you to advance amongst them. Even should you succeed in arriving, you will run the risk of losing every thing, even your lives. The Bedouins are greedy and full of audacity; they will seize upon your goods, and if you make the least resistance, they will put you to death. You are persons of honour and delicacy, and it will not be possible for you to support their grossness. I speak to you thus for your own good, I myself being a Christian. Believe my words; open your bales, sell as many articles as you can, and afterwards return with all speed to Aleppo, if you have any inclination for your possessions and your heads."

As soon as he had ceased talking, the principal inhabitants of the village, collected at his house to see us, opened up a series of dismal narrations. One of them told us that a pedlar, coming from Aleppo and going to the desert, had been stripped of all by the Arabs, and had been seen wending his way back quite naked. Another had received intelligence that a merchant from Damascus had been slaughtered. All were agreed upon the impossibility of penetrating amongst the Bedouin hordes, and strove by all the means in their power to dissuade us from so hazardous an enterprise. I saw that M. Lascaris was not very comfortable. He turned to me, and said to me in Italian, in order that the other persons might not understand him, "What do you say to this news, which discourages me much?" "I do not credit all these tales," I replied; "and even if they were true, it would still believe us to persevere in our project. Since you proclaimed to me your intention of going amongst the Bedouins, I have given up all hope of again seeing my country. I looked upon the thirty days that you gave me at Aleppo to amuse myself, as my farewell to the world. I regard our travels as a real campaign; and he who departs to the wars, if he resolves the matter properly, will not indulge the idea of returning. Let us not lose courage; although Hassaf is a sheik,* and has some experience, although he understands how to till the ground and take part in the policies of his village, he can form no idea of the importance of our affairs. I am therefore of opinion, that we speak to him no more of our journey into the desert, but put our trust in God, the great protector of the universe." These words produced a good effect upon M. Lascaris, who embraced me tenderly, saying, "My dear son, I put all my hopes in God and you. You are a man of resolution, I can perceive; I am very well satisfied with the force of your character, and I entertain hopes of attaining my object with the assistance of your courage and constancy."

At the close of this conversation we retired to bed, much pleased with each other. We employed the following day in going through the village, which contains about 200 houses and five churches. The inhabitants, who are Christians, manufacture mashlas and black abbas, and occupy themselves very little with the cultivation of the ground, as they are grievously afflicted with a want of water. There is only one small spring in the village, and the water is distributed to each individual according to a measure regulated by a time-piece of sand. It scarcely suffices to irrigate the gardens, which in this climate, where it rarely rains, produce nothing unless well watered. Some years occur in

which not a single drop of water is seen to fall. The harvest gathered in the district lasts only six months, and the rest of the year the inhabitants are obliged to have recourse to Homs.

In the middle of the village an old tower rises to a prodigious height. It dates from the foundation of a colony whose history the sheik related to us. Its founders were originally from Tripolis in Syria, where their church still exists. In the most flourishing times of the Eastern empire, the Greeks, bloated with pride and rapacity, tyrannised over subject nations. The governor of Tripolis overwhelmed the inhabitants with exactions and cruelties; and they being too few to resist, but unable any longer to support the yoke, came to an agreement amongst themselves, to the number of three hundred families; and having secretly gathered together all the precious commodities they could carry, they departed without noise in the middle of the night to Homs, and from there turned their course towards the desert of Bagdad, but were however attacked by the Greek troops which the governor of Tripolis had sent in pursuit of them. They sustained an obstinate and bloody combat; but too inferior in numbers to vanquish, and determined at no price to again incur the tyranny of the Greeks, they entered into a negotiation, and obtained permission to build a village upon the very site of the battle, engaging to remain tributary to the governor of Tripolis. They therefore established themselves in this place, which is on the edge of the desert, and called their town Saddad (obstacle). This was all that the Syrian chronicle contained of any note.

The inhabitants of Saddad are honest and mild in character. We unpacked our wares and passed some days with them, to prove that we were in reality merchants. The women bought from us a large quantity of red cotton cloth to make shifts. The sale did not occupy us long, but we were obliged to wait for the arrival of the Bedouins in the neighbourhood. One day, having learnt that there existed, four hours from the village, a considerable and very ancient ruin, in which a natural vapour bath was found, this wonder raised our curiosity, and M. Lascaris wishing to visit it, begged the sheik to give us an escort. Having marched four hours towards the south-east, we reached the middle of a large ruin which contained only one habitable chamber. The architecture is very simple, but the stones are of a prodigious size. On penetrating into the chamber, we perceived an opening two feet square, whence came out a thick vapour. We threw a handkerchief into it, and in a minute and a half it was brought out and thrown at our feet. We tried the experiment with a shirt, which arose like the handkerchief at the end of ten minutes. Our guides assured us that a mashla, weighing ten pounds, would be cast up in the same manner.

Having undressed and placed ourselves round the opening, we were in a short time covered with a profuse perspiration, which ran down our bodies; but the stench of the vapour was so powerful, that we could not long remain exposed to it. At the end of half an hour we put on our clothes again, experiencing an inexpressible sense of enjoyment. They told us that this vapour was, in fact, very salutary, and cured a great number of invalids. On our return to the village, we supped with a hearty appetite, and I think I never enjoyed a more delightful sleep.

Having nothing more to see in Saddad or its environs, we determined upon departing for the village of Cozietain. When we spoke of it to Naufal, he advised us to change our names, as our present ones might render us suspected by the Bedouins and Turks. Thereoforth, M. Lascaris took the name of Sheik Ibrahim el Cabressi (the Cyprian), and gave me that of Abdallah el Kratib, which signifies the writer.

Sheik Hassaf having given us a letter of recommendation to a Syrian priest, named Moussi, we took leave of him and our Saddad friends, and departed at an early hour. After four hours' march, we arrived between the two villages Mahin and Haourin, situated at ten minutes' distance from each other. They have each

* Sheik not only means a chief, but also an old man.

but two dozen or so of houses, the majority of them ruined by the Bedouins, who come from time to time to devastate them. In the centre of these villages, an elevated tower rises, of an ancient construction. The inhabitants, all Mahometans, speak the language of the Bedouins, and dress like them. After having breakfasted, and filled our bottles, we continued our march for six hours, and at night reached Corietain, and the house of the priest Moussi, who offered us hospitality. In the morning, he carried us to the abode of the Scheik Selim el Dahasse, a distinguished man, who gave us a cordial welcome. Having learnt the motive of our journey, he made the same observations as the Scheik of Saddad. We answered him, that, understanding all the difficulties of our enterprise, we had renounced the idea of advancing into the desert, contenting ourselves with going to Palmyra to dispose of our merchandise. "That is still more difficult," he observed, "for the Bedouins will meet and pillage you." He then commenced like the others to relate to us a thousand alarming things of the Bedouins. The priest confirming all he said, we were almost losing heart, when they brought in the breakfast, which gave a new turn to the conversation, and gave us time to collect ourselves.

The Scheik Selim is one of those who are bound to administer to the wants of the great Mecca caravan, in conjunction with the Scheik of Palmyra. His functions give him some influence amongst the Arabs. His contingent consists of 200 camels, and a supply of provisions. On returning to our lodging, Scheik Ibrahim addressed me in the following strain:—"Well! my dear son, what think you of all that the Scheik Selim has just told us?" I replied to him, "We must not give too much ear to what the inhabitants of these villages relate, as they are always at war with the Bedouins. The existence of harmony between them is out of the question. Our position is very different—we are traders—we go to sell our merchandise to the Bedouins, and not to make war upon them. By acting honestly with them, I do not see we shall run the least danger." These words gave a little courage to Scheik Ibrahim.

Some days after our arrival, in order to keep up our character of merchants, we unfolded our bales upon the square, in the middle of the village, before the door of the scheik, and I sold some articles to the women, which were paid for in money. The men, who had nothing to do, assembled around us to talk; one of them, named Hessaïoun el Kratib, a very young man, assisted me in receiving the cash, and settling the accounts with the women and children, displaying a great regard for my interests. One day, finding me alone, he asked me if I could keep a secret. "Take care," added he, "for it is an important secret, which must be trusted to no one, not even your companion." Having given him my word as he desired, he told me, that, at an hour's distance from the village, there was a cave, where a large jar full of sequins was secreted. He showed me one, assuring me that he could make use of these coins, which were only current at Palmyra.

"But you," continued he, "who go from town to town, can easily change them; you have a thousand means which I do not possess of turning this treasure to advantage. However, I do not wish to give you the whole, but I leave the partition to your own generosity. You can come with me to look at the locality, and transport the gold by little and little secretly, giving me my share in current money." Having seen and got hold of the sequin, I believed in the truth of this story and appointed a meeting with him, out of the village, at an early hour on the following day.

The next morning the sun had scarcely risen, before I arose and went out of our lodging, as if to take a walk. A short way out of the village, I found Hessaïoun waiting for me. He was armed with a musket, a sabre, and a brace of pistols. As for me, my only weapon was a long pipe. We proceeded for about an hour, and I felt greatly impatient to behold the cave. At length I perceived it, and we shortly after entered

into it. I looked on all sides to discover the jar, but seeing nothing, I turned to Hessaïoun, and said, "Where, then, is the jar?" I observed him change colour.

"Now that we are here," he exclaimed, "learn that thy last moment is come. Thou shouldst have been already dead, if I had not feared covering thy clothes with blood. Before killing thee, I wish to despoil thee; therefore strip thyself and give me thy bag of money, which I know thou carriest with thee. It ought to contain more than 1200 piastres, which I myself have counted, as the value of the merchandise thou hast sold. Thou wilt not again behold the light of day."

"Spare my life," said I to him, with a suppliant air; "I will give thee a greater sum than is in this bag, and I swear to thee I will mention to no person what has passed between us." "That cannot be," he answered; "this cave must be thy tomb—I cannot give thee thy life without exposing my own."

I gave him a thousand oaths that I would be silent, and I proposed to him to give an acknowledgment for the sum that he himself should fix; but nothing could turn him from his terrible project. At last, wearied with my entreaties, he placed his arms against the wall, and fell upon me, like a roaring lion, to strip me before slaying me. I renewed my supplications. "What injury have I done thee?" I asked him; "what enmity exists between us?—thou knowest not that the day of judgment is nigh, that God will demand an account of innocent blood!" But his heart was hardened, and he paid no attention. I then thought of my brother, my parents, and my friends—every thing that was dear to me occurred to my recollection; driven to despair, I prayed for protection only from my Creator. "Oh, God! protector of the innocent, aid me! give me force to resist!" My assassin, impatient for his prey, tore off my clothes. Although he was much taller than I, God gave me strength to struggle with him for nearly half an hour. The blood flowed profusely from my face, and my garments fell in shreds. The wretch, seeing me in this state, resolved to strangle me, and lifted up his arms to grasp my neck. I took advantage

of the momentary liberty that this movement gave me, to give him, with my two fists, a severe blow upon the belly, and, throwing him on his back, I seized upon his arms, and sprang out of the cave, running with all my might. I could scarcely believe myself in safety; in a few moments I heard some one running behind me—it was my assassin. He called to me, begging me, in the most conciliatory tone, to wait for him. As I had all his arms, I was not afraid to stop for a moment; and, returning towards him, I exclaimed, "Infamous villain! what dost thou ask?—thou hast attempted to strangle

in secret, but thou shaltst thyself be strangled in public." He replied to me with an oath that all he had done was mere sport on his part, that he had only wished to try my courage, and see how I should defend myself. "But," continued he, "I see you are but a boy to take the thing so seriously." I answered, aiming at him with the gun, that, if he approached a step farther, I would fire upon him. Seeing me determined to do so, he took to his heels across the desert, and I resumed the road to the village.

In the meantime, Scheik Ibrahim, the priest, and Naufal, not seeing me return, began to be uneasy. Scheik Ibrahim especially, knowing that I never went to a distance without apprising him, after waiting two hours went to the scheik, who, participating in his fears, set the whole village to seek me. At last Naufal desecrating me, shouted out, "There he is!" Selim asserted he was mistaken. I drew near them—they could scarcely recognise me. M. Lascaris ran to me and embraced me, weeping. I stood, unable to speak. They led me to the priest's, washed my wounds, and put me to bed. After some time, I regained strength to recount my adventure. Selim sent out horsemen in pursuit of the assassin, giving his negro a cord to strangle him with; but they returned without having been able to catch him; and we afterwards learnt that he had entered the service of the Pacha of Damascus. From that time he never reappeared at Corietain.

At the end of a few days, my wounds began to close, and I quickly recovered my strength. Scheik Selim, who had conceived a great friendship for me, brought me one day a telescope out of order, saying to me that I would be a clever man if I succeeded in arranging it. As there was nothing but a glass to replace, I soon put it to rights, and took it to him. He was so well pleased with my skill, that he gave me the surname of *the industrious*.

A short time after this, we heard that the Bedouins were approaching from Palmyra, and some of them were already seen near Corietain. One day there came a certain Arab, named Selame el Hassan. We were with Selim when he entered. Coffee was brought, and whilst we were drinking it, several inhabitants came in search of the scheik, and said to him, "Eight years ago, in a certain spot, Hassan killed our relation, and we have come to demand justice from you." Hassan, denying the fact, asked if they had any witnesses. "No," they replied; "but you were seen passing along that particular road alone, and shortly after we found our relation there lying dead. We know that there was a cause of hatred between you two; and it is thus certain that you are his murderer." Hassan resolutely denied the accusation. The scheik, who was fearful of irritating the Bedouins, and who, besides, had no positive proof against him, took up a piece of wood, and said, "Swear by him who created this bough that you have not killed their relation." Hassan took the stick, looked at it for some minutes, and cast his eyes upon the ground; then lifting up his head towards his accusers—"I do not wish," said he, "to have two crimes upon my conscience—the one of being the murderer of this man, the other of swearing falsely before God. It was I who killed your relation; what do you ask as the price of his blood?"*

The scheik, wishing to keep fair with the Bedouins, was solicitous to avoid acting according to the rigour of the law; and the individuals present interesting themselves in the matter, it was decided that Hassan should pay 300 piastres to the relatives of the deceased. When he was asked for the money, he replied, that he had it not with him, but would bring it in a few days; and as some difficulty was made in letting him depart without pledge—"I have no bail to give," he remarked; "but He will answer for me, whose name I would not profane by a false oath." He was suffered to go, and four days after, he came back, bringing fifteen sheep, which were worth more than twenty piastres each. This trait of good faith and generosity both charmed and surprised us. We became anxious to form his acquaintance. Scheik Ibrahim invited him to his room, made him some presents, and by these means we were soon intimate friends. He communicated to us that he was one of the tribe El-Ammour, the chief of which was called Soutanel Berak. This tribe, composed of 500 tents, is considered as inhabitants of the district, because they do not quit the banks of the Euphrates when the great tribes migrate. They sell sheep, camels, and butter, at Damascus, Homs, Hama, &c. The natives of these different towns have often an interest in their flocks.

We mentioned to Hassan one day that we wished to go to Palmyra to dispose of the merchandise that remained, but that we had been terrified with accounts of the dangers attending the expedition. Having offered to conduct us there himself, he entered into a contract before the scheik, making himself answerable for every thing disastrous that might befall us. Being persuaded that Hassan was a man of honour, we accepted his convoy.

It was now spring; the desert, formerly so arid, was suddenly covered with verdure and flowers. This enchanting spectacle induced us to hasten our departure. In the evening we deposited with the priest, Mo'ab, a part of our treasures, so as to avoid attracting too much attention or cupidity. Naufal, desiring to return to

Homs, M. Lascaris dismissed him with a sufficient recompense. Having engaged moukres and camels, we took leave of the inhabitants of Corietain; and with water and provisions for two days, we departed early the following morning, carrying with us a letter of recommendation from the Scheik Selim for the Scheik of Palmyra, named Ragial-el-Orouk.

After a march of ten hours in a continually eastern direction, we halted near a square tower, of a lofty and massive construction, called Casser-el-Ourdaan, in the territory el Dawh. This tower, built in the era of the Greek empire, served as an advanced post against the Persians, who were wont to carry off the people of the country. This rampart of the desert has preserved its name down to our days. After admiring the architecture, which is of a good age, we returned to pass the night in our little khan, where we suffered greatly from cold. In the morning, as we were getting ready for a start, M. Lascaris, who was somewhat unaccustomed to the motion of camels, mounting his without sufficient care, was thrown to the ground by its suddenly rising. We ran to him, and found his foot out of joint; but as he would not stop, we dressed it as well as we could, set him on his camel, and continued the march. In two hours we saw a cloud of dust rising in the distance, and drawing towards us. We were shortly able to descry six armed horsemen, whom observing, Hassan threw off his pelisse, couched his lance, and advanced to meet them, shouting to us to remain still. When he had come up with them, he explained to them that we were merchants going to Palmyra, and that he had become bound before the Scheik Selim, and all his village, to conduct us in safety. But these Bedouins, of the tribe El-Hassné, without heeding his relation, came down upon us. Hassan rushed to block up the path; they attempted to drive him back, and the combat began. Our champion was well known for his valour, but his opponents were equally brave. He sustained their attack for half an hour, when, being wounded by the stroke of a lance which had passed through his thigh, he retired towards us, and almost immediately sunk from his horse. The Bedouins were preparing to despoil us, when Hassan, stretched upon the ground, his blood flowing from his wound, apostrophised them in these terms:—"What are you doing, my friends? Will you then violate the rights of the Arabs, the usages of the Bedouins? Those whom you are robbing are my brethren; they have my word; I have become bound for all that may happen to them, and you plunder them! Is this acting according to honour? Wherefore have you undertaken to conduct Christians to Palmyra?" they answered; "know you not that Mehanna-el-Fadel (the scheik of their tribe) is the chief of this country? Why have you not asked his permission?" "I am well aware of it," replied Hassan; "but these merchants were pressed for time, and Mehanna is still far from here. I pledged my word to them, and they had faith in it. They are acquainted with our laws and usages, which never change. Is it not proper in you to violate them by pilfering these strangers, and leaving me in this wounded state?" Upon hearing these words, the Bedouins, ceasing from further violence, remarked, "What you have said is indeed true and just, and since it is so, we will only take from your associates what they are disposed to give."

We hastened to offer them two mashlas, a pelisse, and 100 piastres. They were satisfied, and left us free to resume our progress. Hassan suffered greatly from his wound; and as he could not remount his horse, I gave him my camel, and took his mare. We marched four hours more; but the sun having set, we were obliged to halt in a place named Waddi-el-Nahr (Valley of the River). In spite of the appellation, we did not find a drop of water, and our bottles were empty. The morning attack had delayed us three hours, and it was not possible to go on any farther that evening. Although we were exposed to much suffering, we found considerable gratification in the reflection of having escaped from the Bedouins, and of having saved our clothes,

* [According to the Arab laws, murder is expiated by money; the sum is fixed according to circumstances.]

which afforded some protection against the cold wind which blew mercilessly enough. Thus, in a midway condition between pleasure and pain, we looked forward with impatience for the first glimpse of daylight. Scheik Ibrahim complained of his foot, and Hassan of his thigh. In the morning, after doing for the sick men as well as we could, we resumed our route, still continuing towards the East. An hour and a quarter from Palmyra, we found a subterraneous rivulet, whose source is quite unknown, as well as the place to which it flows. The water is seen through openings about five feet deep, somewhat in the shape of basins. It is not necessary to describe the happiness we felt in satisfying our thirst; the water had a truly agreeable taste.

At the mouth of a defile caused by the approach of two mountains to each other, we at last perceived the celebrated Palmyra. This defile forms, for a quarter of an hour, an avenue to the town. Along the southern side of the mountain, extends, for about three hours, a very ancient rampart. On the left, in front, we perceived an old castle, called Co Lat Ebn Maâmen, built by the Turks before the invention of gunpowder. This Ebn Maâmen, governor of Damascus, in the time of the caliphs, erected this castle to prevent the Persians from penetrating into Syria. We afterwards came upon a large open space called Waddi-el-Cabour (Valley of Tombs). The sepulchres which cover it appeared from a distance like towers. When we got near them, we saw that niches had been worked in them to receive the dead. Each niche was closed by a stone, on which was cut the portrait of the occupant. The towers were three and four stories high, communicating by means of a stone staircase, in general very well preserved. From there we entered a vast enclosure inhabited by the Arabs, who call it the castle. It contains, in fact, the ruins of the Temple of the Sun. 200 families lodge in these ruins.

We went without any delay to the house of the Scheik Ragial-el-Oronk, a venerable old man, who received us very favourably, and made us take supper and sleep with him. This scheik, like that of Corietain, furnished 200 camels to the great Mecca caravan.

On the following day, having hired a house, we unpacked our merchandise. I dressed Scheik Ibrahim's foot, which was in truth put out of joint. He suffered a long time from it. Hassan found friends at Palmyra who took care of him; and being quickly restored, he came to take leave of us, and departed in great glee at the recompense we bestowed upon him.

Being obliged to keep the house for several days on account of Scheik Ibrahim's foot, we commenced selling some articles to confirm our assertion of being merchants; but as soon as M. Lascaris was in a situation to walk, we went to visit the temple, and inspect all its details. Other travellers have described these ruins, so we shall speak here only of what has escaped them, in remarks upon the country.

We saw a great number of people, one day, casing a very handsome granite column with wood. They told us that it was in order to burn it, or rather to make it fall, so as to get at the lead which was found in the crevices. Scheik Ibrahim, full of indignation, addressing himself to me, exclaimed, "What would the founders of Palmyra say, if they saw these barbarians thus destroying their work? Since chance has conducted me here, I will oppose myself to this scandalous act." And, having ascertained the value of the lead, he gave the fifty piastres they asked from him, and the column became our property. It was of the finest red granite, spotted with blue and white, sixty feet high and ten round. The Palmyrians, seeing our inclination for monuments, informed us of a curious spot, at an hour and a half's distance, where the columns were anciently cut, and where some beautiful fragments are still found. Three Arabs undertook to conduct us there for ten piastres. The road was strewn with very fine ruins, described, I presume, by other travellers. We were shown a grotto, in which there was a beautiful column of white marble, cut and chiselled, and another only half-finished. It seemed as if time, which has destroyed

so much magnificence, had been wanting to remove the first and complete the second.

After visiting several caves and their environs, we returned by another road. Our guides pointed out to us a stream encumbered by great blocks of stone, which they called *Ain Ournus*. This name struck Scheik Ibrahim, who appeared drowned in thought the rest of the way. At last, beckoning me to him, he said, "I have discovered what the name of *Ournus* means. Aurelianus, the Roman emperor, came to besiege Palmyra, and seize upon its riches. It is he, I think, who has dug this spring for the wants of his army during the siege, and it has been named after him, but changed in the course of time into *Ournus*." According to my small knowledge of history, the conjecture of Scheik Ibrahim is not without foundation.

The inhabitants of Palmyra are not much occupied with agriculture; their principal occupation is the working a salt mine, the produce of which they send to Damascus and Homs. They make also a great quantity of alkali, the plant which furnishes it being very plentiful. They burn it, and the cinders are likewise forwarded to these two towns to make soap. They send them even, upon occasions, to Tripolis in Syria, which has numerous soap works, for the supply of the Archipelago.

One day, they spoke to us of a very singular cave, the entrance to which, however, was so dark and narrow as to be scarcely practicable. As it was only three hours from Palmyra, we felt a desire to visit it, but my adventure with Hessaïson was too recent to risk ourselves without a good escort. On this account, we begged Scheik Ragial to give us an accompaniment of some of his safest hands. He appeared astonished at our project: "You are very curious," said he to us; "what business can you have with this grotto? Instead of minding your affairs, you pass your time in similar absurdities; it never has been my lot to meet such merchants as you." I replied to him, "A man always gains by beholding what nature has created beautiful." The scheik having given us six men well armed, I provided myself with a ball of packthread, a large nail, and torches, and we set off at an early hour. After a march of two hours, we arrived at the foot of a mountain; a large hole which they showed us formed the mouth of the grotto. I stuck my nail in a secret spot, and tied the packthread to it. Holding the ball in my hand, I followed Scheik Ibrahim, and the guides, who carried the torches. We went sometimes to the right, sometimes to the left, now ascending, now descending, and we found the grotto large enough to hold an entire army. There was a great deal of alum, and the top and walls were covered with sulphur, and the ground filled with nitre. We remarked a species of reddish soil, which was very fine, and of an acid taste; Scheik Ibrahim put a handful in his handkerchief. This grotto is bored by cavities, cut with the chisel, from which they had, in former times, extracted metals. Our guides informed us, that several persons having lost themselves in them, had perished. A man who had remained there two days, seeking in vain the way to get out, at last spied a wolf, and, throwing stones at this animal, he put him to flight, and, following him, he succeeded in reaching the opening. My packthread being exhausted, we would not go farther, and retraced our steps. The charm of curiosity had doubtless smoothed the way for us, as we found an excessive difficulty in regaining the mouth. As soon as we had got safely out, we quickly dispatched our breakfast, and then resumed the road to Palmyra. The scheik, who was waiting for us, asked us what we had gained by our trip. "We have discovered," I observed to him, in reply, "that the ancients were much more skilful than we, for we can see by their works that they entered and came out with facility, whilst our getting out was no easy matter."

He laughed, and we left him to go and take a little repose. In the evening, Ibrahim found the handkerchief into which he had put the red earth full of holes, and, as it were, rotted. The earth had fallen into his

pocket; and he put it in a bottle,* telling me that the ancients had probably drawn gold from this grotto, chemical experience having proved that where sulphur is found, gold is often not far off; and, furthermore, the great works that we had remarked could not have been executed simply for the extraction of sulphur and alum, but evidently for something more precious. If the Arabs had entertained any suspicion that we had gone in search of gold, our lives had been placed in great jeopardy.

From day to day, they spoke of the approach of the Bedouins; and Scheik Ibrahim was as much rejoiced at these tidings as if he were about to meet his countrymen. He was quite enchanted when I announced to him the speedy arrival of Mehanna-el-Fadel, a great Bedouin chief. He wished instantly to go and meet him; but I represented to him that it would be more prudent to wait a favourable occasion to fall in with the family of this prince. I was aware that Mehanna generally sent a messenger to the Scheik of Palmyra, to inform him of his approach. In fact, one day eleven Bedouin horsemen arrived, and I learned that the Emir Nasser, the eldest son of Mehanna, was amongst them. I hastened to impart this intelligence to Scheik Ibrahim, who was transported with joy. That very instant, we proceeded to the Scheik Ragial's house, to be presented to the Emir Nasser, who gave us a good reception. "These strangers," said Ragial, addressing him, "are honest merchants, who have wares to sell according to the usage of the Bedouins; but they are so frightened that they dare not venture into the desert, unless you take them under your protection." The Emir Nasser, turning towards us, said, "You may expect every sort of success; you will be welcome, and I promise you that nothing shall befall you but the rain which descends from the heavens." We returned him many thanks, concluding with these words: "Since we have been fortunate enough to make your acquaintance, and you have kindly undertaken to be our protector, we hope you will do us the honour to eat with us."

The Arabs in general, and especially the Bedouins, regard as an inviolable engagement to fidelity the having eaten with any one, or having only broken bread with him. We therefore invited him, with all his suite, as well as the scheik. We got a sheep killed; and our dinner, prepared after the manner of the Bedouins, seemed much relished by them. For desert, we presented them with figs, dried grapes, almonds, and nuts, which were to them a high treat. After coffee, we began to converse upon various topics; and we related to Nasser our adventure with the six horsemen of his tribe. He offered to punish them, and make them restore us our goods and money. We conjured him, however, to do nothing in the business, assuring him, with protestations, that what we had given was of no consequence to us. We wished to have departed with him the following day, but he told us to wait the arrival of his father, who was yet eight days off, with his tribe. He promised to send us an escort, and camels to carry our goods. For greater security, we begged him to get his father to write to us; which he undertook to do.

The second day thereafter, a Bedouin of the tribe El Hassné, named Bani, arrived at Palmyra, and a few hours after, seven other Bedouins, of the tribe El Daffir, which was at war with that of Hassné. These men, having learned that one of their enemies was in the town, resolved to lie in wait for him out of Palmyra, to slay him. Bani, having been apprised of the favour intended him, came to our house, attached his mare to our door, and begged us to lend him a felt-sheet. As we had several around our goods, I took him one. He steeped it in water for half an hour, and afterwards placed it, all wet, on the back of his mare, the saddle above. In two hours, she was seized with a violent diarrhoea, which continued the whole evening; and the next morning the mare seemed to have nothing left in

her body. Then Bani removed the sheet, which he returned to us, drew the girths as tight as he could, and went off.

About four in the afternoon, we saw the Bedouins of the tribe El Daffir return, with fallen crests, and without plunder. Some one having asked them what they had done with Bani's mare, they returned for answer, "We will state what has happened to us. Not wishing to commit any insult to Ragial, the tributary of Mehanna, we restrained ourselves from falling upon our enemy in the town. It is true, we might have laid in wait for him in a narrow passage, but as we were seven to one, we determined to remain in the open country. When we desisted him approaching, we advanced upon him; but as soon as he found himself in the midst of us, he uttered a loud shout, saying to his mare, "Jah Hamra! to-day it is your turn;" and he darted off like a flash of lightning. We pursued him as far as his tribe, without coming up to him, astounded at the swiftness of his steed, which was like a bird cleaving the air with its wings." I communicated to them the story of the felt-sheet, which astonished them not a little, as they had not, according to their own statement, ever heard of a similar piece of witchcraft.

A week after this occurrence, three men came to us, on the part of Mehanna-el-Fadel, bringing with them camels for our use, and a letter from the chief, the contents of which were as follow:—

"Mehanna-el-Fadel, son of Melkghem, to Scheik Ibrahim and Abdallah el Kratib, safety! May the mercy of God be upon you! By the arrival of our son, Nasser, we have been informed of your desire to visit us. You are welcome. You will shed a blessing upon us. Fear nothing; you have the protection of God, and the word of Mehanna. Nothing will touch you but the rain of heaven.

(Signed) MEHANNA EL FADEL."

A seal was affixed to the signature. This letter produced great satisfaction in Scheik Ibrahim's mind. Our preparations were soon finished; and the next day, by an early hour, we were out of Palmyra. Having arrived at a village watered by an abundant spring, we filled our leathern bottles to serve for the rest of the road. This village, called Arak, is four hours from Palmyra; we met a great number of Bedouins, who, after putting certain questions to our conductors, continued on their way. After a ten hours' march, the plain before us appeared covered with several hundreds of tents, which were those of the tribe Mehanna. We entered the tent of the emir, who caused coffee to be served to us at three distinct intervals, which, amongst the Bedouins, is the greatest proof of consideration. After the third cup, supper was brought in, which we required to eat in the Turkish fashion. It was the first time we had had this necessity imposed upon us, so we did not fail to burn our fingers. Mehanna, having perceived our mishap, addressed us in the following strain: "You are not accustomed to eat like us, eh?" To which Scheik Ibrahim answered: "It is very true, but why do you not make use of spoons? It is always possible to get them, were they but of wood." The emir replied with dignity, "We are Bedouins, and we adhere to the usages of our ancestors, which in truth we find to be highly reasonable. The hand and the mouth are parts of our body, which God has given as assistants to each other; wherefore, then, should we use a strange commodity, whether of wood or metal, to get at our mouths, seeing that the hand is naturally fitted for the purpose?"

We felt these reasons to be of very great weight; and I could not avoid remarking to Scheik Ibrahim, that Mehanna was the first Bedouin philosopher whom we had met. The following day, the emir had a camel killed to regale us; and I learnt it was a great mark of consideration, the Bedouins measuring the importance of the stranger by that of the animal which they slay to feast him with. They commence by a lamb, and finish by a camel. This was the first time that we had eaten the flesh of this animal. We found it by no means dainty.

* This bottle was taken with the rest into Egypt.

The Emir Mehanna was a man in his eightieth year, short, lean, deaf, and shockingly ill dressed. His great influence with the Bedouins arises from the nobleness and generosity of his heart, and from his being the chief of a very ancient and very numerous family. He is charged by the Pacha of Damascus with the escort of the great caravan as far as Mecca, receiving on that account twenty-five purses (12,500 piastres), which are paid to him before the departure from Damascus. He has three sons, Nasser, Faress, and Hamed, all three married, and dwelling in the same tent with their father. This tent is seventy-two feet long, and as many wide, made of black horse-hair cloth, and partitioned into three divisions. At the end the provisions are kept, and the kitchen affairs managed; the slaves also sleep there. In the middle the women have their abode, to which at night the whole family retire. The front part is destined for the men, and it is there they receive strangers, it being known under the designation of *rabha*.

After the expiration of three days, spent in the enjoyment of hospitality, we opened our bales and sold a great number of articles, on the greater part of which we sustained a loss more or less considerable. I could not understand this mode of carrying on commerce, and I said as much to Scheik Ibrahim. His only reply was, "Have you then forgot our conditions?" I excused myself, and continued to sell according to his own system.

One day we perceived fifty horsemen arrive, who, stopping outside the tents, descended from horseback, and squatted themselves on the ground. The Emir Nasser, who had the chief charge of affairs since his father had become so deaf, went forth to meet them, accompanied by his cousin, Scheik Zamel, and had with them a conference of two hours, after which the horsemen remounted and rode off. Scheik Ibrahim felt uneasy at this mysterious interview, and was very anxious to ascertain its motive. Having been at various times with the women, I took a coral chaplet and entered the apartment of Naura, the wife of Nasser, to offer it to her. She accepted it, and presented me in return with dates and coffee. After these reciprocal displays of politeness, I came to the object of my visit, saying to her, "I beg you to excuse my importunity, but strangers are curious and timid. The small quantity of merchandise that we have here is the remnant of a considerable fortune that disasters have carried away. The Emir Nasser was a short while ago in conference with strangers, and as this gives us uneasiness, we would wish to know the cause." Naura answered me as follows:—"I am quite willing to satisfy your curiosity, but on condition that you preserve the secret, and appear as if you knew nothing. Learn, then, that my husband has a great many enemies amongst the Bedouins, because he humbles their national pride by extolling the power of the Turks. The alliance of Nasser with the Osmanlis is very displeasing to the Bedouins, who abhor them. It is even contrary to the counsel of his father and the chief men of the tribe, who murmur against him. The object of this meeting was to concert a plan of attack. To-morrow, they intend to assail the tribe El Daffir, to seize upon their flocks, and to inflict upon them all possible mischief. The god of battles will give the victory to which side he pleases, but for yourselves you have nothing to fear." Having returned thanks to Naura, I retired, well satisfied at having obtained her confidence.

Scheik Ibrahim, being informed by me of all that the wife of the Emir Nasser had delivered, told me that he was excessively discontented thereat, adding, "I sought to connect myself with a tribe hostile to the Osmanlis, and lo! I find myself with a chief allied to them." I did not dare to ask the meaning of these words, but they gave me something to think about.

Towards evening, three hundred horsemen assembled outside the encampment, and departed early in the morning, having at their head Nasser, Hamed, and Zamel. Three days afterwards, a messenger came to announce their return. At this intelligence a great number of

men and women went forth to meet them, and when the junction was effected, loud shouts of joy were uttered on all sides; and thus they made their triumphal entry into the camp, preceded by 180 camels taken from the enemy. As soon as they had got off horseback, every one begged them to give an account of their exploits. Nasser took up the word. "The day after our departure," said he, "we reached about noon the place where the herds were feeding the flocks of Daffir, and having fallen upon them, we carried off 180 camels. The herds, having taken to flight, gave the alarm to their tribe. I detached a part of my troop to conduct our booty to the camp by another road. Aruad-Ebn-Motlae (chief of the tribe El-Daffir), having attacked us with 300 horsemen, the fight lasted two hours, and night alone separated us. Each party then returned to his tribe, the enemy having lost one of his men, and we having two of ours wounded."

The tribe of Nasser pretended to rejoice at his triumph, whilst at bottom they were far from approving of an unjust war, made upon their natural friends to please the Osmanlis. Nasser, visiting all the chiefs to relate the details of his victory, came also to the tent of Scheik Ibrahim, and addressed him in Turkish. Scheik Ibrahim observed to him that he only spoke Greek, his mother tongue, and a little Arabic, whereupon Nasser commenced to extol the language and manners of the Turks, saying, that they could never be truly great, powerful, and respected, unless they kept upon good terms with them. "As to myself," added he, "I am more an Osmanli than a Bedouin." "Put no trust in the promises of the Turks," answered Scheik Ibrahim, "nor in their grandeur and magnificence. They flatter you to gain you to their side, and to set you in enmity to your countrymen, in order to make use of you in combating the other tribes. The interest of the Turkish government is to destroy the Bedouins; and not being strong enough to do it of itself, it wishes to divide and arm you against each other. Take care you have not cause to repent this some day. I give you this counsel, as a friend who takes a lively interest in your welfare, and because I have eaten your bread and partaken your hospitality."

Some time after these events, Nasser received from Soleyman, Pacha of Acre and Damascus, a message to come and receive the investiture of the chief command in the desert, with the title of Prince of the Bedouins. This communication intoxicated him with gladness, and he instantly set off for Damascus with ten cavaliers.

Mehanna having issued orders for the departure of the tribe, by sunrise the following morning not a single tent was to be seen pitched; the whole were folded up and placed on the backs of camels, and the march commenced in the greatest order. Twenty chosen horsemen formed the advanced guard, and served as scouts. Then came the unloaded camels and the flocks, followed by armed men on horses or camels, after whom the women, those of the chiefs, carried in *handags* (a species of palanquin), placed on the backs of the tallest camels. These handags are richly adorned, carefully enveloped with scarlet cloth, and ornamented with various-coloured fringes; they contain two females with great ease, or a woman and several children. The women and children of an inferior rank came immediately after them, seated on the tents, rolled up in the form of cushions, and placed on the camels. The loaded camels, with the baggage and provisions, were behind. The march was closed by the Emir Mehanna, mounted on a dromedary, on account of his great age, surrounded by his slaves, warriors, and servants, who marched on foot. We could not sufficiently admire the celerity and order with which the departure of 8000 or 9000 persons was thus effected. Scheik Ibrahim and I were on horseback, sometimes in front, sometimes in the centre, or near to Mehanna. We marched ten hours without intermission. At three in the afternoon the order of the march was suddenly arrested; the Bedouins dispersed into a fine plain, jumped to the ground, stuck their lances in it, and fastened their horses to them; the women ran on all sides, and pitched the tents near

their husbands' horses. Thus, as if by enchantment, we found ourselves in a sort of town, as large as Hama. The women alone had the office of fixing and taking down the tents, and they performed the matter with a surprising address and rapidity. They in general execute all the labours of the encampment, the men tending the flocks, and killing and flaying the animals for food. The costume of the women is very simple; a large blue chemise, a black mashla, and a sort of scarf of black silk, which covers the head, is tied in two folds round the neck, and falls down the back. They have nothing in the shape of shoes, except the wives of the sheiks, who wear short yellow boots. Their ambition and luxury lie in possessing a great number of bracelets of glass, coins, coral, and amber.

The plain where we stopped was called El-Makram, and it was not far distant from Hama. It was rather an agreeable spot, the rich pasturage rendering it very fitting for the sojourn of the Arabs.

On the fourth day we had an alarm. At four in the afternoon the herds came in perfectly dismayed, crying out, "To arms! the enemy has seized upon our flocks!" It was the tribe El Daffir, which, watching the opportunity to revenge itself on Nasser, had sent a thousand horsemen to carry off the flocks at the beginning of night, so as to give no time for the pursuit. Our men, having expected an attack, were prepared; but it was first necessary to discover on which side the enemy was to be pursued. Four men got off their horses, took opposite directions, and falling flat on the ground, with their ears on the surface, thus heard at a great distance the steps of the plunderers. The night was over before they could be reached; but in the morning, the troop of Hassné* having come up with them, joined battle. After a fight of four hours, the half of the flock was retaken, but 500 camels remained in the hands of the tribe El Daffir. We had ten men killed and several wounded. Upon their return, the tribe was in a very afflicted state; the Bedouins murmured, accusing the caprice and vanity of Nasser for all that had happened. Mehanna sent a courier to his son, who immediately returned from Damascus, accompanied by a chokredar,† to impose on the minds of the Arabs. On his arrival he caused a letter from the pacha to be read, couched in these terms:—"We make known to all the emirs and sheiks of the tribes of the desert, great and small, encamped on the territory of Damascus, that we have nominated our son, Nasser Ebn Mehanna, emir of all the Anazes,‡ enjoining them to obey him. The tribe which shall be wretched enough to show itself rebellious, will be destroyed by our victorious troops, and, by way of example, its flocks will be slaughtered, and the women delivered up to the soldiers. Such is our will.

(Signed) SOLEYMAN, Pacha of Damascus and Acre."

Nasser, proud of his new dignity, was never satisfied with the reading of this ordinance, and affected to talk Turkish with the officer of the pacha, which greatly augmented the ire of the Bedouins. One day, when we were beside him, a very handsome young man arrived, named Zarrak, the chief of a neighbouring tribe. Nasser, according to custom, spoke of his nomination, vaunted the grandeur and power of the Pacha of Damascus and the Sultan of Constantinople, who has the long sabre.§ Zarrak, who listened to him with impatience, changed colour, rose up, and said, "Nasser-Aga,|| learn that all the Bedouins detest thee. If thou art dazzled by the magnificence of the Turks, go to Damascus, and deck thy forehead with the cauk; become minister to the pacha, dwell in his palace, and then perhaps thou wilt impress terror on the Damascenes; but as for us Bedouins, we think no more of thee, thy pacha, and thy sultan, than a ball of camel-dung. I shall proceed to the territories of Bagdad,

where I will meet the Drayhy,* Ebn Chahlan, to whom I will join myself."

Nasser, growing pale with rage in his turn, translated this speech into Turkish for the benefit of the chokredar, who thought by violent menaces to strike terror into the soul of Zarrak. But the latter, regarding him with a haughty mien, said to him, "You have said enough; although you have Nasser at your side, I could, if I were so disposed, take care that you never again ate bread." Notwithstanding these offensive expressions, all three kept their temper from any actual outbreak; and Zarrak, remounting his horse, said to Nasser, "*Las salem aleik* (I saluto thee); put forth all thy power, I am ready for thee." This defiance caused Nasser considerable annoyance; but he did not the less persevere in his alliance with the Turks.

On the following day, we learnt that Zarrak had departed with his tribe for the district of Geziri, and all on sides we heard nothing but of combinations of the Bedouins against Nasser. Mehanna, being informed of what was going forward, called his son, and addressed him in these words: "Nasser, will you then break the pillars of the tent of Melkghem?"—and, grasping his beard with his hand, "Do you wish," he continued, "to make this beard be despised at the close of my days, and tarnish the reputation that I have acquired? Unfortunate youth! You have not invoked the name of God! What I foresaw, has happened. All the tribes are proceeding to unite themselves with the Drayhy. What shall become of us then? There will remain nothing for us but to humble ourselves before Ebn Sihoud,† that enemy of our race, who styles himself king of the Bedouins, for he alone can defend us from the terrible Drayhy."

Nasser endeavoured to calm his father's apprehensions, assuring him that their affairs were not so desperate as he feared. However, the Bedouins began to take part with either the one or the other, but the greatest number hearkened to the father, who was in their true interests.

Scheik Ibrahim grew very discontented. He was anxious to penetrate farther into the desert, and to advance towards Bagdad, yet he found himself fettered to a tribe which remained between Damascus and Homs. He was thus losing all the summer, being unable to remove but at the peril of his life. He instructed me to obtain information touching the Drayhy, to get a knowledge of his character, to learn the places where he passed the summer, where he retired in the winter, if he received strangers, and a thousand other particulars. He charged me to be extremely careful in gathering information.

It was difficult to get at these details without awakening suspicions. I considered it necessary to find some one who was not of the tribe El Hassné. At last I succeeded in forming an acquaintance with a person named Abdallah el Chahlan (the poet). Knowing that poets were sought after by the great, I interrogated him as to all the tribes which he had visited, and I went with pleasure that he had been a long time at the court of the Drayhy. I obtained from him all the particulars I could desire.

One day, Nasser made me write to the Scheik of Saddad, and to that of Corietain, to demand from each a thousand piastres and six mashlas. This claim is called the claim of fraternity. It is an arrangement between the sheiks of villages and the more powerful Bedouin chiefs, to protect the former against the ravages of the other tribes. It is an annual tax. These wretched villages are ruined in contenting their two tyrants, the Bedouins and the Turks.

* The destroyer of Turks.

† Ebn Sihoud commands a million and a half of Bedouins. He reigns over the countries of Durbié, Medyde, Samarcand, Hygias, and Zamos, or Zamen. These people call themselves Wahabites.

The Bedouins of Persia, commanded by the Emir Sahid el Fehrab, are upwards of a million.

These, added to the tribes of Bagdad, Bassorah, Mesopotamia, and Huran, of which I have made the census, give a wandering population of four millions of souls.

* The name of the tribe of Mehanna.

† A grand officer of the pacha.

‡ Bedouins of the desert

§ The Arab expression to designate an extended dominion.

|| The title of a Turkish officer, and a name of distinction for a Bedouin.

¶ The turban of ceremony worn by the Turks.

Mehanna had a fraternity with all the villages in the territories of Damascus, Homs, and Hama, which produced him a revenue of about 50,000 piastres. The Pacha of Damascus paid him 12,500, and the towns of Homs and Hama furnished him besides with a certain quantity of wheat, rice, confections, and stuffs. The small tribes brought him butter and cheese. Notwithstanding all that, he never had any money, and was generally in debt, which was a matter of surprise to us, as he had no expenses to incur. We learnt that he gave all in gifts to the most renowned warriors, whether in his own tribe or in others, and that he thus made a powerful party for himself. He was always very shabbily dressed; and when he received a fine pelisse, or any other object, as a present, he gave it to the person who was near him at the moment. The Bedouin proverb, which says that "generosity covers all faults," was found verified in Mehanna, whose liberality alone made Nasser be tolerated.

Shortly after this event, we went to encamp three hours from the Orontes, upon a territory called El Zididi, where several small springs gushed.

Mehanna, having gone one day with ten horsemen to pay a visit to the Aga of Homs, returned loaded with gifts from all the merchants, who keep on good terms with him, because, whenever he is dissatisfied with them, he intercepts their trade by plundering the caravans. Immediately after his return, Nasser departed upon an expedition against the tribe Abdelli, commanded by the Emir El Doghiani, and encamped near Palmyra on two eminences of equal dimensions, called Eldain (the bosom). He returned in three days, bringing with him 150 camels and 200 sheep. In this affair we had lost three men, and the horse of Zamel had been killed under him. In compensation we had taken three mares, slain ten men, and wounded twenty. In spite of this success, the Bedouins were indignant at the bad faith of Nasser, who had no motive for anger against that tribe.

On all sides they were concerting with the Dravizy for the destruction of the tribe El Hassiâ. Intelligence of this matter having come to the ears of the Emir Douhi, chief of the tribe Woudi Ali, a relation and intimate friend of Mehanna, and who, as well as himself, had to escort the great caravan, he arrived one day with thirty horsemen to apprise him of the danger which menaced him. The principal people of the tribe went out to meet Douhi. When he had entered the tent, Mehanna ordered coffee, but the emir stopped him, saying, "Mehanna, thy coffee is already drunk! I come here neither to eat nor to drink, but rather to notify to thee that the conduct of thy son Nasser-Pacha (he gave him this title in derision) is drawing destruction upon thee and thine. Know that all the Bedouins have formed a league, and are about to declare against thee war to the death." Mehanna, changing colour, exclaimed, "Well, art thou satisfied, Nasser?—thou wilt be the last of the race of Melkghem!"

But Nasser, far from yielding, answered that he would make head against all the Bedouins, and that he would have the aid of 20,000 Osmanlis, as well as that of Mola Ismael, chief of the Kurdish cavalry, which bears the schakko. Douhi passed the night in endeavouring to turn Nasser from his projects, without succeeding in doing so. The following day he departed, uttering these words—"My conscience forbids me to unite myself with you. Relationship, and the bread that we have eaten together, prevent me from declaring war against you. Adieu! I quit you with sorrow."

From this time, we felt our residence with the Bedouins far from comfortable. We could not leave them, for every body that removed from the tents met an untimely end. There were incessant attacks on us from one side or another—continual changes of encampment without a moment's notice, to obtain a more secure position—a continued series of starves, reprisals, and disputes between Mehanna and his son; but the old man was of so kind and credulous a disposition, that Nasser never failed to convince that he was quite right in all he did.

A thousand instances of his simplicity were related to us. Amongst others was the following:—Being at Damascus whilst Yousouf Pacha, grand vizier of the Ottoman empire, held his court there on his return from Egypt after the departure of the French, Mehanna presented himself before him like all the other chiefs, but, being ill instructed in the matter of Turkish etiquette, he accosted him without any ceremony after the familiar fashion of the Bedouins, and seated himself on the divan by the side of the vizier, without being invited to that honourable proximity. Yousouf, not being very learned in the usages of the Bedouins, and ignorant likewise of the station of the little shabby-looking old man who treated him so familiarly, gave orders that he should be led from the presence, and have his head chopped off. The slaves took him by the arms, and were preparing to execute upon Mehanna the measure of the command, when the Pacha of Damascus lifted up his voice aloud, exclaiming, "Stop! what are you about? If a hair of his head fall, you will never be able, with all your power, to send another caravan to Mecca." The vizier, being thus admonished, hastened to have him brought back and reinstated by his side, presented him with coffee, and had him decked out in his presence with a Cashemire turban, a rich gombaz (robe), and a pelisse of honour, bestowing on him, at the same time, 1000 piastres. Mehanna, in consequence of his deafness, and his ignorance of the Turkish language, did not understand any thing that had passed, but, taking off his fine clothes, he gave them to three of his slaves who accompanied him. The vizier caused him to be asked, through the medium of a dragoman, if he were displeased with his present. Mehanna answered—"Tell the vizier of the sultan that we Bedouins do not seek to distinguish ourselves by rich garments. I am not well dressed, but all the Bedouins know me; they are well aware that I am Mehanna el Fadel, son of Melkghem." The pacha, studious not to irritate him, affected to smile, and be much delighted with his frankness.

At length the summer was over. In the month of October the tribe was in the neighbourhood of Aleppo. My heart beat to find myself so near my birth-place, but, according to stipulation, I was debarred from giving any intelligence of myself to my relatives. Scheik Ibrahim felt desirous to pass the winter at Damascus; however, no Bedouin durst conduct us there. We succeeded, after a great deal of difficulty, in getting ourselves escorted as far as the village called Soghene (the Hot), two days' journey from Aleppo. The hospitable inhabitants disputed amongst themselves for the pleasure of entertaining us. A natural hot bath has given the name to the village; and the superior beauty of the natives is probably owing to the goodness of its mineral waters. From there we regained Palmyra with some difficulty, which was compensated by the satisfaction of seeing Scheik Ragial once more. Having passed a fortnight with our friends there, we set off for Corietain, where Scheik Selim and the priest Moussi welcomed us with real kindness. They were never weary of listening to our stories concerning the Bedouins. To their friendly questions as to the situation of our affairs, Scheik Ibrahim answered by saying that our speculation went on wonderfully well, and that we had gained more than we expected; but the fact was sadly the reverse, for, what with losses and presents, we had nothing left but the merchandise deposited with Moussi. We passed thirty days at Corietain organising our departure. The winter was rapidly advancing, and no person would provide us with beasts of burden, as it was the general opinion we should be plundered on the route. At last Scheik Ibrahim bought a miserable horse, I hired an ass, and, in detestable weather, with a chilly blast, we departed, accompanied by four men on foot, for the village of Daïr Antîc. In four hours we arrived at a defile, between two mountains, called Beni el Gebelain. At this spot twenty Bedouins on horseback pounced upon us. Our conductors, far from defending us, concealed their muskets, and remained quiet spectators of our disaster. The

Bedouins stripped us, leaving us but a shirt a-piece. We implored death at their hands, rather than to be thus laid bare to the cold. At length, touched with our lamentable state, they had generosity enough to give us each a gombaz. As to our cattle, they were animals of too sorrowful an aspect to tempt them. As, indeed, they could drag their legs but slowly onwards, they would only have impeded their progress.

We resumed our route in sadness. The night closed in upon us, the cold increased in severity, and shortly took from us the power of speech. Our teeth chattered, our eyes grew red, and our cheeks blue. After some time I fell to the ground, frozen and fainting. Scheik Ibrahim made despairing gestures to the guides, without being able to speak to them. One of them, a Syrian Christian, took pity upon me, and upon the grief of Scheik Ibrahim. He knocked down the horse, also half-dead with cold and fatigue, beat out his brains, ripped up his belly, and pushed me into it, with only my head out. At the end of half an hour I came to my senses, and was much surprised at feeling myself resuscitated, and discovering myself in such a position. The heat restored me the use of my tongue, and I returned many thanks to Ibrahim and the good Arab. I found my courage revive, and was able to walk. Shortly after our guides exclaimed, "There's the village!" and we entered the first house we came to. It was that of a blacksmith, named Hanna el Bitar. He took the most lively interest in our situation, hastened to cover us both with camel's dung, and administered to us, drop by drop, a little wine. Having thus infused some animation into our bodies, he removed us from our stove, put us to bed, and made us drink a palatable soup. After a repose that was indispensable to recruit us, we effected a loan of 200 piastres to pay our guides and proceed to Damascus, where we arrived on the 23d December 1810.

M. Chabassin, a French physician, the only Frank who was in Damascus, received us into his house; but as we had to pass the winter in that city, we afterwards took up our quarters in the Lazarist Convent, which was forsaken.

I will not describe the celebrated city of Scham,* (Damascus), that gate of glory (Babel Chabé), as the Turks call it. Our long residence enabled us to obtain a thorough knowledge of it, but it has been too often visited by travellers to offer any thing new. I return to my recital.

One day being at the bazaar, passing the time in the Turkish fashion, a Bedouin came running up to us and embraced us, saying, "Do you not know your brother Hettall, who has eaten your bread at Nouarat el Nahman?" Delighted at the meeting, we conducted him to our abode; and having sufficiently regaled and interrogated him, we learnt that the affairs of the tribe Hassac were far from prosperous, and that the league against it was becoming every day more formidable. Hettall informed us that he was of the tribe of Would Ali, the chief of which, Douhi, was known to us. This tribe passes the winter in the districts of Sarka and Balka; it extends from the country of Ismael to the Dead Sea, and returns to Horan in the spring.[†] He proposed that we should visit it, answering for our safety, and promising us a good market for our merchandise. Having accepted his offer, it was agreed he should come and seek us in the month of March.

Scheik Ibrahim, having received from Aleppo a remittance of a thousand tallars, by means of M. Chabassin, instructed me to make fresh purchases. When they were effected, I showed them to him, asking him if anything would remain to us on our return. "My dear son," he replied, "the acquaintance of each chief of a tribe is worth more to me than all our wares. Be tranquil; you also shall have your reward in money and fame. You will be renowned in your age, but in the interim I must know all the tribes and their chiefs. I reckon upon your assistance in reaching the Drayhi, and to accomplish that, it is absolutely necessary that you pass for a Bedouin. Therefore let your beard

grow, get dressed like them, and practise their usages. Ask me for no explanation; recollect our stipulations." "May God give us strength!" was my only answer.

Twenty times I was on the point of abandoning an enterprise, all the perils of which I plainly perceived, without recognising the object to be gained. This forced silence and blind submission were irritating in the extreme. However, the desire to arrive at the result, and my attachment for M. Lascaris, induced me to be patient.

At the time fixed upon, Hettall arrived with two guides, and three camels, and we took our departure on the 15th March 1811, one year and twenty-eight days after our first exit from Aleppo. The tribe was in a place called Misarib, three days' journey from Damascus. Nothing remarkable happened to us on the road. We passed the nights with a brilliant starlight, and the third day at sunset we were in the middle of the encampment of Would Ali. The aspect of it was very agreeable; each tent was surrounded by horses, camels, goats, and sheep, with the lance of the cavalier fixed at the entrance. The tent of the Emir Douhi was pitched in the centre; he received us with all possible kindness, and made us take supper with him. He is a man of intellect, equally feared and loved by his people. He commands 5000 tents, and three tribes which are joined under his sway; to wit, Benin Sakhrer, El Serhaan, and El Sardic. He divides his warriors into companies or detachments, each commanded by one of his own relations.

The Bedouins are very fond of hearing tales after supper. The following is one which the Emir related to us. It is interesting, from exhibiting the extreme attachment which they have for their horses, and the pride they feel in their qualities.

A man of his tribe, named Giabal, had a very famous mare. Hassad-Pacha, then pacha of Damascus, made him at various periods all imaginable offers for it, but uselessly, for a Bedouin loves his horse as much as his wife. The pacha at last used menaces, which were equally unavailing. However, another Bedouin, named Gifar, having come to him and asked him what he would give if he produced him Giabal's mare, the pacha answered, "I will fill thy barley-poke with gold," for Hassad looked upon his ill success as a personal affront. This matter having got wind, Giabal, for greater security, fastened an iron ring round the fetlock of his horse, and attached a chain to it, which at night he fixed to a stake in the ground, underneath the felt-sheet which served him and his wife for a bed. In the dead of night, Gifar penetrated into his tent on his hands and knees, and, sliding in between Giabal and his wife, he gently pushed away, first the one and then the other; the husband, believing himself pushed by his wife, and she by her husband, each of them made room. Then Gifar, with a well-sharped knife, cut a hole in the felt, drew up the stake, loosened the mare, mounted her, and taking Giabal's lance, gave him a slight prick, crying out, "It is I, Gifar, who have taken thy fine mare—I give thee notice." And he rode off. Giabal sprang out of the tent, aroused the horsemen, jumped upon his brother's mare, and pursued Gifar for four hours. The brother's mare was of the same blood as his own, although not as good. Outstripping all the others, he was on the point of coming up to Gifar, when he cried out to him, "Pinch the right ear, and give a stroke of the spur." Gifar did so, and darted off like a thunderbolt. Further pursuit became then useless, as the distance between them grew every moment greater. The other Bedouins reproached Giabal for being himself the cause of the loss of his mare.* "I prefer," answered he, "to lose her rather than to tarnish her reputation. Do you think I would let it be said in the tribe Would Ali that another mare

* Every Bedouin accustoms his horse to a sign, which makes him put forth all his speed. He only makes use of it in a pressing emergency, and never imparts the secret to any one, not even his son.

† The horses of this tribe have the highest reputation amongst the Bedouins.

* Scham signifies the sun.

had surpassed mine? I have at least the satisfaction of knowing that none other was ever able to compete with her." He returned home with this consolation, and Giafir received the reward of his address.

Another related to us, that in the tribe of Negde, there was a mare equally renowned as that of Giabal, and that a Bedouin of another tribe, named Daher, was incited with a desire approaching to madness to possess her. Having in vain offered for her his camels and all he possessed, he conceived the design of dyeing his face with the juice of an herb, clothing himself in rags, binding his limbs like those of a cripple, and in this plight lying in wait for Nabec, the owner of the mare, in a road which he knew he must pass. When he came near, he said to him in a feeble tone, "I am a poor stranger, and for three days I have been unable to crawl from here to seek food. I am on the point of death—succour me; God will reward you."

The Bedouin proposed to take him on his horse and carry him home with him; but the rascal answered, "I cannot get up, I have no strength to move." The other, full of compassion, descended from his mare, drew her up to him, and with great labour set him upon her. As soon as he felt himself in the saddle, he stuck his heels in her flanks, and the mare bounded off. As he went away he exclaimed, "It is Daher who has mounted and seized upon your mare."

The master of the horse entreated him to listen for a moment. Sure of not being pursued, he returned, and stopped at a little distance, for Nabec was armed with his lance. He said to him, "Thou hast taken my mare. Since it is the will of God, I wish thee prosperity; but I conjure thee never to tell any one how thou hast obtained her." "And why?" asked Daher. "Because some other might be really ill, and lying without aid," answered Nabec;—"thou wouldst be the cause of no one ever again doing a single act of charity, for fear of being duped like me." Struck with these words, Daher reflected a moment, got off the mare, restored her to her owner, and embraced him. Nabec conducted him to his tent, and they remained together three days, having sworn a mutual friendship or brotherhood.

Scheik Ibrahim was enchanted with these tales, which gave him an insight into the character and generous spirit of the Bedouins. We found the tribe of Donhi to be more wealthy and less grasping than that of Mehamma. Their horses were infinitely superior. We remained fifteen days amongst them. Scheik Ibrahim made presents to all the chiefs, and sold some articles to the women, to keep up the character of a merchant. We afterwards departed to visit the three tributary scheiks of the Emir Donhi.

Scheik Ibrahim told me, that he had no other interest in remaining amongst these Bedouins, than that of affording me opportunities of studying more minutely their language and manners; that it behoved him, on account of *his own business*, to get to the tents of the Drayhy, but that I should take advantage of our ease amongst all these tribes, to put down exact notes of their names and numbers, for these matters were important for him to know.

Their manner of speaking is very difficult to acquire, even for an Arab, although it is the same language at bottom. I applied myself to the task with success. I thus obtained, in the course of our long rambles, the names of all the scheiks, and the census of all the tribes, a thing that no one had previously been able to accomplish.

When the tribes are numerous, they are frequently obliged to divide themselves into detachments of from 200 to 500 tents, and to spread over a large space, in order to procure water and pasturage for their flocks. We went through all the encampments in succession, whilst waiting to find means to get ourselves conducted to the Drayhy, who was at war with all those in the territory of Damascus. We were every where received with great cordiality.

In one of the tribes was a poor widow, who offered us hospitality. In order to regale us, she killed her

last sheep, and borrowed some bread. She informed us that her husband and her three sons had been killed in the war against the Wahabites, a very powerful tribe in the neighbourhood of Mecca. Having testified to her our astonishment that she should despoil herself on our account, she said, "He who enters the dwelling of a living person, and eats not, is as if he visited a corpse."

A tribe, already become considerable, had been formed in the following manner. A Bedouin had a very beautiful daughter, whom the chief of the tribe asked in marriage, but he would not grant her to him, and in order to escape his importunities, he secretly departed with all his family. The scheik, inquiring what had become of him, some one answered him, "*Serak*" (he has gone off). "*Serhan*"* (he is a wolf), remarked the chief, meaning by that he was a savage. From that time, the tribe of which this Bedouin became the chief, has always been called the tribe El-Serhaan.† When individual Bedouins are valiant and have good horses, they render themselves powerful in a short time.

We at length learnt the arrival of the Drayhy in Mesopotamia. At this period, Scheik Ibrahim was obliged to go to Damascus in search of goods and cash, in both of which we were woefully deficient. We there got acquainted with a Bedouin of a tribe on the borders of the Euphrates, which had preserved a neutrality in the affair of Nasser. This Bedouin, named Gazens-el-Hamad, had come to Damascus, with some camels, to sell butter. He undertook to carry our merchandise upon his camels, and to conduct us to the Drayhy; but alas! we were destined not to get there so easily. We had scarcely arrived at Corietain, to recover our goods left there in deposit, when we received the news of a victory gained by Zaher, son of the Drayhy, over Nasser, so that the war was renewed with double violence. All the tribes pronounced themselves for one party or the other. That of Salkeh, the tribe of our conductor, had been attacked by the Drayhy, who pursued his advantages with unrelenting fury, and no person durst venture to cross the desert. M. Lascaris was in despair. He could no longer eat or sleep, and, irritated to the last extremity at finding himself thus stopped in his projects, he became ill-humoured towards me. Then I said to him, "It is now time to come to an explanation. If you wish to reach the camp of the Drayhy for the purpose of driving trade, the enterprise is insane, and I refuse to follow you. If you have other projects and motives, sufficient to induce you to expose your life, explain them to me, and you will find me ready to sacrifice myself for your service." "Well, my dear son," he answered, "I will open myself to you. Know, then, that commerce is only a pretext to conceal a mission which has been imposed upon me at Paris. See my instructions, divided into ten heads:—

1st, To depart from Paris for Aleppo.

2d, There to seek a faithful Arab, and attach him to me as a dragonian.

3d, To perfect myself in the language.

4th, To go to Palmyra.

5th, To penetrate amongst the Bedouins.

6th, To get acquainted with all the chiefs, and gain their friendship.

7th, To unite them in one cause.

8th, To induce them to break all compact with the Osmanlis.

9th, To reconnoitre the whole desert, as to the halting places where water and pasturage are to be found, as far as the frontiers of India.

10th, To return into Europe, safe and sound, after having accomplished my mission."

"And what then?" I asked. But he told me to be silent. "Remember our conditions," said he; "I will inform you of all in good time. At present, it is enough for you to know that I will reach the camp of the Drayhy, if I must there lay down my life."

This half confidence troubled me, and prevented me

* This is a play on words difficult to translate. *Serak* signifies departed, *serhan* signifies a wolf.

† The tribe of the Wolf

from sleeping. To perceive almost insurmountable difficulties, and to have only a confused idea of the advantages to be produced by my devotedness, was a very painful feeling. However, I took the resolution of proceeding to the end, since I had engaged myself to do so; and I thought only of the means of succeeding. My beard had grown, I was perfectly conversant with the language of the Bedouins, so I conceived the design of going alone and on foot to the Drayhy, as it seemed the only possible chance left for us to try. I went to my friend Wardi, he who had restored me to life by thrusting me into the belly of a horse, and I communicated to him my project. He at first sought to divert me from such a design, by representing to me that the fatigues would be very great, that I would have ten nights of most painful marching, as in the day time concealment would be absolutely necessary, and that only what was strictly necessary for food could be taken on the journey; but seeing that nothing could make me flinch from my purpose, he entered into an engagement to serve as my guide, in consideration of a large sum of money. Having made M. Lascaris acquainted with my project, he likewise offered friendly objections, founded on the dangers to which I should expose myself; but, nevertheless, I saw that at bottom he was very well pleased at my zeal.

We entered into the necessary arrangements. I agreed to write to him on the return of my guide, as soon as I should be arrived at the camp of the Drayhy. The night was well advanced before we threw ourselves on our beds. I was much agitated, my sleep was disturbed, and I awakened M. Lascaris by my cries. I dreamt, that being on the summit of a steep rock, at the foot of which a rapid river flowed which I could not pass, I went to sleep on the edge of the precipice, and that a tree suddenly took root in my mouth, which grew and spread out its branches like a tent, but that in its growth it tore my throat, and its roots penetrated my bowels, upon which I uttered vehement cries. Having related my dream to the Sheikh Ibrahim, he was much surprised at it, and told me that it augured most happily, and announced a grand result after many labours.

It was necessary that I should dress myself in tatters, in order to excite neither suspicion nor cupidity, if we should happen to be discovered. I adopted the following travelling garb: a shirt of coarse cotton cloth patched; a dirty and ragged gombaz; an old caïck, with a piece of cloth, once white, for a turban; a mantle of sheepskin with half the wool off; a pair of cobbled shoes weighing four pounds; a leather girdle, from which hung a knife worth two paras, a steel, a little tobacco in an old bag, and a pipe. I blacked my eyes, and daubed my face, and, presenting myself in this plight to Sheikh Ibrahim, to take leave of him, he burst into tears. "May the great God," cried he, "give you strength to accomplish your generous design! I will owe every thing to your energy. May the Most High be with you, and keep you from all danger! May he put out the eyes of the wicked, and bring you back, so that I may reward you!"

I could not avoid weeping in my turn. But afterwards, the conversation becoming more gay, Sheikh Ibrahim told me, jokingly, that if I went to Paris in that costume, I could easily gain money by exhibiting myself. We supped together, and at sunset I took the road. I marched without feeling fatigue until midnight; but then my feet began to swell, and as my shoes hurt me, I took them off. The prickles of the plant which the camels crop wounded my feet, and the stones bruised them. I endeavoured to remove my shoes; and thus, with a variation of suffering, I walked until morning. A small cave afforded us shelter for the day. I dressed my feet by wrapping them in a piece of my mantle, which I tore off, and I fell asleep without being able to take any food. I was still asleep, when my guide called upon me to proceed. My feet were much swollen, my heart sank, and I begged him to wait until the following day. My conductor approached me for my weakness. "I knew very well," said he, "that you were too delicate for such a journey. I told

you so beforehand. It is impossible for us to remain here, for, if we pass the night, we must stay all to-morrow likewise; thus our provisions will be exhausted, and we shall perish of hunger in the desert. It will be better to renounce our enterprise, and return while there is still time."

These words stirred me up, and I set off. I dragged myself with a great effort till nearly midnight, when, having come to a plain where the sand rose and sank in undulations, we rested there until daylight. The first twilight enabled us to distinguish two objects at a distance, which we took for camels. My guide being alarmed, dug a hole in the sand to conceal ourselves, and we buried ourselves up to the neck, leaving only our heads above ground. We remained in this disagreeable situation, with our eyes fixed in the direction of the camels, when, towards noon, Wardi suddenly shouted out, "God be praised, they are only ostriches." We got out of our grave with great joy, and, for the first time since our departure, I ate a morsel of cake, and drank a drop of water. We remained there until evening, waiting for the darkness to resume our route. Having got upon sand, I suffered less from walking. We passed the following day in sleeping. We were opposite Palmyra at midnight. The break of day, after the fourth night, found us on the brink of a large river, named El Rabih, flowing from the south to the north. My guide undressed himself, carried me on his back to the other side, and returned to fetch his clothes. I wished to rest myself, but he told me it was not prudent to stop in a place where the river was fordable. In fact, we had not gone above half an hour, before we perceived 500 mounted Bedouins approaching the river, going from the east to the west. Having found a thicket, we fixed our halt in it for the day.

The sixth night brought us within a few hours of the Euphrates. On the seventh day, the most difficult part was accomplished; and if I had not suffered so much from my feet, I would have forgotten all my fatigues in the spectacle of the sun rising upon the banks of this magnificent river. The hospitable Bedouins, whose occupation it is to ferry people across, invited us into their tents, where, for the first time, we made a good meal. We got information as to the Drayhy. He was at three days' distance, between Zaïte and Zaïer. He had made peace with the Emir Fahed, imposing a tribute on him. They discoursed largely on his military talents and undaunted courage, and stated that it was his intention to annihilate Mehamma and Nasser, and then to return to his desert, near Bassorah and Bagdad. These were the very details that I desired; I instantly formed my plan. I asked for a guide to conduct me to the Drayhy, telling the Bedouins that I was an Aleppo merchant, having a correspondent at Bagdad, who owed me 25,000 piastres, and who had lately become bankrupt; that the war between the Bedouins having interrupted the communications, I had no other resource but to adventure alone, and put myself under the protection of the Drayhy, in order to get to Bagdad, where my whole fortune was in jeopardy. These good Bedouins invoked the name of Allah, that he might aid me in the recovery of my property; and Wardi himself exhibited proofs of greater interest in my journey than previously, when he was thus made acquainted with its importance. After passing the day in investigating the economy of the tribe Beny Tay, we departed with a good escort; and nothing occurred to us of an interesting nature during our march. By sunset of the third day, we saw the five thousand tents of the Drayhy covering the plain as far as the eye could reach. Filled with camels, horses, and flocks, concealing the ground, I never saw such a spectacle of power and wealth as this encampment displayed. The tent of the emir was in the centre, and was 160 feet long. He received me with much politeness; and, without putting any questions, he invited me to sup with him. After supper, he asked me whence I came, and whither I went. I replied to him as I had done to the Bedouins of the Euphrates. "You are welcome," said he, after my recital; "your arrival brings a thousand benedic-

tions. If it please God, you will succeed; but, according to our custom, we cannot discourse upon business till three days are granted to hospitality and repose." I returned the usual acknowledgments, and retired. The next day I dispatched Wardi to M. Lascaris.

The Drayhy is about fifty years old, tall, and of a handsome countenance, with a short beard, completely white. His look is haughty. He is considered as the most able of the chiefs of tribes. He has two sons, Zaër and Sahdoun, who are married, and inhabit the same tent as himself. His tribe is called El Dualla, and it is numerous and wealthy.

Chance promoted my views in a wonderful manner, after the few first days of my arrival. The Emir was in want of a secretary. I offered to serve him for the moment; and I soon gained his confidence by the advice and information I was enabled to give him, as to the tribes which I had visited. When I spoke to him of my affair, he said to me, "If you will remain with me, you shall be as a son; all that you say shall be done." I took advantage of this confidence to induce him to pass the Euphrates, in order to bring him nearer Scheik Ibrahim. I pointed out to him all that he might gain in influence over the tribes of the country, by detaching them from Nasser; and I held up to his view the multitude of presents they would be compelled to offer him, the terror he would strike into the Osmanlis, and the injury he would perpetrate on his foes by consuming their pasturage. As it was the first time that he had quitted the desert of Bagdad to come into Mesopotamia, my counsels and knowledge were of great assistance to him; and he did as I advised him. The break-up of the camp was a superb sight. The horse men went in front upon their thorough-bred horses, and the women, in haudags with magnificent draperies, were seated on dromedaries, encompassed by negress slaves. Men, bearing provisions, went up and down the caravan, crying, "Who is hungry?" and distributing bread, dates, &c. Every three hours, a halt was made to take coffee; and in the evening, the tents were pitched, as if by enchantment. We followed the banks of the Euphrates, the transparent waters of which shone like silver. I was mounted on a full-blood mare, and the whole progress seemed to me like a triumphal march, forming a considerable contrast to the mode in which I had recently journeyed, whilst toiling over the same district in rags and with bleeding feet.

On the fourth day, the Emir Zahed came to meet us with a thousand horse. They gave themselves up to all sorts of equestrian games. In the evening, the Drayhy, his sons, and I, went to sup with the tribe of Zahed. On the following day we crossed the river, and encamped on the territory of Damascus. Always marching to the west, we pitched our tents at El Jaffet, in the pachalik of Aleppo. The report of the Drayhy's arrival was quickly spread abroad, and Mehanna forwarded to him a letter, commencing with their respective titles, and thus continuing:—

"In the name of the all-merciful God!—we have learnt with surprise that you have passed the Euphrates, and that you have advanced into the provinces which our ancestors have transmitted to us. Do you then think that you should alone devour the food of all the birds of heaven? Know that we have so many warriors that we cannot reckon their number; and, furthermore, we shall be supported by the valiant Osmanlis, whom none can resist. We therefore admonish you to go back the road you have come; otherwise, all conceivable misfortunes will fall upon you, and you will repent when it is too late."

During the reading of this letter, I saw the Drayhy grow livid with rage. His eyes darted sparks of fire. After a momentary silence, he exclaimed, in a voice of terrific compass, "Kratib, take your pen, and write to this dog!"

His reply was couched in the following strain:—"I have read your threats, which are less heeded than a grain of mustard. I will drag down your flag, and purify the earth of you and your renegade son, Nasser. As to the territory you claim, the sabre will decide the

question. I shall shortly be on the march to exterminate you. You had better make haste, for war is proclaimed."

I afterwards addressed myself to the Drayhy, in these words:—"I have a piece of advice to give you. You are a stranger in this quarter, and you are ignorant what part the tribes of the country will take. Mehanna is beloved by the Bedouins and aided by the Turks, and you are commencing war with him, without knowing the number of the enemies you have to encounter. If you should suffer the first defeat, all will unite in league against you, and you will not be strong enough to withstand them. Send, therefore, an embassy to the sheiks of the surrounding districts, to announce to them that you are come to destroy the tents of Melkghem, in order to free them from the yoke of the Osmanlis, and to ask from them a declaration on which side they range themselves: thus you will be enabled to compare his forces with your own, and take your measures accordingly." "You are really a man of good counsel," replied the Drayhy, transported with my idea. "I am nothing of myself," I remarked; "if I know any thing it is owing to my master, for it is he who is the man full of wisdom and knowledge, and well versed in affairs. He alone is able to direct your counsels. You would be delighted with him if you knew him. I feel convinced, that if he were with you, and you had the benefit of his sagacity, you would become the chief of all the Bedouins of the desert." "I will dispatch a hundred horsemen to fetch him this very instant," exclaimed the Drayhy with energy. "We are still too far off," I replied; "the journey would be too fatiguing. When we shall be nearer Corictain, I will introduce him to you."

I was afraid that something evil might fall foul of Scheik Ibrahim, and I was anxious to be near him to guide his steps. I was so much attached to him, that I would have laid down a thousand lives to serve him.

But to return to the council of war. The Drayhy gave me a list of ten of the principal sheiks to whom to write. His letter was as follows:—"I have left my country to deliver you from the tyranny of Nasser, who wishes to become your master by means of the Turks, to subvert your usages, destroy your manners, and subject you to the Osmanlis. I have declared war against him, therefore say with candour if you are for him or for me, and let those who are my allies come and join me. Safety!"

Having dispatched ten horsemen with these letters, on the following day we advanced as far as the vast and beautiful territory of Chaumerie, thirty hours from Hama. After a short absence our messengers returned. The Emir Douhi and the Scheik Sellame answered, that they would preserve neutrality; the Scheik Cassem, a relation of Mehanna, declared for him; the other seven tribes came and encamped round us, their sheiks promising the Drayhy to partake his perils through life and death. However, our spies reported to us, that Mehanna being alarmed, had sent Nasser to Hama to demand aid from the Turks. The Drayhy immediately assembled his army of 3000 strong, composed of 6000 troopers and 1000 *deloumardoufs*, that is to say, camels, each bestrode by two men, armed with muskets lighted by matches,* and departed on the fourth day, giving orders to the rest of the tribes to follow the second day after, in order to raise the courage of his warriors in the combat, by the vicinity of their wives and children. I remained with these last, and we went to encamp at El Jamie, an hour's distance from the tribe El Hassné, and two days from Hama. On the fifth day, the Drayhy announced to us a brilliant victory, and shortly after the camels, sheep, horses, and weapons, taken from the enemy, arrived. The men, who had been ordered to remain with the tents to guard the baggage, went to meet the conquerors to demand their part of the spoil,

* Muskets with triggers are not used by the Bedouins, because their ancestors did not use them, and also because they would be more dangerous in the hands of the women and children. The women twist the matches, which are of cotton.

to which they are entitled, and we shortly saw the triumphant army draw nigh.

The Drayhy had surprised Mehanna by a sudden attack in the absence of Nasser; but the tribe of Hassné having shouted its war-cry, the combatants were nearly equal in numbers. The battle lasted until evening. Our warriors, after losing twenty-two of their number, and slaying twice as many of the enemy, had seized upon its flocks. Zaher had captured the mare of Fares, son of Mehanna, which is reckoned a glorious exploit amongst the Bedouins.

After his defeat, Mehanna crossed the Orontes to the north of Hama, and encamped near Homs to wait for the Osmanlis, and obtain with them his revenge. In fact, on the fifth day thereafter, the herds ran into the camp, crying out, that the Turks, led by Nasser, had fallen on the flocks. All our warriors immediately rushed to the pursuit, and a more terrible combat than the first ensued, during which the enemy drove off a great part of our flocks towards his own camp. The advantage was on our side, and much spoil was taken from the Turks, but the loss of our flocks was considerable. We lost only twelve men, but amongst them was the nephew of the Drayhy, Ali, whose death was universally regretted. His uncle remained three days without food, and swore, by the all-powerful God, that he would slay Nasser, to avenge the death of Ali.

The attacks were renewed every day. The Osmanlis of Damascus, Homs, and Hama, were in consternation, and sought to assemble all the Arabs of Horam and Idumæa. Several desert tribes arrived, some to reinforce the Drayhy, and others Mehanna. No caravan could pass from one town to another. The advantages were almost always on the side of the Drayhy. One day, by a singular coincidence, Fares carried off from us 120 camels, which were two leagues from the tents, whilst at the same moment Zaher seized upon the same number of theirs. This simultaneous expedition was the cause that neither the one nor the other was pursued, and each had time to secure the capture. But this war of reprisals for booty and flocks, was soon to assume a character of ferociousness and extermination. The first occasion of it was given by the Turks, under the conduct of Nasser, who having taken from the tribe Beny-Kraleb two women and a girl, conducted them to the village Zany el Abedin. Nasser delivered the women to the soldiers, and presented the young girl to the aga, whom she poignarded during the night to revenge her honour. Her vigorous arm pierced him to the heart, and left him dead on the spot; then going out without noise, she rejoined her tribe, and spread indignation and fury amongst the Bedouins, who swore to die or to kill Nasser, and to fill pitchers with his blood, to distribute amongst the tribes as a memento of their vengeance.

The punishment was not long in coming. An engagement having taken place between a party commanded by Zaher, and another commanded by Nasser, these two chiefs, who cordially detested each other, sought out and attacked each other with fury. The Bedouins remained spectators of the combat between these two warriors, equal in valour and address. The strife was long and terrible. At last, their exhausted horses no longer obeying so promptly the directions of the riders, Nasser failed to escape a blow from Zaher's lance, which passed right through him. He fell, his troop fled or gave up their horses,* and Zaher cut into pieces Nasser's body, put it into a *couffe* (a sort of rush basket), and forwarded it to the camp of Mehanna by a prisoner, whose nose he first sliced off. He afterwards returned to his tribe, exulting in his vengeance.

Mehanna sent to ask assistance from the Bedouins of Chamma (Samarcand), of Negde, and the Wahabites. They promised to come to his aid in the following year, as the season for retiring to the East was then come. As we were encamped near Corietain, I proposed to go and fetch Scheik Ibrahim. The Drayhy accepted my

offer with ardour, and he gave me a strong escort. I cannot describe the happiness I felt in again beholding M. Lascaris, who received me with an overflowing heart. As for me, I embraced him as a father, for I had never known one, as mine died in my early infancy. I took the whole night to relate to him all that had passed. The next day, having taken leave of our friends, the Priest Moussi and the Scheik Selim, I conducted Ibrahim to the camp, where he was received with great distinction by the Drayhy. He gave us a grand feast of camels' flesh, which I found less insipid than the first time I had tasted it, for I began to get inured to the food of the Bedouins. The camels destined to be slaughtered are white as snow, and are never loaded or hard-ridden. Their flesh is red, and very fat. The she-camels yield a great quantity of milk, of which the Bedouins are continually drinking, and they give the surplus to their full-blood horses, which are amazingly strengthened thereby. They thus consume all the milk, because it is not fit to make butter. By degrees, we came to prefer its flavour to the milk of goats or ewes.

An attack of the Wahabites, a short time after the arrival of M. Lascaris, caused a loss to the Drayhy of several troopers, and a great number of beasts. On the following day, Scheik Ibrahim took me aside, and said to me, "I am much pleased with the Drayhy. He is a man after my own heart. It is indispensable that he should become the general chief of all the Bedouins, from Aleppo to the frontiers of India. It is for you to accomplish this matter by negotiation, using friendship, menaces, or artifice, as your instruments."

"You give me a very difficult task," I answered. "Each tribe has its chief. The Bedouins are opposed to all dependence; they have never submitted to any yoke. I fear, if you engage in such a business, that something disastrous will happen to you."

"It is, nevertheless, absolutely essential," replied M. Lascaris; "apply to it all your capacity, for without that we can have no success."

I reflected for a long time on the proper mode of setting about this affair. The first great point was to inspire the Bedouins with a high idea of Scheik Ibrahim; and to produce this feeling in an eminent degree, as they are superstitious and credulous to excess, we prepared some chemical experiments with phosphorus and detonating powder, hoping to astonish them. So, in the evening, when the chief men of the tribe were collected in the Drayhy's tent, Scheik Ibrahim, with a majestic air and great dexterity, produced effects which struck them with admiration and awe. From that moment he was in their eyes a sorcerer, a magician, or rather a divinity.

The next day the Drayhy called me to him, and said, "Oh, Abdallah! your master is a god." "No," I replied, "but rather a prophet. What you saw last night is nothing to the power which he has acquired by his profound science; there is no man like him in this age. Know, that if he chooses, he is able to make you king of all the Bedouins. He has discovered that the comet which appeared some time ago was your star, that it is superior to those of the other Arabs, and that, if you follow his counsels in all particulars, you will become all-powerful." This idea gave him extreme satisfaction. The passion for command and glory was energetically aroused in his soul, and, by a truly surprising coincidence, I had hit upon the exact object of his superstition, for he exclaimed, "Oh, Abdallah! I see that you speak the truth, and that your master is really a prophet. I had a dream some time ago, in which fire, falling from the comet, came upon my tent and consumed it, and I took this fire in my hand, without its scorching me. This comet was assuredly my star." He thereupon called his wife, and begged her to tell me this dream, such as he had related it to her when he awoke. I availed myself of this circumstance to establish yet more decidedly the idea of Scheik Ibrahim's superiority, and the Drayhy promised me for the future to follow all his counsels. M. Lascaris, feeling much pleasure at this happy beginning, selected from

* When a Bedouin voluntarily abandons his horse to his enemy, he can be neither killed nor made a prisoner.

his merchandise a very handsome present for the Drayhy, who accepted it with the greatest contentment, as he thereby perceived it was not to enrich ourselves that we sought to captivate him. Thenceforth, he made us eat with his wife and daughters-in-law in the interior of the tent, instead of eating with strangers in the rabha. His wife, who was of a high family, and sister of a minister of Ebn Sihoud, was called Sugar. She enjoyed a great reputation for courage and generosity.

Whilst we were strengthening our influence with the Drayhy, an obscure enemy was at work in the dark, to overthrow our hopes, and lead us to destruction. In every tribe there is a pedlar who sells the women wares which he brings from Damascus. The one attached to this tribe, who was named Absi, filled, in addition, the post of secretary to the Drayhy; but since our arrival he had lost, at one swoop, both his office and his traffic. He naturally took a prodigious antipathy to us, and seized every possible opportunity to blacken our characters to the Arabs. He began his intrigues with the women, to whom he represented that we were magicians, who were bent on carrying off the young girls to a distant land, and throwing a spell over the women to prevent them having children, so that the race of Bedouins might be extinguished, and thus give room to Frank conquerors to take possession of the country. We soon perceived the effect of these calumnies, without knowing the cause. The girls fled at our approach, the women loaded us with abuse, and the more aged females used even threats. Amongst such ignorant and credulous people, with whom the women have great influence, the danger became imminent. We at length discovered the intrigues of Absi, and informed the Drayhy of them, who wished to put him to death upon the spot. We had great difficulty in obtaining his expulsion from the tribe instead, which, however, only gave him an opportunity of spreading his malicious reports. A village called Mohadan, which had been tributary to Mohanna, was now become so to the Drayhy since his victories. Having sent to demand a thousand piastres which were due to him, the inhabitants, at the instigation of Absi, maltreated the messenger of the emir, who took vengeance by seizing their flocks. Absi persuaded the chiefs of the village to accompany him to Damascus, to declare to the *capidgi-bashi* that two Frank spies had wormed themselves into the confidence of the Drayhy, and were urging him to commit all sorts of iniquities, as well as labouring to divert the Bedouins from their alliance with the Osmanlis. This denunciation was conveyed to Soleymen-Pacha, who sent a chokredar to the Drayhy, with a threatening letter, ending by ordering him to deliver the two infidels to his officer, who would bring them in chains to Damascus, where their public execution would serve as an example.

The Drayhy, furious at the insolence of this letter, said to the Mussulman officer, "By him who has raised the heavens and lowered the earth, if you were not under my tent, I would chop off your head, and tie it to my horse's tail; it is thus it should carry my answer to your pacha. As to the two strangers who are with me, I will give them up only with my life. If he wishes to have them, let him come and take them with the sword."

However, I took the Drayhy apart, and succeeded in calming him, and getting his permission to settle the matter. I knew that M. Lascaris was connected by friendship with Soleymen-Pacha, and that a letter from him would have an effect quite unexpected by the Drayhy. M. Lascaris, whilst in Egypt with the French expedition, had married a Georgian female, brought up by the wives of Murad-Bey, who was found to be Soleymen-Pacha's cousin. He afterwards had occasion to go to Acre; and his wife having made known her relationship to the pacha, was received by him with great kindness, which he extended likewise to her husband.

M. Lascaris therefore wrote to Soleymen-Pacha, explaining to him that the pretended spies were no other than he and his dragoman, Fatalla Sayeghir; that all that had been told him against the Drayhy was false;

and that, on the contrary, it was for the interest of the Porte to have him as a friend, and to promote his preponderance over the other Bedouins. The chokredar, who was trembling for his life, hastened to carry this letter to Damascus, and returned in two days with a most friendly reply for the Scheik Ibrahim, and a second letter for the Drayhy, to the following purport. After many compliments to the emir, it proceeded: "We have received a letter from our dear friend, the great Scheik Ibrahim, which puts an end to the calumnies of your enemies, and renders the highest testimony in your favour. Your sagacity is well known to us. Henceforth we authorise you to command in the desert, according to your own pleasure. You will receive from us only the offices of a friend. We esteem you above your equals. We recommend to you our well-beloved scheiks, Ibrahim and Abdallah. Their good opinion will augment our friendship for you," &c. The Drayhy and the other chiefs were greatly astonished at the high credit in which Scheik Ibrahim stood with the pacha. This incident carried their respect for us to its height.

I have said that the Drayhy was surnamed the exterminator of the Turks. I obtained an account of the origin of this epithet from the Scheik Abdallah. One day the Drayhy having plundered a caravan, which was going from Damascus to Bagdad, the pacha was excessively enraged; but not venturing to revenge himself openly, he dissembled, according to the custom of the Turks, and induced him by fair promises to come to Bagdad. The Drayhy, frank and unsuspecting, visited the pacha with his ordinary suite of ten men. He was instantly seized, bound with cords, thrown into a dungeon, and menaced with the loss of his head if he did not furnish as a ransom, 1000 purses (a million of piastres), 5000 sheep, 20 mares of the breed *kahilan*, and 20 dromedaries. The Drayhy, leaving his son as a hostage, went to gather this enormous ransom; and as soon as he had paid it, he bent his whole thoughts upon vengeance. The caravans and villages were plundered in all directions, and Bagdad itself was blockaded. The pacha having assembled his troops, issued forth with an army of 30,000 men and some pieces of cannon against the Drayhy, who, reinforced by the allied tribes, gave battle for three days; but seeing that he gained no decisive advantage, he withdrew in silence at night, doubled upon the army of the pacha, placing himself between it and Bagdad, and attacked it on a sudden upon several points at once. Surprised upon the defenceless side in the dead of night, the enemy's camp was overwhelmed with terror. The Osmanlis were thrown into confusion, and the Drayhy made a great slaughter of them, remaining master of an immense booty. The pacha escaped with difficulty without a follower, and shut himself up in Bagdad. This exploit had spread such terror amongst the inhabitants, that even after peace was made, his name remained an object of dread amongst them. Abdallah related to me several other feats of the Drayhy, and concluded by assuring me that he loved greatness and difficult enterprises, and was every way disposed to subject all things to his own dominion.

These were precisely the qualities that Scheik Ibrahim desired to find in him, so he devoted himself more and more to the project of rendering him master of all the other tribes. The Wahabites were his most formidable adversaries. A few days after these events, they fell upon the tribe Woud Ali, and spread themselves over the desert to compel all the Bedouins to pay them tribute. Scared at the approach of these terrible warriors, several of the tribes were about to submit without a struggle, when Scheik Ibrahim persuaded the Drayhy that it was for his honour to take arms, and to proclaim himself the protector of the oppressed. Emboldened by his example, all the tribes, except those of El Hassine and Beni-Sakrer, made an alliance with him to resist the Wahabites. The Drayhy departed with an army of 5000 horse, and 2000 mardouffs. We remained ten days without hearing any intelligence from him. The uneasiness of the camp became extreme.

Symptoms of hatred were exhibited towards us, as the instigators of so perilous an expedition. Our lives had in all probability paid for our temerity, if the uncertainty had continued much longer. On the eleventh day, a horseman came galloping in at full speed, his white sash streaming at the point of his lance, exclaiming, "God has given us the victory!" Scheik Ibrahim made magnificent presents to the bearer of these happy tidings, which freed the tribe from a mortal fear, and us from a great peril. All the women imitated his example according to their means, and afterwards abandoned themselves to uproarious rejoicings, shouting and dancing around the fires, which were kindled in all directions. The slaughtering of beasts, and other preparations for feasting the warriors on their return, put the camp into an unusual bustle; and all being executed by women, offered a very original spectacle. In the evening every one went out to meet the victorious army, the dust of which was perceived in the distance. As soon as we met them, the shouts were redoubled; tiltings, races, musket-shots, and other demonstrations of joy, ushered them into the camp. After supper, we got an account of the exploits of the army.

The Wahabites were commanded by a fearful negro, half a savage, named Abou-Nocta. When he prepares himself for a fight, he takes off his turban and boots, turns up his sleeves to his shoulders, and leaves almost his whole body naked, it being of a prodigious size and muscular force. His head and chin, never having been shaved, are covered with hair, which completely hides his face; his eyes glitter from under this veil; and all his body, being equally shaggy, renders his appearance as strange as it is terrible. The Drayhy joined battle with him, upon a territory called Herouahna, three days from Palmyra. The fight was obstinate on both sides, but it terminated by the flight of Abou-Nocta, who went off to the country of Negde, leaving 200 of his people on the field. The Drayhy caused to be sought out of the spoils all that had been taken from the tribe of Would Ali, which he restored to it. This generous action endeared him more and more to the tribes, which flocked daily to place themselves under his protection. The fame of this victory, gained over the terrible Abou-Nocta, spread far and wide. Soleyman-Pacha sent the conqueror a pelisse of honour and a magnificent sabre, with many compliments on his valour. Shortly after this exploit, we went to encamp on the frontier of Horam.

One day a Turkish *moullah* arrived at the Drayhy's camp. He wore the large green turban which distinguishes the descendants of Mahomet, and a white robe trailing on the ground. His eyes were blackened, and he had a prodigious beard. He had about him several rows of chaplets, and an ink-stand, in the form of a poignard, in his girdle. He was seated on an ass, and bore an arrow in his hand. He came to fanatise the Bedouins, and excite them to a great zeal for the religion of the prophet, in order to attach them to the cause of the Turks. The Bedouins have great simplicity of character and remarkable frankness. They understand nothing about religious differences, and are unwilling to hear about them. They are deists; they invoke the protection of God in all the circumstances of life, and attribute to him their successes or reverses, with pious submission; but they have no assigned rites of creed, nor do they pronounce between the sects of Omar and of Ali, which divide the orientals. They never inquired of us of what religion we were. We told them that we were Christians, and they remarked to us—"All men are the creatures of God, and are equal before him; we have no right to concern ourselves about the faith of other people." This moderation on their part suited our project much better than the bigotry of the Turks; thus, the arrival of the *moullah* caused some uneasiness in the mind of Scheik Ibrahim, who accordingly went to the tent of the Drayhy, where the conference was already opened, or rather the preaching commenced, to which the chiefs were listening with a discontented air. As they rose up to give us salutation on our entrance, the *moullah* asked

who we were, and, having learnt that we were Christians—"It is forbidden by the laws of God," he cried out, "to rise to infidels. You will all be cursed for holding commerce with them, your wives will be strumpets, and your children bastards. Thus has our lord Mahomet decreed, whose name be for ever venerated."

The Drayhy, without waiting for the conclusion of his discourse, jumped up in a rage, caught him by the beard, and, hurling him to the ground, drew out his sabre; Scheik Ibrahim ran forward and arrested his arm, conjuring him to moderate his anger. The emir, moved by his entreaties, consented to cut off his beard instead of his head; and thus shorn, the descendant of the prophet was ignominiously expelled.

The tribe of Beni-Sakrer, the only one that still opposed him in this district, was next attacked by the Drayhy, and completely subdued.

The autumn being now come, we began to move towards the east. On approaching Homs, the governor sent the Drayhy forty camels loaded with wheat, ten mashlas, and a pelisse of honour. Scheik Ibrahim, taking me aside, thus spoke:—"We are going into the desert, and we have exhausted our merchandise—what is to be done?" I replied, "Give me your orders; I will go secretly to Aleppo and fetch what is needful, and I engage not to go near my family." We agreed that I should rejoin the tribe at Zour, and I went to Aleppo. I lodged in a klan not much frequented, and at a distance from all my acquaintances. I sent a stranger to receive 500 tallaris from M. Lascaris' correspondent. This was rather an excess of caution, for, with my long beard, my Bedouin costume and language, I ran no risk of being recognised. This was proved when I went to buy the merchandise at the bazaar; I there met several of my friends, and I amused myself by treating them with rudeness. But these moments of careless fun were succeeded by others of a very painful nature; I continually passed and repassed the door of my house, hoping to see my brother or my poor mother. The desire to behold her was so strong, that I was twenty times on the point of breaking my word; but the conviction that she would not permit me to return to M. Lascaris braced up my resolution, and, after spending six days at Aleppo, I was compelled to leave, without gaining any intelligence of my relations.

I rejoined the tribe on the banks of the Euphrates, opposite Daival-Chahar, where there still exist the ruins of an ancient town. I found the Bedouins occupied in selling their cattle, or bartering them for merchandise with the pedlars of Aleppo, before crossing the river. They had no idea of the value of specie, and refused to receive gold in payment, being acquainted only with the silver tallaris. They always prefer paying too much or receiving too little, to troubling themselves with fractions. The merchants, who are aware of this foible, take advantage of it with great skill. Besides the bartering, the tribe disposed of produce for 25,000 tallaris, and each Bedouin put his money in his *reel-poke*, so that it might not clink in mounting or dismounting.

A tragical event occurred in passing the Euphrates. A woman and two children, mounted on a camel, were borne away by the current, without its being possible to render them assistance. We found Mesopotamia strewn with the tribes of Bassorah and Bagdad. Their chiefs came daily to compliment the Drayhy on his victory, and to get acquainted with us, for the fame of Scheik Ibrahim had already reached them. They were much pleased with his having advised the war against the Wahabites, whose cupidity and ravages were intolerable. The king of the Wahabites, Ebn Sihoud, was accustomed to send a *mezakie* to number the flock of each individual, and extract the tenth, always selecting the best; he afterwards made a thorough rummage of the tents, from the scheik's down to that of the most poverty-stricken wretch, to find the concealed money, of which he insisted upon having likewise the tithe. This king was especially odious to the Bedouins, because, being extremely bigoted, he

insisted upon their performing ablutions, and saying prayers five times a-day, and inflicted death upon those who failed in these observances. When he compelled a tribe to make war on his account, he was very far from dividing the spoils with it, but took possession of the whole booty, and left to his allies only their dead to mourn. It was after this mode that the Bedouins were becoming by degrees the slaves of the Wahabites, for want of a chief capable of making head against Ebn Sihoud.

We encamped in a district called Nain el Raz, three days' journey from the Euphrates. There the emir, Fares el Harba, chief of the tribe El Harba in the Bassorah country, came to form an offensive and defensive alliance with the Drayhy. When chiefs have an important affair to negotiate, they go out of the camp and hold their conference in secret; this is called *dahra* (a secret meeting). Scheik Ibrahim being called to the *dahra*, showed some distrust of Fares, believing that he was a spy of the Wahabites. But the Drayhy said to him, "You judge of the Bedouins as of the Osmanlis; know that the character of the two people is completely different. Treachery is unknown amongst us." After this declaration, all the scheiks present at the council mutually pledged their words. Scheik Ibrahim took advantage of this disposition of their minds, to propose to them that a treaty should be concluded in writing, which should be signed and sealed by all those who might hereafter enter into the alliance against Ebn Sihoud. This was a great stroke of policy on the part of Scheik Ibrahim for the promotion of his views; and I drew up the engagement in these terms:—

"In the name of the God of Mercy, who will aid us with his power against traitors. We return him thanks for all his benefits; for teaching us the knowledge of good and evil; for making us love liberty and hate slavery. We acknowledge that he is the all-powerful and only God, and that he alone is to be adored.

We declare that we are united together of our own free will and without constraint; that we are all sound in body and mind, and that we have resolved to follow the counsels of Scheik Ibrahim and Abdallah el Kratib, for the advancement of our prosperity, our glory, and our liberty. The articles of our treaty are:—

- 1st, To separate ourselves from the Osmanlis.
- 2d, To make war to the death against the Wahabites.
- 3d, Never to speak of religion.
- 4th, To obey the orders which shall be given by our brother, the illustrious Drayhy, Ebn Chahlan.
- 5th, To bind every scheik to answer for his tribe, and to preserve secrecy as to this engagement.
- 6th, To unite against the tribes which do not subscribe.
- 7th, To assist those who sign the present treaty, and to coalesce against their enemies.
- 8th, To punish with death those who break this alliance.
- 9th, To listen to no calumny against Scheik Ibrahim and Abdallah.

We, the undersigned, accept all the articles of this treaty. We will maintain them in the name of the all-powerful God, and of his prophets Mahomet and Ali, declaring, by these presents, that we are determined to live and die in this holy union.

Dated, signed, sealed.

Done on the 12th November 1811."

All those who were present approved and affixed their names.

Some time after that, being encamped on the fine extensive plain of El Rane, the Drayhy sent couriers to the other tribes, to invite them to sign this treaty. Several chiefs came and set their seals, and those who had none, attached thereto the marks of their fingers. Among these chiefs, I remarked a young man, who from the age of fifteen had governed the tribe El Ollama. Those who compose it are much superior to the other Bedouins. They cultivate poetry, are well

informed, and many of them possess great eloquence. This young scheik related to us the origin of his tribe.

A Bagdad Bedouin enjoyed a high reputation for sagacity. One day, a man came to him, and said, "Four days ago my wife disappeared, and I have sought for her in vain. I have three children, who are weeping for her; I am in despair; assist me with your advice." Aliouy consoled the unfortunate man, told him to remain with his children, and promised to seek out his wife, and bring her, dead or alive. Whilst making the necessary inquiries respecting her person, he learnt that the woman possessed remarkable beauty. He had himself a libertine son, who had been absent some days; suspicion darted across his brain like lightning: he mounted his dromedary, and scoured the desert. He perceived at a distance a flock of eagles; he galloped towards them, and found, at the mouth of a cave, a woman's corpse. He examined the locality, and perceived the footsteps of a camel. At his feet lay a part of a wallet, which mute evidence he picked up, and returned back. When he reached his tent, he saw his son enter, whose torn wallet wanted the very piece he had found. Overwhelmed with the reproaches of his father, the youth avowed his crime. Aliouy cut off his head, sent for the husband, and said to him, "It is my son who has killed your wife: I have punished him, and you are revenged. I have a daughter, whom I give you in marriage." This action of barbarous justice raised still more the reputation of Aliouy. He was chosen chief of his tribe, and from his name came that of El Ollama, which signifies learned, an appellation that the tribe still justifies.

As we advanced towards Bagdad, our treaty was day by day covered with additional signatures. On quitting El Rane, we went to pitch our tents at Ain el Oussada, near the river El Abour. During our residence there, a courier, who had been dispatched by the Drayhy to the Scheik Gaudal, chief of the tribe El Wuaidi, having met with a very bad reception, returned, bearing an offensive message to the Drayhy. His sons wished to take instant vengeance; but Scheik Ibrahim opposed them, representing that there was always time enough for war, and that it was advisable first to attempt persuasion. I proposed to the emir to go myself to Gaudal, to explain the affair to him. He was not inclined to follow this suggestion, saying, "Why should you take the trouble of going to him? Let him come himself, or my sword will compel him!" But at last he yielded to my arguments, and I set off with an escort of two Bedouins. Gaudal received me with expressions of anger; and when he knew who I was, he said to me, "If I had met you anywhere else than in my tent, you would have eaten no more bread. You may be thankful to our customs, which prevent me from slaying you." To which salutation I replied, "Words do not kill. I am your friend, wishing nothing but your welfare, and I come to ask a secret interview. If what I have to say be displeasing to you, I will go back the road I have come." Seeing me thus cool, he got off his seat, called his eldest son, and conducted me out of the tents. We sat down on the ground in a circle, and I thus opened out:—

"Which do you prefer, liberty or slavery? Liberty, without doubt!

Union or discord? Union!

Greatness or degradation? Greatness!

Riches or poverty? Riches!

Conquest or defeat? Conquest!

Good or evil? Good!

All these advantages we seek to secure to you; we wish to enfranchise you from the slavery of the Wahabites, and the tyranny of the Osmanlis, by uniting ourselves together, so as to render us strong and free. Why do you refuse?" He answered—"What you say is plausible, but we will never be strong enough to resist Ebn Sihoud?" "Ebn Sihoud is a man like ourselves," I remarked;—"furthermore, he is a great tyrant, and God never favours oppressors. It is not numbers, but skill, which gives the superiority; it is not the sword which severs the head, but the will which

directs it." Our conference lasted a long time; but I finished by convincing him, and inducing him to accompany me to the Drayhy, who was much pleased with the issue of my negotiation.

We subsequently proceeded to encamp near the mountains of Sangiar, which are inhabited by the worshippers of the evil spirit. The principal tribe of the country, under the command of Hammoud el Tammer, is fixed near the river Sagiour, and does not move about like the others. Hammoud refused for a long time to accede to the alliance. I had a long negotiation with him on the subject; but being at last persuaded to join us, there were many rejoicings and festivals on both sides. Hammoud invited the Drayhy to his tent, and received him with great magnificence. Five camels and thirty sheep were slaughtered for the banquet, which was served on the ground out of the tents. The pewter trays shone as if of silver; each tray was borne by four men, and contained a mountain of rice six feet high, surmounted by an entire sheep, or a quarter of camel. In others of a less size was placed a roasted sheep, or leg of camel. A multitude of small plates, garnished with dates, and other dried fruits, filled up the intervals. Their bread was excellent. They get their wheat from Diarbekir, and their rice from Marbach and Mallatie. When we were seated, or rather squatted, around this feast, we could not distinguish the persons opposite us. The Bedouins of this tribe were much more richly dressed than any we had seen. Their women were very pretty; they wore silk garments, several bracelets and ear-rings of gold and silver, and a ring of gold in the nose.

After consuming a few days in these rejoicings, we continued our journey, and drew towards a river, or rather an arm of the Euphrates, which joins the Tigris. A courier reached us at this place. Mounted on a dromedary, he had cleared in five days a distance which requires thirty in a caravan. He came from the district of Negde, and was sent by a friendly sheik to apprise the Drayhy of the fury of Ebn Sihoud, at the projects and alliances he was forming against him. He despaired of ever seeing the Drayhy in a condition to make head against the storm, and strongly counselled him to conclude peace with the Wahabites. I wrote, in the name of the Drayhy, that he cared no more for Ebn Sihoud than for a grain of mustard-seed, placing his trust in God, who alone disposes of victory. Then, by a diplomatic trick, I gave him to understand that the armies of the Grand Seigneur would support the Drayhy, who was mainly bent on opening the road for the caravans, and delivering Mecca from the dominion of the Wahabites.

On the following day, we crossed the arm of the river in boats, and encamped on the other side, in the vicinity of the tribe El Cherarah, famed for its courage, but also for its ignorance and stubbornness. We had foreseen the extreme difficulty there would be in gaining it, not only on account of its defects, but also on account of the friendship that existed between its chief Abedd, and Abdallah, chief minister of the king Ebn Sihoud. In fact, he refused to enter into the alliance: in this state of matters, the Drayhy judged all negotiation useless, saying, that the sabre would decide between them. The next day, Sahed went to attack Abedd with 500 horsemen. He returned at the end of three days, having taken 140 camels and two valuable mares; there were only eight men killed, but the number of wounded on both sides was great. I was a witness on this occasion to an extraordinary cure. A young man, a relation of Sahed, was brought in, having his head cleaved by the blow of a djerid, seven sabre wounds on the body, and a lance remaining in his side. They proceeded immediately to get the lance out, which was drawn from the opposite side; during the operation, he turned to me, and said, "Don't be alarmed for me, Abdallah, I shall not die 'his time.'" And stretching out his hand, he took my pipe, and commenced smoking as tranquilly as if the nine wounds were in some other body.

At the end of twenty days he was completely cured, and got on horseback as before. The whole treatment

to which he had been subjected, was drinking camel's milk, mixed with fresh butter, and eating some dates, likewise prepared with butter. Every three days his wounds were washed with camel's urine. I doubt whether a European surgeon would have effected so complete a cure, in an equally short space of time, with all his apparatus.

The war was becoming every day more serious. Abedd collected together his allies to surround us, which manœuvre compelled us to go and encamp on the sands of Caffarie, where there was no water. The women were obliged to fetch it from the river in skins, carried on the camels' backs. The prodigious quantity required for watering the flocks rendered this an extremely painful labour. On the third day, the affrighted herds came flying to inform us that 800 camels had been carried off by Abedd's warriors, whilst they were conducting them to the river. The Drayhy, eager to take vengeance for this outrage, ordered the camp to be raised, and a rapid advance made upon the tribe El Chararah, resolved to fall upon it with all his united forces. We marched a day and a night without stopping, and fixed our ten thousand tents half a league from Abedd's camp. A general and murderous battle was inevitable; I ventured to make a last attempt to avert it, if there were yet time.

The Bedouins have a great respect for women, whom they consult in all their proceedings. In the tribe El Cherarah their influence was very extensive, inasmuch, that they in truth ruled all matters, for they have generally much more spirit than their husbands. Arquié, the wife of the Sheik Abedd, was everywhere known as a superior woman, and I determined to go and see her, carrying with me ear-rings, bracelets, necklaces, and other trifles, as presents for her, and attempt to gain her thereby to our interests. Having obtained some secret information essential for my guidance, I reached her tent during the absence of her husband, who was holding a council of war in the camp of an ally. After many compliments and presents, I drew her to speak of the war, the real object of my visit, which I took care, however, not to publish. I expatiated upon the advantages of an alliance with the Drayhy, merely as if it were a common topic of conversation, and in no degree as if I had been authorised to speak to her concerning it; I told her, besides, that the cause of my visit was a very natural curiosity to become acquainted with a female so celebrated, who commanded warriors formidable from their courage, but whose brute force would avail little, if deprived of her superior sagacity. During our conference, her husband returned to the camp; and having learnt my presence, sent to tell Arquié that she should chase away with ignominy the spy who was with her; that the duties of hospitality restraining his arm and preventing him from taking vengeance on the threshold of his own tent, he would not enter until my person was ejected thereout. Arquié gave for answer, with much haughtiness, that I was her guest, and that she would not be dictated to. I arose, and wished to take leave of her, craving her pardon for the embarrassment I had caused her; but she, to all appearance, was disposed to give me good proof that I had not attributed to her an influence which she did not possess, for she forcibly retained me, whilst she went out to have an interview with her husband. She soon returned, followed by Abedd, who treated me with politeness, and invited me to explain to him the intentions of the Drayhy. With the assistance of his wife, I succeeded in gaining his confidence, and before the day was over, it was he who was soliciting me to permit him to accompany me to the Drayhy. But I excused myself from that, intimating to him that I dared not present him to the emir, without preparing him beforehand, as he was much exasperated against him, but that I would go and plead his cause, and shortly transmit him an answer. I thus quitted him, even as eager to enter into the alliance as I myself was to draw him thereto.

In consequence of an invitation from the Drayhy, Abedd came in a few days to attach his seal at the foot

of the treaty, and to exchange the camels which had been reciprocally taken during the war. This entangled business being thus brought to an agreeable termination, we left the sands to proceed to the territory of Atterié, three hours from the Tigris, near the ruins of the castle El Attera, where we encamped for eight days, the pasturages being very abundant. Having refreshed our flocks, we resumed our route towards the East.

One day we met a Bedouin mounted on a fine black dromedary. The sheiks saluted him with an air of interest, and asked him what had been the issue of his melancholy business of the preceding year. I got an account of his history, which I found sufficiently interesting to insert in my journal. Aloyan (such was the name of the Bedouin), when hunting gazelles, came to a piece of ground, where broken lances, bloody sabres, and extended corpses, gave indications of a recent fray. A plaintive sound, which fell faintly on his ear, drew him towards a heap of bodies, amidst which a young Arab still breathed. Aloyan hastened to afford him succour, hoisted him on his dromedary, conducted him to his tent, and, by his affectionate care, restored him to life. After four months' convalescence, Faress (thus was the wounded man designated) spoke of his departure, but Aloyan said to him, "If we must really part, I will conduct thee to thy tribe, and will leave thee there with sorrow; but if thou wilt stay with me, thou shalt be as my brother; my mother shall be thy mother, and my wife thy sister. Reflect upon my proposal, and give me thy calm decision." "Oh! my benefactor," answered Faress, "where shall I find words like those that you address to me! Without you, I should not be amongst the living at this hour; my flesh would be in the entrails of birds of prey, and my bones ground in the jaws of ferocious beasts; since you indeed wish it, therefore, I will remain with you, but it shall be to serve you all my life." A motive of a very different nature, which he did not feel bold enough to avow, decided Faress in this resolution, to wit, the love which he was beginning to entertain for Hafza, the wife of Aloyan, who had attended him. This love was reciprocal.

One day, Aloyan, who had no suspicion, left Faress to escort his mother, wife, and two children, to a new encampment, whilst he himself proceeded to the chase. Faress had not strength enough to resist this disastrous opportunity. He placed the tent upon a camel, and therewith the mother and children, telling them to proceed onwards, and he would follow shortly with Hafza on horseback. But the old woman looked long in vain; Hafza came not; Faress had gone off with her, on a mare of singular swiftness, to his own tribe. In the evening Aloyan arrived, wearied with his hunt; he sought for his tent amongst those of the tribe, but saw it not. The old mother had been unable to pitch it alone, and he found her seated on the ground with the two children. "And where is Hafza?" said he. "I have not seen either Hafza or Faress," she replied; "I have waited for them since the morning." Then for the first time the truth flashed across his mind; and having assisted his mother to set the tent, he went off on his black dromedary, and continued on for two days until he came to the tribe of Faress. He stopped at the entrance to the camp, with an old woman who lived alone. "Why don't you go to the sheik?" said she; "there is a festival to-day; Faress Ebn Mehdi, who had been left for dead on the field of battle, is returned, having brought with him a beautiful woman, and this evening the marriage is to be celebrated." Aloyan dissembled, and waited until night. When all were buried in sleep, he crept into the tent of Faress, cut off his head by a blow of his sabre, and carried the trunk out of the camp; then returning to the tent, he found his wife asleep, whom he awakened, saying to her, "It is Aloyan who calls thee; follow me." She arose in alarm and said to him, "Fool that thou art! Faress and his brothers will slay thee; fly!" "Traitor!" cried Aloyan, "what have I done that thou thusreatest me? Have I ever contradicted thee? Have I ever addressed to thee the slightest reproach? Hast thou for-

gotten all the affection I have exhibited for thee? Hast thou forgotten thy children? Come, arise, invoke God, follow me, and curse the devil who has made thee commit this folly." But Hafza, far from being moved by the softness of Aloyan, repeated to him, "Get out, fly, or I will give the alarm, and call Faress to slay thee." Thereupon, seeing all was in vain, he seized upon her, gagged her mouth, and, in spite of all resistance, dragged her on his dromedary, and tarried not until he was beyond the reach of the voice. Then, placing her behind him, he continued his journey at a slower pace.

At day-break the corpse of Faress, and the disappearance of the woman, put the camp into a tumult; the father and brothers of Faress pursued and overtook Aloyan, who defended himself against them with heroic courage. Hafza, getting free from her bonds, joined the assailants, and cast stones at her husband, one of which struck him on the head, and made him stagger; but although covered with wounds, Aloyan succeeded in beating down his foes. He killed the two brothers and disarmed the father, saying that it would be disgraceful for him to kill an old man; so, returning him his horse, he told him to get home as fast as he could. He then once more seized upon his wife, and proceeded to his tribe without exchanging a single word with her. He called together all his relations, and, placing Hafza in the midst, he said to her, "Give thyself an account of all that has passed; I will be guided by the judgment of thy father and thy brother." Hafza told the truth; and her father, full of indignation, drew his sabre, and laid her prostrate at his feet.

Having now arrived within four hours of Bagdad, M. Lascaris secretly resorted there to see the French consul, M. Adrien de Corrençé, and to negotiate with him for the advance of a large sum of money.

On the following day, after passing the Tigris, at Machad, we fixed our quarters near the river El Ca-houn, when we learnt that a fierce war had sprung up between the Bedouins who took part for or against our alliance. Scheik Ibrahim urged the Drayhy not to linger, but to join our allies as quickly as possible. Consequently, we proceeded to encamp near several small springs at El Darghoun, twenty hours from Bagdad, and the following day we traversed a high chain of mountains. We had filled our skins, which was a necessary precaution, as we had a march of twelve hours to make over burning sands, where neither water nor pasturage was to be found. When we reached the frontiers of Persia, we met a messenger from the tribe El Achigha, who bore a letter from the chief Dehass, who claimed the assistance "of the father of heroes, the chief of most redoubtable warriors, the puissant Drayhy," against his enemies, who were 15,000 tents strong. We were six days from this tribe. The Drayhy, issuing his orders to continue the march, cleared the distance in three days, giving us no interval of rest, not even for meals. The chief part of the fatigue, in this forced march, fell upon the women, who had to make bread and milk the camels without halting.

The arrangement of their locomotive cookery was curious enough. At fixed distances were women occupied upon it without intermission; the first, mounted on a camel loaded with wheat, had in front of her a hand-mill. The wheat once ground, she passed the meal to her neighbour, who was occupied in kneading it with water, contained in leathern bottles suspended down the sides of the camel. The paste was passed to a third female, who baked it in thin slices on a chafing-dish, with wood and straw. These slices were distributed by her to the division of warriors whom it was her province to feed, and who came every minute to secure their portions. Other women walked by the side of the she-camels to draw the milk into *cadahs* (wooden bowls holding four quarts). These were handed about from mouth to mouth to satisfy thirst. The horses fed as they went, having sacks hung to their necks. When any one wished to sleep, he stretched his full length on his camel, his feet fixed in the bags for fear of falling. The slow and even movement of the camel induces sleep, like the rocking of a cradle, and I never slept better

than in this journey. The wife of the Emir Faress gave birth to a son in her haudag, who was called Harma, after the place we were passing when he came into the world. Harma is the point of junction of the Euphrates and Tigris. We shortly afterwards joined three tribes; El Harba, El Suallemé, and El Abdellé. We had 7000 tents when Delass came to meet us. This imposing array infused fresh courage into us; we gave him a magnificent supper, after which he put his seal to our treaty.

The enemy was still at a day's distance from us. Our horses and men having great occasion for rest, the Drayhy ordered a halt of two days; but our foes were not disposed to accord us so desirable a truce. As soon as they heard of our arrival, they put themselves in marching order, and the next day 30,000 men were encamped at an hour's space from us. The Drayhy caused his army to make an instant advance to the banks of the river, in the fear that they purposed to intercept us from water, and we took up a position near the village of El Hutta.

On the following day, the Drayhy sent a conciliatory letter to the chiefs of the five tribes* which had come to attack us, but this manoeuvre was attended with no success; their reply was a declaration of war, the style of which proved clearly that our intentions had been misrepresented, and that these chiefs acted upon some extraordinary impulse.

Sheikh Ibrahim proposed to send me to them, with presents, to endeavour to come to an explanation. My embassies had succeeded so well previously, that I accepted the mission with pleasure, and departed with a solitary guide; but we had scarcely reached the tent of Mahdi, who was in the van, than the advanced guard of the Bedouins fell upon us like wild beasts, plundered us of our presents and clothes, clapped irons on our feet, and left us naked on the burning sand. It was in vain that I supplicated for permission to explain my mission; they threatened me with immediate death if I did not hold my tongue. In a few minutes I saw the perfidious Absi, the pedlar, coming towards me. I then understood the cause of the unheard-of treatment with which I had been visited; he had travelled from tribe to tribe to raise up enemies against us. The sight of him roused me to such a pitch of anger that I felt my prostrated courage revive, and found myself in a state to die bravely, if I could not live to avenge myself. He came up to me, and, spitting on my face, cried out, "Infidel dog!—in what manner dost thou wish me to separate thy soul from thy body?" "My soul," I observed in reply, "is not in thy power; my days are numbered by the great God; if they are now to finish, it is a small matter how, but if I have still to live, thou hast no power to make me die." He retired in order to irritate the Bedouins against me, and with such effect that they all, men and women, came to look at and ill use me; some spat on my face, others threw sand in my eyes, and several pricked me with their djerids—in a word, I remained twenty-four hours without eating or drinking, enduring a martyrdom impossible to describe. Towards the evening of the second day, a young man, named Jahour, came up to me, and drove off the children who were tormenting me. I had already taken notice of him; for amongst all those whom I had seen that day, he alone had not maltreated me. He offered to bring me some bread and water at the fall of night. "Hunger and thirst are of little moment to me," I answered him, with thanks; "but if you can extricate me from this condition, I will reward you generously." He promised to attempt it; and, in fact, in the middle of the night, he came back with the key of my irons, which he had had address enough to procure whilst the chiefs were at supper. He unlocked them without noise; and, not allowing any time to be lost, I regained our camp as fast as I could run. Every

body was asleep in the camp, with the exception of the four negroes on guard at the entrance to the Drayhy's tent. They uttered a loud shout when they saw me, and hastened to awake their master, who came out with Sheikh Ibrahim. They embraced me with tears, and liberally recompensed my deliverer. The Drayhy was grievously afflicted at the treatment I had suffered; and so gross a violation of the public law excited his indignation. He gave immediate orders for preparations for the fight; and at the rising of the sun we saw that our enemies were as ready as ourselves. During the first day, there was no decided advantage on either side. Auad, chief of the tribe Suallemé, lost his mare, for which he had refused 25,000 piastres. All the Bedouins participated in his affliction, and the Drayhy gave him one of his best horses, which, however, was far inferior to the filly he had lost. The next day, the battle raged with more virulence than the preceding one, and our loss was greater than the enemy's. We were obliged to act with extreme caution, having only 15,000 men to oppose to them. Forty of our party fell into the power of the enemy, whilst we made only fifteen prisoners: but Hamed, the son of the chief Saker, was amongst them. The captives were put in irons on both sides.

After these two days' fighting, there was a tacit truce for three days, during which the armies remained in presence of each other, without any hostile demonstration. On the third day, the Sheikh Saker, accompanied by a single follower, came to our camp. He was uneasy as to the fate of his son, a courageous youth, who was adored by his father and the Bedouins of his tribe; he came to offer a ransom for him. Hamed had been very well treated by us, and I had myself dressed his wounds. The Drayhy received Saker with great distinction. After the usual compliments, the latter spoke of the war, expressing his astonishment at the ardour of the Drayhy for this coalition against the Wahabites, and intimating that he could not credit such disinterestedness, but that there must be secret motives or personal views. "You cannot take it amiss," he added, "if I do not join you, without knowing the object proposed. Put me in your confidence, and I will second you with all my power." We replied to him, that we were not in the habit of admitting to our secrets those of whose friendship we were not well assured, but that if he would sign our treaty, nothing would be concealed from him. He then asked to be informed touching the terms thereof; and, after hearing the different articles read, he appeared well contented with them, assuring us that matters had been represented in a very contrary light; and he then related to us the calumnies that Absi had spread concerning us. He concluded by affixing his seal to the foot of the treaty, and afterwards pressed us to communicate to him the end that we designed to attain. Sheikh Ibrahim informed him, that our intention was to open a passage from the coasts of Syria to the frontiers of India, for an army of 100,000 men, under the command of a potent conqueror, who would enfranchise the Bedouins from the yoke of the Turks, restore to them the sovereignty over the whole country, and hand over to them the treasures of India. He assured him that there was nothing to lose, but every thing to gain, by the execution of this project, the success of which depended on the union of forces, and unanimity of will. He undertook that their camels would be hired, at a very high price, for the carrying supplies for this huge army, and opened to his view the commerce of these vast countries, as inevitably leading to an inexhaustible source of wealth.

Saker entered completely into our views, but it behoved us further to explain to him, that the Wahabite* might render our plans abortive, as his religious fanaticism would unquestionably oppose the passage of a Christian army, and his ambition for dominion, which had already rendered him master of Yemen, Mecca, and Medina, would inflame him with a desire for Syria, where the Turks were unable to offer any serious re-

* The tribes were El Fedhay, chief Douahry; El Medhann, chief Saker Ebn Hamed; El Sabha, chief Mouah Ebn Hamed; Mouayégé, chief Bagines; and Melayédé, chief Amer Ebn Noggica.

* Ebn Sile el, the King of the Wahabites, is often thus called.

assistance; besides, there was another consideration, that a great maritime power, the foe of that which we favoured, would undoubtedly form an alliance with him, and send troops by sea, to cut us off from the road through the desert. After much argument, in which Saker exhibited an equal portion of judgment and sagacity, he gave in entirely to our propositions, and pledged himself to use all his influence over the other tribes. It was settled that he should be the chief of the Arabs in the country we now occupied, as the Drayhy was of those of Syria and Mesopotamia, and he bound himself to unite, under his orders, the different tribes in the course of the next year, whilst we pursued our route; and he promised, that, upon our return, every thing would be arranged. We then separated, delighted with each other, and we loaded his son with presents, and set the other prisoners at liberty. On his side, he sent back our forty horsemen. The next day, Saker wrote to us that Mohdi and Douakry would no longer oppose our designs, and that they were going to confer with Bargiass, three hours from the camp. Accordingly, they struck their tents, and we did the same; for the congregating of so great a number of people and animals had covered the earth with filth, and rendered our sojourn in that spot quite intolerable.

We proceeded to encamp six hours off at Maytal el Elbed, where we remained eight days. Saker came to visit us, and it was agreed that he alone should take charge of the union of the Bedouins in these districts, whilst we returned into Syria, lest that, by abandoning our first conquest for too long a time, our enemies should take advantage of our absence to embroil our affairs, and detach the tribes from our alliance. Besides, spring was already advanced, and it behoved us to make haste, for fear the pasturages of Syria and Mesopotamia should be occupied by others. We therefore deferred to the following year the project of pushing our progress to the frontiers of India. By that time Saker would have an opportunity of preparing the people to second our exertions, for, as he said, "we uproot a tree by one of its branches."

A few days' march reconducted us through Mesopotamia. We took two days to pass the Euphrates, near Mansouri, and clear the desert called El Hamad. We encamped in a place where there was no water fit to drink. It is got only by making deep holes, but when obtained it can be used only by the beasts, for men cannot drink it. This spot is called Halib el Dow, because there is nothing but milk to satisfy thirst.

From there we went to El Sarha, which was abundantly provided with water and pasturage. We hoped to make amends for our late privation, but a singular circumstance gave us a very speedy disgust. The soil there is covered with an herb named *el khraffour*, which the camels eat with avidity, and which possesses the property of inebriating them to such an extent as to render them mad. They run to the right and left, crushing all that they encounter, overturning the tents, and pursuing the men. During forty-eight hours no person could close an eye; the Bedouins were incessantly employed in calming the fury of the camels, and getting the mastery over them. An actual war would have been preferable to this continual strife with animals, whose prodigious strength, increased by delirium, exposed us to incalculable dangers. But it seemed that the triumph of skill over force had great charms for these children of nature; for when I went to the Drayhy to deplore the state of confusion in which this novel revolution kept us, he did nothing but laugh, and assured me that it was one of the greatest amusements of the Bedouins. Whilst we were speaking, a camel of astonishing height advanced right upon us, its head aloft, and tossing up the dust with its broad hoofs. The Drayhy, seizing one of the stakes of his tent, waited for the furious animal, and lent it a violent blow on the skull. The wood broke, and the camel turned away to exercise its ravages elsewhere. A dispute thereupon arose as to which was the strongest, the camel or the sheik. The latter argued that if the stake had not snapped, he would have broken his adversary's head;

but the witnesses asserted the superiority of the animal, because it had shivered the obstacle which was opposed to it. As for me, I decided that they were both of equal strength, since neither had been vanquished. This judgment excited the laughter of the whole auditory.

The next day we raised the camp. A messenger from Saker overtook us on the road, bringing us an account of his bad success in the negotiation with Bargiass. Absi, the peillar, engrossed all his favour, and animated him more and more against us. He had decided upon joining Mehanna, and uniting himself with the Wahabites, who were to send an army to destroy us. The Drayhy returned for answer, that he need not trouble himself, for God was stronger than they, and would cause the righteous side to triumph. After this interruption, we continued our journey.

Shortly afterwards, we learnt that the tribe El Calfa was encamped at Zualma. The Drayhy judged it of importance to be assured of the co-operation of that powerful and courageous tribe. Its sheik, Giassem, was an old friend of the Drayhy; but he could neither read nor write, and therefore it was dangerous to address a letter to him which might be read by a Turk, which circumstance would give an essential derangement to our affairs, as we had learnt to our cost by the example of the writer Absi. It was therefore I once more who was dispatched to visit him. I went off with an escort of six men, all mounted on dromedaries. At the end of two days we arrived at the place designated; but, to our great disgust, we found that the camp had been broken up, and left no trace whither it had gone. We passed the night without eating or drinking, and held a consultation on the following day as to what was to be done. The most pressing emergency was to supply the want of water, for, as is well known, thirst is far more insupportable than hunger, and it was absurd to imagine that we should fall in with a spring and the tribe at the same time. We wandered three entire days, without finding either water or food. My palate was so parched, that I could no longer move my tongue, or utter an articulate sound. I had exhausted all the means of cheating thirst, by putting pebbles and leaden balls into my mouth, and my face became black, and my strength altogether forsook me. Suddenly my companions shouted out with ecstasy, "Ghoub el Ghamin!" and rushed forward. These men, hardened to fatigue, sustain privations in a manner perfectly inconceivable, and they were far from the deplorable state to which I was reduced. Seeing them go off, the irritability of my nerves, produced by extreme exhaustion, made me despair of ever reaching the well, in which it occurred to me they would not leave a single drop, and I threw myself on the ground, and wept. Seeing me in this state, they came back, and encouraged me to make an effort to follow them. When arrived at the brink of the well, one of them, leaning on the parapet, drew out his sabre, saying, that he would strike off the head of any one who ventured to come nearer. "Be guided by my experience," he added, "or you will perish." His authoritative tone awed us, and we obeyed in silence. He called us one by one, and made us bend over the edge of the well, to breathe first of all the humid air. Then he drew a small quantity of water, and touched our lips with his fingers dipped in it, beginning with me. By degrees he allowed us to drink half a cup, then a whole cup, and thus continued for three hours administering it to us in rations, at the end of which time he addressed us as follows:—"Now, you may drink away, you run no risk; but if you had not followed my directions, you would have been all dead, as it usually happens to those who, after suffering thirst a long time, slake it without caution."

We passed the night in this place continually drinking, as much in the way of a substitute for food as to appease our thirst; and the more we poured down our throats, the more we wished to pour down. The next day we mounted on a height to have a more extended

* The name of a well-known well in the desert.

view, but, alas! no object presented itself to our vision in this immense desert. At last, however, one of the Bedouins thought he descried something in the distance, and declared that it was a *haudag*, covered with scarlet cloth, and borne on a very lofty camel. His comrades saw nothing; but having no more flattering symptom to look after, we turned our eyes in the direction he pointed out, and, in fact, shortly afterwards we perceived a great tribe, and had a distinct view of the *haudag*, which had served us as a beacon. Very fortunately, it was the tribe we were in search of.

Giassem gave us a civil reception, and endeavoured to make us forget our fatigues. Having finished matters with him, he dictated a letter for the Drayhy, in which he bound himself to place his men and goods at his disposal, saying, that the alliance between them should be one of the very closest, on account of their old friendship. I departed, guarding well this important document, but much disturbed at the news he gave me of the arrival of a princess, the daughter of the king of England, in Syria, where she displayed a regal luxury, and where she had been received with the highest honours by the Turks. She had loaded Mehamma el Fadel with magnificent presents, and had been escorted by him to Palmyra, where she had distributed her largesses with profusion, and secured a formidable party amongst the Bedouins, who had proclaimed her their queen.* Scheik Ibrahim, to whom I communicated this intelligence, was struck dumb with dismay, as he doubted not it was an intrigue which would blast all his projects.

The Drayhy, taking notice of our chagrin, told us not to be cast down, as sacks of gold might be scattered from Hama to the portals of India, without detaching any friendly tribe from the solemn alliance which it had contracted. "The word of a Bedouin," he subjoined, "is sacred; so pursue your designs, without disturbing yourselves about any reports. As for myself, I have fixed my plan for the campaign; I shall depart for the Horan, in order to keep an eye over the proceedings of Ebn Sihoud, for he alone is to be feared by us; I will afterwards return, and encamp in the neighbourhood of Homs."

Scheik Ibrahim, having no money or goods, decided upon sending me without delay to Coricatin, whence I should dispatch a messenger to Aleppo to bring a *heap of tallaris*. I set off in a joyous mood, enchanted with the idea of seeing my friends, and of taking some repose amongst them for a short time. The first day of my journey passed over without any occurrence worthy to be recorded; but the next day, about four in the afternoon, when at a place called Cankoun, I fell into the midst of a tribe which I believed our friends, but which I found to be that of Bargiass. It was too late to go back; so putting the best face on the matter I could, I went straight up to the tent of the scheik, preceded by my negro Fodda; but scarcely had he put his foot on the ground, than he was massacred before my eyes, and I perceived with alarm that all their swords were raised above me. My affright was so great, that I know not what followed. I only recollect having cried out, "Hold! I claim the protection of the daughter of Hedat!" after which I fell down in a swoon. When I opened my eyes, I was lying in a tent, surrounded by a score of women, who were striving to restore me, by holding burnt hair, vinegar, and onions, to my nostrils, whilst others were deluging me with water, and besmearing my parched and contracted lips with melted butter. As soon as I had come to my senses, the wife of Bargiass took hold of my hand, and said, "Never fear, Abdallah; you are with the daughter of Hedat; no one can injure you."

Shortly afterwards, Bargiass having presented himself at the door of the tent, to make, as he said, his peace with me, she exclaimed, "By the head of my father, you shall not come in until Abdallah is completely cured!"

I remained three days under the tent of Bargiass, tended in the most affectionate manner by his wife, who in the meantime negotiated for a reconciliation with her husband. I was so enraged at his brutality, that I had great difficulty in pardoning him. However, after some delay, I consented to forget the past, on condition that he signed the treaty with the Drayhy. We then embraced and swore fraternity. Bargiass gave me a negro, saying at the same time, "I have sacrificed your silver, and I give you a jewel in return." This was a pun on the names of the two negroes, *Fodda*, silver, and *Giauhar*, a jewel. He afterwards made ready a feast, in honour of our reconciliation. In the midst of the repast, a courier from the Drayhy arrived at full gallop, bearing to Bargiass a declaration of war, in terms by no means flattering. It ran thus: "Oh! thou traitor, who violatest the sacred law of the Bedouins; thou infamous fellow, who slayest thy guests; thou black-faced Osmanli; learn that all the blood of thy tribe will be an insufficient sacrifice for that of my dear Abdallah! Prepare for the combat; my steed shall enjoy no rest until I have destroyed the last of thy race!" I instantly departed, to prevent bloodshed, and to inform Scheik Ibrahim and the Drayhy of the true state of the case. I cannot describe the joy with which I was received; they could not believe their eyes, so miraculous did they conceive my safety. I gave them an account of all that had passed.

On the following day I resumed the route to Coricatin, in which place I remained twenty days, waiting the return of the messenger I had sent to Aleppo. I had great need of this repose, and of the opportunity it afforded of getting my clothes renewed, as they were all hanging in rags. I was compelled to tarry longer than I wished, for news came that an army of Wahabites had burst into the desert of Damascus, and plundered several villages, massacring the men and children, and sparing nothing but the women. The Scheik of Coricatin, in no condition to make active resistance, shut the gates of the town, forbade any one leaving, and awaited the course of events in fear and trembling. We soon learnt that the enemy had attacked Palmyra, and that the inhabitants, having retired into the enclosure of the temple, had defended themselves with success, inasmuch that the Wahabites, being unable to force their defences, had contented themselves with killing the camel-herds and carrying off the flocks. From there they had gone to pillage the village of Arack, and had spread themselves in the neighbouring district. This disastrous intelligence gave me much alarm for the fate of my messenger, who, nevertheless, arrived safe and sound with Scheik Ibrahim's money. He had taken refuge for some time in Sadad, whose inhabitants, having just paid a heavy contribution, had nothing to fear for the moment. I availed myself of this circumstance; and putting off my Bedouin dress, I attired myself as a Christian of Sadad, and gained that village, where I obtained tidings of the Drayhy, who was encamped at Ghandat el Cham with the tribe of Bargiass. I joined him as quickly as possible; and I learnt with much vexation that a formidable coalition had been formed between Mehamma el Fadel and the tribe of the Samareand country. They had entered into plots with the governors of Homs and Hama, thus uniting both Turks and Bedouins against us. In this critical situation I called to mind our friend Soleyman-Pacha, and I induced Scheik Ibrahim to go to Damascus and hold a conference with him. We immediately departed, and stopped at the house of the pacha's prime minister, Hagim, who told us the name of the pretended English princess, and also that it was by means of Lady Stanhope's presents that Mehamma had secured a powerful party amongst the Turks. These details confirmed our suspicion that England, being apprised of our projects, had subsidised the Wahabites in one quarter, whilst in another she strove to unite the Syrian Bedouins with the Turks, by the influence of Lady Stanhope. Our meeting with an Englishman, who took the name of Scheik Ibrahim, at the house of M. Chabassan, strengthened these conjectures. He endeavoured to question

* This pretended princess was no other than Lady Hester Stanhope.

us, but we were too much on our guard. Having obtained from Soleyman-Pacha what we desired, we hastened to regain our tribe.

The courage of the Drayhy did not slacken, for he assured us he would make head against the strongest party. The *bouyouirdi* which Soleyman-Pacha had granted us, imported that the governors of Homs and Hama were to respect his faithful friend and well-beloved son, the Drayhy Ebn Challan, who was to be strictly obeyed in his character of supreme chief of the desert of Damascus, and that all alliances against him were contrary to the wish of the Sublime Porte. Fortified with this document, we advanced towards Hama; and a few days afterwards, Scheik Ibrahim received an invitation from Lady Hester Stanhope to pay a visit to her, as well as his wife, Madame Lascaris, who had remained at Acre. This invitation vexed him the more, that he had for three years shunned letting his wife know any thing about him, in order that she might not learn the place of his abode, or his intimacy with the Bedouins. As it was, however, necessary to give some answer to Lady Stanhope, he wrote to her, that he would do himself the honour of waiting upon her, as soon as circumstances permitted; and at the same time he dispatched a courier to his wife, to instruct her to decline the invitation on her part; but in this latter step he was too late. Madame Lascaris, being uneasy as to the safety of her husband, had immediately proceeded to Hama to visit Lady Stanhope, hoping through her to get some trace of him. M. Lascaris thus found himself compelled to go and join her.

During these transactions, Mehanna came nearer and nearer, believing himself sure of the co-operation of the Osmanlis. The Drayhy, judging that the proper time was come to produce the pacha's *bouyouirdi*, sent his son Saher to Homs and Hama, where he was received with the greatest distinction. On seeing the order which he bore with him, the two governors placed their troops at his disposal, declaring Mehanna a traitor, for having called the Wahabites, the most bitter enemies of the Turks.

Lady Hester Stanhope having invited Saher to visit her, loaded him with presents, both for himself and his wife and mother, presented each horseman in his suite with a mashlah and a pair of boots, and announced her intention of shortly visiting his tribe. M. Lascaris did not derive so agreeable return from his residence under her roof. Lady Stanhope having vainly tried by adroit cross-questioning, to get from him some information as to his relations with the Bedouins, assumed at last an imperious tone, which gave M. Lascaris a pretext to break with her. He sent back his wife to Acre, and quitted Lady Stanhope in complete enmity.

Mehanna prepared to commence the struggle; but perceiving that the Drayhy gave no symptoms of fear at his approach, he judged it prudent to be assured of a reinforcement of Osmanlis, and therefore sent his son Fares to Homs, to claim the execution of the governor's promise; but he, instead of investing Fares with the command of a body of troops, had him well ironed and thrown into prison. Mehanna, dismayed at this disastrous state of things, saw himself fall in one moment from the supreme command, to the painful and humiliating necessity, not only of submitting himself to the Drayhy, but also of soliciting his protection against the Turks. The poor old man, dumbfounded at this unexpected stroke, was compelled to implore the mediation of Assaf, Scheik of Sadding, who promised him to negotiate a peace. Accordingly, he accompanied him with 100 troopers; and leaving him with his escort, at some distance from the camp, he advanced alone to the tent of the Drayhy, who received him as a friend, but refused for some time to entertain the submission of Mehanna. We then interposed in his favour, Scheik Ibrahim thus repaying him the hospitality with which he had received us on our first arrival in the desert. Saher, also, kissing his father's hand twice, joined his solicitations to ours. The Drayhy having at last yielded, the chief men of the tribe put themselves in order to proceed and meet Mehanna, according to the respect due to his age

and rank. When he had dismounted, the Drayhy made him sit in the place of honour, in the corner of the tent, and ordered coffee to be brought. Then Mehanna, rising up, said, "I will not drink thy coffee until we shall be completely reconciled, and have buried the seven stones." At these words, the Drayhy also rose; they both drew their sabres, and gave them to each other to kiss, after which they embraced, as well as all the spectators. Mehanna then made a hole about a foot deep in the ground with his lance; and selecting seven small stones, he addressed himself to the Drayhy thus: "In the name of the God of peace, for thy guarantee and mine, we will thus bury our discord for ever." As they threw the stones into the hole, the two scheiks covered them up by pushing in the earth with their feet, whilst the women uttered deafening shouts of joy. This ceremony (which is called *hasnat*) being finished, they resumed their seats, and coffee was served. From that moment it was not permitted to recall the past, or to speak of the war. I was assured that a reconciliation, to be regular, should always be made in this manner. After a plentiful repast, I read over the treaty, to which Mehanna, and four other chiefs of tribes, appended their seals.* Their united forces amounted to 7600 tents, and what was much more important, the Drayhy became, by this junction, the chief of all the Syrian Bedouins, amongst whom there did not remain a single enemy. Saher went to Homs to solicit the freedom of Fares, whom he brought with him, decked in a pelisse of honour, to take part in the general rejoicings; after which the tribes separated, and occupied the whole country from the Hوران to Aleppo.

We now only waited for the end of summer to take our departure for the East, so as to bring the affairs we had commenced in the preceding year, with the tribes of Bagdad and Bassorah, to a successful issue. This interval of calm and leisure was taken up with preparations for the marriage between Ghahar, son of Fares, chief of the tribe El Harbat, and Sabha, daughter of Bargiass, the most beautiful maid in the desert. I took an especial interest in the affair, as I had known the bride whilst residing in her mother's tent. Fares begged the Drayhy to accompany him to the camp of Bargiass, to make the demand of marriage. The chief men of the tribe, in their richest clothes, escorted them. We arrived at the tent of Bargiass without any one coming to meet us. Bargiass did not even rise to receive us, such being the usage in similar circumstances, as the least appearance of eagerness would be looked upon as improper. After some moments of silence, the Drayhy, opening his mouth, said, "Why do you give us so poor a welcome? If you will not give us any thing to eat, we will return home." During this period, Sabha, having withdrawn into the part of the tent reserved to the women, scrutinised her admirer through an opening in the cloth. Before entering upon the negotiation, the young girl is called upon to give a sign that she likes the man who aspires to her hand; for if, after the secret survey of which I have spoken, she makes known to her mother that he does not please her, things go no farther. But on this occasion, it was a handsome young man, of noble and haughty mien, who presented himself, and Sabha made the signal of consent to her mother, who then answered the Drayhy, "You are very welcome! Not only will we give you to eat most cheerfully, but we will also grant whatever you ask." To which gracious announcement the Drayhy replied, "We are come to ask your daughter in marriage for the son of our friend; what do you wish for her dowry?" Bargiass replied, "100 nakas,† five horses of the Negle breed, 500 ewes, three negroes, and three negroesses to wait upon Sabha; and for the bridal wardrobe, a mashlah embroidered with gold, a robe of Damascus silk, ten bracelets of amber and coral, and a pair of yellow boots." The Drayhy made some obser-

* These chiefs were, Zarnak Ebn Fahrer, chief of the tribe El Gioullan; Ghahar Ebn Meghich, chief of the tribe El Ghahma; Ghaleb Ebn Ramboun, chief of the tribe El Ballahiss; and Fares Ebn Nedged, chief of the tribe El Masekher.

† She camels of the best breed.

uations upon the exorbitancy of this demand, saying, "Thou wishest surely to prove the Arab proverb, *If you are not willing to marry your daughter, demand a high price for her*. Be more reasonable, if thou desirest this marriage to take place."

After a discussion, the dowry was fixed at fifty nakas, two horses, 200 ewes, a negro, and a negress. The wardrobe remained such as Bargiass had demanded; and they even added to it by giving mashlas and yellow boots to the mother and several others in the family. After having written down the terms of the convention, I read them aloud. Afterwards the assistants recited the prayer *Fatiha*, the *pater noster* of the Moslems, which imparts, as it were, a sanction to the contract, and then they served round camel's milk, as they would have served lemonade in a town of Syria. After the collation, the young men mounted on horseback to pursue the games of the djerid* and other sports. Giarah distinguished himself, in order to gratify his bride, who observed, with great satisfaction, his agility and gracefulness. We separated at the fall of night, every one having his mind full of the preparations for the nuptials.

At the end of three days, the dowry, or rather the price, of Sabha, was in readiness. An immense concourse went forth in the following order:—At the head marched a horseman, with a white flag at the end of his lance, who cried out, "I bear the stainless honour of Bargiass." After him were camels, adorned with garlands of flowers and leaves, accompanied by their conductors; then the negro on horseback, richly dressed, surrounded by men on foot, singing popular airs. Behind them rode a troop of warriors, armed with muskets, which they kept constantly discharging. A woman followed, carrying a large dish of fire, into which she threw incense. Then came the milk ewes, conducted by shepherds, singing as Chibouk, the brother of Antar, did nearly 2000 years before; for the manners of the Bedouins never alter. After them appeared the negress on horseback, surrounded by 200 women on foot; this group was not the least noisy, for the shouts of joy, and the marriage songs of the Arab females, are more shrill than can be imagined. The cavalcade was closed by a camel, bearing the bridal wardrobe; the mashlas, embroidered with gold, were extended on all sides, and completely covered the animal; the yellow boots hung around his flanks, and the jewels, arranged in festoons, and displayed with art, formed a most brilliant spectacle. A youth, of the most distinguished family, was seated on the camel, crying out, with a loud voice, "May we always be victorious! May the fire of our enemies be for ever extinguished!" Other boys accompanied him, chanting, "Amen." As for myself, I ran from one spot to another to enjoy the sight more fully.

On this occasion Bargiass came to meet us, with the horsemen and women of his tribe. On the junction of the two cavalcades, the shouts and songs became absolutely deafening, and the horses, darting on all sides, shortly enveloped us in a cloud of dust. When the presents were displayed, and ranged in order around the tent of Bargiass, coffee was made in a huge cauldron, and each took some, whilst waiting for the feast.

Ten camels, thirty sheep, and a prodigious quantity of rice, formed the groundwork of the repast, after which a second cauldron of coffee was emptied. The dowry being approved of, the ceremony was concluded by a fresh recital of the prayer, and it was agreed that Giarah should come and take his bride in three days. Before departing, I went to the women's apartment to introduce Sheikh Ibrahim to a more particular acquaintance with the wife of Bargiass, and to again thank her for the care she had taken of me. She replied that she was disposed to increase my obligations to her, by giving me her niece in marriage; but Sheikh Ibrahim declared to the next year my profiting by her good wishes in this respect.

On the eve of the day fixed for the nuptials, a repast

came that a formidable army of Wahabites had appeared in the desert. Couriers were dispatched to all the tribes to order three or four of them to join together, so that they might be ready to receive the enemy at all points. Little was now wanting for the nuptials to be ushered by a fight to the death, instead of the mock battle, which is usual on such events.

The Drayhy and the other chiefs went forth, at an early hour, with 1000 horsemen and 500 women, to proceed to the conquest of the beautiful Sabha. When at a short distance from the camp, the cavalcade halted; the old men and women got off their horses, and awaited the issue of a combat between the young men who strove to carry off the bride, and those of her tribe who opposed their design. This fight is sometimes attended with fatal consequences, but the bridegroom is not permitted to take part in it, as his life might be exposed to the plots of his rivals. This time, the combatants got off with a score or so of wounds, and the victory, according to reason, was with our champions, who bore away the bride, and consigned her to the females of our tribe. Sabha was accompanied by twenty young maidens, and followed by three loaded camels. The first carried her *haudag*, covered with scarlet cloth, trimmed with fringes and knobs of various-coloured worsted, and ornamented with ostrich-plumes. Festoons of shells, and little fillets of coloured glass, adorned the interior, and formed the frame-work of small mirrors, which, placed at intervals, reflected the scene on all sides; silken cushions were also prepared to receive the bride. The second camel was loaded with her tent, and the third with her carpets and cooking utensils. The bride being seated on her *haudag*, and surrounded by the wives of the chiefs, likewise mounted on their camels, and other women on foot, the march commenced. Horsemen, cantering in front, announced our approach to the tribes who were to meet us; and they came forward, sprinkling incense, and slaughtering sheep, at the feet of the bride's camels. No description can give an exact idea of this scene, nor of that which continued all the day and all the night. It would be impossible to depict the dances, songs, firing of muskets, banquets, shouts of all sorts, or the tumult, which followed our arrival. Two thousand pounds of rice, twenty camels, and fifty sheep, were consumed at the table of the chiefs. Eight entire tribes were fed by the hospitality of Fares, and they still kept shouting in the middle of the night, "Let any one who is hungry come and eat." My reputation was so great amongst them, that Giarah asked me for a talisman to assure the happiness of his marriage. I accordingly wrote his cypher and that of his wife in European letters, and delivered him the same with much solemnity. No one could have doubted the efficacy of this charm, on beholding the satisfaction of the newly-married pair.

Some days after this solemnisation, having been apprised that the Wahabites, with a force of 10,000 fighting men, were besieging Palmyra, the Drayhy issued orders to proceed to their encounter, and we came up with them at El Dauli. A few shots were exchanged to the fall of night, but without coming to any serious combat. I had an opportunity of appreciating the benefits of the mardouffs in these desert wars, where the supplies for the army must be carried with it for a lengthened period. These camels, each bearing two men, are like locomotive fortresses, and are provided with all that is necessary for the nourishment and defence of their riders. A leather jar of water, a sack of meal, another of dried dates, a jug of butter, and munitions of war, form a sort of square tower on the back of the animal. The men, comfortably perched on rope seats on each side, need no assistance from any one. When they are hungry, they knead a little meal with some butter, and eat it without being baked; a few dates, and a mouthful of water, completing the repast of these moderate men. They do not quit the camel to sleep, but stretch themselves out as I have already explained.

There was a more serious fight the following day. Our Bedouins fought with more energy than their foes,

* An equestrian exercise with staves, which are thrown like javelins. These staves are called djerids.

because they had behind them their women and children; whilst the Wahabites, far from their homes, and in search of nothing but plunder, were not anxious to risk their lives when there was nothing to gain. Night parted the combatants, but at the dawn of day the battle recommenced with fury. At last, victory declared in our favour towards evening; we slew sixty of their warriors, took twenty-two prisoners, fourteen fine mares, and sixty camels. The rest fled, and left us masters of the field of battle. This victory considerably increased the renown of the Drayhy, and Scheik Ibrahim was beside himself with joy, crying out, at repeated intervals, "Thanks be to God, our business prospers!"

Having no more enemies to fear in the desert of Syria, Scheik Ibrahim separated for some time from the Drayhy, and went to Homs to buy merchandise, and to write to Europe. During our sojourn in this town, he gave me full liberty to amuse and solace myself after all my fatigues. I made excursions into the country every day with my young friends, and I felt a double enjoyment in this life, by the contrast which it afforded to that I had led amongst the Arabs. But, alas! my joy was destined to be of short duration, and to be quickly changed into bitter sadness! A messenger, who had been to Aleppo bringing money for M. Lascaris, handed me a letter from my mother, who was plunged into the depths of affliction by the death of my elder brother, carried off by the plague. Her letter was quite incoherent on account of her grief. She was ignorant what had become of me for nearly three years; and she conjured me, if I were still in the land of the living, to come and see her. This dismal intelligence took away my senses, and I remained three days unconscious where I was, and without taking any nourishment. Owing to the attentions of M. Lascaris, I recovered from my swoon by degrees, but all the favour I could obtain from him was liberty to write my poor mother, and send her my letter only the day before our departure, lest she should herself come in search of me. But I pass over the details of my personal feelings, which cannot interest the reader, to return to our journey. The Drayhy having given us to understand that he would soon depart for the East, we hastened to get on the road to join him. He had placed at our disposal three camels, two mares, and four guides. The day of our departure from Homs, I felt so extraordinary an oppression on my heart, that I was disposed to regard it as a presentiment of misfortune. It seemed to me that I was marching to a premature death. However, I reasoned as well as I could upon the matter, and at length persuaded myself, that the heaviness I experienced was occasioned by the depression into which my mother's pitiable letter had plunged me. So we set off and after marching the whole day, our guides induced us to continue the journey by night, as we had only a twenty hours' distance to clear. Nothing of moment occurred to us until midnight. The monotonous motion of the march was setting us a-dozing, when the guide in front exclaimed, "Keep your eyes wide awake: you take care of yourselves, for we are on the brink of deep precipice."

The path was only a foot broad; on one side we had perpendicular mountain, and on the other the precipice called Wadi-el-Hail. I awoke with a start, rubbed my eyes, and seized hold of the bridle, which I had let fall on the neck of my mare, but this precaution, which was intended for safety, was precisely what endangered my life, for the horse, having stumbled against stone, fear made me jerk the reins with too much force the animal reared, and, in coming to the earth again it got off the track, and tumbled headlong down the precipice, carrying me with it. What followed the first moments of agony I know not, but Scheik Ibrahim favoured me afterwards with the account, which I here give. Trembling with alarm, he descended from horseback, and attempted to pry into the gulf down which I had disappeared; but the night was too dark, the noise of my horse alone giving any token of the disaster, and he could see nothing but a black abyss beneath his feet. Then he began to weep, and to conjure the guides to

descend the precipice, but they pronounced it impracticable in the deep gloom, assuring him, besides, that it was quite useless, as I must, of necessity, not only be dead, but brayed to atoms by the projections of the rocks. He thereupon declared he would not stir from his spot until the daylight permitted a search to be made; and he promised 100 *tallars* to him who should bring up my body, however mutilated it might be, as he could not consent to leave it a prey to wild beasts. He therefore seated himself on the edge of the gulf, waiting, in mournful despair, the first glimmerings of the dawn.

As soon as it was light, all the four men descended with difficulty, and found me without consciousness, hanging by my belt, head downwards. The mare, quite dead, was lying a few fathoms lower down, at the bottom of the ravine. I had ten wounds on my head, my left arm was completely unfleshed, my ribs crushed, and my legs lacerated even to the bone. When they laid me at the feet of Scheik Ibrahim, I gave no sign of life; he threw himself upon me weeping; but having some surgical knowledge, and never travelling without a small medicine chest, he gave not himself up long to a barren grief. He, first of all, convinced himself, by applying spirits to the nostrils, that I was not quite dead, so he carefully placed me on a camel, and returned to the village El Habedin. During this short passage, my body swelled prodigiously, but gave no other sign of life. The scheik of the village had me laid on a mattress, and sent to fetch a surgeon from Homs. I remained nine whole hours, without evincing the least sensibility. At the end of that time I opened my eyes, without having any perception of what was going on around me, or the least recollection of what had befallen me. I felt myself as if under the influence of a dream, experiencing no pain. In this lethargic state I continued twenty-four hours, and came out of it only to be tortured by inconceivable agonies. It would have been a hundred times better that I had remained at the bottom of the precipice.

Scheik Ibrahim never left me for an instant, and was incessant in his promises of recompense to the surgeon, if he succeeded in saving my life. This latter was full of zeal and good wishes for my recovery; but his ability was not of the first order, and at the end of thirty days I was in a state so deplorable that gangrene was feared. The Drayhy had come to see me, as soon as he heard of my accident; he also shed tears over my shattered person, and stimulated the activity of my professional attendant by bribes to his cupidity. In the midst of his acute sensibility, however, he could not avoid an occasional lamentation for the loss of his mare *Abaige*, which was of the pure breed, and worth 10,000 *piastres*. But both he and Ibrahim were truly chagrined, for they were apprehensive not only of losing me, to whom, indeed, they were sincerely attached, but, still more, of seeing all their operations overthrown in consequence of my death. I endeavoured to re-assure them, by telling them that I did not believe I should die; but there was no expectation to be indulged that I should be in a fit state to travel for a very long time, if I did not finally succumb.

The Drayhy was obliged to take leave of us, to continue his migration to the east, where he was to pass the winter. Scheik Ibrahim was in utter despair, when he saw my condition become daily worse. At last, having been informed that a more skilful surgeon than the first one lived at El Daïr Attié, he sent for him; but he refused to come, requiring that the invalid should be brought to him. Consequently, they made ready a species of litter as well as they could, and carried me to him, at the risk of witnessing my dissolution on the road. This new surgeon entirely changed the dressing of my wounds, and washed them with hot wine. I staid three months with him, suffering a pure martyrdom, and a thousand times regretting the death I had escaped from. I was subsequently transported to the village of Nabek, where I was confined to bed for other five months. It was only then that a state of convalescence really commenced, although it was often interrupted

by relapses: when I saw a horse, for instance, I grew pale, and fell off in a fit. This nervous state continued for nearly a month longer. By degrees I succeeded in overcoming this feeling; but I must confess that a disagreeable thrill always seizes me when I see that animal, and I swore at that time never to mount one, without an absolute necessity.

My illness cost nearly 500 *tallars* to Scheik Ibrahim—but what valuation shall I affix to his paternal care and solicitude! I surely owe my life to him.

During my state of convalescence, we learnt that our friend, the Pacha of Damascus, was displaced for another, Soleyman Selim. This intelligence annoyed us very much, as we feared we might thereby endanger our influence with the Turks.

Ten months were elapsed, a second spring had come, and we were impatiently awaiting the arrival of our friends the Bedouins, when a courier fortunately reached us, with the happy tidings of their approach. We hastened to send him back to the Drayhy, who gave him a large reward for the good news he brought of my recovery; it caused a general joy in the camp, where I had been long regarded as a dead man. We waited for a few days more, until the tribe had come nearer to us. In this interval a singular story came to my ears, which I think worthy of being related as a picture of manners.

An Anatolian merchant, with an escort of 50 men, was driving 10,000 sheep to sell at Damascus. On the road he got acquainted with three Bedouins, and formed a friendship with one of them; at the moment of separating from them, his friend proposed to unite in a fraternity with him. The merchant saw no great purpose to be served by his having a brother among the beggarly Bedouins, he being a man of ten thousand sheep, and escorted by fifty soldiers; but the Bedouin, by name Chatti, insisting upon the matter, to get rid of his importunity he consented to give him two piastres and a handful of tobacco, as pledges of fraternity. Chatti divided the two piastres between his comrades, saying to them, "Be witnesses that this man has become my brother."

They then separated, and the merchant thought no more about it. When he had arrived at a spot called Ain el Alak, a party of Bedouins, superior in number, attacked his escort, put it to flight, seized upon his sheep, and completely despoiled him, leaving him nothing but the shirt on his back. In this denuded plight he reached Damascus, cursing the Bedouins and his pretended brother, Chatti, whom he accused of betraying and selling him.

The news of so rich a capture soon spread throughout the desert, and came to the ears of Chatti, who, seeking out his two witnesses, came with them before Soultan el Berak, chief of the tribe El Ammour, announced to him that he was the brother of the merchant who had been plundered, and summoned him to get justice executed, so that he might fulfil the duties of his fraternity. Soultan, having heard the evidence of the two witnesses, was obliged to accompany Chatti to the sheik of the tribe El Nahimen, who had got possession of the sheep, and demand their restitution according to the Bedouin laws. The sheik felt himself constrained to restore them; and Chatti, being well assured that not one was wanting, set off for Damascus with the herds and flocks.

Leaving them outside the city, he entered alone to seek out his brother, whom he found seated, in doleful mood, before a café in the bazaar. He went straight to him with a joyous air; but the merchant averted his face in a rage, and Chatti had great difficulty in getting him to listen to him, and still more in convincing him that his sheep were waiting for him beyond the walls. He feared a fresh snare, and consented most reluctantly, to follow the Bedouin. When the sight of his flock assured him of the truth, he fell upon the neck of Chatti, and expressing to him the fulness of his gratitude, he urged him to accept a recompense proportioned to so great a service. But the Bedouin would only receive a pair of boots and a *café* (handkerchief), worth

at the most a *tallari*, and after eating with his friend, he set off to rejoin his tribe.

Our first interview with the Drayhy was truly touching. He came himself, with the chief men of his tribe, to seek us at the village of Nabek, and carried us, as it were, in triumph to the camp. On the road he told us of the wars he had sustained in the territory of Samarcand, and the success he had had in conquering four of the principal tribes,* and afterwards inducing them to sign the treaty. It was of great importance to have detached in time these tribes from the alliance of the Wahabites, whose tributaries they had formerly been; for rumour ran that our enemies were preparing a formidable army, and flattering themselves with the prospect of becoming masters of all Syria. We shortly afterwards had authentic intelligence that this army was on the march, spreading everywhere on its passage terror and devastation.

The Pacha of Damascus sent orders to the governors of Homs and Hama to mount guard night and day, and to keep their troops ready for battle. The inhabitants fled to the coast, to get out of the way of the Wahabites, whose name alone was sufficient to scare them from their hearths.

The Drayhy was honoured with an invitation from the pacha to come to Damascus, and hold a conference with him. Fearing some treachery, he excused himself, under the pretext of being unable to quit his post at this critical juncture. He demanded some auxiliary troops from him, hoping with them to make head against the enemy. Whilst waiting for this reinforcement, the Drayhy caused a solemn declaration of war to be made, according to the custom of the Bedouins on grand occasions, in the following manner:—A white she-camel was selected, which they completely blackened with smoke and oil; they put a halter of black hair upon her, and set on her back a young maiden dressed in black, her face and hands being likewise painted black. Ten men conducted her from tribe to tribe; and upon arriving at each, she cried out three times—

"Recruit! recruit! recruit! Who will whiten this camel for you? See a piece of the Drayhy's tent, which threatens ruin! Hasten, hasten, great and generous champions! The Wahabite comes, he will carry away your allies and brethren. All you who hear me, address your prayers to the prophets Mahomet and Ali, the first and the last!"

On uttering these words, she distributed handfuls of black hair, and letters from the Drayhy, indicating the place of rendezvous on the banks of the Orontes. In a short time our camp was swelled with thirty tribes, united upon one plain, the ropes of the tents touching each other.

The Pacha of Damascus sent 6000 men to Hama, commanded by his nephew, Ibrahim Pacha, to wait there for other troops, which the pachas of Aleppo and Acre had to furnish. They had scarcely effected a junction, when the arrival of the Wahabites at Palmyra was announced by the inhabitants, who fled for refuge to Hama. Ibrahim Pacha wrote to the Drayhy, who shortly visited him, and they arranged in concert their plan of defence. The Drayhy, who had taken me with him as his counsellor, informed me of his agreement; and I observed to him, that the stipulation, fixing the union of the Bedouins and Turks in the same camp, was very dangerous, as the latter, during the tumult of battle, had no means of distinguishing their friends from their enemies. In fact, as the Bedouins are all dressed alike, they only recognise each other in the fray by their war-cries, each tribe continually repeating its own, as Khraïl el Allia Doualli; Khraïl el Biouda Hassny; Khraïl el Hamra Daffiry; &c. Khraïl signifies cavaliers; Allia, Biouda, Hamra, indicate the colour of some favourite mare; Doualli, Hassny, Daffiry, are the names of tribes; it is as if we said, *Cavalier of the red mare of Daffir*, &c. Others invoke their

* The tribe El Krasna, chief Zahauran Ebn Houd; the tribe El Mahlac, chief Nabac Ebn Habad; the tribe El Merakrat, chief Roudan Ebn Abed; and the tribe El Zeker, chief Matias Ebn Faynan.

sisters, or some other beauties; thus the war-cry of the Drayhy is, *Ana akhron Rabda*—"I, the brother of Rabda;" that of Mehanna, "I, the brother of Fodda;" both of these chiefs had sisters renowned for their beauty. The Bedouins are very proud of their war-cries, and treat him as a coward who dares not pronounce his own in the moment of danger. The Drayhy gave ear to my arguments, and got Ibrahim Pacha to consent, though with much difficulty, to a division of their forces.

The next day we returned to the camp, followed by the Mussulman army, composed of Dalatis, Albanians, Mogrebins, Houraras, and Arabs; in all 15,000 men. They had with them some pieces of ordnance, some mortars, and bombs. They pitched their tents half an hour's distance from ours. Their haughty mien, the variety and richness of their costumes, and their banners, formed an imposing prospect; but, in spite of their fine appearance, the Bedouins ridiculed them, and said they would be the first to fly.

On the afternoon of the second day, we descried a thick cloud towards the desert, stretching out like a black mist as far as the eye could reach; by degrees this cloud dispersed, and we had a view of the opposing army.

This time they had with them their wives, children, and flocks. They fixed their camp an hour from us. Their army was composed of fifty tribes, forming in the whole 75,000 tents. Around each tent were camels and several sheep, which, joined to the horses and warriors, presented a formidable concourse to the eye. Ibrahim Pacha was terrified at it, and sent in all haste for the Drayhy, who, after instilling a little courage into him, returned to the camp to get the necessary entrenchments made. For this purpose they collected all the camels, bound them together by the knees, and placed them in a double row before the tents. To complete this rampart, a trench was dug behind them. The enemy did the same on his side. The Drayhy afterwards ordered the Hatfé to be prepared. This singular ceremony consists of the following particulars:—They choose the most beautiful of the Bedouin maidens, and place her in a handag richly decorated, which is borne by a large white she-camel. The selection of the maiden who is to occupy this honourable but perilous post, is of the highest importance, as the success of the battle almost always depends upon her. Planted in front of the enemy, and surrounded by picked warriors, her province is to excite them to the combat; the principal strife always rages around her, and prodigies of valour are exhibited in her defence. All would be lost if the Hatfé fell into the power of the enemy; so, to avoid that misfortune, half the army must always encompass her. The combatants succeed each other at this station where the fight is thickest, and every one seeks enthusiasm from her looks. A young girl, named Arkie, who joined the highest degree of courage to eloquence and beauty, was chosen for the Hatfé. The enemy prepared his also, and shortly afterwards the battle began. The Wahabites were divided into two bodies; the first, and the most considerable, was commanded by Abdallah el Hedal, the generalissimo, and was in front of us; the second, under the command of Abou-Nocta, was before the Turks. The character of the Turks, and their manner of fighting, are diametrically opposed to those of the Bedouins. The Arab, prudent and cool, commences at first with calmness; then becoming animated by degrees, at last grows furious and irresistible. The Turk, on the contrary, proud and self-sufficient, falls impetuously on the enemy, thinking he has only to appear to conquer; he thus throws all his energy into the first shock.

Ibrahim Pacha, seeing the Wahabites attacking leisurely, believed himself strong enough to disperse their whole army by his own force alone; but before the day was over, he was after a costly fashion learnt to respect his adversary. His troops were compelled to fall back, and leave us the whole weight of the action. The setting of the sun suspended the fight, a great many being killed on both sides.

The next day we received a reinforcement; the tribe El Hadida arrived. It was 4000 strong, all mounted on jackasses and armed with muskets. We numbered our forces, and found them amount to 80,000 men; the Wahabites had 150,000, so the battle on the following day was to their advantage; and the noise of our defeat, exaggerated as always happens in such cases, reached Hama, and threw the inhabitants into consternation. The second day more accurate intelligence calmed their fears. For twenty days, an alternation of good and bad fortune put our constancy to the proof. The fighting became every day more terrible. On the fifteenth, we had to resist a new enemy more formidable than the Wahabites—famine. The town of Hama, which alone could furnish subsistence to the two armies, exhausted or concealed its supplies. The Turks took to flight, and our allies dispersed to avoid dying of hunger. The camels, forming the ramparts of the camp, gnawed each other. In the midst of these frightful calamities, the courage of Arkie wined not for a moment. The bravest of our warriors were slain by her side. She never ceased encouraging, exciting, and applauding them. She animated the old men, by praising their valour and experience, and the young men by promising to marry him who should bring her the head of Abdallah el Hedal. I kept constantly near her handag, and I saw the warriors present themselves to her, to hear her words of encouragement, and then rush into the thickest of the fight, roused to enthusiasm by her eloquence. I confess that I felt more comfortable in listening to than receiving her eulogies, for they were almost the invariable precursors of death.

I was near one day when a handsome young man, one of our bravest warriors, presented himself before her handag. "Arkie," said he, "oh, thou, the most beautiful amongst the beautiful! allow me to see thy visage, I am going to fight for thee." Arkie, showing herself, answered, "Behold me! oh thou most valiant of men! thou knowest my price, the head of Abdallah!" The young man brandished his lance, gave spurs to his charger, and dashed amongst the enemy. In less than two hours he was dead, covered with wounds. "God preserve you," said I to Arkie, "the noble youth is killed." "He is not the only one who has not returned," she replied mournfully.

At this moment appeared a warrior eased in a cuirass from head to foot; his boots even were plated with steel, and his horse covered with a coat of mail. The Wahabites had twenty of these invulnerable soldiers in their ranks, and we had twelve. He advanced towards our camp, summoning the Drayhy to single combat. This usage is of high antiquity amongst the Bedouins; he who is challenged cannot refuse the combat without dishonour. The Drayhy hearing his name, prepared to answer the appeal, but his relations joined with us in preventing him. His life was of too much importance to risk it in this manner; his death would have involved with it the total ruin of our cause, and the destruction of the two allied armies. But persuasion was useless, and we were compelled to use force. We bound him with cords, hand and foot, to the stakes in the ground, in the middle of his tent, whilst the most influential chiefs soothed him, and strove to calm him, by pointing out to him the absurdity of exposing the safety of the army, by answering the insolent bravado of a savage Wahabite. This latter, however, continually shouted out,

"Let the Drayhy come out! his last day is arrived; I am the man to cut short his career."

The Drayhy heard him, and grew completely furious; he foamed with rage, and roared like a wild beast; his eyes, red with blood, started out of his head, and he strove against his bonds with a fearful force. The tumult he made drew a considerable assembly round his tent. Suddenly a Bedouin, making his way through the crowd, presented himself before the Drayhy. A shirt gird about his loins by a leather belt, and a cafi upon his head, were his sole garments. Mounted upon an Alezan horse, and with no other weapon than a lance, he demanded leave to fight the Wahabite, instead of the sheikh, reciting the following verses:—

"This day, I, Tehaïsson, have become master of the horse Hadidi; I have long desired him. I wish to receive on his back the praises due to my valour. I go to fight and conquer the Wahabite, for the bright eyes of my bride, and to render myself worthy the daughter of him who has always vanquished his foe."

He said, and sprang to the combat against the antagonist champion. No one imagined that he could resist for the space of half an hour his powerful adversary, whom his armour rendered invulnerable; but if he did not deal out very murderous blows, he contrived with marvellous address to escape those directed against himself, for the two hours that the combat continued. All was in suspense, and the most intense interest was manifested on both sides. At last our champion turned his horse, and seemed to fly. All hope was extinguished; the enemy was about to proclaim his triumph. The Wahabite pursued him, and with a hand invigorated by the confidence of victory, threw his lance at him; but Tehaïsson, foreseeing his intention, bent down to the bow of his saddle, and the weapon passed whistling over his head; then turning suddenly round, he dug the iron into his adversary's throat, seizing the instant when he raised his head to rein in his horse. This motion leaving an interval between the helmet and cuirass, below the chin, the lance passed right through and killed him on the spot; but the corpse, sustained in the saddle by its armour, was borne by the horse to the midst of the enemy, and Tehaïsson returned in triumph to the tent of the Drayhy, where he was received with enthusiasm. All the chiefs embraced him, and loaded him with praises and presents, nor was Scheik Ibrahim the last to make him feel the weight of his gratitude.

But the famine still continued as well as the war; we remained two days in the tent of the Drayhy without eating any thing. On the third, he received three *couffes* of rice, which Mola Ismael, chief of the Dallatis, sent him as a present. Instead of husbanding it as a last resource, he gave orders for the whole of it to be baked, and invited to supper all those who were present. His son Salep would not sit down to table; but being urged by his father, he demanded that his portion should be given him, and he carried it to his mare, saying, that he preferred suffering himself to seeing her want food.

It was now the thirty-seventh day since the commencement of the war; on the thirty-eighth there was most terrible fighting. The camp of the Osmanlis was taken and plundered. The pacha had scarcely time to save himself in Hama, where he was pursued by the Wahabites, who laid siege to the place.

The defeat of the Turks was the more disastrous to us, as it left the second division of the enemy, commanded by the famous negro Abou-Nocta, at liberty to join Abdallah, and attack us in concert. The next day a frightful encounter took place; the Bedouins were so mingled together, that the two parties could no longer be distinguished. They fought, man to man, with the sabre; the whole plain flowed with blood; the colour of the soil was changed from the saturation; never perhaps was such a bloody strife. It lasted eight days without intermission. The inhabitants of Hama, persuaded that we were all exterminated, no longer sent us those rare supplies, which from time to time had saved us from perishing of hunger. At last the Drayhy, seeing the evil at its height, assembled the chiefs, and thus addressed them:—

"My friends, we must make a last attempt. To-morrow, we must die or vanquish. To-morrow, if God permits it, I will destroy the enemy's camp, and we will gorge ourselves with his spoils."

An incredulous smile greeted his harangue; but some of the more courageous answered, "Say on, we will obey you." He continued—"This night you must pass over, without noise, your tents, women, and children, to the other side of the Orontes. Let all have disappeared before the rising of the sun, without the enemy having any inkling of the matter. Then, leaving nothing more to care about, we will fall upon him with desperation, and exterminate him, or perish ourselves. God will be with us—we will be victorious!"

Every thing was executed as he had commanded, with an incredible order, silence, and dispatch. The next morning only the warriors remained. The Drayhy divided them into four troops, ordering them to attack the enemy's camp on four sides at the same time. They threw themselves on their prey like famished lions. This impetuous and simultaneous charge was attended with all the success that could be desired. Confusion and disorder ensued amongst the Wahabites, who took to flight, abandoning women, children, tents, and baggage. The Drayhy, without giving his soldiers time to seize the booty, forced them to pursue the fugitives even to Palmyra, and allowed them no repose until the enemy was utterly dispersed.

When the victory was secured for us, I departed with Scheik Ibrahim to announce the happy news at Hama; but no one would give credit to our tale, and they were inclined to treat us ourselves as fugitives. The inhabitants were in a most excited state; some were running to the walls, whence they could see nothing but clouds of dust; others were getting ready their mules to fly to the coast; but the defeat of the Wahabites being shortly placed beyond doubt, the most extravagant demonstrations of joy succeeded their excessive terror. A Tatar was dispatched to Damascus, who returned with forty loads of wheat, 25,000 piastres, a sabre and pelisse of honour for the Drayhy, who made his triumphal entry into Hama, escorted by all the chiefs of the allied tribes. He was received by the governor, the agas, the pacha, and all his court, in magnificent style.

After four days spent in rejoicings, we quitted Hama, to rejoin the tribes, and conduct them to the east on the approach of winter. The Drayhy took his departure with twelve of them; the remainder, in clusters of five or six together, spread themselves over the desert of Damascus. Our first halt was at Tall el Dehab, in the territory of Aleppo, where we found four tribes that had taken no part in the war. The chiefs came to pay their respects to the Drayhy, impressed with a awe for his recent exploits, and soliciting the favour of being permitted to sign our treaty of alliance.* From there we marched, without stopping, to join our friend the Emir Fakher, who received us with the most lively symptoms of joy. We crossed the Euphrates with him and several other tribes, who were going, like us, into Mesopotamia, some towards Hamad, and others to the desert of Bassorah.

We received on the road a letter from Fares el Harba, announcing to us that six of the great tribes who had fought against us with the Wahabites, were encamped in the Hebasie, near to Mehadali; that they were well disposed to make peace with us; and that if the Drayhy would send me to him, with full powers to treat, he believed success was inevitable. I lost not a moment in availing myself of his invitation, and, after a six days' march, I arrived at his camp without accident. Fares el Harba, having immediately struck his tents, conducted me to a day's journey from these tribes.† Then I wrote in his name to the Emir Douackry, the chief of the tribe El Fedhay, to invite him to form an alliance with the Drayhy, promising him a complete oblivion of the past. Douackry came in person to the camp of Fares el Harba, and we soon struck an agreement; but he told us he could only answer for his own tribe, and considered it a very difficult matter to succeed with the other five. He proposed to me, however, that I should accompany him home, offering to invite the chiefs to his tent, and use all his influence with them. Accepting his proposal, I departed with him. When we arrived in the midst of what ought to have been an encampment, I was much concerned to perceive countless crowds of Bedouins squatted in the open

* Fares Ebn Aggid, chief of the tribe El Bechake, 500 tents; Cassan Ebn Unkhan, chief of El Chiamsi, 1000 tents; Selamé Ebn Nahsan, chief of El Fualier, 600 tents; Mchanna el Samel, chief of El Salba, 300 tents.

† The tribe El Fedhan, composed of 5000 tents; El Sabba, 4000 tents; El Febaka, 1500; El Messaid, 3500; El Salan, 3000; and Dami Dehab, 5000 tents.

air. Having lost their tents and baggage in battle, they had no bed but the earth, and no covering but the sky. A few rags, hung here and there upon stakes, gave a little shade to those miserable people, who had taken off their only garment to procure a feeble shelter against the burning heat of the sun, and who were lying quite naked, exposed to the bites of insects, and the prickly points of the plant which the camels crop. Several had no defence whatever against the heat of the day and the chillness of night, the contrast between which, at this season, is quite murderous, when the winter is beginning to be felt.

I had never conceived the idea of so perfect a misery. The sad spectacle oppressed my heart, and drew tears from my eyes; I was some time in recovering from the emotion it occasioned.

The following day, Douackry assembled the chiefs and old men, to the number of 500. Alone, in the midst of such a concourse, I despaired of making myself heard, and, above all, of drawing them to one opinion. These men, of different characters and manners, and soured by misfortune, had all their own ideas to propound; and if none had any hope of rendering his own counsel predominant, he at least stuck to it obstinately as a point of honour, leaving each at perfect freedom to do the same. Some voted for going to the country of Negde, others for retiring to Samarcand; some vociferated imprecations on the head of Abdallah, general of the Wahabite army, and others denounced the Drayhy as the author of all their ills. Amid this din, I armed myself with courage, and endeavoured to refute all their arguments. I first of all began by shaking their confidence in the Wahabites, telling them that Abdallah had necessarily become their enemy, since they had abandoned him on the day of the concluding engagement, and that he would do all in his power to revenge himself upon them; that, by going into the Negde, they voluntarily precipitated themselves into the yoke of Ebn Sihoud, who would crush them with contributions, and make them support the whole weight of a disastrous war; and that, having once deserted his cause, and escaped from his fangs, it was better not to follow the example of the bird, which, avoiding the gun of the shooter, flew to the net of the fowler. Finally, I called to mind the fable of the bundle of sticks; and conceiving that such a practical illustration would have an effect upon their simple minds, I determined to make the application of it before them. Therefore, after setting forth the advantages of union as a resistance to oppression, I took from the hands of the scheiks thirty djerids, and I presented one to the Emir Fares, begging him to break it, which he did with great ease. I presented to him, in succession, two and three together, which he likewise broke, for he was a man of great muscular power. At last I presented to him the whole bundle, which he could neither break nor bend. "Machallah," said I to him, "thou hast no strength," and I passed the staves to another, who had no better success. Then a general murmur arose in the assembly. "What man is there who could break such a mass?" they exclaimed with one accord.

"I take you upon your own words," I answered; and in the most energetic language, I explained the apologue to them, adding, that I had been so painfully affected at seeing them without shelter or clothes, that I bound myself to solicit from the Drayhy the restitution of their baggage and tents, and that I was sufficiently acquainted with his magnanimity to answer for the success of my request, if they frankly entered into the alliance, the advantages resulting from which I was come to explain to them. Then all with one voice shouted out, "Thou hast prevailed, Abdallah; we are thine in life and death!" and they came and clasped me in their arms. In conclusion, it was agreed that they should give a meeting to the Drayhy, in the plain of Halla, to affix their seals to the treaty.

The next day I again crossed the Euphrates, and rejoined our tribe upon the fifth day. My friends were troubled at my long absence, and the recital of my fortunate negotiation filled them with rapture. I have so

often described meetings, repasts, and rejoicings of all sorts, that I will pass over those that took place at the signing of the treaty of peace. The Emir Douackry buried the seven stones, and thus consummated the alliance. After dinner there was a ceremony performed, which I had never previously witnessed, that of taking the oath of fidelity upon bread and salt. The Drayhy ultimately declared, that he was ready to fulfil the engagement I had taken in his name, by restoring the booty taken from the six tribes, who had just become his allies. But it was not sufficient to have this generous disposition; the difficulty was to find means to execute it. In the pillage of the camp of the Wahabites and their allies, the spoils of fifty tribes had been confounded together, and to distinguish the property of each was no easy task. It was agreed that the women alone could manage it; and it would be impossible to give an idea of the fatigue and tiresomeness of the five days which were employed in selecting the animals, tents, and baggage of the different tribes. Every camel and every sheep has two ciphers marked on its thigh by a hot iron, that of the tribe, and that of the owner. But as these letters resembled each other, or were half effaced, as constantly happens, the difficulty became extreme, and it needed more than generosity to arrange the disputes, and tire one's self to death, in attempting to harmonise the opposing pretensions. I was indeed tempted to repent my emotion of compassion and my imprudent promise.

At this period a large caravan, going from Bagdad to Aleppo, passed, and was plundered by the Fedans and Sabhas. It was very richly loaded with indigo, coffee, spices, Persian carpets, Cashemire stuffs, pearls, and other precious objects; we valued it at ten millions of piastres. As soon as this capture was known, merchants came, some of them from a great distance, to get by purchase or barter these rich possessions of the Bedouins, who sold them, or rather gave them away, for nothing. Thus they exchanged a measure of spices for a measure of dates, a Cashemire worth 1000 francs for a black mashla, a chest of indigo for a cotton robe, and entire pieces of Indian fabrics for a pair of boots. A merchant from Moussoul bought for a chemise, a mashlah, and a pair of boots, merchandise worth more than 15,000 piastres, and a ring of diamonds was given for a *rotab* of tobacco. I could have made my fortune on this occasion; but M. Lascaris forbade me to buy any thing, or accept a present, and I scrupulously obeyed his orders.

Every day tribes came to us from the country of Negde, abandoning the Wahabites to join us; some being attracted by the great reputation of the Drayhy, and others impelled by quarrels with King Ebn Sihoud. An event of this sort brought us five tribes all at once. The Emir of the tribe Beny Tay had a very beautiful daughter named Camare (the moon). Echrab, the son of the chief of a neighbouring tribe, and a relation of the Wahabite, became enamoured of her, and contrived to inspire her with a passion for him. The father of the maiden having perceived what was going on, forbade her to speak to the prince, and he himself refused to receive him, or listen to his proposals, as Camare was destined for her cousin Tamer. It is a usage amongst the Bedouins, which is similar to one related in the Bible, that the nearest relation is preferred to every other, when a maiden is given in marriage. But Camare paid no attention to this custom of her country, or to the threats of her father, as she refused most positively to espouse her cousin; and her love augmenting in proportion to the obstacles which were opposed to its gratification, she ceased not to profit, by every opportunity, to hold correspondence with her lover. However, the latter, despairing of obtaining her by the consent of her parents, resolved to carry her off, and submitted the scheme to her by means of an old woman, whom he had gained to his interests. Her consent being given, he introduced himself into the tribe of Beny Tay disguised as a mendicant, and arranged with her the hour and place of elopement. In the dead of night, the young maid crept noiselessly

out of her father's tent, and threw herself into the arms of the prince, who was waiting for her at the gate of the camp. He placed her behind him on his mare, and darted over the plain; but the secrecy and dispatch with which the affair had been managed, failed to shield it from the jealous eyes of Tamer. He, loving his cousin, and a maintainer of his rights according to law, had been watching the manoeuvres of his rival for some time, and he himself mounted guard every night near the tent of Camare. He was making his round when the lovers went off; but he perceived them, and put himself in pursuit. Fehrab's mare, which possessed all the swiftness natural to the breed of Negde, put forth all its speed, urged by the impatience of its master; but having the weight of two persons to bear, she had at last no strength left, and the redoubled blows of the spur could only induce a languid start, the sure symptom of complete exhaustion; the poor beast fell to the ground. Fehrab saw that Tamer was close upon him, so he seated his mistress on the ground, and made ready his defences. The combat was terrible, and its issue tragical. Tamer prevailed, slew Fehrab, and seized upon his cousin; but exhausted with fatigue, and lulled with a sense of security, he fell into a short slumber at her side. When Camare perceived that he was dozing, she snatched the sabre recking with her lover's blood, severed her cousin's head from his body, and then threw herself upon the point of his lance, and dug it into her heart. All three were found in this condition when the people came who were in search of them. A murderous war between the two tribes followed this unpleasant event; that of Fehrab, supported by the Wahabites, forced Beny Tay to retreat, and it, accompanied by four allied tribes,* came to ask protection from the Drayhy, whose power was thenceforth without a rival. Five hundred thousand Bedouins, all ranged under our standard, formed but one camp, and covered Mesopotamia as if with a cloud of locusts.

Whilst we were in the vicinity of Bagdad, another caravan, coming from Aleppo, was plundered by our allies. It was loaded with European manufactures; cloths, velvets, satins, amber, coral, &c. Although the Drayhy took no part in this spoliation, it was too much after the fashion of the Bedouins for him to think of opposing it. The Pacha of Bagdad demanded satisfaction, but obtained it not. Seeing that he would need an army of at least 50,000 men to procure justice, he gave up his claims, too happy to remain the friend of the Bedouins at any price.

Scheik Ibrahim thus saw his hopes realised far beyond his most sanguine anticipations; but so long as any thing remained to be done, he would take no repose. Therefore, crossing the Tigris at Abou el Ali, we pursued our march, and entered Persia. The renown of the Drayhy had preceded him, and the tribes of the country came continually to unite in fraternity with us; but in our vast plan of operations, these partial alliances were not sufficient: it behoved us, above all things, to be assured of the co-operation of the great prince, the Emir Sahid el Bokhrari, chief of all the Persian tribes, whose sway extends to the frontiers of India. The family of this prince has possessed for many ages the sovereignty over the wandering tribes of Persia, and pretends to be descended from the kings Beni el Abass, who conquered Spain, and whose descendants still style themselves Bokhranis. We were informed that he was in a far distant province. The Drayhy, having convoked a general council of all the chiefs, it was determined to traverse Persia, keeping as near as possible to the sea coast, in order to avoid the mountains with which the interior of the country is bristled, and to have better pasturage, although water was not plentiful on that route. On the march of a tribe, greater is of more importance than water, for the latter can be transported; but nothing can supply the want of grazing for the flocks, upon which the existence of the tribe itself depends.

* The tribe Beny Tay, composed of 4000 tents; El Amarnid, 1500; tents; El Daffir, 2500 tents; El Haglajer, 800 tents; and Khresahel, 600 tents.

The journey lasted fifty-one days. During all this time we met with no obstruction on the part of the inhabitants; but our march was often very painful, principally on account of the scarcity of water. On one occasion Scheik Ibrahim, taking notice of the nature of the soil, and the rankness of the grass, advised the Drayhy to dig in search of it. The Bedouins of the district treated this attempt as a piece of pure folly, saying that water had never been found in that place, and that it was necessary to send a distance of six hours to fetch it. But the Drayhy was not easily turned from his purpose: "Scheik Ibrahim is a prophet," said he; "he must be obeyed in all things."

They dug in consequence at several points, and in truth, four feet down, excellent water was found. On beholding this happy result, the Bedouins proclaimed with loud shouts Scheik Ibrahim to be a true prophet, and his discovery a miracle. Little was wanting in the excess of their gratitude for his being worshipped by them as a god.

After passing the mountains and valleys of Karman, which took several days, we arrived at the river of Karassan, a deep and rapid stream; having crossed it, we proceeded towards the coast, where the road was less difficult. We made acquaintance with the Bedouins of Agiam Estan, who received us with cordiality; and on the forty-second day's march from our entry into Persia, we reached El Hendonan, where one of their most considerable tribes was encamped, under the chieftainship of Hebiek el Mahdan. We hoped that our journey was near its close, but this scheik gave us to understand that the Emir Sahid was still nine days' march from there, to wit, at Meral-Fames, upon the Indian frontier. He offered us guides to conduct us there, and to point out the places where a stock of water was required to be laid in. Without this precaution, we had probably perished in this last passage.

Couriers were sent in advance to apprise the great prince of our approach, and to assure him of our pacific intentions. On the ninth day he appeared in front of us, at the head of an army of most formidable aspect. At first, we were not over and above certain whether this display of force was intended to do us honour or to intimidate us. The Drayhy began to repent of having adventured so far from his allies. However, he put a good face on the matter, placed the women and baggage in the rear, and went forward with some picked warriors, and accompanied by his friend the Scheik Saker. (This was he, to whom, in the preceding year, he had delegated the command in the desert of Bassorah, and who had laid the train for all our alliances during our sojourn in Syria.)

The friendly intentions of the prince were quickly declared; for he, separating from his troops, advanced with some horsemen into the middle of the plain which separated the two armies. The Drayhy did the like, and the two chiefs met midway, descended from their horses, and embraced each other with marks of the most perfect cordiality.

"I had not so frequently described the hospitality of the desert, I would have had many things to say upon the reception given us by the Emir Sahid, and the three days of festival which were passed with him; but in order to avoid repetitions I will not speak of them, and will merely remark that the Persian Bedouins, being more pacific than those of Araby, easily entered into our views, and had a surprising conception of the value of the commercial intercourse we wished to establish with India. This was all that we needed to make them understand touching the object of our enterprise. The emir promised the co-operation of all the Persian tribes under his dominion, and volunteered his influence to win those of India, who have a high regard for him on account of the antiquity of his race, and his personal reputation for wisdom and generosity. He made a separate treaty with us, conceived in these terms:

"In the name of the beneficent and merciful God, I, Sahid, son of Bader, son of Abdalla, son of Barakat, son of Ali, son of Bokhrani, of happy memory, declare I have given my sacred word to the puissant Drayhy

Ebn Chahlan, Scheik Ibrahim, and Abdallah el Kratih. I pronounce myself their faithful ally; I accept all the conditions which are specified in the general treaty which is lodged in their hands. I engage myself to aid and support them in all their projects, and to guard an inviolable secrecy touching the same. Their enemies shall be my enemies; their friends my friends. I invoke the name of Ali, the first amongst men, and the well-beloved of God, in testimony of my word."

(Signed and sealed.)

We remained yet six days with the tribe of Sahid, and had an opportunity of remarking the difference between the manners of those Bedouins and our own. They are milder, and more moderate and patient, but less brave and generous, and much less respectful to the women. They have a considerable share of religious prejudice, and follow the precepts of the sect of Ali. Besides the lance, sabre, and musket, they have also battle-axes.

Prince Sahid sent the Drayhy two fine Persian mares, led by two negroes, and he in return made the prince a present of a black mare, of the breed of Negde, called Houban Heggin, of great value. He likewise added some ornaments for the women.

Our camp was fixed not far from Menouna, the last town of Persia, twenty leagues from the frontier of the East Indies, on the banks of a river called by the Bedouins El Gitan.

On the seventh day, after taking leave of Sahid, we commenced our retrograde march, in order to reach Syria before the heats of summer. We journeyed rapidly and without caution, when one day, being in the province of Karmau, our cattle were forayed, and on the morrow we ourselves were attacked by a powerful tribe, commanded by the Emir Redaini, who is the self-constituted guardian of the caliphate of Persia—an imperious man, and one jealous of his authority. These Bedouins, although much superior to us in number, were far below us in the essentials of courage and discipline; besides, our troops were under a more experienced general. But the position of the Drayhy was extremely critical; we were lost if the enemy gained the least advantage, as all the Karmau Bedouins would have encompassed us, as if with a net, from which it had been impossible to break loose. We therefore perceived the necessity of impressing respect by a decisive victory, which would take from them for the future any desire to enter the lists with him. He made the most skilful dispositions and combinations to secure the triumph of courage over numbers; he displayed all the resources of his military genius and his long experience, and performed in his own person prodigies of valour. Never had he evinced more calmness in command, or impetuosity in the fight. Thus was the enemy compelled to beat a retreat, and leave us alone. However, the Drayhy, thinking that it would be imprudent to leave behind a hostile tribe, though beaten, stooped the march, and sent back a courier to the Emir Sahid to inform him of what had come to pass. This messenger returned at the end of some days, charged with a very friendly letter for the Drayhy, and enclosing one addressed to Redaini, couched in these terms:

"In the name of God, the supreme Creator. Let homage and prayer be addressed to the greatest, most potent, most honourable, most learned, and most beautiful, of the prophets; the bravest of the brave, the greatest of the great, the caliph of the caliphs, the lord of the sabre, the red ruby, the converter of souls, the Imaun Ali! This letter is from Sahid el Bokhrari, the master of the two seas, and the two Persias, to his brother, the Emir Redaini, son of Kroukiar. We make known to you that our brother, the Emir Drayhy Ebn Chahlan, of the country of Bagdad and Damascus, is come from afar to visit us, and make our alliance. He has marched upon our land, and eaten of our bread; we have accorded to him our friendship, and, furthermore, we have entered into particular engagements with him, from which a great good and general tranquillity will result. We desire that you will do as much on your

part; be careful not to fail herein, for otherwise you will lose our esteem, and act contrary to the will of God, and the glorious Imaun Ali!"

To this were appended several citations from their holy books, the Giaffer el Giameli, and the usual salutations.

We sent this letter to the Emir Redaini, who came to visit us, accompanied by 500 horsemen, all very richly clad in stuffs, worked with gold; their weapons were mounted with chased silver, and the blades of their sabres of the pure Damascus temper. Amicable explanations having been entered into, Redaini copied, with his own hand, the particular treaty of the Emir Sahid, and subscribed it; he afterwards took coffee, but refused to dine with us, the fanatics of the sect of Ali not being allowed to eat either with Christians or Turks. To ratify the contract, he took an oath upon bread and salt, and then embraced the Drayhy with great protestations of brotherly love. His tribe, which is called El Mehaziz, contains 10,000 tents. Having taken leave of him, we continued our march by forced journeys, making fifteen leagues a-day without any stoppages.

At last we arrived before Bagdad; and Scheik Ibrahim entered the city to take up money, but the season pressing on us, we tarried as short a time as possible. In Mesopotamia we had news of the Wahabites. Ebn Sihoud had given a very unfavourable reception to his general Hedai, after his discomfiture, and had taken an oath to dispatch a more powerful army than the last, under the command of his son, to wreak his vengeance on the Drayhy, and exterminate the Bedouins of Syria; but that, after being better informed of the resources which the Drayhy could deploy against him, and especially of his personal reputation, he had altered his language, and determined to draw him into an alliance. The foreign relations, which were becoming complicated, gave much probability to this report, for the Pacha of Egypt, Mahomet-Ali, was preparing an expedition to invade Arabia Petraea, and seize upon the riches of Mecca, which were in the hands of Ebn Sihoud. We rejoiced with great glee at the prospect either of making peace with him, or of seeing him weakened by a foreign power. We continually encountered tribes which had not had a previous opportunity of signing the treaty, and now did so with alacrity.* On arriving in Syria, we received a courier from the King of the Wahabites, who brought us a small piece of paper, three finger-breadths broad, and nearly six long. These people affect the usage of the most diminutive forms, in order to present as striking a contrast as possible to the Turks, who write their firmans on very large sheets. The Arab characters take up such little room, that on this pitiful clout a very long and impetuous letter was indited. It commenced by an act of faith or declaration, that God is alone, and without an equal—that he is *one*, universal, and has no likeness; then came all the titles of the king, whom God has invested with his sabre, to maintain his unity against the idolaters (Christians), who say the contrary. It continued thus—

"We, Abdallah, son of Abdel Aziz, son of Abdel Wahabs, son of Sihoud;—we make known to you, oh son of Chahlan (may the only adorable God direct you in the right path!) that if you believe in God, you will obey his slave Abdallah, to whom he has delegated his power, and come to us without fear. You will be our well-beloved son, we will pardon the past, and treat you like one of us. But avoid stubbornness and resistance to our summons; for he who listens to our voice is numbered with the inmates of paradise.

We salute thee!

(Signed) EL MAHMOUD MENALLA EBN
SIHOUD ABDALLAH."

* At Maktal el Abed we met two tribes, that of Berkajé, commanded by Sahdoun Ebn Wuail, 1300 tents strong, and that of Mahimen, commanded by Fahed Ebn Saleh, of 300 tents. On crossing the Euphrates before Haiff, we also made alliance with Alayan Ebn Nadjed, chief of the tribe Bouharba, composed of 500 tents.

Upon receipt of this letter, we held a grand council of war; and after maturely weighing all the perils of the expedition against the advantages to be gained from an alliance with Ebn Sihoud, the Drayhi resolved to accede to his invitation. Scheik Ibrahim thereupon asked me if I had courage enough to face this fanatic, to whom I replied, "I am well aware that I risk more than any other, on account of his hatred to the Christians; but I put my trust in God. Having to die some time, and having already offered up my life as a sacrifice, I am ready to do it once again, to conduct to an issue the enterprise which I have commenced." The desire of seeing a country so interesting, and the extraordinary man himself, roused my spirit of daring; therefore, after recommending to M. Lascaris the care of my poor mother, in case I should meet an untimely end, I set off with the Drayhi, his second son Sahdoun, his nephew, his cousin, two of the principal chiefs, and five negroes, all mounted on dromedaries. During the absence of his father, Saher was nominated to command the tribe, and to conduct it to Heran, to meet the Drayhi, who reckoned upon returning by Hegiaz.

We made our first halt among the Bedouins of Beny Toulab, whose entire possessions consist of a few jack-asses, and who live by the hunting of gazelles and ostriches. They clothe themselves with the gazelle-skins, rudely stitched together, in the form of a long robe, with very wide sleeves. The fur is on the outside, which gives them the appearance of fallow-deer. I have seldom seen any thing so perfectly uncouth as the appearance of these people. They favoured us with the diversion of an ostrich hunt, which was extremely interesting to me. The female ostrich lays her eggs in the sand, and fixes herself at some distance, keeping her eyes fixed upon them; she hatches them, as it were, with those organs, for she never averts them from the nest. She thus remains motionless half the day, until the male comes to relieve her; she then proceeds in search of food, whilst he stands sentry in his turn. The hunter, after discovering the eggs, forms a sort of stone screen, behind which he conceals himself, and awaits the favourable moment. When the female is alone, and the male at a sufficient distance not to be alarmed at the sound of a gun, he fires with ball, runs and picks up the bird mortally wounded, stanches the blood, and replaces it in the same position near the eggs. When the male returns, he approaches, without suspicion, to assume his station. The hunter, still in ambush, shoots him, and thus secures a double prey. If the male bird has been at all alarmed, it goes off at a rapid pace, and they then pursue it; but he defends himself by throwing stones behind him, as far as a gun will carry, and with great force. He is a dangerous animal to approach too nearly when he is roused to anger, for his prodigious strength and height render an encounter perilous, especially for the eyes of the pursuer. When the season for the chase of ostriches is over, the Bedouins bestride their asses, and proceed to Damascus, and even Bagdad, to sell their plumes.

When one of them is wishful to marry, he secures the half of his hunting produce to the father of his bride, to pay her dowry. These Bedouins have a great veneration for the memory of Antar, whose descendants they claim to be; but I know not how far such pretensions are warranted by the fact. They recited to us several fragments of his poems.

After bidding this tribe adieu, we pursued our route with the huge strides of the dromedaries, and encamped on the borders of a lake of great extent, called Raam Beni Hellal. It receives its waters from a hill we had skirted on the way.

The next day, when we had arrived in the middle of a dry desert, we perceived a green oasis, formed by shrubs called *jorfe*. Having approached within a few paces of it, our dromedaries suddenly stopped short. We thought at first that they wished to rest in a place where a degree of vegetation seemed to assure them of water, but we soon found that their stand-still proceeded from an instinctive horror, which displayed itself in all the symptoms of uncontrollable alarm; neither by coax-

ing them nor belabouring them could they be induced to move. My curiosity was roused to the highest pitch, so I got off to ascertain the cause of their terror; but scarcely had I set my foot in the thicket, than I recoiled with an involuntary start. The earth was strewn with the skins of serpents, of all sizes and species. There were myriads of them, some as thick as the cable of a ship, others slim as needles. We retreated precipitately from this spot, returning thanks to God that it was only the skins of these detestable reptiles that we had found. In the evening, being unable to discover any shelter, we were obliged to pass the night in the midst of the desert, and I confess that my imagination, haunted by the horrible spectacle of the thicket, prevented my closing an eye; I expected every instant to see some huge serpent glide stealthily into the tent, and lay its disgusting head upon my pillow.

On the morrow we came up with a considerable tribe, tributary to the Wahabites, which hailed from Samarcand. We carefully concealed our pipes, for Ebn Sihoud rigorously forbids smoking, and inflicts death upon the least disregard of his fulmination against tobacco. The Emir Medjioun afforded us hospitality, but was unable to restrain his surprise at our boldness in thus putting ourselves at the mercy of the Wahabite, whose ferocity he depicted in truly startling terms. He did not conceal from us that we ran great danger, Ebn Sihoud making little scruple to use false promises to decoy the unwary, and treat them with infamous treachery. The Drayhi, being himself a man full of good faith, had proceeded upon the invitation of the king, without imagining the possibility of his breaking his word, and he began to feel uneasy at his too credulous reliance; but his pride prevented him from turning back, and we therefore continued our journey. We soon reached the country of Negde, a district intersected by valleys and mountains, and strewn with towns and villages, as well as a multitude of wandering tribes. The towns had a very ancient aspect, and bespoke a population formerly more numerous and rich than that which then occupied them. The villages are peopled by Bedouin husbandmen; the land produces wheat, vegetables, and especially dates, in abundance. They related to us, that the first inhabitants of that country abandoned it for an establishment in Africa, going forth under the leadership of one of their princes, by name Beni Hetal.

We everywhere experienced a cordial hospitality, but everywhere, also, our ears were stunned with interminable complaints of the tyranny of Ebn Sihoud. Terror alone seemed to retain these people in subjection to his sway. At last, after a march of fourteen days, at dromedary pace, which supposes a distance triple what a caravan would cover in the same time, we arrived at the capital of the Wahabites. The town is surrounded with a wood of date trees; the trees touch each other, and scarcely leave room for a horseman to pass between their trunks. The town is completely hid behind this natural rampart, which is styled the date forest of Darkisch. After traversing this wood, we found a second entrenchment of hillocks, formed by the heaped-up kernels of dates, resembling a dyke of small stones, and behind them was the wall of the town, which we skirted to get to a gate which conducted us to the palace of the king. This is a large two-storied building, constructed of white hewn stone. Ebn Sihoud, being made acquainted with our arrival, ordered us to be conducted into an elegant and well-furnished apartment, where they served us with a plentiful repast. This beginning augured well, and we gave ourselves credit for not yielding to the suspicions with which they had wished to inspire us. In the evening, having put our dress in order, we proceeded to present ourselves to the king. We found him to be a man of about forty-five, with a harsh eye, a bronzed complexion, and a very black beard. He was attired in a gombaz, tied round his loins with a white sash, a turban, with red and white streaks, on his head, and a black mashla thrown over his left shoulder; and he held in his right hand the wand of the king of Mahlab, the insignia of his authority. He was seated at the end

of a large hall of audience, rather richly furnished with mats, carpets, and cushions. The lords of his court were grouped around him. The furniture and garments were all of cotton or worsted, silk being prohibited in his dominions, as well as every thing that recalls the luxury and usages of the Turks. I enjoyed sufficient leisure to make my observations, for Ebn Sihoud, having answered rudely and with an icy aspect to the compliments of the Drayhy, we sat down, and waited in silence until it pleased him to open a conversation. However, after an interval of half an hour, the Drayhy, perceiving that he neither ordered us coffee, nor relaxed the muscles of his face, raised his voice and said—

"I see, oh son of Sihoud, that you do not receive us as we had reason to expect. We have toiled over your territories, and have entered your dwelling, upon your own invitation; if you have any thing to allege against us, let us know what it is without concealment."

Ebn Sihoud, darting a fiery glance upon him, replied, "Of a verity I have many things to say against you; your crimes are unpardonable! You have revolted against me, and have refused to obey me; you have laid waste the tribe of Saclrer, in Galilee, well knowing that it belonged to me.

"You have corrupted the Bedouins, and drawn them into a league against my authority. You have destroyed my armies, pillaged my camps, and aided my mortal enemies, the Turks, those idolaters, profaners, scoundrels!

Growing more and more inflamed, and heaping invective upon invective, his rage at last knew no bounds, and he ordered us to instantly quit his presence, and wait his further pleasure.

I saw the eyes of the Drayhy gathering flame, and his nostrils puffing; I feared every instant an explosion of impotent fury, which would have only served to push the king to the last extremities; but feeling himself entirely defenceless, he curbed his passion, and raising himself with dignity, he slowly retired to reflect upon what was to be done. All trembled before the rage of Ebn Sihoud; none dared to thwart his will. We remained two days and nights in our apartment, without hearing any intelligence; no one cared to come near us, and those who had appeared the most eager in our service on our arrival, now fled from us, or mocked our credulous confidence in the faith of a man so well known for his perfidious and bloody character. We expected every instant to see the satellites of the tyrant arrive to take our lives, and we vainly sought to discover some means of extricating ourselves from his clutches. On the third day, the Drayhy shouted out that he would rather be dead than endure this uncertainty; and he sent for one of the ministers of Ebn Sihoud, named Abou el Sallem, to whom he spoke as follows:—"Go, and deliver these words to your master from me—

What you intend doing, do promptly; I will make you no reproaches; I shall only accuse myself for having fallen into your power."

El Sallem obeyed, but returned not, and the answer we got was twenty-five armed negroes, who drew up at our door. We were then beyond question prisoners! How I cursed the insane curiosity which had brought me into a peril so purely gratuitous! The Drayhy had no fears for death, but constraint was insupportable to him; he paced up and down the room with great strides, as a lion growling behind the bars of his cage. At length he addressed himself to me:—

"I will put an end to this; I will go to Ebn Sihoud, and reproach him with his perfidy. I see that good nature and patience are quite useless, so I will at least die with dignity."

He again demanded El Sallem; and as soon as he appeared, he said to him, "Return to your master, and inform him, that, upon the faith of the Bedouins, I claim a right to speak with him; he will have plenty of time to do as he likes after he has heard me."

The Wahabite having granted an audience, El Sallem ushered us before him; when in his presence, he never asked us to sit down, or responded to the usual greeting.

"What do you want?" said he gruffly.

The Drayhy, drawing himself up with dignity, replied in the following set speech:—

"I came to your place of abode, oh! son of Sihoud, on the faith of your promises, with a suite of only ten persons—I, who command myriads of warriors! We are without means of defence in your hands; you are in the very seat of your power, and you can grind us to the dust; but know, that from the frontier of India to the frontier of Negde, in Persia, Mesopotamia, Hemad, the two Syrias, Galilee, and Horan, every man who wears a café will ask an account of my blood, and seek vengeance for my death. If you are the king of the Bedouins, as you pretend, how come you to degrade yourself with treachery? Such is the vile calling of the Turks. Treachery is not the part of the powerful, but of the feeble and the poltroon. You, who boast of your armies, and pretend to hold your power from God himself, if you wish your glory to be untarnished, restore me to my country, and fight me in the open field; for, in abusing my confidence, you render yourself an object of contempt to all, you are utterly dishonoured, and your kingdom will hasten to decay. I have spoken. Now do what you please; you will repent your conduct some day. I am only one of thousands; my death will not diminish my tribe, nor extinguish the race of Chablan. My son, Sacler, will take my place; he yet remains to lead on my Bedouins, and exact the uttermost vengeance for my slaughter. Be then admonished, and open your eyes to the truth."

During this discourse, the king played with his beard, and checked his rising anger. After a moment's silence he said to the Drayhy,

"Go in peace; nothing but good shall befall you."

We then retired, but we were still beset by guards.

This first success brought round the courtiers, who had listened with speechless terror to the bold words of the Drayhy, and were wonder-struck at the calmness with which the tyrant had supported the infliction. They now began to visit us, and Abou el Sallem even had us to dine with him. Nevertheless, I was very far from being at ease on my own account; I thought that Ebn Sihoud would certainly not dare push matters to extremity with the Drayhy, but I had considerable fears that he might throw all the blame on my counsels, and immolate me, a poor obscure glaiour, to his resentment. I communicated my apprehensions to the Drayhy, who reassured me, by swearing that they should only come at me by marching over his body, and that I should be the first to leave the gates of Darkisch.

On the following day, Ebn Sihoud caused us to be summoned to the presence, and he received us very graciously, and ordered coffee to be brought. He afterwards began to question the Drayhy as to the persons who accompanied him. "Now is my turn," thought I to myself, and my heart palpitated somewhat; but I took courage; and when the Drayhy named me, the king, turning towards me, said,

"Are you, then, Abdallah the Christian?"

On my answering in the affirmative, he resumed, "I see that your actions are much larger than your body."

"The ball of a rifle is a trifling object," said I in return, "yet it slay great men."

His majesty smiled. After a pause, he continued, "I have much difficulty in believing all that is said of you. I wish you would answer me frankly. Pray, what is the object of this alliance you have been labouring to effect for several years?"

"The object is a very simple one," I replied. "We have endeavoured to unite all the Bedouins of Syria, under the command of the Drayhy, to resist the Turks; and it must be evident to you, that we thus form an impenetrable barrier between you and your enemies."

"That is all very good," he said; "but if it be so, how come you to have sought the destruction of my armies before Hama?"

"Because you were an obstacle to our designs," I answered; "it was not for you, but the Drayhy, that we were at work. His power once established in Syria, Mesopotamia, and as far as Persia, we would have desired an alliance with you, so as to become, by such

means, invulnerable in the possession of our liberty. The children of the same nation, we have to defend the same cause; and it is with this view that we have come here to form an indissoluble union with you. You have received us in a most disagreeable manner, and the Drayhy has reproached you in terms not too pleasing to your ears; but our intentions are open, and we have given a good proof of it, by coming unarmed in reliance upon your good faith."

The countenance of the king grew brighter as I spoke; and when I had concluded, he said, "I am content."

Then, turning to his slaves, he ordered *three* courses of coffee. I internally thanked the Lord for having so happily inspired me. The rest of the interview was passed in the best understanding, and we retired in great satisfaction. In the evening we were invited to a grand supper at the house of one of the ministers, called Adranouti, who entertained us with a confidential relation of the cruelties of his master, and of the universal execration into which he had fallen. He spoke to us also of his immense riches; the wealth he got hold of on the pillage of Mecca was not to be reckoned. From the first years of the Hegira, the Mussulman monarchs, the caliphs, the sultans, and the kings of Persia, sent every year to the tomb of the prophet considerable gifts, in jewels, lamps, golden candelabras, precious stones, &c., besides the offerings of the faithful commonalty. The throne alone, the gift of a Persian king, of solid gold, encrusted with pearls and diamonds, was of inestimable value. Every prince sent a crown of gold, enriched with precious stones, to suspend in the vault of the chapel; there was a countless multitude of them when Ebn Sihoud plundered it. A single diamond, of the size of a walnut, which was placed on the tomb, was regarded as beyond all price. When we reflect upon all that successive ages had accumulated on this one spot, we need not be surprised that the king loaded forty camels with precious stones, in addition to massive articles of gold and silver. Upon estimating these prodigious treasures, and the tithes he exacts every year from his allies, I believe that he may be regarded as the richest potentate on earth, especially if we consider that he has no expenses to bear; that he forbids luxury under severe penalties; and that, in time of war, each tribe has to furnish subsistence to his armies, and support all the charges and losses, without ever obtaining the least return.

The next day, I felt so happy at having recovered my liberty, that I walked about the whole day, and visited Darkisch and its environs in detail. The town, built of white stone, contains 7000 inhabitants, almost all of whom are the relations, ministers, or generals, of Ebn Sihoud. I saw no artisans. The only trades which are exercised are those of armourers and farriers, and even they are in small number. There was nothing to buy, not even food. Each inhabitant lives on his own property, that is to say, on a plot of ground or a garden, which produces wheat, vegetables, and fruits, and supports a few chickens; their numerous flocks graze in the plain; and every Wednesday, the inhabitants of Yemen and Mecca come to exchange their merchandise for cattle. This sort of fair is the sole commerce of the country. The women go out without veils, but they throw a black mashla over their heads, which is extremely ungainly; in other respects, they are ugly enough, and tawny to a calamitous extent. The gardens, situated in a charming valley near the town, on the opposite side to that by which we arrived, produce the finest fruits in the world; bananas, oranges, pomegranates, figs, apples, melons, &c., interspersed with barley and maize. They are irrigated with great care.

The day following, the king, having summoned us afresh, received us in a marvelously agreeable manner, and put a number of questions to me upon the different sovereigns of Europe, especially upon Napoleon, for whom he had a great veneration. The tales of his victories were his chief delight; and fortunately, my frequent conversations with M. Lascaris enabled me to give him a variety of details on that subject. After each description of a battle, he exclaimed—

"Of a surety that man is an envoy of God; I am convinced that he is in close communion with his creator, since he is so highly favoured by him."

Afterwards, relaxing more and more into affability, and changing the subject, he said to me, "Abdallah, I am anxious for you to tell me the truth; what is the groundwork of Christianity?"

Knowing the prejudices of the Wahabite, I shuddered at hearing this question, but, praying God to inspire me, I replied—

"The groundwork of all religion, oh, son of Sihoud, is a belief in God. The Christians believe like you, that there is only one God, the creator of the universe, who punishes the wicked, pardons the repentant, and rewards the good; that he alone is great, all-merciful, and all-powerful."

"That is good," said he; "but how do you pray?"

I repeated to him the Lord's Prayer; he made it be written down by his secretary to my dictation, then read it over, and put it in his vest; after which, resuming his interrogatory, he asked me on what side we turned to pray.

"We pray on all sides," I answered, "for God is every where."

"In that respect, I perfectly approve of your practice," said he; "but you must have precepts as well as prayers."

I recited the ten commandments given by God to his prophet Moses. He appeared to know them, and pursued his questions.

"And Jesus Christ, how do you consider him?"

"As the word of God made flesh, as the divine word."

"But he was crucified."

"As the word he could not die, but as man he suffered by the machinations of the wicked."

"It is wonderful! And the Holy Book which God has inspired Jesus Christ with, is it revered amongst you? Do you exactly follow its doctrines?"

"We preserve it with the greatest respect, and obey its precepts in all things."

"The Turks have made a god of their prophet, and pray upon his tomb like idolaters; may they be effectually cursed, who give the Creator an equal! May the sabre exterminate them!"

Thus, entering upon the topic of the Turks, he inveighed against them in unmeasured terms, as also against tobacco, wine, and unclean meats. I felt too happy to have adroitly parried his perilous questions, to venture any dispute with him on insignificant points, and I allowed him to believe that I abhorred the use of that evil weed, for it was thus he stigmatised tobacco; which caused the Drayhy to smile, as he knew that one of the greatest possible sacrifices for me was the privation of smoking, and that I eagerly availed myself of every instant that I could, without fear of discovery, draw my much-loved pipe from its hiding-place. This very day, at this very time, I felt an extreme itching for it, for I had talked much, and drunk very strong Mocha.

The king seemed highly gratified at our conversation, and he said to me—

"I see that we are always learning something. I believed, until now, that the Christians were the most superstitious of mortals, but I am convinced that they are much nearer the true religion than the Turks."

Taking him on the whole, Ebn Sihoud is a well-informed man, and of great power of speech, but a fanatic in his religious opinions. He has a legitimate wife, and one slave, two sons married, and a daughter still very young. He only eats of food prepared by his women, for fear of being poisoned. The guarding of his palace is entrusted to a troop of 1000 negroes, well armed. He can bring together, in his own dominions, a million and a half of Bedouins capable of bearing arms. When he intends nominating a governor of a province, he summons the person to whom he has destined the post, and invites him to eat with him. After the meal, they perform their ablutions and prayers together; and the king, then girding him with a sabre, says, "I have chosen you, by orders from God, to govern his slaves;

be humane and just. Collect the tithe to the uttermost, and cut off the heads of the Turks and infidels, who say that God has an equal; allow not one of them to tarry in your district. May the Lord give victory to those who believe in his unity!"

He delivers him afterwards a small piece of writing, which enjoins the inhabitants to obey the governor in all things, under pain of severe chastisement.

We visited the stables of the king. It would be impossible, I think, for an amateur in horse-flesh to find any sight more superb. There were eighty white mares, ranged in a single row, of an incomparable beauty, and so exactly alike, that I could not distinguish the one from the other; their hides, glittering like silver, dazzled the eyes. One hundred and twenty of different colours, but equally symmetrical in form, occupied another building. In spite of my antipathy for horses, since the accident which had so nearly cost me my life, I was seized with admiration whilst surveying the contents of these stables.

We supped one evening with the generalissimo Hedai, who was reconciled with the Drayhy. The famous Abon-Nocta, who was one of the guests, likewise treated him with the greatest politeness. For several days we were shut up in secret conclave with Ebn Sihoud, to treat upon affairs. The detail of the negotiation would be tedious. It is sufficient to say that an alliance was concluded between him and the Drayhy, to their mutual satisfaction, and the king declared that *their two bodies were directed by only one soul*. The treaty being arranged, he made us eat with him for the first time, and he tasted of every dish before offering it to us. As he had never seen any one eat except with the fingers, I made a spoon and fork with a piece of wood, spread out my handkerchief in the shape of a napkin, and commenced eating in the European fashion, which exhibition gave him a hearty laugh.

"Thanks be to God!" said he, moderating his hilarity, "every nation believes its own customs the best, and is thus contented with its lot."

Our departure being fixed for the following day, the king sent us, as presents, seven of his finest mares, led by as many slaves, mounted on camels; and when each of us had made his choice, we had sabres presented to us, the blades of which were very exquisite, but the scabbards were without ornament. He ordered our servants to receive more ordinary sabres, mashlas, and 100 tallars. We took leave of Ebn Sihoud with the accustomed ceremonies, and were accompanied beyond the walls by all the officers of his court. When we reached the gates of the town, the Drayhy stopped, and, turning towards me, invited me to pass first, saying, with a smile, that he must keep his word. I confess, that notwithstanding the politeness that was shown to us at the end of our visit, the anguish I had suffered at the commencement had made such an impression upon me, that I cleared the gateway with a feeling of rapture.

We took the road towards the country of Heggias, sleeping each night among the tribes which covered the desert. On the fifth day, after passing the night under the tents of El Henadi, we arose with the sun, and went out to saddle our dromedaries, when we found, to our great surprise, that their heads were buried in the sand, and it was not possible for us to draw them out. We called the Bedonins of the tribe to our aid, who informed us that the instinct of the camels led them to conceal their heads thus, in order to escape the simoom; that their doing so was an infallible presage of that terrible tempest of the desert, which would not be long in breaking loose; and that we could not proceed on the journey without meeting a certain death. The camels, who perceive the approach of this fearful storm two or three hours before it bursts, turn themselves to the side opposed to the wind, and dig into the sand. It is impossible to make them stir from that position either to eat or drink, during the whole tempest, were it to last for several days. Providence has endowed them with this instinct of preservation, which never deceives them.

When we learnt with what we were threatened, we

partook the general consternation, and hastened to take all the precautions which they pointed out to us. It is not sufficient to put the horses under shelter; it is requisite also to cover their heads and stop up their ears, otherwise they will be suffocated by the whirlwinds of fine impalpable sand, which the storm sweeps furiously before it. The men collect under the tents, block up the crevices with the greatest care, and provide a supply of water, which they keep within reach; they then lie down on the ground, their heads covered with the mashlas, and thus remain all the time that the tornado continues.

The camp was thrown into the greatest tumult, each bent on providing safety for his cattle, and afterwards withdrawing precipitately under his tent. We had scarcely got our beautiful Negde mares under cover, than the tempest burst. Impetuous blasts of wind hurled clouds of red and burning sand in eddies, and overthrew all upon which their fury fell; or heaping up hills, they buried all that had strength to resist being carried away. If at this period any part of the body be exposed, the flesh is scorched as if a hot iron had touched it. The water, which was intended to cool us, began to boil, and the temperature of the tent exceeded that of a Turkish bath. The hurricane blew in all its fury for six hours, and gradually subsided during six more; an hour longer, and I believe we had been all stifled. When we ventured to leave the tents, a frightful spectacle presented itself; five children, two women, and a man, were lying dead upon the still burning sand, and several Bedonins had their faces blackened, and entirely calcined, as if by a blast from a fiery furnace. When the wind of the simoom strikes an unfortunate wretch on the head, the blood gushes in streams from his mouth and nostrils, his face swells, becomes black, and he shortly dies of suffocation. We returned thanks to the Lord for not having surprised us with this fearful scourge in the midst of the desert, and for having thus preserved us from so deplorable a death.

When the weather permitted us to quit the camp of Henadi, a twelve hours' march brought us to our own tribe, where I embraced Scheik Ibrahim with a truly filial love. We passed several days in recounting our adventures; and when I was completely recovered from my fatigues, M. Lascaris, taking me aside, addressed me as follows:—"My dear son, we have nothing more to do here. Glory be to God, all is terminated, and my enterprise has succeeded beyond my utmost hopes. We must now go and give an account of our mission."

We quitted our friends, in the hope of seeing them again shortly at the head of the expedition for which we had prepared the way, and smoothed the difficulties. Proceeding by Damascus, Aleppo, and Caramania, we arrived at Constantinople in the month of April, after a journey of twenty-six days, frequently through snows. In this fatiguing march I lost my beautiful Negde mare, the present of Ebn Sihoud, which I reckoned upon selling for at least 30,000 piastres; but this was only the forerunner of the misfortunes which were in wait for us. The plague was raging at Constantinople, and General Andreossi made us take up our quarters at Keghat-Kani, where we passed three months in quarantine. It was during this period that we learnt the dismal catastrophe of Moscow, and the retreat of the French army on Paris. M. Lascaris was at the height of despair, and knew not what step to take. After two months of uncertainty, he decided upon returning into Syria, to await the issue of events. We accordingly embarked on board a vessel loaded with wheat. A furious tempest drove us to Chios, where we again met the plague. M. de Bourville, French consul there, procured us a lodging, in which we remained shut up for two months longer.

Having lost almost all our effects in the storm, and being unable to hold communication outside, on account of the contagion, we found ourselves without clothes, and exposed to very great privations.

At length the quarantine was removed. M. Lascaris having received a letter from the consul-general at Smyrna, who invited him to a conference with the

Generals Lallemand and Savary, determined upon going there, and permitted me to pass some time with my poor mother, whom I had not seen for six years.

My travels possessing no further interest, I pass over the interval which elapsed between my separation from M. Lascaris and my return to Syria, to arrive at the sad conclusion.

Being at Latakia with my mother, and waiting for a vessel to transport me to Egypt, where M. Lascaris had ordered me to rejoin him, I saw a French brig of war arrive. I hastened on board to get my letters, and I learnt the melancholy intelligence of the death of my benefactor at Cairo. No words can give an idea of my despair. I felt the love of a son for M. Lascaris, and furthermore, I lost with him all my hopes for the future. M. Drovetti, French consul at Alexandria, wrote me to come to him with all possible dispatch. It was forty days before I could find an opportunity of embarking, and when I arrived at Alexandria, M. Drovetti had departed for Upper Egypt; I followed, and reached him at Asscut. He informed me that M. Lascaris having arrived in Egypt with an English passport, Mr Salt, English consul in Egypt, had taken possession of his effects. He instructed me to apply to him for payment of my salary (500 tallaris per annum), which was about six years in arrear, and recommended me strongly to insist upon restitution of the manuscript of M. Lascaris's travels, as it was a document of the highest importance.

I returned immediately to Cairo. Mr Salt received me very coldly, and told me that M. Lascaris having died under English protection, he had sent his effects and papers to England. All my remonstrances were useless. I remained a long time at Cairo, in the hope of getting my arrears of salary paid, and of obtaining the papers of M. Lascaris. At last Mr Salt threatened to have me arrested by the Egyptian authorities; and it was owing to the generous interference of M. Drovetti that I escaped that peril. Tired of this fruitless strife, I quitted Egypt, and returned to Latakia to my family, more unfortunate and impoverished than when I quitted it, on departing from Aleppo for the first time.

END OF THE STORY OF FATALLA SAYEGHIR.

[The translator of the present edition of Lamartine has considered that the translation of the poems of Antur would appear more appropriately immediately succeeding the relation of Fatalla Sayeghir's residence amongst the Bedouins of the desert, with whose manners these poems are intimately connected, than in an earlier part of the work. Their perusal will, it is conceived, be more relished, from the previous insight which Fatalla's story has given into the usages of those singular tribes.]

FRAGMENTS OF THE POEM OF ANTAR.

FIRST FRAGMENT.

ONE day, Antur, having come to the tent of his uncle Mallek, was agreeably surprised at the favourable reception with which he was greeted. He owed this welcome, so novel to him, to the lively remonstrances of the King Zoheir, who that very morning had strongly urged Mallek to yield to the wishes of his nephew, by granting him his cousin Abba, whom he passionately loved. They spoke of preparations for the marriage; and Abba being anxious to know from her cousin what his projects were, he said to her, "I am ready to do every thing that is agreeable to you." "But," replied she, "I only ask for myself what has been accomplished for others, what Kaled-Ebn-Mohareb did before his marriage with his cousin Djida?" "Fool!" exclaimed her father wrathfully, "who has told you of that? A nephew," he added, turning to Antur, "we will not allow that example." But Antur, overjoyed at perceiving his uncle, for the first time, so amiable towards him, and desiring to give his cousin satisfaction, begged her to relate to him the details of this marriage. "Be-

hold then," said she, "what the women who came to compliment me on your return, have told me. Kaled, on the day of his marriage, slew a thousand camels and twenty lions, these last with his own hand. The camels belonged to Malaeb-el-Assenâ, an emir renowned amid the most valiant warriors. He fed for three days three great tribes whom he had bid to the wedding. Each plate contained a piece of the flesh of lions. The daughter of the King Eben-el-Nazal held the halter of the naka* which Djida mounted." "What, then, is there so wonderful in all that?" said Antur. "By the king of Lanyam and Hattim, none other shall lead your naka but Djida herself, with the head of her husband hung in a sack about her neck."

Mallek scolded his daughter for having broached this subject, pretending to be much displeased with her, whilst it was he who had secretly incited the women to give all these details to Abba, in order to throw Antur into difficulty. Being satisfied with the oath of his nephew, and desirous of turning the conversation, he poured out wine for him, hoping he would become yet more bound to the demands of his daughter.

When the evening was over, as Antur was about to retire, Mallek begged him to forget the remarks of Abba, wishing thus indirectly to recall them to his mind. Having returned home, Antur told his brother Chaiboub to get ready his horse, El Abga, and he immediately departed, proceeding towards the mountain of Beni-Tonailek. On the road he related to Chaiboub what had passed that very evening with Abba. "Cursed be your uncle!" exclaimed his brother; "what a wicked man! From whom has Abba learnt what she has recounted to you, but from her father, who wishes to get rid of you, by precipitating you into such great perils?" Antur, without paying the least attention to the words of Chaiboub, told him to hasten his steps, so as to arrive a day earlier, so eager was he to fulfil his engagement. He then recited the following verses:—

"I traverse rough paths in the darkness of night. I march through the desert full of the loftiest ardour, with no companion but my sabre, and numbering not my enemies. Lions, follow me! you will see the earth strewn with corpses to fatten the birds of the sky!"

Kaled† is no longer rightly named, since I am seeking for him. Djida can exult no more!

Their hands are no longer in safety; tigers will soon be the only inhabitants.

Abba! Receive thus early my congratulations upon all those things that shall adorn your triumph!

Oh thou! whose glances, similar to arrows charged with death, have inflicted upon me such incurable wounds, thy presence is paradise, thy absence a devouring flame!

Oh Allan-el-Fandi! May thou be blessed by the all-powerful God!

I have drunk of wine sweeter than nectar, for it was poured out for me by the hand of beauty.

So long as I shall behold the sun, I will proclaim her merit, and if I die for her, my name will not perish."

When he had finished, the day commenced to appear. He continued his route towards the tribe of Beni-Zolaid. Kaled, the hero of that tribe, enjoyed in it more consideration than the king himself. He was so formidable in war, that his name alone made the neighbouring tribes tremble. Behold his history, and that of his cousin Djida:—

Two emirs—Mohareb, father of Kaled, and Zaher, father of Djida—governed the Bedouins called Beni-Aumaya, renowned for their valour. They were brothers. The eldest, Mohareb, commanded in chief; Zaher served under his orders. One day, after a hot dispute, Mohareb raised his hand to his brother, who returned home with his heart full of resentment. His wife, being informed of the cause of the excited state in which she saw him, said to him, "You ought not to suffer such an affront, you, the most valiant warrior of the tribe, you, renowned for your strength and courage." He answered, "I must respect an elder brother."

* She-camel.

† Happy.

"Well, then, rejoined his wife, "quit him; go elsewhere and establish your residence; but remain not here in humiliation. Follow the precepts of a poet whose verses are as follow:—

"If you experience crosses or misfortunes in a place, remove from it, and let the house regret him who built it.

Your food is the same every where; but your soul once lost can never be recovered.

Never charge another with your affairs; you will always transact them best yourself.

Lions are fierce because they are free.

Sooner or later man must submit to his destiny; what signifies the place where he dies?"

Follow, therefore, the counsels of experience."

These verses made Zaher resolve to forsake his home, with all that belonged to him; and when ready to depart, he recited the following verses:—

"I will go far from you, to a distance of a thousand years, each year a thousand leagues long. If you differed me, as an inducement to remain, a thousand Egypts, each watered by a thousand Niles, I would still remove from you and your lands, repeating, to justify our separation, a couplet which is without an equal: 'Man should fly the places where barbarity reigns.'"

Zaher, proceeding on his march, went to the tribe of Beni-Assac, where he was most favourably received, and chosen its chief. Zaher, being grateful, settled there. Some time afterwards he had a daughter, named Djida, whom he passed for a boy, and who grew up under the name of Giaudar. Her father made her accompany him on horseback, exercised her in combat, and thus drew out her natural disposition and courage. A scholar of the tribe learnt her the arts of reading and writing, in which she made rapid progress. She was perfection itself, for she united to all these qualities an admirable beauty. Thus was it said on all sides, "Happy the woman who shall espouse the Emir Giaudar!"

Her father, having fallen dangerously ill, and believing himself on the point of death, called his wife and said to her, "I conjure you not to contract a fresh marriage after my death, which would separate you from your daughter; but contrive affairs so that she may continue to pass for a man. If, after I am gone, you do not here enjoy the same consideration, return to my brother; I am sure he will receive you well. Take good care of your riches. Money will make you everywhere respected. Be generous and affable, and you will find your reward; in a word, always continue to act as you do at present."

After an illness of a few days, Zaher got better. Giaudar never intermitted his warlike forays, and gave such undoubted tokens of valour in all circumstances, that it became a proverbial saying, "Take care how you approach the tribe of Giaudar."

As to Kaled, he accompanied his father, Meharch, in his daily exercises, in which the most courageous warriors of the tribe took part. They were like a real battle, each day producing its wounded; Kaled caught in them the spirit of emulation to become a great hero, a spirit which the renown gained by his cousin for valour excited still more. He was actuated by a powerful desire to go and see his cousin, but durst not do so, as he was aware of the dissensions that prevailed between their parents. At the age of fifteen, Kaled had become the most valiant warrior of his tribe, when he had the misfortune to lose his father. He was chosen to fill his place; and as he exhibited the same virtues, he was not long in gaining general esteem and respect. Having one day proposed to his mother to go and see his uncle, they immediately departed, bearing with them rich presents in horses, equipments, arms, &c. Zaher received them with unbounded joy, and lavished on his nephew all manner of kindnesses and attentions, for his reputation was well known to him. Kaled tenderly embraced his cousin Giaudar, and conceived for him a warm attachment during the time that he passed with his uncle. Every day he pursued with ardour his military exercises, and charmed Giaudar, who perceived him to be an accomplished warrior, full of

courage and generosity, affable, eloquent, and of masculine beauty. They consumed whole days, and even the greater part of the nights, together. At last Giaudar grew so fond of Kaled, that he entered his mother's tent one day, and said to her, "If my cousin returns to his tribe without me, I shall die of chagrin, for I am desperately in love with him." "I am far from disapproving your passion," answered the parent; "you have good reason to love him, for he pleases every one; besides, he is your cousin, you are of the same blood, almost of the same age, and a more fitting match than you, Kaled could not find; but, in the first place let me speak to his mother, and apprise her of your sex. We will wait until to-morrow; when she comes to visit me as usual, I will inform her of all; we will arrange your nuptials, and depart all together."

The next day she set herself to comb her daughter's hair at the time that the mother of Kaled generally came to her; and when the latter entered the tent, she inquired who that beautiful girl might be; and then the mother of Djida related to her her daughter's history, and the will of her father to have her concealed under the garb of a man. "I make known to you this secret," added she, "because I wish to give her in marriage to your son." "I consent to that project most cordially," replied the mother of Kaled; "what an honour for my son to possess so glorious a beauty!" Then, going in search of Kaled, she communicated to him the whole history, affirming that there was no woman existing whose beauty was to be compared to that of his cousin. "Go, therefore," said she, "and ask her in marriage from your uncle; and if he is good enough to grant her to you, you will be the happiest of mortals."

"I was decided in my own mind," replied her son, "not to separate myself from my cousin Giaudar, so greatly was I attached to him; but since he is a girl, I will have nothing more in common with her; I prefer the society of warriors, the stripes of combat, the hunting of elephants and lions, to the possession of beauty; let there be therefore no more question of this marriage, for I am determined to depart this very instant." In fact, he ordered the preparations for departure, and went to take leave of his uncle, who asked him what put him in such a hurry, and begged him to remain a few days longer. "It is impossible," answered Kaled; "my tribe is without a chief; it is quite necessary I should return to it." With these words he set off on his route, accompanied by his mother, who had uttered her farewell to Djida's mother, apprising her at the same time of her conversation with her son.

On learning the refusal of her cousin, Djida abandoned herself to the bitterest grief, and refused to eat or drink, so powerful was her passion for Kaled. Her father, seeing her in this state, believed her afflicted with illness, and ceased to take her with him in his excursions. One day, when he was gone to a distance, to surprise an antagonistic tribe, she said to her mother, "I will not die for a person who has treated me with so little regard; by the assistance of Providence, I will find out a means of making him also suffer various torments, even those of love." Then, rising with the rage of a lioness, she mounted on horseback, telling her mother that she was going to the chase, and departed for the tribe of her cousin, in the costume of a Bedouin of Kergaz. She was lodged with one of the chiefs, who, taking her for a warrior, gave her a most hospitable reception. The next day, she presented herself for the military exercises under the command of her cousin, and commenced a combat with him, which lasted until noon. The struggle between these two heroes excited the admiration of all the spectators. Kaled, astonished beyond measure at encountering a warrior who could make head against himself, ordered that all possible civilities should be paid to him. The next day witnessed a similar strife, which continued the third and the fourth day. During all this time, Kaled exerted his ingenuity to learn who the stranger was, but without success. On the fourth day, the combat lasted until evening, without either being able to wound the other,

during the whole time. When it was over, Kaled said to his adversary, "In the name of that God who has gifted you with so stout a valour, let me know your country and your tribe." Then Djida, raising her mask, said to him, "I am she, who, though despised by you, yet wished to marry you, and whom you rejected, preferring, as you said, battles and hunts to the possession of a woman; I have come here to make you aware of the force and courage of her whom you cast from you."

After uttering these words, she resumed her mask, and returned home, leaving Kaled in sadness and irresolution, without strength or presence of mind, and so overwhelmed that he fell back in a swoon. When he came to himself, his ardour for war, and the hunting of wild beasts, had given place to love; he went to his mother, and communicated to her this sudden change, giving her likewise an account of his combat with Djida. "You deserve what has befallen you," she said to him; "you would not believe me formerly. Your cousin has acted as she ought, by punishing you for your pride towards her." Kaled remarked that he was not in a state to support her reproaches, and that he had more need of compassion, and he entreated her to go and ask his cousin for him. She immediately went off to the tribe of Djida, in great distress for her son, whom she left in a deplorable state.

As to Djida, after she made herself known to her cousin, she returned to her tribe. Her mother had been uneasy at her absence, and she related to her her adventure, which not a little surprised her, when she heard of so much courage. Three days after her return, the mother of Kaled arrived, who immediately addressed herself to Djida. She told her she was come on the part of her cousin to join them together, and intimated to her, at the same time, the mournful condition in which she had quitted him. "Such a marriage is now impossible," said Djida; "I will never espouse him who has refused me; I merely intended to teach him a lesson, and punish him for having made me suffer so cruelly." Her aunt, representing to her that if he had caused her some pain, he was, at this moment, more unfortunate than she. "If I were to die," cried Djida, "I never would be his wife!" Her father not having yet returned, the mother of Kaled could not speak with him. Finding that she got no satisfaction from Djida, she returned to her son, whom she found pining with love, and already much changed. She gave him an account of her mission, the result of which increased his despair and agony. "There is only one step left for you," said his mother; "take with you the chiefs of your tribe, and those of the tribes, your allies, and go to her father and ask her from him; if he says he has no daughter, relate to him your history, and he will deny you no longer, but feel himself compelled to grant her to you."

Kaled, that same instant, convoked the chiefs and the old men of the tribe, and made them privy to the circumstances that had befallen him. The recital struck them with astonishment. "It is a wondrous history!" said Mehdi-Karab, one of them; "it deserves to be written in letters of gold. We were ignorant that your uncle had a daughter; we knew only his son, named Giandar; whence comes, then, this heroine? We will accompany you when you go to demand her hand, for no one is more worthy of it than yourself."

Kaled, being assured of his uncle's return, took his departure, escorted by twenty of the chief men of his tribe, and a hundred cavaliers. Rich presents followed in his train. Zaher welcomed them in his best style, without understanding the reason of his nephew's prompt return, as he was quite ignorant of his meeting with Djida. On the fourth day of his arrival, Kaled, kissing his uncle's hand, demanded his cousin in marriage, and prayed him to return and dwell with him. Zaher affirmed that he had only a boy, named Giandar, the sole child whom God had granted him; but Kaled related to him all that had happened to him with his cousin. At this information Zaher was troubled, and, after an interval of silence, he said, "I did not think

this secret would ever be discovered; but since it is otherwise, none can have better pretensions to the hand of your cousin than you, and I therefore yield her to you." The price, or dowry, of Djida, was afterwards fixed before witnesses at 1000 red-haired camels, loaded with the choicest productions of Yemen. Then Zaher, entering his daughter's apartment, informed her of the engagement he had come under with Kaled. "I will subscribe it," answered she, "on condition that, on the day of my marriage, my cousin shall slay a thousand camels chosen from amongst those of Melach El Assenc, of the tribe Beni Hamer." Her father, smiling at this request, bound his nephew to obey it. The latter having prevailed on his uncle, with many prayers, to return with him, they all set out together the next day. Zaher was received in his ancient tribe with all possible affection and respect, and was raised to the first station in it.

The day following his arrival, Kaled, at the head of 1000 chosen warriors, went forth to surprise the tribe of Beni-Hamer, gave it battle, and dangerously wounded Melach, from whom he took a greater number of camels than was demanded by Djida, and then returned in triumph to his camp. A few days after that, as he was begging his uncle to hasten the nuptials, his cousin said to him that she would never see him again under her tent, if he brought not to her the wife or the daughter of one of the most valiant emirs of Kail, to hold the halter of her camel, on the day of her marriage; "for I am determined," added she, "that all the young girls shall envy me." To satisfy this fresh demand, Kaled, at the head of a numerous army, attacked the tribe of Nihama Eben-el-Nazal, and, after several battles, he succeeded in capturing Aniane, the daughter of Nihama, whom he took with him. Djida having no further request to make, he began, of his own accord, a hunt after lions. The day before that fixed for the wedding, as he was following the chase, he encountered a warrior, who, advancing towards him, cried out to him to surrender, and descend from his horse that very instant, upon pain of immediate death. Kaled replied to the summons by a vigorous attack upon this unknown enemy. A terrible combat ensued, and continued more than an hour; at length, fatigued by the resistance of an adversary whom he could not subdue, Kaled exclaimed, "Oh, son of a cursed race!—who are you?—what is your tribe?—and why come you to prevent me from continuing a chase which is of importance to me? May maledictions fall on you! Let me know at least whether I am fighting against an Emir, or against a slave." Then his adversary, lifting the visor of his helmet, replied to him, with a smile, "How can a warrior talk in that strain to a young maiden?" Kaled, recognising his cousin, durst not answer her, so much was he overpowered with shame. "I thought," continued Djida, "that you might meet with obstacles in your chase, and I am come to assist you." "By the all-powerful God!" exclaimed Kaled, "I know no warrior so valiant as you, oh queen of beauty!" They then separated, agreeing to meet in the evening on the same spot, which they accordingly did, Kaled having slain one lion, and Djida a male and a female. They parted, more and more charmed with each other.

The nuptials lasted three days, with rejoicings of all sort. More than 1000 camels and twenty lions were killed, the last by Kaled's own hand, with the exception of the two resulting from the hunt of his bride. Aniane led by the halter the naka which Djida mounted. The two lovers were at the height of bliss.

Zaher died some time after this marriage, leaving the supreme command to his two children, Kaled and Djida. This heroic couple shortly became the terror of the desert.

Let us return to Antar and his brother. When they had arrived in the neighbourhood of the tribe, Antar sent forward his brother to observe the nature of the ground, and the situation of Kaled's tent, so that he might take measures to attack it. Chaibou returned to him the next day, with the information that his good fortune surpassed the wickedness of his uncle, as

Kaled was absent. He added, "There are only 100 horsemen in the tribe with Djida. Her husband has departed with Mehdi-Karab, and she is appointed to watch over the common safety. She mounts on horseback every night to make her rounds, followed by a score of troopers, and often goes to a distance, according to the account given me by the slaves." Antar, delighted at this news, told his brother that he hoped to make Djida a prisoner that very evening; that his duty would be to block the passage to her companions, in order that none of them might be able to warn the tribe, which would then start in pursuit. "If you allow a single man of them to escape," he added, "I will cut off your right hand." "I will do all you require," replied Chaiboub, "since I am here to assist you." They remained in concealment the whole day, and drew near the tribe after the sun had gone down. They soon saw several cavaliers coming towards them. Djida was at their head, singing the following verses:—

"The dust from the horses' feet is well scattered—war is my province.

The hunting of lions is a glory and triumph to other warriors, but none to me.

The stars know that my valour has eclipsed that of my fathers.

Who dares approach me when I traverse at night the mountains and the plain?

More than all others have I acquired renown in the discomfiture of the most formidable warriors."

Antar, hearing these verses, told his brother to keep on the left; and he himself, darting to the right, uttered his war-cry in a voice so powerful, that he struck terror into the twenty horsemen in the suite of Djida. Antar, losing no time, dashed upon her, struck down her horse with a blow of his sabre, and gave her so violent a stroke on the head that she lost all consciousness. He left her in order to pursue her companions, slew a dozen of them in a short time, and put the others to flight. Chaiboub, who awaited them in the rear, pierced six of them with his arrows, and Antar, flying to his assistance, disposed of the other two. He then told his brother to hasten to Djida and bind her, before she recovered her senses, and to take for her one of the horses of the cavaliers whom they had just slain. But Djida, after remaining an hour without sense, had come to herself, and, finding a horse without a rider, had taken possession of it. Hearing the voice of Antar, she drew her sabre, and cried out to him, "Do not flatter yourself, son of an accursed race, that you will see Djida in your power. I am here to make you bite the dust, and never should you have seen me on the ground, had you not had the fortune to kill my horse."

At these words she precipitated herself upon Antar with the fury of a lioness robbed of its cubs. He boldly sustained the shock, and a most terrific combat ensued between them. It continued for three entire hours, without any marked advantage on either side. Both were exhausted with fatigue. Chaiboub kept guard at a distance, that no succour might arrive to Djida, who, although weakened by her fall, and wounded in several places, still made an obstinate defence, in the vain hope of being assisted. At last, Antar, falling desperately upon her, seized her by the throat, and she once more swooned away. He took advantage of that to take away her weapons, and to bind her arms. Then Chaiboub urged his brother to depart, before the events of the night came to the knowledge of Djida's tribe and of her allies, who would put themselves in pursuit. But Antar refused, being unwilling to return to Beni-Abdess without plunder. "We cannot," said he, "thus abandon the fine flocks of this tribe, for we must then return a second time at the period of Abba's marriage. Let us wait for daylight; when they go to pasture, we will seize upon them, and then return to Beni-Abdess."

In the morning, the flocks being led to graze, Antar took possession of a thousand nakas, and a thousand camels, with their conductors, entrusted them to Chaiboub to convey them away, and remained to fight the guards, of whom he made a great carnage. Those who were able to escape ran to the tribe, crying out, that a

single negro warrior had seized upon all their flocks, slain a great number of them, and remained upon the field of battle, waiting for them to come and attack him. "We believe," they added, "that he has killed or taken Djida." "Is there in the world a warrior who can make head against Djida, and, still more, conquer her?" asked Giabe, one of the most distinguished chiefs. The others, knowing that she had issued forth the previous evening, and not seeing her return, thought that she was perhaps at the chase. They agreed, however, in all circumstances, to depart instantly to recover their flocks. They marched in troops of twenty and thirty, and soon came up to Antar, who calmly awaited the combat on his horse, and leaning his head on his lance. All cried out at the same time, "Fool! who are you that thus come in search of instant death?"

Without deigning any answer, Antar attacked them with impetuosity, and, in spite of their numbers (there were eighty of them), he easily put them to rout, after inflicting wounds upon several. He afterwards thought it expedient to rejoin his brother, for fear the herds had made away with him; but, as he was setting off, he saw a great cloud of dust arise out of the middle of the desert, and conceiving it to be the enemy, "This is the day," cried he, "that the man must show itself." He continued his route, when he met Chaiboub, who was returning towards him. He asked him what he had done with Djida and the flocks. "When the herds perceived that dust," answered his brother, "they revolted, and refused to continue the march, saying, it was Kaled returning with his army. I slew three of them, but knowing you to be alone against a multitude, I have come to your succour. It were better to die together than separated." "Wretch!" exclaimed Antar, "you were afraid, and have abandoned Djida and the flocks; but I swear by the All-powerful! I will this day perform prodigies that will be celebrated in ages to come!" Having thus spoken, he flew after Djida, whom the herds had unloosed after the departure of Chaiboub. She was on horseback, but wounded, and without arms. Antar, having slain four of the herds, the rest being out of his reach, pursued Djida, who endeavoured to join the army, which was advancing, believing it to be her tribe. But when she was in the middle of the horsemen, she heard them chanting these words: "Antar, most valiant hero, we come to aid you, although you have no need of our assistance."

It was, in fact, the army of Beni-Abdess, commanded by the King Zoheir in person. This prince missing Antar, and fearing that his uncle had engaged him, according to custom, in some perilous enterprise, had sent to Chidad, his father, to gain intelligence of him. Being unable to obtain any from him, he had caused Mallek to be interrogated, who feigned to be no better informed. Chidad had then inquired of Abba, whose candour he knew; and having learnt all from her, he gave information to the king, whose sons, exasperated at Mallek, had taken an immediate resolution to go in search of Antar, saying, that if they found him in safety and in health, they would celebrate his marriage on their return; and that, if he were dead, they would put Mallek to death, on account of the loss of the hero so precious to his tribe. Informed of the project of his sons, Chass and Mallek, the king had determined to put himself at the head of his most valiant warriors, and had quitted the tribe, followed by 4000 cavaliers, in the number of whom was Mallek. During the march, the latter having asked the king what his purpose was: "I wish," answered Zoheir, "to go and extricate Antar from the fatal expedition in which you have involved him." "I assure you," replied Mallek, "that I know nothing about it. Abba alone is culpable; to put an end to the matter, I will return home, and cut off her head." Chass, taking up the conversation, said, "Upon my honour, Mallek, it were better that you were dead; if I were not moved by respect for my father, and friendship for Antar, I would make your head fly from your shoulders." Saying these words, he struck him a violent blow with his courbash, commanding him to be gone, he and his.

On returning from the tribe, Mallek, having collected his relations and friends together, departed, followed by 700 of his own people. The Rabek, one of the most renowned chiefs, and Herone Eben El Wuard, accompanied him with 100 chosen troopers. They marched all the day, and in the evening they pitched their tents, to hold a council, and decide where they were to go, and with what tribe they could unite themselves. "We are," said the Rabek, "more than 700. Let us wait here for news of Antar; if he escapes the danger, and returns to Beni-Abbess, Zoheir will certainly come in search of us; if he perishes, we will migrate, and establish ourselves farther off." This opinion having prevailed, they remained in that place. As to Zoheir, he had continued his march to the assistance of Antar, whom he at last met pursuing Djida. This latter, having obtained the promise of her life, was bound afresh, and given in charge to Chaibouh.

As soon as Antar perceived the king, he got off horseback, and advanced to kiss his sandal, saying, "My lord, you do too much for your slave! why take so much trouble for me?" "Do you wish me, then," said Zoheir, "to leave a hero such as you alone in an enemy's country? You should have communicated to me the demands of your uncle; I would either have satisfied him by giving him my own flocks, or accompanied you in your enterprise."

Antar, having thanked him, went to salute the two sons of the king, Chass and Maalek, and his father Chidad, who told him what had happened to the father of Abia. "My uncle," said Antar, "knows my love for his daughter, and takes an improper advantage of it; but thanks to God, and the terror which our king Zoheir inspires, I have succeeded in my design, and if I had only had fifty horsemen with me, I would have rendered myself master of all the flocks of the three tribes, which were almost without defence; but since I find you here, we will proceed and seize upon them. It shall not be said that the king has taken the field without profit. It is better for him to rest here for a day or two, whilst we march and despoil these tribes."

Zoheir, approving this scheme, caused the tents to be pitched at that very spot, recommending to the warriors who composed the expedition, above all things to respect the women. They remained three days absent, in the course of which they captured, almost without opposition, a booty so considerable that the king was quite astonished at its extent.

On the following day, the order for departure having been given, the army retook the route to the tribe, to the satisfaction of all except Djida, who, surrounded by several cavaliers, performed the journey on a camel led by a negro. When three days' march from the tribe, they encamped in a vast plain. Antar, observing that it was admirably adapted for a field of battle, the king remarked that it was equally propitious for the chase. Antar replied, "But I only love war, and I am ill at ease when I remain any length of time without fighting." A few hours afterwards, they descried a thick cloud of dust which seemed advancing towards the camp. Shortly the steel of the lances was seen glittering, and weeping and shouts of woe were heard. Zoheir, thinking that it was the army of Kaled who had been attacking the tribe of Beni-Amar, and was returning with his prisoners, told Antar to prepare himself for the combat. "Don't be uneasy," replied the hero; "in a short time all those warriors will be in your power." He instantly ordered the necessary preparations, appointing ten troopers, and several negroes, to guard the booty. He burned with desire to measure strength with his foe.

Before going farther, it is expedient to make known to the reader what army was advancing. Kaled, having departed with 5000 warriors and the two chiefs, Kais-Ebn-Mouchek, and Mehdi-Karab, to attack Beni-Amar, had found the country deserted. The inhabitants, being apprised of his design, had retired into the mountains with their possessions. He had therefore taken no plunder; and as he was returning without the capture of a solitary camel, his companions had urged him to go and surprise the tribe Beni-Abbess, the richest

in the land. Kaled having turned towards that tribe, had fallen in with the camp of Abia's father, which he attacked; and, after a whole day's fighting, had taken prisoners all the warriors who composed it, as well as the women and the flocks. Abia, having thus fallen into the power of Kaled, rejoiced at a misfortune which preserved her from a marriage, which her father strove to force her to contract with one of his relations, named Amara, as she preferred being captive rather than the wife of any other man than Antar. She never ceased calling upon his name, saying, "Dear Antar, where are you? Would that you could behold to what position I am reduced!"

Kaled having asked one of his prisoners, who that woman was who was incessantly repeating the same name, he being a sworn enemy to Antar, answered, that she was called Abia, and that she had demanded of her cousin to bring Djida to hold the halter of her naka, on her wedding-day. "We have separated from our tribe," he added, "being unwilling to accompany the King Zoheir in that enterprise, to effect which, he departed with all his warriors, except 300 left to guard Beni-Abbess, under the command of Warka, one of his sons." At this intelligence, Kaled kindled into fury, sent Mehdi-Karab, at the head of 1000 warriors, to seize the women and flocks of Beni-Abbess, with orders to massacre all the men whom he met with. He himself continued his route to rejoin his tribe, treating his prisoners with cruelty, and in great alarm for Djida. To beguile the tedium, he sang the following verses:—

"I have led horses armed with iron, and bearing warriors more formidable than lions.

I have been in the country of Beni-Kannab, of Beni-Amar, and of Beni-Kelal. At my approach the inhabitants have fled into the mountains.

Beni-Abbess is in imminent peril; its people shall weep night and day.

All those who have escaped from slaughter have fallen into my hands.

How many are the maidens whose bright eyes shed tears! They call Beni-Abbess to their succour, but Beni-Abbess is in chains.

Zoheir is gone with his warriors, to find death in a country where the women are more valiant than the men. Evil betide him if they have told me the truth! He has abandoned the certain for the uncertain.

The day of battle will prove which of us two has deceived himself.

My sword rejoices in my victorious hand. The steel of my enemy sheds tears of blood.

The most fearful warriors tremble at my aspect.

My name disturbs their sleep, if terror permits them any repose.

If I did not fear being accused of too much pride, I would assert that my arm alone is sufficient to overturn the universe!"

Kaled, thus pursuing his route, found himself at length in presence of the army of Beni-Abbess. The tears and shouts of the prisoners having reached the ears of Antar and of his warriors, they believed they heard the voices of friends, and apprised Zoheir thereof, who instantly dispatched a trooper named Absi, to reconnoitre the enemy. Kaled perceiving him from afar, exclaimed, "Behold an envoy of Beni-Abbess, who comes to make me propositions; but I will listen to none. I shall make it a war of extermination, and all the prisoners shall be slaves. But whence comes the booty which I perceive? Doubtless they have gained possession of it when Djida was hunting lions." He thereupon dispatched Zebaidé, one of his warriors, to meet the envoy of Zoheir, with orders to gain a knowledge of his mission, and inform himself of the fate of Djida. When they came together, Zebaidé, taking the word, said, "Oh you who come here to meet death, hasten to say what brings you, before your head rolls in the dust." "I despise your vain threats," replied Absi; "we shall soon meet in the field of battle. I come here for three things; to give you news, to warn you, and to get information. First, I announce to you that we have seized upon your women and your flocks.

Secondly, I warn you that we are about to give you battle, under the conduct of the valiant Antar. Thirdly, I come to take note of the booty you have made, for we know that you have attacked the three tribes Beni-Kannab, Beni-Amar, and Beni-Kelal. I have spoken. Answer!" "Our booty," said Zehaide, "has come to us without trouble; terror for the name of Kaled has sufficed." He then related what has been before mentioned concerning the father of Abba, and added, that 1000 warriors had been dispatched to surprise Beni-Abbess. "In my turn," he concluded, "I demand from you news of Djida." "She is a prisoner," replied Absi, "and suffering from her wounds." "Who then has been able to vanquish her—her, who is brave as her husband?" asked the envoy of Kaled. "A hero whom none can resist," said Absi; "Antar, the son of Chidad."

The two envoys having fulfilled their missions, returned to give an account to their respective chiefs. Absi, upon arriving, shouted out, "Oh, Beni-Abbess! fly to arms to wash out the affront inflicted on you by Beni Zobaïde." Then, addressing himself to Zohcir, he sang the following verses:—

"Beni-Abbess, surprised by the enemy, lies desolate. A destroying wind has swept the place; the echo alone remains.

They have despoiled you of your goods; the men have been massacred; your wives and children are in the power of the enemy. Hear their cries of distress; they call for your aid. Beni Zobaïde is triumphant, hasten to vengeance!

Oh, Antar, if you saw the despair of Abba, how it exceeds that of her companions!

Her garments are steeped in tears; the very earth is swimming with them!

Abba, the most beautiful amongst the beautiful!

Fly then to arms! the day of victory or death is come! May death follow the blows of your redoubtable arms!"

At this recital, Zohcir could not prevent himself from weeping. His affliction was shared by all the chiefs who surrounded him. Antar, alone, experienced some degree of satisfaction, on learning the sad fate of his uncle, who had been the cause of all his misfortunes; but his love soon drove all pleasurable sensations from his heart.

The envoy of Kaled, when arrived in his presence, tore his clothes, and repeated the following verses:—

"Oh, Beni Zobaïde, you have been surprised by the warriors of Beni-Abbess, borne upon horses fleet as the wind!

Your most precious possessions have been plundered.

Will you be merciful to those who have carried off even your wives?

Oh, Kaled! if you could see Djida, with her eyes bathed in tears!

Oh you, the most potent of warriors, hasten to attack your enemies sword in hand!

Death is preferred by the brave to a life without honour.

Let not the wicked brand you with the name of coward!"

Upon hearing these things, Kaled was excited to rage, and gave orders to march to the combat. Zohcir, perceiving this movement, likewise advanced, followed by his soldiers. The plain and the mountains trembled at the approach of the two armies. Zohcir, addressing Antar, said, "The enemy is numerous; this day will be terrible!" "My lord," answered Antar, "man can but die once. Behold the day is come at last, which I have so long desired! If Kaled has with him Caesar and the king of Persia, I will deliver our women and children, or I will perish." He then recited the following verses:—

"Man, whatever may be his condition, can never support contempt.

The man, generous towards his guests, owes them the success of his arm.

He ought to know how to bear misfortune, when valour fails to give him the victory.

He ought to protect his friends, and redden his lance with the blood of his foes.

The man who possesses not these virtues, deserves to be held in no estimation.

I wish to make head against the enemy by myself alone.

What has been plundered from us, I will this day recapture.

The battle which I am about to give, shall make the highest mountains quake.

Let Abba rejoice, her captivity shall soon be ended."

On hearing these verses, Chass exclaimed, "How you make your voice heard above the clamour—you, who surpass all the learned in eloquence, and all warriors in valour!"

Kaled, before coming to blows, gave orders to make as many prisoners as possible.

Antar went in the direction of the captives to endeavour to deliver Abba, but he found them guarded by a considerable number of horsemen. Kaled, in the same manner, drew near the place where Djida was kept, flattering himself that Beni-Abbess would not stand an hour before him. He commenced by attacking the warriors who encompassed Zohcir, and succeeded in wounding Chass. His father defended him like a lion, and the combat lasted till the close of day. Darkness alone separated the two armies, which retired into their respective camps. After prodigies of valour, Antar returned, and learnt from the king that Kaled had wounded his son. "By the All-powerful!" cried Antar, "I will commence to-morrow by vanquishing Kaled! I would have done so to-day, but I sought to deliver Abba, and have not succeeded. When Kaled is slain, or made prisoner, his army will promptly disperse, and we shall be able to save our unfortunate friends. Beni-Zobaïde shall learn that we surpass it in bravery."

"Oh, bravest of the brave!" exclaimed Zohcir, "I do not doubt our success, but I cannot avoid shuddering, when I think that Mehdi-Karab, at the head of numerous warriors, has gone to surprise our tribe, guarded only by my son Warka, and a small number of our men. I fear he will obtain possession of our women and children. What will become of us if we are not the conquerors to-morrow?" Antar, having promised to bring the affair to a conclusion the next day, they took a light repast, and retired into their tents to enjoy a little rest. Instead of reposing like the others, Antar, taking a fresh horse, set off to make his rounds, accompanied by Chaïbouh, to whom, as they proceeded on the way, he recounted his fruitless efforts to deliver Abba. "I was more fortunate than you," said Chaïbouh, "for, after many endeavours, I succeeded in seeing her to-day, and I will tell you how. When I saw battle joined in the plain, I took a long circuit by traversing the desert, and I reached the place where the prisoners were detained. I saw the Rabek, his brother Herone Ebn-el-Wuard, your uncle Mallek, his son, and the other warriors of our tribe, bound across the backs of camels. Near them were the women, and amongst them Abba, whose beautiful eyes were pouring torrents of tears. She stretched her arms towards our camp, exclaiming, 'Oh, Beni-Abbess, is there not one of thy sons who will come and deliver us?—not one who will tell Antar of the sad condition in which I languish?' One hundred warriors surrounded the captives, as a ring encircles the finger. I endeavoured, however, to carry off Abba, but I was recognised and pursued. In retreating, I let fly my arrows at them. Thus I passed the whole day, ever returning to the charge, and always pursued. I slew more than fifteen of their soldiers. But you see how sad is the fate of Abba." This recital drew tears from Antar, who was choked with rage. After making a considerable circuit, they at last arrived at their destination.

At the dawn of the day, the two armies drew up in order for the combat, and were only waiting the signals of their chiefs to fall upon each other, when a rumour was spread through the ranks of Beni-Abbess, that Antar had disappeared. This disastrous intelligence discouraged the warriors of Zohcir, who already considered themselves vanquished. The king was about to demand a suspension of arms, to wait until the re-

turn of Antar, when he saw from afar a thick dust arise, which grew greater as it advanced. At length were heard cries of despair and pain. This third army fixed the attention of the two others. Shortly they perceived warriors supple as saplings, all cased in steel, advancing joyously to the combat. At their head marched a veteran, tall as a cedar, firm as a rock; the earth trembled beneath his tread. Before him were men bound upon camels, and surrounded by troopers leading several unmounted horses. These troopers shouted out, "Beni-Zobaïde!" and their voices echoed through the desert. It was Mehdi-Karab, who had been sent by Kaled to despoil Beni-Abdess. He was returning, after happily accomplishing his mission. Having arrived at that tribe as the sun was rising, he had gained instant possession of all the horses, of the best camels, and of several maidens, daughters of the first families. But Warka, having collected in haste the few warriors that were with him, had set off in pursuit. When Mehdi-Karab saw himself followed, he sent the plunder forward, under an escort of 200 cavaliers, and attacked the squadron of Warka, which, though very inferior in numbers, sustained the fight with obstinacy till the fall of day. Then Beni-Abdess, having lost half its troops, and Warka being captured, the remainder dispersed. Mehdi-Karab, after this affair, resumed his route; and hastening forward, he arrived in time to take part in the action about to commence. He immediately ranged his force in battle-array. At this sight Zoheir exclaimed, "Behold my fears realised! but, no matter, let the sabre decide between us! Any fate is preferable to the shame of witnessing our women reduced to slavery, and rendered bodies without souls."

Mehdi-Karab was received by his comrades with transports of joy; and after relating the events of his expedition, he inquired after Kaled, and learnt with dismay, that, having mounted his horse the previous evening to keep guard, he had not returned. Concealing his disquietude, he fell with impetuosity upon Beni-Abdess, followed by the whole army uttering their war-cry. The warriors of Zoheir sustained the terrible shock like men in despair, determined to die rather than live apart from those they loved. Streams of blood flooded the field of battle. At noon the victory was still undecided, but Beni-Abdess began to grow faint. The foe made a frightful carnage in its ranks. Zoheir, who was in the left wing, with his sons and chief men, seeing the centre and right wing yielding, was in the greatest distress, not knowing how to prevent the dispersion of his army, when he perceived, behind the enemy, a squadron of 1000 picked warriors, shouting aloud, "Beni-Abdess!"

It was commanded by Antar, who, like a tower of brass, was advancing with all speed, preceded by Chaïbouh crying with stentorian voice, "Evil betide you, ye children of Beni-Zobaïde! Seek safety in flight! Hide yourselves from the death which is hovering above you. If you do not believe me, open your eyes, and behold at the point of my lance the head of your chief, Kaled-Ebn-Mohareb!"

SECOND FRAGMENT.

Antar, during his captivity in Persia, having rendered the king of that country important services, that monarch granted him his liberty, and dismissed him, loaded with rich presents in silver, horses, slaves, flocks, and arms of all sorts. Antar, encountering on his route a warrior renowned for his valour, who had seized upon Abba, slew him and took his cousin with him. When near his tribe, he sent to give his parents notice, as they believed him dead long ago; the announcement of his return filled them with joy, and they set off to meet him, accompanied by the principal chiefs, and the King Zoheir himself. On perceiving them, Antar, intoxicated with gladness, sprang to the earth to kiss the stirrup of the king, who embraced him with affection. The other chiefs, delighted to see him again, pressed him in their arms. Amara, his despicable rival, discontended.

To do honour to his king, Antar continued the march by his side, entrusting the guard of his bride to ten negroes, who during the night fell asleep on their camels, Abba, having done the same thing in her haudag, was alarmed when she awoke at finding herself far from the rest of the troop. Her cries awakened the negroes, who then perceived that the camels had strayed from the right path. Whilst they dispersed to endeavour to find out the road again, Abba descended from her haudag, and was immediately seized by a cavalier, who lifted her in his arms and placed her behind him on his horse. It was Amara, who, rendered furious at the honours paid to his rival, had separated from the tribe, and meeting his cousin alone, had taken the resolution to possess himself of her person. When she reproached him for his treachery, so unworthy of an emir, he said to her, "I prefer carrying you off, to dying of chagrin by seeing you marry Antar." Then continuing his journey, he proceeded to seek refuge in a powerful tribe, the enemy of Beni-Abdess. In the meantime, the negroes having discovered the road, had returned to take the haudag, ignorant that Abba had quitted it. Antar, having accompanied the king as far as his tent, turned back to meet his bride, whom, to his great surprise, he found no longer in her haudag. The information given by the negroes as to her disappearance being unsatisfactory, he mounted his horse and flew off to seek Abba, holding his course for several days, with lamentations for her loss, and singing the following verses:—

"Sleep flies my eyelids; tears have furrowed my cheeks.

My constancy causes my agony, and leaves me no rest.

We saw each other for so short a time, that my sufferings are augmented in consequence.

This removal, these continual separations, tear my heart. Ah! how I regret your tents, Beni-Abdess!

How many useless tears I shed far from my beloved!

To be happy, I only asked to remain near you as long as a miser would allow a sight of his treasure."

Antar returned after long and fruitless searches, and he determined to dispatch his brother Chaïbouh in disguise. After a long absence, Chaïbouh came back, and informed him that he had discovered Abba with Mafarey-Ebn-Hammam, who had wrested her from Amara, with the intention of marrying her; but that she, unwilling to form the union, had pretended madness, and her abductor, to punish her, had made her work like a slave, in which capacity she was expected to bad usage on the part of Mafarey's mother, who employed her in the roughest labour. "I heard her call upon you," added Chaïbouh, "singing the following verses:—

"Come and deliver me, oh, my cousins! or at least inform Antar of my woeful state.

My sufferings have exhausted my strength; nothing but misfortune has befallen me since I quitted the lion.

A slight breeze sufficed to make me ill, so judge what I endure from the hardships to which I am reduced.

My patience is at an end. My enemies may be satisfied; how many are my humiliations, since I lost the hero of my heart!

Ah! if it be possible, bring Antar to me; the lion alone can protect the gazelle!

My misfortunes would melt rocks!"

Antar, refusing to hear more, departed on the instant, and, after long and bloody fights, he delivered Abba.

REFLECTIONS OF ANTAR.

Let your enemies stand in awe of your sword; remain not where you are despised.

Settle amongst the witnesses of your triumphs, or die gloriously with arms in your hands.

Be a despot with despots, a wicked man amongst the wicked.

If your friend forsakes you, seek not to bring him back, but close your ears to the calumnies of his rivals. There is no shelter against death.

TRAVELS IN THE EAST.

It is better to die fighting than to live in slavery.

Whilst I was counted in the number of slaves, my thoughts traversed the clouds.

I owe my renown to my sword, not to the nobility of my birth.

My great deeds will make my birth respected by the warriors of Beni-Abdess, who are tempted to despise it.

The warriors and the steeds themselves are there to attest the victories of my arm.

I have darted my horse into the midst of the enemy, into the dust of the combat, during the heat of action; I have brought it out spotted with blood, suffering from my matchless activity; at the end of the fight it had only one colour.

I have slain their fiercest warriors; Rabiha-Ilafebar, Ghaber-Ebn-Mehalka, and the son of Rabiha-Zabkan, have remained upon the field of battle.

Zabiba* blames me for exposing myself at night, she fears I may fall by the weight of numbers; she would wish to scare me with death, as if it were not to be endured some day.

Death, said I to her, is a fountain at which we must drink sooner or later.

Cease then to torment yourself, for if I do not die, I must be slain.

I will conquer all the kings who are already at my feet, trembling for the blows of my redoubtable arm.

Tigers and lions even have submitted to me.

The chargers remain mournful, as if they had lost their masters.

I am the son of a woman with a black forehead, the limbs of an ostrich, and hair like grains of pepper.

Oh, you who return from the tribe, what is passing there?

Bear my salute to her whose love has preserved me from death.

My enemies desire my humiliation; cruel fate!—my degradation is their triumph.

Tell them that their slave deplores their absence.

If your laws permit you to kill me, satisfy your desire; no one will ask an account of my blood.

Antar, precipitating himself into the midst of the foe, disappeared from the eyes of his comrades, who, fearing for his life, were about to carry succour to him, when he reappeared holding the head of the enemy's chief in his hand. He sang the following verses:—

“If I slake not my sabre in the blood of the enemy, if it flows not at its stroke, may my eyes enjoy no sleep, and I will renounce the happiness of seeing Abba in my dreams.

I am more active than death itself, for I burn with desire to destroy those for whom it consents to wait.

Death, on witnessing my exploits, respects my person. The arms of the Bedouins are not long enough to reach me, the most terrible of warriors—me, the furious lion—me, whose sword and lance give souls their liberty.

When I shall see death, I will make it a turbah with my sabre, the blood of which will increase its lustre.

I am the lion who protects all that belongs to him.

My actions will be crowned with immortality.

My black complexion becomes white when the heat of combat inflames my heart; my love becomes extreme; persuasion then has no empire over me.

May my neighbour be always triumphant, my enemy humiliated, cowed, and without asylum.

By the All-powerful, who has created the seven heavens, and who knows the future, I will not cease to fight until I destroy my enemy, for I am the lion of the earth, always ready for war!

My refuge is in the dust of the field of battle.

I have put the opposing warriors to flight, throwing on the ground the corpse of their chief. See his blood which trickles down my sabre!

Oh, Beni-Abdess! make ready your triumphs, and be proud of a negro who has a throne in the heavens.

Ask my name from sabres and lances, they will tell you that I am called Antar.”†

The father of Abba, unwilling to give his daughter to Antar, had quitted the tribe during his absence. On his return, the hero, not finding his cousin, spoke the following verses:—

“How shall I deny the love I bear to Abba, when my tears testify to the grief that her absence causes me? When at a distance from her, the fire which devours me becomes every day more ardent. I cannot conceal sufferings which are unceasingly renewed.

My patience diminishes, whilst my desire to see her again augments.

To God alone I complain of my uncle's tyranny, for none comes to my aid.

My friends! love is killing me; me, so vigorous and formidable!

Oh, daughter of Mallek! I banish sleep from my exhausted body; besides, how could I yield myself to it, when on a bed of burning coal?

I weep so much that the birds even will recognise my grief, and weep with me.

I kiss the earth which you touched; perhaps its freshness may cool the fire of my heart.

Oh, beautiful Abba! my spirit and my heart wander, whilst your flocks are in safety under my guard.

Have pity on my sad state; I will be faithful to you to all eternity.

In vain my rivals rejoice; my body will taste no repose.”

FRAGMENTS OF ARAB POETRY.

A caliph, being at the chase, wandered, after losing his suite, and arrived near a spring, where three young Bedouin maids were drawing water; having asked them to let him drink, they all three hastened eagerly to present him with water. Charmed with their kindness, the caliph wished to reward them; but finding himself without money, he broke some of his arrows, which were of gold, and distributed the pieces among them. Each returned him thanks in verse.

The first said: “If your arrows are of gold, it is to show your generosity, even for the enemy. You thus give the wounded wherewithal to get well tended, and the dead means to pay for their burial.”

The second said: “In battle, your too liberal hand extends its largesses even to your enemies; your arrows are of a precious metal, in order to prove that war prevents you not from bestowing favours.”

The third said: “In days of battle he throws his foes arrows of massive gold, so that the wounded may not be abandoned, and the dead may purchase their winding-sheets.”

An Arab, having made a young girl blush by looking at her, said, “My glances have sown roses upon your cheeks, wherefore forbid me from plucking them! The law permits him who plants to reap.”

Tanbé-Eben-Homager made a great number of verses for his mistress, Lailla-el-Akeatall; amongst others, those which follow: “When I am dead, if Lailla-el-Akeatall comes to the place where I am at rest to speak to me, in order to answer her, my voice will clear the earth and the stones that cover me, or the echo of my tomb will make itself heard.”

The passion of Tanbé was so violent, that he died. Not long after, Lailla, having married, passed not far from the tomb of Tanbé, accompanied by her husband, who told her to go and speak to that fool, to see if he would answer her, as he had proclaimed in his verses. When she wished to excuse herself, her husband repeated the order with fury. Forced to obey, she turned the head of her camel towards the tomb, and on arriving at it, she exclaimed, “Tanbé, are you there?”

At these words, a huge bird flew from a bush close by, and alarmed her camel, which, bounding back, threw Lailla to the ground. She was killed by the fall, and was interred by the side of Tanbé.

Ehnuassondi said to me: “I have known you shed tears of blood, so great was your fidelity; why, then, are your tears become white?”

* Antar's mother.

† Couragocous

I answered: "It is no proof either of my forgetfulness or inconstancy; but from weeping so much, time itself has whitened my tears."

NOTE OF THE AUTHOR.

I entertained a design of adding here a translation of some modern Arab poems, to give at least an idea of them; but I learn that an able hand, and one more versed than mine, has been already occupied on the task. A volume, entitled *Melanges de Litterature, Orientale et Française* (Scraps of French and Oriental Literature), by J. Agoub, is to appear in a few days. I knew the author, a young poet, of the highest hopes, removed prematurely from his family and glory. He was born in Egypt, and had been educated in France. We discover in the original fragments that he has left behind him, and we will doubtless find in his translations, the heated and deep colouring of his country, joined to the purity of the French taste. His works, published by his widow, are the sole heritage that he has left his family and his country.

I have placed here some fragments taken from the publication which I speak of; they will excite, I am sure, a desire to know more of them.

A. DE LAMARTINE.

15th April, 1833.

MAOUALS,

OR VULGAR ROMANCES OF THE MODERN ARABS.

Extracted from the Collection entitled "*Melanges de Litterature, Orientale et Française*."

By J. AGOUB.

Now that thy figure, like a shooting twig, is so slim and graceful, grant me thy carresses, oh my beloved, and let us use time, which is flying. Close no longer against love the secret door of thy favours. Believe me, beauty is fleeting, and its empire is not long in duration.

They have compared thee to the star of night, but how greatly are they deceived in their language! Has the moon those beautiful black eyes or bright pupils? Reeds bend and incline to the least breath of the zephyr; thou, who resemblest them in thy slight form, seest all men bow before thee.

If the torment of my heart renders thee happy, torment me; for my happiness is thine, if it be not that thine is still more sweet to me. If thou wishest to deprive me of life, if that sacrifice is necessary to thee, take my life, oh, thou who art my only life, and be not angry with me.

What harm would there be, young beauty, if thou treatedst me with more justice? Thou wouldst cure my painful malady by a remedy which would preclude the necessity of applying to the Canon of Avicene.* Every time that I contemplate thy lovely eye-brows, I believe I perceive the graceful outline of the moon;† and thy voice is more sweet to my ear than the sounds of the harp and the sembrin.‡

When my beloved passes, the bough of the willow is jealous of her upright figure; the rose bends with shame, when it sees the carnation of her cheek, and I exclaim, "Oh, thou who hast captivated my soul without return, thy glances have laid open my wound in my breast, which will not be cured all my life!"

I love, I love a youth, and my passion burns like a flame in the depths of my heart. When love glided

* A celebrated treatise on medicine by Ibn Sina.

† A letter, the form of which is arched.

‡ A stringed instrument.

into my bosom, a slight down scarcely shaded the cheeks of my lover. Yes, I am in love; and it is for thee, my beloved, that my tears flow; but I swear by him who created love, that my heart never felt emotion for any but thee. I offer thee my first love.

When the night closes in with its darkness, it is like the blackness of thy plaited hair; when the day glows with its purest light, it recalls the lustre of thy dazzling visage; the aloës, with its gentle exhalations, scatters only thy own perfume, and the enamoured lover of thy charms shall pass his life in singing thy praises.

The beloved advances, but her face is veiled, and the sight of her disturbs and confounds all minds. The light stem of the tulip is jealous of her flexible and attractive form. Suddenly she raises with her hand the envious veil which conceals her, and the people utter cries of surprise. "Is it a flash of lightning," they exclaim, "which has glittered on our dwellings? or have the Arabs lighted fires in the desert?"

AUTHOR'S POLITICAL SUMMARY.

In the vicissitudes and leisure moments of eighteen months of travels, the mind thinks almost involuntarily. The different aspects under which human affairs present themselves to it, group and illumine them; in history, philosophy, and religion, a man reasons instinctively upon what he has seen, felt, and inferred; truths are impressed upon him, and when he questions himself, he discovers that in various respects he is another man. The world has spoken to him, and he has understood its language; if it were otherwise, of what use to the traveller would be the pain, the peril, or the prolonged tedium of separation, of absence from his friends and country? Travels would be a brilliant deception. They give, on the contrary, structure to the thought, through nature and mankind. But, nevertheless, a man whilst travelling parts not from himself; the ideas which preoccupied his age and country, when he quitted the paternal roof, still pursue and engage his mind, when he moves onwards. Politics being the exciting topic for Europe, and especially for France, I reflected much upon them whilst in the East. In them, as in history, as also in philosophy and religion, conceptions more just, extended, and accurate, have resulted to me from the examination and impression of facts and places, in a political sense. Some things have been concentrated in my mind, and I now give the produce. It is the only page of these travelling notes that I would wish to display to Europe, for it contains correct views applicable to the present time, which are necessary to be understood whilst they are clear and apposite, and whilst they may tend to render the future fruitful in results. If they are understood and acted upon, they may save Europe and Asia, they may multiply and improve the human race. They may produce an epoch in the laborious and progressive career of humanity; if they are contemned and rejected as impracticable dreamings, on account of some slight difficulties in their execution, the good or evil passions of Europe will explode upon itself, and Asia will remain as it is, a dead and sterile member of the human family.

Theories have carried Europe to one of those great organic crises, of which history has preserved but one or two instances in its memoir; epochs in which an emasculated civilisation gives place to another in which the past has no longer any influence, in which the future presents itself to the masses in all the uncertainty and darkness of the unknown; epochs terrible in their consequences when they are not fertile of good; they are the critical convulsions of the human mind, which plunge it into annihilation for ages, or invigorate it for a new and lengthened existence. The French revolution has been the tocsin to the world. Many of its phases are accomplished, but it is not yet concluded; nothing is finished in these slow, internal,

and everlasting movements, of the moral life of man. There are intervals of inertness; but during these very periods thought ripens, capabilities accumulate, and all is prepared for fresh action. In the progress of societies and ideas, the end is over but a new starting point. The French Revolution, which will hereafter be called the European Revolution—for ideas find their level like water—was not only a political revolution, a change of power, one dynasty set up in place of another, a republic substituted for a monarchy—all these things were but accidents, symptoms, instruments, or means. The operation was so much the more grave and portentous, that it could have been worked out under all the forms of political power, and that an individual might have been a monarchist or a republican, attached to one dynasty or to another, the partizan of this or that constitutional combination, without being the less sincerely or deeply a man of the revolution. He might have preferred one instrument to another by which to move the world, and change its position, and that was all. But the idea of a revolution, that is to say, of a fundamental alteration and improvement, did not the less brighten his mind, or the less warm his heart. Where is amongst us the thinking man, the man of feeling and reason, the man of religion and hope, who, putting his hand upon his heart, and questioning himself before God, and in sight of institutions which crumbled because they were anomalous and antiquated, will not answer, "I was a revolutionist?" The age carries forward those who resist it, as well as those who go before and urge it. Time is a current so rapid and resistless, that those who row the most vigorously, and who strive to mount or stem the flow of its waters, find themselves insensibly borne very far from the spot they cling to in their hearts, and are astounded some day when they measure the way they have involuntarily made. There soon comes a mid-way era, when the revolution, ripened in the mind, bursts into facts. It is at first but a combat, then a ruin; the dust of that struggle and ruin obscures all for a long time; men know not wherefore, or upon what ground, or under what banners, they fight. They draw, as if in darkness, upon their friends and brothers; re-actions follow the first movement, excesses sully all parties; and men retire with horror from a cause which crime is called in to serve, and which it injures as it does invariably. They pass from one excess to another; they no longer understand the tumultuous struggles or the vicissitudes of the strife, or, in other words, the confusion and disorder, the triumph and discomfiture, the enthusiasm and dismay.

At the present day, we begin to comprehend the providential plan of that great contest between ideas and men. The dust has settled, the prospect is cleared. We perceive the positions taken up and lost, the ideas remaining on the field of battle, those which are mortally wounded, those which still survive, those which triumph, or are destined to triumph. We understand the past, we understand the era, and we lift up a corner of the future. It is a glorious and rare moment for the human mind. Man gains a knowledge of himself, and the work which he effects; he almost opens up the horizon of his future. When a revolution is at length understood, it is accomplished; success may be deferred, but it is no longer doubtful. The new system, if it has not perfected its conquest, has at least gained an infallible weapon. This weapon is the press: that daily and universal revelation from all to all, is to the spirit of innovation and amelioration what gunpowder was to those who first understood its use; it assures the victory by a superior capability. For political philosophers there is no longer any question of fighting but only of moderating and directing the invincible weapon of the new civilisation. The past is extinguished, the soil is free, the field is empty; equality of rights is admitted as a principle; liberty of discussion is consecrated in the governing forms, and power carried back to its source; the interest and reason of all are engaged in institutions, which have weakness to fear more than tyranny; speech, spoken and written, has the right of

making, at all times and places, its appeal to the general intelligence. This great tribunal of reason controls, and will more and more control, all the other powers that emanate from it; it stirs, and will stir, all the social, religious, political, and national questions, with the force which opinion lends to it, according to its temporary convictions, until human reason, illumined by the ray which it pleases God to shed upon it, has entered upon possession of the whole social world, and when, satisfied with its intellectual achievement, it says, like the Creator, "What I have done is good," and rests itself for some days, if repose be at any time in heaven and upon earth.

But the social questions are complicated. The solution of those relative to internal policy requires a solution, in the same spirit, of those which are without. All things have a mutual dependence in the world, and one operation always re-acts upon another. Let us see, then, with regard to the East, what should be logically the plan and action of the European political systems; I say European, for although the constitutional, or, better named, the rational system, prevails in its forms only in France, England, Spain, and Portugal, it prevails throughout in spirit; the thinkers are everywhere its partizans; the people are imbued with its idea; and a revolution, when commenced or perfected in the mind, is soon brought about in fact; an opportunity only is wanting, it is a mere affair of time. Europe has various forms of polity, but already it has but one soul, that for renovation, and the government of men according to reason. France and England are the two countries of experience, charged, in these latter times, to promulgate and test theories. Glorious and fatal mission! France, the boldest, has taken the initiative; she is at present far in advance. Let us first speak of her.

France has a glorious career and great dangers before her; she leads the nations, but she tries the route, and she may stumble on the abyss whilst seeking the social track. The hatred of all who cling to the past is aroused against her. In religion, philosophy, and politics, all who have a horror of reason have a horror of France; the secret prayers of men who are for retrograding, enamoured of the past, are for her ruin; she is for them the symptom of their own fall, the living proof of their powerlessness, and the mendacity of their forebodings. If she prospers, she belies their doctrines; if she crumbles, she verifies them; all experiments for the amelioration of human institutions, end with her downfall; a shout of applause is raised, and the world remains the prey of tyranny and prejudice. The fanatics of tyranny and prejudice, therefore, ardently desire her subversion. At every movement that she makes, they proclaim its approach; on every occasion they look forward to it with hope; but France is powerful, much more by the active spirit which animates her, than by the number of her soldiers. She alone has faith, and a clear and generous instinct of the great cause for which she struggles; they oppose to her warlike machines, and she throws martyrs into the arena. Determination is more vigorous than an army; France, divided, ruined, tyrannised, flooded with blood within by executioners, attacked from without by her own sons, and the arms of entire Europe, has shown to the world that dangers from abroad fail to peril her safety; intestine strife is more serious, but it results from the novelty of her position; a transition is always a crisis; and the foreseen or unforeseen consequences of a new principle, inevitably bring about unexpected phenomena in the social existence of a great people. The immediate consequences of the revolution in France, and the accidental circumstances of the convulsion she has just passed through, are numerous; I speak only of the main ones.

Equality of rights has produced an equality in the pretensions and ambition of all classes, the desire of power, the general struggle for all employments, impediments to advancement in all careers, rivalry, jealousy, envy, amongst so many men pressing all at once upon the same outlets; a perpetual squeezing of men of capacity, cupidity, and self-love, at the entrance

to all public functions, and a crowd of rejected and envenomed minds thrown back upon society, and ready to seek revenge by embroiling it.

Liberty of discussion and examination, as established in a free press, has produced a spirit for contest and dispute, without good faith, an opposition in calling and attitude, a cynicism in words and logic, which affrights truth and moderation, which misleads and inflames ignorance, and draws contempt upon government, that first necessity of nations, in whatever hands it may be vested. Honest but timid men are alarmed, and weapons are given to all the most evil passions of the age and the country.

Education, spread amongst the masses, although the primary want of populations, which have been kept so long apart from it, yet produces upon them at the first moment a sort of confusion of ideas, the full comprehension of which is still far from them, and a giddiness of mind from the light glaring too powerfully and too suddenly upon it. They are like a man who is drawn from darkness, in which he has long languished, and whose return to the sunbeams is too precipitately forced; like a famished man to whom too much food is thrown at once; the first is dazzled, and remains blind for a period; the other perishes, perhaps from the very ailment which was to restore him to life. It does not follow, however, that food and the light of the sun are baneful; it is the sudden transition which is mischievous. It is the same with the education of the masses; it produces at first a superabundance of capacity, eager for social employment, a want of level between capabilities and occupations, which may, and which must create, for a time, a serious disturbance in political harmony, until the equilibrium on a higher scale is re-established, and the multitudes of instructed minds plan out for themselves their fitting modes of action.

As to the industrial movement; it tears the people from their family manners and habits, from the peaceable and virtuous labours of the land; it over-induces work by the gain which it suddenly proffers, and which is as suddenly withdrawn; it inures to the luxury and vices of towns, men who can no longer return to the simplicity and moderation of the rural life; hence are populations, to-day too few for the demand, to-morrow thrown out of employment, whom want renders a prey to disorder and sedition.

The *prolétaires*;* a numerous class, imperceptible in despotic, ecclesiastical, and aristocratic governments, in which they live under the wing of one of the powers which possess the soil, and have, at least, their existence guaranteed by their patrons; a class which, at present left to itself by the suppression of their superiors, and by *individualism*, is in a worse condition than it has ever been; it has gained barren rights without the means of subsistence, and will disturb society, until *socialism* has succeeded to this odious individualism.

It is from the situation of the *prolétaires* that the question of property, which is now a universal topic, has sprung; a question which would be resolved by battle and partition, if it were not shortly settled by reason, policy, and *social charity*. Charity is *socialism*; selfishness is *individualism*. Charity, acting in concert with good policy, commands man not to abandon man to himself, but to come to his aid, to form a sort of mutual assurance, on equitable conditions, between the classes possessing and those not possessing. It says to the proprietor, "Thou shalt preserve thy estate;" for, in spite of the brilliant dream of a community of goods, attempted in vain by Christianity and philanthropy, the right of property is to this day the *sine qua non* of all society; without it there are no family ties, labour, or civilisation. But it says also, "Thou wilt not forget that the right of property is not society instituted for thee, but for all humanity; thou art entitled to it only, on

conditions of justice and utility, of sharing it with, and rendering it available to all; thou wilt furnish therefore to thy brethren, from the superfluity of thy possessions, the means and elements of labour, which are necessary for them to gain their part in return; thou wilt recognise a right as superior to that of property—the rights of humanity!" Here justice and policy are the same.

From all these facts in the new system, a palpable want has resulted to France and Europe—the want of more room. There is an absolute necessity that the expansion without should be in proportion to the immense expansion within, which has been produced by the revolution in affairs. Without this extension abroad, how are the perils to be obviated that I have just pointed out, how is equality in rights to be secured, when it is denied in fact? How can free discussion be permitted, and reason, and its organ the press, resisted? How can instruction be disseminated, and the minds pressed down which it multiplies? how can industry be put in motion, and provision be made for the agglomerations of masses, and the sudden cessations of work and wages, which result from it! How are those multitudes of *prolétaires* to be restrained, who are continually increasing, and who are armed, although undisciplined, struggling between misery and a rising to pillage? How is property to be saved from the theoretical and practical attacks, which it will have more and more to sustain?—and if this corner-stone of all society should give way, how is society itself to be saved? and where will security be found against a second barbarism? These perils are such that if the foresight of the governments of Europe does not find palliatives, the ruin of the social world is inevitable within a given time.

Now, by an admirable provision of Providence, who never creates new wants without presenting at the same time means to satisfy them, there is occurring at this very moment, when the great civilising crisis is progressing in Europe, and when the fresh necessities which result from it are becoming known to governments and people, a grand crisis of a contrary nature in the East and in Asia, and a boundless stage is opened to the populations and resources of Europe. The exuberance of life which threatens to break bounds with us, may and ought to be poured upon that part of the world; the excess of productive power which torments us might be employed in those countries where vigour is exhausted and laid asleep, where the inhabitants are stationary or diminish, and where the vital energy of the human race is defunct. The Turkish empire crumbles, and leaves from day to day a void for anarchy and disorganised barbarity, territories without people, and populations without guides or masters; and this ruin of the Ottoman empire requires no provoking or pushing; it is accomplished of itself, providentially, by its own action, by its very nature; it is accomplished like events decreed by fate, without its being possible to accuse any one of it, or for the Turks, or Europe, to prevent it. The population sinking on itself, is expiring from its own incapability of living, or rather it is no more. The Moslem race is reduced to nothing in the 60,000 square leagues of which its fertile dominion is composed; except in one or two capitals, there are scarcely any more Turks. Let us cast our eye over those rich and admirable countries, and seek the Ottoman empire; we find it no where. The stupid administration, or rather the destructive inertness, of the conquering race of Osman, has made a desert on all sides, or has allowed the conquered races to multiply and increase, whilst it was diminishing and perishing daily itself.

Africa and its sea-coast no longer regard the Turkish sway. The Barbary regencies are independent in fact, and have not even that fraternity, that sympathy of religion and manners, which constitutes a shadow of nationality. The blow struck at Navarino was disregarded at Tunis; the blow struck at Algiers was heeded not at Constantinople; the branch is severed from the trunk; the sea-coast of Africa is neither Turkish nor Arabian—it is a collection of brigand colonies, usurping the land without rooting themselves in it, without title

* [The *prolétaires* is a new designation introduced into French political economy. The term may be said to comprise those who, having no actual property, live by the exercise of labour. M. de Lamartine seems to limit it to the class that we call farmers, or persons employed in agricultural pursuits, apart from the landless.]

or right, as the strongest of the nations, but holding only by force of arms. They are as a vessel without a flag, upon which all the world may fire; Turkey is not there.

Egypt, peopled with Arabs, commanded by all the alternate masters of Syria, has just detached itself in reality from the empire. Mehemet-Ali attempts the resurrection of the kingdom of the caliphs; but the fanaticism of a new dogma, which glowed around their sabre, is wanting to him. Arabia, divided into tribes, without cohesion, without uniformity in manners and laws, accustomed for many ages to the yoke of the pachas, is far from regarding Mehemet-Ali as a liberator; it does not consider him even as a civiliser, who summons it from barbarity and helplessness to discipline and independence; it sees in him but a fortunate and rebellious slave, who strives to increase the portion that fortune has given him, to enrich himself with the produce of Egypt and Syria, and to die without a master. After he is gone, it knows that it will fall again under some yoke, and it matters little whose.

Bagdad, on the confines of the desert of Syria, contains a population of Jews, Christians, Persians, and Arabs; a few thousands of Turks, commanded by a pacha, who is driven away, or who revolts every three or four years, are not sufficient to constitute a Turkish nationality in a town of 200,000 souls. Bagdad is from its position a free town, a caravanserai belonging to the whole of Asia, as a depôt for its internal commerce; it is another Palmyra in the desert. Between Bagdad and Damascus, reign the vast deserts of Syria and Mesopotamia, traversed by the Euphrates. There are in them no kingdoms, towns, or dominations; there are only the tents which unknown and independent tribes move to and fro on these plains; tribes who have nothing in common but their caprices, who recognise no country or master; children of the desert, who have for enemies all those who strive to subject them to control—yesterday the Turks, to-day the Egyptians. The Turks are not there.

Damascus, a large and magnificent city, a holy city, where the Moslem fanaticism still prevails, has a population of 100,000 to 150,000 souls; of this number 30,000 are Christians, 7000 or 8000 are Jews, and more than 100,000 are Arabs. A handful of Turks still reign, from the spirit of conquest and identity of religion, in the country; but Damascus, unsettled and independent, revolts at every moment, massacres its pacha, and chases away the Turks. It is the same in Aleppo, a town infinitely less important, whence commerce is departing, and which is sinking under the devastations of its earthquakes. The towns of Syria, properly so called, from Gaza as far as Alexandretta, comprising in the list Hama and Hama, are in the same manner peopled by Arabs, Syrian Greeks, Jews, and Armenians. The total number of Turks in this fine and vast territory does not exceed 30,000 or 40,000. The Maronites, a sound, vigorous, intellectual, warlike, and commercial nation, occupy Lebanon, and despise or defy the Turks. The Druzes and Metualis, independent and courageous tribes, will form, with the Maronites, under the federal government of the Emir Beschir, the predominant population of Syria, and even of Damascus, when all shall be dismembered, and abandoned to nature. In them is the germ of a great people, fresh, and fit for civilisation; Europe has but to give a favourable glance, and cry to them "Arise!"

Then come Mount Taurus, and that immense Carmania (Asia Minor), the provinces of which were seven kingdoms, and on its shores were independent towns, or flourishing Greek and Roman colonies. I have traversed all its coasts, I have entered into all its gulfs, from Tarson to Tcheshmé, and I have seen nothing but fertile and deserted plains, and a few miserable hamlets, inhabited by Greeks. The interior contains the unconquerable tribe of the Turcomans, who gather their flocks on the mountains, and encamp on the plains in the winter. Adana, Konia, Kutaya, and Antioch, its chief towns, are each inhabited by some thousands of Turks. Smyrna alone is the centre of a vast population, containing about 100,000 souls, but more than the half are

Christians, Greeks, Armenians, and Jews. If we skirt the shores of Asia Minor, we find the beautiful Greek isles of Seio, Rhodes, and Cyprus. Cyprus of itself is a kingdom; it is eighty leagues long, and twenty broad; it has fed, and would again feed, several millions of inhabitants. It has the sky of Asia, and the soil of the tropics; it is peopled by about 80,000 Greeks; and sixty Turks, shut up in a ruinous fort, represent the Ottoman nationality—the same in Rhodes, Stanchio, Samos, Seio, and Mitylene. Where, then, are the Turks? We have now gone over the fairest half of the empire.

The banks of the Sea of Marmora, and the channel of the Dardanelles, are spotted also with some small towns, half Turkish, half Greek, a scarce and impoverished population, disseminated at great distances, on coasts without any back country. We cannot raise the whole Turkish population in these countries at more than 100,000 souls, comprising Broussa.

Constantinople, like all the capitals of a people in decay, alone offers an appearance of throng and life; in proportion as the vitality of empires departs from the extremities, it is concentrated at the heart. There was also a day when the whole Greek empire was in Constantinople; and when the city was taken, there was no longer an empire. Authorities are not agreed upon the population of Constantinople; they range from 300,000 to a million of souls; there is no census taken, and each judges from particular premises. My ideas upon the subject are formed merely from the glance cast over the immense extent of the city, comprising within it Scutari, the shores of the Golden Horn, the Sea of Marmora, and the coasts of Asia and Europe. I comprehend all these under the name of Constantinople, for there is no interruption in the houses. Denominations of quarters, towns, and villages, are arbitrary; it is but a single mass of a city, a single concentration of people; the uninterrupted continuation of houses, kiosks, palaces, or villages, over a depth sometimes considerable, at others of one or two houses only, stretches for fourteen French leagues. I am of opinion that the whole of this population may be carried as high as 600,000 or 700,000 souls. A third only, however, is Turkish; the rest is Armenian, Jewish, Christian, Frank, Greek, and Bulgarian. The Turkish population of Constantinople, therefore, according to my computation, would be from 200,000 to 300,000 souls. I have not visited the banks of the Black Sea, but according to the excellent and faithful travels of M. Fontanier, published in 1834, the indigenous populations predominate, and the Turks are reduced in numbers there, as in the parts of the empire I have already surveyed.

In Turkey in Europe, the only great town is Adrianople; 30,000 or 40,000 Turks may be reckoned there. In Philippopolis, Sophia, Nissa, Belgrade, and the small intermediate towns, as many more. I add 200,000 Turks for the districts of Turkey that I have not visited, raising them in the whole to about 300,000. In Servia and Bulgaria there is scarcely one Turk for each village, and I suppose that it is the same in the other provinces of Turkey in Europe. Making allowance for any errors on my part, and attributing to the interior of Asia Minor a Turkish population much superior to what the appearance and state of the country would cause to be inferred, I do not think that, in reality, the sum total of the Turkish population exceeds at present two or three millions; I am far from believing that it reaches that point. This, then, is the conquering race, sprung from the borders of the Caspian Sea, and melted under the sun of the Mediterranean! This is Turkey, possessed by so small a number of men, or rather already lost by them; for whilst the dogma of fatalism, the inertness resulting from it, the immobility of institutions, and the barbarism of the administration, have reduced almost to nothing the conquerors and lords of Asia, the Slavonic and Christian races in the north and south of the empire, the Armenian, Greek, and Maronite races, and the subject Arabs, have increased and multiplied, in consequence of their manners, creeds, and activity. The number of the slaves prodigiously exceeds the number of the oppressors. The Greeks of the Morea, a weak

and wretched population, have, in a moment of energy, by themselves purged the Peloponnese of the Turks; Moldavia and Wallachia have thrown off the yoke; the sales would have been all free, but for the European treaty which still guarantees them to the sultan; the whole of Arabia is cut up into families unknown to each other, and made use of by the Turks and Egyptians alternately, whilst the most vigorous portion of the country is a prey to the great schism of the Wahabites. Two-thirds of the Armenians have been torn from the Turkish domination, by the Russians and Persians; the Georgians are Russians, the Maronites and Druzes will be masters of Syria and Damascus whenever they set seriously about it; the Bulgarians are a numerous and healthy population, still tributary, but who, being more capable of organisation than the Turks, and exceeding them in numbers, can enfranchise themselves at a word; this word the Servians have uttered, and their magnificent forests begin to be pierced by roads, and covered with towns and villages; Prince Milosch, their chief, admits a few Turks at Belgrade, only as allies and not as masters. The spirit of conquest, the fire of the Osmanlis, has burnt out; the zeal of armed proselytism has long ago vanished from amongst them; their impelling force has no existence; and their conservative capability, which in a uniform administration would be enlightened and progressive, is only in the head of Mahmoud; the popular fanaticism was extinguished with the janissaries, and if the janissaries were to revive, barbarism would revive with them; a miracle of genius is required to resuscitate the empire; Mahmoud is only a man of feeling, genius is no property of his; he promotes himself his own ruin, and encounters obstacles on all sides, where a mind more capacious and firm would find instruments; he is thus reduced to lean for support upon the Russians, his immediate enemies. This political despair and weakness injures him in the opinion of his people; he is nothing more than the shadow of a sultan, taking part in the successive dismemberment of the empire. Hemmed in between Europe which protects him, and Mehemet-Ali who threatens him; if he resists the humiliating protection of the Russians, Ibrahim will arrive, and overthrow him by his mere appearance; if he fights Ibrahim, France and England will seize his fleets, and cast anchor in the Dardanelles; if he forms an alliance with Ibrahim, he becomes the slave of his slave, and finds a prison or death in his own seraglio. A heroic energy and a burst of sublime despair can alone save him, and sustain for a time the Ottoman glory, by shutting up on both sides the Dardanelles and the Black Sea, making an appeal to southern Europe, and to what remains of Islamism, and marching in person on Ibrahim and the Russians; but supposing him to be successful, the empire, after a momentary blaze of glory, would be decomposed immediately afterwards; only its fall would be brightened with a ray of heroism, and the race of Othman would finish as it commenced, in a triumph.

Now that we have seen the state of Europe, and that of the Ottoman empire, what should be done by political foresight and humanity, cleared of all blind and stupid selfishness? What ought Europe to do? The routine of diplomacy, which repeats its once received axioms after they have lost their application, and which trembles at having a grave and real question to treat, because it has neither the intelligence nor the energy to resolve it, says that it is necessary to support the Ottoman empire, on all sides, as a necessary counterpoise in the East to the Russian sway. If there were an Ottoman empire, and Turks capable of creating and organising, not only armies, but a state which might keep watch upon the frontier of the Russian empire, and give it serious disquietude, whilst southern Europe was enjoying it, this policy might possibly be considered. But it would require a very bold or foolish man to propose to Europe, "Erase from the map an existing empire; remove one of the large weights of balance, so unequally poised, of the political world, and the world will not perceive it." But the Ottoman empire exists only in name; its vitality is worn out, its

weight is no longer felt; it is but a vast empty shell, which your anti-human policy would leave a void in of occupying it, instead of filling it with some vigorous populations which nature has already placed there, and which you yourselves will bring about to multiply. Do not precipitate the ruin of the Ottoman empire, assume not the part of destiny, or the responsibility of Providence; but maintain not by an illusory and culpable policy, a phantom to which you can never give any thing but the mere aspect and attitude of life, for it is dead. Make not yourselves the auxiliaries of barbarism and Islamism, against civilisation, reason, and a more improving religion, which they would keep down. Be not the accomplices in the servitude and depopulation of the fairest provinces in the world. Let destiny accomplish its fiat; look on, wait, and be prepared.

When the empire shall fall of itself, sapped by Ibrahim or by some other pacha, and tumble to pieces from the north to the south, you will have a very simple question to decide:—Must war be made on Russia, to prevent her inheriting the borders of the Black Sea and Constantinople? Must war be made on Austria, to prevent it inheriting the half of European Turkey? Must war be made on England, to prevent it inheriting Egypt, and its route to the Indies by the Red Sea? Must war be made on France, to prevent her colonising Syria and the island of Cyprus? On Greece, to prevent it completing its conquest of the coast of the Mediterranean, and the beautiful islands which bear its own people and name? On all the world, in fine, lest any one should profit from these magnificent wrecks? Or is it better to come to an understanding, and partition them amongst the human race, under the patronage of Europe, in order that mankind may there increase and multiply, and civilisation spread its sway? Such are the two questions which a congress of the powers of Europe will have to weigh. Surely the decision is not doubtful.

If you make war, you will have war with all the ills and devastations which it brings with it; you will cause misfortune to Europe, to Asia, and to yourselves; and when the war is at an end, from exhaustion, nothing of what you have been fighting to prevent will be prevented; the force of circumstances, the irresistible inclination of events, the influence of national sympathies and religions, the potency of territorial position, will have their inevitable effect. Russia will occupy the shores of the Black Sea and Constantinople; the Black Sea is a Russian lake, the key to which is Constantinople. Austria will spread over Serbia, Bulgaria, and Macedonia, to progress in the same extent as Russia; and France, England, and Greece, after disputing for a long time about the mode, will occupy Egypt, Syria, Cyprus, and the isles. The end will be the same; only floods of blood will have been shed on sea and land. Forced and arbitrary divisions, made by the accidents of battles, will have been substituted for rational divisions of territory, useful colonisations will be protracted for years; and during these years, perhaps they may be many, Turkey in Europe and Asia will have been a prey to anarchy and incalculable calamities. You will find there more deserts than the Turks left on their disappearance. Europe will have retarded instead of following up its accelerated movement of civilisation and prosperity, and Asia will be kept in its sepulchre much longer. If reason presides over the deliberations of Europe, can it hesitate? If it does hesitate, what will history say of its governments and its leaders? It will say, that the political affairs of the nineteenth century were conducted by suicidal folly and selfishness, and that cabinets and people rejected the most magnificent present that Providence ever offered to the necessities of an age, and to the advancement of mankind.

This is what ought to be done. To assemble a congress of the principal powers that abut on the Ottoman empire, or have interests in the Mediterranean; to establish both the principle and the practice, that Europe withdraws from all direct action or influence in the internal affairs of Turkey, and abandons it to its own resources, and the chances of its own destiny;

INCIDENTS OF TRAVEL

IX

EGYPT, ARABIA PETRÆA,

AND

THE HOLY LAND.

BY J. L. STEPHENS,

AUTHOR OF INCIDENTS OF TRAVEL IN GREECE, TURKEY, RUSSIA, AND POLAND.

EDINBURGH:

PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM AND ROBERT CHAMBERS;
AND SOLD BY ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1839.



•

•

EDINBURGH:
PRINTED BY W. AND R. CHAMBERLAIN
19, WATERLOO PLACE

•

PREFATORY NOTICE.

THE present work, which appeared originally in the United States of America, where it soon passed through six editions, has been already made favourably known in Britain, and now occupies a place among the most respectable publications of the day. To the sixth American edition, of which this is a faithful reprint, the following preface is prefixed by the author:—

"The preface of a book is seldom read, or the author would express his acknowledgments to the public for having so soon demanded a sixth edition of his work. If the sale of a book be any evidence of its merit, he has reason to believe that his subject matter has been interesting, and his manner of treating it not unacceptable. He has, too, a deeper source of satisfaction; for he cannot help flattering himself that he has been, in some degree, instrumental in turning the attention of his countrymen to subjects comparatively little known; and, in addition, he can only say, as before, that in the present state of the world it is almost presumptuous to put forth a book of travels. Universal peace and extended commercial relations, the introduction of steam-boats, and increased facilities of travelling generally, have brought comparatively close together the most distant parts of the world; and except within the walls of China, there are few countries which have not been visited and written upon by European travellers. The author's route, however, is comparatively new to the most of his countrymen; part of it—through the land of Edom—is, even at this day, entirely new. The author has compiled these pages from brief notes and recollections, and has probably fallen into errors in facts and impressions, which his occupations since his return have prevented his inquiring into and correcting. He has presented things as they struck his mind, without perplexing himself with any deep speculations upon the rise and fall of empires; nor has he gone much into detail in regard to ruins. His object has been, principally, as the title of the book imports, to give a narrative of the every-day incidents that occur to a traveller in the East, and to present to his countrymen, in the midst of the hurry, and bustle, and life, and energy, and daily-developing strength and resources of the New, a picture of the widely different scenes that are now passing in the faded and worn-out kingdoms of the Old World."

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.	Page	CHAPTER VIII.	Page
Alexandria. Policy of Egypt. The Catacombs. The War-wick Vase. The Pacha's Canal. Boats of the Nile,	5	The Rock of the Chimæ. Ravages of the Plague. Deserted Quarries. A youthful Navigator. A recollection of Sam Patch. Ancient Inscriptions. A perplexed Major-Domo. A dinner without parallel. An awkward Discovery,	21
CHAPTER II.		CHAPTER IX.	
From Alexandria to Cairo. Experiences on the Nile. A Table. An unintended Bath. Iron Rule of the Pacha. Entrance into Cairo. A Chat with a Pacha,	7	Ascent of the Cataracts. A Nautical Patriarch. Political Improvement. A Nubian Damsel's Wardrobe. A test of Friendship. East and West. Moonlight on the Nile. Uses of a Temple,	27
CHAPTER III.		CHAPTER X.	
The Slave market at Cairo. Tomb of the Pacha. The Pyramid of Cheops. Oppressive Attentions of the Arabs. The Sphinx,	11	Thebes, its Temples and great Ruins. The Obelisk of Luxor, now at Paris. An Avenue of Sphinxes. Carnac. The Blumny pie. The Tombs of the Kings. The Memnonium,	31
CHAPTER IV.		CHAPTER XI.	
Journey up the Nile. An Arab Burial. Pilgrims to Mecca. Trials of Patience. A Hurricane on the Nile. A Turkish Bath,	14	The Arabs and our Pacha. March into the Desert. Arab Christians. A cold Reception. Arab Punctuality. A Night in a Convent. An Arab Christian Priest. Speculative Theology. A Journey ended before commenced,	37
CHAPTER V.		CHAPTER XII.	
Sporting on the Nile. A Recluse. An Egyptian Hebe. Scent. A Wolf Race among the Tombs. Adventure with a Governor,	16	A Travelling Artist and Antiquary. An Egyptian Sugar-house. Grecian Architecture. A Melancholy Greeting. Tyranny of the Pacha. Amateurs of Physic. Memphis. Adventure with a Wild Boar. Perils of a Pyramid. The Catacombs of Birds. Amor Patriæ. Voyaging on the Nile,	38
CHAPTER VI.		CHAPTER XIII.	
Small Favours thankfully received. Slavery in Egypt. How to catch a Crocodile. An elaborate Joke. Imaginary Perils. Arabs not so bad as they might be,	18	A good Word for the Arabs. A Prophecy fulfilled. Ruins of a Lost City. A Sheikh of the Bedouins. Interviews and Negotiations. A Hadj, or Pilgrimage to Mecca. Mahomedan Heaven for Wives. A French Sheikh. The Bastinado. Departure for the Desert,	39
CHAPTER VII.			
The Temple of Dendera. Practice against Throats. Regulating the Sun. The French at Thebes. The Curse of Pharaoh. An Egyptian Tournament. Preparations for Dinner. An English travelling Lady,	21		

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER XIV.	Page	CHAPTER XXV.	Page
The Caravan. Arab Political Economy. A projected Railroad. The Sirocco. Suez. A travelled Englishman. The Red Sea. Embarkation of Pilgrims. A Misadventure. Scriptural Localities. The Bitter Fountain.	42	Approach to Hebron. A Sick Governor. A Prescription at Randon. Hospitality of the Jews. Finale with the Bedouins. A Storm. A Calm after the Storm. Venality of the Arabs. Hebron. A Coptic Christian. Story of the Rabbi. Professional Employment.	40
CHAPTER XV.		CHAPTER XXVI.	
The Aspect of the Mountains. Arab Graves. The Pacha and the Bedouins. The Value of Water. Perplexing Inscriptions. Habits of the Arabs. Ethics of the Desert. Breach of the Marriage Vow. Arrival at the Convent. An Excess of Welcome. Greece and America. Amor Patriæ.	46	An Arnaout. The Pools of Solomon. Bethlehem. The Empress Helena. A Clerical Exquisite. Miraculous Localities. A Boon Companion. The Soldier's Sleep. The Birthplace of Christ. Worship in the Grotto. Moslem Fidelity.	43
CHAPTER XVI.		CHAPTER XXVII.	
Ascent of Sinai. A Miracle. The Grotto of Elias. A Monkish Legend. The Pinnacle of Sinai. Anchorites. Mahommed and his Camel. An Argument. Legend of St Catharine. The Rock of the Tables. The Stone struck by Moses. Description of the Convent. Habits and Character of its inmates.	50	The Tomb of Rachel. First View of Jerusalem. Falling among Thieves. Potent Sway of the Pacha. A Turkish Dignitary. A Missionary. Easter in Jerusalem. A little Congregation.	49
CHAPTER XVII.		CHAPTER XXVIII.	
Diet of the Monks. Advantages of Abstinence. Scruples overcome. A mysterious Brother. The Convent Burial-place. Strange Chamber-houses. Death in a Mask. Familiarity breeds Contempt. A Man of two Countries. Doubts and Fears. Parting Gifts. The Farewell.	54	Church of the Holy Sepulchre. An unexpected Discovery. Mount Calvary. The Sepulchre. The Valley of Jehoshaphat. The Garden of Gethsemane. Place of the Temple. The four Great Tombs. Silo's Brook.	51
CHAPTER XVIII.		CHAPTER XXIX.	
The Caravan.—A sudden Change of Purpose.—Perils of a Storm. Comfortless Repentance. Solitude. A Woman and a Chase. A Patriarchal Feast. Condition of the Arab Women. Hospitality. No refusing a good Offer. A Dilemma.	57	The Field of Blood. A Traveller's Compliment. Singular Ceremony. A Ragged Rascal. Ostentatious Humility. Pride must have a Fall. An Ancient Relic. Summary Legislation.	54
CHAPTER XIX.		CHAPTER XXX.	
Evening Amusements. A Trial of the Feelings. A Disappointment. A Santon of the Desert. An Arab Fisherman. Turkish Costume. A potent Official. A Comfortless Sick-room. A Visit from the Sheik. Interested Friendship. Akaba. The El Alouins. Questionable Piety.	59	The Synagogue. Ideal Speculations. A Ride in the Rain. An Ex Official. Joppa. A Moral Phenomenon. Reverence for the Grave.	59
CHAPTER XX.		CHAPTER XXXI.	
Prophecy and Fulfilment. Unpleasant Suggestions. The Dandified Land. Management. A Rencontre. An Arab's Cunning. The Camel's Hump. Adventure with a Lamb. Mount Hor. Delicate Negotiations. Approach to Petra.	63	Desert of St John. A Midnight Procession. Road to Jericho. A Community of Women. A Navigator of the Dead Sea. A Dance by Moonlight. A rude Lodging.	60
CHAPTER XXI.		CHAPTER XXXII.	
Petra. Arrival. Entrance to the City. The Temple of Petra. A Record. The Theatre. Tombs of Petra. Arab Simplicity. Departure from Petra. A Night in a Tomb. Dangers of the Route.	66	The River Jordan. The Dead Sea. Force of Example. Buoyancy of the Dead Sea. A Perilous Ascent. A Navigator of the Dead Sea. Story of the Voyage. The Convent of Santa Saba.	62
CHAPTER XXII.		CHAPTER XXXIII.	
A bold Endeavour. Unexpected Obstacles. Disadvantage of a Dress. The Dead Sea. A New Project. The Tomb of Aaron. An Alarm. Descent of the Mountain. An awkward Meeting. Poetic Licence. All's well that ends well. Unexpected Dignities. Arab Notions of Travel.	70	Convent of Saint Saba. A strange Picture. Celebration of Good Friday. Palm Sunday. A Struggle for Life. The Grave of a Friend. A Convert. Burial of a Missionary.	65
CHAPTER XXIII.		CHAPTER XXXIV.	
Valley of El Ghor. Prophecies against Edom. The Sheik's Treachery. An Explosion. Personnel of the Arabs. Amusing Retrospect. Money Troubles. Aspect of the Valley. Death of a Camel. The Desert Horses. Native Salt.	74	Pilgrimage to the Jordan. Pilgrim's Certificate. The Tomb of Samuel. Departure from Jerusalem. Last View of the Dead Sea. Village of Einbroot. Departure from Judea. Mounts Gerizim and Ebal. An Antique Manuscript. Paganism in Samaria.	67
CHAPTER XXIV.		CHAPTER XXXV.	
The Road to Gaza. Unknown Rains. A Misadventure. Pastoral Bedouins. A Village of the Wilderness. Ravages of War. Testimony of an Eyewitness.	78	Sebaste. Ruins of the Palace of Herod. Mount Tabor. Nazareth. Scriptural Localities. Tiberias. An English Sportsman. Bethsaida and Chorazin. Capernaum. Zaffar. ival at Acre.	69
		CHAPTER XXXVI.	
		A ride on Donkeyback. Caipha. Adventure with a Consul. Mount Carmel. The Plain of Jezreel. Convent of Mount Carra. Kindness of the Monks. Curiosity gratified.	66
		CHAPTER XXXVII.	
		St Jean d'Acre. Extortions of the Pacha. Tyre. Quaintable Company. Lady Esther Stanhope. Departure from the Holy Land. Conclusion.	68
		NOTE.	69

INCIDENTS OF TRAVEL

IN

EGYPT, ARABIA PETRÆA, &c.

CHAPTER I.

Alexandria.—Pompey's Pillar.—The Catacombs.—The Warwick Vase.—The Pacha's Canal.—Boats of the Nile.

On the afternoon of the —— December, 1835, after a passage of five days from Malta, I was perched up in the rigging of an English schooner, spyglass in hand, and earnestly looking for the "land of Egypt." The captain had never been there before; but we had been running several hours along the low coast of Barbary, and the chart and compass told us that we could not be far from the fallen city of Alexander. Night came on, however, without our seeing it. The ancient Pharos, the Lantern of Ptolemy, the eighth wonder of the world, no longer throws its light far over the bosom of the sea to guide the weary mariner. Morning came, and we found ourselves directly opposite the city, the shipping in the outward harbour, and the fleet of the pacha riding at anchor under the walls of the seraglio, carrying me back in imagination to the days of the Macedonian conqueror, of Cleopatra and the Ptolemies. Slowly we worked our way up the difficult and dangerous channel, unaided by a pilot, for none appeared to take us in charge. It is a fact worthy of note, that one of the monuments of Egypt's proudest days, the celebrated Pompey's Pillar, is even now, after a lapse of more than 2000 years, one of the landmarks which guide the sailor to her fallen capital. Just as we had passed the last reef, pilots came out to meet us, their swarthy faces, their turbans, their large dresses streaming in the wind, and their little boat with its huge latteen sail, giving a strange wildness to their appearance, the effect of which was not a little heightened by their noise and confusion in attempting to come alongside. Failing in their first endeavour, our captain gave them no assistance; and when they came upon us again, he refused to admit them on board. The last arrival at Malta had brought unfavourable accounts of the plague, and he was unwilling to run any risk until he should have an opportunity of advising with his consignor. My servant was the only person on board who could speak Arabic; and telling the wild, fly-away looking Arabs to fasten on a stern, we towed our pilots in, and at about eight o'clock came to anchor in the harbour. In half an hour I was ashore; and the moment I touched it, just as I had found at Constantinople, all the illusion of the distant view was gone.

Indeed, it would be difficult for any man who lives at all among the things of this world to dream of the departed glory of Egypt when first entering the fallen city of Alexander; the present, and the things of the present, are uppermost; and between ambling donkeys, loaded camels, dirty, half-naked, sore-eyed Arabs, swarms of flies, yelping dogs, and apprehensions of the plague, one thinks more of his own movements than of the pyramids. I groped my way through a long range of bazaars to the Frank quarter, and here, totally forgetting what I had come for, and that there was such

things as obelisks, pyramids, and ruined temples, the genius of my native land broke out, and with an eye that had had some experience in such matters at home, I contemplated the "improvements:" a whole street of shops, kept by Europeans and filled with European goods, ranges of fine buildings, fine country houses, and gardens growing upon barren sands, showed that strangers from a once barbarous land were repaying the debt which the world owes to the mother of arts, and raising her from the ruin into which she had been plunged by years of misrule and anarchy.

My first visit was to Mr Gliddon, the American consul, whose reception of me was such, that I felt already as one not alone in a strange land. While with him, an English gentleman came in—a merchant in Alexandria—who was going that night to Cairo. Mr Gliddon introduced us; and telling him that I, too, was bound for Cairo, Mr T. immediately proposed that I should accompany him, saying he had a boat and every thing ready, and that I might save myself the trouble of making any preparations, and would have nothing to do but come on board with my luggage at sundown. Though rather a short notice, I did not hesitate to accept his offer. Besides the relief from trouble in fitting out, the plague was in every one's mouth, and I was not sorry to have so early an opportunity of escaping from a city, where, above all others, "pestilence walketh in darkness, and destruction wasteth at noonday."

Having but a short time before me, I immediately mounted a donkey—an Egyptian donkey—being an animal entirely unknown to us, or even in Europe, and, accompanied by my servant, with a sore-eyed Arab boy to drive us, I started off upon a full gallop to make a hasty survey of the ruins of Alexandria. The Frank quarter is the extreme part of the city, and a very short ride brought us into another world. It was not until now, riding in the suburbs upon burning sands, and under a burning sun, that I felt myself really in the land of Egypt. It was not, in fact, till standing at the base of Pompey's Pillar, that I felt myself among the ruins of one of the greatest cities of the world. Reaching it through long rows of Arab huts, where poverty, and misery, and famine, and nakedness, stared me in the face, one glance at its majestic height told me that this was indeed the work of other men and other times. Standing on a gentle elevation, it rises a single shaft of ninety feet, and ten feet in diameter, surmounted by a Corinthian capital, ten feet high, and, independent of its own monumental beauty, it is an interesting object as marking the centre of the ancient city. It stands far outside the present walls, and from its base you may look over a barren waste of sand, running from the shores of the Mediterranean to the Lake Mareotis, the boundaries of Alexandria as it was of old.

All this intermediate space of sandy hills, alternating with hollows, was once covered with houses, palaces, and perhaps with monuments equal in beauty to that at whose base I stood. Riding over that

waste, the stranger sees broken columns, crumbling walls, and fragments of granite and marble, thrusting themselves above their sandy graves, as if struggling for resurrection; on one side he beholds a yawning chasm, in which forty or fifty naked Arabs are toiling to disentomb a column long buried in the sand; on another an excavated house, with all its walls and apartments almost as entire as when the ancient Egyptian left it. He is riding over a mighty sepulchre, the sepulchre of a ruined city, and at every step some tell-tale monument is staring at him from the grave.

Riding slowly among the ruins, I passed the celebrated wells built in the time of Alexander, at the very foundation of the city, at which generation after generation have continued to slake their thirst, and ended my ride at Cleopatra's Needle, a beautiful obelisk sixty feet high, full of mysterious hieroglyphics that mock the learning of the wise of our day. Time has dealt lightly with it; on one side the characters stand bold and clear as when it came from the hands of the sculptor, although, on the other, the dread sirocco, blowing upon it from the desert more than 2000 years, has effaced the sculptor's marks, and worn away the almost impenetrable granite. By its side, half buried in the sand, lies a fallen brother, of the same size, and about the same age, said to have been taken down by the English many years ago, for the purpose of being carried to England; but the pacha prevented it, and since that time it has lain in fallen majesty, stretching across a deep chasm formed by excavations around it.

At six o'clock I was riding with my new friend, spurring my donkey to its utmost to get out of the city before the gate should close; and my reader will acquit me of all intention of writing a book, when I tell him that a little after dark of the same day on which I arrived at Alexandria, I was on my way to Cairo. Accident, however, very unexpectedly brought me again to Alexandria; and on my second visit, while waiting for an opportunity to return to Europe, I several times went over the same ground more at my leisure, and visited the other objects of interest which my haste had before prevented me from seeing.

Among these were the Catacombs, situated about two miles from the city, on the edge of the Libyan Desert, and near the shore of the sea. These great repositories of the dead are so little known that we had some difficulty in finding them, although we inquired of every body whom we met. Seeing an Arab brushing some horses near an opening in the side of the rock, we went to him to inquire, and found we were at the door of the Catacombs. The real entrance is now unknown, but was probably from above. The present is a rude forced breach, and the first chamber into which we entered, a chamber built with pious regard to the repose of the dead, we found occupied as a stable for the horses of one of the pacha's regiments. My donkey-boy had taken the precaution to bring with him candles, and a line to tie at the entrance, after the manner of Fair Rosamond's clue, to save us from being lost in the labyrinth of passages; but the latter was unnecessary, as the Arabs employed about the horses had explored them so thoroughly for purposes of plunder, that they were sufficiently sure guides. Taking two of them into pay, we followed with our lighted torches through two chambers, which, to me, who had then seen the tombs in Thebes, Petra, and Jerusalem, contained nothing remarkable, and came to what has been called the state chamber, a chamber room about thirty feet in diameter, with three recesses, one at each side of the door and one opposite, a vaulted roof, and altogether admirably fine in its proportions. In each of the recesses were niches for the bodies of the dead, and in one of them skulls and mouldering bones were still lying on the ground. Following my guides, I passed through several chambers, half filled with sand; but having by this time lost much of my ardour for wandering among tombs, and finding my pursuit unprofitable and unsatisfactory, I left the state chamber and left the Catacombs.

They are supposed to extend many miles under the surface, but how far will probably never be known. The excavations that have as yet been made are very trifling; and unless the enlightened pacha should need the state chamber for his horses, the sands of the desert may again creep upon them, and shut them for ever from our eyes.

Near the door of the entrance, directly on the edge of the shore, are chambers cut in the rocks, which open to the sea, called by the imposing name of Cleopatra's Baths. It is rather an exposed situation, and, besides the view from the sea, there are several places where "peeping Tom" might have hidden himself. It is a rude place, too; and when I was there, the luxurious queen could hardly have got to her chambers without at least wetting her royal feet; in fact, not to be imposed upon by names, a lady of the present day can have a more desirable bath for a quarter of a dollar than ever the Queen of the East had in her life.

The present city of Alexandria, even after the dreadful ravages made by the plague in 1837, is still supposed to contain more than 50,000 inhabitants, and is decidedly growing. It stands outside the delta in the Libyan Desert, and as Volney remarks, "It is only by the canal which conducts the waters of the Nile into the reservoirs in the time of inundation that Alexandria can be considered as connected with Egypt." Founded by Alexander, to secure his conquests in the East, being the only safe harbour along the coasts of Syria or Africa, and possessing peculiar commercial advantages, it soon grew into a giant city. Fifteen miles in circumference, containing a population of 300,000 citizens and as many slaves, one magnificent street 2000 feet broad ran the whole length of the city, from the Gate of the Sea to the Canopic Gate, commanding a view, at each end, of the shipping, either in the Mediterranean or in the Marcotic Lake, and another of equal length intersected it at right angles; a spacious circus without the Canopic Gate for chariot-races, and on the east a splendid gymnasium, more than 600 feet in length, with theatres, baths, and all that could make it a desirable residence for a luxurious people. When it fell into the hands of the Saracens, according to the report of the Saracen general to the Calif Omar, "it was impossible to enumerate the variety of its riches and beauty; and it is said to have contained 4000 palaces, 4000 baths, 400 theatres or public edifices, 12,000 shops, and 40,000 tributary Jews." From that time, like every thing else which falls into the hands of the Mussulman, it has been going to ruin, and the discovery of the passage to India by the Cape of Good Hope gave the death-blow to its commercial greatness. At present it stands a phenomenon in the history of a Turkish dominion. It appears once more to be raising its head from the dust. It remains to be seen whether this rise is the legitimate and permanent effect of a wise and politic government, combined with natural advantages, or whether the pacha is not forcing it to an unnatural elevation, at the expense, if not upon the ruins, of the rest of Egypt. It is almost presumptuous, on the threshold of my entrance into Egypt, to speculate upon the future condition of this interesting country; but it is clear that the pacha is determined to build up the city of Alexandria if he can: his fleet is here, his army, his arsenal, and his forts are here, and he has forced and centered here a commerce that was before divided between several places. Rosetta has lost more than two-thirds of its population, Damietta has become a mere nothing, and even Cairo the Grand has become tributary to what is called the regenerated city.

Alexandria has also been the scene of interesting events in modern days. Here the long-cherished animosity of France and England sought a new battlefield, as if conscious that the soil of Europe had too often been moistened with human blood. Twice I visited the spot where the gallant Abercrombie fell, about two miles outside the Rosetta Gate; the country was covered with a beautiful verdure, and the Arab

was turning up the ground with his plough; herds of buffalo were quietly grazing near, and a caravan of camels was slowly winding its way along the borders of a nameless lake, which empties into the Lake Mareotis. Farther on and near the sea is a large square enclosure, by some called the ruins of the palace of Cleopatra, by others the camp of Cæsar. This was the French position, and around it the battle was fought. All is quiet there now, though still the curious traveller may pick up from time to time balls, fragments of shells, or other instruments of death, which tell him that war, murderous and destructive war, has been there.

My last ride was to Pompey's Pillar. Chateaubriand requested a friend to write his name upon the great pyramid, not being able to go to it himself, and considering this one of the duties of a pious pilgrim; but I imagine that sentimental traveller did not mean it in the sense in which "Hero" and "Beatrice," and the less romantic name of "Susannah Wilson," are printed in great black letters, six inches long, about half way up the shaft.

There can be no doubt that immense treasures are still buried under the ruins of Alexandria; but whether they will ever be discovered will depend upon the pacha's necessities, as he may need the ruins of ancient temples for building forts or bridges. New discoveries are constantly made; and between my first and second visit a beautiful vase had been discovered, pronounced to be the original of the celebrated Warwick vase found at Adrian's villa, near Tivoli. It was then in the hands of the French consul, who told me he would not take its weight in gold for it. I have since seen the vase at Warwick Castle; and if the one found at Alexandria is not the original, it is certainly remarkable that two sculptors, one in Egypt and the other in Italy, conceived and fashioned two separate works of art so exactly resembling each other.

But to return to the moment of my first leaving Alexandria. At dark I was on board a boat at the mouth of the Mahmoudie, the canal which connects Alexandria with the Nile; my companion had made all necessary provision for the voyage, and I had nothing to do but select a place and spread my mattress and coverlet. In a few minutes we had commenced our journey on the canal, our boat towed by our Arab boatmen, each with a rope across his breast. I have heard this canal spoken of as one of the greatest works of modern days, and I have seen it referred to as such in the books of modern travellers; and some even, as if determined to keep themselves under a delusion in regard to every thing in Egypt, speak of it as they do of the pyramids, and obelisks, and mighty temples of the Upper Nile. The truth is, it is sixty miles in length, ninety feet in breadth, and eighteen in depth, through a perfectly level country, not requiring a single lock. In regard to the time in which it was made, it certainly is an extraordinary work; and it could only have been done at that time, in such a country as Egypt, where the government is an absolute despotism, and the will of one man is the supreme law. Every village was ordered to furnish a certain quota; 150,000 workmen were employed at once, and in a year from its commencement the whole excavation was made. As a great step in the march of public improvement, it certainly does honour to the pacha, though, in passing along its banks, our admiration of a barbarian struggling into civilisation is checked by remembering his wanton disregard of human life, and the melancholy fact that it proved the grave of more than 30,000 of his subjects.

We started in company with a Mr Waghorn, formerly in the East India Company's service, now engaged in forwarding the mails from England to India by the Red Sea. He was one of the first projectors of that route, is a man of indefatigable activity and energy, and was the first courier sent from England with dispatches over land. He travelled post to Suez, took a Spanish vessel to Alexandria, and then by dromedary to Cairo and Suez, where, not finding the

vessel which had been ordered to meet him, and having with him a compass, his constant travelling companion, he hired an open Arab boat, and, to the astonishment of his Arab crew, struck out into the middle of the Red Sea. At night they wanted, as usual, to anchor near the shore; but he sat with the helm in one hand and a cocked pistol in the other, threatening to shoot the first man that disobeyed his orders. On entering the harbour of Mocha, he found an English government vessel on its way to meet him, and in the then uncommonly short time of fifty-five days, delivered his dispatches in Bombay.

At about eight o'clock next morning we were standing on the banks of the Nile, the eternal river, the river of Egypt, recalling the days of Pharaoh and Moses—from the earliest periods of recorded time watering and fertilising a narrow strip of land in the middle of a sandy desert, rolling its solitary way more than a thousand miles without receiving a single tributary stream; the river which the Egyptians worshipped and the Arabs loved, and which, as the Mussulmans say, if Mohammed had tasted, "he would have prayed Heaven for terrestrial immortality, that he might continue to enjoy it for ever."

I cannot, however, join in the enthusiasm of the Mussulmans, for I have before me at this moment a vivid picture of myself and servant at Cairo, perched upon opposite divans covered with tawdry finery, in a huge barn of a room, with a ceiling thirty feet high, like two knights of the useful countenance, comparing notes and bodily symptoms, and condoling with each other upon the corporeal miseries brought upon us by partaking too freely of the water of the Nile.

The appearance of the river at the mouth of the canal is worthy of its historic fame. I found it more than a mile wide, the current at that season full and strong; the banks on each side clothed with a beautiful verdure and groves of palm-trees (the most striking feature in African scenery), and the village of Fouah, the stopping-place for boats coming up from Rosetta and Damietta, with its mosques, and minarets, and whitened domes, and groves of palms, forming a picturesque object in the view.

Upon entering the Nile, we changed our boat, the new one being one of the largest and best on the river, of the class called *cunjaiah*, about seventy feet long, with two enormous lattice sails; these are triangular in form, and attached to two very tall spars more than a hundred feet long, heavy at the end, and tapering to a point; the spars or yards rest upon two short masts, playing upon them as on pivots. The spar rests at an angle of about thirty degrees, and, carrying the sail to its tapering point, gives the boat when under way a peculiarly light and graceful appearance. In the stern, a small place is housed over, which makes a very tolerable cabin, except that the ceiling is too low to admit of standing upright, being made to suit the cross-legged habits of the eastern people. She was manned by ten Arabs, good stout fellows, and a *rais* or captain.

CHAPTER II.

From Alexandria to Cairo.—Experience versus Traveller's Tales.—An unintended Bath.—Iron Rule of the Pacha.—Entrance into Cairo.—A Chat with a Pacha.

We commenced our voyage with that north wind which, books and travellers tell us, for nine months in the year continues to blow the same way, making it an easy matter to ascend from the Mediterranean to the Cataracts, even against the strong current of the river; and I soon busied myself with meditating upon this extraordinary operation of nature, thus presenting itself to my observation at the very moment of my entrance into this wonderful country. It was a beautiful ordinance of Providence in regard to the necessities and wants of man, that while the north

TRAVELS IN EGYPT.

rolled on sternally in one unbroken current, another agent of Almighty power should almost as constantly fill the flowing canvass, and enable navigators to stem the downward flow. I was particularly pleased with this train of reflection, inasmuch as at the moment we had the best of it. We were ascending against the current at the rate of six or seven miles an hour, with a noise and dash through the water that made it seem like nine or ten, while the descending boats, with their spars taken out and sails tied close, were crawling down almost imperceptibly, stern first, broad-side first, not as the current carried them, but as the wind would let them. Our men had nothing to do; all day they lay strewed about on deck; towards evening they gathered around a large pilau of rice; and as the sun was setting, one after the other, turning his face towards the tomb of the Prophet, kneeled down upon the deck and prayed. And thus passed my first night upon the Nile.

In the morning I found things not quite so well ordered; the wind seemed to be giving "premonitory symptoms" of an intention to chop about, and towards noon, it came dead ahead. After my self-complacent observations of yesterday, I would hardly credit it; but when it became so strong that we were obliged to haul alongside the bank and lie-to, in order to avoid being driven down the stream, I was perfectly satisfied and convinced. We saw no more of our friend Mr Waghorn; he had a small boat rigged with oars, and while we were vainly struggling against wind and tide, he kindly left us to our fate. My companion was a sportsman, and happened to have on board a couple of guns; we went on shore with them, and the principal incident of the day that I remember is, that instead of fowler's, I had fisherman's luck. Rambling carelessly along, we found ourselves on the bank of a stream which it was necessary to cross; on the other side we saw a strapping Arab, and called to him to come and carry us over. Like most of his tribe, he was not troubled with any superfluous clothing, and slipping over his head the fragments of his frock, he was in a moment by our side, in all the majesty of nature. I started first, mounted upon his slippery shoulders, and went along very well until we had got more than half way over, when I began to observe an irregular tottering movement, and heard behind me the smothered laugh of my companion. I felt my Arab slowly and deliberately lowering his head; my feet touched the water; but with one hand I held my gun above my head, and with the other gripped him by the throat. I found myself going, going deeper and deeper, let down with the most studied deliberation, till all at once he gave his neck a sudden toss, jerked his head from under me, and left me standing up to my middle in the stream. I turned round upon him, hardly knowing whether to laugh or to strike him with the butt end of my gun; but one glance at the poor fellow was enough; the sweat stood in large drops on his face and ran down his naked breast; his knees shook, and he was just ready to drop himself. He had supported me as long as he could; but finding himself failing, and fearing we should both come down together with a splash, at full length, he had lowered me as gently as possible.

The banks of the Nile from here to Cairo furnish nothing interesting. On one side is the Delta, an extensive tract of low rich land, well cultivated and watered, and on the other a narrow strip of fertile land, and then the Libyan Desert. The ruined cities which attract the traveller into Egypt, their temples and tombs, the enduring monuments of its former greatness, do not yet present themselves. The modern villages are all built of mud or of unburnt bricks, and sometimes, at a distance, being surrounded by palm-trees, making a pleasing appearance; but this vanishes the moment you approach them. The houses, or rather hovels, are so low that a man can seldom stand up in a hole in front like the door of an oven, into which a miserable Arab crawls, more like a beast made to walk in God's image. The same

spectacle of misery and wretchedness, of poverty, famine, and nakedness, which I had seen in the suburbs of Alexandria, continued to meet me at every village on the Nile, and soon suggested the interesting consideration whether all this came from country and climate, from the character of the people, or from the government of the great reformer. At one place, I saw on the banks of the river forty or fifty men chained together with iron bands around their wrists, and iron collars around their necks. Yesterday they were peaceful Fellahs, cultivators of the soil, earning their scanty bread by hard and toilsome labour, but eating it at home in peace. Another day, and the stillness of their life is for ever broken; chased, run down, and caught, torn from their homes, from the sacred threshold of the mosque, the sword and musket succeed the implements of their quiet profession; they are carried away to fight battles in a cause which does not concern them, and in which, if they conquer, they can never gain.

Returning to our boat on the brink of the river, a slight noise caught my ear; I turned, and saw a ragged mother kissing her naked child, while another of two years old, dirty and disgusting, was struggling to share its mother's embraces; their father I had just seen with an iron collar round his neck; and she loved these miserable children, and they loved their miserable mother, as if they were all clothed "in purple and fine raiment every day." But a few minutes after, a woman, knowing that we were "Franks," brought on board our boat a child, with a face and head so bloated with disease that it was disgusting to look at. The rais took the child in his arms and brought it up to us, the whole crew following with a friendly interest. My companion gave them a bottle of brandy, with which the rais carefully bathed the face and head of the child, all the crew leaning over to help; and when they had finished to their satisfaction, these kind-hearted but clumsy nurses kissed the miserable bawling infant, and passed it, with as much care as if it had been a basket of crockery, into the hands of the grateful mother.

This scene was finely contrasted with one that immediately followed. The boat was aground, and in an instant, stripping their long gowns over their heads, a dozen large swarthy figures were standing naked on the deck; in a moment more they were splashing in the river, and with their brawny shoulders under the bottom of the vessel, heaved her off the sand-bank. Near this we passed a long line of excavation, where several hundred men were then digging, being part of the gigantic work of irrigating the Delta lately undertaken by the pacha.

Towards the evening of the fourth day we came in sight of the "world's great wonder," the eternal pyramids, standing at the head of a long reach in the river directly in front of us, and almost darkening the horizon; solitary, grand, and gloomy, the only objects to be seen in the great desert before us. The sun was about setting in that cloudless sky known only in Egypt; for a few moments their lofty summits were lighted by a beam of vivid red, and as the glorious orb settled behind the mountains of the Libyan Desert, the atmosphere became dark and more indistinct, and their clear outline continued to be seen after the whole earth was shrouded in gloom.

The next morning at seven o'clock we were alongside the Island of Rhoda, as the Arab boatmen called it, where the daughter of Pharaoh came down to bathe, and found the little Moses. We crossed over in a small boat to Bgulae, the harbour of Cairo, breakfasted with Mr T——, the brother-in-law of my friend, an engineer in the pacha's service, whose interesting wife is the only English lady there; and mounting a donkey, in half an hour I was within the walls of Grand Cairo. The traveller who goes there with the reminiscences of Arabian tales hanging about him, will nowhere see the Cairo of the califs; but before arriving there, he will have seen a curious and striking spectacle. He will have seen, streaming from the gate among the red camels and dromedaries, the dashing Turcomans, and

glittering sabre, the wily Greek, the grave Armenian, and the despised Jew, with their long silk robes, their turbans, solemn beards, and various and striking costumes; he will have seen the harem of more than one rich Turk, eight or ten women on horseback, completely enveloped in large black silk wrappers, perfectly hiding face and person, and preceded by that abomination of the East, a black eunuch; the miserable santon, the Arab saint, with a few scanty rags on his breast and shoulders, the rest of his body perfectly naked; the swarthy Bedouin of the desert, the haughty janizary, with a cocked gun in his hand, dashing furiously through the crowd, and perhaps bearing some bloody mandate of his royal master; and perhaps he will have seen and blushed for his own image in the person of some beggarly Italian refugee. Entering the gate, guarded by Arab soldiers in a bastard European uniform, he will cross a large square filled with officers and soldiers, surrounded by what are called palaces, but seeing nothing that can interest him save the house in which the gallant Kleber, the hero of many a bloody field, died ingloriously by the hands of an assassin. Crossing this square, he will plunge into the narrow streets of Cairo. Winding his doubtful and perilous way among tottering and ruined houses, jostled by camels, dromedaries, horses, and donkeys, perhaps he will draw up against a wall, and, thinking of plague, hold his breath, and screw himself into nothing, while he allows a corpse to pass, followed by a long train of howling women, dressed in black, with masks over their faces; and entering the large wooden gate which shuts in the Frank quarter for protection against any sudden burst of popular fury, and seating himself in a miserable Italian locanda, he will ask himself, Where is the "Cairo of the califs, the superb town, the holy city, the delight of the imagination, greatest among the great, whose splendour and opulence made the prophet smile?"

Almost immediately upon my arrival, I called upon Mr Gliddon, our vice-consul, and upon Nubar Bey, an Armenian dragoman to the pacha, to whom I had a letter from a gentleman in Alexandria. The purport of my visit to the latter was to procure a presentation to the pacha. He told me that several English officers from India had been waiting several days for that purpose; that he thought the pacha would receive them the next day, and, if so, he would ask permission to present me. Having arranged this, and not being particularly pleased with the interior, and liking exceedingly the donkeys, on which it is the custom there to mount on all occasions, for long and for short distances, I selected one that was particularly gay and sprightly, and followed by an Arab boy who had picked up a few Italian words, I told him to take me anywhere outside the city. He happened to take me out at the same gate by which I had entered, and I rode to Old Cairo.

Old Cairo is situated on the river, about four miles from Boulac. The road is pretty, and some of the points of view, particularly in returning, decidedly beautiful. The aqueduct which conveys water into the citadel at Cairo is a fine substantial piece of workmanship, and an item in the picture. The church and grotto in which, as tradition says, the Virgin Mary took refuge with the infant Saviour, when obliged to fly from the tetrarch of Judea, are among the few objects worthy of note in Old Cairo. The grotto, which is guarded with pious care by the Coptic priest, is a small excavation, the natural surface covered with smooth tiles; it is hardly large enough to allow one person to crawl in and sit upright. It is very doubtful whether this place was ever the refuge of the Virgin, but the craft or simplicity of the priests sustains the tradition; and a half dozen Coptic women, with their faces covered, and their long blue dresses, followed me down into the vault, and knelt before the door of the grotto, with a devotion which showed that they at least believed the tale.

At my locanda this morning I made acquaintance with two English parties, a gentleman, his lady, and nephew, who had been travelling in their own

on the Mediterranean, and the party of English officers to whom I before referred, as returning from India by way of the Red Sea. They told me that they were expecting permission from the pacha to wait on him that day, and asked me to accompany them. This suited me better than to go alone, as I was not ambitious for a tête-à-tête with his highness, and merely wished to see him as one of the lions of the country. Soon after I received a note from the consul, telling me that his highness would receive me at half-past three. This, too, was the hour appointed for the reception of the others, and I saw that his highness was disposed to make a lumping business of it, and get rid of us all at once. I accordingly suggested to Mr Gliddon that we should all go together; but this did not suit him; he was determined that I should have the benefit of a special audience. I submitted myself to his directions, and in this, as in other things, while at Cairo, found the benefit of his attentions and advice.

It is the custom of the pacha upon such occasions to send horses from his own stable, and servants from his own household, to wait upon the stranger. At half past three I left my hotel, mounted on a noble horse, finely caparisoned, with a dashing red cloth saddle, a bridle ornamented with shells, and all the decorations and equipments of a well-mounted Turkish horseman, and, preceded by the janizary and escorted by the consul, with no small degree of pomp and circumstance I arrived at the gate of the citadel. Passing through a large yard, in which are several buildings connected with the different offices of government, we stopped at the door of the palace, and, dismounting, ascended a broad flight of marble steps to a large or central hall, from which doors opened into the different apartments. There were three recesses fitted up with divans, where officers were lounging, smoking, and taking coffee. The door of the divan, or hall of audience, was open, at which a guard was stationed; and in going up to demand permission to enter, we saw the pacha at the farther end of the room, with four or five Turks standing before him.

Not being allowed to enter yet, we walked up and down the great hall, among lounging soldiers and officers of all ranks and grades, Turks, Arabs, and beggars, and went out upon the balcony. The view from this embraces the most interesting objects in the vicinity of Cairo, and there are few prospects in the world which include so many: the land of Goshen, the Nile, the obelisk at Heliopolis, the tombs of the califs, the pyramids, and the deserts of eternal sands.

While standing upon the balcony, a janizary came to tell us that the pacha would receive us, or, in other words, that we must come to the pacha. The audience chamber was a very large room, with a high ceiling—perhaps eighty feet long and thirty high—with arabesque paintings on the wall, and a divan all around. The pacha was sitting near one corner at the extreme end, and had a long and full view of every one who approached him. I, too, had the same advantage, and in walking up I remarked him as a man about sixty-five, with a long and very white beard, strong features, of a somewhat vulgar cast, a short nose, red face, and rough skin, with an uncommonly fine dark eye, expressing a world of determination and energy. He wore a large turban and a long silk robe, and was smoking a long pipe with an amber mouthpiece. Altogether, he looked the Turk much better than his nominal master the sultan.

His dragoman, Nubar Bey, was there, and presented me. The pacha took his pipe from his mouth, motioned me to take a seat at his right hand on the divan, and with a courteous manner said I was welcome to Egypt. I told him he would soon have to welcome half the world there; he asked me why; and, without meaning to flatter the old Turk, I answered that every body had a great curiosity to visit that interesting country; that heretofore it had been very difficult to get there, and dangerous to travel in when there;

but now the facilities of access were greatly increased, and travelling in Egypt had become so safe under his government, that strangers would soon come with as much confidence as they feel while travelling in Europe; and I had no doubt there would be many Americans among them. He took his pipe from his mouth, and bowed. I sipped my coffee with great complacency, perfectly satisfied with the manner in which, for the first time, I had played the courier to royalty. Knowing his passion for new things, I went on, and told him that he ought to continue his good works, and introduce on the Nile a steam-boat from Alexandria to Cairo. He took the pipe from his mouth again, and in the tone of "Let there be light, and there was light," said he had ordered a couple. I knew he was fibbing, and I afterwards heard from those through whom he transacted all his business in Europe, that he had never given any such order. Considering that a steam-boat was an appropriate weapon in the hands of an American, I followed up my blow by telling him that I had just seen mentioned, in a European paper, a project to run steam-boats from New York to Liverpool in twelve or fourteen days. He asked me the distance; I told him, and he said nothing and smoked on. He knew America, and particularly from a circumstance which I afterwards found had done wonders in giving her a name and character in the East, the visit of Commodore Patterson in the ship *Delaware*. So far I had taken decidedly the lead in the conversation; but the constant repetition of "son altesse" by the dragoman, began to remind me that I was in the presence of royalty, and that it was my duty to speak only when I was spoken to. I waited to give him a chance, and the first question he asked was as to the rate of speed of the steam-boats on our rivers. Remembering an old, crazy, five or six mile an hour boat that I had seen in Alexandria, I was afraid to tell him the whole truth, lest he should not believe me, and did not venture to go higher than fifteen miles an hour; and even then he looked as Ilderim may be supposed to have looked when the Knight of the Leopard told him of having crossed over a lake like the Dead Sea without wetting his horse's hoofs. I have no doubt, if he ever thought of me afterwards, that it was as the lying American; and just at this moment, the party of English coming in, I rose and took my leave. Gibben says, "When Persia was governed by the descendants of Saffar, a race of princes whose wanton cruelty often stained their divan, their table, and their bed, with the blood of their favourites, there is a saying recorded of a young nobleman that he never departed from the sultan's presence without satisfying himself whether his head was still on his shoulders." It was in somewhat of the same spirit that, in passing, one of the Englishmen whispered to me, "Are you sure of your legs?"

During my interview with the pacha, although my conversation and attention were directed towards him, I could not help remarking particularly his dragoman, Nubar Bey. He was an Armenian, perhaps a year or two over thirty, with an olive complexion, and a countenance like marble. He stood up before us, about half way between the pacha and me, his calm eye finely contrasted with the roving and unsettled glances of the pacha, a perfect picture of indifference, standing like a mere machine to translate words, without seeming to comprehend or take the least interest in their import; and though I had been particularly recommended to him, he did not give me a single glance to intimate that he had ever seen me before, or cared ever to see me again. He was an ambitious man, and was evidently acting, and acted well, a part suited to an eastern court; the part necessary in his respectable and dangerous position, as the depositary of important secrets of government. He was in high favour with the pacha, and, when I left, was in a fair way of attaining any honour at which his ambitious spirit might aim. On my return to Cairo, four months after, he was dead.

Character of Mohammed Ali as a study. Like Bernadotte of Sweden, he has

risen from the rank of a common soldier, and now sits firmly and securely on a throne of his own making. He has risen by the usual road to greatness among the Turks: war, bloodshed, and treachery. In early life his bold and daring spirit attracted the attention of beys, pachas, and the sultan himself; and having attained a prominent position in the bloody wars that distracted Egypt under the Mamelukes, boldness, cruelty, intrigue, and treachery, placed him on the throne of the califs; and neither then nor since have these usual engines of Turkish government, these usual accompaniments of Turkish greatness, for a moment deserted him. The extermination of the Mamelukes, the former lords of Egypt, as regards the number killed, is perhaps nothing in comparison with the thousands whose blood cries out from the earth against him; but the manner in which it was effected brands the pacha as the prince of traitors and murderers. Invited to the citadel on a friendly visit, while they were smoking the pipe of peace he was preparing to murder them; and no sooner had they left his presence than they were pent up, fired upon, cut down and killed, bravely but hopelessly defending themselves to the last. This cruel deed must not be likened to the slaughter of the janizaries by the sultan, to which it is often compared, for the janizaries were a powerful body, insulting and defying the throne. The sultan staked his head upon the issue, and it was not till he had been driven to the desperate expedient of unfurling the sacred standard of the prophet, and calling upon all good Mussulmans to rally round it—in a word, it was not till the dead bodies of 30,000 janizaries were floating down the Bosphorus, that he became master in his own dominions. Not so with the pacha; the Mamelukes were reduced to a feeble band of 400 or 500 men, and could effect nothing of importance against the pacha. His cruelty and treachery can neither be forgotten nor forgiven; and when, in passing out of the citadel, the stranger is shown the place where the unhappy Mamelukes were pent up and slaughtered like beasts, one only leaping his gallant horse over the walls of the citadel, he feels that he has left the presence of a wholesale murderer. Since that time he has had Egypt quietly to himself; has attacked and destroyed the Wahabees on the Red Sea, and subdued the countries above the Cataracts of the Nile, to Suez and Dongola. He has been constantly aiming at introducing European improvements; has raised and disciplined an army according to European tactics; increased the revenues, particularly by introducing the culture of cotton, and has made Egypt, from the Mediterranean to the Cataracts, as safe for the traveller as the streets of New York. It remains to be seen, whether, after all, he has not done more harm than good, and whether the miserable and oppressed condition of his subjects does not more than counterbalance all the good that he has done for Egypt. One of the strongest evidences he gave of his civilising inclinations is the tendency he once manifested to fall under petulant government. He was passionately fond of his first wife, a sharer of his poverty and meridian greatness, and the mother of his two favourite children, Youssoff and Ibrahim Pacha; and whenever a request was preferred in her name, the enamoured despot would swear his favourite oath, "By my two eyes, if she wishes it, it shall be done." Fond of war, and having an eye to the islands of Candia and Cyprus, he sent a large fleet and army, commanded by his son Ibrahim Pacha, to aid the sultan in his war against Greece, and with his wild Egyptians turned the tide against that unhappy country, receiving as his reward the islands which he coveted. More recently, availing himself of a trifling dispute with the governor of Acre, he turned his arms against the sultan, invaded Syria, and after a long siege, took and made himself master of Acre; his victorious armies under his son Ibrahim swept all Syria; Jerusalem, Damascus, and Aleppo, fell into his hands; and beating the sultan's forces whenever he met them, in the winter he led his Egyptians over Mount Taurus, and sent the grand vizier with more than 100,000 men

almost under the walls of Constantinople, and would have driven the sultan from the throne of his ancestors, if the Russians, the old enemies of the Porte, had not come in to his relief. According to the policy of the Porte, that which is wrested from her and she cannot get back, she confirms in the possession of the rebel; and Palestine and Syria are now in the hands of Mohammed Ali, as the fruits of drawing his sword against his master. He still continues to pay tribute to the sultan, constrained doubtless to make the last payment by the crippled state in which he was left by the terrible plague of 1834; and without any enemy to fear, is at this moment draining the resources of his country to sustain a large army and navy. No one can fathom his intentions; and probably he does not know them himself, but will be governed, as the Turks always are, by caprice and circumstances.

On leaving the pacha, Mr Gliddon proposed that we should call upon the governor of Cairo. We stopped at what would be called in France the "Palais de Justice," and, mounting a dozen steps, entered a large hall, at one end of which stood the governor. He was a short stout man, of about fifty-five, with a long beard, handsomely dressed, and stood gently rubbing his hands, and constantly working his jaws, like an ox chewing the cud. A crowd was gathered around him, and just as we were approaching, the crowd fell back, and we saw an Arab lying on his face on the floor, with two men standing over him, one on each side, with whips like cow-skins, carrying into effect the judgment of the muzzling governor. The blows fell thickly and heavily, the poor fellow screamed piteously, and when the full number had been given he could not move; he was picked up by his friends, and carried out of doors. It was precisely such a scene as realised the reference in the Scriptures to the manners of the East in the time of our Saviour, when a complaint was made to the judge, and the judge handed the offender over to justice; or the graphic accounts in the Arabian Nights, of summary justice administered by the cadi or other expounder of the law, without the intervention of lawyers or jury. The poor Arab was hardly removed before another complaint was entered; but not feeling particularly amiable towards the governor, and having seen enough of the great Turks for that day, I left the citadel and rode to my hotel.

CHAPTER III.

The Slave-market at Cairo.—Tomb of the Pacha.—The Pyramid of Cheops.—Oppressive Attention of the Arabs.—The Sphinx.

NEARLY all the time I was at Cairo, Paul and myself were ill, and for a few days we were in a rather pitiable condition. Fortunately, a young English army surgeon was there, on his way to India, and hearing there was a sick traveller in the house, he with great kindness called upon me and prescribed for our ailments. If this book should ever meet the eye of Dr Forbes, he will excuse my putting his name in print, as it is the only means I have of acknowledging his kindness in saving me from what would otherwise have been a severe and most inconvenient illness. At that time there was no English physician in Cairo, and I believe none at all, except some vile, half-bred Italian or French apothecaries, who held themselves fully qualified to practise, and were certainly very successful in relieving the sick from all their sufferings. On my return I found Dr Wahne; and though for his own sake I could wish him a better lot, I hope for the benefit of sick travellers that he is there still.

One of my first rambles in Cairo was to the slave-market. It is situated nearly in the centre of the city, as it appeared to me, although after turning half a dozen corners in the narrow streets of a Turkish city, I will defy a man to tell where he is exactly. It is a large old building, enclosing a hollow square, with chambers all around, both above and below. There were probably 500 or 600 slaves, sitting on mats in groups of ten, twenty, or thirty, each belonging to a

different proprietor. Most of them were entirely naked, though some, whose shivering forms evinced that even there they felt the want of their native burning sun, were covered with blankets. They were mostly from Dongola and Sennaar; but some were Abyssinians, with yellow complexions, fine eyes and teeth, and decidedly handsome. The Nubians were very dark, but with oval, regularly formed and handsome faces, mild and amiable expressions, and no mark of the African except the colour of their skin. The worst spectacle in the bazaar was that of several lots of sick, who were separated from the rest, and arranged on mats by themselves; their bodies thin and shrunken, their chins resting upon their knees, their long lank arms hanging helplessly by their sides, their faces haggard, their eyes fixed with a painful vacancy, and altogether presenting the image of man in his most abject condition. Meeting them on their native sands, their crouching attitudes, shrunken jaws, and rolling eyes, might have led one to mistake them for those hideous animals the orang-outang and ape. Prices vary from twenty to a hundred dollars; but the sick, as carrying within them the seeds of probable death, are coolly offered for almost nothing, as so much damaged merchandise which the seller is anxious to dispose of before it becomes utterly worthless on his hands. There was one, an Abyssinian, who had mind as well as beauty in her face; she was dressed in silk, and wore ornaments of gold and shells, and called me as I passed, and peeped from behind a curtain, smiling and coquetting, and wept and pouted when I went away; and she thrust out her tongue to show me that she was not like those I had just been looking at, but that her young blood ran pure and healthy in her veins.

Cairo is surrounded by a wall; the sands of the desert approach it on every side, and every gate, except that of Boulak, opens to a sandy waste. Passing out by the Victory Gate, the contrast between light and darkness is not greater than between the crowded streets and the stillness of the desert, separated from them only by a wall. Immediately without commences the great burial-place of the city. Among thousands and tens of thousands of Mussulmans' headstones, I searched in vain for the tomb of the lamented Burekhardt; there is no mark to distinguish the grave of the enterprising traveller from that of an Arabian camel-driver. At a short distance from the gate are the tombs of the califs, large and beautiful buildings, monuments of the taste and skill of the Saracens.

From hence, passing around outside the walls, I entered by the gate of the Citadel, where I saw what goes by the name of Joseph's Well, perhaps better known as the Well of Saladin. It is 45 feet wide at the mouth, and cut 270 feet deep through the solid rock, to a spring of saltish water, on a level with the Nile, whence the water is raised in buckets on a wheel, turned by a buffalo.

On the 25th, with a voice that belied my feelings, I wished Paul a merry Christmas; and after breakfast, wishing to celebrate the day, mounted a donkey and rode to the site of the ancient Heliopolis, near the village of Matara, about four miles from Cairo, on the borders of the rich land of Goshen. The geographer Strabo visited these ruins thirty years A.C., and describes them almost exactly as we see them now. A great temple of the sun once stood here. Herodotus and Plato studied philosophy in the schools of Heliopolis; "a barbarous Persian overturned her temples; a fanatic Arabian burnt her books;" and a single obelisk, sixty-seven feet high, in a field ploughed and cultivated to its very base, stands a melancholy monument of former greatness and eternal ruin.

Passing out by another gate is another vast cemetery, ranges of tombs extending miles out into the desert. In Turkey I had admired the beauty of the graveyards, and often thought how calmly slept the dead under the thick shade of the mourning cypress. In Egypt I admired still more the solemn stillness and grandeur of a last resting-place among the eternal sands of the desert. In this great city of the dead stand the

tombs of the Mamelukes, originally slaves from the foot of the Caucasus, then the lords and tyrants of Egypt, and now an exterminated race: the tombs are large handsome buildings, with domes and minarets, the interior of the domes beautifully wrought, and windows of stained glass, all going to ruins. Here, too, is the tomb of the pacha. Fallen, changed, completely revolutionised as Egypt is, even to this day peculiar regard is paid to the structure of tombs and the burial-places of the dead. The tomb of the pacha is called the greatest structure of modern Egypt. It is a large stone building, with several domes, strongly but coarsely made. The interior, still, solemn, and imposing, is divided into two chambers; in the first, in a conspicuous situation, is the body of his favourite wife, and around are those of other members of his family; in the other chamber are several tombs covered with large and valuable Cashmere shawls; several places yet unoccupied, and in one corner a large vacant place, reserved for the pacha himself. Both apartments are carpeted, and illuminated with lamps, with divans in the recesses, and little wicker chairs for the different members of the family who come to mourn and pray. Two ladies were there, sitting near one of the tombs, their faces completely covered; and, that I might not disturb their pious devotions, my guide led me in a different direction.

During the time that I had passed in lounging about Cairo, I had repeatedly been down to Boulac in search of a boat for my intended voyage up the Nile; and going one Sunday to dine on the island of Rhoda with Mr Trail, a young Englishman who had charge of the palace and garden of Ibrahim Pacha, I again rode along the bank of the river for the same purpose. In coming up from Alexandria, I had found the inconveniences of a large boat, and was looking for one of the smallest dimensions that could be at all comfortable. We were crossing over one more than half sunk in the water, which I remarked to Paul was about the right size; and while we stopped a moment, without the least idea that it could be made fit for use, an Arab came up and whispered to Paul that he could pump out the water in two hours, and had only sunk the boat to save it from the officers of the pacha, who would otherwise take it for the use of government. Upon this information I struck a bargain for the boat, eight men, a rais, and a pilot. The officers of the pacha were on the bank looking out for boats, and, notwithstanding my Arab's ingenious contrivance, just when I had closed my agreement, they came on board and claimed possession. I refused to give up my right, and sent to the agent of the consul for an American flag. He could not give me an American, but sent me an English flag, and I did not hesitate to put myself under its protection. I hoisted it with my own hands; but the rascally Turks paid no regard to its broad folds. The majesty of England did not suffer, however, in my hands, and Paul and I spent more than an hour in running from one officer to another, before we could procure the necessary order for the release of the boat. Leaving this with the rais, and the flag still flying, I went on to Rhoda, and spent the day there in decidedly the prettiest spot about Cairo. At the head of this island is the celebrated Nilometer, which, for no one knows how long, has marked the annual rise and fall of the Nile.

I had been ten days in Cairo without going to the pyramids. I had seen them almost every day, but my doctor, who was to accompany me, had delayed my visit. He was obliged to leave Cairo, however, before I was ready to go; and as soon as he was off, like a schoolboy when the master is out of sight, I took advantage of his absence. My old friend from Alexandria had promised to go with me, and joining me at Old Cairo, we crossed over to Ghizah. Almost from the gates of Cairo the pyramids are constantly in sight, and, after crossing the ferry, we at first rode directly towards them, but the waters were yet so high that we were obliged to diverge from the straight road. In about half an hour we separated, my guide taking one route

and my friends another. With my eyes constantly fixed on the pyramids, I was not aware of our separation until I had gone too far to return, and my guide proved to be right. Standing alone on an elevated mountainous range on the edge of the desert, without any object with which to compare them, the immense size of the pyramids did not strike me with full force. Arrived at the banks of a stream, twenty Arabs, more than half naked, and most of them blind of an eye, came running towards me, dashed through the stream, and pulling, hauling, and suffling at each other, all laid hold of me to carry me over. All seemed bent upon having something to do with me, even if they carried me over piecemeal; but I selected two of the strongest, with little more than one eye between them, and keeping the rest off as well as I could, was borne over dryshod. Approaching, the three great pyramids and one small one are in view, towering higher and higher above the plain. I thought I was just upon them, and that I could almost touch them; yet I was more than a mile distant. The nearer I approached, the more their gigantic dimensions grew upon me, until, when I actually reached them, rode up to the first layer of stones, and saw how very small I was, and looked up their sloping sides to the lofty summits, they seemed to have grown to the size of mountains.

The base of the great pyramid is about 800 feet square, covering a surface of about eleven acres, according to the best measurement, and four hundred and sixty-one feet high; or, to give a clearer idea, starting from a base as large as Washington Parade Ground, it rises to a tapering point nearly three times as high as Trinity church steeple. Even as I walked around it and looked up at it from the base, I did not feel its immensity until I commenced ascending; then, having climbed some distance up, when I stopped to breathe and look down upon my friend below, who was dwindled into insect size, and up at the great distance between me and the summit, then I realised in all their force the huge dimensions of this giant work. It took me twenty minutes to mount to the summit; about the same time that it had required to mount the cones of Etna and Vesuvius. The ascent is not particularly difficult, at least with the assistance of the Arabs. There are 206 tiers of stone, from one to four feet in height, each two or three feet smaller than the one below, making what are called the steps. Very often the steps were so high that I could not reach them with my feet. Indeed, for the most part, I was obliged to climb with my knees, deriving great assistance from the step which one Arab made for me with his knee, and the helping hand of another above.

It is not what it once was to go to the pyramids. They have become regular lions for the multitudes of travellers; but still, common as the journey has become, no man can stand on the top of the great pyramid of Cheops, and look out upon the dark mountains of Mokattam bordering the Arabian desert; upon the ancient city of the Pharaohs, its domes, its mosques and minarets, glittering in the light of a vertical sun; upon the rich valley of the Nile, and the "River of Egypt" reeling at his feet; the long range of pyramids and tombs extending along the edge of the desert to the ruined city of Memphis, and the boundless and eternal sands of Africa, without considering that moment an epoch not to be forgotten. Thousands of years roll through his mind, and thought recalls the men who built them, their mysterious uses, the poets, historians, philosophers, and warriors, who have gazed upon them with wonder like his own.

For one who but yesterday was bustling in the streets of a busy city, it was a thing of strange and indescribable interest to be standing on the top of the great pyramid, surrounded by a dozen half-naked Arabs, forgetting, as completely as if they had never been, the stirring scenes of his distant home. But even here petty vexations followed me, and half the interest of the time and scene was destroyed by the clamour of my guides. The descent I found extremely easy; many

persons complain of the dizziness caused by looking down from such a height, but I did not find myself so affected; and though the donkeys at the base looked like flies, I could almost have danced down the mighty sides.*

The great pyramid is supposed to contain 6,000,000 of cubic feet of stone, and 100,000 men are said to have been employed twenty years in building it. The four angles stand exactly in the four points of the compass, inducing the belief that it was intended for other purposes than those of a sepulchre. The entrance is on the north side. The sands of the desert have encroached upon it, and, with the fallen stones and rubbish, have buried it to the sixteenth step. Climbing over this rubbish, the entrance is reached, a narrow passage three and a half feet square, lined with broad blocks of polished granite, descending in the interior at an angle of twenty-seven degrees for about ninety-two feet; then the passage turns to the right, and winds upward to a steep ascent of eight or nine feet, and then falls into the natural passage, which is five feet high and one hundred feet long, forming a continued ascent to a sort of landing-place; in a small recess of this is the orifice or shaft called the well. Moving onward through a long passage, the explorer comes to what is called the Queen's Chambers, seventeen feet long, fourteen wide, and twelve high. I entered a hole opening from this crypt, and crawling on my hands and knees, came to a larger opening, not a regular chamber, and now cumbered with fallen stones. Immediately above this, ascending by an inclined plane lined with highly polished granite, and about 120 feet in length, and mounting a short space by means of holes cut in the sides, I entered the King's Chamber, about thirty-seven feet long, seventeen feet wide, and twenty feet high. The walls of the chamber are of red granite, highly polished, each stone reaching from the floor to the ceiling; and the ceiling is formed of nine large slabs of polished granite, extending from wall to wall. It is not the least interesting part of a visit to the interior of the pyramids, as you are groping your way after your Arab guide, to feel your hand running along the sides of an enormous shaft, smooth and polished as the finest marble, and to see by the light of the flaring torch chambers of red granite from the Cataracts of the Nile, the immense blocks standing around and above you, smooth and beautifully polished in places, where, if our notions of the pyramids be true, they were intended but for few mortal eyes. At one end of the chamber stands a sarcophagus, also of red granite; its length is seven feet six inches, depth three and a half, breadth three feet three inches. Here is supposed to have slept one of the great rulers of the earth, the king of the then greatest kingdom of the world, the proud mortal for whom this mighty structure was raised. Where is he now? Even his dry bones are gone, torn away by rude hands, and scattered by the winds of heaven.

There is something curious about this sarcophagus too. It is exactly the size of the orifice which forms the entrance of the pyramid, and could not have been conveyed to its place by any of the now known passages; consequently, must have been deposited during the building, or before the passage was finished in its pre-

* A few years ago an unfortunate accident happened at this pyramid. An English officer, Mr. M., who had come up the Red Sea from India with his friend, had mounted to the top, and, while his friend was looking another way, Mr. M. was walking around the upper layer of stones, and fell; he rolled down eight or ten steps, and caught; for a moment he turned up his face with an expression that his friend spoke of as horrible beyond all description, when his head sank, his grasp relaxed, and he pitched headlong, rolling over and over to the bottom of the pyramid. Every bone in his body was broken; his mangled corpse was sewed up in a sack, carried to Old Cairo, and buried, and his friend returned the same day to Cairo. There were, at the time, imputations that Mr. M. had premeditated this act, as he was left behind him his watch, money, and papers, and that he had heard to say what a glorious death it would be to die by falling from the top of a pyramid.

sent state. The interior of the pyramid is excessively hot, particularly when surrounded by a number of Arabs and flaring torches. Leaving the King's Chamber, I descended the inclined plane, and prepared to descend the well referred to by Pliny. The shaft is small; merely large enough to permit one to descend with the legs astride, the feet resting in little niches, and hands clinging to the same. Having no janizary with me to keep them off, I was very much annoyed by the Arabs following me. I had at first selected two as my guides, and told the others to go away; but it was of no use. They had nothing else to do; a few paras would satisfy them for their day's labour; and the chance of getting these, either from charity or by importunity, made them all follow. At the mouth of the well, I again selected my two guides, and again told the others not to follow; and, sending the two before me, followed down the well, being myself quickly followed by two others. I shouted to them to go back, but they paid no regard to me; so, coming out again, I could not help giving the fellow next me a blow with a club, which sent him bounding among his companions. I then flourished my stick among them, and after a deal of expostulation and threatening gesticulation, I attempted the descent once more. A second time they followed me, and I came out perfectly furious. My friend was outside shooting, the pyramids being nothing new to him, and unfortunately I had been obliged to leave Paul at Cairo, and had no one with me but a little Nubian boy. Him I could not prevail upon to descend the well; he was frightened, and begged me not to go down; and when he saw them follow the second time, and me come out and lay about me with a club, he began to cry, and, before I could lay hold of him, ran away. I could do nothing without him, and was obliged to follow. There was no use in battling with the poor fellows, for they made no resistance; and I believe I might have brained the whole of them without one offering to strike a blow. Moreover, it was very hot and smothering; and as there was nothing particular to see, nor any discovery to make, I concluded to give it up; and calling my guides to return, in a few moments escaped from the hot and confined air of the pyramid.

At the base I found my friend sitting quietly with his gun in his hand, and brought upon him the hornet's nest which had so worried me within. The Arabs, considering their work done, gathered around me, clamorous for bucksheesh, and none were more importunate than the fellows who had followed me so pertinaciously. I gave them liberally, but this only whetted their appetites. There was no getting rid of them; a sweep of my club would send them away for a moment, but instantly they would reorganize and come on again, putting the women and children in the front rank. The sheik came ostensibly to our relief; but I had doubts whether he did not rather urge them on. He, however, protected us to a certain extent, while we went into one of the many tombs to eat our luncheon. For a great distance around there are large tombs which would of themselves attract the attention of the traveller, were they not lost in the overwhelming interest of the pyramids. That in which we lunched had a deep shaft in the centre, leading to the pit where the mummies had been piled one upon another. The Arabs had opened and rifled the graves, and bones and fragments were still lying scattered around. Our persecutors were sitting at the door of the tomb looking in upon us, and devouring with their eyes every morsel that we put into our mouths. We did not linger long over our meal; and, giving them the fragments, set off for a walk round the pyramid of Cephrens, the second in grandeur.

This pyramid was opened at great labour and expense by the indefatigable Belzoni, and a chamber discovered containing a sarcophagus, as in that of Cheops. The passage, however, has now become choked up and hardly accessible. Though not so high, it is much more difficult to mount than the other, the outside being covered with a coat of hard and polished

cement; at the top almost perfectly smooth and unbroken. Two English officers had mounted it a few days before, who told me that they had found the ascent both difficult and dangerous. One of the Arabs who accompanied them, after he had reached the top, became frightened, and, not daring to descend, remained hanging on there more than an hour, till his old father climbed up and inspired him with confidence to come down.

A new attempt is now making to explore the interior of this pyramid. Colonel Vyse, an English gentleman of fortune, has devoted the last six months to this most interesting work. He has for an associate in his labours the veteran Caviglia, who returns to the pyramids rich with the experience of twenty years in exploring the temples and tombs of Upper Egypt. By a detailed report and drawing received by Mr Gliddon from Caviglia himself, and by private letters of later date, it appears that they have already discovered a new passage and another chamber, containing on one of the walls a single hieroglyphic. This hieroglyphic was then under the consideration of the savans and pupils of the Champollion school in Egypt; and whether they succeed in reading it or not, we cannot help promising ourselves the most interesting results from the enterprise and labours of Colonel Vyse and Caviglia.

The pyramids, like all the other works of the ancient Egyptians, are built with great regard to accuracy of proportion. The sepulchral chamber is not in the centre, but in an irregular and out-of-the-way position in the vast pile; and some idea may be formed of the great ignorance which must exist in regard to the whole structure and its uses, from the fact that by computation, allowing an equal solid bulk for partition walls, there is sufficient space in the great pyramid for 3700 chambers as large as that containing the sarcophagus.

Next to the pyramids, probably as old, and hardly inferior in interest, is the celebrated Sphinx. Notwithstanding the great labours of Caviglia, it is now so covered with sand that it is difficult to realise the bulk of this gigantic monument. Its head, neck, shoulders, and breasts, are still uncovered; its face, though worn and broken, is mild, amiable, and intelligent, seeming, among the tombs around it, like a divinity guarding the dead.

CHAPTER IV.

Journey up the Nile.—An Arab Burial.—Pilgrims to Mecca.—Trials of Patience.—A Hurricane on the Nile.—A Turkish Bath.

On the 1st of January I commenced my journey up the Nile. My boat was small, for greater convenience in rowing and towing. She was, however, about forty feet long, with two fine lattice sails, and manned by eight men, a rais or captain, and a governor or pilot. This was to be my home from Cairo to the Cataracts, or as long as I remained on the river. There was not a place where a traveller could sleep, and I could not expect to eat a meal or pass a night except on board; consequently, I was obliged to provide myself at Cairo with all things necessary for the whole voyage. My outfit was not very extravagant. It consisted, as near as I can recollect, of two tin cups, two pairs of knives and forks, four plates, coffee, tea, sugar, rice, macaroni, and a few dozen of claret. My bedroom furniture consisted of a mattress and coverlet, which in the daytime were tucked up *seras* to make a divan. Over the head of my bed were two guns and pistols, and at the foot was a little swinging shelf containing my LIBRARY, which consisted of the *Modern Traveller in Egypt*, Volney's *Travels*, and an *Arabian Grammar and Dictionary*. My only companion was my servant; and as he is about to be somewhat intimate with me, I take this opportunity of introducing him to the reader. He is, more familiarly Paul, was a Maltese. He had been at Constantinople travelling with two women; and though they did not seem

to like him much, I was very well pleased with him, and thought myself quite fortunate, on my arrival at Malta, to find him disengaged. He was a man about thirty-five years old; stout, square built, intelligent; a passionate admirer of ruins, particularly the ruins of the Nile; honest and faithful as the sun, and one of the greatest cowards that luminary ever shone upon. He called himself my dragoman, and, I remember, wrote himself such in the convent of Mount Sinai and the temple at Petra, though he promised to make himself generally useful, and was my only servant during my whole tour. He spoke French, Italian, Maltese, Greek, Turkish, and Arabic, but could not read any one of these languages. He had lived several years in Cairo, and had travelled on the Nile before, and understood all the little arrangements necessary for the voyage.

At about twelve o'clock, then the hour when at home my friends were commencing their New-year visits, accompanied to the boat by my friend from Alexandria, my first, last, and best friend in Egypt, I embarked; and with a fair wind, and the "star-spangled banner" (made by an Arab tailor) floating above me, I commenced my journey on the Nile. It is necessary here for every stranger to place himself under the flag of his country, else his boat and men are liable to be taken at any moment by the officers of the pacha. It was the first time I had myself ever raised the banner of my country, and I felt a peculiar pride in the consciousness that it could protect me so far from home.

We started, as when I first embarked upon the Nile, with a fair wind, at sunset, and again to the gentle tap of the Arab drum we passed the great pyramids of Ghizeh and the giant monuments of Saheara and Dashoor. Long after sunset their dark outline was distinctly visible over the desert; I sat on the deck of my boat till their vast masses became lost in the darkness. My situation was novel and exciting, and my spirits were elated with curious expectation; but with the morning came a very essential change. A feeling of gloom came over me when I found the wind against my progress. The current was still running obstinately the same way as before, and to be so soon deserted by the element that I needed, gave rather a dreary aspect to the long journey before me. That day, however, we contrived to do something; my boat being small, my men were almost continually ashore, with ropes around their breasts, towing; and, occasionally, rowing across from side to side would give us the advantage of a bend in the river, when we would carry sail and make some progress.

The scenery of the Nile, about fifty miles from Cairo, differed somewhat from the rich valley of the Delta, the dark mountains of Mokattam, in the neighbourhood of Cairo, bounding the valley on the Arabian side, while on the African the desert approached to the very banks of the river. Though travelling in a country in which, by poet's licence, and by way of winding off a period, every foot of ground is said to possess an exciting interest, during my first day's journey on the Nile I was thrown very much upon my own resources.

My gun was the first thing that presented itself. I had bought it in Cairo, double-barrelled and new, for fifteen dollars. I did not expect to make much use of it, and it was so very cheap that I was rather doubtful of its safety, and intended to make trial of it with a double charge and a slow match. But Paul had anticipated me; he had already put in two enormous charges, and sent one of the boatmen ashore to try it. I remonstrated with him upon the risk to which he had exposed the man; but he answered in the tone in which he (like all European servants) always spoke of the degraded inhabitants of Egypt—"Poh! he is only an Arab;" and I was soon relieved from apprehension by the Arab returning, full of praises of the gun, having killed with both shots. One thing disheartened me even more than the head wind. Ever since I left home

I had been in earnest search of a warm climate, and thought I had secured it in Egypt; but wherever I went, I seemed to carry with me an influence that chilled the atmosphere. In the morning, before I rose, Paul brought in to me a piece of ice as thick as a pane of glass, made during the night; a most extraordinary, and to me unexpected circumstance. The poor Arabs, accustomed to their hot and burning sun, shrank in the cold almost to nothing, and early in the morning and in the evening were utterly unfit for labour. I suffered very much also myself. Obligated to sit with the door of my cabin closed, my coat and greatcoat on, and with a prospect of a long cold voyage, by the evening of the second day I had lost some portion of the enthusiasm with which, under a well-filled sail, I had started the day before from Cairo.

The third day was again exceedingly cold, the wind still ahead, and stronger than yesterday. I was still in bed, looking through the many openings of my cabin, and the men were on shore towing, when I was roused by a loud voice of lamentation, in which the weeping and wailing of women predominated. I stepped out, and saw on the bank of the river the dead body of an Arab, surrounded by men, women, and children, weeping and howling over it previous to burial. The body was covered with a wrapper of coarse linen cloth, drawn tight over the head and tied under the neck, and fastened between two parallel bars, intended as a barrow to carry it to its grave. It lay a little apart before the group of mourners, who sat on the bank above, with their eyes turned towards it, weeping, and apparently talking to it. The women were the most conspicuous among the mourners. The dead man had been more happy in his connexions than I imagine the Arabs generally are, if all the women sitting there were really mourning his death. Whether they were real mourners, or whether they were merely going through the formal part of an Egyptian funeral ceremony, I cannot say; but the big tears rolled down their cheeks, and their cries sounded like the overflowings of distressed hearts. A death and burial scene is at any time solemn, and I do not know that it loses any of its solemnity even when the scene is on the banks of the Nile, and the subject a poor and oppressed Arab. Human affection probably glows as warmly here as under a gilded roof, and I am disposed to be charitable to the exhibition that I then beheld; but I could not help noticing that the cries became louder as I approached, and I had hardly seated myself at a little distance from the corpse before the women seemed to be completely carried away by their grief, and with loud cries, tearing their hair and beating their breasts, threw out their arms towards the corpse, and prayed, and wept, and then turned away, with shrieks piteous enough to touch the heart of the dead.

The general territorial division of Egypt, from time immemorial, has been into upper and lower; the latter beginning at the shores of the Mediterranean and extending very nearly to the ancient Memphis, and the former commencing at Memphis and extending to the Cataracts. Passing by, for the present, the ruins of Memphis, on the fourth day, the wind dead ahead, and the men towing at a very slow rate, I went ashore with my gun, and about eleven o'clock in the morning walked into the town of Beni Souf. This town stands on the Libyan side of the river, on the borders of a rich valley, the Nile running close under the foot of the Arabian mountains; and contains as its most prominent objects, a mosque and minaret, and what is here called a palace or seraglio; that is, a large coarse building covered with white cement, and having grated windows for the harem.

Here travellers sometimes leave their boats to make an excursion to Medinch el Fayoun, the ancient Crocodopolis, or Arsinoë, near the great Lake Moeris. This lake was in ancient days one of the wonders of Egypt. It was sixty miles long (about the size of the Lake of Geneva), and Herodotus says that it was an artificial lake, and that in his time the towering summits of two

pyramids were visible above its surface. The great labyrinth, too, was supposed to be somewhere near this; but no pyramids nor any ruins of the labyrinth are now to be seen. The lake is comparatively dry, and very little is left to reward the traveller.

At sundown we hauled up to the bank, alongside a boat loaded with pilgrims; and building a fire on shore, the two crews, with their motley passengers, spent the night quietly around it. It was the first time since we left Cairo that we had come in contact with pilgrims, although we had been seeing them from my first entering Egypt. This was the season for the pilgrimage to Mecca. The great caravan was already gathering at Cairo, while numbers not wishing to wait, were seen on all parts of the Nile on their way to Kenneh, from thence to cross the desert to Cossier, and down the Red Sea to the Holy City. They were coming from all parts of the Mussulman dominions, poor and rich, old and young, women and children, almost piled upon each other by scores, for several months exposing themselves to all manner of hardships, in obedience to one of the principal injunctions of the Koran, once in their lives to perform a pilgrimage to Mecca.

On the 5th the wind was still dead ahead; the men continued to tow, but without making much progress; and the day dragged heavily. On the 6th, I saw another burial. Early in the morning Paul called me to look out. We were lying in company with another boat, fast to a little island of sand nearly in the middle of the river. I got up exceedingly cold, and saw a dead man lying on the sand, his limbs drawn up and stiff. He was a boatman on board the other boat, and had died during the night. A group of Arabs were sitting near making coffee, while two were preparing to wash the body previous to burial. They brought it down to the margin of the river, and laid it carefully upon the sand, then washed it, pressed down the drawn-up legs, and wrapped it in fragments of tattered garments, contributed by his fellow-boatmen, who could ill spare even these scanty rags; and lying it with great decency a little way from the river, joined the other group, and sat down with great gravity to pipes and coffee. In a few moments two of them rose, and going a little apart, with their bare hands scratched a shallow grave; and the poor Arab was left on a little sandbank in the Nile, to be covered in another season by the mighty river. He was an entire stranger, having come on board the evening before his boat set out from Cairo. In all probability, he was one of an immense mass which swarms in the crowded streets of Cairo, without friends, occupation, or settled means of living.

On the 7th the wind was still ahead and blowing strong, and the air was very cold. Having no books, no society, and no occupation except talking with Paul and my boatmen, and the stragglers on shore, I became dispirited, and sat, hour after hour, wrapped in my greatcoat, deliberating whether I should not turn back. One of the most vexatious things was the satisfaction apparently enjoyed by all around me. If we hauled up alongside another boat, we were sure to find the crew sprawling about in a most perfect state of contentment, and seemingly grateful to the adverse wind that prevented their moving. My own men were very obedient, but they could not control the wind. I had a written contract with my rais, drawn up by a Copt in Cairo, in pretty Arabic characters, and signed by both of us, although neither knew a word of its contents. The captain's manner of signing, I remember, was very primitive; he dipped the end of his finger in the ink, and pressed it on the paper, and in so doing seemed to consider that he had sold himself to me almost body and soul. "I know I am obliged to go if Howega says so," was his invariable answer; but though perfectly ready to go whenever there was a chance, it was easy enough to see that they were all quite as contented when there was none. Several times I was on the point of turning back, the wind drew down the river so invitingly; but if I returned, it was too early to go into Syria; and Thebes, "Thebes with her hundred gates," beckoned me on.

On the 8th I had not made much more than fifty miles, and the wind was still ahead, and blowing stronger than ever; indeed, it seemed as if this morning, for the first time, it had really commenced in earnest. I became desperate and went ashore, resolved to wear it out. We were lying along the bank, on the Libyan side, in company with fifteen or twenty boats, wind-bound like ourselves. It was near a little mud village, of which I forgot the name, and several Bedouin tents were on the bank, in one of which I was sitting smoking a pipe. The wind was blowing down with a fury I have never seen surpassed in a gale at sea, bringing with it the light sands of the desert, and at times covering the river with a thick cloud which prevented my seeing across it. A clearing up for a moment showed a boat of the largest class, heavily laden, and coming down with astonishing velocity; it was like the flight of an enormous bird. She was under bare poles, but small portions of the sail had got loose, and the Arabs were out on the very ends of the long spars getting them in. One of the boatmen, with a rope under his arm, had plunged into the river, and with strong swimming reached the bank, where a hundred men ran to his assistance. Their united strength turned her bows around, up stream, but nothing could stop her; stern foremost she dragged the whole posse of Arabs to the bank, and broke away from them perfectly ungovernable; whirling around, her bows pitched into our fleet with a loud crash, tore away several of the boats, and carrying one off, fast locked as in a death-grasp, she resumed her headlong course down the river. They had gone but a few rods, when the stranger pitched her bows under and went down in a moment, bearing her helpless companion also to the bottom. It was the most exciting incident I had seen upon the river. The violence of the wind, the swift movement of the boat, the crash, the wild figures of the Arabs on shore and on board, one in a red dress almost on the top of the long spar, his turban loose and streaming in the wind, all formed a strange and most animating scene. I need scarcely say that no lives were lost, for an Arab on the bosom of his beloved river is as safe as in his mud cabin.

On the 9th the wind was as contrary as ever; but between rowing and towing we had managed to crawl up as far as Minyeh. It was the season of the Ramadan, when for thirty days, from the rising to the setting of the sun, the followers of the Prophet are forbidden to eat, drink, or even smoke, or take the bath. My first inquiry was for a bath. It would not be heated or lighted up till eight o'clock; at eight o'clock I went, and was surprised to find it so large and comfortable. I was not long surprised, however, for I found that no sooner was the sacred prohibition removed, than the Turks and Arabs began to pour in in throngs; they came without any respect of persons, the haughty Turk with his pipe-bearing slave and the poor Arab boatman; in short, every one who could raise a few paras.

It was certainly not a very select company, nor over clean, and probably very few Europeans would have stood the thing as I did. My boatmen were all there. They were my servants, said the rais, and were bound to follow me every where. As I was a Frank, and as such expected to pay ten times as much as any one else, I had the best place in the bath, at the head of the great reservoir of hot water. My white skin made me a marked object among the swarthy figures lying around me; and half a dozen of the operatives, lank, bony fellows, and perfectly naked, came up and claimed me. They settled it among themselves, however, and gave the preference to a dried-up old man more than sixty, a perfect living skeleton, who had been more than forty years a scrubber in the bath. He took me through the first process of rubbing with the glove and brush; and he then thrown over me a copious ablution of warm water, to recover at leisure. I lay on the marble threshold at the border of the reservoir, only two or three inches above the surface of the water, into which I had fallen and found it excessively hot; but the

old man, satisfied with his exertion in rubbing me, sat on the edge of the reservoir, with his feet and legs hanging in the water, with every appearance of satisfaction. Presently he slid off into the water, and, sinking up to his chin, remained so a moment, drew a long breath, and seemed to look around him with a feeling of comfort. I had hardly raised myself on my elbow to look at this phenomenon, before a fine brawny fellow, who had been lying for some time torpid by my side, rose slowly, slid off like a turtle, and continued sinking, until he, too, had immersed himself up to his chin. I expressed to him my astonishment at his ability to endure such heat; but he told me that he was a boatman, had been ten days coming up from Cairo, and was almost frozen, and his only regret was that the water was not much hotter. He had hardly answered me before another and another followed, till all the dark naked figures around me had vanished. By the fitful glimmering of the little lamps, all that I could see was a parcel of shaved heads on the surface of the water, at rest or turning slowly and quietly as on pivots. Most of them seemed to be enjoying it with an air of quiet dreamy satisfaction; but the man with whom I had spoken first, seemed to be carried beyond the bounds of Mussulman gravity. It operated upon him like a good dinner; it made him loquacious, and he urged me to come in, nay he even became frolicsome; and, making a heavy surge, threw a large body of the water over the marble on which I was lying. I almost screamed, and started up as if melted lead had been poured upon me; even while standing up, it seemed to blister the soles of my feet, and I was obliged to keep up a dancing movement, changing as fast as I could, to the astonishment of the dozing bathers, and the utter consternation of my would-be friend. Roused too much to relapse into the quiet luxury of perspiration, I went into another apartment, of a cooler temperature, where, after remaining in a bath of moderately warm water, I was wrapped up in hot cloths and towels, and conducted into the great chamber. Here I selected a couch, and, throwing myself upon it, gave myself to the operators, who now took charge of me, and well did they sustain the high reputation of a Turkish bath: my arms were gently laid upon my breast, where the knee of a powerful man pressed upon them; my joints were cracked and pulled; back, arms, the palms of the hands, the soles of the feet, all visited in succession. I had been shampooed at Smyrna, Constantinople, and Cairo; but who would have thought of being carried to the seventh heaven at the little town of Minyeh? The men who had me in hand were perfect amateurs, enthusiasts, worthy of rubbing the hide of the sultan himself; and the pipe and coffee that followed were worthy, too, of the same mighty seigneur. The large room was dimly lighted, and, turn which way I would, there was a naked body, apparently without a soul, lying torpid, and tumbling at will by a couple of workmen. I had had some fears of the plague; and Paul, though he felt his fears gradually dispelled by the soothing process which he underwent, to the last continued to keep particularly clear of touching any of them. But I left the bath a different man; all my moral as well as physical strength was roused; I no longer drooped or looked back; and though the wind was still blowing a hurricane in my teeth, I was bent upon Thebes and the Cataracts.

CHAPTER V.

Sporting on the Nile.—A Recluse.—An Egyptian Hebe.—Siont.—A Wolf-race among the Tombs.—Adventure with a Governor.

January 13.—In the morning, the first thing I did was to shoot at a flock of ducks, the next to shoot at a crocodile. He was the first I had seen, and was lying on a sandbank on an island in the middle of the river. I might as well have thrown a stone at him, for he was out of range twice over, and his hard skin would have laughed at my bird-shot, even if I had hit him; but I did what every traveller on the Nile must do, I shot at a crocodile. I met several travellers, all abundantly

provided with materials, and believe we were about equally successful. I never killed any, nor did they. During the day the wind abated considerably, and towards evening it was almost calm. My boat rowed as easily as a barge, and we were approaching Manfaloot. For some time before reaching it, there is a change in the appearance of the river.

The general character of the scenery of the Nile is that of a rich valley, from six to eight or ten miles wide, divided by the river, and protected on either side from the Libyan and Arabian Deserts by two continuous and parallel ranges of mountains. These are the strongly marked and distinguishing features; and from Cairo to the Cataracts, almost the only variety is that occasioned by the greater or less distance of these two ranges. Before approaching Manfaloot they changed their direction, and on the Arabian side the dark mountains of Mokattam advanced to the very border of the river.

Here we began to approach the eternal monuments of Egyptian industry. For a long distance the high range of rocky mountain was lined with tombs, their open doors inviting us to stop and examine them; but most provokingly, now, for the first time since the day we started, the wind was fair. It had been my peculiarly bad luck to have a continuance of headwinds on a part of the river where there was nothing to see; and almost the very moment I came to an object of interest, the wind became favourable, and was sweeping us along beautifully. One of the few pieces of advice given me at Cairo, of which my own observation taught me the wisdom, was, with a fair wind never to stop going up; and though every tomb seemed to reproach me for my neglect, we went resolutely on.

In one of the tombs lives an old man, who has been there more than fifty years; and an old wife, his companion for more than half a century, is there with him. His children live in Upper Egypt, and once a-year they come to visit their parents. The old man is still hale and strong; at night a light is always burning in his tomb, a basket is constantly let down to receive the offerings of the charitable, and few travellers, even among the poor Arabs, ever pass without leaving their mites for the recluse of the sepulchres.

It was dark when we arrived at Manfaloot, but, being the season of the Ramadan, the Musulman day had just begun; the bazaars were open, and the cook and coffee shops thronged with Turks and Arabs indemnifying themselves for their long abstinence. My boatmen wanted to stop for the night; but as I would not stop for my own pleasure at the tombs below, I of course would not stop here for theirs; and after an hour or two spent in lounging through the bazaars and making a few necessary purchases, we were again under way.

At about eight o'clock, with a beautiful wind, I sailed into the harbour of Siout. This is the largest town on the Nile, and the capital of Upper Egypt. Brighter prospects now opened upon me. The wind that had brought us into Siout, and was ready to carry us on farther, was not the cold and cheerless one that for more than two weeks had blown in my teeth, but mild, balmy, and refreshing, raising the drooping head of the invalid, and making the man in health feel like walking, running, climbing, or clearing fences on horseback. Among the bouzoukiers who surrounded me the moment I jumped on the bank, was a beautiful bright-eyed little Arab girl, about eight years old, leading a donkey, and flourishing a long stick with a grace that would have shamed the best pupil of a fashionable dancing-master. By some accident, moreover, her face and hands were clean, and she seemed to be a general favourite among her ragged companions, who fell back with a gallantry and politeness that would have done honour to the ballroom of the dancing-master. Leaving her without a competitor, they deprived me of the pleasure of showing my preference; and putting myself under her guidance, I followed her nimble feet on the road to Siout. I make special mention of this little girl, because it is a rare thing to see an Eg-

yp-
tian child in whom one can take any interest. It was the only time such a thing ever occurred to me; and really she exhibited so much beauty and grace, such a mild, open, and engaging expression, and such propriety of behaviour, as she walked by my side, urging on the donkey, and looking up in my face when I asked her a question, that I felt ashamed of myself for riding while she walked. But, tender and delicate as she looked, she would have walked by the side of her donkey, and tired down the strongest man. She was, of course, the child of poor parents, of whom the donkey was the chief support. The father had been in the habit of going out with it himself, and frequently taking the little girl with him as a companion. As she grew up, she went out occasionally alone, and even among the Turks her interesting little figure made her a favourite; and when all the other donkeys were idle, hers was sure to be engaged. This, and many other things, I learned from her own pretty little lips on my way to Siout.

Siout stands about a mile and a half from the river, in one of the richest valleys of the Nile. At the season of inundation, when the river rolls down in all its majesty, the whole intermediate country is overflowed; and boats of the largest size, steering their course over the waste of waters by the projecting tops of the palm-trees, come to anchor under the walls of the city. A high causeway from the river to the city crosses the plain, a comparatively unknown and unnoticed, but stupendous work, which for more than 3000 years has resisted the headlong current of the Nile at its highest, and now stands, like the pyramids, not so striking, but an equally enduring, and perhaps more really wonderful, monument of Egyptian labour. A short distance before reaching the city, on the right, are the handsome palace and garden of Ibrahim Pacha. A stream winds through the valley, crossed by a stone bridge, and over this is the entrance-gate of the city. The governor's palace, the most imposing and best structure I had seen since the citadel at Cairo, standing first within the walls, seemed like a warder at the door.

The large courtyard before the door of the palace contained a group of idlers, mostly officers of the household, all well armed, and carrying themselves with the usual air of Turkish conceit and insolence. Sitting on one side, with large turbans and long robes, unarmed, and with the large brass inkhorn by their sides, the badge of their peaceful and inferior, if not degrading profession, was a row of Copts, calling themselves, and believed to be, the descendants of the ancient Egyptians, having, as they say, preserved their blood intact during all the changes of their country. Boasting the blood of the ancient Egyptians, with the ruins of the mighty temples in which they worshipped, and the mighty tombs in which they were buried, staring them in the face, they were sitting on the bare earth at the door of a petty delegate of a foreign master, a race of degraded beggars, lifeless and soulless, content to receive, as a grace from the hands of a tyrant, the wretched privilege of living as slaves in the land where their fathers reigned as masters.

I do not believe that the contents of all the bazaars in Siout, one of the largest towns in Egypt, were worth as much as the stock of an ordinary dealer in dry goods in Broadway. But these are not the things for which the traveller stops at Siout. On the lofty mountains overlooking this richest valley of the Nile, and protecting it from the Libyan Desert, is a long range of tombs, the burial-place of the ancient Egyptians; and looking for a moment at the little Mahomedan burying-ground, the traveller turns with wonder from the little city he has left, and asks, Where is the great city which had its graves in the sides of yonder mountains? Where are the people who despised the earth as a burial-place, and made for themselves tombs in the eternal granite?

The mountain is about as far from the city as the river, and the approach to it is by another strong causeway over the same beautiful plain. Leaving our donkeys at its foot, and following the nimble foot-steps of my little

Arab girl, we climbed by a steep ascent to the first range of tombs. They were the first I had seen, and are but little visited by travellers; and though I afterwards saw all that were in Egypt, I still consider these well worth a visit. Of the first we entered, the entrance chamber was perhaps forty feet square, and adjoining it, in the same range, were five or six others, of which the entrance-chambers had about the same dimensions. The ceilings were covered with paintings, finished with exquisite taste and delicacy, and in some places fresh as if just executed; and on the walls were hieroglyphics enough to fill volumes. Behind the principal chamber were five or six others nearly as large, with smaller ones on each side, and running back perhaps 150 feet. The back chambers were so dark, and their atmosphere was so unwholesome, that it was unpleasant, and perhaps unsafe, to explore them; if we went in far, there was always a loud rushing noise, and, as Paul suggested, their innermost recesses might now be the abode of wild beasts. Wishing to see what caused the noise, and at the same time to keep out of harm's way, we stationed ourselves near the back-door of the entrance chamber, and I fired my gun within; a stream of fire lighted up the darkness of the sepulchral chamber, and the report went grumbling and roaring into the innermost recesses, rousing their occupants to phrensy. There was a noise like the rushing of a strong wind; the light was dashed from Paul's hand; a soft skummy substance struck against my face; and thousands of bats, wild with fright, came whizzing forth from every part of the tomb to the only avenue of escape. We threw ourselves down, and allowed the ugly frightened birds to pass over us, and then hurried out ourselves. For a moment I felt guilty; the beastly birds, driven to the light of day, were dazzled by the glorious sun, and, flying and whirling blindly about, were dashing themselves against the rocky side of the mountain, and falling dead at its base. Cured of all wish to explore very deeply, but at the same time relieved from all fears, we continued going from tomb to tomb, looking at the pictures on the walls, endeavouring to make out the details, admiring the beauty and freshness of the colours, and speculating upon the mysterious hieroglyphics which mocked our feeble knowledge. We were in one of the last when we were startled by a noise different from any we had yet heard, and from the door leading to the dark recesses within, foaming, roaring, and gnashing his teeth, out ran an enormous wolf: close upon his heels, in hot pursuit, came another, and almost at the door of the tomb they grappled, fought, growled fearfully, rolled over, and again the first broke loose and fled; another chase along the side of the mountain, another grapple, a fierce and desperate struggle, and they rolled over the side, and we lost sight of them. The whole affair had been so sudden, the scene so stirring, and the interest so keen, that Paul and I had stood like statues, our whole souls thrown into our eyes, and following the movements of the furious beasts. Paul was the first to recover himself; and as soon as the wolves were fairly out of sight, with a characteristic movement, suddenly took the gun out of my hand, and started in pursuit. It is needless to say that he did not go far.

But the interest of the day was not yet over. While walking along the edge of the mountain, in spite of bats and beasts, still taking another and another look, my ears were suddenly struck with a loud voice of lamentation coming up from the valley below; and looking in the direction of the city, I saw approaching over the elevated causeway a long funeral procession, and the voice came from the mourners following the corpse. They were evidently coming to the Mahomedan burying-ground at the foot of the mountain; and I immediately left the tombs of the ancient Egyptians to go to the burial of one who but yesterday was a dweller

far beyond the regular path for descending, wishing to intercept the procession before its arrival at the burying-ground, I had something like the

wolf-race I had just beheld to get down in time; unluckily, I had sent Paul back to the place where we had left our cloaks and donkeys, and the little girl, with directions to ride round the foot of the hill and meet me at the burying-ground. How I got down I do not know; but I was quietly sitting under a large palm-tree near the cemetery when the procession came up. It approached with funeral banners and devices which I could not make out, but probably containing some precept of the Koran, having reference to death, and the grave, and a paradise of hours; and the loud wailing which had reached me on the top of the mountain, here was almost deafening. First in the strange procession came the beggars, or santons, men who are supposed to lead peculiarly pure and holy lives, denying themselves all luxuries and pleasures, labouring not, and taking no heed for themselves what they shall eat or what they shall drink, and living upon the willing, though necessarily stunted charity, of their miserable countrymen. I could read all this at the first glance; I could see that poverty had been their portion through life; that they had drunk the bitter cup to its very dregs. Their beards were long, white, and grizzled; over their shoulders and breasts they wore a scanty covering of rags, fastened together with strings, and all with some regard to propriety. This ragged patchwork covered their breasts and shoulders only, the rest of their bodies being entirely naked, and they led the funeral procession among a throng of spectators, with heads erect and proud step, under what, any where else, would be called an indecent and shameless exposure of person, unbecoming their character as saints or holy beggars. Over their shoulders were slung by ropes large jars of water, which for charity's sweet sake, and for the love of the soul of the deceased, they carried to distribute gratis at his grave. After them came a parcel of boys, then the sheiks and two officers of the town, then the corpse, tightly wrapped from head to foot in a red sash, on a bier carried by four men; then a procession of men, and more than a hundred women in long cotton dresses, covering their heads and drawn over their faces, so as to hide all except their eyes.

These were the last, but by no means the least important part of the procession, as, by general consent, the whole business of mourning devolved upon them; and the poor Arab who was then being trundled to his grave, had no reason to complain of their neglect. Smiles and tears are a woman's weapons; and she is the most to be admired, and has profited most by the advantage of education, who knows how to make the best use of them. Education and refinement can no doubt do wonders; but the most skilful lady in civilised life might have taken lessons from these untutored Egyptians. A group of them were standing near me, chattering and laughing until the procession came up, when all at once big tears started from their eyes, and their cries and lamentations rent the air as if their hearts were breaking. I was curious to see the form of a modern burial in Egypt, but I hesitated in following. Some of the Arabs had looked rudely at me in passing, and I did not know whether the bigoted Mussulmans would tolerate the intrusion of a stranger and a Christian. I followed on, however, looking out for Paul, and fortunately met him at the gate of the burying-ground. The sheik was standing outside, ordering and arranging; and I went up to him with Paul, and asked if there were any objection to my entering; he not only permitted it, but, telling me to follow him, with a good deal of noise and an unceremonious use of the scabbard of his sword, he cleared a way through the crowd; and even roughly breaking through the ranks of the women, so as materially to disturb their business of mourning, and putting back friends and relations, gave me a place at the head of the tomb. It was square, with a round top, built of Nile mud, and whitewashed; two men were engaged in opening it, which was done simply by pulling away a few stones, and scooping out the sand with their hands. In front, but a few feet from the door, sat the old mother, so old

as to be hardly conscious of what was passing around her, and probably, long before this, buried in the same grave; near her was the widow of the deceased, dressed in silk, and sitting on the bare earth with an air of total abandonment; her hands, her breast, the top of her head and her face, plastered with thick coats of mud, and her eyes fixed upon the door of the tomb. A few stones remained to be rolled away, and the door, or rather the hole, was opened; the two men crawled in, remained a minute or two, came out, and went for the corpse. The poor widow followed them with her eyes, and when they returned with the body, carefully and slowly dragging it within the tomb, and the feet and the body had disappeared, and the beloved head was about to be shut for ever from her eyes, she sprang up, and passionately throwing her arms towards the tomb, broke forth in a perfect plirnsy of grief. "Twenty years we have lived together; we have always lived happily; you loved me, you were kind to me, you gave me bread; what shall I do now? I will never marry again. Every day I will come and weep at your tomb, my love, my life, my soul, my heart, my eyes. Remember me to my father, remember me to my brother," &c. &c. I do not remember half she said; but as Paul translated it to me, it seemed the very soul of pathos; and all this time she was walking distractedly before the door of the tomb, wringing her hands, and again and again plastering her face and breast with mud. The mourning women occasionally joined in chorus, the sautons ostentatiously crying out, "Water, for the love of God and the Prophet, and the soul of the deceased;" and a little girl about seven or eight years old was standing on the top of the tomb, naked as she was born, eating a piece of sugar cane. Paul looked rather suspiciously upon the whole affair, particularly upon that part where she avowed her determination never to marry again. "The old Beezzebub," said he; "she will marry to-morrow, if any one asks her."

Leaving the burying ground, we returned to Siout. On my way I made acquaintance with the governor, not only of that place, but also of all Upper Egypt, a pacha with two or three tails; a great man by virtue of his office, and much greater in his own conceit. I saw coming towards me a large, fine-looking man, splendidly dressed, mounted on a fine horse, with two runners before him, and several officers and slaves at his side. I was rather struck with his appearance, and looked at him attentively as I passed, without, however, saluting him, which I would have done had I known his rank. I thought he returned my gaze with interest; and, in passing, each continued to keep his eyes fixed upon the other, to such a degree that we must either have twisted our necks off or turned our bodies. The latter was the easier for both; and we kept turning, he on horseback and I on foot, until we found ourselves directly facing each other, and then both stopped. His guards and attendants turned with him, and, silent as statues, stood looking at me. I had nothing to say, and so I stood and said nothing. His mightiness opened his lips, and his myrmidons, with their hands on their sword-hilts, looked as if they expected an order to deal with me for my unparalleled assurance. His mightiness spoke, and I have no doubt but the Turks around him thought it was the *ne plus ultra* of dignity, and wondered such words had not confounded me. But it was not very easy to confound me with words I could not understand, although I could perceive that there was nothing very gracious in his manner. Paul answered, and, after the governor had turned his back, told me that his first address was, "Do I know you any thing?" which he followed up by slapping his horse on the neck, and saying, in the same tone, "Is this your horse?" Paul says that he answered in a tone of equal dignity, "A cat may look at a king;" though, from his pale cheeks and quivering lips, I am inclined to doubt whether he gave so doughty a reply.

I was exceedingly amused at the particulars of the interview, and immediately resolved to cultivate the acquaintance. During the long days and nights of my

voyage up the Nile, in poring over my books and maps, I had frequently found my attention fixed upon the great Oasis in the Libyan Desert. A caravan road runs through it from Siout, and I resolved, since I had had the pleasure of one interview with his excellency, to learn from him the particulars of time, danger, &c. I therefore hurried down to the boat for my firman, and, strong in this as if I had the pacha at my right hand, I proceeded forthwith to the palace; but my friend observed as much state in giving audience as the pacha himself. Being the season of the Ramadan, he received nobody on business until after the evening meal, and so my purpose was defeated. Several were already assembled at the gate, waiting the appointed hour; but it did not suit my humour to sit down with them and exercise my patience, and perhaps feel the littleness of Turkish tyranny in being kept to the last, so I marched back to my boat.

It was still an hour before sunset; my men had laid in their stock of bread, the wind was fair, a boat of the largest size, belonging to a Turkish officer, with a long red satin flag, was just opening her large sails to go up the river, and bidding good-bye to my little Arab girl, we cast off our fastening to the bank at Siout. It was the first day I had spent on shore in the legitimate business of a tourist, and by far the most pleasant since I left Cairo.

CHAPTER VI.

Small Favours thankfully received.—Slavery in Egypt.—How to catch a Crocodile.—An elaborate Joke.—Imaginary Perils.—Arabs not so bad as they might be.

The next day, at about four o'clock, we arrived at Djiddah, formerly the capital of Upper Egypt, and the largest town on the Nile. My humour for going to the Oasis had been growing upon me, and, finding that there was a track from this place also, I landed, and working my way through the streets and bazaars, went to the governor's palace. As I before remarked, the place where the governor lives is always, by extraordinary courtesy, called a palace.

The governor was not at home; he had gone to Siout, on a visit to my hand-some friend the governor there, but he had left his deputy, who gave us such an account of the journey and its perils as almost put an end to it for ever, at least so far as Paul was concerned. He said that the road was dangerous, and could not be travelled except under the protection of a caravan or guard of soldiers; that the Arabs among the mountains were a fierce and desperate people, and would certainly cut the throats of any unprotected travellers. He added, however, that a caravan was about forming, which would probably be ready in four or five days, and that, perhaps, before that time, the governor would return and give me a guard of soldiers. It did not suit my views to wait the uncertain movements of a caravan, nor did it suit my pocket to incur the expense of a guard. So, thanking the gentleman for his civility (he had given us pipes and coffee, as usual), I bade him good-bye, and started for my boat; but I had not gone far before I found him trotting at my heels. In the palace he had sat with his legs crossed, with as much dignity as the governor himself could have displayed; but as soon as he slid down from the divan, he seemed to have left dignity for his betters, and pounced upon Paul for "buckshee." I gave him five piasters (about equal to a quarter of a dollar), for which the deputy of the governor of Djiddah, formerly the capital of Upper Egypt, laid his hand upon his heart, and invoked upon my head the blessing of Allah and the prophet.

At Djiddah, for the first time, I saw carried on one of the great branches of trade on the Nile, a trade which once reigned the annals of our own country, and the fatal effects of which we still continue to experience. There were two large boat-loads,—perhaps 500 or 600 slaves—collected at Dongola and Senaar, probably bought from their parents for a shawl, a string of beads, or some trifling article of necessity. Born under the

burning sun of the tropics, several of them had died of cold even before reaching the latitude of Lower Egypt; many were sick, and others dying. They were arranged on board the boats and on the banks in separate groups, according to their state of health. Among them was every variety of face and complexion, and it was at once startling and painful to note the gradations of man descending to the brute. I could almost see the very line of separation. Though made in God's image, there seemed no ray of the divinity within them. They did not move upon all-fours, it is true, but they sat, as I had seen them in the slave-market at Cairo, perfectly naked, with their long arms wound round their legs, and their chins resting upon their knees, precisely as we see monkeys, baboons, and apes; and as, while looking at these miserable caricatures of our race, I have sometimes been almost electrified by a transient gleam of resemblance to humanity, so here I was struck with the closeness of man's approach to the inferior grade of animal existence. Nor was there much difference between the sick and well; the sick were more pitiable, for they seemed doomed to die, and death to any thing that lives is terrible; but the strong and lusty, men and women, were bathing in the river; and when they came out they smeared themselves with oil, and laid their shining bodies in the sun, and slept like brutes. To such as these, slavery to the Turk is not a bitter draught; philanthropists may refine and speculate, and liberals declaim, but what is liberty to men dying for bread, and what lordship is there in being separated from the parents who have sold them, or doomed to labour where that labour is light compared with what they must endure at home?

In the East slavery exists now precisely as it did in the days of the patriarchs. The slave is received into the family of a Turk in a relation more confidential and respectable than that of an ordinary domestic; and when liberated, which very often happens, stands upon the same footing with a free man. The curse does not rest upon him for ever; he may sit at the same board, dip his hand in the same dish, and, if there are no other impediments, may marry his master's daughter.

In the evening we left Djiddah, and about ten o'clock hauled up to the bank, and rested quietly till morning. Next day the wind was fair, but light, and I passed it on shore with my gun. This same gun, by the way, proved a better companion to me on my journey than I had expected. There were always plenty of pigeons; indeed, advancing in Upper Egypt, one of the most striking features in the villages on the Nile is the number of pigeon-cocks, built of mud in the form of a sugar-loaf, and whitewashed. They are much more lofty than any of the houses, and their winged tenants constitute a great portion of the wealth of the villagers. It is not, however, allowable to shoot at these, the laws regulating the right of property in animals *feræ naturæ* being as well established on the banks of the Nile as at Westminster Hall; but there are hundreds of pigeons in the neighbourhood of every village which no one claims. In some places, too, there is fine sport in hunting hares; and if a man can bring himself to it, he may hunt the gazelle; and almost the whole line of the river, at least above Siout, abounds with ducks and geese. These, however, are very wild, and, moreover, very tough; and, except for the sport, are not worth shooting. No keeping and no cooking could make them tender, and good masticators were, thrown away upon them.

But the standing shots on the Nile are crocodiles and pelicans. The former still abound, as in the days when the Egyptian worshipped them; and as you see one basking in the sun, on some little bank of sand, even in the act of firing at him, you cannot help going back to the time when the passing Egyptian would have bowed to him as to a god; and you may imagine the descendant of the ancient river-god, as he feels a chill rattling through his scaly side, invoking the shades of his worshippers, telling his little ones of the glory of his ancestors, and cursing the march of improvement,

which has degraded him from the deity of a mighty people into a target for strolling tourists. I always liked to see a crocodile upon the Nile, and always took a shot at him, for the sake of the associations. In one place I counted in sight at one time twenty-one, a degree of fruitfulness in the river probably equal to that of the time when each of them would have been deemed worthy of a temple while living, and embalmment and a mighty tomb when dead.

While walking by the river-side, I met an Arab with a gun in his hand, who pointed to the dozing crocodiles on a bank before us, and, marking out a space on the ground, turned to the village a little back, and made me understand that he had a large crocodile there. As I was some distance in advance of my boat, I accompanied him, and found one fourteen feet long, stuffed with straw, and hanging under a palm-tree. He had been killed two days before, after a desperate resistance, having been disabled with bullets, and pierced with spears in a dozen places. I looked at him with interest and compassion, reflecting on the difference between his treatment and that experienced by his ancestors, but nevertheless opened a negotiation for a purchase; and though our languages were as far apart as our countries, bargain sharpens the intellect to such a degree that the Arab and I soon came to an understanding, and I bought him as he hung, for forty piasters and a charge of gunpowder. I had conceived a joke for my own amusement. A friend had requested me to buy for him some mosaics, cameos, &c., in Italy, which circumstances had prevented me from doing, and I had written to him, regretting my inability, and telling him that I was going to Egypt, and would send him a mummy or a pyramid; and when I saw the scaly monster hanging by the tail, with his large jaws distended by a stick, it struck me that he would make a still better substitute for cameos and mosaics, and that I would box him up, and, without any advice, send him to my friend.

The reader may judge how desperately I was pushed for amusement, when I tell him that I chuckled greatly over this happy conceit; and having sent my Nubian to hail the boat as she was coming by, I followed with my little memorial. The whole village turned out to escort us, more than a hundred Arabs, men, women, and children, and we dragged him down with a pomp and circumstance worthy of his better days. Paul looked a little astonished when he saw me with a rope over my shoulder, leading the van of this ragged escort, and rather turned up his nose when I told him my joke. I had great difficulty in getting my prize on board, and, when I got him there, he deranged every thing else; but the first day I was so tickled that I could have thrown all my other cargo overboard rather than him. The second day the joke was not so good, and the third I grew tired of it, and tumbled my crocodile into the river. I followed him with my eye as his body floated down the stream; it was moonlight, and the creaking of the water-wheel on the banks sounded like the moan of a spirit of an ancient Egyptian, indignant at the murder and profanation of his god. It was, perhaps, hardly worth while to mention this little circumstance, but it amused me for a day or two, brought me into mental contact with my friends at home, and gave me the credit of having myself shot a crocodile, any one of which was worth all the trouble it cost me. If the reader will excuse a bad pun, in consideration of its being my first and last, it was not a *dry* joke; for in getting the crocodile on board I tumbled over, and, very unintentionally on my part, had a January bath in the Nile.

During the early part of that day, I was walking on the bank of the river; there was more tillable land than usual on the Arabian side, and I continually saw the Arabs, naked or with a wreath of grass around their loins, drawing water to irrigate the ground, in a basket fastened to a pole, like one of our old-fashioned well-poles.

On the 17th we approached Dendera. I usually

dined at one o'clock, because it was then too hot to go on shore, and also, to tell the truth, because it served to break the very long and tedious day. I was now about four hours from Dendera by land, of which two and a half were desert, the Libyan sands here coming down to the river. It was a fine afternoon, there was no wind, and I hoped, by walking, to have a view of the great temple before night. It was warm enough then; but as it regularly became very cold towards evening, I told my Nubian to follow me with my cloak. To my surprise, he objected. It was the first time he had done so. He was always glad to go ashore with me, as indeed were they all, and it was considered that I was showing partiality in always selecting him. I asked one of the others, and found that he, and in fact all of them, made objections, on the ground that it was a dangerous road.

This is one of the things that vex a traveller in Egypt, and in the East generally. He will often find the road which he wishes to travel a dangerous one, and, though no misadventure may have happened on it for years, he will find it impossible to get his Arabs to accompany him. My rais took the matter in hand, began kicking them ashore, and swore they should all go. This I would not allow. I knew that the whole course of the Nile was safe as the streets of London; that no accident had happened to a traveller since the pacha had been on the throne; and that women and children might travel with perfect safety from Alexandria to the Cataracts; and, vexed with their idle fears, after whipping Paul over their shoulders, who I saw was quite as much infected as any of them, I went ashore alone. Paul seemed quietly making up his mind for some desperate movement; without a word, he was arranging the things about the boat, shutting up the doors of the cabin, buttoning his coat, and with my cloak under his arm and a sword in his hand, he jumped ashore and followed me. He had not gone far, however, before his courage began to fail. The Arabs, whom we found at their daily labour drawing water, seemed particularly black, naked, and hairy. They gave dubious and suspicious answers, and when we came to the edge of the desert, he began to grumble outright; he did not want to be shot down like a dog; if we were strong enough to make a stout resistance, it would be another thing, &c. &c. In truth, the scene before us was dreary enough, the desert commencing on the very margin of the river, and running back to the eternal sands of Africa. Paul's courage seemed to be going with the green soil we were leaving behind us; and as we advanced where the grass seemed struggling to resist the encroachments of the desert, he was on the point of yielding to the terror of his own imagination, until I suggested to him that we could see before us the whole extent of desert we were to cross; that there was not a shrub or bush to interrupt the view, and not a living thing moving that could do us harm. He then began to revive; it was not for himself, but for me he feared. We walked on for about an hour, when, feeling that it was safe to trust me alone, and being tired, he sat down on the bank, and I proceeded. Fear is infectious. In about half an hour more I met three men, who had to me a peculiarly cut-throat appearance; they spoke, but I, of course, could not understand them. At length, finding night approaching, I turned back to meet the boat, and saw that the three Arabs had turned too, and were again advancing to meet me, which I thought a very suspicious movement. Paul's ridiculous fears had completely infected me, and I would have dodged them if I could; but there was no bush to hide behind. I almost blushed at myself for thinking of dodging three Arabs, when I had a double-barrelled gun in my hand and a pair of pistols in my sash; but I must say I was not at all sorry, before I met them again, to hear Paul shouting to me, and a moment after to see my boat coming up under full sail.

One who has never met an Arab in the desert, can have no conception of his terrible appearance. The worst pictures of the Italian bandits or Greek moun-

tain robbers I ever saw are tame in comparison. I have seen the celebrated Gasperini, who ten years ago kept in terror the whole country between Rome and Naples, and who was so strong as to negotiate and make a treaty with the pope. I saw him surrounded by nearly twenty of his comrades; and when he told me he could not remember how many murders he had committed, he looked civil and harmless compared with a Bedouin of the desert. The swarthy complexion of the latter, his long beard, his piercing coal-black eyes, half-naked figure, an enormous sword slung over his back, and a rusty matchlock in his hand, make the best figure for a painter I ever saw; but, happily, he is not so bad as he looks to be.

CHAPTER VII.

The Temple of Dendera.—Practice against Theory.—Regulating the Sun.—The French at Thebes.—The Curse of Pharaoh.—An Egyptian Tournament.—Preparations for Dinner.—An English travelling Lady.

Sunday, January 18.—At eight o'clock in the morning we arrived at Ghennah, where, leaving my boat and crew to make a few additions to our stock, Paul and I crossed over in a sort of ferry-boat to Dendera.

The temple of Dendera is one of the finest specimens of the arts in Egypt, and the best preserved of any on the Nile. It stands about a mile from the river, on the edge of the desert, and coming up, may be seen at a great distance. The temples of the Egyptians, like the chapels in Catholic countries, in many instances stand in such positions as to arrest the attention of the passer-by; and the Egyptian boatman, long before he reached it, might see the open doors of the temple of Dendera, reminding him of his duty to the gods of his country. I shall not attempt any description of this beautiful temple; its great dimensions, its magnificent propylon or gateway, portico, and columns; the sculptured figures on the walls; the spirit of the devices, and their admirable execution; the winged globe and the sacred vulture; the hawk and the ibis, Isis, Osiris, and Horus, gods, goddesses, priests, and women; harps, altars, and people clapping their hands; and the whole interior covered with hieroglyphics and paintings, in some places, after a lapse of more than 2000 years, in colours fresh as if but the work of yesterday.

It was the first temple I had seen in Egypt; and although I ought not perhaps to say so, I was disappointed. I found it beautiful, far more beautiful than I expected; but look at it as I would, wander around it as I would, the ruins of the Acropolis at Athens rose before me; the severe and stately form of the Parthenon; the beautiful fragment of the temple of Minerva, and the rich Corinthian columns of the temple of Jupiter, came upon me with a clearness and vividness I could not have conceived. The temple is more than half buried in the sand. For many years it has formed the nucleus of a village. The Arabs have built their huts within and around it, range upon range, until they reached and almost covered the tops of the temple. Last year, for what cause I know not, they left their huts in a body, and the village, which for many years had existed there, is now entirely deserted. The ruined huts still remain around the columns and against the broken walls. On the very top is a chamber, beautifully sculptured, and formed for other uses, now blackened with smoke, and the polished floors strewed with fragments of pottery and culinary vessels.

Nor is this the worst affliction of the traveller at Dendera. He sees there other ruins, more lamentable than the encroachments of the desert and the burial in the sand, worse than the building and ruin of successive Arab villages; he sees wanton destruction by the barbarous hand of man. The beautiful columns upon which the skillful and industrious Egyptian artist had laboured with his chisel for months, and upon which, for years, which were then looked upon with reverence, and ever since with admiration, have been

ashed into a thousand pieces, to build bridges and forts for the great modern reformer.

It is strange how the organ of mischief develops itself when it has something to work upon. I sat down upon the sculptured fragments of a column, which perhaps at this moment forms the abutment of some bridge, and, looking at the wreck around me, even while admiring and almost reverencing the noble ruin, began breaking off the beautifully chiselled figure of a hawk, and perhaps in ten minutes had demolished the work of a year. I felt that I was doing wrong, but excused myself by the plea that I was destroying to preserve, and saving that precious fragment from the ruin to which it was doomed, to show at home as a specimen of the skill of the Old World. So far I did well enough; but I went farther. I was looking intently, though almost unconsciously, at a pigeon on the head of Isis, the capital of one of the front columns of the temple. It was a beautiful shot; it could not have been finer if the temple had been built expressly to shoot pigeons from. I fired: the shot went smack into the beautifully sculptured face of the goddess, and put out one of her eyes; the pigeon fell at the foot of the column, and while the goddess seemed to weep over her fallen state, and to reproach me for this renewed insult to herself and to the arts, I picked up the bird and returned to my boat.

On board I had constantly a fund of amusement in the movements of my Arab crew. During the Ramadan, a period of thirty days, no good Mussulman eats, drinks, or smokes, from the rising to the setting of the sun. My men religiously observed this severe requisition of the Koran, although sometimes they were at work at the oar under a burning sun nearly all day. They could form a pretty shrewd conjecture as to the time of the setting of the sun, but nevertheless they fell into the habit of regulating themselves by my watch, and I did not think the Prophet would be particularly hard upon them if I sometimes brought the day to a close half an hour or so before its time. Sometimes I was rather too liberal; but out of respect for me they considered the sun set when I told them it was; and it was interesting to see them regularly every evening, one after another, mount the upper deck, and, sprouting out their cloaks, with their faces towards the tomb of the Prophet, kneel down and pray.

On the 20th, the wind was light but favourable, and part of the time the men were on shore towing with the cords. We were now approaching the most interesting spot on the Nile, perhaps in the world. Thebes, immortal Thebes, was before us, and a few hours more would place us among her ruins. Towards noon the wind died away, and left us again to the slow movement of the tow line. This was too slow for my then excited humour. I could not bear that the sun should again set before I stood among the ruins of the mighty city; and landing on the right side of the river, I set out to walk. About an hour before dark the lofty columns of the great temple at Luxor, and the still greater of Carnac, were visible. The glowing descriptions of travellers had to a certain extent inflamed my imagination. Denon, in his account of the expedition to Egypt, says, that when the French soldiers first came in sight of Thebes, the whole army involuntarily threw down their arms and stood in silent admiration—a sublime idea, whether true or not; but I am inclined to think that the French soldiers would have thrown down their arms, and clapped their hands with much greater satisfaction, if they had seen a living city and prospect of good quarters. For my own part, without at this moment referring to particulars, I was disappointed at the first view of the ruins of Thebes. We walked on the right side of the river, the valley, as usual, running back to the desert.

It was very dark when we arrived at the ruined village which now occupies part of the site of the city. The plough has been driven over the ruins of the temples, and grass was growing where the walls had stood. A single boat was lying along the

bank—a single flag, the red cross of England, was drooping lazily against the mast; and though it be death to my reputation as a sentimental traveller, at that moment I hailed the sight of that flag with more interest than the ruined city. Since I left Cairo I had seen nothing but Arabs; for three weeks I had not opened my lips except to Paul; and let me tell the reader, that though a man may take a certain degree of pleasure in travelling in strange and out-of-the-way places, he cannot forget the world he has left behind him. In a land of comparative savages, he hails the citizen of any civilised country as his brother; and when on the bank of the river I was accosted in my native tongue by a strapping fellow in a Turkish dress, though in the broken accents of a Sicilian servant, I thought it the purest English I had ever heard. I went on board the boat, and found two gentlemen, of whom I had heard at Cairo, who had been to Mount Sinai, from thence to Hior, by the Red Sea to Cosseir, and thence across the desert to Thebes, where they had only arrived that day. I sat with them till a late hour. I cannot flatter myself that the evening passed as agreeably to them as to me, for they had been a party of six, and I alone; but I saw them afterwards, and our acquaintance ripened into intimacy; and though our lots are cast in different places, and we shall probably never meet again, if I do not deceive myself, neither will ever forget the acquaintance formed that night on the banks of the Nile.

Our conversation during the evening was desultory and various. We mounted the pyramids, sat down among the ruins of temples, groped among tombs, and, mixed up with these higher matters, touched incidentally upon rats, fleas, and all kinds of vermin. I say we touched incidentally upon these things; but, to tell the truth, we talked so much about them, that when I went to my boat, I fairly crawled. I have omitted to mention that the curse provoked by Pharaoh still rests upon the land, and that rats, fleas, and all those detestable animals into which Aaron converted the sands, are still the portion of the traveller and sojourner in Egypt. I had suffered considerably during the last four days, but, not willing to lose a favourable wind, had put off resorting to the usual means of relief. To-night, however, there was no enduring it any longer; the rats ran, shrieked, and shouted, as if celebrating a jubilee on account of some great mortality among the cats, and the lesser animals came upon me as if the rod of Aaron had been lifted for my special affliction. I got up during the night, and told Paul that we would remain here a day, and early in the morning they must sink the boat. Before I woke, we were half across the river, being obliged to cross in order to find a convenient place for sinking. I was vexed at having left so abruptly my new companions; but it was too late to return. We pitched our tent on the bank, and immediately commenced unloading the boat.

On a point a little above, in front of a large house built by the French, at the south end of the temple of Luxor, and one of the most beautiful positions on the Nile, we set two tents. I knew that they belonged to the companions of the two gentlemen on the opposite side, and that there was a lady with them. I rather put myself out of the way for it, and the first time I met the three gentlemen on the bank, I was particularly pleased with them. I may have deceived myself, but I thought they did not greet me as deserters, as I was disposed to greet every traveller I met in that remote country. True, I was not a very interesting-looking object; but, as I said to myself, "Take the beam out of your own eye, and then—" True, their beards were longer, and one of them was rather taller than mine, but I did not think that gave them any right to put on airs. In short, I left them with a sense of go-to-the-devil feeling, and did not expect to see any more to do with them. I therefore strolled away, and spent the day rambling among the ruins of the temples of Luxor and Carnac. I shall not now attempt any de-

scription of these temples, nor of the ruins of Thebes generally (no easy task), but reserve the whole until my return from the Cataracts.

At about three o'clock I returned to my tent. It was the first day of the feast of Bairam, the thirty days of fasting (Ramadan) being just ended. It was a great day at Luxor; the bazaars were supplied with country products, the little cafeterias were filled with smokers, indemnifying themselves for their long abstinence, and the Fellahs were coming in from the country. On my return from Carnag, I for the first time saw dromedaries, richly caparisoned, mounted by well-armed Arabs, and dashing over the ground at full gallop. I had never seen dromedaries before, except in caravans, accommodating themselves to the slow pace of the camel, and I did not think the clumsy, lumbering animal, could carry himself so proudly, and move so rapidly. Their movement, however, was very far from realising the extravagant expression of "swift as the wind," applied to it in the East. I was somewhat fatigued on my return, and Paul met me on the bank with a smiling face, and information that the English party had sent their janizary to ask me to dine with them at six o'clock. Few things tend to give you a better opinion of a man, of his intelligence, his piety, and morals, than receiving from him an invitation to dinner. I am what is called a sure man in such cases, and the reader may suppose that I was not wanting upon this occasion.

It was an excessively hot day. You who were hovering over your coal fires, or moving about wrapped in cloaks or greatcoats, can hardly believe that on the 20th of January the Arabs were refreshing their heated bodies by a bath in the Nile, and that I was lying under my tent actually panting for breath. I had plenty to occupy me, but the heat was too intense; the sun seemed to scorch the brain, while the sands blistered the feet. I think it was the hottest day I experienced on the Nile.

While leaning on my elbow, looking out of the door of my tent towards the temple of Luxor, I saw a large body of Arabs, on foot, on dromedaries, and on horseback, coming down towards the river. They came about half way across the sandy plain between the temple and the river, and stopped nearly opposite to my tent, so as to give me a full view of all their movements. The slaves and pipe-bearers immediately spread mats on the sand, on which the principal persons seated themselves, and while they were taking coffee and pipes, others were making preparations for equestrian exercises. The forms and ceremonies presented to my mind a lively picture of preparing the lists for a tournament; and the intense heat and scorching sands reminded me of the great passage of arms in Scott's Crusaders, near the Diamond of the Desert, on the shores of the Dead Sea.

The parties were on horseback, holding in their right hands long wooden spears, the lower ends resting on the sand, close together, and forming a pivot around which their movements were made. They rode round in a circle, with their spears in the sand, and their eyes keenly fixed on each other, watching an opportunity to strike; chased, turned, and doubled, but never leaving the pivot; occasionally the spears were raised, crossed, and struck together, and a murmuring ran through the crowd like the cry in the fencing-scene in Hamlet, "a hit, a fair hit!" and the parties separated, or again dropped their poles in the centre for another round. The play for some time seemed confined to slaves and dependents, and among them, and decidedly the most skilful, was a young Nubian. His master, a Turk, who was sitting on the mat, seemed particularly pleased with his success.

The whole of this seemed merely a preliminary, designed to stir up the dormant spirit of the masters. For a long time they sat quietly puffing their pipes, and probably longing for the stimulus of a battle-cry to rouse them from their torpor. At length one of them, the master of the Nubian, slowly rose from the mat, and challenged an antagonist. Slowly he laid down his pipe, and took and raised the pole in his

hand; but still he was not more than half roused. A fresh horse was brought him, and, without taking off his heavy cloth mantle, he drowsily placed his left foot in the broad shovel stirrup, his right on the rump of the horse, behind the saddle, and swung himself into the seat. The first touch of the saddle seemed to rouse him; he took the pole from the hand of his attendant, gave his horse a severe check, and, driving the heavy corners of the stirrups into his sides, dashed through the sand on a full run. At the other end of the course he stopped, rested a moment or two, then again driving his irons into his horse, dashed back at full speed; and when it seemed as if his next step would carry him headlong among the Turks on the mat, with one jerk he threw his horse back on his haunches, and brought him up from a full run to a dead stop. This seemed to warm him a little; his attendant came up and took off his cloak, under which he had a red silk jacket and white trousers, and again he dashed through the sand and back as before. This time he brought up his horse with furious vehemence; his turban became unrolled, he flew into a violent passion, tore it off and threw it on the sand, and, leaving his play, fiercely struck the spear of his adversary, and the battle at once commenced. The Turk, who had seemed too indolent to move, now showed a fire and energy, and an endurance of fatigue, that would have been terrible in battle. Both horse and rider scorned the blazing sun and burning sands, and round and round they ran, chasing, turning, and doubling within an incredibly small circle, till an approving murmur was heard among the crowd. The trial was now over, and the excited Turk again seated himself upon the mat, and relapsed into a state of calm indifference.

The exercise finished just in time to enable me to make my toilet for dinner. As there was a lady in the case, I had some doubt whether I ought not to shave, not having performed that operation since I left Cairo; but as I had already seen the gentlemen of the party, and had fallen, moreover, into the fashion of the country, of shaving the head and wearing the tarboueh (one of the greatest luxuries in Egypt, by the way), and could not in any event sit with my head uncovered, I determined to stick to the beard; and disguising myself in a clean shirt, and giving directions to my boatmen to be ready to start at ten o'clock, I walked along the bank to the tent of my new friends. I do not know whether my notion in the morning was right, or whether I had misapprehended things; but at any rate, I had no reason to complain of my reception now: I think myself that there was a difference, which I accounted for in my own way, by ascribing to their discovery that I was an American. I have observed that English meeting abroad, though they would probably stand by each other to the death in a quarrel, are ridiculously shy of each other as acquaintances, on account of the great difference of caste at home. As regards Americans, the case is different, and to them the English display none of that feeling. After I had started on my ramble, Paul had planted my flag at the door of the tent, and, among the other advantages which that flag brought me, I included my invitation to dinner, agreeable acquaintances, and one of the most pleasant evenings I spent on the Nile. Indeed, I hope I may be pardoned a burst of national feeling, and be allowed to say, without meaning any disrespect to any other country, that I would rather travel under the name of an American than under any other known in Europe. Every American abroad meets a general prepossession in favour of his country, and it is an agreeable truth that the impression made by our countrymen abroad generally sustains the prepossession. I have met with some, however, who destroyed this good effect, and made themselves disagreeable and gave offence by a habit of intruding their country, and its institutions, and of drawing invidious comparisons, with a pertinacity and self-complacency I never saw in any other people.

But to return to the dinner: a mat may make a long

digression before a dinner on paper, who would scorn such a thing before a dinner *de facto*. The party consisted of four—a gentleman and his lady, he an honourable, and heir to an old and respectable title; a brother of the lady, an ex-captain in the guards, who changed his name and resigned his commission on receiving a fortune from an uncle; and another gentleman, I do not know whether of that family, but bearing one of the proudest names in England. They were all young, the oldest not more than thirty-five, and, not excepting the lady, full of thirst for adventure and travel. I say not excepting the lady; I should rather say that the lady was the life and soul of the party. She was young and beautiful, in the most attractive style of English beauty; she was married, and therefore dead in law; and as we may say what we will of the dead, I venture to say that she had shone as a beauty and a belle in the proudest circles of England, and was now enjoying more pleasure than Almack's or drawing-rooms could give, rambling among ruins, and sleeping under a tent on the banks of the Nile. They had travelled in Spain, had just come from Mount Sinai and the Red Sea, and talked of Bagdad. I had often met on the continent with Englishmen who "were out" as they called it, for a certain time, one year or two years, but this party had no fixed time; they "were out" for as long as suited their humour. To them I am indebted for the most interesting part of my journey in the East, for they first suggested to me the route by Petra and Arabia Petraea. We made a calculation by which we hoped, in reference to what each had to do, to meet at Cairo and make the attempt together. It was a great exertion of resolution that I did not abandon my own plans, and keep in company with them, but they had too much time for me; a month or two was no object to them, but to me a very great one.

All this, and much more, including the expression of a determination, when they had finished their travels in the Old World, to visit us in the New, took place while we were dining under the tent of the captain and his friend. The table stood in the middle on cauteens, about eight inches from the ground, with a mattress on each side for seats. It was rather awkward sitting, particularly for me, who was next the lady, and in that position felt some of the trammels of conventional life; there was no room to put my legs under the table, and, not anticipating the precise state of things, I had not arranged straps and suspenders, and my feet seemed to be bigger than ever. I doubted them under me; they got asleep, not the quiet and tranquil sleep which makes you forget existence, but the slumber of a troubled conscience, pricking and burning, till human nature could endure it no longer, and I kicked out the offending members with very little regard to elegance of attitude. The ice once broken, I felt at my ease, and the evening wore away too soon. An embargo had been laid upon my tongue so long, that my ears fairly tingled with pleasure at hearing myself talk. It was, in fact, a glorious evening; a bright spot that I love to look back upon, more than indemnifying me for weeks of loneliness. I sat with them till a late hour; and when I parted, I did not feel as if it were the first time I had seen them, or think it we did be the last, expecting to meet them a few days afterwards at the Cataracts. But I never saw them again; we passed each other on the river during the night. I received several messages from them; and at Beyroot, after I had finished my tour in Arabia Petraea and the Holy Land, I received a letter from them, still on the Nile. I should be extremely sorry to think that we are never to meet again, and hope that, when wearied with rambling among the ruins of the Old World, they will execute their purpose of visiting America, and that here we may talk over our meeting on the banks of the Nile. I went back to my boat to greater loneliness than before, but there was a fine wind, and in a few minutes we were again under way. I sat on deck till a late hour, smoked two or three pipes, and retired to my little cabin.

CHAPTER VIII.

The Rock of the Chain.—Ravages of the Plague.—Deserted Quarries.—A youthful Navigator.—A recollection of Sam Patch.—Ancient Inscriptions.—A perplexed Major-domo.—A Dinner without Parallel.—An awkward Discovery.

THE next day and the next still brought us favourable winds and strong, and we were obliged to take down one of our tall lateens, but made great progress with the other, even against the rapid current of the river. The Nile was very wide, the water turbulent, and the waves rolling with such violence that Paul became seasick; and if it had not been for the distant banks, we could hardly have believed ourselves on the bosom of a river 1000 miles from the ocean.

In the evening we were approaching Hadjar Silsily, the Rock of the Chain, the narrowest part of the river, where the mountains of Africa and Arabia seem marching to meet each other, and stopping merely to leave a narrow passage for the river. Tradition says that in ancient days an iron chain was drawn across the narrow strait, which checked the current; and the Arab boatman believes he can still see, in the sides of the mountains, the marks of the rings and bolts to which the miraculous chain was fastened.

We hauled up alongside of the bank for part of the night, and the next morning, with a strong and favourable wind, were approaching Assouan, the last town in Egypt, standing on the borders of Ethiopia, and at the foot of the Cataracts of the Nile. For some time before reaching Assouan, the river becomes broader and the mountains again retire, leaving space for the islands, and a broad surface for the body of the river. About three miles this side, on the Arabian bank, is the new palace of Ibrahim, where he retired and shut himself up during the terrible plague of last year. On the right, the top of the Libyan mountain is crowned with the tomb of a Marabout Sheik, and about half way down are the ruins of a convent, picturesque and interesting, as telling that before the Crescent came and trampled it under foot, the Cross, the symbol of the Christian faith, once reared its sacred form in the interior of Africa. In front is the beautiful Island of Elephantina, with a green bank sloping down to the river. On the left are rugged mountains; and projecting in rude and giant masses into the river are the rocks of dark grey granite, from which came the mighty obelisks and monuments that adorned the ancient temples of Egypt. The little town of Assouan stands on the bank of the river, almost hid among palm-trees; and back at a distance on the height are the ruins of the old city.

From the deck of my boat, the approach to the Cataracts presented by far the finest scene on the Nile, possessing a variety and wildness equally striking and beautiful, after the monotonous scenery along the whole ascent of the river. With streamers gallantly flying, I entered the little harbour, and with a feeling of satisfaction that amply repaid me for all its vexations, I looked upon the end of my journey. I would have gone to the second cataract if time had been no object to me, or if I had had at that time any idea of writing a book, as the second cataract is the usual terminus for travellers on the Nile; and a man who returns to Cairo without having been there, is not considered entitled to talk much about his voyage up the river.

I am, perhaps, publishing my own want of taste when I say that the notion of going to the great Oasis had taken such a hold of me, that it was mainly for this object that I sacrificed the voyage to the second cataract. With the feeling, therefore, that here was the end of my journey in this direction, I jumped upon the bank; and, having been pent up on board for two days, I put myself in rapid action, and, in one of the cant phrases of continental tourists, began to "knock down the lions."

My first move was to the little town of Assouan; but here I found little to detain me. It was better built than most of the towns on the Nile, and has its street of bazaars; the slave-bazaars being by far the best

supplied of any. In one of the little cafeterias opposite the slave-market, a Turk meanly dressed, though with arms, and a mouthpiece to his pipe that marked him as a man of rank, attracted my particular attention. He was almost the last of the Mamelukes, but yesterday the lords of Egypt; one of the few who escaped the general massacre of his race, and one of the very few permitted to drag out the remnant of their days in the pacha's dominions.

The ruins of the old town are in a singularly high, bold, and commanding situation, overlooking the river, the Cataracts, the island of Elephantina, and the Arabian desert. More than 1000 years ago this city contained a large and flourishing population; and some idea may be formed of its former greatness, from the fact that more than 20,000 of its inhabitants died in one year of the plague. In consequence of the terrible ravages of this scourge, the inhabitants abandoned it; but, still clinging to their ancient homes, commenced building a new town, beginning at the northern wall of the old. The valley here is very narrow; and the desert of Arabia, with its front of dark granite mountains, advances to its bank.

The southern gate of the modern town opens to the sands of the desert, and immediately outside the walls is a large Mahomedan burying-ground, by its extent and the number of its tombstones exciting the wonder of the stranger how so small a town could pay such a tribute to the king of terrors. In many places the bodies were not more than half buried, the loose sand which had been sprinkled over them having been blown away. Skulls, legs, and arms, were scattered about in every direction; and in one place we saw a pile of skulls and bones, which seemed to have been collected by some pious hand, to save them from the foot of the passing traveller. In another, the rest of the body still buried, the feet were sticking out, and the naked skull, staring at us from its sightless sockets, seemed struggling to free itself from the bondage of the grave, and claiming the promise of a resurrection from the dead. We buried again these relics of mortality, and hoping it might not be our lot to lay our bones where the grave was so little revered, continued our way to the ancient granite quarries of Syene.

These quarries stand about half an hour's walk from the river, in the bosom of a long range of granite mountains, stretching off into the desert of Arabia. Time and exposure have not touched the freshness of the stone, and the whole of the immense quarry looks as if it were but yesterday that the Egyptian left it. You could imagine that the workman had just gone to his noonday meal; and as you look at the mighty obelisk lying rude and unfinished at your feet, you feel disposed to linger till the Egyptian shall come to resume his work, to carve his mysterious characters upon it, and make it a fit portal for some mighty temple. But the hammer and chisel will never be heard there more. The Egyptian workmen have passed away, and these immense quarries are now and for ever silent and deserted.

Aside from the great interest of these ancient quarries, it is curious to notice how, long before the force of gunpowder and the art of blasting rocks were known, immense stones were separated from the sides of the mountains, and divided as the artist wished, by the slow process of boring small holes, and splitting them apart with wedges.

I returned by the old city, crossing its burying-ground, which, like that of the new town, told, in language that could not be misunderstood, that before the city was destroyed, it, too, had paid a large tribute to the grave. This burying-ground has an interest not possessed by any other in Egypt, as it contains, scattered over its extended surface, many tombstones with Coptic inscriptions, the only existing remains of the language of a people who style themselves, and are styled, the descendants of the ancient Egyptians.

It was late in the afternoon as I stood on the height crowned by the ruins of the ancient city, with a mo-

mentary feeling of returning loneliness, and gazed upon the sun retiring with glorious splendour towards my far-distant home. I turned my eyes to my boat, and beyond it at a distance down the river, I saw a boat coming up under full sail, bearing what my now practised eye told me was the English flag. I hurried down, and arrived in time to welcome to the Cataracts of the Nile the two gentlemen I had first met at Thebes.

We spent the evening together, and I abandoned my original intention of taking my own boat up the Cataracts, and agreed to go up with them.

In the morning, after an early breakfast, we started for the Island of Philæ, about eight miles from Assouan, and above all the Cataracts; an island singularly beautiful in situation, and containing the ruins of a magnificent temple. The road lay nearly all the way along the river, commanding a full view of the Cataracts, or rather, if a citizen of a new world may lay his innovating hand upon things consecrated by the universal consent of ages, what we who have heard the roar of Niagara, would call simply the "rapids." We set off on shaggy donkeys, without saddle, bridle, or halter. A short distance from Assouan, unmarked by any monument, amid arid sands, we crossed the line which, since the days of Pharaoh, has existed as the boundary between Egypt and Ethiopia. We passed through several villages, standing alone at the foot of the granite mountains, without green or verdure around them, even to the extent of a blade of grass, and irresistibly suggesting the question, "How do the miserable inhabitants live?" It was not the first time I had had occasion to remark the effect of blood on physical character, and the strong and marked difference of races among people living under the same sun, and almost on a common soil. In the first village in Nubia, though not half an hour from Assouan, there is a difference obvious to the most superficial observer, and here, on the very confines of Egypt, it would be impossible to mistake a border Nubian for an Arab of Assouan.

Before arriving at Philæ, the river is filled with rocks and islands, and the view becomes singularly bold and striking. At the foot of one of the islands is a sort of ferry, with a very big boat and a very little boy to manage it; we got on board, and were astonished to see with what courage and address the little fellow conducted us among the islands washed by the Cataracts. And it was not a straight ahead navigation either; he was obliged to take advantage of an eddy to get to one point, jump ashore, tow the boat to another, again drop to another, tow her again, and so on; and all this time the little fellow was at the helm, at the oar, at the rope, leading the chorus of a Nubian song, and ordering his crew, which consisted of three boys and one little girl. In this way we worked to an island inhabited by a few miserable Nubians, and, crossing it, came to the point of the principal cataract (I continue to call it cataract by courtesy), being a fall of about two feet.

And these were the great Cataracts of the Nile, whose roar in ancient days affrighted the Egyptian boatmen, and which history and poetry have invested with extraordinary and ideal terrors! The traveller who has come from a country as far distant as mine, bringing all that freshness of feeling with which a citizen of the New World turns to the storied wonders of the Old, and has roamed over the mountains and drunk of the rivers of Greece, will have found himself so often cheated by the exaggerated accounts of the ancients, the vivid descriptions of poets, and his own imagination, that he will hardly feel disappointed when he stands by this apology for a cataract.

Here the Nubian boys had a great feat to show, namely, jump into the cataract and float down to the point of the island. The inhabitants of the countries bordering on the Nile are great swimmers, and the Nubians are perhaps the best of all; but this was no great feat. The great and ever-to-be-lamented Sam Patch would have made the Nubians stare, and shown them, in his own pithy phrase, "that some folks could do things as well as other folks;" and I question if

there is a cataract on the Nile at which that daring diver would not have turned up his nose in scorn.

We returned by the same way we had come, and under the same guidance, augmented, however, by a motley collection of men and boys, who had joined us as our escort. In paying for the boat we showed a preference for our little boy, which brought down upon him all the rest, and he had to run to us for protection. We saved him for the present, but left him exposed to one of the evils attendant upon the acquisition of money all the world over, the difficulty of keeping it, which difficulty, in his case, was so great physically, that I have no doubt he was stripped of more than half before we were out of sight.

Getting rid of them, or as many of them as we could, we again mounted our shaggy donkeys, and rode to the Island of Philæ. This island makes one of the most beautiful pictures I ever saw. Perhaps the general monotony of the scenery on the Nile gives it a peculiar beauty; but I think it would be called beautiful anywhere, even among the finest scenes in Italy. It brought forcibly to my mind, but seemed to me far more lovely than, the Lake Maggiore, with the beautiful Isola Bella and Isola Madre. It is entirely unique, a beautiful *lusus nature*, a little island about 1000 feet long and 400 broad, rising in the centre of a circular bay, which appears to be cut off from the river, and forms a lake surrounded by dark sandstone rocks, carpeted with green to the water's edge, and covered with columns, propylons, and towers, the ruins of a majestic temple. A sunken wall encircles it on all sides, on which, in a few moments, we landed.

I have avoided description of ruins when I could. The fact is, I know nothing of architecture, and never measured anything in my life; before I came to Egypt I could not tell the difference between a drama and a propylon, and my whole knowledge of Egyptian antiquities was little more than enough to enable me to distinguish between a mummy and a pyramid. I picked up about enough on the spot to answer my purpose; but I have too much charity for my reader to impose my smattering on him. In fact, I have already forgotten more than half of the little that I then learned, and I should show but a poor return for his kindness if I were to puzzle him with the use or misuse of technical phrases. Still I must do something; the temples of Egypt must have a place here; for I might as well leave out Jerusalem in the story of a tour through the Holy Land.

The temple of Philæ is a magnificent ruin, 435 feet in length, and 105 in width. It stands at the south-west corner of the island, close upon the bank of the river, and the approach to it is by a grand colonnade, extending 240 feet along the edge of the river to the grand propylon. The propylon is nearly 100 feet long, and rises on each side of the gateway in two lofty towers, in the form of a truncated pyramid. The front is decorated with sculpture and hieroglyphics; on each side a figure of Isis, twenty feet high, with the moon over her head, and near the front formerly stood two obelisks and two sphinxes, the pedestals and ruins of which still remain. The body of the temple contains eleven chambers, covered with sculpture and hieroglyphics, the figures tinted in the most lively colours, and the ceiling painted azure, and studded with stars.

But there are other things which touch the beholder more nearly than the majestic ruins of the temple—things which carry him from the works of man to a grander and higher subject, that of man himself. On the lofty towers in front of the temple, among the mysterious and unknown writings of the Egyptians, were inscriptions in Greek and Latin, telling that they whose names were there written had come to worship the great goddess Isis, that men had lived and looked upon the sun, moon, and stars, the mountains and the rolling river, and worshipped a deity in it. And again, on the front wall was the sacred cross, the emblem of the Christian faith, and the figures of the Egyptian deities were defaced and plastered over, showing that

another race had been there to worship, who scorned and trampled on the gods of the heathen. And again there was an inscription of later days, that in the ruins of the temple carried with it a wild and fearful interest; telling that the thunder of modern war had been heard above the roar of the cataract, and that the arm of the soldier which had struck terror in the frozen regions of the north, had swept the burning sands of Africa. In the grand propylon, among the names of tourists and travellers, in a small plain hand, is written—"L'an 6 de la république, le 13 Messidor, une armée Française, commandée par Buonaparte, est descendue à Alexandrie; l'armée ayant mis, vingt jours après, les Mamelukes en fuite aux pyramides, Dessaix, commandant la première division, les a poursuivis, au de-là des cataractes, où il est arrivé le 13 Ventose, de l'an 7." Near this was an inscription that to me was far more interesting than all the rest, the name of an early friend, "C— B—, U. S. of America," written with his own hand. I did not know that he had been here, although I knew he had been many years from home, and I had read in a newspaper that he had died in Palestine. A thousand recollections crowded upon me, of joys departed never to return, and made me sad. I wrote my name under his, and left the temple.

I was glad to get back to my rascally donkey. If a man were oppressed and borne down with mental anxiety, if he were mourning and melancholy, either from the loss of a friend or an undigested dinner, I would engage to cure him. I would put him on a donkey without saddle or halter, and if he did not find himself by degrees drawn from the sense of his misery, and worked up into a towering passion, getting off and belabouring his brute with his stick, and forgetting every thing in this world but the obstinacy of the ass, and his own folly in attempting to ride one, man is a more quiet animal than I take him to be.

As I intended going the next day up the Cataracts with my companions, and expected to spend the day on board their boat, I had asked them to dine with me in the evening. After giving the invitation, I held a council with Paul, who told me that the thing was impossible, and, with a prudence worthy of Caleb Baldestone, expressed his wonder that I had not worked an invitation out of them. I told him, however, that the thing was settled, and dine with me they must. My house-keeping had never been very extravagant, and macaroni, rice, and fowl, had been my standing dishes. Paul was pertinacious in raising objections, but I told him peremptorily there was no escape; that he must buy a cow or a camel, if necessary, and left him scratching his head and pondering over the task before him.

In the hurried business of the day, I had entirely forgotten Paul and his perplexities. Once only, I remember, with a commendable prudence, I tried to get my companions to expend some of their force upon dried dates and Nubian bread, which they as maliciously declined, that they might do justice to me. Returning now, at the end of nine hours' hard work, crossing rivers and rambling among ruins, the sharp exercise, and the grating of my teeth at the stubborn movements of my donkey, gave me an extraordinary voracity, and dinner—the all-important, never-to-be-forgotten business of the day, the delight alike of the ploughman and philosopher—dinner with its uncertain goodness, began to press upon the most tender sensibilities of my nature. My companions felt the vibrations of the same chord, and, with an unnecessary degree of circumstance, talked of the effect of air and exercise in sharpening the appetite, and the glorious satisfaction, after a day's work, of sitting down to a good dinner. I had perfect confidence in Paul's zeal and ability, but I began to have some misgivings. I felt a hungry devil within me, that roared as if he would never be satisfied. I looked at my companions, and heard them talk; and as I followed their humour with an hysterical laugh, I thought the genius of famine was at my heels in the shape of two hungry Englishmen. I trembled for Paul, but the first glimpse

I caught of him reassured me. He sat on the deck of the boat, with his arms folded, coolly, though with an air of conscious importance, looking out for us. Slowly and with dignity he came to assist us from our cursed donkeys; neither a smile nor frown was on his face, but there reigned an expression that you could not mistake. Reader, you have seen the countenance of a good man lighted up with the consciousness of having done a good action; even so was Paul's. I could read in his face a consciousness of having acted well his part. One might almost have dined on it. It said, as plainly as face could speak, one, two, three, four, five courses and a dessert, or, as they say at the two-franc restaurants in Paris, "Quatre plats, une demi bouteille de vin, et pain à discrétion."

In fact, the worthy butler of Ravenswood could not have stood in the hall of his master in the days of its glory, before thunder broke china and soured buttermilk, with more sober and conscious dignity than did Paul stand on the deck of my boat to receive us. A load was removed from my heart. I knew that my credit was saved, and I led the way with a proud step to my little cabin. Still I asked no questions, and made no apologies. I simply told my companions we were in Paul's hands, and he would do with us as seemed to him good. Another board had been added to my table, and my towel had been washed and dried during the day, and now lay, clean and of a rather reddish white, doing the duty of a table-cloth. I noticed, too, tumblers, knives and forks, and plates, which were strangers to me, but I said nothing; we seated ourselves and waited, nor did we wait long; soon we saw Paul coming towards us, staggering under the weight of his burden, the savoury odour of which preceded him. He entered, and laid before us an Irish stew. Reader, did you ever eat an Irish stew? Gracious Heaven! I shall never forget that paragon of dishes; how often in the Desert, among the mountains of Sinai, in the Holy Land, rambling along the Valley of Jehoshaphat, or on the shores of the Dead Sea—how often has that Irish stew risen before me to tease and tantalise me, and haunt me with the memory of departed joys! The potato is a vegetable that does not grow in Egypt. I had not tasted one for more than a month, and was almost startled out of my propriety at seeing them; but I held my peace, and was as solemn and dignified as Paul himself. Without much ceremony, we threw ourselves with one accord upon the stew. I think I only do our party justice, when I say that few of those furnished gentlemen, from whose emerald isle it takes its name, could have shown more affection for the national dish. For my own part, as I did not know what was coming next, if any thing, I felt loath to part with it. My companions were knowing ones, and seemed to be of the same way of thinking, and, without any consultation, all appeared to be approaching the same end, to wit, the end of the stew. With the empty dish before him, demonstrative to Paul that so far we were perfectly satisfied with what he had done, that worthy purveyor came forward with an increase of dignity to change our plates. I now saw that something more was coming. I had suspected from the beginning that Paul was in the mutton line, and involuntarily murmured, "This day a sheep has died;" and presently on came another cut of the murdered innocent, in outlets, accompanied by fried potatoes. Then came boiled mutton and boiled potatoes, and then roast mutton and roast potatoes, and then came a macaroni paté. I thought this was going to spoil the whole; until this I had considered the dinner as something extraordinary and recherché. But the macaroni, the thing of at least six days in the week, utterly disconcerted me. I tried to give Paul a wink to keep it back, but on he came; if he had followed with a chicken, I verily believe I should have thrown it at his head. But my friends were unflinching and uncompromising. They were determined to stand by Paul to the last, and we laid in the macaroni paté with as much valor as if we had not already eaten a sheep. Paul would us up and packed us down with pancakes. I never knew a

man that did not like pancakes, or who could not eat them even at the end of a mighty dinner. And now, feeling that happy sensation of fullness which puts a man above kings, princes, or pachas, we lighted our long pipes and smoked. Our stomachs were full, and our hearts were open. Talk of mutual sympathy, of congenial spirits, of similarity of tastes, and all that; 'tis the dinner which unlocks the heart; you feel yourself warning towards the man that has dined with you. It was in this happy spirit that we lay like warriors, resting on our arms, and talked over the particulars of our battles.

And now, all dignity put aside and all restraint removed, and thinking my friends might have recognised acquaintances among the things at the table which were strangers to me, and thinking, too, that I stood on a pinnacle, and, come what might, I could not fall, I led the way in speculating upon the manner in which Paul had served us. The ice once broken, my friends solved many of the mysteries, by claiming this, that, and the other, as part of their furniture and stores. In fact, they were going on most unscrupulously, making it somewhat doubtful whether I had furnished anything for my own dinner, and I called in Paul. But that functionary had no desire to be questioned; he hemmed, and hawed, and dodged about; but I told him to make a clean heart of it, and then it came out, but it was like drawing teeth, that he had been on a regular foraging expedition among their stores. The potatoes with which he had made such a flourish were part of a very small stock furnished them by a friend, as a luxury not to be had on the Nile; and, instead of the acknowledgments which I expected to receive on account of my dinner, my friends congratulated me rather ironically upon possessing such a treasure of a steward. We sat together till a late hour; were grave, gay, laughing, and lachrymose, by turns; and when we began to doze over our pipes, betook ourselves to slumber.

CHAPTER IX.

Ascent of the Cataracts.—A Nautical Patriarch.—Political Improvement.—A Nubian Damsel's Wardrobe.—A test of Friendship.—East and West.—Moonlight on the Nile.—Uses of a Temple.

In the morning we were up betimes, expecting another stirring day in mounting the Cataracts. Carrying boats up and down the rapids is the great business of the Nubians who live on the borders of Egypt. It is a business that requires great knowledge and address; and the rais who commands the large squad of men necessary to mount a boat is an important person among them. He was already there with part of his men, the others being stationed among the islands of the Cataracts, at the places where their services would be needed. This rais was one of the most noble-looking men I ever saw. He was more than eighty, a native of Barbary, who had in early life wandered with a caravan across the Libyan Desert, and been left, he knew not why, on a little island among the Cataracts of the Nile. As the Nubian does now, firmly seated on a log and paddling with his hands, he had floated in every eddy, and marked every stone that the falling river lays bare to the eye; and now, with the experience of years, he stood among the Nubians, confessedly one of their most skillful pilots through a difficult and sometimes dangerous navigation. He was tall and thin, with a beard of uncommon length and whiteness; a face dried, scarred, and wrinkled, and dark as it could be without having the blackness of a negro. His costume was a clean white turban, red jacket, and red sash, with white trousers, red slippers, and a heavy club fastened by a string around his wrist. I am particular in describing the appearance of the hardy old man, for we were exceedingly struck with it. Nothing could be finer than his look, his walk, his every movement; and the picturesque effect was admirably heightened by contrast with his swarthy assistants, most of whom were despe-

ately ragged, and many of them as naked as they were born. The old man came on board with a dignity that savoured more of a youth passed amid the polish of a European court, than on the sands of Barbary, or the rude islands of the Nile. We received him as if he had been the great pacha himself, gave him coffee and pipes, and left him to the greatest luxury of the East, perfect rest, until his services should be required.

In the meantime, with a strong and favourable wind, we started from the little harbour of Assouan, while a throng of idlers, gathered together on the beach, watched our departure with as much interest as though it were not an event of almost daily occurrence. Almost immediately above Assouan the view extends over a broad surface, and the rocks and islands begin to multiply. The strong wind enabled us to ascend some distance with the sails; but our progress gradually diminished, and at length, while our sails were yet filled almost to bursting, we came to a dead stand, struggled vainly for a while against the increasing current, and then fell astern. The old rais, who had sat quietly watching the movements of the boat, now roused himself; and at his command, a naked Nubian, with a rope over his shoulders, plunged into the river and swam for the shore. At first he swam boldly and vigorously; but soon his strength began to fail, and the weight of the slackened rope effectually stopped his progress; when, resting for a little space, he dived like a duck, kicking his heels in the air, came up clear of the rope, and soon gained the bank. A dozen Nubians now threw themselves into the water, caught the sinking rope, carried it ashore, and wound it round a rock. Again the rais spoke, and fifty swarthy bodies were splashing in the water, and in a moment more they were on the rocky bank, hauling upon the rope; others joined them, but where they came from nobody could see; and by the strength of a hundred men, all pulling and shouting together, and both sails full, we passed the first Cataract.

Above this the passage became more difficult, and the old rais seemed to rise in spirit and energy with the emergency. As we approached the second Cataract, half a dozen ropes were thrown out, and the men seemed to multiply as if by magic, springing up among the rocks like a parcel of black river-gods. More than two hundred of them were hauling on the ropes at once, climbing over the rocks, descending into the river, and again mounting, with their naked bodies shining in the sun, all talking, tugging, ordering, and shouting together; and among them, high above the rest, was heard the clear voice of the rais. His noble figure, too, was seen, now scrambling along the base of a rock, now standing on its summit, his long arms thrown above his head, his white beard and ample dress streaming in the wind, until the inert mass had triumphed over the rushing river; when he again took his seat upon the deck, and in the luxury of his pipe forgot the animating scene that for a moment had cheated him back to youth.

At this season there was in no place a fall of more than two feet; though the river, breaking among the almost innumerable rocks and islands, hurried along with great violence and rapidity. In the midst of the most furious rushing of the waters, adding much to the striking wildness of the scene, were two figures, with their clothes tied above their heads, sitting upon the surface of the water apparently, and floating as if by a miracle. They were a man and his wife, crossing from one of the islands; their bark a log, with a bundle of cornstalks on each side; too frail to support their weight, yet strong enough to keep them from sinking.

And now all was over; we had passed the Cataracts, catching our dinner at intervals as we came up. We had wound round the beautiful Island of Philæ, and the boat had hauled up alongside the bank to let me go ashore. The moment of parting and returning to my former loneliness had come, and I felt my courage failing. I verily believe that if my own boat had been a boat of the Cataracts, I should have given up my own and accompanied my English friends. Paul

was even more reluctant to part than his master. He had never travelled except with a party, where the other servants and dragomen were company for him, and after these chance encounters he was for a while completely prostrated. The moment of parting came and passed; warm adieus were exchanged, and, with Paul and my own rais for company, I set out on foot for Assouan.

Directly opposite the Island of Philæ is a stopping-place for boats, where dates, the great produce of Upper Egypt, are brought in large quantities, and deposited preparatory to being sent down to Cairo. All along the upper part of the Nile the palm-tree had become more plentiful, and here it was the principal and almost only product of the country. Its value is inestimable to the Nubians, as well as to the Arabs of Upper Egypt; and so well is this value known, and so general is the progress of the country in European improvements, that every tree pays an annual tax to the great reformer.

The Nubian is interesting in his appearance and character; his figure is tall, thin, sinewy, and graceful, possessing what would be called in civilised life an uncommon degree of gentility; his face is rather dark, though far removed from African blackness; his features are long and aquiline, decidedly resembling the Roman; the expression of his face mild, amiable, and approaching to melancholy. I remember to have thought, when reading Sir Walter Scott's *Crusaders*, that the metamorphosis of Kenneth into a Nubian was strained and improbable, as I did not then understand the shades of difference in the features and complexion of the inhabitants of Africa; but observation has shown me that it was my own ignorance that deceived me; and in this, as in other descriptions of Eastern scenes, I have been forced to admire the great and intimate knowledge of details possessed by the unequalled novelist, and his truth and liveliness of description.

The inhabitants of Nubia, like all who come under the rod of the pacha, suffer the accumulated ills of poverty. Happily, they live in a country where their wants are few; the sun warms them, and the palm-tree feeds and clothes them. The use of fire-arms is almost unknown, and their weapons are still the spear and shield, as in ages long past. In the upper part of Nubia the men and women go entirely naked, except a piece of leather about six inches wide, cut in strings, and tied about their loins; and even here, on the confines of Egypt, at least one half of the Nubians appear in the same costume.

I do not know what has made me introduce these remarks upon the character and manners of the Nubians here, except it be to pave the way for the incidents of my walk down to Assouan. Wishing to get rid of my unpleasant feelings at parting with my companions, I began to bargain for one of the large heavy clubs, made of the palm-tree, which every Nubian carries, and bought what a Kentuckian would call a screamer, or an Irishman a toothpick; a large round club, about two inches in diameter, which seldom left my hand till I lost it in the Holy Land. Then seeing a Nubian riding backward and forward on a dromedary, showing his paces like a jockey at a horse-market, I began to bargain for him. I mounted him (the first time I had mounted a dromedary); and as I expected to have considerable use for him, and liked his paces, I was on the point of buying him, but was prevented by the sudden reflection that I had no means of getting him down to Cairo.

My next essay was upon more delicate ground. I began to bargain for the costume of a Nubian lady, and to use an expressive phrase, though in this case not literally true, I bought it off her back. One of my friends in Italy had been very particular in making a collection of ladies' costumes, and, to a man curious in those things, it struck me that nothing could be more curious than this. One of the elements of beauty is said to be simplicity; and if this be not a mere poetical fiction, and beauty when unadorned is really adorned

the most, then was the young Nubian girl whose dress I bought adorned in every perfection. In fact, it was impossible to be more simple, without going back to the origin of all dress, the simple fig-leaf. She was not more than sixteen, with a sweet mild face, and a figure that the finest lady might be proud to exhibit in its native beauty; every limb charmingly rounded, and every muscle finely developed. It would have been a burning shame to put such a figure into frock, petticoat, and the other et ceteras of a lady's dress. I now look back upon this, and many other scenes, as strange, of which I thought nothing at the time, when all around was in conformity. I remember, however, though I thought nothing of seeing women all but naked, that at first I did feel somewhat delicate in attempting to buy the few inches that constituted the young girl's wardrobe. Paul had no such scruples, and I found, too, that as in the road to vice, "ce n'est que le premier pas qui coûte." In short, I bought it, and have it with me; and to the curious in such matters I have no hesitation in saying, that the costume of a Nubian lady is far more curious than any thing to be found in Italy, and would make a decided sensation at a masquerade or fancy ball.

It was nearly dark, when, from the ruined height of the old city of Assouan, I saw my little boat with the flag of my country, and near it, hardly less welcome to my eyes, the red-cross banner of England. The sight of these objects, assisted by my multifarious bargainings, relieved me from the loneliness I had felt in parting from my friends; and I went on board the English boat, hoping to find a party with which I had partially arranged to set out from Cairo, and which I was every day expecting. I was disappointed, however; but found a gentleman to whom I was then a stranger, the English consul at Alexandria. He had been eighteen years in the country, closely devoted to his public and private duties, without ever having been in Upper Egypt. On the point of returning home, to enjoy in his own country and among his own people the fruits of his honourable labours, he had now for the first time ascended the Nile. He was accompanied by his daughter, who had reigned as a belle and beauty in the ancient city of Cleopatra, and her newly married husband. Coming from home, their boat was furnished and fitted up with all kinds of luxuries. Their treatable, in particular, made such a strong impression on me, that when I met them again at Thebes, I happened to find myself on board their boat regularly about the time for the evening meal. I was exceedingly pleased with Mr T——; so much so, that at Thebes I gave him the strongest mark of it a man could give—I borrowed money of him; and I have reason to remember his kindness in relieving me from a situation which might have embarrassed me.

Early the next morning the sails were already loosed and the stake pulled up, when Paul, from the bank, cried out, "A sail!" and looking down the river, I saw a boat coming up, and again the English flag. I furled my sails, fastened the stake, and waited till she came up, and found the party I had expected. I went on board, and breakfasted with them. They had started from Cairo on the same day with me, but with their large boats could not keep up with me against the wind. They had heard of me along the river; and, among other things, had heard of my having shot a crocodile. Waiting to see them off for the Island of Fihoe, and bidding them good-bye until we should meet at Thebes, I returned to my boat, and, letting fall the sails, before they were out of sight was descending the Nile.

My face was now turned towards home. Thousands of miles, it is true, were between us; but it was on the bosom of a mighty river, which was carrying me to the mightier ocean, and the waves that were rolling by my side were rapidly hurrying on, and might one day wash the shores of my native land. It was a beautiful prospect I had before me now. I could lie on the deck of my boat, and float hundreds of miles, shooting at crocodiles; or I could go ashore and ramble among modern villages, and the ruins of ancient cities, and

all the time I thought I would be advancing on my journey. Before night, however, the wind was blowing dead ahead, and we were obliged to furl our sails and take to our oars. But it was all of no use; our boat was blown along like a feather; carried round, backward and forward, across the river, zigzag, and at last fairly driven up the stream. With great difficulty we worked down to Omboos; and here, under the ruins of an ancient temple, part of which had already fallen into the river, we hauled up to the bank, and, in company with half a dozen Arab boats, lay by till morning.

Man is a gregarious animal. My boatmen always liked to stop where they saw other boats. I remember it was the same on the Ohio and Mississippi. Several years since, when the water was low, I started from Pittsburgh, in a flat-bottomed boat, to float down to New Orleans. There, too, we were in the habit of stopping along the bank at night, or in windy or foggy weather, and the scenes and circumstances were so different that the contrast was most interesting and impressive. Here we moored under the ruins of an ancient temple, there we made fast to the wild trees of an untrodden forest; here we joined half a dozen boats with eight or ten men in each, and they all gathered round a fire, sipped coffee, smoked, and lay down quietly to sleep; there we met the dashing roaring boys of the West, ripe for fun, frolic, or fight. The race of men "half horse, half alligator, and t'other half steam-boat," had not yet passed away, and whenever two boats met, these restless rovers must "do something," play cards, pitch pennies, fight cocks, set fire to a house, or have a row of some description. Indeed, it always involved a long train of interesting reflections, to compare the stillness and quiet of a journey on this oldest of rivers with the moving castles and the splashing of paddle-wheels on the great rivers of the New World.

At daylight I had mounted the bank, and was groping among the ruins of the temple. The portico fronting the river is a noble ruin, nearly 100 feet in length, with three rows of columns, five in each row, 30 feet high, and 10 feet in diameter at the base. The principal figure on the walls is Osiris, with a crocodile head, and the sacred tan in his hand. The Omibites were distinguished for their worship of the crocodile, and this noble temple was dedicated to that bestial god; among the ruins are still to be seen the wall on which the sacred animal was led in religious procession, and the tank in which he was bathed.

Towards noon we were approaching Hadjar Silsily, or the Rock of the Chain, the narrowest part of the river, bounded on each side by ranges of sandstone mountains. On the eastern side are ancient quarries of great extent, with the same appearance of freshness as at Assouan. Nothing is known of the history of these quarries; but they seem to have furnished material enough for all the cities on the Nile, as well as the temples and monuments that adorned them. Whole mountains have been cut away; and while the solitary traveller walks among these deserted workshops, and looks at the smooth sides of the mountains, and the fragments of unfinished work around him, he feels a respect for the people who have passed away, greater than when standing among the ruins of their mighty temples; for here he has only the evidences of their gigantic industry, without being reminded of the gross and disgusting purposes to which that industry was prostituted. The roads worn in the stone by the ancient carriage-wheels are still to be seen, and somewhere among these extensive quarries travellers have found an unfinished sphinx. I remember one place where there was an irregular range of unfinished doors, which might well have been taken for the work of beginners, practising under the eyes of their masters. Paul took a philosophic and familiar view of them, and said, that it seemed as if, while the men were at work, the boys playing around had taken up the tools, and amused themselves by cutting these doors.

On the opposite side, too, are quarries, and several ranges of tombs, looking out on the river, excavated

in the solid rock, with pillars in front, and images of deities in the recesses for the altars. I remember a beautiful chamber overhanging the river like a balcony. It had been part of a temple, or perhaps a tomb. We thought of stopping there to dine, but our boat had gone ahead, and our want of provisions was somewhat of an impediment.

At about four o'clock we saw at a distance the minaret of Edfou. There was no wind, the men were gently pulling at the oars, and I took one myself, much to the uneasiness of the rais, who thought I was dissatisfied. Sloth forms so prominent a feature in the composition of the Orientals, and quiet is so material an item in their ideas of enjoyment, that they cannot conceive why a man should walk when he can stand, why he should stand when he can sit, or, in short, why he should do any thing when he can sit still and do nothing.

It was dark before we arrived at Edfou. I mean it was that period of time when, by nature's laws, it should be dark; that is, the day had ended, the sun had set with that rich and burning lustre which attends his departing glories nowhere but in Egypt, and the moon was shedding her pale light over the valley of the Nile. But it was a moon that lighted up all nature with a paler, purer, and more lovely light; a moon that would have told secrets; a moon—a moon—in short, a moon whose light enabled one to walk over fields without stumbling, and this was, at the moment, the principal consideration with me.

Edfou lies about a mile from the bank of the river, and, taking Paul and one of the Arabs with me, I set off to view the temple by moonlight. The town, as usual, contained mud houses, many of them in ruins, a mosque, a bath, bazaars, the usual apology for a palace, and more than the usual quantity of ferocious dogs; and at one corner of this miserable place stands one of the magnificent temples of the Nile. The propylon, its lofty proportions enlarged by the light of the moon, was the most grand and imposing portal I saw in Egypt. From a base of nearly 100 feet in length and 30 in breadth, it rises on each side the gate in the form of a truncated pyramid, to the height of 100 feet, gradually narrowing, till at the top it measures 75 feet in length and 18 in breadth. Judge, then, what was the temple to which this formed merely the entrance; and this was far from being one of the large temples of Egypt. It measured, however, 440 feet in length and 220 in breadth, about equal to the whole space occupied by St Paul's churchyard. Its dromos, pronaos, columns, and capitals, all correspond, and enclosing it is a high wall, still in a state of perfect preservation. I walked round it twice, and, by means of the wall erected to exclude the unhallowed gaze of the stranger, I looked down upon the interior of the temple. Built by the Egyptians for the highest uses to which a building could be dedicated, for the worship of their gods, it is now used by the pacha as a granary and storehouse. The portico and courtyard, and probably the interior chambers, were filled with grain. A guard was stationed to secure it against the pilfering Arabs; and to secure the fidelity of the guard himself, he was locked in at sunset, and the key left with the governor. The lofty entrance was closed by a wooden door; the vigilant guard was already asleep, and we were obliged to knock some time before we could wake him.

It was a novel and extraordinary scene, our parley with the guard at the door of the temple. We were standing under the great propylon, mere insects at the base of the lofty towers; behind us at a little distance sat a group of the miserable villagers, and leaning against a column in the porch of the temple was the indistinct figure of the guard, motionless, and answering in a low deep tone, like an ancient priest delivering the answers of the oracles. By the mellow light of the moon every thing seemed magnified; the majestic proportions of the temple appeared more majestic, and the miserable present ruin of this once most favoured land upon me with a force I had not felt even at the

foot of the pyramids. If the temple of that little unknown city now stood in Hyde Park or the garden of the Tuilleries, France, England, all Europe, would gaze upon it with wonder and admiration; and when thousands of years shall have rolled away, and they, too, shall have fallen, there will be no monument in those proudest of modern cities like this in the little town of Edfou, to raise its majestic head and tell the passing traveller the story of their former greatness.

Some of the Arabs proposed to conduct me to the interior through a passage opening from the ruined huts on the top; but after searching a while, the miserable village could not produce a candle, torch, or taper to light the way. But I did not care much about it. I did not care to disturb the strong impressions and general effect of that moonlight scene; and though in this, as in other things, I subject myself to the imputation of having been but a superficial observer, I would not exchange the lively recollection of that night for the most accurate knowledge of every particular stone in the whole temple.

I returned to my boat, and to the surprise of my rais ordered him to pull up stake and drop down the river. I intended to drop down about two hours to Elythias, or, in Arabic, Elkob. No one on board knew where it was, and, tempted by the mildness and beauty of the night, I staid on deck till a late hour. Several times we saw fires on the banks, where Arab boatmen were passing the night, and hailed them, but no one knew the place; and though seeking and inquiring of those who had spent all their lives on the banks of the river, we passed, without knowing it, a city which once carried on an extensive commerce with the Red Sea, where the traces of a road to the emerald mines and the fallen city of Berenice are still to be seen, and the ruins of whose temples, with the beautiful paintings in its tombs, excite the admiration of every traveller.

We continued descending with the current all night, and in the morning I betook myself to my old sport of shooting at crocodiles and pelicans. At about eleven o'clock we arrived at Esneh, the ancient Latopolis, so called from the worship of a fish, now containing 1500 or 2000 inhabitants. Here, too, the miserable subjects of the pacha may turn from the contemplation of their degraded state to the greatness of those who have gone before them. In the centre of the village, almost buried by the accumulation of sand from the desert and the ruins of Arab huts, is another magnificent temple. The street is upon a level with the roof, and a hole has been dug between two columns so as to give entrance to the interior. The traveller has by this time lost the wonder and indignation at the barbarity of converting the wonderful remains of Egyptian skill and labour to the meanest uses; and, descending between the excavated columns, finds himself, without any feeling of surprise, in a large cleared space, filled with grain, earthen jars, and Arabs. The gigantic columns, with their lotus-leaved capitals, are familiar things; but among the devices on the ceiling, his wandering eye is fixed by certain mysterious characters, which have been called the signs of the zodiac, and from which speculators in science have calculated that the temple was built more than 6000 years ago, before the time assigned by the Mosiac account as the beginning of the world.

But this little town contains objects of more interest than the ruin of a heathen temple; for here, among the bigoted followers of Mahomed, dwell fifty or sixty Christian families, being the last in Egypt, and standing on the very outposts of the Christian world. They exhibited, however, a melancholy picture of the religion they profess. The priest was a swarthy, scowling Arab, and, as Paul said, looked more like a robber than a pastor. He followed us for bucksheesh, and attended by a crowd of boys, we went to the house of the bishop. This bishop, as he is styled by courtesy, is a miserable-looking old man; he told us he had charge of the two churches at Esneh, and of all the Christians in the world beyond it to the south. His flock consists of about 200, poor wanderers from the true principles of Christianity, and knowing it only as teaching them to

make the sign of the cross, and to call upon the Son, and Virgin, and a long calendar of saints. Outside the door of the church was a school; a parcel of dirty boys sitting on the ground, under the shade of some palm-trees, with a more dirty blind man for their master, who seemed to be at the work of teaching because he was not fit for any thing else. I turned away with a feeling of melancholy, and almost blushed in the presence of the haughty Mussulmans, to recognise the ignorant and degraded objects around me as my Christian brethren.

CHAPTER X.

Thebes, its Temples and great Ruins.—The Obelisk of Luxor, now of Paris.—An Avenue of Sphinxes.—Carnac.—The Mummy Pits.—The Tombs of the Kings.—The Memnonium.

It was nearly noon, when, with a gentle breeze, we dropped into the harbour of Thebes. The sun was beating upon it with meridian splendour; the inhabitants were seeking shelter in their miserable huts from its scorching rays; and when we made fast near the remains of the ancient port, to which, more than thirty centuries ago, the Egyptian boatman tied his boat, a small group of Arabs, smoking under the shade of some palm-trees on a point above, and two or three stragglers who came down to the bank to gaze at us, were the only living beings we beheld in a city which had numbered its millions. When Greece was just emerging from the shades of barbarism, and before the name of Rome was known, Egypt was far advanced in science and the arts, and Thebes the most magnificent city in the world. But the Assyrian came and overthrew for ever the throne of the Pharaohs. The Persian war-cry rang through the crowded streets of Thebes, Cambyses laid his destroying hands upon the temples of its gods, and a greater than Babylon the Great fell to rise no more.

The ancient city was twenty-three miles in circumference. The valley of the Nile was not large enough to contain it, and its extremities rested upon the bases of the mountains of Arabia and Africa. The whole of this great extent is more or less strewn with ruins, broken columns, and avenues of sphinxes, colossal figures, obelisks, pyramidal gateways, porticoes, blocks of polished granite, and stones of extraordinary magnitude, while above them, "in all the nakedness of desolation," the colossal skeletons of giant temples are standing "in the unwatered sands, in solitude and silence. They are neither grey nor blackened; there is no lichen, no moss, no rank grass or mantling ivy, to rob them and conceal their deformities. Like the bones of man, they seem to whiten under the sun of the desert." The sand of Africa has been their most fearful enemy; blown upon them for more than 3000 years, it has buried the largest monuments, and, in some instances, almost entire temples.

At this day the temples of Thebes are known almost every where, by the glowing reports of travellers. Artists have taken drawings of all their minute details, and I shall refer to them very briefly. On the Arabian side of the Nile are the great temples of Luxor and Carnac. The temple of Luxor stands near the bank of the river, built there, as is supposed, for the convenience of the Egyptian boatmen. Before the magnificent gateway of this temple, until within a few years, stood two lofty obelisks, each a single block of red granite, more than eighty feet high, covered with sculpture and hieroglyphics fresh as if but yesterday from the hands of the sculptor. One of them has been lately taken down by the French, and at this moment rears its daring summit to the skies in the centre of admiring Paris; the other is yet standing on the spot where it was first erected.

Between these and the grand propylon are two colossal statues with mitred head-dresses, also single blocks of granite, buried to the chest by sand, but still rising more than twenty feet above the ground. The grand propylon is a magnificent gateway, more than 200 feet in length at its present base, and more than 60 feet above the sand. The whole front is covered with sculpture—the battle scenes of an Egyptian warrior, designed and exe-

cuted with extraordinary force and spirit. In one compartment the hero is represented advancing at the head of his forces, and breaking through the ranks of the enemy; then standing, a colossal figure, in a car drawn by two fiery horses, with feathers waving overhead, the reins tied round his body, his bow bent, the arrow drawn to its head, and the dead and wounded lying under the wheels of his car and the hoofs of his horses. In another place several cars are seen in full speed for the walls of a town, fugitives passing a river, horses, chariots, and men, struggling to reach the opposite bank, while the hero, hurried impetuously beyond the rank of his own followers, is standing alone among the slain and wounded who have fallen under his formidable arm. At the farthest extremity he is sitting on a throne as a conqueror, with a sceptre in his hand, a row of the principal captives before him, each with a rope around his neck; one with outstretched hands imploring pity, and another on his knees to receive the blow of the executioner, while above is the vanquished monarch, with his hands tied to a car, about to grace the triumph of the conqueror.

Passing this magnificent entrance, the visitor enters the dromos, or large open court, surrounded by a ruined portico formed by a double row of columns covered with sculpture and hieroglyphics; and working his way over heaps of rubbish and Arab huts, among stately columns twelve feet in diameter, and between thirty and forty feet in height, with spreading capitals resembling the budding lotus, some broken, some prostrate, some half buried, and some lofty and towering as when they were erected, at the distance of 600 feet reaches the sanctuary of the temple.

But great and magnificent as was the temple of Luxor, it served but as a portal to the greater Carnac. Standing nearly two miles from Luxor, the whole road to it was lined with rows of sphinxes, each of a solid block of granite. At this end they are broken, and, for the most part, buried under the sand and heaps of rubbish. But approaching Carnac, they stand entire, still and solemn as when the ancient Egyptian passed between them to worship in the great temple of Ammon. Four grand propylons terminate this avenue of sphinxes, and, passing through the last, the scene which presents itself defies description. Belzoni remarks of the ruins of Thebes generally, that he felt as if he were in a city of giants; and no man can look upon the ruins of Carnac without feeling humbled by the greatness of a people who have passed away for ever. The western entrance, facing the temple of Northern Dair on the opposite side of the river, also approached between two rows of sphinxes, is a magnificent propylon 400 feet long and 40 feet in thickness. In the language of Dr Richardson, "looking forward from the centre of this gateway, the vast scene of havoc and destruction presents itself in all the extent of this immense temple, with its columns, and walls, and immense propylons, all prostrate in one heap of ruins, looking as if the thunders of heaven had smitten it at the command of an insulted God."

The field of ruins is about a mile in diameter; the temple itself 1200 feet long and 420 broad. It has twelve principal entrances, each of which is approached through rows of sphinxes, as across the plain from Luxor, and each is composed of propylons, gateways, and other buildings, in themselves larger than most other temples; the sides of some of them are equal to the bases of most of the pyramids, and on each side of many are colossal statues, some sitting, others erect, from twenty to thirty feet in height. In front of the body of the temple is a large court, with an immense colonnade on each side, of thirty columns in length, and through the middle two rows of columns fifty feet in height; then an immense portico, the roof supported by 134 columns, from twenty-six feet to thirty-four feet in circumference. Next were four beautiful obelisks more than seventy feet high, three of which are still standing; and then the sanctuary, consisting of an apartment twenty feet square, the walls and ceiling of large blocks of highly-polished granite, the ceiling studded with stars on a blue ground, and the

walls covered with sculpture and hieroglyphics representing offerings to Osiris, illustrating the mysterious uses of this sacred chamber, and showing the degrading character of the Egyptian worship. Beyond this is another colonnade, and again porticoes and walls to another propylon, at a distance of 2000 feet from the western extremity of the temple.

But these are not half of the ruins of Thebes. On the western side of the river, besides others prostrate and nearly buried under the sands, but the traces of which are still visible, the temples of Gornou, Northern Dair, Dair-el-Medinet, the Memnonium, and Medinet Abou, with their columns, and sculpture, and colossal figures, still raise their giant skeletons above the sands. Volumes have been written upon them, and volumes may yet be written, and he that reads all will still have but an imperfect idea of the ruins of Thebes. I will only add, that all these temples were connected by long avenues of sphinxes, statues, propylons, and colossal figures, and the reader's imagination will work out the imposing scene that was presented in the crowded streets of the now desolate city, when with all the gorgeous ceremonies of pagan idolatry, the priests, bearing the sacred image of their god, and followed by thousands of the citizens, made their annual procession from temple to temple, and, "with harps, and cymbals, and songs of rejoicing," brought back their idol, and replaced him in his shrine in the grand temple at Carnae.

The rambler among the ruins of Thebes will often ask himself, "Where are the palaces of the kings, and princes, and people, who worshipped in these mighty temples?" With the devout though degraded spirit of religion that possessed the Egyptians, they seem to have paid but little regard to their earthly habitations; their temples and their tombs were the principal objects that engrossed the thoughts of this extraordinary people. It has been well said of them that they regarded the habitations of the living merely as temporary resting-places, while the tombs were regarded as permanent and eternal mansions; and while not a vestige of a habitation is to be seen, the tombs remain monuments of splendour and magnificence, perhaps even more wonderful than the ruins of their temples. Clinging to the cherished doctrine of the metempsychosis, the immortal part, on leaving its earthly tenement, was supposed to become a wandering, migratory spirit, giving life and vitality to some bird of the air, some beast of the field, or some fish of the sea, waiting for a regeneration in the natural body. And it was of the very essence of this faith to inculcate a pious regard for the security and preservation of the dead. The whole mountain-side on the western bank of the river is one vast necropolis. The open doors of tombs are seen in long ranges, and at different elevations, and on the plain large pits have been opened, in which have been found 1000 mummies at a time. For many years, and until a late order of the pacha preventing it, the Arabs have been in the habit of rifling the tombs to sell the mummies to travellers. Thousands have been torn from the places where pious hands had laid them, and the bones meet the traveller at every step. The Arabs use the mummy-cases for firewood, the bituminous matters used in the embalmment being well adapted to ignition; and the epicurean traveller may cook his breakfast with the coffin of a king. Notwithstanding the depredations that have been committed, the mummies that have been taken away and scattered all over the world, those that have been burnt, and others that now remain in fragments around the tombs, the numbers yet undisturbed are no doubt infinitely greater; for the practice of embalming is known to have existed from the earliest periods recorded in the history of Egypt; and by a rough computation, founded upon the age, the population of the city, and the average duration of human life, it is supposed there are from 8,000,000 to 10,000,000 of mummies in the vast necropolis of Thebes.

These resting-places of the dead, I turn for to those of more than royal magnificence, the tombs of the kings. The world can show

nothing like them; and he who has not seen them can hardly believe in their existence. They lie in the valley of Biban-el-Melook, a dark and gloomy opening in the sandstone mountains, about three quarters of an hour from Gornou. The road to them is over a dreary waste of sands, and their doors open from the most desolate spot that the imagination can conceive.

Diodorus Siculus says that forty-seven of these tombs were entered on the sacred registers of the Egyptian priests, only seventeen of which remained at the time of his visit to Egypt, about sixty years B.C. In our own days, the industry and enterprise of a single individual, the indefatigable Belzoni, have brought to light one that was probably entirely unknown in the time of the Grecian traveller. The entrance is by a narrow door; a simple excavation in the side of the mountain, without device or ornament. The entrance-hall, which is extremely beautiful, is twenty-seven feet long and twenty-five broad, having at the end a large door opening into another chamber, twenty-eight feet by twenty-five, the walls covered with figures drawn in outline, but perfect as if recently done. Descending a large staircase, and passing through a beautiful corridor, Belzoni came to another staircase, at the foot of which he entered another apartment, twenty-four feet by thirteen, and so ornamented with sculpture and paintings that he called it the Hall of Beauty. The sides of all the chambers and corridors are covered with sculpture and paintings; the colours appearing fresher as the visitor advances towards the interior of the tomb; and the walls of this chamber are covered with the figures of Egyptian gods and goddesses, seeming to hover round and guard the remains of the honoured dead.

Farther on is a large hall, twenty-eight feet long and twenty-seven broad, supported by two rows of square pillars, which Belzoni called the Hall of Pillars; and beyond this is the entry to a large saloon with a vaulted roof, thirty-two feet in length and twenty-seven in breadth. Opening from this were several other chambers of different dimensions, one of them unfinished, and one forty-three feet long by seventeen feet six inches wide, in which he found the mummy of a bull; but in the centre of the grand saloon was a sarcophagus of the finest oriental alabaster, only two inches thick, minutely sculptured within and without with several hundred figures, and perfectly transparent when a light was placed within it.

All over the corridors and chambers the walls are adorned with sculptures and paintings in intaglio and relief, representing gods, goddesses, and the hero of the tomb in the most prominent events of his life, priest, religious processions and sacrifices, boats and agricultural scenes, and the most familiar pictures of everyday life, in colours as fresh as if they were painted not more than a month ago; and the large saloon, lighted up with the blaze of our torches, seemed more fitting for a banqueting-hall, for song and dance, than a burial-place of the dead. All travellers concur in pronouncing the sudden transition from the dreary desert without these magnificent tombs as operating like a scene of enchantment; and we may imagine what must have been the sensations of Belzoni, when, wandering with the excitement of a first discoverer through these beautiful corridors and chambers, he found himself in the great saloon leaning over the alabaster sarcophagus. An old Arab who accompanied us remembered Belzoni, and pointed out a chamber where the fortunate explorer entertained a party of European travellers who happened to arrive there at that time, making the tomb of Pharaoh* ring with shouts and songs of merriment.

At different times I wandered among all these tombs. All were of the same general character; all possessed the same beauty and magnificence of design and finish, and in all, at the extreme end, was a large saloon, adorned with sculpture and paintings of extraordinary beauty, and containing a single sarcophagus. "The kings of the nations did lie in glory, every one in his own house, but thou art cast out of thy grave like an

* Supposed to be the tomb of Pharaoh Necho.

abominable branch." Every sarcophagus is broken, and the bones of the kings of Egypt are scattered. In one I picked up a skull. I mused over it a moment, and handed it to Paul, who moralised at large. "That man," said he, "once talked, and laughed, and sang, and danced, and ate maccaroni." Among the paintings on the walls was represented a heap of hands severed from the arms, showing that the hero of the tomb had played the tyrant in his brief hour on earth. I dashed the skull against a stone, broke it in fragments, and pocketed a piece as a memorial of a king. Paul cut off one of the ears, and we left the tomb.

Travellers and commentators concur in supposing that these magnificent excavations must have been intended for other uses than the burial, each of a single king. Perhaps, it is said, like the chambers of imagery seen by the Jewish prophet, they were the scene of idolatrous rites performed "in the dark;" and as the Israelites are known to have been mere copyists of the Egyptians, these tombs are supposed to illustrate the words of Ezekiel: "Then said he to me, Son of man, dig now in the wall; and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door. And he said unto me, Go in and see the abominable things that they do there. So I went in, and saw, and behold, every form of creeping thing and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, pourtrayed upon the wall round about."—Ezek. viii. 8-10.

Amid the wrecks of former greatness which tower above the plain of Thebes, the inhabitants who now hover around the site of the ancient city are perhaps the most miserable in Egypt. On one side of the river they build their mudhuts around the ruins of the temples, and on the other their best habitations are in the tombs; wherever a small space has been cleared out, the inhabitants crawl in, with their dogs, goats, sheep, women, and children; and the Arab is passing rich who has for his sleeping-place the sarcophagus of an ancient Egyptian.

I have several times spoken of my intended journey to the great Oasis. Something was yet wanting in my voyage on the Nile. It was calm, tame, and wanting in that high excitement which I had expected from travelling in a barbarous country. A woman and child might go safely from Cairo to the Cataracts; and my blood began to run sluggishly in my veins. Besides, I had a great curiosity to see an oasis; a small spot of green fertile land in the great desert, rising in solitary beauty before the eyes of the traveller, after days of journeying through arid wastes, and divided by vast sandy ramparts from the rest of the world. The very name of the great Oasis in the Libyan Desert carried with it a wild and almost fearful interest, too powerful for me to resist. It was beyond the beaten track; and the sheik with whom I made my arrangements insisted on my taking a guard, telling me that he understood the character of his race, and an Arab in the desert could not resist the temptation to rob an unprotected traveller. For my own part, I had more fear of being followed by a party of the very unprepossessing fellows who were stealthily digging among the tombs, and all of whom knew of the preparations for our journey, than from any we might encounter in the desert. I must confess, however, that I was rather amused when I reviewed my body-guard, and, with the gravest air in the world, knocked out the primings from their guns, and primed them anew with the best of English powder. When I got through, I was on the point of discharging them altogether; but it would have broken the poor fellows' hearts to disappoint them of their three piastres (about fifteen cents) per diem, dearly earned by a walk all day in the desert, and a chance of being shot at.

In the afternoon before the day fixed for my departure, I rode by the celebrated Memnons, the *Dami* and *Shamy* of the Arabs. Perhaps it was because it was the last time, but I had never before looked upon them with so much interest. Among the mightier monuments of Thebes, her temples and her tombs, I had passed these ancient statues with a comparatively careless eye, scarcely even bestowing a thought upon the vocal Mem-

non. Now I was in a different mood, and looked upon its still towering form with a feeling of melancholy interest. I stood before it and gazed up at its worn face, its scars and bruises, and my heart warmed to it. It told of exposure, for unknown ages, to the rude assaults of the elements and the ruder assaults of man. I climbed upon the pedestal, upon the still hardy legs of the Memnon. I pored over a thousand inscriptions in Greek and Latin. A thousand names of strangers from distant lands, who had come like me to do homage to the mighty monuments of Thebes; Greeks and Romans who had been in their graves more than 2000 years, and who had written with their own hands that they had heard the voice of the vocal Memnon. But, alas! the voice has departed from Memnon; the soul has fled, and it stands a gigantic skeleton in a grave of ruins. I returned to my boat, and in ten minutes thereafter, if the vocal Memnon had bellowed in my ears, he could not have awaked me.

CHAPTER XI.

The Arabs and the Pacha.—March into the Desert.—Arab Christians.—A cold Reception.—Arab Punctuality.—A Night in a Convent.—An Arab Christian Priest.—Speculative Theology.—A Journey ended before commenced.

EARLY in the morning I was on the bank, waiting for my caravan and guides. I had every thing ready, rice, maccaroni, bread, biscuit, a hare, and a few shirts. I had given instructions to my rais to take my boat down to Siout, and wait for me there, as my intention was to go from the great Oasis to the Oasis of Siwah, containing the ruins of the temple of Jupiter Ammon, to destroy which Cambyzes had sent from this very spot an army of 50,000 men, who, by the way, left their bones on the sands of Africa; and I need not remind the reader that Alexander the Great had visited it in person, and been acknowledged by the priest as the son of Jupiter. I waited a little longer, and then, becoming impatient, mounted a donkey to ride to the sheik's. My rais and crew accompanied me a little way; they were the only persons to bid us farewell; and, as Paul remarked, if we never got back, they were the only persons to make any report of us to our friends.

The sheik's house was situated near the mountains, in the midst of the tombs forming the great necropolis of Thebes, and we found him surrounded by fifty or sixty men, and women and children without number, all helping to fit out the expedition. There did not appear to be much choice among them, but I picked out my body-guard; and when I looked at their swarthy visages by broad daylight, I could not help asking the sheik what security I had against them. The sheik seemed a little touched, but, pointing to the open doors of the tombs, and the miserable beings around us, he said he had their wives and children in his hands as pledges for my safety. Of the sheik himself I knew nothing, except that he was sheik. I knew, too, that though by virtue of the pacha's firman he was bound to do every thing he could for me, he was no friend to the pacha or his government; for one evening, in speaking of the general poverty of the Arabs, he said that if one fourth of them owned a musket, one charge of powder, and one ball, before morning there would not be a Turk in Egypt. However, I knew all this before.

At 12 o'clock the last sack of biscuit was packed upon the camels, and I mounted a fine dromedary, while my companions bade farewell to their wives, children, and friends; a farewell so calm and quiet, particularly for a people whose blood was warmed by the burning sun of Africa, that it seemed cold and heartless.

My caravan consisted of six camels, or rather four camels and two dromedaries, four camel-drivers armed with swords, eight men with pistols and muskets, Paul, and myself. It was the first time I had undertaken a journey in the desert. My first endeavour was to learn something of the character of my companions, and even Paul became perfectly satisfied and pleased with the journey, when, upon acquaintance, he found that their ugly outsides gave no true indication of the inward man.

Our guide, he who was to conduct us through the pathless desert, was not yet with us; he lived at a village about four miles distant, and a messenger had been sent forward to advise him of our coming. Riding for the last time among the ruined temples of Thebes, beyond the limits of the ancient city, our road lay behind the valley bordering the river, and along the edge of the desert. On one side was one of the richest and most extensive valleys of the Nile, well cultivated, and at this season of the year covered with the richest greens; on the other were barren mountains and a sandy desert.

In about four hours we saw, crossing the valley and stopping on the edge of the desert, a single Arab. It was our messenger, come to tell us that our guide would meet us at a Christian church about four hours' march in the desert. We now left the borders of the valley, and struck directly into the desert. Before us, at some distance over a sandy plain, was a high range of sandstone mountains, and beyond these was the mighty waste of sand and barrenness. Towards evening we saw from afar the church at which we were to meet our guide. It was the only object that rose above the level of the sands; and as the setting sun was fast reminding us that the day was closing, it looked like a resting-place for a weary traveller.

Congratulating myself upon my unexpected good fortune in meeting with those who bore the name of Christians, I was still more happy in the prospect, for this night at least, of sleeping under a roof. As we approached, we saw the figure of a man stealing along the wall, and were near enough to hear the hasty closing of the door and the heavy drawing of bolts inside. It was nine o'clock when we dismounted and knocked at the door of the convent, but received no answer; we knocked again and again without success. We then commenced a regular battery. I rattled against the door with my Nubian club in a small way, like Richard at the gate of the castle of Front de Bouif; but my blows did not tell like the battle-axe of the lion-hearted, and the churlish inmates, secure behind their strong walls, paid no regard to us. Tired of knocking, and irritated at this inhospitable treatment from men calling themselves Christians, I walked round the building to see if by accident there was not some back-door left open. The convent was enclosed by a square wall of unburnt brick, twelve or fourteen feet high, and not a door, window, or loop-hole, was to be seen. It was built for defence against the roving Arabs, and if we had intended to storm it, we could not have found an assailable point. I returned, vexed and disappointed; and calling away my men, and almost cursing the unchristian spirit of its inmates, I pitched my tent under its walls, and prepared to pass the night in the desert.

I had hardly stretched myself upon my mat before I heard the smart trot of a dromedary, and presently my guide, whom I had almost forgotten, dismounted at the door of the tent. He was a tall, hard-faced, weather-beaten man of about fifty, the white hairs just beginning to make their appearance in his black beard. I wanted to have a good view of him, and, calling him inside, gave him a seat on the mat, a pipe, and coffee. He told me that for many years he had been in the habit of going once a-year to the Oasis, on a trading voyage, and that he knew the road perfectly. Almost the first thing he said was, that he supposed I intended to remain there the next day. The Arabs, like most other Orientals, have no respect for the value of time; and among the petty vexations of travelling among them, few annoyed me more than the eternal "bokhara, bokhara?"—"to-morrow, to-morrow." When they first sent to this guide to know whether he could engage with me, he said I was ready at any moment, by which he probably meant a week's notice; and when they sent word that I had named a particular day, he probably thought that I would be along in the course of two or three thereafter, and was no doubt taken by surprise when the messenger came to tell him that I was on the march. I, of course, had no idea of this. He told me that I had better stay;

that one day could not make any difference, and finally said he had no bread baked, and must have a day or two to prepare himself. I answered that he had told the sheik at Thebes that he would be ready at any moment; that it was absurd to think I would wait there in the desert; that I would not be trifled with, and if he were not ready the next morning, I would ride over to his village and make a complaint to the sheik. After a long parley, which those only can imagine who have had to deal with Arabs, he promised to be there at sunrise the next morning, and took his leave.

After supper, when, if ever, a man should feel good-natured, I began again to feel indignant at the churlish inmates of the convent, and resolved upon another effort to see what stuff these Christians were made of. I knew that the monks in these isolated places, among fanatic Mussulmans, were sometimes obliged to have recourse to carnal weapons; and telling Paul to keep a look-out, and give me notice if he saw the barrel of a musket presenting itself over the wall, I again commenced thundering at the door; almost at the first blow it was thrown wide open, with a suddenness that startled me, and a dark, surly, and half-naked Arab stood facing me in the doorway. He had been reconnoitring, and though not sufficiently assured to come out and welcome us, he was ready to open when again summoned. With no small degree of asperity, and certainly without the meekness of the character upon which I was then presuming, I asked him if that was his Christian spirit, to let a stranger and a Christian sleep outside his walls when he had a roof to shelter him; and before he could interpose a word, I had read him a homily upon the Christian virtues that would have done credit to some pulpits. He might have retorted upon me, that with the Christian duties coming so glibly from my tongue, I was amazingly deficient in the cardinal virtue of forbearance; but I had the satisfaction of learning that I had not been excluded by the hands of Christians. The priests and monks had gone to a neighbouring village, and he was left alone. I followed him through a sort of courtyard into a vestibule, where was a noble fire, with a large caldron boiling over it. He neither asked me to stay, nor told me to go, and seated himself by the fire, perfectly indifferent to my movements. As soon as I had satisfied myself that he was alone, and saw that my Arabs had followed me, I thought I ran no risk in considering the building as a castle which I had stormed, and him as the captive of my bow and spear. I therefore required him to show me the interior of the convent, and he immediately took up a blazing stick from the fire, and conducted me within; and when I told him that I meant to sleep there, he said it would be for him a night "white as milk."

From the vestibule the door opened into the chapel, which consisted of a long apartment running transversely, the door in the centre; the floor was covered with mats, ostrich-eggs were suspended from the ceilings, and three or four recesses contained altars to favourite saints. Directly opposite the door was a larger recess, in which stood the great altar, separated by a railing, ornamented with bone and mother-of-pearl, and over the top were four pictures of St George slaying the dragon. I walked up and down the chapel two or three times, followed in silence by my swarthy friends, not altogether with the reverential spirit of a pious Christian, but with the prudence of a man of the world, looking out for the best place to sleep, and finally deposited my mat at the foot of the great altar.

I might better have slept on the sand after all, for the walls of the church were damp, and a strong current of air from the large window above had been pouring in upon me the whole night. When I first woke, I felt as if pinned to the floor, and I was startled and alarmed at the recurrence of a malady, on account of which I was then an exile from home. I went outside, and found, although it was late, that the guide had not come. If he had been there, I should no doubt have gone on, but, most fortunately for me, I had time to reflect. I was a changed man since the day before; my buoyant

of spirits was gone, and I was depressed and dejected. I sent a messenger, however, for the guide; and while I was sitting under the walls, hesitating whether I should expose myself to the long and dreary journey before me, I saw four men coming across the desert towards the convent. They were the priest and three of his Christian flock; and their greeting was such as to make me reproach myself for the injustice I had done the Arab Christians, and feel that there was something in that religion, even in the corrupt state in which it existed there, that had power to open and warm the heart. The priest was a tall thin man, his dark face almost covered with a black beard and mustaches, and wore the common blue gown of the better class of Arabs, with a square black cap on his head, and his feet bare. I could not understand him, but I could read in his face that he saluted me as a brother Christian, and welcomed me to all that a brother Christian could give.

Living as we do, in a land where the only religious difference is that of sect, and all sects have the bond of a common faith, it is difficult to realise the feeling which draws together believers in the same God and the same Redeemer, in lands where power is wielded by the worshippers of a false religion. One must visit a country in which religion is the dividing line, where haughty and deluded fanatics are the masters, and hear his faith reviled, and see its professors persecuted and despised, to know and feel how strong a tie it is.

After exchanging our greetings outside, the priest led the way to the church. I do not know whether it was a customary thing, or done specially in honour of me (Paul said the latter); but, at any rate, he immediately lighted up the edifice, and, slipping over his frock a dirty white gown, with a large red cross down the back, commenced the service of the mass. His appearance and manner were extremely interesting, and very different from those of the priest I had seen at Esneh. His fine head, his noble expression, his earnestness, his simplicity, his apparent piety, his long black beard and mustaches, his mean apparel and naked feet, all gave him the primitive aspect of an apostle. He was assisted by a dirty, ragged, barefooted boy, who followed him round with a censer of incense, vigorously perfuming the church from time to time, and then climbing up a stand, holding on by his naked feet, and reading a lesson from the thumbed, torn, and tattered leaves of an Arabic Bible. There were but three persons present besides myself; poor, ignorant people, far astray, no doubt, from the path of true Christianity, but worshipping in all honesty and sincerity, according to the best light they had, the God of their fathers. The priest went through many long and unmeaning forms, which I did not understand, but I had seen things quite as incomprehensible to me in the splendid cathedrals of Europe, and I joined, so far as I could, in the humble worship of these Egyptian Christians. There were no vessels of silver and gold, no imposing array of costly implements, to captivate the senses. A broken tumbler, a bottle of wine, and three small rolls of bread, formed the simple materials for the holy rite of the Lord's Supper. The three Arabs partook of it, and twice it was offered to me; but the feelings with which I had been accustomed to look upon this solemn sacrifice forbade me to partake of the consecrated elements, and never did I regret my unworthiness so bitterly as when it prevented me from joining in the holy feast with these simple-hearted Christians. In the meantime Paul came in, and the service being ended, I fell into conversation with the priest. He was a good man, but very ignorant, weak, and of great simplicity of character. He conducted me around the little church into the several chapels, and pointed out all that he thought curious, and particularly the ornaments of bone and mother-of-pearl; and, finally, with a most imposing air, like a priest in a church in Italy uncovering the works of the first masters, he drew the curtain from the four pictures of St George slaying the dragon, and looked at me with an air of great satisfaction to enjoy the expression of my surprise and astonishment. I did not disappoint him, nor

did I tell him that I had the night before most irreverently drawn aside the curtain, and exposed these sacred specimens of the arts to the eyes of my unbelieving Arabs; nor did I tell him that, in each of the four, St George seemed to be making a different thrust at the dragon. There was no use in disturbing the complacency of the poor priest; he had but little of which he could be proud, and I would not deprive him of that. Leaving him undisturbed in his exalted opinion of St George and his dragons, I inquired of him touching the number and condition of the Christians under his charge, and their state of security under the government of the pacha; and, among other things, asked him if they increased. He told me that they remained about the same, or perhaps rather decreased. I asked him if a Mussulman ever became a Christian. He answered never, but sometimes a Christian would embrace the religion of Mahommed, and assigned a cause for this unhappy difference which I am sorry to mention, being no less than the influence of the tender passion. He told me that, in the free intercourse now existing under the government of the pacha between Christians and Mussulmans, it often happened that a Christian youth became enamoured of a Moslem girl; and as they could not by any possibility marry and retain their separate religions, it was necessary that one of them should change. The Moslem dare not, for death by the hands of her own friends would be the certain consequence, while the Christian, instead of running any temporal risks, gains with his bride the protection and favour of the Mussulmans. Paul seemed rather scandalised at this information, and began to catechise the priest on his own account. I could not understand the conversation, but could judge, from the movements, that Paul was examining him on that cardinal point, the sign of the cross. All appeared to go smoothly enough for a little while, but I soon noticed the flashing of Paul's eyes, and sundry other symptoms of indignation and contempt. I asked him several times what it was all about; but, without answering, he walked backward and forward, slapping his hands under the priest's nose, and talking louder and faster than ever, and I had to take hold of him, and ask him sharply what the plague was the matter, before I could get a word out of him. "A pretty Christian," said Paul; "fast fifty-six days for Lent, when we fast only forty-six; forty that our Saviour was in the mount, and six Sundays." I told him there was not so much difference between them as I thought, as it was only ten days; he looked at me for a moment, and then, as if fearful of trusting himself, shrugged his shoulders, and marched out of the chapel. During all this time, the condition of the poor priest was pitiable and amusing; he had never been so sharply questioned before, and he listened with as much deference to Paul's questions and rebukes as if he had been listening to the Pope of Rome, and, when it was over, looked perfectly crest-fallen.

It was twelve o'clock when the man we had sent after the guide returned, but before this time my malady had increased to such a degree as to leave me no option; and I had resolved to abandon the Oasis, and go back to Thebes. I had great reason to congratulate myself upon my accidental detention, and still greater that the symptoms of my malady had developed themselves before I had advanced another day's journey in the desert. Still, it was with a heavy heart that I mounted my dromedary to return. I had not only the regret of being compelled abruptly to abandon a long-cherished plan, but I had great uneasiness as to what was to become of me on my arrival at Thebes. My boat was probably already gone. I knew that no other could be obtained there, and, if obliged to wait for a casual opportunity, I must live in my tent on the banks of the river, or in one of the tombs. My anxieties, however, were quickly dispelled on my arrival at Thebes, where I found the English gentleman and lady whom I had met at Cairo, and afterwards at the Cataracts. They kindly took me on board their boat; and so ended my expedition to the great Oasis.

CHAPTER XII.

A Travelling Artist and Antiquary.—An Egyptian Sugar-house.—Grecian Architecture.—A Melancholy Greeting.—Tyranny of the Pacha.—Amateurs of Physic.—Memphis.—Adventure with a Wild Boar.—Perils of a Pyramid.—The Catacombs of Birds.—Amor Patriæ.—Voyaging on the Nile.

I SHALL never forget the kindness of these excellent friends; and, indeed, it was a happy thing for me that my own boat had gone, and that I was thrown upon their hospitality: for, in addition to the greater comforts I found with them, I had the benefit of cheerful society, under circumstances when to be alone would have been horrible. Even when we arrived at Siout, after a voyage of seven days, they would not let me leave them, but assumed the right of physicians, and prescribed that I should be their guest until perfectly restored. I remained, accordingly, three days longer with them, my little boat following like a tender to a man-of-war, and passed my time luxuriously. I had books, conversation, and a medicine-chest. But one thing troubled me. We had a cook who looked upon his profession as a liberal and enlightened science, and had attained its very highest honours. He had served various noblemen of eminent taste, had accumulated 50,000 dollars, and was now cooking at the rate of fifty dollars a-month upon the Nile. Michel was an extraordinary man. He came from the mountains of Dalmatia, near the shores of the Adriatic; one of a small nation who had preserved the name, and form, and spirit of a republic against Italians, Hungarians, and Turks, and fell only before the irresistible arm of Napoleon. He had been a great traveller in his youth, and, besides his attainments in the culinary art, was better acquainted with history, ancient and modern, than almost any man I ever met. He had two great passions, the love of liberty and the love of the fine arts (cookery included), and it was really extraordinary to hear him, with a ladle in his hand, and tasting, from time to time, some piquant sauce, discourse of the republics of Rome and America, of the ruins of Italy, Palmyra, and Egypt. Michel's dinners, making proper allowance for the want of a daily market, would have done honour to the best lord he ever served; and I was obliged to sit down, day after day, to my tea, rice-water, biscuit, &c., and listen to the praises of his dainties while they passed untasted from me.

It was not until within two days of Cairo that we parted, with an agreement to meet at Jerusalem and travel together to Palmyra. We did meet for a few moments at Cairo, but the plague was beginning to rage, the pacha had been putting himself into quarantine, and we had barely time to renew our engagement, which a particularly unfortunate circumstance (the illness of Mrs S.) prevented us from keeping, and we never met again. Few things connected with my compelled departure from the Holy Land gave me more regret than this; and if these pages should ever meet their eyes, they will believe me when I say that I shall remember, to the last day of my life, their kindness on the Nile.

The story of my journeying on this river is almost ended. Kenneh was our first stopping-place on our way down; a place of considerable note, there being a route from it across the desert to Cossair, by which many of the pilgrims, and a great portion of the trade of the Red Sea, are conveyed.

At Ramiaoun, not far below Siout, we went ashore to visit a sugar-factory belonging to the pacha. This manufactory is pointed out as one of the great improvements introduced into Egypt, and so far as it shows the capabilities of the Arabs, of which, however, no one can doubt, it may be considered useful. Formerly eighty Europeans were employed in the factory, but now the work is carried on entirely by Arabs. The principal is educated in France at the expense of the pacha, and is one of the few who have returned to render any service to their country and master. The enlightened pacha understands thoroughly that liberal principle of economy which consists in encouraging domestic manufactures, no matter at what expense. The

sugar costs more than that imported, and is bought by none but governors and dependents of the pacha. It is made from cane, contains a great deal of saccharine matter, and has a good taste, but a bad colour. This factory, however, can hardly be considered as influential upon the general interests of the country, for its principal business is the making of rock candy for the ladies of the harem. They gave us a little to taste, but would not sell any except to Mrs S., the whole being wanted for the use of the ladies. There was also a distillery attached to the factory, under the direction of another Arab, who gave satisfactory evidence, in his own person at least, of the strength of the spirit made, being more than two-thirds drunk.

The same evening we came to at Beni Hassan, and the next morning landed to visit the tombs. Like all the tombs in Egypt, except those of the kings at Thebes, they are excavated in the sides of the mountain, commanding an extensive view of the valley of the Nile; but in one respect they are different from all others in Egypt. The doors have regular Doric columns, and they are the only specimens of architecture in Egypt which at all approximate to the Grecian style. This would not be at all extraordinary if they were constructed after the invasion of Alexander and the settlement of the Greeks in the country, but it is ascertained that they were built long before that time; and, indeed, it is alleged by antiquaries that these tombs and the obelisk at Heliopolis are the oldest monuments in Egypt. The interiors are large and handsomely proportioned (one of them being sixty feet square and forty feet high), and adorned with paintings, representing principally scenes of domestic life. Among them Mr S. and myself made out one, which is constantly to be seen at the present day, namely, a half-naked Egyptian, with a skin of water across his back, precisely like the modern Arab in the streets of Cairo.

We returned to our boat, and, being now within two days of Cairo, and having different places to stop at below, after dinner I said farewell to my kind friends, and returned to my own boat. My crew received me with three cheers, I was going to say, but they do not understand or practise that noisy mode of civilised welcome, and gave me the grave and quiet salutation of their country, all rising as soon as I touched the deck, and one after the other taking my hand in his, and touching it to his forehead and lips. My poor rais gave me a melancholy greeting. He had been unwell during the whole voyage, but since we parted had been growing worse. He told me that our stars were the same, and that misfortune had happened to us both as soon as we separated. I could but hope that our stars were not inseparably connected, for I looked upon him as a doomed man. I had saved him at Cairo from being pressed into the pacha's service; and again in descending, when he stopped at Kenneh, he and his whole crew had been seized in the bazaars, and, in spite of their protestations that they were in the service of an American, the iron bonds were put around their wrists and the iron collars round their necks. The governor afterwards rode down to the river, and the American flag streaming from the masthead of my little boat procured their speedy release, and saved them from the miserable fate of Arab soldiers.

Under all the oppressions of the pacha's government, there is nothing more grinding than this. The governor of a town, or the sheik of a village, is ordered to furnish so many men as soldiers. He frequently has a leaning towards his own subjects or followers, and is disposed to save them if he can; and if any unlucky stranger happens to pass before the complement is made up, he is inevitably pounced upon as one of the required number. It is useless for the poor captive to complain that he is a stranger, and that the rights of hospitality are violated; he appeals to those who are interested in tightening his bonds; and when he is transferred to the higher authorities, they neither know nor care who he is or whence he comes. He has the thews and sinews of a man, and though his heartstrings be cracking, he

can bear a musket, and that is enough. For centuries Egypt has been overrun by strangers, and the foot of a tyrant has been upon the necks of her inhabitants; but I do not believe that, since the days of the Pharaohs, there has been on the throne of Egypt so thorough a despot as the present pacha.

But to return to my rais. His first request was for medicine, which, unfortunately, I could not give him. The Arabs have a perfect passion for medicine. Early in our voyage my crew had discovered that I had some on board, and one or another of them was constantly sick until they had got it all; and then they all got well except the rais; and for him I feared there was no cure.

On the eleventh, early in the morning, Paul burst into the cabin, cursing all manner of Arabs, snatched the gun from over my head, and was out again in a moment. I knew there was no danger when Paul was so valorous; and, opening my broken shutter, I saw one of my men struggling with an Arab on shore, the latter holding him by the throat with a pistol at his head. The rascal had gone on shore just at daylight to steal wool, and while in the act of tearing down a little fence, the watchful owner had sprung upon him, and seemed on the point of correcting for ever all his bad habits. His fellows ran to the rescue, with Paul at their head; and the culprit, relieved from the giant grasp of his adversary, quietly sneaked on board, and we resumed our progress.

In the course of my last day on the Nile, I visited one of the greatest of its ruined cities, and for moral effect, for powerful impression on the imagination and feelings, perhaps the most interesting of them all. So absolute, complete, and total is the ruin of this once powerful city, that antiquaries have disputed whether there is really a single monument to show where the great Memphis stood; but the weight of authority seems to be, that its stately temples and palaces, and its thousands of inhabitants, once covered the ground now occupied by the little Arab village of Metrahenny. This village stands about four miles from the river; and the traveller might pass through it and around it, without ever dreaming that it had once been the site of a mighty city. He might, indeed, as he wandered around the miserable village, find, half buried in the earth, the broken fragments of a colossal statue; and, looking from the shattered relic to the half-savage Arabs around him, he might say to himself, "This is the work of other men and other times, and how comes it here?" But it would never occur to him that this was the last remaining monument of one of the greatest cities in the world. He might stop and gaze upon the huge mounds of ruins piled among the groves of palm, and ask himself, "Whence, too, came these?" But he would receive no answer that could satisfy him. In a curious and unsatisfied mood, he would stroll on through the village, and from the other extremity would see on the mountains towering before him, on the edge of the desert, a long range of pyramids and tombs, some crumbling in ruin, others upright and unbroken as when they were reared, and all stretching away for miles, one vast necropolis; his reason and reflection would tell him that, where are the chambers of the dead, there must also have been the abodes of the living; and with wonder he would ask himself, "Where is the mighty city whose inhabitants now sleep in yonder tombs? Here are the proud graves in which they were buried; where are the palaces in which they revelled, and the temples in which they worshipped?" And he returns to the broken statue and the mounds of ruins, with the assurance that they are the sad remnants of a city once among the proudest in the world.

My movements in Egypt were too hurried, my means of observation and my stock of knowledge too limited, to enable me to speculate advisedly upon the mystery which overhangs the history of her ruined cities; but I always endeavoured to come to some decision of my own, from the labours, the speculations, and the conflicting opinions of others. An expression which I had seen referred to in one of the books, as being the only

one in the Bible in which Memphis was mentioned by name, was uppermost in my mind while I was wandering over its site—"And Memphis shall bury them." There must be, I thought, some special meaning in this expression; some allusion to the manner in which the dead were buried at Memphis, or to a cemetery or tombs different from those which existed in other cities of its day. It seems almost impossible to believe that a city, having for its burying-place the immense tombs and pyramids which even yet for many miles skirt the borders of the desert, can ever have stood upon the site of this miserable village; but the evidence is irresistible.

The plain on which this ancient city stood is one of the richest on the Nile, and herds of cattle are still seen grazing upon it, as in the days of the Pharaohs. The pyramids of Sacchara stand on the edge of the desert, a little south of the site of Memphis. If it was not for their mightier neighbours, these pyramids, which are comparatively seldom honoured with a visit, would alone be deemed worthy of a pilgrimage to Egypt. The first to which we came is about 350 feet high, and 700 feet square at its base. The door is on the north side, 180 feet from the base. The entrance is by a beautifully polished shaft, 200 feet long, and inclining at an angle of about ten degrees. We descended till we found the passage choked up with huge stones. I was very anxious to see the interior, as there is a chamber within said to resemble the tomb of Agamemnon at Mycene; and having once made an interesting visit to that tomb of the king of kings, I wished to compare them; but it was excessively close, the sweat was pouring from us in streams, and we were suffocating with heat and dust. We came out and attempted to clamber up the side from the door to the top, but found it so difficult that we abandoned the effort, although Paul afterwards mounted, with great ease, by one of the corners. While I was walking round the base, I heard a loud scream from that courageous dragonman, and saw him standing about half way up, the picture of terror, staring at a wild boar that was running away, if possible, more frightened than himself. It was a mystery to me what the animal could be doing there, unless he went up on purpose to frighten Paul. After he got over his fright, however, the boar was a great acquisition to him, for I always had great difficulty in getting him into any tomb or other place of the kind without a guide; and whenever I urged him to enter a pyramid or excavation of any kind, he always threw the wild boar in my teeth, whose den, he was sure to say, was somewhere within.

There are several pyramids in this vicinity; among others, one which is called the brick pyramid, and which has crumbled so gradually and uniformly that it now appears only a huge misshapen mass of brick, somewhat resembling a bee-hive. Its ruins speak a moral lesson. Herodotus says that this fallen pyramid was built by King Asychis, and contained on a piece of marble the vain-glorious inscription—"Do not disparage my worth by comparing me to those pyramids composed of stone; I am as much superior to them as Jove is to the rest of the deities."

Retracing my steps, I continued along the edge of the mountain, which every where showed the marks of having been once lined with pyramids and tombs. I was seeking for one of the most curious and interesting objects that exist in Egypt—not so interesting in itself, as illustrating the character of the ancient inhabitants and their superstitions—I mean the burial-place of the sacred birds. Before we reached it, my Arab guide pointed to a pyramid on our left, saying that it contained a remarkable chamber, so high that a stone hurled with a man's utmost strength could not reach the top. As this pyramid was not mentioned in my guide-book, and I had no hope in a country so trodden as Egypt now is, to become a discoverer of new wonders, I at first paid no attention to him; but he continued urging me to visit the lofty chamber; and at last, telling him that if I did not find it as he said, I would not give him a para of bucksheesh, I consented. There was no door to the pyramid; but, about 100 feet from its base, on the north

side, was a square excavation or shaft about 40 feet deep, at the end of which was a little hole not more than large enough to admit a man's arm. The Arab scooped out the sand, and with his hands and feet worked his meagre body through, and I followed on my back, feet foremost. Though not particularly bulky, I wanted more room than the Arab, and my shoulders stuck fast. I was trying to work out again, when he grasped me by the heels, and began pulling me in with all his might; but, luckily, I had play for my legs, and, drawing them up, I gave him a kick with my heavy boots that kept him from taking hold again until I had time to scramble out.

While Paul and the Arab were enlarging the hole below, the top of the pit was darkened, and, looking up, I saw two young Englishmen with whom I had dined a few days before, while coming down the river with Mr S. and his lady. They had seen my boat, and come to join me, and I was very glad to see them; for though I had no actual apprehension of the thing, yet it occurred to me that it would be very easy for my Arab friends to roll a stone against the hole, and shut me in for ever. It would have been something to be buried in a pyramid, to be sure; but even the belief that it was the tomb of a king would hardly compensate for the inconvenience of being buried alive. We left their servant, a strapping Greek, at the door, and the Arab having enlarged the hole, we went to work systematically, laid ourselves upon our backs, and, being prepared beforehand, were dragged in by the heels. The narrow part of the hole was not more than half the length of the body, and once past this, there was more room to move about than in any other of the pyramids; we could walk without stooping. Descending some hundred feet through an inclined passage excavated in the rock, with doors opening from it at regular intervals, we came to the large chamber of which the Arab had spoken. As in all the pyramids and tombs, the interior was in perfect darkness, and the feeble light of our torches gave us but an imperfect view of the apartment. The Arab immediately commenced his experiment with the stone; we could hear the whizzing as it cut through the empty space, and, after what seemed a very long time, the sound of its fall upon the rocky floor. At some distance up we could distinguish a door, and sending one of the Arabs up to it, by the flaring light of his torch, held as high as he could reach, we thought, but we were not certain, that we could make out the ceiling.

From hence it was but a short distance to the catacombs of birds; a small opening in the side of a rock leads to an excavated chamber, in the centre of which is a square pit or well. Descending the pit by bracing our arms, and putting our toes in little holes in the side, we reached the bottom, where, crawling on our hands and knees, we were among the mummies of the sacred ibis, the embalmed deities of the Egyptians. The extent of these catacombs is unknown, but they are supposed to occupy an area of many miles. The birds are preserved in stone jars, piled one upon another as closely as they can be stowed. By the light of our torches, sometimes almost flat upon our faces, we groped and crawled along the passages, lined on each side with rows of jars, until we found ourselves again and again stopped by an impenetrable phalanx of the little mummies, or rather of the jars containing them. Once we reached a small open space where we had room to turn ourselves; and knocking together two of the vessels, the opened deities within sent forth volumes of dust which almost suffocated us. The bird was still entire, in form and lineament perfect as the mummified man, and like him, too, wanting merely the breath of life. The Arabs brought out with them several jars, which we broke and examined above ground, more at our ease. With the pyramids towering around us, it was almost impossible to believe that the men who had raised such mighty structures had fallen down and worshipped the puny birds whose skeletons were now dashing at our feet.

My last work was now done, and I had seen my last sight on the Nile. Leaving behind me for ever the banks of Egypt, and the mountains and sands of the

Libyan Desert, I rode along the valley, among villages and groves of palm-trees, and a little before dark arrived at Ghizeh. My boat was there; I went on board for the last time; my men took to their oars, and in half an hour we were at Boulac. It was dark when we arrived, and I jumped on shore searching for a donkey, but none was to be had. I was almost tired out with the labours of the day, but Paul and I set off, nevertheless, on foot for Cairo. We were obliged to walk snarlingly, too, as the gate closed at nine o'clock; but when about half way there, we met an Arab with a donkey, cheering the stillness of the evening with a song. An extravagant price (I believe it was something like eighteen and three quarter cents) bribed him to dismount, and I galloped on to Cairo, while Paul retraced his steps to the boat. The reader may judge how completely "turned up" must have been the feelings of a quiet citizen of New York, when told that, in winding at night through the narrow streets of Grand Cairo, the citizen aforesaid felt himself quite at home; and that the greeting of Francisco, the garçon at the Locanda d'Italia, seemed the welcome of an old friend. Hoping to receive letters from home, I went immediately to the American consul, and was disappointed; there were no letters, but there was other and interesting news for me; and as an American, identified with the honour of my country, I was congratulated there, thousands of miles from home, upon the expected speedy and honourable termination of our difficulties with France. An English vessel had arrived at Alexandria, bringing a London paper containing the president's last message, a notice of the offer of mediation from the English government, its acceptance by France, and the general impression that the quarrel might be considered settled and the money paid. A man must be long and far from home to feel how dearly he loves his country, how his eye brightens and his heart beats when he hears her praises from the lips of strangers; and when the paper was given me, with congratulations and compliments on the successful and honourable issue of the affair with France, my feelings grew prouder and prouder as I read, until, when I had finished the last line, I threw up my cap in the old city of Cairo, and shouted the old gathering cry, "Hurrah for Jackson!"

I have heard all manners of opinion expressed in regard to a voyage on the Nile, and may be allowed, perhaps, to give my own. Mrs S. used frequently to say, that although she had travelled in France, Switzerland, Germany, Italy, and Sicily, she had never enjoyed a journey so much before, and was always afraid that it would end too soon. Another lady's sentiments, expressed in my hearing, were just the contrary. For myself, being alone, and not in very good health, I had some heavy moments; but I have no hesitation in saying that, with a friend, a good boat well fitted up, books, guns, plenty of time, and a cook like Michel, a voyage on the Nile would exceed any travelling within my experience. The perfect freedom from all restraint, and from the conventional trammels of civilised society, forms an episode in a man's life that is vastly agreeable and exciting. Think of not shaving for two months, of washing your shirts in the Nile, and wearing them without being ironed. True, these things are not absolutely necessary; but who would go to Egypt to travel as he does in Europe? "Away with all fantasies and fetters," is the motto of the tourist. We throw aside pretty much every thing except our pantaloons; and a generous rivalry in long beards and soiled linen is kept up with exceeding spirit. You may go ashore whenever you like, and stroll through the little villages, and be stared at by the Arabs, or walk along the banks of the river till darkness covers the earth; shooting pigeons, and sometimes pheasants and hares, besides the odd shots from the deck of your boat at geese, crocodiles, and pelicans. And then it is so ridiculously cheap an amusement. You get your boat with ten men for thirty or forty dollars a-month, fowls for three piastres (about a shilling) a-pair, a sheep for half or three quarters of a dollar, and eggs almost for the asking. You sail under

your own country's banner; and when you walk along the river; if the Arabs look particularly black and truculent, you proudly feel that there is safety in its folds. From time to time you hear that a French or English flag has passed so many days before you, and you meet your fellow-voyagers with a freedom and cordiality which exist nowhere but on the Nile.

These are the little every-day items in the voyage, without referring to the great and interesting objects which are the traveller's principal inducements and rewards—the ruined cities on its banks, the mighty temples and tombs, and all the wonderful monuments of Egypt's departed greatness. Of them I will barely say, that their great antiquity, the mystery that overhangs them, and their extraordinary preservation amid the surrounding desolation, make Egypt perhaps the most interesting country in the world. In the words of an old traveller, "Time sadly overcometh all things, and is now dominant, and sitteth upon a sphinx and looketh into Memphis and old Thebes, while his sister Oblivion reclineth semi-somnolous on a pyramid, gloriously triumphing and turning old glories into dreams. History sinketh beneath her cloud. The traveller as he passeth amazedly through those deserts, asketh of her who builded them, and she mumbleth something, but what it is he heareth not."

It is now more than 3000 years since the curse went forth against the land of Egypt. The Assyrian, the Persian, the Greek, the Roman, the Arabian, the Georgian, the Circassian, and the Ottoman Turk, have successively trodden it down and trampled upon it; for thirty centuries the foot of a stranger has been upon the necks of her inhabitants; and in bidding farewell to this once favoured land, now lying in the most abject degradation and misery, groaning under the iron rod of a tyrant and a stranger, I cannot help recurring to the inspired words, the doom of prophecy—"It shall be the basest of the kingdoms, neither shall it exalt itself any more among the nations; and there shall be no more a prince of the land of Egypt."

CHAPTER XIII.

A good Word for the Arabs.—A Prophecy fulfilled.—Ruins of a Lost City.—A Sheikh of the Bedouins.—Interviews and Negotiations.—A Hajj, or Pilgrimage to Mecca.—Mahomedan Heaven for Wives.—A French Sheikh.—The Bastinado.—Departure for the Desert.

I HAD now finished my journey in Egypt, from the Mediterranean to the Cataracts, or, as the boundaries of this ancient country are given in the Bible, from "Migdol to Syene, even unto the borders of Ethiopia." For nearly two months I had been floating on the celebrated river, with a dozen Arabs, prompt to do my slightest bidding, and, in spite of bugs and all manner of creeping things, enjoying pleasures and comforts that are not to be found in Europe; and it was with something more than an ordinary feeling of regret that I parted from my worthy boatmen. I know that it is the custom with many travellers to rail at the Arabs, and perhaps to beat them, and have them bastinadoed; but I could not and cannot join in such oppression of this poor and much abused people. On the contrary, I do not hesitate to say that I always found them kind, honest, and faithful, thankful for the smallest favour, never surly or discontented, and always ready and anxious to serve me with a zeal that I have not met in any other people; and when they came up in a body to the locanda to say farewell, I felt that I was parting with tried and trusty friends, most probably for ever. That such was the case with the rais, there could be little doubt; he seemed to look upon himself as a doomed man, and a broken cough, a sunken eye, and a hollow cheek, proclaimed him one fast hurrying to the grave.

I was now about wandering amid new and different scenes. I was about to cross the dreary waste of sand, to exchange my quiet, easy-going boat for a caravan of dromedaries and camels; to pitch my tent wherever the setting sun might find me, and, instead of my gentle

Arabs of the Nile, to have for my companions the wild, rude Bedouins of the desert; to follow the wandering footsteps of the children of Israel when they took up the bones of Joseph, and fled before the anger of Pharaoh, from their land of bondage; to visit the holy mountain of Sinai, where the Almighty, by the hands of his servant Moses, delivered the tables of his law to his chosen people.

But I had in view something beyond the holy mountain. My object was to go from thence to the Holy Land. If I should return to Suez, and thence cross the desert to El Arich and Gaza, I should be subjected to a quarantine of fourteen days on account of the plague in Egypt; and I thought I might avoid this by striking directly through the heart of the desert from Mount Sinai to the frontier of the Holy Land. There were difficulties and perhaps dangers on this route; but besides the advantage of escaping the quarantine, another consideration presented itself, which, in the end, I found it impossible to resist. This route was entirely new. It lay through the land of Edom—a land that occupies a large space on the pages of the Bible; Edom denounced by God himself, once given to Esau for his inheritance, "as being of the fatness of the earth," but now a desolate monument of the divine wrath, and a fearful witness to the truth of the words spoken by his prophets. The English friends with whom I had dined at Thebes first suggested to me this route, referring me, at the same time, to Keith on the Prophecies, in which, after showing with great clearness and force the fulfilment of prophecy after prophecy, as illustrated by the writings and reports of travellers, the learned divine enlarges upon the prophecy of Isaiah against the land of Idumca, "None shall pass through it for ever and ever;" and proves, by abundant references to the works of modern travellers, that though several have crossed its borders, none have ever passed through it. Burckhardt, he says, made the nearest approach to this achievement; but by reference to the geographical boundaries, he maintains that Burckhardt did not pass through the land of Edom; and so strenuously does the learned divine insist upon the fulfilment of the prophecy to its utmost extent, as to contend that, if Burckhardt did pass through the land of Edom, he died in consequence of the hardships he suffered on that journey. I did not mean to brave a prophecy. I had already learned to regard the words of the inspired penmen with an interest I never felt before; and with the evidence I had already had of the sure fulfilment of their predictions, I should have considered it daring and impious to place myself in the way of a still impending curse. But I did not go so far as the learned commentator, and to me the words of the prophet seemed sufficiently verified in the total breaking up of the route then travelled, as the great highway from Jerusalem to the Red Sea and India, and the general and probably eternal desolation that reigns in Edom.

Still, however, it added to the interest with which I looked upon this route; and, moreover, in this dreary and desolate region, for more than a thousand years buried from the eyes of mankind, its place unknown, and its very name almost forgotten, lay the long lost city of Petra, the capital of Arabia Petraea, and the Edom of the Edomites, containing, according to the reports of the only travellers who have ever been permitted to enter it, the most curious and wonderful remains existing in the world: a city excavated from the solid rock, with long ranges of dwellings, temples, and tombs, cut in the sides of the mountain, and all lying in ruins; "thorns coming up in her palaces, nettles and brambles in the fortresses thereof, a habitation of dragons, and a court for owls." Three parties had at different times visited Petra, but neither of them had passed through the land of Idumca; and, according to the reports of the few travellers who had crossed its borders, the Bedouins who roamed over the dreary sands of Idumca were the most ferocious of the desert race. It will not be considered strange, therefore, that, having once conceived the project,

ing to fulfil it even at the cost of some personal difficulty and hazard.

I have said that this route was entirely new. It was known that two Englishmen, with an Italian, long resident in Egypt, and understanding thoroughly the language and character of the Arabs, had started from Cairo about a year before to make this journey, and, as they had been heard of afterwards in Europe, it was known that they had succeeded; but no account of their journey had ever been published, and all the intelligence I could obtain of the route and its perils was doubtful and confused. The general remark was, that the undertaking was dangerous, and that I had better let it alone. Almost the only person who encouraged me was Mr Gliddon, our vice-consul; and, probably, if it had not been for him, I should have given up the idea. Besides the difficulties of the road, there were others of a more personal nature. I was alone. I could not speak the language, and I had with me a servant, who, instead of leading me on, and sustaining me when I faltered, was constantly torturing himself with idle fears, and was very reluctant to accompany me at all. Nor was this all; my health was far from being restored, and my friend Waghorn was telling me every day, with a warning voice, to turn my steps westward; but objections presented themselves in vain; and perhaps it was precisely because of the objections that I finally determined upon attempting the journey through the land of Idumea.

By singular good fortune, the sheik of Akaba was then at Cairo. The great yearly caravan of pilgrims for Mecca was assembling outside the walls, and he was there, on the summons of the pacha, to escort and protect them through the desert as far as Akaba. He was the chief of a powerful tribe of Bedouins somewhat reduced by long and bloody wars with other tribes, but still maintaining, in all its vigour, the wild independence of the race, and yet strong enough to set at defiance even the powerful arm of the pacha. A system of mutual forbearance seemed to exist between them, the Bedouins knowing that, although the pacha might not subdue them, his long arm could reach and disturb them even in their sandy hills; while the pacha could not overlook the fact that the effort would cost him the lives of his best troops, and that the plunder of their miserable tents would bring him neither glory nor profit. Thus the desert was still the possession of the Bedouins; they still claimed a tribute from the stranger for permission to pass over it; and this induced the pacha annually to invite the sheik of Akaba to Cairo, to conduct the caravan for Mecca, knowing that if not so invited, even the sacred character of the pilgrims would not protect them in passing through his country.

I found him about a mile outside the walls near the tombs of the califs, on the edge of the desert, sitting on a mat under his tent, and surrounded by a dozen of his swarthy tribe, armed with long sabres, pistols, and matchlock guns. The sheik was a short stout man, of the darkest shade of bronze; his eye keen, roving, and unsettled; his teeth white; and his skin so dried up and withered that it seemed cleaving to his very bones. At the first glance, I did not like his face; it wanted frankness, and even boldness; and I thought at the time, that if I had met him alone in the desert, I should not have trusted him. He received me with great civility, while his companions rose, gave me their low salaam, seated me on the mat beside him, and then resumed their own cross-legged attitude, with less noise than would have attended the entrance of a gentleman into a drawing-room on a morning call. All stared at me with silent gravity; and the sheik, though desert born and bred, with an air and manner that showed him familiar with the usages of good society in Cairo, took the pipe from his mouth and handed it to me.

All being seated, the consul's janizary, who had come with me, stepped before the divan; but he had scarcely begun to speak before the whole group, sheik and attendants, were sprung out of their habitual phlegm, that they were ready to escort me,

and to defend me with their lives against every danger. I said a few words, and they became clamorous in their assurances of the great friendship they had conceived for me; that life was nothing in my service; that they would sleep in my tent, guard and watch me by day and night, and, in short, that they would be my father, mother, sister, and brother, and all my relations, in the desert; and the final assurance was, that it would not be possible to travel that road except under their protection. I then began to inquire the terms, when, as before, all spoke at once; some fixed one price, some another, and for bucksheesh whatever I pleased. I did not like this wild and noisy negotiation. I knew that I must make great allowance for the extravagant language of the Arabs; but there seemed to be an eagerness to get me among them, which, in my eyes, was rather ominous of bad intentions. They were known to be a lawless people, and distinguished, even among their desert brethren, as a wild and savage tribe. And these were the people with whom I was negotiating to meet in the desert, at the little fortress of Akaba, at the eastern extremity of the Red Sea; into whose hands I was to place myself, and from whom I was to expect protection against greater dangers.

My interview with them was not very satisfactory, and, wishing to talk the matter over more quietly with the sheik alone, I asked him to go with me to my hotel; whereupon the whole group started up at once, and, some on foot, and others on dromedaries or on horseback, prepared to follow. This did not suit me, and the sheik contrived to get rid of all except one, his principal and constant attendant, "his black," as he was called. He followed me on horseback; and when he came up into my room, it was, perhaps, the first time in his life that he had ever been under a roof. As an instance of his simplicity and ignorance, it may be worth mentioning here, although I did not know it until we were on the point of separating after our journey was completed, that he mistook the consul's janizary, who wore a dashing red Turkish dress, sword, &c., for an officer of the pacha's household, and, consequently, had always looked upon me as specially recommended to him by the pacha. I could not come to any definite understanding with him. The precise service that I required of him was to conduct me from Akaba to Hebron, through the land of Edom, diverging to visit the excavated city of Petra, a journey of about ten days. I could not get him to name any sum as compensation for this service; he told me that he would conduct me for nothing, that I might give him what I pleased, &c. When I first spoke about the terms at his tent, he had said twelve dollars a camel, and, as it seemed to me, he had named this sum without the least calculation, as the first that happened to occur to him. I now referred him to this price, which he had probably forgotten, hoping to establish it as a sort of basis upon which to negotiate; but when his attention was called to it, he insisted upon the twelve dollars, and something more for bucksheesh. A fair price for this service would have been about two dollars. I told him this did not satisfy me; that I wanted every thing definitely arranged beforehand, and that I would not give the enormous price he asked, and bucksheesh in proportion; but I could do nothing with him: he listened with perfect coolness; and taking his pipe from his mouth, in answer to every thing I said, told me to come to him at Akaba, come to him at his tent; he had plenty of camels, and would conduct me without any reward, or I might give him what I pleased. We parted without coming to an arrangement. He offered to send one of his men to conduct me from Mount Sinai to Akaba; but as something might occur to prevent my going, I would not take him. He gave me, however, his signet, which he told me every Bedouin on that route knew, and would respect, and writing his name under it according to the sound, I repeated it over and over, until I could pronounce it intelligibly, and treasured it up as a password for the desert.

The next morning, under pretence that I wanted to see the starting of the great caravan of pilgrims for Mecca,

rode out to the sheik; and telling him that, if I came to him, I should come destitute of every thing, and he must have some good tobacco for me, I slipped a couple of gold pieces into his hand, and, without any further remark, left the question of my going undetermined. It was worth my ride to see the departure of the caravan. It consisted of more than 30,000 pilgrims, who had come from the shores of the Caspian, the extremities of Persia, and the confines of Africa; and having assembled, according to usage for hundreds of years, at Cairo as a central point, the whole mass was getting in motion for a pilgrimage of fifty days, through dreary sands, to the tomb of the Prophet.

Accustomed as I was to associate the idea of order and decorum with the observance of all rites and duties of religion, I could not but feel surprised at the noise, tumult, and confusion, the strifes and battles, of these pilgrim-travellers. If I had met them in the desert after their line of march was formed, it would have been an imposing spectacle, and comparatively easy to describe; but here, as far as the eye could reach, they were scattered over the sandy plain; 30,000 people, with probably 20,000 camels and dromedaries, men, women, and children, beasts and baggage, all commingled in a confused mass that seemed hopelessly inextricable. Some had not yet struck their tents, some were making coffee, some smoking, some cooking, some eating, many shouting and cursing, others on their knees praying, and others, again, hurrying on to join the long moving stream that already extended several miles into the desert.

It is a vulgar prejudice the belief that women are not admitted into the heaven of Mahommed. It is true that the cunning Prophet, in order not to disturb the joyful serenity with which his followers look forward to their promised heaven, has not given to women any fixed position there, and the pious Mussulman, although blessed with the lawful complement of four wives, is not bound to see among his seventy-two black-eyed hours the faces of his companions upon earth; but the women are not utterly cast out; they are deemed to have souls, and entitled to a heaven of their own; and it may be, too, that their visions of futurity are not less bright, for that there is a mystery to be unravelled beyond the grave, and they are not doomed to eternal companionship with their earthly lords. In the wildest, rudest scene where woman appears at all, there is a sweet and undefinable charm; and their appearance among the pilgrims, the care with which they shrouded themselves from every eye, their long thick veils, and their tents or four-post beds, with curtains of red silk, fastened down all around and seen from the high backs of camels, were the most striking objects in the caravan. Next to them in interest were the miserable figures of the marabouts, santons, or Arab saints, having only a scanty covering of rags over their shoulders, and the rest of their bodies completely naked, yet strutting about as if clothed in purple and fine linen; and setting off utterly destitute of every thing, for a journey of months across the desert, safely trusting to that open-handed charity which forms so conspicuous an item in the list of Mussulman virtues. But the object of universal interest was the great box containing the presents and decorations for the tomb of the Prophet. The camel which bears this sacred burden is adorned with banners and rich housings, is watched and tended with pious care, and when his journey is ended, no meaner load can touch his back: he has filled the measure of a camel's glory, and lives and dies respected by all good Mussulmans.

In the evening, being the last of my stay in Cairo, I heard that Mr Linant, the companion of M. Laborde on his visit to Petra, had arrived at Alexandria, and, with Mr Gliddon, went to see him. Mr L. is one of the many French emigrés driven from their native soil by political convulsions, and who have risen to distinction in foreign lands by military talents, and the force of that restless energy so peculiar to his countrymen. Many years before, he had thrown himself into the Arabian Desert, where he had become so much beloved by the Bedouins, that on the occasion of a dispute between two contend-

ing claimants, the customs of their tribe were waived, the pretensions of the rivals set aside, and he was elected sheik of Mount Sinai, and invested with the flattering name, which he retains to this day, of Abdel Hag, or the slave of truth. Notwithstanding his desert rank and dignity, he received me with a politeness which savoured of the salons of Paris, and encouraged me in my intention of visiting Petra, assuring me that it would abundantly repay me for all the difficulties attending it; in fact, he spoke lightly of these, although I afterwards found that his acquaintance with the language, his high standing among the Bedouins, and his lavish distribution of money and presents, had removed or diminished obstacles which, to a stranger without these advantages, were by no means of a trifling nature. In addition to much general advice, he counselled me particularly to wear the Turkish or Arab dress, and to get a letter from the Hakeem Effendi to the governor of the little fortress of Akaba. Mr Linant has been twenty years in Egypt, and is now a bey in the pacha's service; and that very afternoon, after a long interview, had received orders from the great reformer to make a survey of the pyramids, for the purpose of deciding which of those gigantic monuments, after having been respected by all preceding tyrants for 3000 years, should now be demolished for the illustrious object of yielding material for a petty fortress, or scarcely more useful and important bridge.

Early in the morning I went into the bazaars, and fitted out Paul and myself with the necessary dresses. Paul was soon equipped with the common Arab dress, the blue cotton shirt, tarboueh, and Bedouin shoes. A native of Malta, he was very probably of Arab descent in part, and his dark complexion and long black beard would enable him readily to pass for one born under the sun of Egypt. As for myself, I could not look the swarthy Arab of the desert, and the dress of the Turkish houja or gentleman, with the necessary arms and equipments, was very expensive; so I provided myself with the unpretending and respectable costume of a Cairo merchant; a long red silk gown, with a black abbas of camel's hair over it; red tarboueh, with a green and yellow striped handkerchief rolled round it as a turban; white trousers, large red shoes over yellow slippers, blue sash, sword, and a pair of large Turkish pistols.

Having finished my purchases in the bazaars, I returned to my hotel ready to set out, and found the dromedaries, camels, and guides, and expected to find the letter for the governor of Akaba, which, at the suggestion of Mr Linant, I had requested Mr Gliddon to procure for me. I now learned, however, from that gentleman, that, to avoid delay, it would be better to go myself, first sending my caravan outside the gate, and representing to the minister that I was actually waiting for the letter, in which case he would probably give it to me immediately. I accordingly sent Paul with my little caravan to wait for me at the tombs of the califs, and, attended by the consul's janizary, rode up to the citadel, and stopped at the door of the governor's palace.

The reader may remember that, on my first visit to his excellency, I saw a man whipped; this time I saw one bastinadoed. I had heard much of this, a punishment existing, I believe, only in the East, but I had never seen it inflicted before, and hope I never shall see it again. As on the former occasion, I found the little governor standing at one end of the large hall of entrance, munching, and trying causes. A crowd was gathered around, and before him was a poor Arab, pleading and beseeching most piteously, while the big tears were rolling down his cheeks; near him was a man whose resolute and somewhat angry expression marked him as the accuser, seeking vengeance rather than justice. Suddenly the governor made a gentle movement with his hand; all noise ceased; all stretched their necks and turned their eager eyes towards him; the accused cut short his crying, and stood with his mouth wide open, and his eyes fixed upon the governor. The latter spoke a few words in a very low voice, to me of course unintelligible, and, indeed, scarcely audible, but they seemed to fall upon the quick ears of the culprit like bolts of

thunder; the agony of suspense was over, and, without a word or look, he laid himself down on his face at the feet of the governor. A space was immediately cleared around; a man on each side took him by the hand, and, stretching out his arms, kneeled upon and held them down, while another seated himself across his neck and shoulders. Thus nailed to the ground, the poor fellow, knowing that there was no chance of escape, threw up his feet from the knee-joint, so as to present the soles in a horizontal position. Two men came forward with a pair of long stout bars of wood, attached together by a cord, between which they placed the feet, drawing them together with the cord so as to fix them in their horizontal position, and leave the whole flat surface exposed to the full force of the blow. In the meantime two strong Turks were standing ready, one at each side, armed with long whips resembling our common cowskin, but longer and thicker, and made of the tough hide of the hippopotamus. While the occupation of the judge was suspended by these preparations, the janizary had presented the consul's letter. My sensibilities are not particularly acute, but they yielded in this instance. I had watched all the preliminary arrangements, nervously myself for what was to come; but when I heard the scourge whizzing through the air, and, when the first blow fell upon the naked feet, saw the convulsive movements of the body, and heard the first loud piercing shriek, I could stand it no longer; I broke through the crowd, forgetting the governor and every thing else, except the agonising sounds from which I was escaping; but the janizary followed close at my heels, and, laying his hand upon my arm, hauled me back to the governor. If I had consulted merely the impulse of feeling, I should have consigned him, and the governor, and the whole nation of Turks, to the lower regions; but it was all-important not to offend this summary dispenser of justice, and I never made a greater sacrifice of feeling to expediency than when I re-entered his presence. The shrieks of the unhappy criminal were ringing through the chamber; but the governor received me with as calm a smile as if he had been sitting on his own divan, listening to the strains of some pleasant music, while I stood with my teeth clenched, and felt the hot breath of the victim, and heard the whizzing of the accursed whip, as it fell again and again upon his bleeding feet. I have heard men cry out in agony when the sea was raging, and the drowning man, rising for the last time upon the mountain waves, turned his imploring arms towards us, and with his dying breath called in vain for help; but I never heard such heart-rending sounds as those from the poor bastinadoed wretch before me. I thought the governor would never make an end of reading the letter, when the scribe handed it to him for his signature, although it contained but half a dozen lines; he fumbled in his pocket for his seal, and dipped it in the ink; the impression did not suit him, and he made another; and, after a delay that seemed to me eternal, employed in folding it, handed it to me with a most gracious smile. I am sure I grinned horribly in return; and almost snatching the letter just as the last blow fell, I turned to hasten from the scene. The poor scourged wretch was silent; he had found relief in insensibility; I cast one look upon the senseless body, and saw the feet laid open in gashes, and the blood streaming down the legs. At that moment the bars were taken away, and the mangled feet fell like lead upon the floor. I had to work my way through the crowd, and before I could escape, I saw the poor fellow revive, and by the first natural impulse rise upon his feet, but fall again as if he had stepped upon red-hot irons. He crawled upon his hands and knees to the door of the hall, and here it was most gratifying to see that the poor miserable, mangled, and degraded Arab, yet had friends whose hearts yearned towards him; they took him in their arms, and carried him away.

I was sick of Cairo, and in a right humour to bid farewell to all its artificial laws, their crimes and punishments, and all the varied shades of man from man to man, and in a few minutes I

was beyond the gate, and galloping away to join my companions in the desert. At the tombs of the califs I found Paul with my caravan; but I had not yet escaped the stormy passions of men. With the cries of the poor Arab still ringing in my ears, I was greeted with a furious quarrel, arising from the apportionment of the money I had paid my guides. I was in no humour to interfere, and, mounting my dromedary, and leaving Paul to arrange the affair with them as he best could, I rode on alone.

It was a journey of no ordinary interest on which I was now beginning my lonely way. I had travelled in Italy, among the mountains of Greece, the plains of Turkey, the wild steppes of Russia, and the plains of Poland, but neither of these afforded half the material for curious expectation that my journey through the desert promised. After an interval of 4000 years, I was about to pursue the devious path of the children of Israel, when they took up the bones of Joseph and fled before the anger of Pharaoh, among the mountain passes of Sinai, and through that great and terrible desert which shut them from the Land of Promise. I rode on in silence and alone for nearly two hours, and just as the sun was sinking behind the dark mountains of Mokattam, halted to wait for my little caravan; and I pitched my tent for the first night in the desert, with the door opening to the distant land of Goshen.

CHAPTER XIV.

The Caravan.—Arab Political Economy.—A projected Railroad.—The Suez.—Suez.—A travelled Englishman.—The Red Sea.—Embarkation of Pilgrims.—A Misadventure.—Scriptural Localities.—The bitter Fountain.

THE arrangements for my journey as far as Mount Sinai had been made by Mr Gliddon. It was necessary to have as my guides some of the Bedouins from around the mountains, and he had procured one known to him, a man in whom I could place the most implicit confidence; and possessing another not less powerful recommendation, in the fact that he had been with Messrs Linant and Laborde to Petra. My caravan consisted of eight camels and dromedaries, and, as guide and camel-drivers, three young Bedouins from nineteen to twenty-two years old. My tent was the common tent of the Egyptian soldiers, bought at the government factory, easily carried, and as easily pitched; my bedding was a mattress and coverlet; and I had, moreover, a couple of boxes, about eighteen inches high, and the width of my mattress, filled with eatables, which I carried slung over the back of a camel, one upon each side, and at night, by the addition of two pieces of board, converted into a bedstead. My store of provisions consisted of bread, biscuit, rice, macaroni, tea, coffee, dried apricots, oranges, a roasted leg of mutton, and two of the largest skins containing the filtered water of the Nile.

In the evening, while we were sitting around a fire, I inquired the cause of the quarrel from which I had escaped, and this led Tonalah into an explanation of some of the customs of the Bedouins. There exists among them that community of interest and property for which radicals and visionaries contend in civilised society. The property of the tribe is to a great extent common, and their earnings, or the profits of their labour, are shared among the whole. A Bedouin's wives are his own; and as the chastity of women is guarded by the most sanguinary laws, his children are generally his own; his tent, also, and one or two camels, are his, and the rest belongs to his tribe. The practical operation of this law is not attended with any great difficulty; for, in general, the rest, or that which belongs to the tribe, is nothing; there are no hoarded treasures, no coffers of wealth, the bequest of ancestors, or the gains of enterprise and industry, to excite the cupidity of the avaricious. Poor is the Bedouin born, and poor he dies, and his condition is more than usually prosperous when his poverty does not lead him to the shedding of blood.

I did not expect to learn lessons of political economy

among the Bedouin Arabs; but in the commencement of my journey with them, I found the embarrassment and evil of trammelling individual enterprise and industry. The consul had applied to Toualeb. Toualeb was obliged to propose the thing to such of his tribe as were then in Cairo, and all had a right to participate. The consequence was, that when we were ready to move, instead of five there were a dozen camels and dromedaries, and their several owners were the men whom I had left wrangling at the tombs of the califs; and even when it was ascertained that only five were wanted, still three supernumeraries were sent, that all might be engaged in the work. In countries where the labour of man and beast has a per diem value, the loss of the labour of three or four men and three or four camels would be counted; but in the East, time and labour have no value.

I do not mean to go into any dissertations on the character of the Bedouins, and shall merely refer to such traits as fell under my observation, and were developed by circumstances. While I was eating my evening meal, and talking with Toualeb, the three young camel-drivers sat at the door of the tent, leaning on their hands, and looking at me. I at first did not pay much attention to them, but it soon struck me as singular that they did not prepare their own meal; and, noticing them more attentively, I thought they were not looking so much at me as at the smoking pilau before me. I asked them why they did not eat their supper, and they told me that their masters had sent them away without a particle of any thing to eat. I was exceedingly vexed at this, inasmuch as it showed that I had four mouths to feed more than I had prepared for; no trifling matter on a journey in the desert, and one which Paul, as my quartermaster, said it was utterly impossible to accomplish. I at first told one of them to mount my dromedary and go back to Cairo, assuring him that, if he did not return before daylight, I would follow and have both him and his master bastinadoed; but before he had mounted, I changed my mind. I hated all returns and delays, and, smothering my wrath, told Paul to give them some rice and biscuit, at the risk of being obliged to come down to Arab bread myself. And so ended the first day of my journey.

Early in the morning we began our march, with our faces towards the rising sun. Before mid-day we were in as perfect a desert as if we were removed thousands of miles from the habitations of men; behind, before, and around us, was one wide expanse of level and arid sands, although we were as yet not more than eight hours from the crowded city of Cairo; and I might already cry out, in the spirit of Neikomm's famous cavatina, "The sea, the sea, the open sea!" Indeed, in all the travelling in the East nothing strikes one more forcibly than the quick transitions from the noise of cities to the stillness of the unpeopled waste.

It does, indeed, appear remarkable that, within so short a distance from Cairo, a city of so great antiquity and large population, and on a road which we know to have been travelled more than 4000 years, and which at this day is the principal route to the Red Sea, there is so little travelling. During the whole day we did not meet more than a dozen Arabs, with perhaps twenty or thirty camels. But a mighty change will soon be made in this particular. A railroad is about to be constructed across the desert, over the track followed by the children of Israel to the Red Sea. The pacha had already ordered iron from England for the purpose when I was in Egypt, and there is no doubt of its practicability, being only a distance of eighty miles over a dead level; but whether it will ever be finished, or whether, if finished, it will pay the expense, is much more questionable. Indeed, the better opinion is, that the pacha does it merely to bolster up his reputation in Europe as a reformer; that he has begun without calculating the costs; and that he will get tired and abandon it before it is half completed. It may be, however, that the reader will one day be hurried by a steam engine over the route which I was now crossing at the slow pace of a camel;

and when that day comes, all the excitement and wonder of a journey in the desert will be over. There will be no more pitching of tents, or sleeping under the starry firmament, surrounded by Arabs and camels; no more carrying provisions, and no danger of dying of thirst; all will be reduced to the systematic tameness of a cotton-factory, and the wild Arab will retire farther into the heart of the desert, shunning, like our native Indians, the faces of strangers, and following for ever the footsteps of his wandering ancestors. Blessed be my fortune, improvement had not yet actually begun its march.

In the course of the night I was suddenly awakened by a loud noise like the flapping of sails. A high wind had risen, and my tent not being well secured, it had turned over, so that the wind got under it and carried it away. In the civilised world, we often hear of reverses of fortune which reduce a man to such a state that he has not a roof to cover him; but few are ever deprived of the protection of their roof in so summary a way as this, and it is but fair to add that few have ever got it back so expeditiously. I opened my eyes upon the stars, and saw my house fleeing from me. Paul and I were on our feet in a moment, and gave chase, and with the assistance of our Arabs, brought it back and planted it again; I thought of the prudent Kentuckian who tied his house to a stump to keep it from being blown away, and would have done the same thing if I could have found a stump; but tree or stump in the desert there is none.

I was not disturbed again during the night; but the wind continued to increase, and towards morning and all the next day blew with great violence. It was the dread sirocco, the wind that has for ever continued to blow over the desert, carrying with it the fine particles of sand which, by the continued action of centuries, have buried the monuments, the temples, and the cities of Egypt; the sirocco, always disagreeable and dangerous, and sometimes, if the reports of travellers be true, suffocating and burying whole caravans of men and camels. Fortunately for me, it was blowing upon my back; but still it was necessary to draw my Arab cloak close over my head; and even then the particles of sand found their way within, so that my eyes were soon filled with them. This was very far from being one of the worst siroccos; but the sun was obscured, the atmosphere was a perfect cloud of sand, and the tracks were so completely obliterated, that a little after mid-day we were obliged to stop and take shelter under the lee of a hillock of sand; occasionally we had met caravans coming upon us through the thick clouds of sand, the Arabs riding with their backs to the heads of their camels, and their faces covered, so that not a single feature could be seen.

By the third morning the wind had somewhat abated, but the sand had become so scattered that not a single track could be seen. I was forcibly reminded of a circumstance related to me by Mr Waghorn. A short time before I met him at Cairo, in making a hurried march from Suez, with an Arab unaccustomed to the desert, he encamped about mid-way, and starting two hours before daylight, continued travelling, half asleep, upon his dromedary, until it happened to strike him that the sun had risen in the wrong place, and was then shining in his face instead of warning his back; he had been more than three hours retracing his steps to Suez. If I had been alone this morning, I might very easily have fallen into the same or a worse error. The prospect before me was precisely the same, turn which way I would; and if I had been left to myself, I might have wandered as long as the children of Israel in search of the Promised Land, before I should have arrived at the gate of Suez.

We soon came in sight of the principal, perhaps the only object, which a stranger would mark in the route from Cairo to Suez. It is a large palm-tree, standing alone about half way across, the only green and living thing on that expanse of barrenness. We saw it two or three hours; and moving with the slow pace of our camels, it seemed as if we should never reach it; and then, again, as if we should never leave it behind

us. A journey in the desert is so barren of incident, that wayfarers note the smallest circumstances, and our relative distance from the palm-tree, or half-way house, furnished occupation for a great part of the day.

At about twelve o'clock the next day we caught the first view of the Red Sea, rolling between the dark mountains of Egypt and Arabia, as in the days of Pharaoh and Moses. In an hour more we came in sight of Suez, a low dark spot on the shore, above the commencement of the chains of mountains on each side. About two hours before arriving, we passed, at a little distance on the left, a large khan, on the direct road to Akaba, built by the pacha as a stopping-place for the pilgrims on their way to Mecca. Three days before, more than 30,000 pilgrims had halted in and around it, but now not a living being was to be seen. About half an hour on the hither side of Suez we came to a well, where, for the first time since we left Cairo, we watered our camels.

Even among the miserable cities of Turkey and Egypt, few present so wretched an appearance as Suez. Standing on the borders of the desert, and on the shore of the sea, with bad and unwholesome water, not a blade of grass growing around it, and dependent upon Cairo for the food that supports its inhabitants, it sustains a poor existence by the trade of the great caravan for Mecca, and the small commerce between the ports of Cosseir, Djiddah, and Mocha. A new project has lately been attempted here, which, it might be supposed, would have a tendency to regenerate the fallen city. The route to India by the Red Sea is in the full tide of successful experiment; the English flag is often seen waving in the harbour, and about once in two months an English steamer arrives from Bombay; but even the clatter of a steam-boat is unable to infuse life into its sluggish population.

The gate was open, a single soldier was lying on a mat basking in the sun, his musket gleaming brightly by his side, and a single cannon projected over the wall, frowning with Tom Thumb greatness upon the stranger entering the city. Passing the gate, we found ourselves within a large open space crowded with pilgrims. Even the small space enclosed by the walls was not more than one quarter occupied by buildings, and these few were at the farthest extremity. The whole intermediate area was occupied by pilgrims, scattered about in every imaginable position and occupation, who stared at me as I passed among them in my European dress, and noticed me according to their various humours, some greeting me with a smile, some with a low and respectful salaam, and others with the black look and ferocious scowl of the bigoted and Frank-detesting Mussulmans.

We stopped in the square in front of the harbour, and inquired for an Englishman, the agent of Mr Waghorn, to whom I had a letter, and from whom I hoped to obtain a bed; but he had arrived only two days before, and I doubt whether he had one for himself. He did all he could for me, but that was very little. I remember one thing about him, which is characteristic of a class of European residents in Egypt; he had lived fourteen years between Alexandria and Cairo, and had never been in the desert before, and talked as if he had made a voyage to Babylon or Bagdad. He had provided himself with almost every thing that his English notions of comfort could suggest, and with these he talked of his three days' journey in the desert as a thing to be done but once in a man's life. I ought not to be harsh on him, however, for he was as kind as he could be to me, and in one thing I felt very sensibly the benefit of his kindness. By bad management, my water-skins, instead of being old and seasonable, were entirely new; the second day out the water was injured, and the third it was not drinkable. I did not suffer so much as Paul and the Arabs did, having fallen into the habit of drinking, but little, and assuaging my thirst with an orange; but I suffered from a cause much worse; my eyes were badly inflamed, and the water was so much impregnated with the noxious absorption from the leather, that it produced the effect of the powders which I diluted

in it, and aggravated instead of relieving the inflammation. The Englishman had used kegs made for the purpose, and had more than a kegful left, which he insisted on my taking. One can hardly imagine that the giving or receiving a keg of water should be a matter of any moment; but, much as I wanted it, indeed, all-important as it was to me for the rest of my journey, I hesitated to deprive him of it. Before going, however, I filled one of my skins, and counted it at the time one of the most valuable presents I had ever received. He had been in the desert, too, the same day that we suffered from the sirocco, and his eyes were in a worse condition than mine.

The first thing he did was to find me a place to pass the night in. Directly opposite the open space was a large roquet or stone building, containing a ground and upper floor, and open in the centre, forming a hollow square. The whole building was divided by partitions into perhaps a hundred apartments, and every one of these and the open square outside were filled with pilgrims. The apartments consisted merely of a floor, roof, door, and walls, and sometimes one or the other of these requisites was wanting, and its deficiency supplied by the excess of another. My room was in one corner in the second story, and had a most unnecessary and uncomfortable proportion of windows; but I had no choice. I regretted that I had not pitched my tent outside the walls; but, calling to my assistance the ingenuity and contriving spirit of my country, fastened it up as a screen to keep the wind from coming upon me too severely, and walked out to see the little that was to be seen of Suez.

I had soon made a tour of the town; and having performed this duty, I hurried where my thoughts and feelings had long been carrying me, to the shore of the sea. Half a dozen vessels of some eighty or a hundred tons, sharp built, with tall spars for latten sails, high poops, and strangely painted, resembling the ancient ships of war, or the Turkish corsair or Arab pirate of modern days, were riding at anchor in the harbour, waiting to take on board the thousands of pilgrims who were all around me. I followed the shore till I had turned the walls, and was entirely alone. I sat down under the wall, where I had an extensive view down the sea, and saw the place where the waters divided for the passage of the Israelites. Two hours I strolled along the shore, and when the sun was sinking behind the dark mountains of Mokattam, I was bathing my feet in the waters of the coral sea.

Early in the morning I went out on the balcony, and looking down into the open square, filled with groups of pilgrims, male and female, sleeping on the bare ground, in all manner of attitudes, I saw directly under me a dead Tartar. He had died during the night, his death-bed a single plank, and he was lying in the sheep-skin dress which he wore when living. Two friends from the frozen regions of the north, companions in his long pilgrimage, were sitting on the ground preparing their morning coffee, and my Arabs were sleeping by his side, unconscious that but a few feet from them, during the stillness of the night, an immortal spirit had been called away. I gazed long and steadfastly upon the face of the dead Tartar, and moralised very solemnly — indeed, painfully — upon the imaginary incidents which my fancy summoned up in connection with his fate. Nor was the possibility of my own death, among strangers in a distant land, the least prominent or least saddening portion of my reverie.

I ascribe this uncommon moping-fit to my exposing myself before breakfast. The stomach must be fortified, or force, moral and physical, is gone, and melancholy and blue devils are the inevitable consequence. After breakfast I was another creature. My acute sensibility, my tender sympathies, were gone; and when I went out again, I looked upon the body of the dead Tartar with the utmost indifference.

The pilgrims were now nearly all stirring, and the square was again in motion. The balcony, and, indeed, every part of the old roquet, were filled with the better

class of pilgrims, principally Turks, the lords of the land; and in an apartment opening on the balcony, immediately next to mine, sat a beautiful Circassian, with the regular features and brilliant complexion of her country. By her side were two lovely children, fair and beautiful as their mother. Her face was completely uncovered, for she did not know that a stranger was gazing on her, and, turning from the black visages around him to her fair and lovely face, was revelling in recollections of the beauties of his native land. And lo, the virtue of a breakfast! I, that by looking upon a dead Tartar had buried myself in the deserts of Arabia, written my epitaph, and cried over my own grave, was now ready to break a lance with a Turk to rob him of his wife.

The balcony and staircase were thronged with pilgrims, many still asleep, so that I was obliged to step over their bodies in going down, and out of doors the case was much the same. At home I should have thought it a peculiarly interesting circumstance to join a caravan of Mussulmans on their pilgrimage to Mecca; but long before I had seen them start from the gate of Cairo, my feelings were essentially changed. I had hired my caravan for Mount Sinai; but feeling rather weak, and wishing to save myself six days' journey in the desert, I endeavoured to hire a boat to go down the Red Sea to Tor, supposed to be the Elim, or place of palm-trees, mentioned in the Exodus of the Israelites, and only two days' journey from Mount Sinai. The boats were all taken by the pilgrims, and these holy travellers were packed together as closely as sheep on board one of our North River sloops for the New York market. They were a filthy set, many of them probably not changing their clothes from the time they left their homes until they reached the tomb of the Prophet. I would rather not have travelled with them; but as it was my only way of going down the sea, I applied to an Arab to hire a certain portion of space on the deck of a boat for myself and servant; but he advised me not to think of such a thing. He told me if I hired and paid for such a space, the pilgrims would certainly encroach upon me; that they would beg, and borrow, and at last rob me; and, above all, that they were bigoted fanatics, and, if a storm occurred, would very likely throw me overboard. With this character of his brethren from a true believer, I abandoned the idea of going by sea, and that the more readily, as his account was perfectly consistent with what I had before heard of the pilgrims.

The scene itself did not sustain the high and holy character of a pilgrimage. As I said before, all were abominably filthy; some were sitting around a great dish of pilau, thrusting their hands in it up to the knuckles, squeezing the boiled rice, and throwing back their heads as they crammed the huge morsel down their throats; others packing up their merchandises, or carrying water-skins, or whetting their sabres; others wrangling for a few paras; and in one place was an Arab butcher, bare-legged, and naked from the waist upward, with his hands, breast, and face smeared with blood, leaning over the body of a slaughtered camel, brandishing an axe, and chopping off huge pieces of meat for the surrounding pilgrims. A little off from the shore a large party were embarking on board a small boat to go down to their vessel, which was lying at the mouth of the harbour; they were wading up to their middle, every one with something on his shoulders or above his head. Thirty or forty had already got on board, and as many more were trying to do the same; but the boat was already full. A loud wrangling commenced, succeeded by clinching, throttling, splashing in the water, and running to the shore. I saw bright swords gleaming in the air, heard the ominous click of a pistol, and in one moment more blood would have been shed, but for a Turkish aga, who had been watching the scene from the governor's balcony, and now dashing in among them with a huge silver-headed mace, and laying about him right and left, brought the turbulent pilgrims to a condition more suited to their sacred character.

At about nine o'clock I sent off my camels to go round

the head of the gulf, intending to cross over in a boat and meet them. At the moment they left the roquet, two friends were holding up a quilt before the body of the dead Tartar, while a third was within, washing and preparing it for burial. At twelve o'clock I got on board my boat; she was, like the others, sharp built, with a high poop and tall latteen sails, and, for the first time in all my travelling, I began to think a voyage better than a journey. In addition to the greater ease and pleasantness, there was something new and exciting in the passage of the Red Sea; and we had hardly given our large latteen sails to the wind, before I began to talk with the rais about carrying me down to Tor; but he told me the boat was too small for such a voyage, and money would not induce him to attempt it.

Late in the afternoon we landed on the opposite side, on the most sacred spot connected with the wanderings of the Israelites, where they rose from the dry bed of the sea, and, at the command of Moses, the divided waters rushed together, overwhelming Pharaoh and his chariots, and the whole host of Egypt. With the devotion of a pious pilgrim, I picked up a shell, and put it in my pocket as a memorial of the place; and then Paul and I, mounting the dromedaries which my guide had brought down to the shore in readiness, rode to a grove of palm-trees, shading a fountain of bad water, called Ayoun Mousa, or the Fountain of Moses. I was riding carelessly along, looking behind me towards the sea, and had almost reached the grove of palm-trees, when a large flock of crows flew out, and my dromedary, frightened with their sudden whizzing, started back and threw me twenty feet over his head, completely clear of his long neck, and left me sprawling in the sand. It was a mercy I did not finish my wanderings where the children of Israel began theirs; but I saved my head at the expense of my hands, which sank in the loose soil up to the wrist, and bore the marks for more than two months afterwards. I seated myself where I fell, and, as the sun was just dipping below the horizon, told Paul to pitch the tent, with the door towards the place of the miraculous passage. I shall never forget that sunset scene, and it is the last I shall inflict upon the reader. I was sitting on the very spot where the chosen people of God, after walking over the dry bed of the sea, stopped to behold the divided waters returning to their place and swallowing up the host of the pursuers. The mountains on the other side looked dark and portentous, as if proud and conscious witnesses of the mighty miracle, while the sun, descending slowly behind them, long after it had disappeared, left a reflected brightness which illumined with an almost supernatural light the dark surface of the water.

But to return to the Fountain of Moses. I am aware that there is some dispute as to the precise spot where Moses crossed; but having no time for scepticism on such matters, I began by making up my mind that this was the place, and then looked around to see whether, according to the account given in the Bible, the face of the country and the natural landmarks did not sustain my opinion. I remember I looked up to the head of the gulf, where Suez or Kolsun now stands, and saw that almost to the very head of the gulf there was a high range of mountains which it would be necessary to cross, an undertaking which it would have been physically impossible for 600,000 people, men, women, and children, to accomplish, with a hostile army pursuing them. At Suez, Moses could not have been hemmed in as he was; he could go off into the Syrian Desert, or, unless the sea has greatly changed since that time, round the head of the gulf. But here, directly opposite where I sat, was an opening in the mountains, making a clear passage from the desert to the shore of the sea. It is admitted that, from the earliest history of the country, there was a caravan route from the Ramesch of the Pharaohs to this spot, and it was perfectly clear to my mind that, if the account be true at all, Moses had taken that route; that it was directly opposite me, between the two mountains, where he had come down with his multitude to the shore, and that it was there

he had found himself hemmed in, in the manner described in the Bible, with the sea before him, and the army of Pharaoh in his rear; it was there he had stretched out his hand and divided the waters; and probably, on the very spot where I sat, the children of Israel had kneeled upon the sands to offer thanks to God for his miraculous interposition. The distance, too, was in confirmation of this opinion. It was about twenty miles across; the distance which that immense multitude, with their necessary baggage, could have passed in the space of time (a night) mentioned in the Bible. Besides my own judgment and conclusions, I had authority on the spot, in my Bedouin Toualeb, who talked of it with as much certainty as if he had seen it himself; and, by the waning light of the moon, pointed out the metes and bounds according to the tradition received from his fathers. "And even yet," said he, "on a still evening like this, or sometimes when the sea is raging, the ghosts of the departed Egyptians are seen walking upon the waters; and once, when, after a long day's journey, I lay down with my camels on this very spot, I saw the ghost of Pharaoh himself, with the crown upon his head, flying with his chariot and horses over the face of the deep; and even to this day the Arab diving for coral, brings up fragments of swords, broken helmets, or chariot-wheels, swallowed up with the host of Egypt."

Early the next morning we resumed our journey, and travelled several hours along a sandy valley, diverging slowly from the sea, and approaching the mountains on our left. The day's journey was barren of incident, though not void of interest. We met only one small caravan of Bedouins, with their empty sacks, like the children of Jacob of old, journeying from a land of famine to a land of plenty. From time to time we passed the bones of a camel bleaching on the sand, and once the body of one just dead, his eyes already picked out, and their sockets hollow to the brain. A huge vulture was standing over him, with his long talons fastened in the entrails, his beak and his whole head stained with blood. I drove the horrid bird away; but before I had got out of sight, he had again fastened on his prey.

The third day we started at seven o'clock, and, after three hours' journeying, entered among the mountains of Sinai. The scene was now entirely changed in character; the level expanse of the sandy desert for the wild and rugged mountain-pass. At eleven we came to the fountain of Marah, supposed to be that at which the Israelites rested after their three days' journey from the Red Sea. There is some uncertainty as to the particulars of this journey; the print of their footsteps did not long remain in the shifting sands; their descendants have long been strangers in the land; and tradition but imperfectly supplies the want of more accurate and enduring records. Of the general fact there is no doubt; no other road from the Red Sea to Mount Sinai has existed since the days of Moses, and there is no part of the world where the face of nature and the natural land-marks have remained so totally unchanged. Then, as now, it was a barren mountainous region, bare of verdure, and destitute of streams of living water; so that the Almighty was obliged to sustain his people with manna from heaven, and water from the rocks.

But travellers have questioned whether this is the fountain of Marah. The Bible account is simple and brief—"They went three days into the wilderness, and found no water; and when they came to Marah, they could not drink of the waters of Marah, for they were bitter." Burekhardt objects that the distance is too short for three days' journey, but this cavil is sufficiently answered by others; that the movements of such an immense multitude, of all ages and both sexes, with flocks and cattle, which they must have had for the sacrifices, if for no other purpose, must necessarily have been slow. Besides, supposing the habits of the people to have been the same as we find them now among Orientals, the presumption is rather that they moved more slowly than push on with speed, after a long pursuit was over. Time is thought of

little consequence by the Arabs; and as the Jews were Arabs, it is probable that the same was a feature of their character also. At all events, I was disposed to consider this the fountain, and would fain have performed the duty of a pious pilgrim by making my noon-day meal at its brink; but, as in the days of Moses, we could not drink of the waters of Marah, "for they were bitter." I do not wonder that the people murmured, for even our camels would not drink of them. The ground around the fountain was white with salt. In about two hours more we came to the valley of Gherondel, a large valley with palm-trees; away at the right, in the mountains, is another spring of water, which Shaw makes the bitter fountain of Moses, the water being also undrinkable.

That night Paul was unwell, and, as it always happened with him when he had a headache, he thought he was going to die. As soon as we pitched our tent, I made him lie down; and not knowing how to deal with his real and fancied ailments, gave him some hot tea, and then piled upon him quilts, blankets, empty sacks, saddle-cloths, and every other covering I could find, until he cried for quarter. I had no difficulty in cooking my own supper, and, I remember, tried the savage taste of my Bedouins with the China weed, which they liked exceedingly, when so abundantly sweetened as utterly to destroy its flavour.

CHAPTER XV.

The Aspect of the Mountains.—Arab Graves.—The Pacha and the Bedouins.—The Value of Water.—Perplexing Inscriptions.—Habits of the Arabs.—Ethics of the Desert.—Breach of the Marriage Vow.—Arrival at the Convent.—An Excess of Welcome.—Greece and America.—Amor Patriæ.

In the morning Paul was well, but I recommended a little starvation to make all sure; this, however, by no means agreed with his opinion, or his appetite; for, as he said, a man who rode a dromedary all day must eat or die. Late in the afternoon we passed a hill of stones, which Burekhardt calls the tomb of a saint; but according to Toualeb's account, and he spoke of it as a thing within his own knowledge, it was the tomb of a very different personage, namely, a woman who was surprised by her kindred with a paramour, and killed and buried on the spot; on a little eminence above, a few stones marked the place where a slave had been stationed to give the guilty pair a timely notice of approaching danger, but had neglected his important trust.

Our road now lay between wild and rugged mountains, and the valley itself was stony, broken, and rugged by the washing of the winter torrents; and a few straggling thorn-bushes were all that grew in that region of desolation. I had remarked for some time, and every moment impressed it more and more forcibly upon my mind, that every thing around me seemed old and in decay: the valley was barren and devastated by torrents; the rocks were rent; the mountains cracked, broke, and crumbling into thousands of pieces; and we encamped at night between rocks which seemed to have been torn asunder by some violent convulsion, where the stones had washed down into the valley, and the drifted sand almost choked the passage. It had been excessively hot during the day, and at night the wind was whistling around my tent as in mid-winter.

Early in the morning we were again in motion, our route lying nearly all day in the same narrow valley, bounded by the same lofty mountains. At every step the scene became more solemn and impressive: all was still around us; and not a sound broke the universal silence, except the soft tread of our camels, and now and then the voice of one of us; but there was little encouragement to garrulity. The mountains became more and more striking, venerable, and interesting. Not a shrub or blade of grass grew on their naked sides, deformed with gaps and fissures; and they looked as if a slight jar or shake, they would crumble into millions of pieces. It is impossible to describe correctly the singularly interesting appearance of these mountains.

Age, hoary and venerable, is the predominant character. They looked as if their great Creator had made them higher than they are, and their summits, worn and weakened by the action of the elements for thousands of years, had cracked and fallen. My days in the desert did not pass as quickly as I hurry through them here. They wore away, not slowly alone, but sometimes heavily; and to help them in their progress, sometimes descended to very commonplace amusements. On one occasion I remember meeting a party of friendly Bedouins, and, sitting down with them to pipes and coffee, I noticed a fine lad of nineteen or twenty, about the size of one of my party, and pitted mine against him for a wrestling-match. The old Bedouins took the precaution to remove their knives and swords, and it was well they did, for the two lads throttled each other like young furies; and when mine received a pretty severe prostration on the sand, he first attempted to regain his sword, and, failing in that, sprang again upon his adversary with such ferocity that I was glad to have the young devils taken apart, and still more glad to know that they were going to travel different roads.

Several times we passed the rude burying-grounds of the Bedouins, standing alone in the waste of sand, a few stones thrown together in a heap marking the spot where an Arab's bones reposed; but the wanderer of the desert looks forward to his final rest in this wild burying-place of his tribe with the same feeling that animates the English peasant towards the churchyard of his native village, or the noble peer towards the honoured tomb of his ancestors.

About noon we came to an irregular stone fence, running across the valley and extending up the sides nearly to the top of the adjacent mountains, built as a wall by the Bedouins of Sinai during the war with the Pacha of Egypt. Among the strong and energetic measures of his government, Mahommed Ali had endeavoured to reduce these children of the desert under his iron rule; to subject them to taxes, like his subjects of the Nile, and, worse, to establish his oppressive system of military conscription. But the free spirit of the untamable could not brook this invasion of their independence. They plundered his caravans, drank his best Mocha coffee, devoured his spices from Arabia and India, and clothed themselves and their wives in the rich silks intended for the harems of the wealthy Turks. Hassan Bey was sent against them with 2500 men; 400 Bedouins defended this pass for several days, when, craftily permitting him to force his way to the convent of Mount Sinai, the tribes gathered in force between him and the Red Sea, and held him there a prisoner until a treaty of perpetual amity had been ratified by the pacha, by which it was agreed that the pacha should not invade their territory, and that they would be his subjects, provided he would not call upon them for duties, or soldiers, or, indeed, for any thing which should abridge their natural freedom; or, in other words, that he might do as he pleased with them, provided he let them have their own way. It was, in fact, the school-boy's bargain, "Let me alone, and I will let you alone," and so it has been faithfully kept by both parties, and I have no doubt will continue to be kept, until one of them shall have a strong probability of profit and success in breaking it. Upon the whole, however, the Bedouins of Mount Sinai are rather afraid of Mahommed Ali, and he has a great rod over them in his power of excluding them from Cairo, where they come to exchange their dates and apricots for grain, clothing, weapons, and ammunition. As they told me themselves, before his time they had been great robbers, and now a robbery is seldom heard of among them.

For two days we had been suffering for want of water. The skins with which I had been provided by the consular janizary at Cairo were so new that they contained the water; and it had at last become so bad, that, fearful of injurious effects from drinking it, and preferring the evil of thirst to that of sickness, I had poured it all out upon the sand. Toualeb had told me that some time during the day we should come to a fountain,

but the evening was drawing nigh, and we had not reached it. Fortunately we had still a few oranges left, which served to moisten our parched mouths; and we were in the momentary expectation of coming to the water, when Toualeb discovered some marks, from which he told us that it was yet three hours distant. We had no apprehension of being reduced to the extremity of thirst; but for men who had already been suffering for some time, the prolongation of such thirst was by no means pleasant. During those three hours I thought of nothing but water. Rivers were floating through my imagination, and, while moving slowly on my dromedary, with the hot sun beating upon my head, I wiped the sweat from my face, and thought upon the frosty Caucasus; and when, after travelling an hour aside from the main track, through an opening in the mountains, we saw a single palm-tree shading a fountain, our progress was gradually accelerated, until, as we approached, we broke into a run, and dashing through the sand, and without much respect of persons, all threw ourselves upon the fountain.

If any of my friends at home could have seen me then, they would have laughed to see me scrambling among a party of Arabs for a place around a fountain, all prostrate on the ground, with our heads together, for a moment raising them to look gravely at each other while we paused for breath, and then burying our noses again in the delicious water; and yet, when my thirst was satisfied, and I had time to look at it, I thought it lucky that I had not seen it before. It was not a fountain, but merely a deposite of water in a hollow sand-stone rock; the surface was green, and the bottom muddy. Such as it was, however, we filled our skins, and returned to the main track.

We continued about an hour in the valley, rising gently until we found ourselves on the top of a little eminence, from which we saw before us another valley, bounded also by high rocky cliffs; and directly in front, still more than a day's journey distant, standing directly across the road, and, as has been forcibly and truly said, "looking like the end of the world," stood the towering mountains of Sinai. At the other end of the plain the mountains contracted, and on one side was an immense block of porphyry, which had fallen, probably, thousands of years ago. I could still see where it had come leaping and crashing down the mountain-side, and trace its destructive course to the very spot where it now lay, itself almost a mountain, though a mere pebble when compared with the giant from which it came. I pitched my tent by its side, with the door open to the holy mountain, as many a weary pilgrim had done before me. The rock was covered with inscriptions, but I could not read them. I walked round and round it with Paul at my elbow, looking eagerly for some small scrap, a single line, in a language we could read; but all were strange, and at length we gave up the search. In several places in the wilderness of Sinai, the rocks are filled with inscriptions, supposed to have been made by the Jews; and finding those before me utterly beyond my comprehension, I resolved to carry them back to a respectable antiquity, and in many of the worn and faded characters, to recognise the work of some wandering Israelite. I meditated, also, a desperate but noble deed. Those who had written before me were long since dead; but in this lonely desert they had left a record of themselves and of their language. I resolved to add one of my country's also. Dwelling fondly in imagination upon the absorbing interest with which some future traveller, perhaps from my own distant land, would stop to read on this lonely rock a greeting in his native tongue, I sought with great care a stone that would serve as a pencil. It made a mark which did not suit me, and I laid it down to break it into a better shape, but unluckily smashed my fingers, and in one moment all my enthusiasm of sentiment was gone; I crammed my fingers into my mouth, and danced about the rock in an agony of heroics; and so my inscription remained unwritten.

At seven o'clock of the tenth day from Cairo I was again on my dromedary, and during the whole day the

lofty top of Sinai was constantly before me. We were now in a country of friendly Arabs. The Bedouins around Mount Sinai were all of the same tribe, and the escort of any child of that tribe was a sufficient protection. About nine o'clock Toulah left me for his tent among the mountains. He was a little at a loss, having two wives living in separate tents, at some distance from each other, and he hesitated which to visit. I made it my business to pry into particulars, and found the substance of the Arab's nature not much different from other men's. Old ties and a sense of duty called him to his old wife—to her who had been his only wife when he was young and poor; but something stronger than old ties or the obligation of duty impelled him to his younger bride. Like the Prophet whom he worshipped, he honoured and respected his old wife, but his heart yearned to her younger and more lovely rival.

The last was by far the most interesting day of my journey to Mount Sinai. We were moving along a broad valley, bounded by ranges of lofty and crumbling mountains, forming an immense rocky rampart on each side of us; and rocky and barren as these mountains seemed, on their tops were gardens which produced oranges, dates, and figs, in great abundance. Here, on heights almost inaccessible to any but the children of the desert, the Bedouin pitches his tent, pastures his sheep and goats, and gains the slender subsistence necessary for himself and family; and often, looking up the bare side of the mountain, we could see on its summit's edge the wild figure of a half-naked Arab, with his long match-lock gun in his hand, watching the movement of our little caravan. Sometimes, too, the eye rested upon the form of a woman stealing across the valley, not a traveller or passer-by, but a dweller in the land where no smoke curled from the domestic hearth, and no sign of a habitation was perceptible. There was something very interesting to me in the greetings of my companions with the other young men of their tribe. They were just returning from a journey to Cairo, an event in the life of a young Bedouin, and they were bringing a stranger from a land that none of them had ever heard of; yet their greeting had the coldness of frosty age, and the reserve of strangers; twice they would gently touch the palms of each other's hands, mutter a few words, and in a moment the welcome was again climbing to their tents. One, I remember, greeted us more warmly, and staid longer among us. He was by profession a beggar or robber, as occasion required, and wanted something from us, but it was not much; merely some bread and a charge of powder. Not far from the track, we saw, hanging on a thorn-bush, the black cloth of a Bedouin's tent, with the pole, ropes, pegs, and every thing necessary to convert it into a habitation for a family. It had been there six months; the owner had gone to a new pasture-ground, and there it had hung, and there it would hang, sacred and untouched, until he returned to claim it. "It belongs to one of our tribe, and cursed be the hand that touches it," is the feeling of every Bedouin. Uncounted gold might be exposed in the same way; and the poorest Bedouin, though a robber by birth and profession, would pass by and touch it not.

On the very summit of the mountain, apparently ensconced behind it as a wall, his body not more than half visible, a Bedouin was looking down upon us: and one of my party, who had long kept his face turned that way, told me that there was the tent of his father. I talked with him about his kindred and his mountain home, not expecting, however, to discover any thing of extraordinary interest or novelty. The sons of Ishmael have ever been the same, inhabitants of the desert, despising the dwellers under a roof, wanderers and wild men from their birth, with their hands against every man, and every man's hand against them. "There is blood between us," says the Bedouin who he meets in the desert one of a tribe by some individual of which an ancestor of his own was killed, perhaps a hundred years before. And then they draw their swords, and a gulf of blood is opened, to be handed down to their children. "Thy aunt wants thy purse,"

says the Bedouin when he meets the stranger travelling through his wild domain. "The desert is ours, and every man who passes over it must pay us tribute." These principal and distinguishing traits of the Bedouin character have long been known; but as I had now been with them ten days, and expected to be with them a month longer, to see them in their tents, and be thrown among different tribes, claiming friendship from those who were enemies to each other, I was curious to know something of the lighter shades, the details of their lives and habits; and I listened with exceeding interest while the young Bedouin, with his eyes constantly fixed upon it, told me that for more than 400 years the tent of his fathers had been in that mountain. Wild and unsettled, robbers and plunderers as they are, they have laws which are as sacred as our own; and the tent, and the garden, and the little pasture-ground, are transmitted from father to son for centuries. I have probably forgotten more than half of our conversation; but I remember he told me that all the sons shared equally; that the daughters took nothing; that the children lived together; that if any of the brothers got married, the property must be divided; that if any difficulty arose on the division, the man who worked the place for a share of the profits must divide it; and, lastly, that the sisters must remain with the brothers, until they (the sisters) are married. I asked him, if the brothers did not choose to keep a sister with them, what became of her; but he did not understand me. I repeated the question, but still he did not comprehend it, and looked to his companions for an explanation. And when, at last, the meaning of my question became apparent to his mind, he answered, with a look of wonder, "It is impossible; she is his own blood." I pressed my question again and again in various forms, suggesting the possibility that the brother's wife might dislike the sister, and other very supposable cases; but it was so strange an idea, that to the last he did not fully comprehend it, and his answer was still the same—"It is impossible; she is his own blood." Paul was in ecstasies at the noble answers of the young savage, and declared him the finest fellow he had ever met since he left Cairo. This was not very high praise, to be sure; but Paul intended it as a compliment, and the young Bedouin was willing to believe him, though he could not exactly comprehend how Paul had found it out.

I asked him who governed them; he stretched himself up, and answered in one word, "God." I asked him if they paid tribute to the pacha; and his answer was, "No, we take tribute from him." I asked him how. "We plunder his caravans." Desirous to understand my exact position with the sheik of Akaba, under his promise of protection, I asked him if they were governed by their sheik; to which he answered, "No, we govern him." The sheik was their representative, their mouthpiece with the pacha and with other tribes, and had a personal influence, but not more than any other member of the tribe. I asked him, if the sheik had promised a stranger to conduct him through his territory, whether the tribe would not consider themselves bound by his promise. He said no; they would take the sheik apart, ask him what he was going to do with the stranger; how much he was going to get; and, if they were satisfied, would let him pass, otherwise they would send him back; but they would respect the promise of the sheik so far as not to do him any personal injury. In case of any quarrel or difference between members of a tribe, they had no law or tribunal to adjust it; but if one of them was wounded—and he spoke as if this was the regular consequence of a quarrel—upon his recovery he made out his account, charging a per diem price for the loss of his services, and the other must pay it. But what if he will not? "He must," was the reply, given in the same tone with which he had before pronounced it "impossible" for the brother to withhold protection and shelter from his sister. If he does not, he will be visited with the contempt of his tribe, and very soon he or one of his near relations will be killed. They have a law which is powerful and

operations as any that we have; and it is a strange and not uninteresting feature in their social compact, that what we call public opinion should be as powerful among them as among civilised people, and that even the wild and lawless Bedouin, a man who may fight, rob, and kill with impunity, cannot live under the contempt of his tribe.

In regard to their yet more domestic habits, he told me that though the law of Mahomed allowed four wives, the Bedouin seldom took more than one, unless that one was barren or could not make good bread, or unless he fell in love with another girl, or could afford to keep more than one; with these, and some few other extraordinary exceptions, the Bedouin married but one wife; and the chastity of women was protected by sanguinary laws, the guilty woman having her head cut off by her own relations, while her paramour, unless caught in the act, is allowed to escape; the Arabs proceeding on the ground that the chastity of the woman is a pearl above all price; that it is in her own keeping; and that it is but part of the infirmity of man's nature to seek to rob her of it.

The whole day we were moving between parallel ranges of mountains, receding in some places, and then again contracting, and at about mid-day entered a narrow and rugged defile, bounded on each side with precipitous granite rocks more than a thousand feet high. We entered at the very bottom of this defile, moving for a time along the dry bed of a torrent, now obstructed with sand and stones, the rocks on every side shivered and torn, and the whole scene wild to sublimity. Our camels stumbled among the rocky fragments to such a degree that we dismounted, and passed through the wild defile on foot. At the other end we came suddenly upon a plain table of ground, and before us towered in awful grandeur, so huge and dark that it seemed close to us and barring all farther progress, the end of my pilgrimage, the holy mountain of Sinai. On our left was a large insulated stone, rudely resembling a chair, called the chair of Moses, on which tradition says that Moses rested himself when he came up with the people of his charge; farther on, upon a little eminence, are some rude stones, which are pointed out as the ruins of the house of Aaron, where the great high-priest discoursed to the wandering Israelites. On the right is a stone alleged to be the petrified golden calf. But it was not necessary to draw upon false and frivolous legends to give interest to this scene; the majesty of nature was enough. I felt that I was on holy ground; and dismounting from my dromedary, loitered for more than an hour in the valley. It was cold, and I sent my shivering Bedouins forward, supposing myself to be at the foot of the mountain, and lingered there until after the sun had set. It was after dark, as alone, and on foot, I entered the last defile leading to the holy mountain. The moon had risen, but her light could not penetrate the deep defile through which I was toiling slowly on to the foot of Sinai. From about half-way up it shone with a pale and solem lustre, while below all was in the deepest shade, and a dark spot on the side of the mountain, seeming perfectly black in contrast with the light above it, marked the situation of the convent. I passed a Bedouin tent, under which a group of Arabs were sleeping around a large fire, and in a few moments stood at the foot of the convent wall. My camels were lying down eating their evening meal, and my Bedouins were asleep on the ground close under the walls.

Knowing that they would not be admitted themselves, they had not demanded entrance; and as I had not told them to do so, they had not given notice of my coming. The convent was a very large building, and the high stone walls surrounding it, with turrets at the corners, gave it the appearance of a fortress. Exposed as they are to occasional attacks by the Bedouins, the holy fathers are sometimes obliged to have recourse to carnal weapons. The walls are accordingly mounted with cannon, and there is no entrance except by a subterraneous passage under the garden, or by a small door in one of the walls, about thirty feet from the ground.

D

My Bedouins had stopped under this door, and here we commenced shouting for admission, first singly, and then altogether, in French, English, and Arabic; but no one came to admit us. I was strongly reminded of the scene under the walls of the little convent in the desert, on my attempted expedition to the great Oasis. Then, as now, it was a moonlight night, and the scene was a convent, a lonely habitation of Christians, with its door closed against a fellow-Christian. I remember that then I had to force my way in and make my own welcome, and I resolved that no trifle should keep me from an entrance here. The convent belonged to the Greek church. I did not know how many monks were in it, or what was the sanctity of their lives, but I wished that some of them had slept with more troubled consciences, for we made almost noise enough to wake the dead; and it was not until we had discharged two volleys of fire-arms that we succeeded in rousing any of the slumbering inmates. On one side were two or three little slits or portholes, and a monk, with a long white beard and a lighted taper in his hand, cautiously thrust out his head at one of them, and demanded our business. This was soon told; we were strangers and Christians, and wanted admission; and had a letter from the Greek patriarch at Cairo. The head disappeared from the loophole, and soon after I saw its owner slowly open the little door, and let down a rope for the patriarch's letter. He read it by the feeble glimmer of his lamp, and then again appeared at the window, and bade us welcome. The rope was again let down; I tied it around my arms; and after dangling in the air for a brief space, swinging to and fro against the walls, found myself clasped in the arms of a burly, long-bearded monk, who hauled me in, kissed me on both cheeks, our long beards rubbing together in friendly union, and, untwisting the rope, set me upon my feet, and passed me over to his associates.

By this time nearly all the monks had assembled, and all pressed forward to welcome me. They shook my hand, took me in their arms, and kissed my face; and if I had been their dearest friend just escaped from the jaws of death, they could not have received me with a more cordial greeting. Glad as I was, after a ten days' journey, to be received with such warmth by these recluses of the mountains, I could have spared the kissing. The custom is one of the detestable things of the East. It would not be so bad if it were universal, and the traveller might sometimes receive his welcome from rosy lips; but, unhappily, the women hide their faces and run away from a stranger, while the men rub him with their bristly beards. At first I went at it with a stout heart, flattering myself that I could give as well as take; but I soon flinched and gave up. Their beards were the growth of years, while mine had only a few months to boast of, and its downward aspirations must continue many a long day before it would attain the respectable longitude of theirs.

During the kissing scene, a Bedouin servant came from the other end of the terrace with an armful of burning brush, and threw it in a blaze upon the stony floor. The monks were gathered around, talking to me and uttering assurances of welcome, as I knew them to be, although I could not understand them; and, confused and almost stunned with their clamorous greeting, I threw myself on the floor, thrust my feet in the fire, and called out for Paul. Twice the rope descended and brought up my tent, baggage, &c.; and the third time it brought up Paul, humming round with guns, pistols, and swords, like a travelling battery. The rope was wound up by a windlass, half a dozen monks, in long black frocks with white stripes, turning it with all their might. In the general eagerness to help, they kept on turning until they had carried Paul above the window, and brought his neck up short under the beam, his feet struggling to hold on to the sill of the door. He roared out lustily in Greek and Arabic; and while they were helping to disencumber him of his multifarious armour, he was cursing and abusing them for a set of blundering workmen, who had almost broken the neck of as

good a Christian as any among them. Probably, since the last incursion of the Bedouins, the peaceful walls of the convent had not been disturbed by such an infernal clatter.

The monks had been roused from sleep, and some of them were hardly yet awake; the superior was the last who came, and his presence quickly restored order. He was a remarkably noble-looking old man, of more than sixty. He asked me my country, and called me his child, and told me that God would reward me for coming from so distant a land to do homage on the holy mountain; and I did not deny the character he ascribed to me, or correct his mistake in supposing that the motive of my journey was purely religious; and looking upon me as a devout pilgrim, he led me through a long range of winding passages, which seemed like the streets of a city, into a small room spread with mats, having a pile of coverlets in one corner, and wearing an appearance of comfort that could be fully appreciated by one who had then spent ten nights in the desert. I threw myself on the mats with a feeling of gratitude, while the superior renewed his welcome, telling me that the convent was the pilgrim's home, and that every thing it contained was mine for a week, a month, or the rest of my days. Nor did he neglect my immediate wants, but, with all the warmth and earnestness of a man who could feel for others' woes in so important a matter as eating, expressed his regret that meat was always a forbidden thing within the walls of the convent, and that now, during their forty days of fasting, even fish and eggs were proscribed. I told him that I was an invalid, and wanted only the plainest and simplest viands, but insinuated that speed was of more importance than richness of fare, having eaten only a biscuit and an orange since morning. The cook of the convent, however, a lay brother in his novitiate, was not used to do things in a hurry, and before he was ready I felt myself goaded by the fiend of famine; and when he came with a platter of beans and a smoking pilaf of rice, I made such an attack upon them as made the good superior stare with wonder and admiration; and I have no doubt that, before I had done, he must have thought a few more such invalids would bring him and the whole brotherhood to actual starvation.

The superior was a Greek by birth; and though it was forty years since he had first come to the convent at Sinai, and twenty years since he entered it for the last time, he was still a Greek in heart. His relations with his native land were kept up by the occasional visits of pilgrims. He had heard of their bloody struggle for liberty, and of what America had done for her in her hour of need, and he told me that, next to his own country, he loved mine; and by his kindness to me as an individual, he sought to repay, in part, his country's debt of gratitude. In my wanderings in Greece, I had invariably found the warmest feeling towards my country. I had found it in the offices of government, in my boatmen, my muleteer, and I remember a ploughman on immortal Marathon sang in my greedy ears the praises of America. I had seen the tear stream down the manly cheeks of a mustached Greek when he talked of America. I had seen those who had received directly from the hands of my countrymen the bounty that came from home. One, I remember, pointed me to a family of sons and daughters, who, he told me, were saved from absolute starvation by our timely help; and so dearly was our country loved there, that I verily believe the mountain robber would have spared the unprotected American.

I knew that this feeling existed in Greece, but I did not expect to find it thus glowing in the wilderness of Sinai. For myself, different in this respect from most others travellers, I liked the Greeks. Travellers and strangers condemn the whole people as dishonest because they are cheated by their boatmen or muleteers, without ever thinking of their four centuries of bitter servitude; but when I remembered their long oppression and galling chains, instead of wondering that they had, I wondered that they were not worse. I

liked the Greeks; and when I talked of Greece and what I had seen there, of the Bavarians lording it over the descendants of Cimon and Miltiades, the face of the superior flushed, and his eyes flashed fire; and when I spoke of the deep interest their sufferings and their glorious struggle had created in America, the old man wept. Oh, who can measure the feeling that binds a man to his native land! Though forty years an exile, buried in the wilderness, and neither expecting nor wishing to revisit the world, he loved his country as if his foot now pressed her soil, and under his monkish robe there glowed a heart as patriotic as ever beat beneath a soldier's corslet. The reader will excuse an unusual touch of sensibility in me when he reflects upon my singular position, sitting at the base of Mount Sinai, and hearing from the lips of a white-bearded Greek the praises of my beloved country. He sat with me till the ringing of the midnight bell for prayers, when I threw myself upon the mat, and, before the hollow sounds had died away in the cloisters, I was fast asleep.

CHAPTER XVI.

Ascent of Sinai.—A Miracle.—The Grotto of Elias.—A Monkish Legend.—The Pinnacle of Sinai.—Anchorites.—Mahommed and his Camel.—An Argument.—Legend of St Catharine.—The Rock of the Tables.—The Stone struck by Moses.—Description of the Convent.—Habits and Character of its Inmates.

THE next day was one of the most interesting of my life. At eight o'clock I was breakfasting; the superior was again at my side; again offering me all the convent could give, and urging me to stay a month, a fortnight, a week, at least to spend that day with him, and repose myself after the fatigues of my journey; but from the door of the little room in which I sat, I saw the holy mountain, and I longed to stand on its lofty summit. Though feeble and far from well, I felt the blood of health again coursing in my veins, and congratulated myself that I was not so luckless in feeling as I had once supposed. I found, and I was happy to find, for the prospective enjoyment of my further journey, that the first tangible monument in the history of the Bible, the first spot that could be called holy ground, ruled in me feelings that had not been awakened by the most classic ground of Italy and Greece, or the proudest monuments of the arts in Egypt.

Immediately after breakfast I rose to ascend the mountain. The superior conducted me through the convent, which, even more than at night, seemed like a small city, through long galleries built of stone, with iron doors, and finally through a long subterraneous passage to the outer garden, a beautiful spot in the midst of the surrounding barrenness, now blooming with almonds and oranges, lemons, dates, and apricots, and shaded by arbores of grape-vines to the extreme end of the walls. At this moment I gave but a passing glance at the garden; and hurrying on to the walls, where a trusty Arab was sitting as sentinel, I descended by a rope, the superior, or papa, as he is called, bidding me farewell, and telling me not to fatigue myself or belong away. At the foot of the wall I found Touadeh waiting orders for my final departure. He said that he must consult with his tribe before he could make any bargain; and I told him to come to the convent in two days, prepared to start upon the third.

Immediately behind the wall of the convent we began to ascend. A Bedouin dwarf, the first specimen of deformity I had seen among the Arabs, led the way, with a leather bag of refreshments on his back. An old monk followed, with long white hair and beard, supporting himself by a staff; after him came a young novice from Corfu, who spoke Italian, and then Paul and myself. For some time the ascent was easy. Even since the establishment of the convent, it had been the business of the monks to improve the path to the top of the mountain; and for about twenty minutes we continued ascending by regular steps. In half an hour we came to a beautiful fountain under an overhanging rock. Besides the hallowed localities in and around the mon-

tain, consecrated by scenes of Bible history, almost every spot has some monkish legend, of which that connected with the fountain is a specimen. Taking a long draught from its stony bed, our younger companion began the story somewhat in the usual Eastern form. "Once there was a poor shoemaker" who, in making his pilgrimage to the holy mountain, on a hot day, sat down under the shade of the impending rock. He was an industrious man, and while resting himself, took out his cobbling materials, and began to cobbler; he was a good man, and while he sat there at his work, he thought of the wickedness of the world and its temptations, and how the devil was always roaming about after poor cobblers, and resolved to leave the world for ever, and live under that rock. There was no water near it then; but as soon as he had made this resolution, the water gushed forth, and a living fountain has remained there ever since. The same year there was a dispute between the Greek and Armenian patriarchs at Cairo, and the pacha gave notice that he would decide in favour of him who should perform a miracle. This was more than either had power to do; but the Greek dreamed one night of the poor cobbler, and the next morning dispatched a messenger to the mountain with a droneday, and a request that the holy man should come and perform a miracle. The cobbler was a modest man, and said he would be glad to make a pair of shoes for the patriarch, but could not perform a miracle. The messenger, however, insisted upon taking him to Cairo, where, roused into a belief of his own powers, he ordered a mountain to approach the city. The obedient mountain marched till it was told to stop, and there it stands to the present day.

In half an hour more we came to a little chapel dedicated to the Virgin, to which, some 200 or 300 years ago, certain holy men, who wished to separate themselves more completely from the world, had withdrawn from the convent, and here lived and died upon the mountain. The chapel had been fitted up several times, but the Bedouins had always entered and destroyed every thing it contained. The situation was well suited for retirement; quiet and isolated, but not dreary, and fitted for a calm and contemplative spirit. Paul was particularly struck with it, and in a moment of enthusiasm said he would like to end his days there; and, with his characteristic prudence, asked if he could get his meals from the convent. The monk did not approve his enthusiasm, and told him that his inspiration was of the devil, and not of God, but suddenly said that there were no hermits now; that all men thought too much of eating and drinking, and indulging in luxuries; sighed, kissed the cross, asked Paul for a cigar, and then walked on again. Passing through a defile of precipitous rocks, we soon reached a gate about three feet wide, where formerly, when pilgrimages to this place were more frequent, a guard was stationed, to whom it was necessary to show a permission from the superior of the convent. A little beyond this was another narrow passage secured by a door, where it was formerly necessary to show a pass from the keeper of the gate, and where a dozen men could make a good defence against a thousand. Soon after we entered a large open space, forming a valley surrounded on all sides by mountains; and on the left, high above the others, rose the lofty peak of Sinai. It is this part of the mountain which bears the sacred name of Horeb. In the centre, enclosed by a stone fence, is a tall cypress, the only tree on the mountain, planted by the monks more than 100 years ago. Near it is a fountain, called the Fountain of Elias, which the prophet dug with his own hands when he lived in the mountain, before he was ordered by the Lord to Jerusalem. According to the monks, the prophet is still living somewhere in the world, wandering about with Enoch, and preparing for the great final battle with Antichrist. A little above is an old church, with strong walls and iron doors, now falling and dilapidated, and containing a grotto, called the Grotto of Elias, which, according to the legend, formed the prophet's sleeping-chamber. I crawled into the rocky cell,

and, thanks to my travelling experience, which had taught me not to be fastidious in such matters, found the bedroom of the prophet by no means an uncomfortable place; often in the desert I would have been thankful for such a shelter.

Here our dwarf left us, and, continuing our ascent, the old monk still leading the way, in about a quarter of an hour we came to a table of rock standing boldly out, and running down almost perpendicularly an immense distance to the valley. I was expecting another monkish legend, and my very heart thrilled when the monk told me that this was the top of the hill on which Moses had sat during the battle of the Israelites and the Amalekites, while Aaron and Hur supported his uplifted hands, until the sun went down upon the victorious arms of his people. From the height I could see, clearly and distinctly, every part of the battle-ground, and the whole vale of Rephidim and the mountains beyond; and Moses, while on this spot, must have been visible to the contending parties from every part of the field on which they were engaged.

Some distance farther on, the old monk stopped, and prostrating himself before a stone, kissed it devoutly, and then told me its history. He said that the last time the monks in the convent were beset by the Arabs, when their communication with Cairo was cut off, and death by the sword or famine staring them in the face, the superior proposed that they should put on their holiest vestments, and, under the sacred banner of the cross, ascend in a body, and for the last time sing their Te Deum on the top of the mountain. On their return, at this stone they met a woman with a child, who told them that all their danger was over; and, in accordance with her words, when they returned to the convent they found the Arabs gone, and forty camels from Cairo laden with provisions standing under the walls. Since that time they had never been molested by the Arabs; "and there is no doubt," continued the old monk, "that the woman was the mother of God, and the child the Saviour of the world."

But away with monkish superstition. I stand upon the very peak of Sinai, where Moses stood when he talked with the Almighty. Can it be, or is it a mere dream? Can this naked rock have been the witness of that great interview between man and his Maker—where, amid thunder and lightning, and a fearful quaking of the mountain, the Almighty gave to his chosen people the precious tables of his law, those rules of infinite wisdom and goodness, which to this day best teach man his duty towards his God, his neighbour, and himself!

The scenes of many of the incidents recorded in the Bible are extremely uncertain. Historians and geographers place the garden of Eden, the paradise of our first parents, in different parts of Asia; and they do not agree upon the site of the Tower of Babel, the mountain of Ararat, and many of the most interesting places in the Holy Land; but of Sinai there is no doubt. This is the holy mountain, and among all the stupendous works of Nature, not a place can be selected more fitted for the exhibition of Almighty power. I have stood upon the summit of the giant Sinai, and looked over the clouds floating beneath it, upon the bold scenery of Sicily, and the distant mountains of Calabria; upon the top of Vesuvius, and looked down upon the waves of lava, and the ruined and half-recovered cities at its foot; but they are nothing compared with the terrific solitude and bleak majesty of Sinai. An observing traveller has well called it "a perfect sea of desolation." Not a tree, or shrub, or blade of grass, is to be seen upon the bare and rugged sides of innumerable mountains, heaving their naked summits to the skies, while the crumbling masses of granite around, and the distant view of the Syrian desert, with its boundless waste of sands, form the wildest and most dreary, the most terrific and desolate, picture that imagination can conceive.

The level surface of the very top, or pinnacle, is about sixty feet square. At one end is a single rock about twenty feet high, on which, as said the monk, the spirit of God descended, while in the crevice beneath, his fla-

voured servant received the tables of the law. There, on the same spot where they were given, I opened the sacred book in which those laws are recorded, and read them with a deeper feeling of devotion, as if I were standing nearer and receiving them more directly from the Deity himself.

The ruins of a church and convent are still to be seen upon the mountain, to which, before the convent below was built, monks and hermits used to retire, and, secluded from the world, sing the praises of God upon his chosen hill. Near this, also in ruins, stands a Mahommedan mosque; for on this sacred spot the followers of Christ and Mahommed have united in worshipping the true and living God. Under the chapel is a hermit's cell, where in the iron age of fanaticism the anchorite lingered out his days in fasting, meditation, and prayer.

In the East, the fruitful parent of superstition, occurred the first instances of monastic life. A single enthusiast withdrew himself from the society of his fellow-men, and wandered for years among the rocks and sands of the desert, devoting himself to the service of his Maker by the mistaken homage of bodily mortification. The deep humility of the wanderer, his purity and sincerity, and the lashes and stripes he inflicted upon his worn and haggard body, excited the warm imaginations of the Christians of the East. Others, tortured by the same overpowering consciousness of sin, followed his example, emulating each other in self-punishment; and he was accounted the most holy, and the most worthy to be received at the right hand of God, who showed himself most dead to all the natural feelings of humanity. The deserts of the Thebaid were soon covered with hermits; and more than 70,000 anchorites were wasting their lives in the gloomy wilds of Sinai, startling the solitude with the cries of their self-inflicted torture. The ruins of their convents are still to be seen upon the rudest mountain side, in the most savage chasm, or upon the craggiest top; and, strange as the feeling may seem, my very soul cleaved to the scene around me. I, too, felt myself lifted above the world, and its petty cares and troubles, and almost hurried into the wild enthusiasm which had sent the tenants of these ruined convents to live and die among the mountains.

Blame me not, reader, nor think me impious, that, on the top of the holy mountain of Sinai, half unconscious what I did, I fired at a partridge. The sound of my gun, ringing in frequent echoes from the broken and hollow rocks, startled and aroused me; and, chasing the bird down the mountain side, I again reached "the place in Horeb," and threw myself on the ground under the palm-tree, near the Fountain of Elias.

I always endeavoured to make my noonday meal near some rock or ruin, some tree or fountain; and I could not pass by the fountain of the prophet. My Arab dwarf had anticipated my wants; and now prepared some of the genuine Mocha, which every Arabian (and an Arabian only) knows how to prepare, exhaling an aroma that refreshes and invigorates the wearied frame; and, in the desert, a cordial more precious than the finest wines of France or Madeira. Seated under the palm-tree, monks, Bedouins, Paul, and myself, all together, eating our frugal meal of bread and fruit, accompanied with long draughts from the Fountain of Elias, I talked with the Bedouins about the mountain consecrated in the eyes of all true Mussulmans by the legend of Mahommed and his camel.

In one respect I was very unlucky in this journey. I had no guide-books. Having formed no definite plan in my wanderings, I never knew with what books to provide myself, and therefore carried none, trusting to chance for finding what I wanted. As might be supposed, when I needed them most it was utterly impossible to obtain any; and from the borders of Egypt to the confines of the Holy Land, I was in some measure groping in the dark: the Bible was my only guide; and though the best man could have in his pilgrimage through life, and after than any other in this particular journey, would have been exceedingly valuable, as obscure passages in the sacred book; and

particularly as referring, besides, to circumstances and traditions other than scriptural, connected with the holy mountain.

In the book of one of the modern travellers, I believe of the lamented Burckhardt, I remembered to have seen a reference to a tradition among the Mussulmans, that Mahommed had ascended the mountain on the back of his camel, and from its lofty summit had taken his departure to the seventh heaven, and that the prints of the beast's footsteps were still to be seen on the surface of the rock. I questioned the Arab about this story. In the more engrossing interest of the scene, I had forgotten to look for the prints of the camel's feet, and told him, with great truth, that I had examined every thing carefully, but had not seen them. The old monk, who had sat quietly munching his bread and figs, scandalised at my inquiring into such a profane story, and considering the holy mountain in a manner his property, broke out unceremoniously, and denounced it as a wicked invention of the Arabs, averring that every body knew that, before Mahommed got half way up, the camel stumbled, fell, and broke the neck of the Prophet. This was equally new and monstrous to the Arab, who swore that the legend was true, for it was written in the Koran, and that he himself had often seen the print of the foot; and he accounted for my not seeing it by the very sensible and satisfactory explanation that it was visible only to the eyes of true believers. The good father was completely roused by this obstinate resistance in the scandal; and a reckless Bedouin and an old Bulgarian monk, sitting by a fountain among the deserts of Sinai, were soon disputing with as much clamour and bitterness as if they had been brought up in the midst of civilisation, to harangue, from opposing pulpits, the preachers of the promises and the denouncers of the curses of rival churches. One thing the pious father especially insisted on: the strong point in his argument, and particularly ludicrous, as coming from such an old bundle of superstitions, was the impossibility of a camel's foot making an impression on stone; and, judging from this alone, one might have suspected him of having had in his youth some feeble glimmerings of common sense; but a few minutes after he told me the legend of Mount St Catharine.

Mount St Catharine is the great rival of Sinai in the range of mountains in the Arabian peninsula. They rise like giant twin brothers, towering above every other; and the only thing which detracts in the slightest degree from the awful supremacy of Sinai, is the fact that Mount St Catharine is somewhat the highest. The legend is, that in the early days of the Christian church the daughter of a king of Alexandria became converted. While her father remained a pagan, she tried to convert him; but, indignant at the attempt, he cast her into prison, where she was visited by the Saviour, who entered through the key-hole, and married her with a ring, which is now in the hands of the Empress of Russia. Her father cut her head off, and angels carried her body to the top of the mountain, and laid it on the rock. For centuries no one knew where it was deposited, the Christians believing that it had been carried up into heaven, until about two centuries ago, when a monk at the convent dreamed where it had been laid. The next morning he took his staff and climbed to the top of the mountain; and there, on the naked rock, fresh and blooming as in youthful beauty, after a death of more than a thousand years, he found the body of the saint. The monks then went up in solemn procession, and, taking up the body, bore it in pious triumph to the convent below, where it now lies in a coffin with a silver lid, near the great altar in the chapel, and receives the homage of all pious pilgrims.

It was nearly dark when I returned to the convent; and, in no small degree fatigued with the labours of the day, I again threw myself on the mat, and welcomed rest. In the evening the superior came to my room, and again we mingled the names of Greece and America. I was weary, and talked with the old man when I would rather have been asleep; but with his own hands he

drew mats and cushions around me, and made me so comfortable, that I could not refuse to indulge him with the rare luxury of conversation on the subject of his native land, and of the world from which he was shut out for ever. He was single-hearted and simple, or, perhaps I should rather say, simple and ignorant; I remember, for instance, when we had been embarrassed for a time by the absence of the younger monk who served as our interpreter, the old man told me very gravely, and as a new thing, which I could not be expected to know, but which he did not think the less of me for not knowing, that formerly, in the time of Adam, all mankind spoke but one tongue; and that men became wicked, and built a tower to reach to heaven (he had forgotten its name), and that God had destroyed it, and confounded the impious builders with a variety of tongues. I expressed my astonishment, as in duty bound, and denounced, in good set terms, the wickedness of our fathers, which now prevented us from enjoying at our ease the sweets of friendly converse.

Before breakfast the next morning he was with me again, with a striped abbas over his black gown, and a staff in his hand, prepared to accompany me outside the walls. I was surprised. He had told me that he had not left the convent for more than three years, when he had accompanied a great apostolic vicar, holding a distinguished situation in the church of France; and this was the last and only time he had ever bestowed such attention on a stranger. The kind-hearted old man intended it as an act of extraordinary kindness; I received it as such; and, as such, he told me I could mention it to my friends in America. Humble and unimportant as was that old monk in the great drama of life, I felt proud of his kindness—prouder than I should have been of a reception at a European court, or a greeting from royal lips—and my pride was the greater that I did not ascribe it to any merits of my own. My only claim was that possessed by all my countrymen—I was an American; my country had heard the cry of his in her distress, and from her seat across the broad Atlantic had answered that cry.

We passed, as before, through the subterranean passages into the garden. The miserable Bedouins who were gathered around outside, waiting for the bread which they received daily from the convent, surprised at the unexpected but welcome appearance of the superior, gathered around him, and kissed his hands and the hem of his garment. He had provided himself with an extra sack of bread, which he distributed among them, and which they seemed to receive with peculiar pleasure from his hands. The monks of Mount Sinai are now no longer obliged to have recourse to carnal weapons for protection; peace reigns between them and the Bedouins; and part of the price of peace is the distribution of 2500 rolls of bread among the poor around the mountain. I did not think so much of this price when I saw the bread, hard, black, and mouldy, and such as the meanest beggar in our country would not accept from the hand of charity. But the Bedouins took it, and thanked God and the monks for it.

Hurrying away from these grateful pensioners, we descended by the defile through which we had entered; and again passing the ruins of the house of Aaron, and the spot from which he preached to the assembled people, we came to a long flat stone, with a few holes indented in its surface, which the superior pointed out as that on which Moses threw down and broke the tablets of the law, when he descended from the mountain and found the Israelites worshipping the golden calf. About half an hour farther on was another stone much holier than this; at first I understood the interpreter that it was the petrification of the golden calf; but gathered, with some difficulty, from the superior, that it was the mould in which the head of the golden calf was run. He pointed out to me the prints of the head, ears, and horns, clear even to the eyes of a man of sixty; and told me the story of the golden calf somewhat differently from the Bible account. He said that the people, wanting another god, came up with one accord and threw their

golden ornaments upon that stone, and agreed by acclamation that when it was melted they would worship whatever should come out; three times it came out the head of a calf; and then they fell down and worshipped it.

Some distance farther on we passed on our right a Hebrew burying-ground—"The burial-place," said the superior, "of the Israelites who died in their forty years' wandering among the mountains of Sinai." The old man had heard these things so long, and had told them so often, and believed them so firmly, that it would have broken his heart—besides shaking his confidence in my Christian principles—if I had intimated the slightest doubt. I asked whether the Jews ever came in pilgrimage to the mountain of their fathers; and he told me that, four years ago, two Asiatic Jews had come disguised as Europeans, and attempted to pass themselves as Christians; "but," said the priest, with a vindictive spirit lighting his usually mild eye, "I detected them under their sheeps' clothing, and they did not stay long in the convent." Yet I remember seeing on the wall of the convent, and with no small degree of interest, the name of an American Jew.

Farther on, turning into a valley which opened between the mountains on the left, we came to a garden belonging to the convent, which presented a strange appearance in the midst of the surrounding desolation, producing all kinds of fruits; where one might almost wonder to see a blade of grass put forth, the orange, the date, the fig, and the vine, are growing in rich luxuriance. The soil is formed from the debris of rocks washed from the mountains; and thought too light for strong products, for fruit it is better than the rich valley of the Nile. Sitting under the shade of the fig-tree, the superior pointed out to me a rent in the mountain opposite, which, he said, was caused by an earthquake that had swallowed up two friends and servants of Moses, of whom I had never heard before, and who were so swallowed up for disobeying the orders of their earthly master.

The superior, unused to such a task as he had imposed upon himself, here completely gave out, and I left him panting under the shade of his fig-tree, while I went on to the Valley of Rephidim; and, passing another garden, came to the rock of Horeb, the stone which Moses struck with his rod, and caused the waters to gush out. The stone is about twelve feet high, and on one side are eight or ten deep gashes from one to three feet long, and from one to two inches wide, some of which were trickling with water. These gashes are singular in their appearance, though probably showing only the natural effect of time and exposure. They look something like the gashes in the bark of a growing tree, except that, instead of the lips of the gash swelling and growing over, they are worn and reduced to a polished smoothness. They are, no doubt, the work of men's hands, a clumsy artifice of the early monks to touch the hearts of pious pilgrims; but the monks of the convent, and the creek pilgrims who go there now, believe in it with as much honesty and sincerity as in the crucifixion.

Will the reader forgive me if I say that this rock had in my eyes an interest scarcely less than that which the rod of Moses gave it? Three names were written on it: one of a German, the second of an Englishman, and the third of my early friend, the same which I had seen above the Cataracts of the Nile. When, a few years since, he bade me farewell in my native city, little did I think that I afterwards should trace him beyond the borders of Egypt, and through the wilderness of Sinai, to his grave in Jerusalem!

Again I wrote my name under his, and, returning by the way I came, found the superior still sitting under the fig-tree, and, moving on, we soon reached the convent. He hurried away to his official duties, and I retired to my room. I staid there three or four hours, poring over the scriptural account of the scenes that hallowed the wilderness of Sinai, with an attention that no sound disturbed. Indeed, the stillness of the convent was at all times most extraordinary; day or night

not a sound was to be heard but the tolling of the bell for prayers, or occasionally the soft step of a monk stealing through the cloisters.

In the afternoon I lounged around the interior of the convent. The walls form an irregular quadrangle, of about 130 paces on each side, and, as I before remarked, it has the appearance of a small city. The building was erected by the Empress Helena, the mother of the first Christian emperor, and I might almost call her the mother of the Holy Land. Her pious heart sent her, with the same spirit which afterwards animated the crusaders, to search out the holy places referred to in the Bible; and when she found one, she erected a monument to mark it for the guidance of future Christians; and the pilgrim may see the fruits of her pious labours, from the mountain where God spake in thunder, down to the place where the cock crew when Peter denied his master. The convent is capable of containing several hundred people. It was originally built as a place of defence; but the necessity of keeping it fortified has passed away: a parcel of rusty guns are lying in a sort of armoury, and a few small cannon are frowning from the walls. The cells of the monks, compared with any thing else I had seen in the East, are exceedingly comfortable; on one side, raised about a foot from the floor, is a stone platform, on which the monk spreads his mat and coverlet, and the furniture includes a table, chairs, sometimes two or three books, and the fragment of a looking-glass. There are twenty-four chapels erected to different saints, in which prayers are said regularly in rotation. I went through them, but saw nothing to interest me until I came to the church of the convent. Here I was surprised to find the handsomest Greek church I had seen, except in Russia; the floor and steps were of marble; and distributed around in various places were pillars and columns, the works of ancient artists, plundered from heathen temples, and sent to this lonely spot in the desert by the active piety of the early Christian emperors. The convent was raised in honour of the transfiguration, and the dome of the altar contains a coarse but antique painting of the holy scene. In front, near the great altar, in a coffin covered with rich pails and a silver lid, are the bones of St Catharine, the patroness of the convent. Among the chapels, one, I remember, is dedicated to Constantine and Helena, and another to Justinian and his wife; but the great object of interest is the holy of holies, the spot where God appeared to Moses in the burning bush. A chapel is now erected over it; and the pilgrim, on entering, hears at this day almost the same words which God addressed to Moses, "Put thy shoes from off thy feet, for the ground whereon thou treadest is holy ground;" I pulled off my shoes, and followed my conductor. The place is now bedizened with Grecian ornaments; the rude simplicity of nature which beheld the interview between God and his servant, is utterly gone, and the burning bush is the last thing one would think of on the spot where it grew.

There are but few objects of interest besides. In one of the chapels are a copy of the Evangelists, written in letters of gold by the Emperor Theodosius, and portraits of the four evangelists and the twelve apostles, and all the psalms of David, written in an inconceivably small space by a young Virgin who came out and died in the desert.

The condition and character of the monks formed a subject of no little interest for my speculating observation; and I investigated their habits and dispositions as closely as bienséance and my inability for conversing with them, except through an interpreter, would permit. So far as I could judge, they seemed perfectly contented; but they were for the most part mere drones and beggars, doing little good for themselves or others, and living idly upon the misapplied bounty of Christian pilgrims. I do not mean to say that they were bad men; they were too simple to be bad; and if there was any harm in their nature, they had no temptation to do it, after all, the mere negative goodness which harm is not to be lightly spoken of, in a world

so full of restlessness and mischief as this of ours. Many of them had been a long time in the convent, some as much as twenty or thirty years, and one, who was now 105 years old, had been seventy-five years worshipping the Lord, after his fashion, at the foot of Sinai. Among them were a baker, shoemaker, and tailor; they baked, cooked, made and mended for themselves, and had but one other duty to perform, and that was four times daily to kneel down and pray. Nothing could be more dull and monotonous than their lives, and none but the most sluggish or the most philosophic spirit could endure it. They were philosophers without knowing it, and dozed away their existence in one unvarying round of prayer, and meals, and sleep. Their discipline was not rigid, save in one particular, and that a matter in regard to which there has been much discussion with us; they never ate meat; no animal food of any kind is permitted to enter the walls of the convent. During all the various periods of their abode in the convent, some thirty, some forty, and one more than seventy-five years, not one of them had eaten a particle of animal food; and yet I never saw more healthy-looking men. Hardier men I have seen, for they are indolent in their habits, take but little exercise, and in most cases show a strong disposition to corpulency; but I had some little opportunity of testing their ability to endure fatigue; and though the superior soon walked himself out of breath, the monk who guided us up the mountain, and who was more than sixty years old, when he descended, after a hard day's labour, seemed less tired than either Paul or myself. I am aware that climate may make a difference; but, from my own observation and experience, I am perfectly satisfied that, even in our climate, invalids and persons of sedentary habits, and, indeed, all except labouring men, would be much benefited by a total abstinence from animal food. I have travelled for a week at a time, night and day, not under the mild sky of the East, but in the rough climate of Russia, and found myself perfectly able to endure the fatigue upon bread and milk diet; and I have been told that the Tartars who ride post from Constantinople to Bagdad in an incredibly short time, never sleeping, except on horseback, during the whole of their immense journey rigidly abstain from any thing more solid and nutritious than eggs.

The night of my return from the top of Sinai I was awake when the bell tolled for midnight prayers: and, wrapping myself in my Arab cloak, took a small lamp in my hand, and, groping my way along the passage, descended to the chapel, where the monks were all assembled. I leaned behind a protecting pillar, and watched their proceedings; and it was an event of no common interest, thus, at the dead hour of night, to be an unobserved witness of their sincerity, and earnest though erroneous devotion. There was not one among them who did not believe he was doing God good service, and that his works would find acceptance at the throne of grace, and obtain for him that blessed immortality which we are all seeking.

CHAPTER XVII.

Diet of the Monks.—Advantages of Abstinence.—Scruples Overcome.—A mysterious Brother.—The Convent Burial-place.—Strange Charnel-houses.—Death in a Mask.—Familiarity breeds Contempt.—A Man of two Centuries.—Doubts and Fears.—Parting Gifts.—The Farewell.

The next day was Sunday, and early in the morning the superior sent for me to come down and take my meal with the holy brotherhood. The monks were all at the table, and it was the first time I had had so good an opportunity of seeing them together. They were about thirty in number, mostly old men with long white beards, all Greeks, and some with faces as noble as Grecian chisel ever traced. There was not a beard at table less than eight inches long; and my own, though it would have been rather distinct at home, blushed more than its natural red at its comparative insignificance. The table was a long naked board: the vessels were all of

metal, and before each man were a wooden spoon, and a drinking-cup in the form of a porringer. It was Lent, the season of forty or fifty days' fasting, during which even fish, eggs, and oil, are prohibited. A large basin of boiled beans was set before each of the monks; and, besides this, there were black olives, beans in water, salad, vinegar, salt, dates, and bread. My companions had never been pampered with luxuries, and ate their bread and beans with as keen a relish as if they were feasting on turtle and venison, and drank their water as freely as though it were Tokay or Burgundy. The meal was eaten in silence, all appearing of opinion that they came simply to eat; and the only unusual circumstance I remarked was the civility of my immediate neighbours in pushing the tempting viands before me. It was curious to see how they found the way to their mouths through such a wilderness of beard, and the spoon disappearing in a huge red opening, leaving the handle projecting from a bush of hair. The room in which we ate was perhaps sixty feet long, having at one end a chapel and altar, and a reading-desk close by, in which, during the whole of the meal, a monk was reading aloud from the lives of the saints. After dinner the monks all rose, and wiping their mouths, walked in a body to the foot of the altar, and two of them commenced burning incense. One of my neighbours took me by the hand, and led me up with them. There they knelt, prayed, and chanted, and went through a long routine of ceremonies, in which, so far as it was practicable, they carried me with them. They could not get me up and down as fast as they moved themselves, but they flung the incense at me as hard as at the worthiest of them all. I supposed this to be a sort of grace after meat, and that there it would end; but to my surprise and great regret, I found that this was merely preparatory to the administration of the sacrament. It was the second time I had been placed in the same situation; and the second time, and even more earnestly than before, I wished for that state of heart which, according to the notions of its solemnity in which I had been brought up, would have permitted me to join in the sacred rite. I refused the consecrated bread, and the monk, after pausing some moments, apparently in astonishment, passed on to the next. After he had completed the circle, the superior crossed and brought him back again to me; I could not wound the feelings of the good old man, and ate the consecrated bread and drank the wine. May God forgive me if I did wrong; but, though rigid censors may condemn, I cannot believe that I incurred the sin of "the unworthy partaker" by yielding to the benevolent importunity of the kind old priest. After this we walked out on the terrace, under the shade of some venerable grape-vines, and sitting down along the wall, took coffee. The reading-desk was brought out, and the same monk continued reading for more than two hours.

I had noticed that monk before; for he was the same who had conducted me through the church, had visited me in my room, and I had seen him in his cell. He was not more than thirty-five, and his face was as perfect as art could make it; and the sunbeams occasionally glancing through the thick foliage of the vines, and lighting up his pale and chiselled features and long black beard, made him one of those perfect figures for a sketch which I had often dreamed of, but had never seen. His face was thin, pale, and emaciated; the excitement of reading gave it a hectic flush, and he looked like a man who, almost before the springtime of life was over, had drained the cup of bitterness to its dregs. If I am not deceived, he had not always led so peaceful and innocent a life, and could unfold a tale of stirring incident, of wild and high excitement, and perhaps of crime. He was from the island of Tenos, but spoke Italian. I had talked with him of the islands of Greece, and the ports in the Mediterranean and the Black Sea, many of which he seemed familiar; and then he spoke of the snares and temptations of the world, and his freedom from them in the convent; and, above all, of the perils to which men are exposed by the wiles and witcheries of

the sex; and I could not but imagine that some beautiful Grecian girl, not less false than fair, had driven him to the wilderness. One of the other monks told me that it was about the time when the last of the pirates were swept from the Mediterranean that the young islander had buried himself in the walls of the convent. They told me, too, that he was rich, and would give all he had to the fraternity. Poor fellow! they will soon come into possession.

In the garden of the convent is the cemetery of the monks. Though not of a particularly melancholy humour, I am in a small way given to meditation among the tombs; and in many of the countries I have visited, the burial-places of the dead have been the most interesting objects of examination. The superior had promised to show me his graves; and something in the look of the reader reminding me of death and burial, I now told the old man of his promise, and he hobbled off to get the key; for it appeared that the cemetery was not to be visited without his special permission. At the end of a long arbour of grape-vines, a narrow staircase cut in the rock, which I had not seen before, led down to an excavated square of about twenty feet; on the left of which was a small door opening into a vault, where formerly the bodies of the dead monks were laid on an iron bedstead, and there suffered to remain until all the corruptible part was gone, and only the dry bones remained. Now they are buried for about three years, or as long as may be necessary to effect the same object; and when the flesh and muscles have disappeared, the bones are deposited in the great cemetery, the door of which is directly opposite. Within the door is a small ante-chamber, containing a divan and a portrait of some saint who wandered eighteen years in the desert without meat or drink. From this the door opens into the cemetery, which was so different from any I had ever seen, that I started back on the threshold with surprise. Along the wall was an excavation about thirty feet in length, but of what depth I could not tell. It was enclosed by a fence, which was three or four feet above the ground, and filled with human skulls; and in front, extending along the whole width of the chamber, was a pile of bones about twenty feet high, and running back I could not tell how far. They were very regularly disposed in layers, the feet and shoulders being placed outward alternately, and by the side of the last skeleton was a vacant place for the next that should be ready.

I had seen thousands of Egyptian mummies, and the catacombs of Chioff, the holy city of Russia, where the bodies of the saints are laid in rows, in open coffins, clothed in their best apparel, and adorned with gold and jewels; and in that extraordinary burial-place I had seen, too, a range of small glasses in a dead stone wall, where wild and desperate fanatics had made their own tombs, with their own hands building themselves in an upright position against the walls, leaving a small hole open in front by which to receive their bread and water; and when they died, the small opening was closed with a piece of glass, and the body of the saint was left thus buried. I had seen the catacombs of the Capuchin convent at Syracuse, where the bodies of the monks are dried and laid in open coffins, or fixed in niches in the walls, with their names labelled on their breasts; and in the vault of the convent of Palermo I had seen the bodies of nobles and ladies, the men arranged upright along the walls, dressed as in life, with canes in their hands and swords by their sides; and the noble ladies of Palermo lying in state, their withered bodies clothed in silks and satins, and adorned with gold and jewels; and I remember one among them, who, if then living, would have been but twenty, who two years before had shone in the bright constellation of Sicilian beauty, and, lovely as a light from heaven, had led the dance in the royal palace; I saw her in the same white dress which she had worn at the ball, complete even to the white slippers, the belt around her waist, and the jewelled mockery of a watch hanging at her side, as if she had not done with time for ever; her face was bare, the skin

dry, black, and shrivelled, like burnt paper; the cheeks sunken; the rosy lips a piece of discoloured parchment; the teeth horribly projecting; the nose gone; a wreath of roses around her head, and a long tress of hair curling in each hollow eye. I had seen these things, and even these did not strike me so powerfully as the charnel-house at the convent of Mount Sinai. There was something peculiarly and terribly revolting in this promiscuous heaping together of mortal relics; bones upon bones; the old and young; wise men and fools; good men and bad; martyrs and murderers; masters and servants; bold, daring, and ambitious men—men who would have plucked bright honour from the moon—lying pell-mell with cowards and knaves. The superior told me that there were more than 30,000 skeletons in the cemetery—literally an army of dead men's bones. Besides the pile of skulls and bones, in a chamber adjoining were the bones of the archbishops, in open boxes, with their names and ages labelled on them, and those of two sons of a king of Persia, who came hither on a pilgrimage and died in the convent; their iron shirts, the only dress they wore on their long journey from their father's court, are in the same box. Other skeletons were lying about, some in baskets, and some arranged on shelves, and others tied together and hanging from the roof. In one corner were the bones of St Stephen—not the martyr who was stoned to death at Jerusalem, but some pious anchorite of later and less authentic canonization.

As to the effect upon the mind of such burial-places as this, or the catacombs to which I have referred, I can say from my own experience that they destroy altogether the feeling of solemnity with which we look upon the grave. I remember once, in walking through long rows of dead, arranged like statues in niches of the wall, I remarked to the friar who accompanied me that he promenaded every day among his old acquaintances; and he stopped and opened a box, and took out piecemeal the bones of one who, he said, had been his closest friend, and laughed as he pulled them about, and told me of the fun and jokes they two had had together.

Returning to the convent, and passing through the great chapel on the way to my room, I met one who, in the natural course of things, must soon be borne to the charnel-house I had just left. It was the aged monk of whom I have before spoken; he whose years exceeded by thirty-five the seventy allotted to man. I had desired an opportunity of speaking with him, and was curious to know the workings of his mind. The superior had told me that he had outlived every feeling and affection; that he spent all his time in prayer, and had happily arrived at a new and perfect state of innocence; and I remember, that after comparing him to the lamb, and every other emblem of purity, the good superior ended, with a simplicity that showed his own wonderful ignorance of human nature, by declaring that the old monk was as innocent as a young girl. It occurred to me that this might be a dubious comparison; but as I knew that the monastic life of the old eulogist, and his long seclusion from the world, had prevented him from acquiring any very accurate knowledge of young girls, I understood him to mean the perfection of innocence.

I looked upon the old monk with exceeding interest, as a venerable relic of the past. For more than seventy-five years he had wandered around the holy mountain, prostrating himself daily at the foot of the altar, and, with three generations of men, had sung the praises of God under the hallowed peak of Sinai. I approached him, and told him my pleasure in knowing so old and only a man, and the wonder with which his story could be heard in my own far-distant country. But the old man listened with impatience. The other monks were rather pleased when I stopped to talk with them, but he seemed anxious to get away, and stood, as I supposed, with a sigh on his heart, as if pleading some religious duty as an excuse for his haste; but it turned out that he was only complaining of the emptiness of his stomach, and his hungering for his evening meal. I was

this monkish Methuselah marred and effaced by so matter-of-fact an incident; but I describe him as I found him, not as I would have wished him to be.

Ever since I had left Cairo, I had been troubled with misgivings touching my ability to undertake the journey by Petra. I had hoped to recruit during my few days' residence at the convent, but I was obliged to acknowledge to myself that I was, to say the least, no better. The route through Idumea was difficult and dangerous, requiring all the energy of mind and body that perfect health could give; and a wrong movement from the point where I now was might place me in a position in which the loudest cry of distress could never be heard. It was not necessary to inflict upon the reader all my hesitations; it is enough to say, that with one of the strongest efforts of resolution I was ever called upon to make, I abandoned my cherished project of visiting Petra and the land of Idumea; and, with a heavy heart, wrote to Mr Gliddon that I was a broken reed, and was bound on the safe and direct road to Gaza. My kind friend the superior would not hear of me leaving the convent; but I resisted his importunities, and laughingly told him I did not like that unchristian way of burial, cutting up and piling away a man's bones like sticks of firewood to dry. Finding me resolved, he took me to his room, and gave me from his little store of treasures some shells and petrifications (which I throw away when out of his sight), engravings of Mount Sinai, and incidents of which it has been the scene, the rudest and most unaccountable conceptions that ever were imagined, and a small box of manna, the same, as he religiously believed, which fed the Israelites during their sojourn in the wilderness. He gave me, too, a long letter, written in modern Greek, and directed to the governor of Gaza, certifying that I was a pilgrim from America; that I had performed all the duties of the pilgrimage, and was now travelling to the holy city of Jerusalem. The letter contained, also, a warm and earnest recommendation to all the Greek convents in the Holy Land to receive and comfort, feed and clothe, and help and succour me, in case of need. Last of all, he put on my finger a ring of the simplest form and substance, and worthy to accompany the palmers' staff of an older age. Every pilgrim to Mount Sinai receives one of these rings; and like the green turban of the Mussulman, which distinguishes the devout hadji who has been to Mecca, among the Christians of the East it is the honoured token of a complete and perfect pilgrimage.

At eight o'clock in the morning the whole convent was in commotion, preparing for my departure. My old Bedouin guide had been out among his tribe, and arrived the night before with three times as many men and camels as I wanted, ready to conduct me to Akaba or Gaza. I took my leave of the holy brotherhood, who now sped me on my way as kindly and warmly as they had welcomed me on my arrival; and, after a long and most affectionate parting with the good old superior, who told me that in all probability he should never see me again, but should always remember me, and begged me not to forget him—assuring me that there in the desert I always had a home, and telling me that if, when I returned to my own country, misfortune should press upon me, and I should find my kindred gone and friends standing aloof, I must shake the dust from off my feet, and come back and live with him in the wilderness—I fastened the rope around me, and was let down for the last time to the foot of the convent-wall. A group of Bedouins, beggars, and dependents upon the charity of the convent, gathered around, and invoked blessings upon me as I started. Twice since my arrival there had been rain. In that dry and thirsty desert, every drop of water falls upon the earth like precious ointment, and "welcome," says the Arab, "is the stranger who brings us rain."

I turned my back upon the rising sun, and felt by comparison on my homeward way; but a long journey was still before me; I had still to cross "the great and terrible desert" of the Bible, which spread before the wandering Israelites its dreary and eternal sands, from the base of Sinai to the Promised Land.

CHAPTER XVIII.

The Caravan.—A sudden Change of Purpose.—Perils of a Storm.
—Comfortless Repentance.—Solitude.—A Woman and a Chase.
—A Patriarchal Feast.—Condition of the Arab Women.—Hospitality.—No refusing a good Offer.—A Dilemma.

My caravan consisted of five camels, four Arabs, Paul, and myself. We moved silently down the valley, and I tried hard to fasten my thoughts on Gaza, the strong city of the Philistines, the city of Delilah and Samson, and to amuse my discontented spirit with imagining the gates which he carried away, and the temple which he pulled down; but it would not do—Petra, the rock of Edom, the excavated city, was uppermost in my mind. We had been marching in perfect silence about four hours, and I was sitting carelessly on my dromedary, thinking of every thing but what I saw, when Toualeb pointed to a narrow opening in the mountain as the road to Akaba. I raised my head unconsciously, and it struck me, all of a sudden, that I was perfectly recovered, and fit for any journey. It was a day such as can only be seen in the mountainous desert of Arabia, presenting a clearness and purity in the atmosphere, and a gentle freshness in the air, which might almost bring to life a dying man. I stretched myself and brandished my Nubian club; my arm seemed nerved with uncommon vigour; I rose in my saddle strong as the slayer of the Philistines, and, turning the head of my dromedary towards the opening in the mountains, called out briefly and decidedly, to "Akaba and Petra." Paul was astonished; he took the pipe from his mouth, and for a moment paused; then knocking out the ashes, he slipped from his dromedary and ran up to the side of mine, looking up in my face with an expression of countenance that seemed to intimate strong suspicions of my sanity. After gazing at me as steadfastly as he could without being impertinent, he went away, still apparently in doubt, and I soon saw him following with Toualeb, in earnest conversation. Toualeb was even more astonished than Paul. The Arabs are not used to any of these mercurial changes of humour; and, according to their notion, if a man sets out for Gaza, he must go to Gaza: they cannot conceive how one in his right reason can change his mind; and Toualeb would have been very easily persuaded that an evil spirit was hurrying me on, particularly as, like Paul, from the beginning he had opposed my going by Petra and Idumea. Finding me resolute, however, he soon began to run, and brought back the camels, which were some distance in advance, and for several hours we moved on in perfect silence through the wild and rugged defile.

The mountains on each side were high, broken, and rugged, and ever presenting the same appearance of extreme old age. The road, if road it might be called, was rougher than any I had yet travelled; it was the only opening among the mountains by which we could pass at all, made, by the hand of Nature, and so encumbered with fallen rocks that it was exceedingly difficult for our camels to advance. I did not intend to push far that day; and a little before dark I proposed to encamp in a narrow pass between the mountains, where there was barely room to pitch our tents; but appearances threatened rain, and Toualeb, pointing to the accumulation of stones and rocks which had fallen from the mountain and been washed through the pass, told me it would be a dangerous place to spend the night in. There was no earth to drink the falling rain, and, pouring down the hard and naked mountain sides, it formed a torrent in the pass, which hurried and dashed along, gathering force at every moment, and carrying with it bodies of sand and stones that would have crushed to atoms any obstruction they might meet in their resistless progress. I felt at once the force of the suggestion; and as I had no idea of being disturbed in the night by such a knock at the door of my tent as one of these gigantic missiles would have made, we kept on our difficult way. At dark we were still in the ravine. Toualeb was right in his apprehensions; for some time before we reached the end of the pass the rain was falling in torrents, the rocks and stones were washing

under our feet, and we heard the loud roar of thunder, and saw the forked lightning play among the mountain-tops. It was two hours after dark before we reached a place where it was prudent to encamp. We pitched our tent in the open valley; the thunder was rumbling, and ever and anon bursting with a terrific crash among the riven mountains, and the red lightning was flashing around the hoary head of Sinai. It was a scene for a poet or painter; but, under the circumstances, I would have given all its sublimity for a pair of dry pantaloons. Thunder and lightning among mountains are exceedingly sublime, and excellent things to talk about in a ball-room or by the fireside; but my word for it, a man travelling in the desert has other things to think of. Every thing is wet and sloppy; the wind catches under his tent before he can get it pinned down; and when it is fastened, and he finds his tight canvass turning the water like a cemented roof, and begins to rub his hands and feel himself comfortable, he finds but the beginning of trouble in a wet mat and coverlet.

I was but poorly prepared for a change like this, for I had been so long used to a clear, unclouded sky, that I almost considered myself beyond the reach of the changing elements. It was the beauty of the weather more than any thing else that had tempted me to turn off from the road to Gaza; and, hardly equal to this change of scene, my heart almost sunk within me. I reproached myself as if for a wilful and unjustifiable disregard of prudence, and no writer on moral duties could have written a better lecture than I inflicted upon myself that evening. In wet clothes, I was literally sitting on the stool of repentance. Drooping and disheartened, I told Paul that I was already punished for my temerity, and the next morning I would go back and resume the road to Gaza. For the night, however, there was but one thing to be done, and that was to sleep if I could, and sleep I did. A man who rides all day upon a dromedary must sleep, come what may, and even thunder among the mountains of Sinai cannot wake him. Daylight brought back my courage; the storm was over; the sun was shining brightly as I ever saw it even in the East; and again there was the same clear and refreshing atmosphere that had beguiled me from my prudent resolution. I, too, was changed again; and in answer to the suggestion of Paul, that we should retrace our steps, I pointed towards Akaba, and gave the brief and emphatic order—"Forward!"

We continued for several hours along the valley, which was closely bounded on either side by mountains, not high, but bare, cracked, and crumbling into fragments. The tops had apparently once been lofty and pointed, but time, and the action of the elements, had changed their character. The summits had crumbled and fallen, so as to expose on every side a rounded surface, and the idea constantly present to my mind was, that the whole range had been shaken by an Almighty hand—shaken so as to break the rugged surface of the mountains, but not with sufficient force to dash them into pieces; I could not help thinking that, with another shock, the whole mass would fall in ruins. I had often remarked the silence and stillness of the desert; but never had I been so forcibly impressed with this peculiarity as since I left the convent. The idea was constantly present to my mind, "How still, how almost fearfully still!" The mountains were bare of verdure; there were no shrubs or bushes, and no rustling of the wind, and the quiet was like that of the ocean in a perfect calm, when there is not a breath of air to curl a wave or shake the smallest fold in the lazy sail that hangs useless from the yard. Occasionally we disturbed a hare or a partridge, but we had not met a human being since we left the convent. Once we saw the track of a solitary dromedary, the prints of his feet deeply bedded in the sand, as if urged by one hurrying with hot haste; perhaps some Bedouin robber flying to his tent among the mountains with the plunder of some desert victim. We followed it for more than an hour, and when we lost sight of it on the rocky road, I felt as if we were more lonely than before.

I was thinking what an incident it would be in the life of one used to the hurrying bustle of steam-boats and rail-roads, to travel for days through this oldest of countries without meeting a living being; and as far as I could understand, it might well be so; there was no trade even for small caravans, and years passed by without any person, even an Arab, travelling this road. Toualeb had been over it but once, and that was ten years before, when he accompanied M. Laborde on his way to Petra. I knew that there were Bedouin tents among the mountains, but, unless by accident, we might pass through without seeing any of them; and I was speculating on the chances of our not meeting a single creature, when Paul cried out that he saw a woman; and soon after repeating the exclamation, dismounted and gave chase. Toualeb ran after him, and in another moment or two I caught a glimpse and followed.

I have before mentioned that, among these barren and desolate mountains, there was frequently a small space of ground, near some fountain or deposit of water, known only to the Arabs, capable of producing a scanty crop of grass to pasture a few camels and a small flock of sheep or goats. There the Bedouin pitches his tent, and remains till the scanty product is consumed; and then packs up his household goods, and seeks another pasture-ground. The Bedouins are essentially a pastoral people; their only riches are their flocks and herds, their home is in the wide desert, and they have no local attachments; to-day they pitch their tent among the mountains, to-morrow in the plain; and wherever they plant themselves for the time, all that they have on earth, wife, children, and friends, are immediately around them. In fact, the life of the Bedouin, his appearance and habits, are precisely the same as those of the patriarchs of old. Abraham himself, the first of the patriarchs, was a Bedouin, and 4000 years have not made the slightest alteration in the character and habits of this extraordinary people. Read of the patriarchs in the Bible, and it is the best description you can have of pastoral life in the East at the present day.

The woman whom we had pursued belonged to the tent of a Bedouin not far from our road, but completely hidden from our view; and when overtaken by Toualeb, she recognised in him a friend of her tribe, and in the same spirit, and almost in the same words which would have been used by her ancestors 4000 years ago, she asked us to her tent, and promised us a lamb or a kid for supper. Her husband was stretched on the ground in front of his tent, and welcomed us with an air and manner that belonged to the desert, but which a king on his throne could not have excelled. He was the embodied personification of all my conceptions of a patriarch. A large loose frock, a striped handkerchief on his head, bare legs, sandals on his feet, and a long white beard, formed the outward man. Almost immediately after we were seated, he took his shepherd's crook, and, assisted by his son, selected a lamb from the flock for the evening meal; and now I would fain prolong the illusion of this pastoral scene. To stop at the door of an Arab's tent, and partake with him of a lamb or kid prepared by his hospitable hands, all sitting together on the ground, and provided with no other implements than those which Nature gave us, is a picture of primitive and captivating simplicity; but the details were such as to destroy for ever all its poetry, and take away all relish for patriarchal feasts. While we were taking coffee, the lamb lay bleating in our ears, as if conscious of its coming fate. The coffee drunk, and the pipe smoked, our host arose and laid his hand upon the victim; the long sword which he wore over his shoulder was quickly drawn; one man held the head, and another the hind legs; and, with a rapidity almost inconceivable, it was killed and dressed, and its smoking entrails, yet curling with life, were broiling on the fire.

I was the guest of the evening, and had no reason to complain of the civility of my entertainer; for, with the air of a well-bred host, and an eagerness to boot, he drew from his bag one of the daintiest pieces, about half in length, and rolling one end between

the palms of his hands to a tapering point, broke off about a foot and handed it to me. Now I was by no means dainty. I could live upon the coarsest fare, and all the little luxuries of tables, knives and forks, were of very little moment in my estimation. I was prepared to go full length in this patriarchal feast. But my indifference was not proof against the convivial elegances of my companions; and as I saw yard after yard disappear, like long strings of macaroni, down their capacious throats, I was cured of all poetical associations and my appetite together.

In the tent of the Arabian patriarch, woman, the pride, the ornament, and the charm of domestic life, is the mere household drudge. In vain may one listen for her light footstep, or look to find her by the side of her natural lord, giving a richer charm to the hospitality he is extending to a stranger. It would repay one for much of the toil and monotony of a journey in the desert, if, when by chance he found himself at a Bedouin tent, he could be greeted by her sunny smile. Dark and swarthy as she is, and poor and ignorant, it would pay the traveller for many a weary hour to receive his welcome from the lips of an Arabian girl. But this the customs of the tribes forbid. When the stranger approaches, the woman retires; and so completely is she accustomed to this seclusion, that, however closely he may watch, he can never catch her even peeping at him from behind a screen or partition of the tent; curiosity, which in civilised life is so universally imputed to the daughters of Eve, seems entirely unknown to the sex in this wild region. Nor is this the worst of her lot. Even when alone, the wife of the Bedouin is not regarded as his equal: the holy companionship of wedded life has between them no existence. Even when no guest is present, she never eats with him. I have seen the father and sons sit down together, and when they had withdrawn from the tent, the mother and daughters came in to what was left. Away, then, with all dreams of superior happiness in this more primitive condition of society. Captivating as is the wild idea of roving abroad at will, unfettered by the restraints of law or of conventional observances, the meanest tenant of a log-hut in our western prairies has sources of happiness which the wandering Arab can never know. A spirit of perfect weariness and dissatisfaction with the world might drive a man to the desert, and, after having fallen into the indolent and mere animal habits of savage life, he might find it difficult to return to the wholesome restraints and duties of society; but I am satisfied that it is sheer affectation or ignorance in which a member of the civilised family sighs, or pretends to sigh, for the imagined delights of an untried freedom. For my own part, I had long been satisfied of this truth, and did not need the emulative evidence of my visit to the Bedouin's tent. He would have had me sleep under its shelter; but I knew that in all the Bedouin tents there were multitudes of enemies to rest—creatures that murder sleep; and I preferred the solitude of my own.

One word as to the hospitality of the Arabs. I had read beautiful descriptions of its manifestation, and in some way or other had gathered up the notion that the Bedouin would be offended by an offer to reward his hospitality with a price; but, feeling naturally anxious not to make a blunder on either side of a question so delicate, I applied to my guide Toualeb for information on the subject. His answer was brief and explicit. He said there was no obligation to give or pay, it being the custom of the Bedouins (among friendly tribes) to ask the wayfaring man into his tent, give him food and shelter, and send him on his way in the morning; that I could give or not, as I pleased; but, that, if I did not, the hospitable host would wish his lamb alive again; and from the exceeding satisfaction with which that estimable person received my parting gift, I am very sure that in this instance, at least, I did better in taking Toualeb's knowledge of his people for my guide than I should have done by acting upon what I had read in books. It may be that, if I had gone among them poor and friendless, I should have been received in the same

manner, and nothing would have been expected or received from me; but I am inclined to think, from what I saw afterwards, that in such case the lamb would have been spared for a longer term of existence, and the hospitality confined to a dip into the dish and a mat at the door of the tent.

Early in the morning we left the tent of our Bedouin landlord. We were still among mountains; at every moment a new view presented itself, wild, fanciful, and picturesque; and in the distance was still visible the long range of dark mountains bordering the Red Sea. Our course was now directly for this sea, but the mountain range appeared so contiguous and unbroken that there seemed no way of getting to it but by crossing their rugged summits. There was a way, however; an opening which we could not distinguish at so great a distance, and for some time Toualeb was at a loss. He was so purlblind that he could scarcely distinguish me from one of his dark companions, yet he could read the firmament like a book, and mark the proportions of the almost shapeless mountains; but he was uncertain how to hit precisely the opening by which we must pass through. There was no danger of our losing ourselves, and the only hazard was that of wasting a day in the search; but, fortunately, at the commencement of our perplexity, we came upon a Bedouin whose tent was at the foot of the mountain; and, under his instructions, we pushed on with confidence and ultimate success.

CHAPTER XIX.

Evening Amusements.—A Trial of the Feelings.—A Disappointment.—A Santon of the Desert.—An Arab Fisherman.—Turkish Costume.—A potent Official.—A Comfortless Sick-room.—A Visit from the Sheikh.—Interested Friendship.—Akaba.—The El Alouins.—Questionable Piety.

It was late in the afternoon when our little caravan entered the narrow opening, presenting itself like a natural door between precipitous rocks several hundred feet in height. Passing this, and continuing onward to a vast amphitheatre, or hollow square of lofty rocks through a larger opening on our left, we again saw the dark waters of the Red Sea. About midway across I dismounted from my dromedary to survey the scene around me; and among the many of high interest presented to the traveller in the wilderness of Sinai, I remember none more striking and impressive. It was neither so dreary and desolate, nor so wild and terrible, as others I had seen, but different from all. The door by which we entered was undistinguishable, the rocks in the background completely closing it to the sight; on all sides except towards the sea, and forming almost a perfect square, were the naked faces of the rock, lofty, smooth, and regular, like the excavated sides of an ancient quarry, and quiet to that extraordinary and indescribable degree of which I have already spoken. Descending towards the opening that led to the sea, directly under us was an extensive and sandy plain, reaching to its very margin; and nearly opposite, rising abruptly from the clear water, a long unbroken range of steep and rugged mountains, their dark irregular outline finely contrasted with the level surface at their feet, while the sea itself extended on the right and left as far as the eye could reach in that clear atmosphere; but the first stage of my journey, the head of the gulf, and the little fortress of Akaba, were still invisible.

We rode about an hour along the shore, passing at a distance the tents of some Bedouins; and about an hour before dark, encamped in a grove of wild palm-trees, so near the sea that the waves almost reached the door of my tent. When the moon rose, I walked for an hour along the shore, and, musing upon the new scenes which every day was presenting me, picked up some shells and bits of coral as memorials of the place. I am no stargazer, but I had learned to look up at the stars; and though I knew most of them merely by sight, I felt an attraction towards them as faces I had seen at home;

while the Great Bear with his pointers, and the North Star, seemed my particular friends.

Returning to my tent, I found my Bedouins, with some strangers from the tents which we had passed, sitting round a fire of the branches of palm-trees, smoking, and telling stories as extravagant as any in the Arabian Nights' Entertainments. I sat down with them a few moments, then entered my tent, and lay down on my mat on the very shore of the sea, and was lulled to sleep by the gentle murmur of its waters.

In the morning Paul told me that there was a strange Arab outside, who wanted to see me. When we first came down from the mountain on the preceding day, a Bedouin had come out and requested me to turn aside and visit a sick man in his tent. In their perfect ignorance of the healing art, the Arabs believe every stranger to be a hakim; and so great is their confidence in the virtue of medicine, and so great their indifference to the hands from which they receive it, that the path of the traveller is constantly beset with applications from the sick or their friends. I had been so often besought and entreated to cure blindness, deafness, and other maladies beyond even the reach of medical skill, that now I paid little attention to such applications; and when this last request was made, after inquiring into the symptoms of the case, I told the messenger that I could do the sick man no good, and passed on. This morning Paul told me that the patient himself had come over during the night, and was then at the door, begging me to cure him. Paul had told him of my utter inability, but he would not be satisfied; and when I went out of my tent, he was sitting directly before the door, a thin, ghastly figure; and opening his mouth and attempting an inarticulate jabber, there fell out a tongue so festored to the very throat, that the sight of it made me sick. I told him that it was utterly out of my power to help him; that I knew no more of the healing art than he did himself; and that the only advice I could give him was to endeavour to get to Cairo, and put himself under the hands of a physician. I shall never forget the poor fellow's look, and almost blamed myself for not giving him some simple preparation, which might have cheated him, at least for a few days, with the hope that he might escape the tomb to which he was hurrying. His hands fell lifeless by his side, as if he had heard a sentence of death; he gave me a look which seemed to say that it was all my fault, and fell senseless on the ground. His two companions lifted him up; his faithful dromedary knelt to receive him; and as he turned away, he cast a reproachful glance towards me, which made me almost imagine myself guilty of his death. I have no doubt that, long before this, the poor Arab is dead, and that in his dying moments, when struggling with the king of terrors, he has seen in his distracted visions the figure of the hard-hearted stranger, who, as he thought, might have saved him, but would not.

Anxious to escape an object so painful to my feelings, I walked on, and was soon busily engaged in picking up shells and coral; of the former I never saw so many as at this place. Some were particularly beautiful, but exceedingly delicate, and difficult to be carried. The first day I could have loaded a camel with them. The coral, too, such as it was, lay scattered about in lavish profusion. I remember, the first piece Paul found, he rubbed his hands like the toiling and untiring alchemist when he thinks he has discovered the philosopher's stone; but when he came to a second, he threw away the first, in the same spirit in which the Irishman, on his arrival in America, the El Dorado of his dreams, threw down a sixpence which he had picked up in the street, assuring himself that there was more where that came from. Some of this coral was exceedingly beautiful; we did not know its value, but I did not think very highly of it merely from the circumstance of its lying there in such abundance. It was not the rock or branch coral, but a light porous substance, resembling very much the honeycomb. Paul gathered a large quantity of it, and contrived to carry it to Jerusalem, though it got very much broken on the way. He had the satisfaction of

knowing, however, that he had not sustained any great loss; for, on our first visit to the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, we found in the porch a green-turbaned Mussulman, who, returning from his pilgrimage to Mecca, had thought to indemnify himself for the expense and fatigue of his long and dreary journey with this treasure of the sea. Paul took up a large piece and asked him the price, when the Mussulman, with an air as dejected in telling as was that of Paul in hearing it, told him two paras, a para being about one-eighth of a cent; and the next day I saw before the door of the convent at which we were staying a large heap of the coral which Paul had been so careful in carrying; and after that he talked only of his shells, the value of which was not yet ascertained.

At about twelve o'clock, close by the shore, we came to a stunted wild palm-tree, with a small stone fence around it; and looking down from my dromedary, I saw extended on the ground the figure of an Arab. I at first thought he was dead; but at the noise of our approach, he raised his head from a stone which served him as a pillow, and the first greeting he gave us was to ask for bread. Among all the habitations of hermits I had yet seen, in caves, among rocks or mountains, there was none which could be compared with this by the shore of the sea; a small fence, but little higher than his recumbent body, protected him from the wind; the withered branches of the palm-tree were his only covering; his pillow a stone, and the bare earth his bed; and when he crawled out and stood before us, erect as age and infirmity would allow, I thought I had never seen such a miserable figure. I could not have believed, without seeing it, that any thing so wretched, made in God's image, existed on the earth. He was more than sixty; his face was dried, and seamed with the deep wrinkles of age and exposure; his beard long and white, and his body thin to emaciation. Over his shoulders and breast was a miserable covering of rags, but the rest of his body was perfectly naked: his skin was dry, horny, and covered with blotches resembling large scales, which, on his legs, and particularly over his knees, stood out like the greaves of an ancient coat of mail; and he looked like one who literally crawled on his belly and licked the dust of the earth. He reminded me of the wild hermit of Engaddi, who came out upon the Sarcen emir when he journeyed with the Knight of the Leopard on the shore of the Dead Sea. And this man was a saint, and my Arabs looked on him with respect and reverence; and when he died, a public tomb would be erected over him, and they upon whose charity he now lived would resort to it as a shrine of prayer. We gave him some bread, and left him in his solitary den; and before we had got out of sight, he had crawled back under his palm-leaves, and was again resting upon his pillow of stone. In our busy and stirring world, we cannot imagine the possibility of existing in such a drowsy state; but in all probability that man would lie there till the bread we gave him was exhausted, and when he had taken his last morsel, again lie down in hope that more would come.

About an hour afterwards we came upon a fisherman stealing along the shore with his net in his hand, looking into the sea, and ready to throw it when he saw any fish. The process, like every thing else that one sees here, is perfectly primitive, and carries the beholder back to the early days of this ancient country. Carrying the net on his left arm crooked, cleared and prepared for a throw, with the one end in his right hand, and taking advantage of ripples made by the wind, and the sun throwing his shadow behind him, he runs along the shore until he sees a shoal of fish, when, with a gentle jerk, and without any noise, he throws his net, which opens and spreads as it falls, so that a little thing, which could be put easily into a hat, expands sufficiently to cover a surface of twenty or thirty feet. While running along he threw several times; and as he managed with skill, never throwing until he saw always successful. I could not make out the Arabic name of the fish, but I have

the flavour of them still on my tongue; a flavour at the moment finer than that of the sole or turbot of Paris, or the trout of Long Island.

In the afternoon the weather changed. Since we first struck the sea, our road along its shore had been one of uncommon beauty, and my time passed very pleasantly, sometimes allowing my dromedary to cool his feet in the clear water, sometimes dismounting to pick up a shell, and all the time having a warm sun and a refreshing breeze; but it was my fortune to see this ancient country under every hue of the changing elements. The sun was now obscured; a strong wind came down the sea directly in our teeth; the head of the gulf was cut off from our view; the sea was troubled, and the white caps were dancing on its surface; the dark mountains looked darker and more lonely; while before us a rainbow was forming over the point of Akaba, which threw itself across the gulf to the east, marking in the firmament, with its rich and varied colours, the figure of the crescent. Soon after, we were in the midst of a perfect hurricane. Several times during the day I had wished to float upon the bosom of the tranquil sea, and had looked in vain for some boat or fisherman's skiff to carry me up the gulf; but I now shrank from the angry face of the deep, and, under the shelter of an impending rock, listened to the fierce whistling of the wind, and the crashing of the thunder among the mountains.

In the morning the storm was over, and the atmosphere pure, clear, and refreshing as before; but as a set-off to the pleasure of returning sunshine, Toulah told me that we had passed the boundaries of the friendly tribes, and that we must look to our weapons, for we were now among strangers, and perhaps enemies. Here, too, for the first time, I put on my Turkish dress, being that of a merchant of Cairo, with the addition of pistols and sabre; but, fearful of taking cold, I cut down an old coat and tied up a pair of pantaloons, so as to have a complete suit under the large white trousers and red silk gown which formed the principal items of my dress. The red tarbouch I had worn ever since I had been in Egypt; but I now rolled round it a green and yellow striped handkerchief, to which Toulah gave the proper twist; and, with my yellow slippers and red shoes over them, sash, pistols, sword, and long beard, I received the congratulations and compliments of my friends upon my improved appearance.

Indeed, I played the Turk well. Different from my notions of the appearance of the Turks, they have generally light and florid complexions; and if I could have talked their language, dressed as a Turk, they could not have judged from my appearance that I had ever been outside the walls of old Stamboul. There is no exaggeration in the unanimous reports of travellers of the effect which the costumes of the East give to personal appearance; and having seen and known it even in my own person, I am inclined to believe that there is fallacy in the equally prevalent opinion of the personal beauty of the Turks. Their dress completely hides all deformity of person, and the variety of colours, the arms and the long beard, divert the attention of the observer from a close examination of features. The striking effect of costume is strongly perceptible in the soldiers of the sultan, and the mongrel, half-European uniform in which he has put them, and which they are not by any means an uncommonly fine-looking set of men. These soldiers are taken wherever they are caught, and, consequently, are a fair specimen of the Turkish race; and any English regiment will turn out finer men than the best in the sultan's army. Following my example, Paul also slipped into his Bedouin shirt, and could hardly be distinguished from the best Arab of them all.

Again our road lay along the shore, so near that sometimes we had to dismount and pick our way over the rocks, and at others our dromedaries bathed their feet in the water. In one place the side of the mountain rose so directly and abruptly from the water's edge, that we had to turn aside and pass around it, coming again to the shore after about an hour's ride. Here we saw

the gulf narrowing towards its extremity; and on the opposite side a cluster of palm-trees, within which, and completely hidden from view, was the end of our first stage, the fortress of Akaba. Never was the sight of one of the dearest objects on earth, home to the wanderer, land to the sailor, or a mistress to the lover, more welcome than the sight of those palm-trees to me. The malady under which I had been labouring had grown upon me every day; and in spite of all that was rich and interesting, time after time I had regretted my rashness in throwing myself so far into the desert. The repose, therefore, which awaited me at Akaba, seemed the most precious thing on earth.

Towards evening we could see Akaba more distinctly, though still on the opposite side of the gulf, and still at a formidable distance to me. A brisk trot would have carried me there in an hour; but this was more than I could bear, supported as I was by a mattress on each side of me, and barely able to sustain the slow and measured movement of a walk. Night was again coming on, and heavy clouds were gathering in the east. I was extremely anxious to sleep within the fortress that night; and fearful that a stranger would not be admitted after dark, I sent Paul ahead with my compliments to the governor, and the modest request that he would keep the gates open till I came.

A governor is a governor all the world over. Honour and respect attend him wherever he may be; whether the almost regal governor-general of India, the untitled chief magistrate of our own democratic state, or the governor of a little fortress on the shore of the Red Sea. But there are some governors one may take a liberty with, and others not; and of the former class was my friend of Akaba. His name was Suliman, his title aga, and therefore he was called Suliman Aga. He had his appointment by favour of the pacha, and permission to retain it by favour of the Bedouins around; he had under him nominally a garrison of Mogrebbin soldiers, but they were as restive as some of our own unbroken militia; and like many a worthy disciplinarian among us, he could do just as he pleased with them, if he only let them have their own way. He was, in short, an excellent governor, and I gave him two dollars and a recommendation at parting.

But I am going too fast. I arrived before dark, and in such a state that I almost fell from my dromedary in dismounting at the gate of the fortress. The first glance told me that this was not the place of rest I had promised myself. Half a dozen Mogrebbins from the shores of Morocco, the most tried and faithful of the hired troops of the pacha, were sitting on a mat within the gate, smoking their long pipes, with their long guns, swords, and pistols, hanging above their heads. They rose and gave me a seat beside them, and the whole of the little population of the fortress, and the Bedouins living under the palm-trees outside, gathered around to gaze at the stranger. The great caravan of pilgrims from Mecca had left them only three days before; and, except upon the passing and return of the caravan, years pass by without a stranger ever appearing at the fortress. They had heard of my coming, for the sheik had waited two days after the departure of the caravan, and had only gone that morning, leaving directions with the governor to send for him as soon as I arrived. I was somewhat surprised at his confidence in my coming, for when I saw him, I was very far from being decided; but in the miserable condition in which I found myself, I hailed it as a favourable omen. The governor soon came, and was profuse in his offers of service, beginning, of course, with coffee and a pipe, which I was forced to decline, apologising on the ground of my extreme indisposition, and begged to be conducted to a room by myself. The governor rose and conducted me, and every Bedouin present followed after; and when I came to the room by myself, I had at least forty of them around me. Once Paul prevailed on some of them to go out; but they soon came back again, and I was too ill to urge the matter.

The very aspect of the room into which I was shown

prostrated the last remains of my physical strength. It was 80 or 100 feet long, 40 feet wide, and about as many high, having on one side a dead wall, being that of the fortress, and on the other, two large windows without shutters, and the door; the naked floor was of mud, and so were the walls and ceiling. I looked for one spot less cheerless than the rest; and finding at the upper end a place where the floor was elevated about a foot, with a feeling of despondency I have seldom known, I stretched my mattress in the extreme corner, and, too far gone to have any regard to the presence of the governor or his Arab soldiers, threw myself at full length upon it. I was sick in body and soul; for besides the actual and prostrating debility under which I was labouring, I had before me the horrible certainty that I was completely cut off from all medical aid, and from all the comforts which a sick man wants. I was ten days from Cairo; to go there in person was impossible; and if I should send, I could not obtain the aid of a physician in less than twenty-five or thirty days, if at all; and before that I might be past his help. When I left Cairo, Dr Walne had set me up, so that I held out tolerably well until I reached Mount Sinai; and, moreover, had given me sundry medicines, with directions for their use under particular circumstances; but my symptoms had so completely changed, that the directions, if not the medicines themselves, were entirely useless. In a spirit of desperation, however, I took them out, and not knowing where to begin, resolved to go through the whole catalogue in such order as chance might direct. I began with a double dose of cathartic powders, and while lying on my mat, I was diverted from the misery of my own gloomy reflections by the pious conversation of the Mussulman governor. If God willed, he said, I would soon get well; himself and his wife had been ill three months, and had no physician, but God willed that they should recover, and they did; and as I looked in his believing face and those of the Bedouins, I found myself gradually falling into the fatalism of their creed. I shall never forget the manner in which I passed that night; and the sombre fancies that chased each other through my brain. A single lamp threw a dim and feeble light through the large apartment, scarcely revealing the dusky forms of the sleeping Bedouins, with their weapons by their sides, and I was the only one awake. Busy memory called up all the considerations that ought to have prevented my taking such a journey, and the warning voice of my friend at Cairo, "Turn your steps westward," again rang in my ears. I saw the figure of the dead Tartar at Suez, like me a wanderer from home, and buried by strangers in the sandy desert; and so nervous and desponding had I become, that the words of the prophet in regard to the land of Idumea, "None shall pass through it for ever and ever," struck upon my heart like a funeral knell. I was now upon the borders of Edom; and, in the despondency of sickness, I looked upon myself as rash and impious, in undertaking what might be considered a defiance of the prophetic denunciations inspired by God himself.

In the morning I was worse; and following up my almost desperate plan of treatment, commenced the day with a double emetic. The governor came in; and though I tried to keep the door shut, another and another followed, till my room was as public as any part of the fortress. Indeed, it was by far the most public, for all the rest was stripped of its bronzed figures to ornament my room. Annoyed to death by seeing twenty or thirty pairs of fiery black eyes constantly fixed upon me, I remembered, with feelings of envy, my tent in the desert. There I could at least be alone, and I resolved, at all hazards, not to pass another night in the fortress.

In the midst of my exceeding perplexities, the sheik of Akaba, my friend of Cairo, made his appearance. I was in a pitiable condition when he entered, under the immediate operation of my emetic, with the whole of the Mogrebbin guard and every beggarly Bedouin about the fortress staring at me. He looked surprised and

startled when he saw me; but with a glimmering of good sense, though, as I thought, with unnecessary harshness, told me that I would die if I staid there, and that he was ready to set out with me at a moment's notice. By the advice of Mr Gliddon, my plan had been to make this my place of negotiation and arrangement, and not to proceed farther without having all things definitely explained and settled. But I was in no condition to negotiate, and was ready to do any thing to get away from the fortress. He was exceedingly anxious to start immediately, and gave me a piece of information that almost lifted me from the ground—namely, that he could provide me with a horse of the best blood of Arabia for the whole of the journey. He could not have given me more grateful intelligence, for the bare idea of again mounting my dromedary deprived me of all energy and strength. I had endeavoured to procure a sort of palanquin, to be swung between two camels; but so destitute was the fortress of all kinds of material, that it was impossible to make it. When he spoke to me, then, of a horse, it made me a new man; and, without a moment's hesitation, I told him that if he would give me till five o'clock in the afternoon, I would be ready to set out with him. One thing I did not like. I wished and designed to take with me my faithful Tounaleb; but he had told me that he did not believe that the El Alouins would allow it; and when he spoke to the sheik, the latter had positively refused, pretending that all was arranged between us at Cairo. I was fain, therefore, to abandon the idea, not having energy to insist upon any thing that was disputed, and to trust every thing to fortune and the sheik. I told Paul to do all that was necessary; and begging to be left alone for a few hours, I laid myself down upon my mat, and, worn out with the watching of the last night, and the excitement of thinking and deciding on my future movements, quickly fell asleep.

At five o'clock the sheik returned, punctual to his appointment; I had slept soundly, and awoke somewhat refreshed. The room was again filled with the Bedouins, and I was as ready to go as he was to take me. He had ordered what was necessary upon the journey for man and beast, and provisions for six camels and ten men for ten days. I gave Paul my purse, and told him to pay, and, walking to the gate of the fortress, a dozen Arabs helped me to my saddle; they would have taken me up in their arms and carried me, and, when I had mounted, they would have taken up the horse and carried him too. So great a friendship had they already conceived for me. But the friendship was not for what I was, but for what I had. They had welcomed me as they would have welcomed a bag of gold; and I had scarcely mounted before they all, governor, Mogreblin soldiers, and Bedouins, began to clamour for bucksheesh. Ten years before, M. Laborde had passed along this route, and stopped at the fortress while waiting for the sheik who was to guide and protect him to Petra; and having in view the purpose of preparing the great work which has since given him such merited reputation, he had scattered money and presents with a most liberal hand. M. Laborde himself was not personally known to any of those now at the fortress; but his companion, Mr Linant, of whom I have before spoken, was known to them all; and they all had heard of the gold shower in which M. Laborde appeared among them. They therefore expected the same from me; and when Paul had got through his distribution, I was startled at perceiving the dissatisfied air with which they received a bucksheesh that would have overwhelmed any other Arabs with joy and gratitude.

But I must not hurry the reader from Akaba with the same eagerness which I displayed in leaving it. This little fortress is seldom visited by travellers, and it is worth a brief description. It stands at the extremity of the eastern or Eilatitic branch of the Red Sea, at the foot of the sandstone mountains, near the shore, and is most buried in a grove of palm-trees, the only living vegetation in that region of barren sands. It is the meeting-place of the caravan of pilgrims on

its way to Mecca, being yet thirty days' journey from the tomb of the Prophet, and, of course, the first at which they touch on their return. Except at the time of these two visits, the place is desolate from the beginning of the year to its close; the arrival of a traveller is of exceedingly rare occurrence, and seldom does even the wandering Bedouin stop within its walls; no ship rides in its harbour, and not even a solitary fishing-boat breaks the stillness of the water at its feet. But it was not always so desolate, for this was the Ezion-geber of the Bible, where, 3000 years ago, King Solomon made a navy of ships, which brought from Ophir gold and precious stones for the great temple at Jerusalem; and again, at a later day, a great city existed here, through which, at this distant point of the wilderness, the wealth of India was conveyed to imperial Rome. But all these are gone, and there are no relics or monuments to tell of former greatness; like the ships which once floated in the harbour, all have passed away. Still, ruined and desolate as it is, to the eye of feeling the little fortress is not without its interest; for, as the governor told me, it was built by the heroic Saladin.

I had taken leave of my trusty Tounaleb, and was again in the hands of strangers; and I do not deceive myself when I say, that on the very borders of Edom I noticed a change for the worse in the appearance of the Bedouins. According to the reports of travellers and writers, those with whom I now set out from Akaba belonged to one of the most lawless tribes of a lawless race, and they were by far the wildest and fiercest-looking of all I had yet seen; with complexions bronzed and burnt to blackness; dark eyes, glowing with a fire approaching to ferocity; figures thin and shrunk, though sinewy; chests standing out, and ribs projecting from the skin, like those of a skeleton. The sheik, like myself, was on horseback, dressed in a red silk gown like my own, and over it a large cloak of scarlet cloth, both the gifts of Messieurs Linant and Laborde; a red tarbouch with a shawl rolled round it, long red boots, and a sash; and carried pistols, a sword, and a spear about twelve feet long, pointed with steel at both ends; his brother, too, wore a silk gown, and carried pistols and sword, and the rest were armed with swords and matchlock guns, and wore the common Bedouin dress; some of them almost no dress at all. We had moved some distance from the fortress without a word being uttered, for they neither spoke to me nor with each other. I was in no humour for talking myself, but it was unpleasant to have more than a dozen men around, all bending their keen eyes upon me, and not one of them uttering a word. With a view to making some approach to acquaintance, and removing their jealousy of me as a stranger, I asked some casual question about the road; but I might better have held my peace, for it seemed that I could not well have hit upon a subject more displeasing. My amiable companions looked as black as midnight, and one of them, a particularly swarthy and truculent-looking fellow, turned short round, and told me that I had too much curiosity, and that he did not understand what right a Christian had to come there and hunt up their villages, take down their names, &c. But the sheik came in as mediator, and told them that I was a good man; that he had been to my house in Cairo, and that I was no spy; and so this cloud passed off. I did not mean to go far that afternoon, for I had left the fortress merely to get rid of the crowd, and return to fresh air and quiet; and in less than an hour I again pitched my tent in the desert. Finding plenty of brush, we kindled a large fire, and all sat down around it. It was a great object with me to establish myself on a good footing with my companions at the outset; and, more fortunate on my second attempt, before one round of coffee and pipes was over, the sheik turned to me, and with all the extravagance of Eastern hyperbole, said he thanked God for having permitted us again to see each other's face, and that I had been recovering since. I saw his face; and, turning his eyes to heaven, with an expression of deep and confiding piety, he added, "God grant that you may soon become a strong man."

and then the others all took their pipes from their mouths, and turning up their eyes to heaven, the whole band of breathless desperadoes added, "Wullah—Wullah!"—"God grant it!"

CHAPTER XX.

Prophecy and Fulfilment.—Unpleasant Suggestions.—The Doomed Land.—Management.—A Rencontre.—An Arab's Cunning.—The Camel's Hump.—Adventure with a Lamb.—Mount Mor.—Delicate Negotiations.—Approach to Petra.

I HAD now crossed the borders of Edom. Standing near the shore of the Elanitic branch of the Red Sea, the doomed and accursed land lay stretched out before me, the theatre of awful visitations and their more awful fulfilment; given to Esau as being of the fatness of the earth, but now a barren waste, a picture of death, an eternal monument of the wrath of an offended God, and a fearful witness to the truth of the words spoken by his prophets—"For my sword shall be bathed in heaven: behold it shall come down upon Idumea, and upon the people of my curse, to judgment." "From generation to generation it shall lie waste; none shall pass through it for ever and ever. But the cormorant and the bittern shall possess it; the owl also and the raven shall dwell in it; and he shall stretch out upon it the line of confusion and the stones of emptiness. They shall call the nobles thereof to the kingdom, but none shall be there, and all her princes shall be nothing. And thorns shall come up in her palaces, nettles and brambles in the fortresses thereof: and it shall be a habitation of dragons, and a court for owls. The wild beasts of the desert shall also meet with the wild beasts of the island, and the satyr shall cry to his fellow: the screech-owl also shall rest there, and find for herself a place of rest. There shall the great owl make her nest, and lay, and hatch, and gather under her shadow: there shall the vultures also be gathered, every one with her mate. Seek ye out the book of the Lord, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for my mouth it hath commanded, and his spirit it hath gathered them. And he hath cast the lot for them, and his hand hath divided it unto them by line: they shall possess it for ever; from generation to generation shall they dwell therein."—Isaiah xxxiv.

I read in the sacred book prophecy upon prophecy and curse upon curse against the very land on which I stood. I was about to journey through this land, and to see with my own eyes whether the Almighty had stayed his uplifted arm, or whether his sword had indeed come down "upon Idumea, and the people of his curse, to judgment." I have before referred to Keith on the Prophecies, where, in illustrating the fulfilment of the prophecies against Idumea, "none shall pass through it for ever and ever," after referring to the singular fact that the great caravan routes existing in the days of David and Solomon, and under the Roman empire, are now completely broken up, and that the great hadji routes to Mecca from Damascus and Cairo lie along the borders of Idumea, barely touching, and not passing through it, he proves by abundant references that to this day no traveller has ever passed through the land.

The Bedouins who roam over the land of Idumea have been described by travellers as the worst of their race. "The Arabs about Akaba," says Pococke, "are a very bad people and notorious robbers, and are at war with all others." Mr Joliffe alludes to it as one of the wildest and most dangerous divisions of Arabia, and Bueckhardt says, "that for the first time he had ever felt fear during his travels in the desert, and his route was the most dangerous he had ever travelled;" that he had "nothing with him that could attract the notice or excite the cupidity of the Bedouins," and was "even stripped of some rags that covered his wounded ankles." Messrs Legh and Banks, and Captains Irby and Maugles, were told that the Arabs of Wady Moussa, the tribe that formed

my escort, "were a most savage and treacherous race, and that they would use their Frank's blood for a medicine;" and they learned on the spot that "upwards of thirty pilgrims from Barbary had been murdered at Petra the preceding year by the men of Wady Moussa;" and they speak of the opposition and obstruction from the Bedouins as resembling the case of the Israelites under Moses, when Edom refused to give them passage through his country. None of these had passed through it; and unless the two Englishmen and Italian before referred to succeeded in their attempt, when I pitched my tent on the borders of Edom no traveller had ever done so. The ignorance and mystery that hung over it added to the interest with which I looked to the land of barrenness and desolation stretched out before me; and I would have regarded all the difficulties and dangers of the road merely as materials for a not unpleasant excitement, if I had only felt a confidence in my physical strength to carry me through. But some idea may be formed of my unhappy condition from the circumstance that, in the evening, my servant, an honest and faithful fellow, who I believe was sincerely attached to me, while I was lying on my mat, with many apologies, and hoping I would not think hard of him, and praying that no accident might happen to me, told me that he was a poor man, and it would be very hard for him to lose his earnings, and that an English traveller had died in Syria the year before, and his consul had taken possession of his effects, and to this day his poor servant had never received his wages. I at first thought it unkind of him to come upon me at that moment with such a suggestion: but I soon changed my mind. I had not paid him a cent since he had been with me, and his earnings were no trifle to him; and, after all, what was I to him except a debtor? In any event I should leave him in a few months, and in all probability should never see him again. I told him that he knew the circumstances under which we had left Cairo; that I had brought with me barely enough to pay my expenses on the road; nor could I give him what he wanted, an order upon my consul at Beyroot; but after he had gone out, with somewhat the same feelings that may be supposed to possess a man in extremis writing his own will, I wrote an order, including a gratuity which he richly deserved, upon a merchant in Beyroot, upon whom I had a letter of credit; but the cheerlessness and helplessness of my situation never struck me so forcibly as when I reflected that, in the uncertain position in which I was placed, it was not prudent to give it into his hands. At that moment I mistrusted every body; and though I had not then, nor at any subsequent time, the slightest reason to doubt his faith, I did not dare to let him know that he could in any event be a gainer by my death. I considered it necessary to make him suppose that his interest was identified with my safety, and therefore folded up the paper, enclosed it in the letter of credit directed to the merchant, and put it back in my trunk; and I need not say that it was a great satisfaction to me that the validity of the draft was never tested.

When I awoke in the morning, the first thing I thought of was my horse. It almost made me well to think of him, and it was not long before I was on his back.

Standing near the shore of this northern extremity of the Red Sea, I saw before me an immense sandy valley, which, without the aid of geological science, to the eye of common observation and reason had once been the bottom of a sea or the bed of a river. This dreary valley, extending far beyond the reach of the eye, had been partly explored by Bueckhardt; sufficiently to ascertain and mention it in the latest geography of the country as the great valley of El Ghor, extending from the shores of the Elanitic Gulf to the southern extremity of the Lake Asphaltites or the Dead Sea; and it was manifest, by landmarks of Nature's own providing, that over that sandy plain those seas had once mingled their waters, or, perhaps, more probably, that before the cities of the plain had been consumed by brimstone and fire, and Sodom and Gomorrah covered by a pestilential lake, the Jordan had here rolled its waters. The valley

varied from four to eight miles in breadth, and on each side were high, dark, and barren mountains, bounding it like a wall. On the left were the mountains of Judea, and on the right those of Seir, the portion given to Esau as an inheritance; and among them, buried from the eyes of strangers, the approach to it known only to the wandering Bedouins, was the ancient capital of his kingdom, the excavated city of Petra, the cursed and blighted Edom of the Edomites. The land of Idunnea lay before me, in barrenness and desolation; no trees grew in the valley, and no verdure on the mountain tops. All was bare, dreary, and desolate.

But the beauty of the weather atoned for this barrenness of scene; and, mounted on the back of my Arabian, I felt a lightness of frame and an elasticity of spirits that I could not have believed possible in my actual state of health. Patting the neck of the noble animal, I talked with the sheik about his horse, and, by warm and honest praises, was rapidly gaining upon the affections of my wild companions. The sheik told me that the race of these horses had been in his family more than 400 years, though I am inclined to think, from his not being able to tell his own age, that he did not precisely know the pedigree of his beasts. If any thing connected with my journey in the East could throw me into ecstasies, it would be the recollection of that horse. I felt lifted up when on his back, and snuffed the pure air of the desert with a zest not unworthy of a Bedouin. Like all the Arabian horses, he was broken only to the walk and gallop, the unnatural and ungraceful movement of a trot being deemed unworthy the free limbs of an Arab corsair.

The sheik to-day was more communicative. Indeed, he became very fond of talking; suspicious as I was, and on the watch for any thing that might rouse my apprehensions, I observed that he regularly settled down upon the same topics, namely, the dangers of the road, the bad character of the Arabs, his great friendship for me the first moment he saw me, and his determination to protect me with his life against all dangers. This was well enough for once or twice, but he repeated it too often, and overshot the mark, as I did when I first began to recommend myself to them. I suspected him of exaggerating the dangers of the road to enhance the value of his services; and lest I should entertain any doubt upon the subject, he betrayed himself by always winding up with a reference to the generosity of Monsieur Linant. The consequence was, that instead of inspiring me with fear, he gave me confidence; and by the end of my first day's journey, I had lost nearly all apprehensions of the dangers of the road, and acquired some distrust and contempt for my protector. We were all getting along very well, however. Paul had been playing a great game among the men, and, by his superior knowledge of mankind, easily circumvented these ignorant Bedouins; and his Arabic name of "Osman" was constantly in some one's mouth. I forgot to mention that, very early in my journey in the desert, my companions, unable to twist my name to suit their Arabic intonations, had called me Abdel Hasis (literally, the slave of the good God), and Paul, Osman.

In the evening, while making a note in a little memorandum-book, and on the point of lying down to sleep, I heard a deep guttural voice at some distance outside, and approaching nearer, till the harsh sounds grated as if spoken in my very ears. My Bedouins were sitting around a large fire at the door of the tent, and through the flames I saw coming up two wild and ferocious-looking Arabs, their dark visages reddened by the blaze, and their keen eyes flashing; and hardly had they reached my men, before all drew their swords, and began cutting away at each other with all their might. I did not feel much apprehension, and could not but admire the boldness of the fellows, two men walking up deliberately and drawing upon ten. One of the first charges Towaleb gave me on my entrance into the desert was, if the Arabs composing my escort got into any quarrel, to keep out of the way and let them fight it out; and in pursuance of this advice, without attempting to interfere, I stood in the door

watching the progress of the fray. The larger of the two was engaged with the sheik's brother, and their swords were clashing in a way that would soon have put an end to one of them, when the sheik, who had been absent at the moment, sprang in among them, and knocking up their swords with his long spear, while his scarlet cloak fell from his shoulders, his dark face reddened, and his black eyes glowed in the firelight, with a voice that drowned the clatter of the weapons, roared out a volley of Arabic gutturals which made them drop their points, and apparently silenced them with shame. What he said we did not know, but the result was a general cessation of hostilities. The sheik's brother had received a cut in the arm, and his adversary helped to bind up the wound, and they all sat down together round the fire to pipes and coffee, as good friends as a party of Irishmen with their heads broken after a Donnybrook fairing. I had noticed, in this flurry, the exceeding awkwardness with which they used their swords, by their overhand blows constantly laying themselves open, so that any little Frenchman with his toothpick of a rapier would have run them through before they could have cried quarter. After the thing was all over, Paul went out and asked the cause; but the sheik told him that it was an affair of their own, and with this satisfactory answer we were obliged to rest content.

Though all was now quiet, the elements of discord were still existing. The new-comer was a ferocious fellow; his voice was constantly heard, like the hoarse croaking of some bird of evil omen, and sometimes it was raised to the pitch of high and deadly passion. Paul heard him ask if I was a European, to which the sheik answered No; I was a Turk. He then got upon the railroad to Suez, and the poor benighted Bedouin, completely behind the age in the march of improvement, having never read Say's Political Economy or Smith's Wealth of Nations, denounced it as an invasion of the natural rights of the people, and a wicked breaking up of the business of the camel-drivers. He cursed every European that ever set foot in their country; and, speaking of Mr Galloway, the engineer of the proposed railroad, hoped that he might some day meet him, and send he would strangle him with his own hands.

In the morning we were again under way. Our quarrelsome friend of the night before was by our side, perched on the bare back of a dromedary, and, if possible, looking more grim and savage by daylight. His companion was mounted behind him, and he kept near the sheik, occasionally crossing my path, looking back at me, and croaking in the sheik's ears as he had done the night before. Two or three times he crossed my path, as if with the intention of going into the mountains; and then, as if he found it impossible to tear himself away, returned to the sheik. At length he did go, and with a most discontented and disconsolate air; and after he had gone, the sheik told us, that when they came up to the fire, they demanded tribute or bucksheesh from the stranger passing over the Bedouins' highway; that his brother had refused to pay it, which had been the cause of the quarrel; and that, when he himself came up, he had told the demanders of tribute that he had undertaken to protect me from injury through the desert; that he had given his head to Mahommed Ali for my safety, and would defend me with his life against every danger; but that, finally, he had pacified them by giving them a couple of dollars apiece. I did not believe this. They looked too disconsolate when they went away; for the four dollars would have made the hearts of two beggarly Bedouins leap for joy; and I could not help asking him if we were obliged to buy our peace when only two came upon us, what we should do when 100 should come; to which he answered that they must all be paid, and that it was impossible to pass through the desert without it.

We got through the day remarkably well, the scene being always precisely the same; before us, the long, flat, sandy valley, and on each side the still more desolate and dreary mountains. Toward evening we encamped; and after sitting some time around a fire

with my companions, I entered my tent. Soon after, the sheik, in pursuance of his pitiful plan of exciting my fears and raising his own value, sent in for my gun and pistols, telling me that there were Arabs near; that he heard the barking of a dog, and intended to keep watch all night. I had already seen so much of him, that I knew this was a mere piece of braggadocio; and I met it with another, by telling him that no man could use my pistols better than myself, and that all he had to do was, upon the first alarm, to give me notice, and I would be among them. About an hour afterwards I went out and found them all asleep; and I could not help making Paul rouse the sheik, and ask him if he did not want the pistols for his vigilant watch.

In the morning we started at half-past six. The day was again beautiful and inspiring; my horse and myself had become the best friends in the world; and though I was disgusted with the sheik's general conduct, I moved quietly along the valley, conversing with him or Paul, or with any of the men, about any thing that happened to suggest itself. I remember I had a long discourse about the difference between the camel and the dromedary. Buffon gives the camel two humps, and the dromedary one; and this I believe is the received opinion, as it had always been mine; but since I had been in the East, I had remarked that it was exceedingly rare to meet a camel with two humps. I had seen together at one time, on the starting of the caravan of pilgrims to Mecca, perhaps 20,000 camels and dromedaries, and had not seen among them more than half a dozen with two humps. Not satisfied with any explanation from European residents or travellers, I had inquired among the Bedouins; and Toulah, my old guide, brought up among camels, had given such a strange account that I never paid any regard to it. Now, however, the sheik told me the same thing, namely, that they were of different races, the dromedary being to the camel as the blood-horse is to the cart-horse; and that the two humps were peculiar neither to the dromedary nor the camel, or natural to either; but that both are always born with only one hump, which being a mere mass of flesh, and very tender, almost as soon as the young camel is born a piece is sometimes cut out of the middle for the convenience of better arranging the saddle; and, being cut out of the centre, a hump is left on either side of the cavity; and this, according to the account given by Toulah, is the only way in which two humps ever appear on the back of a camel or dromedary. I should not mention this story if I had heard it only once; but, precisely as I had it from Toulah, it was confirmed with a great deal of circumstantial detail by another Bedouin, who like himself had lived among camels and dromedaries all his life; and his statement was assented to by all his companions. I do not give this out as a discovery made at this late day in regard to an animal so well known as the camel—indeed, I am told that the Arabs are not ignorant of that elegance of civilised life called “quizzing.” I give it merely to show how I whiled away my time in the desert, and for what it is worth.

Towards mid-day the sheik dashed across the plain, with his long lance poised in his hand, and his scarlet dress streaming in the wind; and about an hour afterwards we came to his spear stuck in the sand, and a little Bedouin boy sitting by it to invite us to his father's tent. We turned aside, and, coming to the tent, found the sheik sitting on the ground refreshing himself with long draughts of goat's milk. He passed the skin to us; but, as master of the ceremonies, he declined the regular Arab invitation to stay and eat a lamb. He could not, however, neglect the goods the gods provided, and told our host that we would take a lamb with us for our evening meal. The lamb was caught, and, with his legs tied, was thrown into a sack, where he made music for us for the rest of the day. To the Bedouin, next to the pleasure of eating a lamb is that of knowing he has one to eat; and so the bleating of the doomed innocent was merely a whetter of appetite. After we had gone some distance from the tent, we set down the lamb on the

ground, and I never saw a creature so perfectly the emblem of helplessness. At first he ran back a little way from us; then stopped; and apparently feeling the loneliness of his condition, returned and followed us, and in a few moments was under the feet of the camels, a part of our caravan unwittingly moving to the slaughter. The tent was hardly pitched before he lay bleeding on the ground; and the fire was no sooner kindled than his entrails, liver, &c., were in the burning brush; and in a few moments the Arabs were greedily devouring the meal into which he had been so speedily converted. The whole scene which I have before described was repeated; and, as before, in the morning the skin was the only part of the lamb to be seen.

One thing in the sheik was particularly disagreeable. He was constantly talking with Paul about the sacrifice he made in accompanying me; his confident expectation that I would pay him well for it, and the generosity of M. Linant; always winding up with asking what bucksheesh I intended to give him. Paul told me all that passed, and it was evident that the sheik and his men were making extravagant calculations. I had estimated with Mr Gliddon the probable expenses to Jerusalem, founded on the rate of hire for camels which the sheik had named at Cairo; and as it was not beyond the range of possibilities that I should be stripped on the way, I had brought with me barely enough to cover my probable expenses; and, consequently, I saw that my means were very likely to fall short of the sheik's expectations. I did not want any disappointment at the last, and that night I called him to my tent, resolved upon coming to an understanding. I told him that, knowing it was a dangerous road, and that I was subject to the risk of being robbed, I had brought with me a specific sum of money, all of which I intended for him, and that all he scattered along the road would be so much taken from his own pocket in the end. He was evidently startled, and expressed his surprise that a howaga, or gentleman, should have any bottom to his pocket, but promised to economise in future.

The next day the general features of the scene were the same, eternal barrenness and desolation; and moving to the right, at one o'clock we were at the foot of the mountains of Seir; and towering above all the rest, surmounted by a circular dome, like the tombs of the sheiks in Egypt, was the bare and rugged summit of Mount Hor, the burial-place of Aaron, visible in every direction at a great distance from below, and on both sides the great range of mountains, and forming one of the marks by which the Bedouin regulates his wanderings in the desert. Soon after, we turned in among the mountains, occasionally passing small spots of verdure, strangely contrasting with the surrounding and general desolation. Towards evening, in a small mountain on our left, we saw an excavation in the rock, which the sheik said had been a fortress; and, as of every other work of which the history is unknown, its construction was ascribed to the early Christians. It was a beautiful afternoon; gazelles were playing in the valleys, and partridges running wild up the sides of the mountains, and we pitched our tent partly over a carpet of grass, with the door open to the lofty tomb of the great high priest of Israel.

In the evening the sheik came to my tent for money, having been very pertinacious on that tender subject all day with Paul, asking him how much he thought I had with me, and how much I intended to give him. He began by asking me for pay for the camels, at the price agreed upon at Cairo. If he had asked me before starting from Akaba, I should probably have paid him; but after what I had seen, and what had passed between him and Paul, I did not like his asking for it now. He told me, too, that we were now at the door of Petra, and that it would be necessary to pay a bucksheesh or tribute on entering, but he could not tell how much would be required, as that would depend altogether on circumstances. There was always a guard stationed at the entrance of the defile leading to Petra, and the amount to be paid would depend upon the number

we might happen to find when we entered. These were never less than thirty or forty; and if there should not be more, the tribute exacted would not be more than thirty or forty dollars, but there might be two or three hundred; and, at all events, I had better give him my purse, and he would return me what was left. I suspected that, as he could not find out from Paul either how much I had with me or what I intended to give him, this story of the tribute was merely a pretext to levy an immediate contribution. The precise danger I had to fear was, that he would get my money from me piecemeal, and, when we came among Bedouins where it would be necessary to buy my peace, go off and leave me to their mercy. I did not want to have any rupture with him, particularly at that moment when I was at the very door of Petra, and might lose all that I had been endeavouring with so much personal difficulty to accomplish; and therefore told him, as to the bucksheesh for entering Petra, that I expected; and, when we should arrive there and learn how much it was, would be ready to pay it; but, in the meantime, for any little casual expense that might be incurred, I would give him a purse of 500 piastres, or 25 dollars. Touching the hire of camels, I said that I did not expect to pay it until we should arrive at Hebron; and, hurling back upon him one of his own flourishes, told him that it was distrusting my honour to ask it now. I reminded him of our conversation at Cairo, remarking that I had come into the desert upon the faith of his promise; and he replied very impertinently, if not menacingly, that one word here was worth a hundred at Cairo. I was somewhat roused at this, and, determined not to be dragooned into compliance, forgot for a moment my prudential plan, and told him that I would not be driven into that or any thing else; and that sooner than submit to his demand, I would turn back here, at the very door of Petra, and return to Cairo. This had its effect, for he was no more disposed to proceed to extremities than myself; and when I found him giving way a little, I threw in a powerful argument, which I had several times before hinted at, namely, that there were two parties on the Nile, who were exceedingly anxious to make the same journey, and who would be governed altogether by the report I should make. I saw that his avarice and hope of future gain were rapidly getting the better of his eagerness to touch his money before it was earned; and without inflicting upon the reader a full account of our long negotiation, made up principally of blustering and exaggeration, with some diplomatic concessions on both sides, it is enough to say that at last, to my great relief, he withdrew his demand, and took what I offered.

Before daybreak the next morning we had struck our tent, and sending it and the other baggage by another route, the sheik being afraid to take with us any thing that might tempt the Bedouins, and leaving behind us several of our men, the sheik, his brother, three Arabs, Paul, and myself, with nothing but what we had on, and provisions for one day, started for Wady Moussa and the city of Petra. Our course was a continued ascent. I have found it throughout difficult to give any description which can impart to the reader a distinct idea of the wild and desolate scenes presented among these mountainous deserts. I have been, too, in so many of the same general nature, that particular ones do not present themselves to my mind now with the force and distinctness of perfect recollection; and in the few rough and hurried notes which I made on the spot, I marked rather the effect than the causes which produced it. I remember, however, that the mountains were barren, solitary, and desolate, and that as we ascended, their aspect became more and more wild and rugged, and rose to grandeur and sublimity. I remember, too, that among these arid wastes of crumbling rock there were beautiful streams gushing out from the sides of the mountains, and sometimes small valleys, where the green grass and shrubs, and bushes, were putting forth their young; and that, altogether, I saw among the ruins of Arabia Petræa more verdure than

I had observed since I left the banks of the Nile. I remember, moreover, that the ascent was difficult; that our camels toiled laboriously; and that even our sure-footed Arabian horses often slipped upon the steep and rugged path. Once the sheik and myself, being in advance of the rest, sat down upon an eminence which overlooked, on one side, a range of wild and barren mountains, and on the other, the dreary valley of El Ghor; above us was the venerable summit of Mount Hor; and near us a stone blackened with smoke, and surrounded by fragments of bones, showing the place where the Arabs had sacrificed sheep to the Prophet Aaron. From this point we wound along the base of Mount Hor, which, from this great height, seemed just beginning to rise into a mountain; and I remember, that, in winding slowly along its base, as our companions had objected to our mounting to the tomb of Aaron, Paul and I were narrowly examining its sides for a path, and making arrangements to slip out as soon as they should all be asleep, and ascend by moonlight. Not far from the base of Mount Hor we came to some tombs cut in the sides of the rocks, and standing at the threshold of the entrance to the excavated city. Before entering this extraordinary place, it would not be amiss, in a few words, to give its history.

CHAPTER XXI.

Petra.—Arrival.—Entrance to the City.—The Temple of Petra.—A Record.—The Theatre.—Tombs of Petra.—Arab Simplicity.—Departure from Petra.—A Night in a Tomb.—Danger of the Route.

PETRA, the excavated city, the long lost capital of Edom, in the Scriptures and profane writings, in every language in which its name occurs, signifies a rock; and through the shadows of its early history, we learn that its inhabitants lived in natural clefts or excavations made in the solid rock. Desolate as it now is, we have reason to believe that it goes back to the time of Esau, "the father of Edom;" that princes and dukes, eight successive kings, and again a long line of dukes, dwelt there before any king "reigned over Israel;" and we recognise it from the earliest ages as the central point to which came the caravans from the interior of Arabia, Persia, and India, laden with all the precious commodities of the East, and through which these commodities were distributed through Egypt, Palestine, and Syria, and all the countries bordering on the Mediterranean, even Tyre and Sidon deriving their purple and dyes from Petra. Eight hundred years before Christ, Amaziah, the King of Judea, "slew of Edom in the Valley of Salt 10,000," and took Sela (the Hebrew name of Petra) by war. Three hundred years after the last of the prophets, and nearly a century before the Christian era, the "King of Arabia" issued from his palace at Petra, at the head of 50,000 men, horse and foot, entered Jerusalem, and, uniting with the Jews, pressed the siege of the temple, which was only raised by the advance of the Romans; and in the beginning of the second century, though its independence was lost, Petra was still the capital of a Roman province. After that time it rapidly declined; its history became more and more obscure; for more than a thousand years it was completely lost to the civilised world; and until its discovery by Burchhardt in 1812, except to the wandering Bedouins, its very site was unknown.

And this was the city at whose door I now stood. In a few words, this ancient and extraordinary city is situated within a natural amphitheatre of two or three miles in circumference, encompassed on all sides by rugged mountains 500 or 600 feet in height. The whole of this area is now a waste of ruins; dwelling-houses, palaces, temples, and triumphal arches, all prostrated together in undistinguishable confusion. The sides of the mountains are cut smooth, in a perpendicular direction, and filled with long and continued rows of dwelling-houses, temples, and tombs, excavated with va-

labour out of the solid rock; and while their summits present Nature in her wildest and most savage form, their bases are adorned with all the beauty of architecture and art, with columns, and porticoes, and pediments, and ranges of corridors, enduring as the mountains out of which they are hewn, and fresh as if the work of a generation scarcely yet gone by.

Nothing can be finer than the immense rocky rampart which encloses the city. Strong, firm, and immovable as Nature itself, it seems to deride the walls of cities, and the puny fortifications of skilful engineers. The only access is by clambering over this wall of stone, practicable only in one place, or by an entrance the most extraordinary that Nature, in her wildest freaks, has ever framed. The loftiest portals ever raised by the hands of man, the proudest monuments of architectural skill and daring, sink into insignificance by the comparison. It is, perhaps, the most wonderful object in the world, except the ruins of the city to which it forms the entrance. Unfortunately, I did not enter by this door, but by clambering over the mountains at the other end; and when I stood upon the summit of the mountain, though I looked down upon the vast area filled with ruined buildings and heaps of rubbish, and saw the mountain sides cut away so as to form a level surface, and presenting long ranges of doors in successive tiers or stories, the dwelling and burial-places of a people long since passed away; and though immediately before me was the excavated front of a large and beautiful temple, I was disappointed. I had read the unpublished description of Captains Irby and Mangles. Several times the sheik had told me, in the most positive manner, that there was no other entrance; and I was moved to indignation at the marvellous and exaggerated, not to say false representations, as I thought, of the only persons who had given any account of this wonderful entrance. I was disappointed, too, in another matter. Burekhardt had been accosted, immediately upon his entry, by a large party of Bedouins, and been suffered to remain but a very short time. Messrs Legh, Banks, Irby, and Mangles, had been opposed by hundreds of Bedouins, who swore "that they should never enter their territory nor drink of their waters," and "that they would shoot them like dogs if they attempted it." And I expected some immediate opposition from at least the thirty or forty, fewer than whom, the sheik had told me, were never to be found in Wady Moussa. I expected a scene of some kind; but at the entrance of the city there was not a creature to dispute our passage; its portals were wide open, and we passed along the stream down into the area, and still no man came to oppose us. We moved to the extreme end of the area; and when in the act of dismounting at the foot of the rock on which stood the temple that had constantly faced us, we saw one solitary Arab, straggling along without any apparent object, a mere wanderer among the ruins; and it is a not uninteresting fact, that this poor Bedouin was the only living being we saw in the desolate city of Petra. After gazing at us for a few moments from a distance, he came towards us, and in a few moments was sitting down to pipes and coffee with my companions. I again asked the sheik for the other entrance, and he again told me there was none; but I could not believe him, and set out to look for it myself; and although in my search I had already seen enough abundantly to repay me for all my difficulties in getting there, I could not be content without finding this desired avenue.

In front of the great temple, the pride and beauty of Petra, of which more hereafter, I saw a narrow opening in the rocks, exactly corresponding with my conception of the object for which I was seeking. A full stream of water was gushing through it, and filling up the whole mouth of the passage. Mounted on the shoulders of one of my Bedouins, I got him to carry me through the swollen stream at the mouth of the opening, and set me down on a dry place a little above, whence I began to pick my way, occasionally taking to the shoulders of my follower, and continued to advance more than a mile. I was beyond all peradventure in the great entrance I

was seeking. There could not be two such, and I should have gone on to the extreme end of the ravine, but my Bedouin suddenly refused me the further use of his shoulders. He had been some time objecting and begging me to return, and now positively refused to go any farther; and, in fact, turned about himself. I was anxious to proceed, but I did not like wading up to my knees in the water, nor did I feel very resolute to go where I might expose myself to danger, as he seemed to intimate. While I was hesitating, another of my men came running up the ravine, and shortly after him Paul and the sheik, breathless with haste, and crying in low gutturals, "El Arab! el Arab!"—"The Arabs! the Arabs!" This was enough for me. I had heard so much of El Arab that I had become nervous. It was like the cry of Delilah in the ears of the sleeping Samson, "The Philistines be upon thee." At the other end of the ravine was an encampment of the El Alouins; and the sheik, having due regard to my communication about money matters, had shunned this entrance to avoid bringing upon me this horde of tribute-gatherers for a participation in the spoils. Without any disposition to explore farther, I turned towards the city; and it was now that I began to feel the powerful and indelible impression that must be produced on entering, through this mountainous passage, the excavated city of Petra.

For about two miles it lies between high and precipitous ranges of rocks, from 500 to 1000 feet in height, standing as if torn asunder by some great convulsion, and barely wide enough for two horsemen to pass abreast. A swelling stream rushes between them; the summits are wild and broken; in some places overhanging the opposite sides, casting the darkness of night upon the narrow defile; then receding and forming an opening above, through which a strong ray of light is thrown down, and illuminates with the blaze of day the frightful chasm below. Wild fig-trees, oleanders, and ivy, were growing out of the rocky sides of the cliffs hundreds of feet above our heads; the eagle was screaming above us; all along were the open doors of tombs, forming the great necropolis of the city; and at the extreme end was a large open space, with a powerful body of light thrown down upon it, and exhibiting in one full view the façade of a beautiful temple, hewn out of the rock, with rows of Corinthian columns and ornaments, standing out fresh and clear, as if but yesterday from the hands of the sculptor. Though coming directly from the banks of the Nile, where the preservation of the temples excites the admiration and astonishment of every traveller, we were roused and excited by the extraordinary beauty and excellent condition of the great temple at Petra. Even in coming upon it, as we did, at disadvantage, I remember that Paul, who was a passionate admirer of the arts, when he first obtained a glimpse of it, involuntarily cried out, and moving on to the front with a vivacity I never saw him exhibit before or afterwards, clapped his hands, and shouted in ecstacy. To the last day of our being together he was in the habit of referring to his extraordinary fit of enthusiasm when he first came upon that temple; and I can well imagine that, entering by this narrow defile, with the feelings roused by its extraordinary and romantic wildness and beauty, the first view of that superb façade must produce an effect which could never pass away. Even now, that I have returned to the pursuits and thought-engrossing incidents of a life in the busiest city in the world, often in situations as widely different as light from darkness, I see before me the façade of that temple; neither the Coliseum at Rome, grand and interesting as it is, nor the ruins of the Acropolis at Athens, nor the Pyramids, nor the mighty temples of the Nile, are so often present to my memory.

The whole temple, its columns, ornaments, porticoes, and porches, are cut out from and form part of the solid rock; and this rock, at the foot of which the temple stands like a mere print, towers several hundred feet above, its face cut smooth to the very summit, and

the top remaining wild and misshapen as Nature made it. The whole area before the temple is perhaps an acre in extent, enclosed on all sides except at the narrow entrance, and an opening to the left of the temple, which leads into the area of the city by a pass through perpendicular rocks 500 or 600 feet in height.

It is not my design to enter into the details of the many monuments in this extraordinary city; but to give a general idea of the character of all the excavations, I cannot do better than go within the temple. Ascending several broad steps, we entered under a colonnade of four Corinthian columns, about thirty-five feet high, into a large chamber of some fifty feet square and twenty-five feet high. The outside of the temple is richly ornamented, but the interior is perfectly plain, there being no ornament of any kind upon the walls or ceiling; on each of the three sides is a small chamber for the reception of the dead; and on the back wall of the innermost chamber I saw the names of Messrs Legh, Banks, Irby, and Mangles, the four English travellers who with so much difficulty had effected their entrance to the city; of Messieurs Laborde and Linant, and the two Englishmen and Italian of whom I have before spoken; and two or three others, which, from the character of the writing, I supposed to be the names of attendants upon some of these gentlemen. These were the only names recorded in the temple; and, besides Burekhardt, no other traveller had ever reached it. I was the first American who had ever been there. Many of my countrymen, probably, as was the case with me, have never known the existence of such a city; and, independently of all personal considerations, I confess that I felt what I trust was not an inexcusable pride, in writing upon the innermost wall of that temple the name of an American citizen; and under it, and flourishing on its own account in temples, and tombs, and all the most conspicuous places in Petra, is the illustrious name of "Paulo Nuzzo, dragomano."

Leaving the temple and the open area on which it fronts, and following the stream, we entered another defile much broader than the first, on each side of which were ranges of tombs, with sculptured doors and columns; and on the left, in the bosom of the mountain, hewn out of the solid rock, is a large theatre, circular in form, the pillars in front fallen, and containing thirty-three rows of seats, capable of containing more than 3000 persons. Above the corridor was a range of doors opening to chambers in the rocks, the seats of the princes and wealthiest inhabitants of Petra, and not unlike a row of private boxes in a modern theatre.

The whole theatre is at this day in such a state of preservation, that if the tenants of the tombs around could once more rise into life, they might take their old places on its seats, and listen to the declamation of their favourite player. To me the stillness of a ruined city is nowhere so impressive as when sitting on the steps of its theatre; once thronged with the gay and pleasure-seeking, but now given up to solitude and desolation. Day after day these seats had been filled, and the now silent rocks had echoed to the applauding shout of thousands; and little could an ancient Edomite imagine that a solitary stranger, from a then unknown world, would one day be wandering among the ruins of his proud and wonderful city, meditating upon the fate of a race that has for ages passed away. Where are ye, inhabitants of this desolate city?—ye who once sat on the seats of this theatre, the young, the high-born, the beautiful, and brave, who once rejoiced in your riches and power, and lived as if there were no grave? Where are ye now? Even the very tombs, whose open doors are stretching away in long ranges before the eyes of the wondering traveller, cannot reveal the mystery of your doom: your dry bones are gone; the robber has invaded your graves, and your very ashes have been swept away to make room for the wandering Arab of the desert.

But we need not stop at the days when a gay population was crowding to this theatre. In the earliest records of recorded time, long before this theatre was

built, and long before the tragic muse was known, a great city stood here. When Esau, having sold his birthright for a mess of pottage, came to his portion among the mountains of Seir; and Edom, growing in power and strength, became presumptuous and haughty, until, in her pride, when Israel prayed a passage through her country, Edom said unto Israel, "Thou shalt not pass by me, lest I come out against thee with the sword."

Amid all the terrible denunciations against the land of Idumea, "her cities and the inhabitants thereof," this proud city among the rocks, doubtless for its extraordinary sins, was always marked as a subject of extraordinary vengeance. "I have sworn by myself, saith the Lord, that Bozrah (the strong or fortified city) shall become a desolation, a reproach, and a waste, and a curse, and all the cities thereof shall be perpetual waste. Lo, I will make thee small among the heathen, and despised among men. Thy terriblest hath deceived thee, and the pride of thy heart, oh thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rocks, that holdest the height of the hill; though thou shouldst make thy nest as high as the eagle, I will bring thee down from thence, saith the Lord."—Jeremiah xlix., 13, 16. "They shall call the nobles thereof to the kingdom, but none shall be there, and all her princes shall be nothing; and thorns shall come up in her palaces, nettles and brambles in the fortresses thereof, and it shall be a habitation for dragons and a court for owls."—Isaiah xxiv., 14, 15.

I would that the sceptic could stand as I did among the ruins of this city among the rocks, and there open the sacred book and read the words of the inspired penman, written when this desolate place was one of the greatest cities in the world. I see the scold arrested, his cheek pale, his lip quivering, and his heart quaking with fear, as the ruined city cries out to him in a voice loud and powerful as that of one risen from the dead; though he would not believe Moses and the prophets, he believes the handwriting of God himself in the desolation and eternal ruin around him. We sat on the steps of the theatre, and made our noonday meal; our drink was from the pure stream that rolled down at our feet. Paul and myself were alone. We scared the partridge before us as we ascended, and I broke for a moment the stillness of the desolate city by the report of my gun.

All around the theatre, in the sides of the mountains, were ranges of tombs; and directly opposite they rose in long tiers one above another. Having looked into those around the theatre, I crossed to those opposite; and, carefully as the brief time I had would allow, examined the whole range. Though I had no small experience in exploring catacombs and tombs, these were so different from any I had seen, that I found it difficult to distinguish the habitations of the living from the chambers of the dead. The figades or architectural decorations of the front were everywhere handsome; and in this they differed materially from the tombs in Egypt. In the latter the doors were simply an opening in the rock, and all the grandeur and beauty of the work within; while here the door was always imposing in its appearance, and the interior was generally a simple chamber, unpainted and unsculptured.

I say that I could not distinguish the dwellings from the tombs, but this was not invariably the case; some were clearly tombs, for there were pits in which the dead had been laid, and others were as clearly dwellings, being without a place for the deposit of the dead. One of these last particularly attracted my attention. It consisted of one large chamber, having on one side, at the foot of the wall, a stone bench about a foot high, and two or three broad, in form like the divans in the East at the present day; at the other end were several small apartments, hewn out of the rock, with partition walls left between them like stalls in a stable, and these had probably been the sleeping apartments of the different members of the family, the mysteries of bars and bolts, of folding-doors and third stories, being unknown in the days of the ancient Edomites. There were no paintings or decorations of any kind within the chamber; but the

rock out of which it was hewn, like the whole stony rampart that encircled the city, was of a peculiarity and beauty that I never saw elsewhere, being a dark ground, with veins of white, blue, red, purple, and sometimes scarlet and light orange, running through it in rainbow streaks; and within the chambers, where there had been no exposure to the action of the elements, the freshness and beauty of the colours in which these waving lines were drawn, gave an effect hardly inferior to that of the paintings in the tombs of the kings at Thebes. From its high and commanding position, and the unusual finish of the work, this house, if so it may be called, had no doubt been the residence of one who had strutted his hour of brief existence among the wealthy citizens of Petra. In front was a large table of rock, forming a sort of court for the excavated dwelling, where probably, year after year, in this beautiful climate, the Edomite of old sat under the gathering shades of evening, sometimes looking down upon the congregated thousands and the stirring scenes in the theatre beneath, or beyond upon the palaces and dwellings in the area of the then populous city.

Farther on in the same range, though, in consequence of the steps of the streets being broken, we were obliged to go down and ascend again before we could reach it, was another temple, like the first, cut out of the solid rock, and, like the first, too, having for its principal ornament a large urn, shattered and bruisèd by musket balls; for the ignorant Arab, believing that gold is concealed in it, day after day, as he passes, levels at it his murderous gun, in the vain hope to break the vessel and scatter a golden shower on the ground.

But it would be unprofitable to dwell upon details. In the exceeding interest of the scene around me, I hurried from place to place, utterly insensible to physical fatigue; and being entirely alone, and having a full and undisturbed range of the ruins, I clambered up broken staircases and among the ruins of streets; and, looking into one excavation, passed on to another and another, and made the whole circuit of the desolate city. There, on the spot, every thing had an interest which I cannot give in description; and if the reader has followed me so far, I have too much regard for him to drag him about after me as I did Paul. I am warned of the consequences by what occurred with that excellent and patient follower; for before the day was over, he was completely worn out with fatigue.

The shades of evening were gathering around us as we stood for the last time on the steps of the theatre. Perfect as has been the fulfilment of the prophecy in regard to this desolate city, in no one particular has its truth been more awfully verified than in the complete destruction of its inhabitants; in the extermination of the race of the Edomites. In the same day, and by the voice of the same prophets, came the separate denunciations against the descendants of Israel and Edom, declaring against both a complete change in their temporal condition; and while the Jews have been dispersed in every country under heaven, and are still, in every land, a separate and unmixed people, "the Edomites have been cut off for ever, and there is not any remaining of the house of Esau."

"Wisdom has departed from Teman, and understanding out of the mount of Esau?" and the miserable Arab who now roams over the land cannot appreciate or understand the works of its ancient inhabitants. In the summer he cultivates the few valleys in which seed will grow, and in the winter makes his habitation in the tombs; and, stimulated by vague and exaggerated traditional notions of the greatness and wealth of the people who have gone before him, his barbarous hand is raised against the remaining monuments of their arts; and as he breaks to atoms the sculptured stone, he expects to gather up their long-hidden treasures. I could have lingered for days on the steps of that theatre, for I never was at a place where such a crowd of associations pressed upon the mind. But the sheik was hurrying me away. From the first he had told me that I must not pass a night within the city; and begging me not to

tempt my fortune too rashly, he was perpetually urging me to make my retreat while there was yet time. He said that, if the Arabs at the other end of the great entrance heard of a stranger being there, they would be down upon me to a man, and, not content with extorting money, would certainly prevent my visiting the tomb of Aaron. He had touched the right chord; and considering that weeks or months could not impress the scene more strongly on my mind, and that I was no artist, and could not carry away on paper the plans and models of ancient art, I mounted my horse from the very steps of the theatre, and followed the sheik in his progress up the valley. Turning back from the theatre, the whole area of the city burst upon the sight at once, filled with crumbling masses of rock and stone, the ruined habitations of a people long since perished from the face of the earth, and encompassed on every side by high ranges of mountains; and the sides of these were cut smooth, even to the summit, hundreds of feet above my head as I rode past, and filled with long-continued ranges of open doors, the entrances to dwellings and tombs, of which the small connecting staircases were not visible at a distance, and many of the tenements seemed utterly inaccessible.

Every moment the sheik was becoming more and more impatient; and, spurring my horse, I followed him on a gallop among the ruins. We ascended the valley, and rising to the summit of the rocky rampart, it was almost dark when we found ourselves opposite a range of tombs in the suburbs of the city. Here we dismounted; and selecting from among them one which, from its finish and dimensions, must have been the last abode of some wealthy Edomite, we prepared to pass the night within its walls. I was completely worn out, when I threw myself on the rocky floor of the tomb. I had just completed one of the most interesting days in my life; for the singular character of the city, and the uncommon beauty of its ruins, its great antiquity, the prophetic denunciations of whose truth it was the witness, its loss for more than a thousand years to the civilised world, its very existence being known only to the wandering Arab, the difficulty of reaching it, and the hurried and dangerous manner in which I had reached it, gave a thrilling and almost fearful interest to the time and place, of which I feel it utterly impossible to convey any idea.

In the morning Paul and I had determined, when our companions should be asleep, to ascend Mount Hor by moonlight; but now we thought only of rest; and seldom has the pampered tenant of a palace lain down with greater satisfaction upon his canopied bed, than I did upon the stony floor of this tomb in Petra. In the front part of it was a large chamber, about twenty-five feet square and ten feet high; and behind this was another of smaller dimensions, furnished with receptacles for the dead, not arranged after the manner of shelves extending along the wall, as in the catacombs I had seen in Italy and Egypt, but cut lengthwise in the rock like ovens, so as to admit the insertion of the body with the feet foremost.

We built a fire in the outer chamber, thus lighting up the innermost recesses of the tombs; and after our evening meal, while sipping coffee and smoking pipes, the sheik congratulated me upon my extreme good fortune in having seen Petra without any annoyance from the Bedouins; adding, as usual, that it was a happy day for me when I saw his face at Cairo. He told me that he had never been to Wady Moussa without seeing at least thirty or forty Arabs, and sometimes 300 or 400; that when Abdel Hag (M. Linant) and M. Laborde visited Petra the first time, they were driven out by the Bedouins after remaining only five hours, and were chased down into the valley, M. Linant changing his dromedary every three hours on his way back to Akaba; that there he remained, pretending to be sick, for twenty-four days, every day feasting half the tribe; and during that time sending to Cairo for money, dresses, swords, guns, pistols, ammunition, &c., which he distributed among them so lavishly that the whole

tribe escorted him in triumph to Petra. This is so different from M. Laborde's account of his visit, that it cannot be true. I asked him about the visit of Messrs Legh and Banks, and Captains Irby and Mangles: and drawing close to me, so as not to be overheard by the rest, he told me that he remembered their visit well: that they came from Kerek with three sheiks and 300 or 400 men, and that the Bedouins of Wady Moussa turned out against them more than 2000 strong. His uncle was then the sheik, and he himself a young man: and if his account is true, which cannot however be, as it is entirely different from theirs, he began the life of a knave so young, that though he had no great field for exercise, he ought then to have been something of a proficient; he said, that while they were negotiating and parleying, one of the strange Arabs slipped into his hands a purse with 100 pieces of gold, which he showed to his uncle, and proposed to him that they should use their influence to procure the admission of the strangers, and divide the money between them; and so wrought upon the old man that he procured their entrance, telling the tribe that one of the strangers was sick, and, if they did not admit them into Wady Moussa, he would take them to his tent; and added the sheik, his eyes sparkling with low cunning, my uncle and I ate the whole of that gold without any one of the tribe knowing any thing about it.

One piece of information he gave me, which I thought very likely to be true; that the road to Petra, and thence through Idumea in any direction, never could be pursued with assurance of safety, or become a frequented route, because the Bedouins would always be lying in wait for travellers, to exact tribute or presents; and although a little might sometimes content them, at others their demands would be exorbitant, and quarrels and bad consequences to the traveller would be almost sure to follow; and he added, in reference to our visit, that as soon as the Arabs should hear of a stranger having been at Petra, they would be down in swarms, and perhaps even now would follow us into the valley. I was satisfied that I had made a fortunate escape, not, perhaps, from personal danger, but from grinding exactions, if not from robbery; and, congratulating myself upon my good fortune so far, I began to feel my way for what I now regarded as important as before I had thought the journey to Petra, namely, a visit to the tomb of Aaron.

My companions opposed my going to it, saying that no Christian had ever done so; and that none but Mussulmans went there, and they only to sacrifice a sheep upon the tomb. I told them that I also designed to sacrifice, and that, like them, we regarded Aaron as a prophet; that my visit to Petra was nothing unless I made the sacrifice; and that my conscience would not be at ease unless I performed it according to my vow. This notice of my pious purpose smoothed some of the difficulties, as the Arabs knew that after the sacrifice the sheep must be eaten. The sheik was much more liberal or more indifferent than the rest, and my desire was finally assented to; although, in winding up a long discussion about the pedigree of Aaron, one of them held out to the last that Aaron was a Mussulman, and would not believe that he lived before Mahommed. He had an indefinite idea that Mahommed was the greatest man that ever lived, and in his mind this was not consistent with the idea of any one having lived before him.

My plans for the morrow being all arranged, the Bedouins stretched themselves out in the outer chamber, while I went within; and seeking out a tomb as far back as I could find, I crawled in, and fast, as I found myself very much in the condition of a man buried alive. But never did a man go to his tomb with so much satisfaction as I felt. I was very tired; the night was cold, and here I was completely sheltered. The old Edomite for whom the tomb was made, never slept in it more quietly than I. Little did he imagine that his bones would be scattered to the winds, and a straggling band of hordes of Bedouins, born and living

thousands of miles from each other, would be sleeping quietly in his tomb, alike ignorant and careless of him for whom it was built.

CHAPTER XXII.

A bold Endeavour.—Unexpected Obstacles.—Disadvantage of a Dress.—The Dead Sea.—A New Project.—The Tomb of Aaron.—An Alarm.—Descent of the Mountain.—An awkward Meeting.—Poetic Licence.—All's Well that ends Well.—Unexpected Difficulties.—Arab Notions of Travel.

A MAN rising from a tomb with all his clothes on does not require much time for the arrangement of his toilet. In less than half an hour we had breakfasted, and were again on our way. Forgetting all that had engrossed my thoughts and feelings the day before, I now fixed my eyes upon the tomb of Aaron, on the summit of Mount Hor. The mountain was high, towering above all the rest, bare and rugged to its very summit, without a tree or even a bush growing on its sterile side; and our road lay directly along its base. The Bedouins again began to show an unwillingness to allow my visit to the tomb; and the sheik himself told me that it would take half the day, and perhaps be the means of bringing upon me some of the horde I had escaped. I saw that they were disposed to prevent me from accomplishing my object; and I felt sure that, if we met any strange Arabs, my purpose would certainly be defeated. I suspected them of stratagem, and began to think of resorting to stratagem for myself. They remembered the sheep, however, and told me that the sacrifice could as well be performed at the base as on the summit of the mountain; but this, of course, would not satisfy my conscience.

With my eyes constantly fixed on the top of the mountain, I had thought for some time that it would not be impracticable to ascend from the side on which I was. Paul and I examined the localities as carefully as a couple of engineers seeking an assailable place to scale the wall of a fortified city; and afraid to wait till they had matured some plan of opposing me, I determined to take them by surprise; and throwing myself from my horse, and telling Paul to say we would climb the mountain here, and meet them on the other side, I was almost out of hearing before they had recovered from their astonishment. Paul followed me, and the sheik and his men stood for some time without moving, irresolute what to do; and it was not until we had advanced considerably on the mountain, that we saw the caravan again slowly moving along its base. None of them offered to accompany us, though we should have been glad to have one or two with us on our expedition.

For some distance we found the ascent sufficiently smooth and easy—much more so than that of Mount Sinai—and, so far as we could see before us, it was likely to continue the same all the way up. We were railing at the sheik for wanting to carry us round to the other side, and congratulating ourselves upon having attempted it here, when we came to a yawning and precipitous chasm, opening its horrid jaws almost from the very base of the mountain. From the distance at which we had marked out our route, the inequalities of surface could not be distinguished, but here it was quite another thing. We stood on the brink of the chasm, and looked at each other in blank amazement; and at a long distance, as they wound along the base of the mountain, I thought I could see a quiet smile of derision lighting up the grim visages of my Bedouin companions. We stood upon the edge of the chasm, looking down into its deep abyss, like the spirits of the departed lingering on the shores of the Styx, vainly wishing for a ferryman to carry us over, and our case seemed perfectly hopeless without some such aid. But the days when genii and spirits lent their kind assistance to the sons of men are gone; if a man finds himself in a ditch, he must get out of it as well as he can, and so it was with us on the brink of this chasm. Bad, however, as our prospect in looking forward, we had not yet begun to look back; and as soon as we saw that there

was no possibility of getting over it, we began to descend; and groping, sliding, jumping, and holding on with hands and feet, we reached the bottom of the gully; and, after another hard half hour's toil, were resting our wearied limbs upon the opposite brink, at about the same elevation as that of the place from which we had started.

This success encouraged us; and without caring or thinking how we should come down again, we felt only the spirit of the seaman's cry to the trembling sailor boy, "Look aloft, you lubber;" and looking aloft, we saw through a small opening before us, though still at a great distance, the white dome that covered the tomb of the first high-priest of Israel. Again with stout hearts we resumed our ascent; but, as we might reasonably have supposed, that which we had passed was not the only chasm in the mountains. What had appeared to us slight inequalities of surface, we found great fissures and openings, presenting themselves before us in quick succession; not, indeed, as absolute and insurmountable barriers to farther progress, but affording us only the encouragement of a bare possibility of crossing them. The whole mountain, from its base to its summit, was rocky and naked, affording not a tree or bush to assist us; and all that we had to hold on by were the rough and broken corners of the porous sandstone rocks, which crumbled in our hands and under our feet, and more than once put us in danger of our lives. Several times, after desperate exertion, we sat down perfectly discouraged at seeing another and another chasm before us, and more than once we were on the point of giving up the attempt, thinking it impossible to advance any farther; but we had come so far, and taken so little notice of our road, that it was almost as impossible to return; and a distant and accidental glimpse of the whitened dome would revive our courage, and stimulate us to another effort. Several times I mounted on Paul's shoulders, and with his help reached the top of a precipitous or overhanging rock, where, lying down with my face over the brink, I took up the pistols, swords, &c., and then helped him up in turn; sometimes, again, he was the climber, and my shoulders were the stepping-stone; and in the rough grasps that we gave each other, neither thought of the relation of master and servant. On the sides of that rugged mountain, so desolate, so completely removed from the world, whose difficult ascent had been attempted by few human footsteps since the days when "Moses and Aaron went up in sight of all the congregation," the master and the man lay on the same rock, encountering the same fatigues and dangers, and inspired by the same hopes and fears. My dress was particularly bad for the occasion; for, besides the encumbrance of pistols and a sword, my long silk gown and large sleeves were a great annoyance, as I wanted every moment a long reach of the arm, and full play of the legs; even our light Turkish slippers were impediments in our desperate scramble, and we were obliged to pull them off, for the better hold that could be taken with the naked feet.

It will be remembered that we were ascending on the eastern side of the mountain; and in one of our pauses to breathe, when about half way up, we looked back upon the high rampart of rocks that enclosed the city of Pétrea; and on the outside of the rock we saw the façade of a beautiful temple, resembling in its prominent features, but seeming larger and more beautiful than, the Klasic of Elharah, opposite the principal entrance of the city. I have no doubt that a visit to that temple would have abundantly repaid me for the day I should have lost; for besides its architectural beauty, it would have been curious to examine, and, if possible, discover why it was constructed, standing alone outside of the city, and, as it appeared, apart from every thing connected with the habitations of the Edonites. But as yet we had work enough before us. Discumbering ourselves of all our useless trappings, shoes, pistols, swords, tobacco-pouch, and water-sack, which we tied together in a sash and the roll of a turban, after the most arduous upward scramble I ever accomplished,

we attained the bald and hoary summit of the mountain; and before we had time to look around, at the extreme end of the desolate valley of El Ghor, our attention was instantly attracted and engrossed by one of the most interesting objects in the world, and Paul and I exclaimed at the same moment, "The Dead Sea!" Lying between the barren mountains of Arabia and Judea, presenting to us from that height no more than a small, calm, and silvery surface, was that mysterious sea which rolled its dark waters over the guilty cities of Sodom and Gomorrah; over whose surface, according to the superstition of the Arabs, no bird can fly, and in whose waters no fish can swim; constantly receiving in its greedy bosom the whole body of the Jordan, but, unlike all other waters, sending forth no tribute to the ocean. A new idea entered my mind. I would follow the desert valley of El Ghor to the shores of the Dead Sea, along whose savage borders I would coast to the ruined Jericho and the hallowed Jordan, and search in its deadly waters for the ruins of the doomed and blasted cities.

If I had never stood on the top of Mount Sinai, I should say that nothing could exceed the desolation of the view from the summit of Mount Hor, its most striking objects being the dreary and rugged mountains of Seir, bare and naked of trees and verdure, and heaving their lofty summits to the skies, as if in a vain and fruitless effort to excel the mighty pile, on the top of which the high-priest of Israel was buried. Before me was a land of barrenness and ruin, a land accursed by God, and against which the prophets had set their faces; the land of which it is thus written in the Book of Life—"Moreover, the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, set thy face against Mount Seir, and prophesy against it, and say unto it, Thus saith the Lord God, Behold, oh Mount Seir, I am against thee, and I will stretch out mine hand against thee, and I will make thee most desolate. I will lay thy cities waste, and thou shalt be desolate; and thou shalt know that I am the Lord. Because thou hast had a perpetual hatred, and hast shed the blood of the children of Israel by the force of the sword in the time of their calamity, in the time that their iniquity had an end: therefore, as I live, saith the Lord God, I will prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee: sith thou hast not hated blood, even blood shall pursue thee. Thus will I make Mount Seir most desolate, and cut off from it him that passeth out and him that returneth. And I will fill his mountains with his slain men: in thy hills, and in thy valleys, and in all thy rivers, shall they fall that are slain with the sword. I will make thee perpetual desolations, and thy cities shall not return: and ye shall know that I am the Lord."—Ezekiel, xxxv.

The Bible account of the death of Aaron is—"And the children of Israel, even the whole congregation, journeyed from Kadesh, and came unto Mount Hor. And the Lord spake unto Moses and Aaron in Mount Hor, by the coast of the land of Edom, saying, Aaron shall be gathered unto his people: for he shall not enter into the land which I have given unto the children of Israel, because ye rebelled against my word at the water of Meribah. Take Aaron and Eleazar his son, and bring them up unto Mount Hor; and strip Aaron of his garments and put them upon Eleazar his son: and Aaron shall be gathered unto his people, and shall die there. And Moses did as the Lord commanded: and they went up unto Mount Hor in the sight of all the congregation. And Moses stripped Aaron of his garments, and put them upon Eleazar his son; and Aaron died there in the top of the mount: and Moses and Eleazar came down from the mount. And when all the congregation saw that Aaron was dead, they mourned for Aaron thirty days, even all the house of Israel."—Numbers, xx.

On the very "top of the mount," revered alike by Mussulmans and Christians, is the tomb of Aaron. The building is about thirty feet square, containing a single chamber; in front of the door is a tombstone, in form

like the oblong slabs in our churchyards, but larger and higher; the top rather larger than the bottom, and covered with a ragged pall of faded red cotton in shreds and patches. At its head stood a high round stone, on which the Mussulman offers his sacrifices. The stone was blackened with smoke; stains of blood and fragments of burnt brush were still about it; all was ready but the victim; and when I saw the reality of the preparations, I was very well satisfied to have avoided the necessity of conforming to the Mussulman custom. A few ostrich eggs, the usual ornaments of a mosque, were suspended from the ceiling, and the rest of the chamber was perfectly bare. After going out, and from the very top of the tomb surveying again and again the desolate and dreary scene that presented itself on every side, always terminating with the distant view of the Dead Sea, I returned within; and examining once more the tomb and the altar, walked carefully around the chamber. There was no light except what came from the door; and in groping in the extreme corner on one side, my foot descended into an aperture in the floor. I put it down carefully, and found a step, then another, and another, evidently a staircase leading to a chamber below. I went down till my head was on the level of the floor, but could see nothing: all was dark, and I called to Paul to strike a light. Most provokingly, he had no materials with him. He generally carried a flint and steel for lighting his pipe with; but now, when I most wanted it, he had none. I went back to the staircase, and, descending to the bottom of the steps, attempted to make out what the place might be; but it was utterly impossible. I could not see even the steps on which I stood. I again came out, and made Paul search in all his pockets for the steel and flint. My curiosity increased with the difficulty of gratifying it; and in a little while, when the thing seemed to be utterly impossible, with this hole unexplored, Petra, Mount Hor, and the Dead Sea, appeared to lose half their interest. I ran up and down the steps, inside and out, abused Paul, and struck stones together in the hopes of eliciting a spark; but all to no purpose. I was in an agony of despair, when I found myself grasping convulsively the handle of my pistol. A light broke suddenly upon me. A pile of dry brush and cotton rags lay at the foot of the sacrificial altar; I fired my pistol into it, gave one puff, and the whole mass was in a blaze. Each seized a burning brand, and we descended. At the foot of the steps was a narrow chamber, at the other end an iron grating, opening in the middle, and behind the grating a tomb cut in the naked rock, guarded and revered as the tomb of Aaron. I tore aside the rusty grating, and thrusting in my arm up to the shoulders, touched the hallowed spot. The rocks and mountains were echoing the discharge of my pistol, like peals of crashing thunder; and while, with the burning brand in one hand, I was thrusting the other through the grating, the deafening reverberations seemed to rebuke me for an act of sacrilege, and I rushed up the steps like a guilty and fear-stricken criminal. Suddenly I heard from the foot of the mountain a quick and irregular discharge of fire-arms, which again resounded in loud echoes through the mountains. It was far from my desire that the bigoted Mussulmans should come upon me, and find me with my pistol still smoking in my hand, and the brush still burning in the tomb of the prophet; and tearing off a piece of the ragged pall, we hurried from the place and dashed down the mountain on the opposite side, with a speed and recklessness that only fear could give. If there was room for question between a scramble or a jump, we gave the jump; and when we could not jump, our shoes were off in a moment; one leaned over the brow of the precipice, and gave the other his hand, and down we went, allowing nothing to stop us. Once for a moment we were at a loss; but Paul, who, in the excitement of one successful leap after another, had become amazingly confident, saw a small pool of water, and made for it with the glorious hope that here water descended we could; and the suggestion proved correct, although the water found

much less difficulty in getting down than we did. In short, after an ascent the most toilsome, and a descent the most hair-brained and perilous it was ever my fortune to accomplish, in about half an hour we were at the base of the mountain, but still hurrying on to join our escort.

We had only to cross a little valley to reach the regular camel-track, when we saw from behind a slightly elevated range of rocks the head and long neck of a dromedary; a Bedouin was on his back, but, riding sidewise, did not see us. Another came, and another, and another; then two or three, and, finally, half a dozen at a time, the blackest, grimmest, and ugliest vagabonds I had ever yet seen. A moment before Paul and I had both complained of fatigue, but it is astonishing how the sight of these honest men revived us; any one seeing the manner in which we scoured along the side of the mountain, would have thought that all our consciousness was in our legs. The course we were pursuing when we first saw them would have brought us on the regular camel-track a little in advance of them, but now our feet seemed to cling to the sides of the mountain. We were in a humour for almost calling on the rocks to fall upon us and cover us; and if there had been a good dodging-place, I am afraid I should here have to say that we had taken advantage of it until the very unwelcome caravan passed by; but the whole surface of the country, whether on mountain side or in valley's depth, was bare and naked as a floor; there was not a bush to obstruct the view; and soon we stood revealed to these unpleasant witnesses of our agility. They all shouted to us at once; and we returned the salute, looking at them over our shoulders, but pushing on as fast as we could walk. In civilised society, our course of proceeding would have been considered a decided cut; but the unmanly savages did not know when they received a civil cut, and were bent on cultivating our acquaintance. With a loud shout, slipping off their camels and whipping up their dromedaries, they left the track, and dashed across the valley to intercept us. I told Paul that it was all over, and now we must brazen it out; and we had just time to turn around and reconnoitre for a moment, before we were almost trodden under foot by their dromedaries.

With the accounts that we had read and heard of these Bedouins, it was not a pleasant thing to fall into their hands alone; and without the protection of the sheik, we had reason to apprehend bad treatment. We were on a rising ground; and as they came bounding towards us, I had time to remark that there was not a gun or pistol among them; but every one, old and young, big and little, carried an enormous sword slung over his back, the hilt coming up towards the left shoulder, and in his hand a large club, with a knot at the end as large as a doubled fist. Though I had no idea of making any resistance, it was a satisfaction to feel that they might have some respect for our firearms; as even a Bedouin's logic can teach him, that though a gun or pistol can kill but one, no man in a crowd can tell but that he may be that one. Our armory, however, was not in the best condition for immediate use. I had fired one of my pistols in the tomb of Aaron, and lost the flint of the other; and Paul had burst the priming cap on one of his barrels, and the other was charged with bird-shot.

It seemed that there was nothing hostile in their intentions; for though they came upon us with a wild and clamorous shout, their dark eyes appeared to sparkle with delight as they shook us by the hand, and their tumultuous greeting, to compare small things with great, reminded me of the wild welcome which the Arabs of Saladin gave to the litter of the Queen of England, when approaching the Diamond of the Desert on the shores of the Dead Sea. Nevertheless, I looked suspiciously upon all their demonstrations of good will; and though I returned all their greetings, even to the kiss on their black faces, I would rather have been looking at them through the bars of an iron grating. But Paul behaved like a hero, although he was a supreme coward, and

admitted it himself.* I knew that every thing depended upon him; but they had come upon us in such a hurry, and so few words had passed between us, that I had no idea how he stood affected. His first words reassured me; and really, if he had passed all his life in taming Bedouins, he could not have conducted himself more gallantly or sensibly. He shook hands with one, took a pipe from the mouth of another, kicked the dromedary of a third, and patted his owner on the back, smoking, laughing, and talking all the time, ringing the changes upon the Sheik El Alouin, Habeeb Effendi, and Abdel Hasis. I knew that he was lying, from his remarkable amplitude of words, and from his constantly mixing up Abdel Hasis (myself) with the Habeeb Effendi, the prime minister of the pacha; but he was going on so smoothly that I had not the heart to stop him; and, besides, I thought he was playing for himself as well as for me, and I had no right to put him in danger by interfering. At length, all talking together, and Paul's voice rising above the rest, in force as well as frequency, we returned to the track, and proceeded forward in a body to find the sheik.

Not to be too heavy on Paul for the little wanderings of his tongue, I will barely mention such as he remembered himself. Beginning with a solemn assurance that we had not been in Wady Moussa or Petra (for this was his cardinal point), he affirmed that I was a Turk making a pilgrimage to the tomb of Aaron under a vow; and that, when Sheik El Alouin was at Cairo, the Habeeb Effendi had taken me to the sheik's tent, and had told him to conduct me to Djebel Haroun, or Mount Hor, and from thence to Hebron (Khalil), and that, if I arrived in safety, he, the Habeeb Effendi, would pay him well for it. We went on very well for a little while; but by and bye the Bedouins began talking earnestly among themselves, and a fine, wicked-looking boy, leaning down from the hump of his bare-backed dromedary, with sparkling eyes thrust out his hand and whispered bucksheesh; an old dried-up man echoed it in a hoarse voice directly in my ears; and one after another joined in, till the whole party, with their deep-toned gutturals, were croaking the odious and ominous demand that grated harshly on my nerves. Their black eyes were turned upon me with a keen and eager brightness; the harsh cry was growing louder every moment; and I had already congratulated myself upon having very little about my person, and Paul was looking over his shoulders, and flourishing the Habeeb Effendi and the Sheik El Alouin with as loud a voice as ever, but evidently with a fainting heart; bucksheesh, bucksheesh, bucksheesh, was drowning every other noise, when a sudden turn in the road brought us upon the sheik and his attendants. The whole party were in confusion; some were descending the bare sides of the mountains, others were coming down with their dromedaries upon a full run; the sheik's brother, on my horse, was galloping along the base; and the sheik himself, with his long red dress streaming in the wind, and his spear poised in the air, was dashing full speed across the plain. All seemed to catch a glimpse of us at the same moment, and at the same moment all stopped. The sheik stood for a little space, as if astonished and confounded at seeing us attended by such an escort; and then spurring again his fiery horse, moved a few paces towards us, and dismounting, struck his spear in the sand, and waited to receive us. The men came in from all quarters; and almost at the same moment all had gathered around the spear. The sheik seemed more alarmed than any of us, and Paul said he turned perfectly green. He had heard the report of the pistol, which had given him much uneasiness; the men had answered, and scattered themselves abroad in search

of us; and now seeing us come up in the midst of such a horde of Bedouins, he supposed that we had opened an account which could only be settled with blood.

The spirit of lying seemed to have taken possession of us. Thinking it would not be particularly acceptable to my pious friends to hear that I had been shooting in the tomb of Aaron, I told Paul to say that we had shot at a partridge. Even before saluting the strangers, with a hurried voice and quivering lip the sheik asked the cause of our firing; and when Paul told him, according to my instructions, that the cause was merely a simple bird, he was evidently relieved, although, unable to master his emotion, he muttered, "Cursed be the partridge, and cursed the gun, and cursed the hand that fired it." He then saluted our new companions, and all sat down around his long spear to smoke and drink coffee. I withdrew a little apart from them, and threw myself on the ground, and then began to suffer severely from a pain which, in my constant excitement since the cause of it occurred, I had not felt. The pistol which I fired in the tomb had been charged by Paul with two balls, and powder enough for a musket; and in the firing it recoiled with such force as to lay open the back of my hand to the bone. While I was binding it up as well as I could, the sheik was taking care that I should not suffer from my withdrawal. I have mentioned Paul's lying humour, and my own tendency that way; but the sheik cast all our doings in the shade; and particularly, as if it had been concerted beforehand, he averred most solemnly, and with the most determined look of truth imaginable, that we had not been in Wady Moussa; that I was a Turk on a pilgrimage to Mount Hor; that when he was in Cairo waiting for the caravan of pilgrims, the pacha sent the Habeeb Effendi to conduct him to the citadel, whither he went, and found me sitting on the divan by the side of the pacha; that the pacha took me by the hand, told him that I was his (the pacha's) particular friend, and that he, Sheik El Alouin, must conduct me first to Mount Hor, and then to Khalil or Hebron, and that he had given his head to Mahommed Ali for my safety. Paul was constantly moving between me and the group around the spear, and advising me of the progress of affairs; and when I heard who I was, and of my intimacy with the pacha, thinking that it was not exactly the thing for the particular friend of the Viceroy of Egypt to be sprawling on the sand, I got up, and, for the credit of my friend, put myself rather more upon my dignity. We remained here half an hour, when, seeing that matters became no worse, I took it for granted that they were better; and, after moving about a little, I began to arrange the saddle of my horse; and by and bye, as a sort of declaration of independence, I told them that I would ride on slowly, and they could follow at their convenience. The sheik remained to settle with my new friends. They were a caravan belonging to the El Alouin tribe, from the tents at the mouth of the entrance to Petra, now on their way to Gaza; and the sheik got rid of them by paying them something, and assuring them that we had not been in Petra.

Early in the afternoon a favourite camel was taken sick, stumbled, and fell; and we turned aside among the mountains, where we were completely hidden from the view of any passing Bedouins. The camel belonged to a former female slave of the sheik, whom he had manumitted and married to "his black," and to whom he had given a tent, and this camel as a dowry. He had been very anxious to get away as far as possible from Wady Moussa that night; but as soon as the accident happened, with the expression always uppermost in the mouth of the followers of the Prophet, "God wills it," he began to doctor the animal. It was strange to be brought into such immediate contact with the disciples of fatalism. If we did not reach the point we were aiming at, God willed it; if it rained, God willed it; and I suppose that, if they had happened to lay their black hands upon my throat, and stripped me of every thing I possessed, they would have piously raised their eyes to heaven, and cried, "God willed it." I remember

* Paul's explanation of his cowardice was somewhat remarkable, and perhaps veracious. He said that he was by nature brave enough, but that, when travelling in Syria, about three years before, with Mr Wellesley—a natural son of the Duke of Wellington—their party was stopped by Arabs, and their two kervashers, without any parley, raised their muskets and shot two of the poor savages dead before his face; which had such an effect upon his nerves as to give him a horror of lead and steel ever since.

TRAVELS IN ARABIA PETRÆA.

Mr Wolff,* the converted Jew missionary, told me an anecdote illustrating most strikingly the operation of this fatalist creed. He was in Aleppo during an earthquake, and saw two Turks smoking their pipes at the base of a house then tottering and ready to fall. He cried out to them and warned them of their peril; but they turned their eyes to the impending danger, and crying, "Allah! Allah," "God is merciful," were buried under the ruins.

It was not more than four o'clock when we pitched our tent. The Arabs all came under the shade to talk more at ease about our ascent of Mount Hor, and our adventure with the Bedouins of Wady Moussa; and wishing to show them that we Christians conceived ourselves to have some rights and interests in Aaron, I read to them, and Paul explained, the verses in the Bible recording his death and burial on the mountain. They were astonished and confounded at finding anything about him in a book; records of travel being entirely unknown to them, and books, therefore, regarded as of unquestionable veracity. The unbeliever of the previous night, however, was now as obstinate as if he had come from the banks of the Zuyder Zee. He still contended that the great high-priest of the Jews was a true follower of the Prophet; and I at last accommodated the matter by allowing that he was not a Christian.

That evening Paul and the sheik had a long and curious conversation. After supper, and over their pipes and coffee, the sheik asked him, as a brother, why we had come to that old city, Wady Moussa, so long a journey through the desert, spending so much money; and when Paul told him it was to see the ruins, he took the pipe from his mouth and said, "That will do very well before the world; but, between ourselves, there is something else;" and when Paul persisted in it, the sheik said to him, "Swear by your God that you do not come here to search for treasure;" and when Paul had sworn by his God, the sheik rose, and, pointing to his brother as the very acme of honesty and truth, said, after a moment's hesitation, "Osman, I would not believe it if that brother had sworn it. No," he continued, "the Europeans are too cunning to spend their money in looking at old stones. I know there is treasure in Wady Moussa; I have dug for it, and I mean to dig for it again;" and then again he asked Paul whether he had discovered any, and where; telling him that he would aid in removing it, without letting any of the rest of the tribe know any thing of the matter.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Valley of El Ghor.—Prophecies against Edom.—The Sheik's Treachery.—An Explosion.—Personnel of the Arabs.—Amusing Retrospect.—Money Troubles.—Aspect of the Valley.—Death of a Camel.—The Desert Horsem.—Native Salt.

EARLY in the morning we continued our descent down the mountain. Every turn was presenting us with a new view of wild, barren, and desolate scenery; and yet frequently, in little spots watered by the mountain streams, we saw shrubs, and patches of green grass, and odoriferous bushes. At about nine o'clock we were again at the foot of the mountains of Seir, again moving along the great desert valley of El Ghor; and again I saw, in imagination, at the extreme end of the valley,

* The Rev. Joseph Wolff is now in America, and has taken orders in the Episcopal Church. When I left Egypt, he had set out on his long-projected journey to Timbuctoo. He was taken sick in Abyssinia, and, unable to continue his progress, under great personal hardship and suffering, crossed the desert to the Red Sea, and went down to Bombay, at a greatly to be regretted time. Mr Wolff's health failed him. From his extensive travels in Asia and Africa, and his intimate knowledge of the manners and customs of the wild tribes that roam over their deserts, he was probably better qualified, and had a better chance of reaching that city, than any other man now living. It will probably be long before the attempt is made by another. Mr Wolff has not, however, abandoned his purpose. As soon as his health will permit, he will resume his journey; and if the difficulties are greater than now can be overcome, we may yet see him at the heart of Africa.

that mysterious sea which I had first looked upon from the summit of Mount Hor. I had spoken to the sheik before, and again I tried to prevail upon him to follow the valley directly to its shores; but he told me, as before, that he had never travelled that road, and the Bedouins (whom he had last night declared to be total strangers) were deadly enemies of his tribe; in short, it was impossible to prevail upon him; and, as I found afterwards, it would have been physically impossible to proceed along the mountainous borders of the sea.

We pursued the route which I had originally contemplated, through the land of Idumea. In regard to this part of my journey I wish to be particularly understood. Three different parties, at different times, and under different circumstances, after an interval of twenty years from its discovery by Burekhardt, had entered the city of Petra, but not one of them had passed through the land of Idumea. The route of the two Englishmen and Italian before referred to was not precisely known; and, with the exception of these three, I was the first traveller who had ever attempted to pass through the doomed and blighted Edom. In very truth, the prophecy of Isaiah, "None shall pass through it for ever and ever," seemed in a state of literal fulfilment. And now, without considering that I was perhaps braving the malediction of Heaven, but stimulated by the interest of associations connected with the denounced region, and the excitement of travelling over a new and untraced track, I was again moving along the desert valley of El Ghor.

In the present state of the world, it is an unusual thing to travel a road over which hundreds have not passed before. Europe, Asia, and even the sands of Africa, have been overrun and trodden down by the feet of travellers; but in the land of Idumea, the oldest country in the world, the aspect of every thing is new and strange, and the very sands you tread on have never been trodden by the feet of civilised human beings. The Bedouin roams over them like the Indian on our native prairies. The road along which the stranger journeys was far better known in the days of David and Solomon than it is now; and when he tires with the contemplation of barrenness and ruin, he may take the Bible in his hand, and read what Edom was, and how God, by the mouth of his prophets, cursed it; and see with his own eyes whether God's words be true. "Also Edom shall be a desolation; every one that goeth by it shall be astonished and shall hiss at all the plagues thereof. As in the overthrow of Sodom and Gomorrah, and the neighbouring cities thereof, saith the Lord, no man shall abide there, neither shall a son of man dwell in it. Therefore, hear the counsel of the Lord that he hath taken against Edom, and his purposes that he hath purposed against the inhabitants of Teman; surely the least of the flock shall draw them out; surely he shall make their habitations desolate with them. The earth is moved at the noise of their fall, at the cry, the noise thereof was heard in the Red Sea."—Jeremiah, xlix. And again,—"Thus saith the Lord God: Because that Edom hath dealt against the house of Judah by taking vengeance, and hath greatly offended, and revenged himself upon them; therefore, thus saith the Lord God, I will also stretch out mine hand upon Edom, and will cut off man and beast from it; and I will make it desolate from Teman."—Ezekiel, xxv. "Edom shall be a desolate wilderness."—Joel, iii. 19. "For three transgressions of Edom, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof."—Amos, i. 11. "Thus saith the Lord God concerning Edom: Behold, I have made thee small among the heathen: thou art greatly despised. The pride of thine heart hath deceived thee, thou that dwellest in the clefts of the rock, whose habitation is high; that saith in his heart, Who shall bring me down to the ground? Though thou exalt thyself as the eagle, and though thou set thy nest among the stars, thence will I bring thee down, saith the Lord. Shall I not in that day, saith the Lord, even destroy the wise men of Edom, and understanding out of the Mount of Seir? And thy mighty men, oh Teman, shall be

dismayed, to the end that every one of the Mount of Esau may be cut off by slaughter."—Obadiah, i.

All that day the sheik was particularly disagreeable. He was constantly talking of the favourable circumstances under which I had seen Petra, the bad character of the Bedouins, his devotion to me, and the generosity of M. Laborde and Abdel Hag. Ever since we started, one of his standing subjects of conversation with Paul had been what he expected from me; and to-day he pressed him particularly, to learn how much money I had brought with me. In the evening he came to my tent. He was in the habit of coming in every evening; and though I did not like him, I was in the habit of talking with him; and, according to the Arab custom, I always asked him to take a share of my meal. In general, appease the stomach, and you gain the heart of the Arab; but the viscera of my sheik were of impenetrable toughness. They produced none of that delicious repose, that "peace on earth, and good-will towards all men" spirit, which comes over an honest man after dinner. "A child might play with me," said the good-hearted son of Erin, as he threw himself back in his chair after dinner; but it was not so with my sheik. While he was eating my bread, he was plotting against me. I had smoked my pipe, and was lying on my mat reading, while a long conversation was going on between him and Paul, and my suspicions were aroused; for, on the part of the sheik, it was carried on in a low whisper. Though he knew I could not understand a word, he had the indefinite fear that indicates a guilty intention; and, as I looked up occasionally from my book, I saw his keen and cunning eyes turned towards me, and withdrawn as soon as they met mine. He remained there more than an hour, conversing in the same low whisper—I, meanwhile, watching his looks from time to time; and when he had gone, I asked what it all meant. At first Paul hesitated, but finally said, that it was the old story about Abdel Hag's generosity, and what he expected from me; for himself, the sheik expected at least 250 dollars; his brother would not expect so much; but that he was on an entirely different footing from the men; and he had concluded, by attempting to bribe Paul, to find out how much money I had with me, and how much I intended to give him; and, in going out, had slipped a couple of pieces into Paul's hand as an earnest. I have not troubled the reader with the many petty difficulties I had with the sheik, nor the many little circumstances that were constantly occurring to irritate me against him. I had been several times worked up to such a pitch that it was difficult to keep within the bounds of prudence; and I now broke through all restraints. From the beginning he had been exaggerating the danger of the road, and making a parade of devotion and the value of his services; and only the last night I had been driven out of my tent by four enormous fires which he had built at the four corners, as he said, for the men to sleep by and keep guard. I could hardly restrain myself then; but merely telling him that I would rather be robbed than roasted, I reserved myself for a better moment. The fact is, from the beginning I had been completely mistaken in my opinion touching the character of the chief of a powerful tribe of Bedouins. I had imagined him like the chief of a tribe of our own Indians, wild, savage, and lawless, but generous and true when he had once offered his protection; one who might rob or even murder, but who would never descend to the meanness of trickery and falsehood.

I had been smothering my feelings of contempt through the whole journey; but now I had seen Petra and Mount Hor, and it was a relief to have something to justify me in my own eyes in breaking through all restraint. I had caught him in the very act of baseness and villany, corrupting the faith of my servant; bribing under my own eyes, and while eating my bread, the only man on whom I could rely at all; and the proof of his treason, the accursed gold, was before me. With a loud voice I called him back to the tent, and charged him with his baseness, reproaching him that I

had come into the desert upon the faith of his promises, and he had endeavoured to corrupt my servant before my eyes; I told him that he was false and faithless; that I had before distrusted him, but that I now despised him, and would not give him a para till we got to Hebron, nor would I tell him how much I would give him then; but that, if he would take himself off and leave me alone in the desert, I would pay him the price of his camels; I assured him that, bad as he represented them, I did not believe there was a worse Arab in all his tribe than himself; and, finally, throwing open my trunk, I told him I did not fear him or all his tribe; that I had there a certain sum of money, which should belong to the man who should conduct me to Hebron, whoever he might be, and clothes which would not suit an Arab's back; that I knew I was in his power; but that, if they killed me, they could not get more than they could without it; and added, turning my pistols in my belt, that they should not get it while I could defend it. All this, passing through an interpreter, had given me time to cool; and before coming to my grand climax, though still highly indignant, I was able to observe the effect of my words. At the first glance I saw I had the vantage ground, and that the consciousness of being detected in his baseness sealed his lips. I am inclined to think that he would have been disgraced in the eyes of his tribe if they had been acquainted with the circumstances; for instead of resenting my passionate language, he earnestly begged me to lower my voice, and frequently looked out of the tent to see if any of his companions were near. Keep cool, is a good maxim, generally, in a man's walk through life, and it is particularly useful with the Bedouins in the desert; but there are times when it is good to be in a passion, and this was one of them. Without attempting to resent what I said, even by word or look, he came up to me, kissed my hand, and swore that he would never mention the subject of backsheesh again until we got to Hebron, and he did not. I retained my command over him through the whole journey, while he was constantly at my side, taking my horse, holding my stirrup, and in every way trying to make himself useful. I am not sure, however, but that in his new character of a sycophant he was worse than before. A sycophant in civilised life, where the usages of society admit and perhaps demand a certain degree of unmeant civility, is the most contemptible thing that crawls; but in a wild Arab it was intolerable. I really despised him, and made no secret of it; and sometimes, rash and imprudent as was the bare thought, it was with difficulty that I could keep from giving him my foot. After he had gone out, Paul sewed twenty gold pieces in the collar of my jacket, and I left the rest of my money open in my trunk.

I have frequently been astonished at the entire absence of apprehension which accompanied me during the whole of this journey. I fortunately observed, at the very first, an intention of exaggerating its danger; and this and other little things carried me into the other extreme, to such a degree, that perhaps my eyes were closed against the real dangers. Among all the pictures and descriptions of robbers and bandits that I have seen, I have never met with anything so unprepossessing as a party of desert Arabs coming down upon the traveller on their dromedaries; but one soon gets over the effect of their dark and scowling visages; and after becoming acquainted with their weapons and bodily strength, a man of ordinary vigour, well armed, feels no little confidence in himself among them. They are small in stature, under our middle size, and thin almost to emaciation. Indeed, the same degree of spareness in Europeans would be deemed the effect of illness or starvation; but with them it seems to be a mere drying up of the fluids, or, as it were, an attraction between skin and bone, which prevents flesh from insinuating itself between. Their breast-bones stand out very prominently; their ribs are as distinctly perceptible as the bars of a gridiron, and their empty stomachs seem drawn up till they touch the back bone; and their weapons, though ugly enough, are far from being formidable.

The sheik was the only one of our party who carried pistols, and I do not believe they could have been discharged without picking the flints once or twice; the rest had swords and matchlock guns; the latter, of course, not to be fired without first striking a light, which is not the work of a moment; and although these inconvenient implements do well enough for contests with their brother Bedouins, the odds are very much against them when they have to do with a well-armed Frank; two pairs of good pistols and a double-barrelled gun would have been a match for all our matchlock muskets. Besides all this, one naturally feels a confidence in himself after being some time left to his own resources; a development of capacities and energies which he is entirely unconscious of possessing, until he is placed in a situation to call them out. A man must have been in the desert alone, and beyond the reach of help, where his voice can never reach the ears of his distant friends, with a strong and overwhelming sense that every thing depends upon himself, his own coolness and discretion; and such is the elasticity of the human character, that his spirit, instead of sinking and quailing as it would once have done under difficulties and dangers incomparably less, rises with the occasion; and as he draws his sash or tightens his sword-belt, he stretches himself to his full length, and is prepared and ready for any emergency that may befall him. Indeed, now that I have returned to the peaceful occupations of civilised life, I often look back with a species of mirthful feeling upon my journey in the desert as a strange and amusing episode in my life; and when laying my head on my quiet pillow, I can hardly believe that, but a few months ago, I never slept without first placing my pistols carefully by my side, and never woke without putting forth my hand to ascertain that they were near, and ready for instant use.

I had scarcely mounted the next morning before one of the men came up to me, and, telling me that he intended to return home, asked for his bucksheesh. I looked at the sheik, who was still sitting on the ground, enjoying a last sip of coffee, and apparently taking no notice of us, and it immediately occurred to me that this was another scheme of his to find out how much I intended to give. The idea had no sooner occurred to me than I determined to sustain the tone I had assumed the night before; and I therefore told the fellow that I should not pay any one a piastre until I arrived at Hebron. This occasioned a great clamour; the sheik still remained silent, but all the others took up the matter, and I do not know how far it would have gone if I had persisted. I was the only one mounted; and having given my answer, I turned my horse's head, and moved on a few paces, looking over my shoulder, however, to watch the effect; and when I saw them still standing, as if spell-bound, in the unfinished act, one of mounting a dromedary, another of arranging the baggage, and all apparently undecided what to do, I reflected that no good could come from the deliberations of such men, and began to repent somewhat of the high tone I had assumed. I only wanted a good excuse to retrace my steps; and after a moment's reflection, I laid hold of something plausible enough for immediate use. The man who wanted to return was rather a favourite with me—the same who had carried me on his shoulders up the stream in the entrance of Petra—and, returning suddenly, as if the thing had just occurred to me, I called him to me, and told him that, although I would not pay him for accompanying me on my journey, as it was not yet ended, still, for his extra services in Petra, I would not let him go destitute; that I loved him—by which I meant that I liked him—an expression that would have been entirely too good for “the land of the East and the clime of the sun,” or, as I should rather say, for the extravagant and inflated style of the Arabs—that if the same thing had happened with any of the others, I would not have given him a para; and now he must understand that I only paid him for his services in Petra. This seemed natural enough to the other Bedouins, for they all knew that this man and I had returned from the defile the best friends in

the world, calling each other brother, &c.; and in the end, the whole affair turned out rather fortunately; for understanding me literally that I paid only for the day in Petra, although not understanding the rule of three as established in the books of arithmetic, they worked out the problem after their own fashion, “If one day gives so much, what will so many days give?” and were exceedingly satisfied with the result. Indeed, I believe I might at any time have stopped their mouths, and relieved myself from much annoyance, by promising them an extravagant sum on my arrival at Hebron; but this I would not do. I had not, from the first, held out to them any extravagant expectations, nor would I do so then; perhaps, after all, not so much from a stern sense of principle, as from having conceived a feeling of strong though smothered indignation and contempt for the sheik. Indeed, I should not have considered it safe to tell him what I intended to give him; for I soon saw that the amount estimated by Mr Gliddon and myself was very far from being sufficient to satisfy his own and his men's extravagant expectations. My apparent indifference perplexed the sheik, and he was sorely confounded by my valiant declaration, “There is my trunk; all that is in it is yours when we arrive at Hebron; rob me or kill me, and you get no more;” and though he could not conceal his eagerness and rapacity, he felt himself trammelled; and my plan was to prolong his indecision, and postpone our denouement until our arrival at Hebron. Still, it was very unpleasant to be travelling upon these terms with my protectors, and I was exceedingly glad when the journey was over.

We were again journeying along the valley in an oblique direction. In the afternoon we fell in with a caravan for Gaza. It may be that I wronged the sheik; but I had the idea that, whenever we saw strangers, his deep and hurried manner of pronouncing *El Arab*, his fixing himself in his saddle, poising his spear, and getting the caravan in order, frequently accompanying these movements with the cautioning words not to be afraid, that he would fight for me till death, were intended altogether for effect upon me. Whether he had any influence or not with the caravan for Gaza, I cannot say; but I know that I would have been glad to leave the wandering tribes of the land of Idumea, and go with my new companions to the ancient city of the Philistines. While we moved along together, Paul and myself got upon excellent terms with them, and consulted for a good while about asking them to take us under their escort. I have no doubt they would have done it willingly, for they were a fine, manly set of fellows; but we were deterred by the fear of involving them in a quarrel, if not a fight, with our own men.

The valley continued the same as before, presenting sandy hillocks, thorn-bushes, gullies, the dry beds of streams, and furnishing all the way incontestible evidence that it had once been covered with the waters of a river. To one travelling along that dreary road as a geologist, every step opens a new page in the great book of Nature; carrying him back to the time when all was chaos, and darkness covered the face of the earth; the impressions it conveys are of a confused mass of matter settling into “form and substance,” the earth covered with a mighty deluge, the waters retiring, and leaving bare the mountains above him, and a rolling river at his feet; and, by the regular operation of natural causes, the river contracting and disappearing, and for thousands of years leaving its channel-bed dry. And again, he who in the wonders around him seeks the evidences of events recorded in the sacred volume, here finds them in the abundant tokens that the shower of fire and brimstone which descended upon the guilty cities of Sodom and Gomorrah stopped the course of the Jordan, and formed it into a pestilential lake, and left the dry bed of a river in the desolate valley in which he is journeying. This valley is part of the once populous land of Idumea; in the days of Solomon, the great travelled highway by which he received the gold of Ophir for the temple; and by which, in the days of imperial Rome, the south of India was brought to the doors.

About the middle of the day, as usual, the sheik rode head, and, striking his spear in the sand, he had coffee prepared before we came up. While we were sitting around the spear, two of our camels so far forgot the calm dignity of their nature, and their staid, quiet habits, as to get into a fight; and one of them, finding himself likely to come off second best, took to his heels, and the other after him; they were baggage camels, one being charged with my boxes of provisions and housekeeping apparatus, and his movements indicated death to crockery. I will not go into particulars, for eggs, rice, macaroni, and lamp-oil, make a bad mixture; and although the race and fight between the loaded camels were rather ludicrous, the consequence was by no means a pleasant thing in the desert.

The next morning we had another camel scene, for one of the combatants was stretched upon the sand, his bed of death. The Bedouins had examined him, and, satisfied that the hand of death was upon him, they left him to breathe his last alone. The camel is to the Arab a treasure above all price. He is the only animal by nature and constitution framed for the desert, for he alone can travel several days without eating or drinking. Every part of him is useful; his milk is their drink, his flesh their food, and his hair supplies materials for their rude garments and tents. Besides this, the creature is domesticated with the Bedouin; grows up in his tent, feeds from his hand, kneels down to receive his burden, and rises as if glad to carry his master; and, in short, is so much a part of a Bedouin's family, that often, in speaking of himself, the Bedouin will say that he has so many wives, so many children, and so many camels. All these things considered, when this morning they knew that the camel must die, I expected, in a rough way, something like Sterne's picture of the old man and his ass. But I saw nothing of the kind; they left him in the last stages of his struggle with the great enemy with as much indifference, I was going to say, as if he had been a brute; and he was a brute; but it was almost worth a passing tear to leave even a brute to die alone in the desert—one that we knew, that had travelled with us, and formed part of our little world; but the only lament the sheik made was, that they had lost twenty dollars, and we left him to die in the sand. I could almost have remained myself to close his eyes. The vultures were already hovering over him, and once I went back and drove them away; but I have no doubt that before the poor beast was dead, the horrid birds had picked out his eyes, and thrust their murderous beaks into his brain.

It was, as usual, a fine day. Since we left Akaba we had a continued succession of the most delightful weather I had ever experienced. I was, no doubt, peculiarly susceptible to the influence of weather. With a malady constantly hanging about me, if I drooped, a bright sun and an unclouded sky could at any time revive me; and more than once, when I have risen flushed and feverish, and but little refreshed with sleep, the clear pure air of the morning has given me a new life. From dragging one leg slowly after the other, I have fairly jumped into the saddle, and my noble Arabian, in such cases, always completed what the fresh air of the morning had begun. Indeed, I felt then that I could not be too thankful for those two things, uncommonly fine weather and an uncommonly fine horse; and I considered that it was almost solely those two that sustained me on that journey. It is part of the historical account of the Bedouins' horses, that the mares are never sold. My sheik would have sold his soul for a price; and as soon as he saw that I was pleased with my mare, he wanted to sell her to me; and it was singular and amusing, in chaffering for this animal, to mark how one of the habits of bargain-making peculiar to the horse-jockey with us, existed in full force among the Arabs. He said that he did not want to sell her; that at Cairo he had been offered two hundred and fifty dollars, a new dress, and arms complete, and he would not sell her; but if I wanted her, there being nothing he would not do for me, &c., I might have her.

The sheik's was an extraordinary animal. The saddle had not been off her back for thirty days; and the sheik, himself a most restless creature, would dash off suddenly a dozen times a-day, on a full run across the valley, up the sides of a mountain, round and round our caravan, with his long spear poised in the air, and his dress streaming in the wind; and when he returned and brought her to a walk at my side, the beautiful animal would snort and paw the ground, as if proud of what she had done, and anxious for another course. I could almost imagine I saw the ancient war-horse of Idumea, so finely described by Job—"his neck clothed with thunder. Canst thou make him afraid as a grasshopper? the glory of his nostrils is terrible. He paweth in the valley, and rejoiceth in his strength; he goeth on to meet the armed men. He mocketh at fear, and is not affrighted; neither turneth he back from the sword. The quiver rattleth against him, the glittering spear and the shield. He swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage; neither believeth he that it is the sound of the trumpet. He saith among the trumpets, ha, ha; and he smelleth the battle afar off, the thunder of the captains, and the shouting."

Nothing showed the hardness of these horses more than their drinking. Several times we came to deposits of rain water left in the hollow of a rock, so foul and dirty that I would not have given it to a dog; and while their sides were white with foam, the sheik would take the bits out of their mouths, and sit down with the bridle in his hands, and let them drink their fill; and I could not help thinking that a regular-bred English groom, accustomed to insinuate a wet sponge in the mouth of a heated horse, would have been amazed and horrified at such a barbarian usage. These two horses were twelve and twenty years old respectively; and the former was more like a colt in playfulness and spirit, and the other like a horse of ten with us; and the sheik told me that he could count upon the services of both until they were thirty-five. Among all the recommendations of the Arabian horse, I know none greater than this: I have known a man, from long habit, conceive a liking for a vicious jade that no one else would mount; and one can imagine how warm must be the feeling, when, year after year, the best of his race is the companion of the wandering Arab, and the same animal may bear him from the time when he can first poise a spear until his aged frame can scarcely sustain itself in the saddle.

Before leaving the valley, we found in one of the gullies a large stone veined in that peculiar manner which I had noticed at Petra; it had been washed down from the mountains of Wady Moussa, and the Arab told me that stone of the same kind was found nowhere else. Towards evening we had crossed the valley, and were at the foot of the mountains of Judea, in the direction of the southern extremity of the Dead Sea. That evening, I remember, I noticed a circumstance which called to my mind the wonderful accounts handed down to us by Strabo and other ancient historians, of large cities built of salt having stood at the southern extremity of the Dead Sea and the valley beyond. In the escape of our runaway camels, bringing about the catastrophe which one of them had since expiated with his life, they had mingled together in horrible confusion, contrary to all the rules of art, so many discordant ingredients, that a great portion of my larder was spoiled; and, among other things, salt, almost as necessary to man as bread, had completely lost its savour. But the Bedouins, habituated to wanting almost every thing, knew where to find all that their barren country could give; and one of them leaving the tents for a few moments, returned with a small quantity that he had picked up for immediate use, being a cake or encrustation about as large as the head of a barrel; and I afterwards saw regular strata of it, and in large quantities, in the sides of the mountains.

CHAPTER XXIV.

The Road to Gaza.—Unknown Ruins.—A Misadventure.—Pastoral Bedouins.—A Flower of the Wilderness.—The Ravages of War.—Testimony of an Eyewitness.

We started at six o'clock the next day, the morning rather cool, though clear and bracing; we were again among the mountains, and at about eleven, a track scarcely distinguishable to my eye, turned off to Gaza. To a traveller from such a country as ours, few of the little every-day wonders he is constantly noticing strike him more forcibly than the character of the great public roads in the East. He makes allowance for the natural wildness of the country, the impossibility of using wheel-carriages on the mountains, or horses in the desert as beasts of burden, but still he is surprised and disappointed. Here, for instance, was a road leading to the ancient city of Gaza, a regular caravan route for 4000 years, and yet so perfect in the wildness of nature, so undistinguishable in its appearance from other portions of the wilderness around, that a stranger would have passed the little opening in the rocks probably without noticing it, and certainly without imagining that the wild track, of which it formed the entrance, would conduct him to the birthplace and ancient capital of David, and the holy city of Jerusalem. The solitary trail of the Indian over our prairies and forests is more perfectly marked as a road than either of the great routes to Gaza or Jerusalem, and yet, near the spot where these two roads diverge, are the ruins of an ancient city.

Little, if any thing, has been known in modern days concerning the existence and distinguishing features of this road; and it is completely a terra incognita to modern travellers. All the knowledge possessed of it is that derived from the records of ancient history; and from these we learn that in the time of David and Solomon, and the later days of the Roman empire, a great public road existed from Jerusalem to Akaba, the ancient Elath or Ezion-geber; that several cities existed upon it between these terminating points, and that their ruins should still be visible. Believing that I am the first traveller who has ever seen those ruins, none can regret more than myself my inability to add to the scanty stock of knowledge already in possession of geographers. If my health had permitted, I might have investigated and explored, noted observations, and treasured up facts and circumstances, to place them in the hands of wiser men for their conclusions; but I was not equal to the task. The ruins which I saw were a confused and shapeless mass, and I rode among them without dismounting; there were no columns, no blocks of marble, or large stones which indicated any architectural greatness, and the appearance of the ruins would answer the historical description of a third or fourth-rate city.

About three hours farther on, and half a mile from our path, on the right, was a quadrangular arch with a dome; and near it was a low stone building, also arched, which might have been a small temple. The Bedouins, as usual, referred it to the times of the Christians. For about a mile, in different places on each side of us, were mounds of crumbling ruins; and directly on the caravan-track we came to a little elevation, where were two remarkable wells, of the very best Roman workmanship, about fifty feet deep, lined with large hard stones, as firm and perfect as on the day in which they were laid. The uppermost layer, round the top of the well, which was on a level with the pavement, was of marble, and had many grooves cut in it, apparently worn by the long-continued use of ropes in drawing water. Around each of the wells were circular ranges of columns, which, when the city existed, and the inhabitants came there to drink, might and probably did support a roof similar to those now seen over the fountains in Constantinople. No remains of such roof, however, are existing; and the columns are broken, here and there standing not more than three or four feet high, and the tops scooped out to serve as troughs

for thirsty camels. On the other side, a little in the rear of the wells, is a hill overlooking the scattered ruins below, which may, some hundred years ago, have been the Acropolis of the city. A strong wall seems to have extended around the whole summit level of the hill. I remember that I rode up to the summit, winding around the hill, and leaped my horse over the broken wall; but there was nothing to reward me for the exertion of the undertaking. The enclosure formed by the wall was filled with ruins, but I could give form or feature to none of them; here, too, I rode among them without dismounting; and from here I could see the whole extent of the ruins below. As in the ruined city I had just passed, there was not a solitary inhabitant, and not a living being was to be seen but my companions watering their camels at the ancient wells. This, no doubt, was another of the Roman cities; and although it was probably never celebrated for architectural or monumental beauty, it must have contained a large population.

We were now coming into another country, and leaving the desert behind us; a scanty verdure was beginning to cover the mountains; but the smiling prospect before me was for a moment overclouded by an unfortunate accident. Paul had lent his dromedary to one of the men; and riding carelessly on a baggage camel, in ascending a rough hill the girths of the saddle gave way, and Paul, boxes, and baggage, all came down together, the unlucky dragoon completely buried under the burden. I was the first at his side; and when I raised him up he was senseless. I untied his sash, and tore open his clothes. The Bedouins gathered around, all talking together, pulling and hauling, and one of them drew his sword, and was bending over my prostrate interpreter, with its point but a few inches from his throat. Poor Paul! with his mortal antipathy to cold steel, if he could have opened his eyes at that moment, and seen the fiery orbs of the Bedouins, and the point of a sharp sword apparently just ready to be plunged into his body, he would have uttered one groan and given up the ghost. It was a startling movement to me; and for a moment I thought they were going to employ in his behalf that mercy which is sometimes shown to a dying brute, that of killing him to put him out of misery. I pressed forward to shield him with my own body; and in the confusion of the moment, and my inability to understand what they meant, the selfish feeling came over me of the entire and absolute helplessness of my own condition if Paul should die. But Paul was too good a Catholic to die out of the pale of the church; he could never have rested quietly in his grave, unless he had been laid there amid the wafting of incense and the chanting of priests. "The safety of the patient often consists in the quarrels of the physicians," says Sancho Panza, or some other equally great authority, and perhaps this saved Paul; the Arabs wanted to cut open his clothes and bleed him; but I, not liking the looks of their lancets, would not suffer it; and, between us both, Paul was let alone and came to himself. But it was a trying moment, while I was kneeling on the sand supporting his senseless head upon my knee. No parent could have waited with more anxiety the return to life of an only child, or lover watched the beautiful face of his adored and swooning mistress with more earnestness than I did the ghastly and grisled face of my faithful follower; and when he first opened his eyes, and stared wildly at me, the brightest emanations from the face of beauty could not at that moment have kindled warmer emotions in my heart. I never thought I should look on his ugly face with so much pleasure. I put him on my horse, and took his dromedary; and in half an hour we came to a Bedouin encampment, in one of the most singular and interesting spots I ever saw.

We should have gone on two hours longer, but Paul's accident made it necessary to stop as soon as we found a proper place; and I should have regretted exceedingly to pass by this without a halt. There was something to sing even in our manner of approaching it. We

PASTORAL BEDOUINS—A FLOWER OF THE WILDERNESS.

were climbing up the side of a mountain, and we saw on a little point on the very summit the figure of an Arab, with his face towards the tomb of the prophet, kneeling and prostrating himself in evening prayer. He had finished his devotions, and was sitting upon the rock when we approached, and found that he had literally been praying on his house top, for his habitation was in the rock beneath. Like almost every old man one meets in the East, he looked exactly the patriarch of the imagination, and precisely as we would paint Abraham, Isaac, or Jacob. He rose as we approached, and gave us the usual Bedouin invitation to stop and pass the night with him; and, leading us a few paces to the brink of the mountain, he showed us in the valley below the village of his tribe.

The valley began at the foot of the elevation on which we stood, and lay between ranges of broken and overhanging rocks, a smooth and beautiful table of green, for perhaps a quarter of a mile, and beyond that distance broke off and expanded into an extensive meadow. The whole of this valley, down to the meadow, was filled with flocks of sheep and goats; and for the first time since I left the banks of the Nile, I saw a herd of cows. I did not think I should ever be guilty of a sentiment at beholding a cow, but so it was; and my long journey in the desert, my feelings were actually excited to tenderness by the sight of these old acquaintances.

But where were the dwellings of the pastors, the tents in which dwell the shepherds of these flocks and herds? In Egypt I had seen the Arabs living in tombs, and among the ruins of temples; in the desert I have seen them dwelling in tents; but I had never yet seen them making their habitations in the rude crevices of the rocks. Such, however, were their habitations here. The rocks in many places were overhanging; in others there were chasms or fissures; and wherever there was any thing that could afford a partial protection from the weather on one side, a low, rough, circular wall of stone was built in front of it, and formed the abode of a large family. Within the small enclosure in front, the women were sitting winnowing or grinding grain, or rather pounding and rubbing it between two stones, in the same primitive manner practised of old, in the days of the patriarchs. We descended and pitched our tents in the middle of the valley; and my first business was to make some hot tea for Paul, roll him up in blankets and coverlets, and thus repeat the sweating operation that had done him so much good before. He was badly hurt, and very much fatigued. The boxes had fallen upon him, and the butt of a heavy gun, which he held in his left hand, had struck with all the momentum of its fall against his breast. He thought his ribs were all broken; and when I persuaded him that they were as good as ever, he was sure there was some inward bruise, that would be followed by mortification; and until we separated, especially when we had any hard work before us, he continued to complain of his hurts by this unlucky misadventure.

Having disposed of Paul, I strode out to examine more particularly the strange and interesting scene in the midst of which we were. The habitations in the crevices of the rocks, bad as they would be considered any where else, I found much more comfortable than most of the huts of the Egyptians on the banks of the Nile, or the rude tents of the Bedouins. It was not sheer poverty that drove these shepherds to take shelter in the rocks, for they were a tribe more than 300 strong, and had flocks and herds such as are seldom seen among the Bedouins; and they were far better clad, and had the appearance of being better fed, than my worthy companions. Indeed, they were a different race from mine; and here, on the borders of the desert, I was again struck with what had so forcibly impressed me in crossing the borders of Ethiopia, the strong and marked difference of races in the East. The Bedouins among whom we were encamped were taller, stouter, and had longer faces than the El Alouins; and sometimes I thought I saw in them strong marks of the Jewish

physiognomy. Above all, they were whiter; and this, with the circumstance of the women being less particular in keeping their faces covered, enabled me to pass an hour before dark with much satisfaction. The change from the swarthy and bearded visages of my travelling companions to the comparatively fair and feminine countenances of these pastoral women, was striking and agreeable, and they looked more like homo than any thing I had seen for a long time, except the cows. I cannot help thinking what a delight it would have been to meet, in that distant land, one of those beautiful fairies, lovely in all the bewitching attractions of frocks, shoes, stockings, clean faces, &c., of whom I now meet dozens every day, with the calm indifference of a stoic, since, even in spite of bare feet and dirty faces, my heart warmed towards the women of the desert. I could have taken them all to my arms; but there was one among them who might be accounted beautiful even among the beautiful women of my own distant home. She was tall, and fairer than the most of her tribe; and with the shepherd's crook in her hand, she was driving her flock of goats up the valley to the little enclosure before the door of her rocky dwelling. There was no colour in her cheek, but there was gentleness in her eye, and delicacy in every feature; and, moving among us, she would be cherished and cared for as a tender plant, and served with all respect and love; but here she was a servant; her days were spent in guarding her flock, and at night her tender limbs were stretched upon the rude floor of her rocky dwelling. I thought of her much, and she made a deep impression upon me; but I was prevented from attempting to excite a correspondent feeling in her gentle bosom by the crushed state of Paul's ribs, and my own inability to speak her language.

In the evening the men and women, or, to speak more pastorally, the shepherds and shepherdesses, came up one after another, with their crooks in their hands and their well-trained dogs, driving before them their several flocks. Some entered the little enclosures before their rude habitations; but many, destitute even of this miserable shelter, slept outside in the open valley, with their flocks around them, and their dogs by their side, presenting the same pastoral scenes which I had so often looked upon among the mountains of Greece; but unhappily, here, as there, the shepherds and shepherdesses do not in the least resemble the Chloes and Phillises of poetic dreams. In the evening we seated ourselves round a large bowl of cracked corn and milk, so thick as to be taken with the hands, unaided by a spoon or ladle, followed by a smoking marmite of stewed kof; and after this exercise of hospitality to the strangers, some withdrew to their rocky dwellings, others laid themselves down around the fire, and I retired to my tent. All night I heard from every part of the valley the lowing of cattle, the bleating of lambs and goats, and the loud barking of the watch-dog.

Early in the morning, while the stars were yet in the sky, I was up and out of my tent. The flocks were still quiet, and the shepherds and shepherdesses were still sleeping with the bare earth for their bed, and the canopy of heaven their only covering. One after the other they awoke; and as the day was breaking, they were milking the cows and goats, and at broad daylight they were again moving, with their crooks and dogs, to the pasture-ground at the foot of the valley.

We set off at an early hour, Paul again on my horse, and I on his dromedary; the patriarchal figure who had welcomed being the last to speed me on my way. At every step we were now putting the desert behind us, and advancing into a better country. We had spent our last night in the wilderness, and were now approaching the Holy Land; and no pilgrim ever approached its borders with a more joyous and thankful heart than mine.

At nine o'clock we came to another field of ruins, where the relics of an Arab village were mingled with those of a Roman city. The hands of the different builders and residents were visible among them; two

square buildings of large Roman stone were still standing like towers, while all the rest had fallen to pieces, and the stones which once formed the foundations of palaces were now worked up into fences around holes in the rocks, the burrowing-places of the miserable Arabs.

And here, too, we saw the tokens of man's inhumanity to man; the thunder of war had been levelled against the wretched village, the habitations were in ruins, and the inhabitants whom the sword had spared were driven out and scattered no one knew whither. On the borders of the Holy Land we saw that Ibrahim Pacha, the great Egyptian soldier, whose terrible war-cry had been heard on the plains of Egypt and among the mountains of Greece, in the deserts of Syria and under the walls of Constantinople, was ruling the conquered country with the same rod of iron which his father swayed in Egypt. He had lately been to this frontier village with the brand of war, and burning and desolation had marked his path.

Soon after, we came to an inhabited village, the first since we left Cairo. Like the ruined and deserted village we had left, it was a mingled exhibition of ancient greatness and modern poverty; and probably it was a continuation of the same ruined Roman city. A large fortress, forming part of a battlement, in good preservation, and fragments of a wall, formed the nucleus of a village, around which the inhabitants had built themselves huts. The rude artisans of the present day knew nothing of the works which their predecessors had built; and the only care they had for them was to pull them down, and with the fragments to build for themselves rude hovels and enclosures; and the sculptured stones which once formed the ornaments of Roman palaces, were now worked up into fences around holes in the ground, the poor dwellings of the miserable Arabs.

The stranger from a more favoured land, in looking at the tenants of these wretched habitations, cannot help thanking his God that his lot is not like theirs. When I rode through, the whole population had crawled out of their holes and hiding-places, and were basking in the warmth of a summer's sun; and I could not help seeing the kindly hand of a benefactor in giving to them what he has denied to us, a climate where, for the greater part of the year, they may spend their whole days in the open air, and even at night hardly need the shelter of a roof. This is probably the last of the cities which once stood on the great Roman road from Jerusalem to Akaba. While riding among the ruins, and stopping for a moment to talk with some of the Arabs, I saw on the left, in the side of a mountain, an open door like those of the tombs in Egypt; a simple orifice, without any ornament or sculpture. A woman was coming out with a child in her arms, a palpable indication that here, too, the abodes of the dead were used as habitations by the living. In Paul's disabled state I could ask no questions, and I did not stop to explore.

I cannot leave this interesting region without again expressing my regret at being able to add so little to the stock of useful knowledge. I can only testify to the existence of the ruins of cities which have been known only in the books of historians, and I can bear witness to the desolation that reigns in Edom. I can do more, not with the spirit of scoffing at prophecy, but of one who, in the strong evidence of the fulfilment of predictions uttered by the voice of inspiration, has seen and felt the evidences of the sure foundation of the Christian faith; and having regard to what I have already said in reference to the interpretation of the prophecy, "None shall pass through it for ever and ever." I can say that I have passed through the land of Idumea. My route was not open to the objection made to that of Burckhardt, the traveller who came nearest to passing through the land; for he entered from Damascus, on the east side of the Dead Sea, and struck the borders of Edom at such a point that literally he cannot be said to have passed through it. My route, therefore, is not open to the critical objections made to his; and beyond all peradventure I did pass directly through the land of Idumea, and crossing its northern and

southern border; and unless the two Englishmen and Italian before referred to passed on this same route, I am the only person, except the wandering Arabs, who ever did pass through the doomed and forbidden Edom, beholding with his own eyes the fearful fulfilment of the terrible denunciations of an offended God. And though I did pass through and yet was not cut off, God forbid that I should count the prophecy a lie. No; even though I had been a confirmed sceptic, I had seen enough in wandering with the Bible in my hand in that unpeopled desert to tear up the very foundations of unbelief, and scatter its fragments to the winds. In my judgment, the words of the prophet are abundantly fulfilled in the destruction and desolation of the ancient Edom, and the complete and eternal breaking up of a great public highway; and it is neither necessary nor useful to extend the denunciation against a passing traveller.*

CHAPTER XXV.

Approach to Hebron.—A Sick Governor.—A Prescription at Randon.—Hospitality of the Jews.—Finale with the Bedouins.—A Storm.—A Calm after the Storm.—Venality of the Arabs.—Hebron.—A Coptic Christian.—Story of the Rabbi.—Professional Employment.

I HAD followed the wandering path of the children of Israel from the land of Egypt and the house of bondage, to the borders of the promised land; had tracked them in their miraculous passage across the Red Sea to the mountains of Sinai, through "the great and terrible wilderness that leadeth to Kadesh Barnea;" and among the stony mountains through which I was now journeying must have been the Kadesh, in the wilderness of Paran, from which Moses sent the ten chosen men to spy out the land of Canaan, who went "unto the brook of Eshcol, and cut down from thence a branch with one cluster of grapes, and bare it between two upon a staff; and though they brought of the pomegranates and figs, and said that surely the land flowed with milk and honey, and these were the fruits thereof, yet brought up such an evil report of the land that it ate up the inhabitants thereof, and of the sons of Anak, the giants that dwelt therein, that the hearts of the Israelites sank within them; they murmured against Moses; and for their murmurings they were sent back into the wilderness; and their carcases, from twenty years old and upward, were doomed to fall in the wilderness, and the children of the murmurers to wander forty years before they should enter the land of promise."—Numbers, xiii. 23. I followed in the track of the spies; and though I saw not the Vale of Eshcol with its grapes and pomegranates, neither did I see the sons of Anak, the giants of the land. Indeed, the men of Anak could not have made

* Keith's celebrated treatise on the Prophecies has passed through fourteen editions, differing in some few particulars. In the sixth edition he says that Sir Frederick Henniker, in his notes dated from Mount Sinai, states that Seetzen, on a vessel of paper pasted against the wall, notices his having penetrated the country in a direct line between the Dead Sea and Mount Sinai (through Idumea), a route never before accomplished. In a note to the same edition, the learned divine says—"Not even the cases of two individuals, Seetzen and Burckhardt, can be stated as at all opposed to the literal interpretation of the prophecies. Seetzen did indeed pass through Idumea, and Burckhardt traversed a considerable part of it; but the former met his death not long after the completion of his journey through Idumea (he died at Akaba, supposed to have been poisoned); the latter never recovered from the effects of the hardships and privations which he suffered there; and without even commencing the exclusive design which he had in view, namely, to explore the interior of Africa, to which all his journeyings in Asia were merely intended as preparatory, he died at Cairo. Neither of them lived to return to Europe. 'I will cut off from Mount Seir him that passeth out and him that returneth.'" In the edition which I saw on the Nile, and which first turned my attention to the route through Idumea, I have no recollection of having seen any reference to Seetzen. It may have been there, however, without my particularly noticing it; as, when I read it, I had but little expectation of being able myself to undertake the route.

me turn back from the land of promise. I was so heartily tired of the desert and my Bedouin companions, that I would have thrown myself into the arms of the giants themselves for relief. And though the mountains were as yet stony and barren, they were so green and beautiful by comparison with the desert I had left, that the conviction even of much greater dangers than I had yet encountered could hardly have driven me back. The Bedouins and the Fellahs about Hebron are regarded as the worst, most turbulent, and desperate Arabs under the government of the pacha; but as I met little parties of them coming out towards the frontier, they looked, if such a character can be conceived of Arabs, like quiet, respectable, orderly citizens, when compared with my wild protectors; and they greeted us kindly and cordially as we passed them, and seemed to welcome us once more to the abodes of men.

As we approached Hebron, the sheik became more and more civil and obsequious; and before we came in sight of the city, he seemed to have some misgivings about entering it, and asked me to secure protection from the governor for that night for himself and men, which I did not hesitate to promise. I was glad to be approaching again a place under the established government of the pacha, where, capricious and despotic as was the exercise of power, I was sure of protection against the exactions of my Bedouins; and the reader may judge of the different degrees of security existing in these regions, from being told that I looked to the protection of a Turk as a guarantee against the rapacity of an Arab. After clambering over a rocky mountain, we came down into a valley, bounded on all sides, and apparently shut in by stony mountains. We followed the valley for more than an hour, finding the land good and well cultivated, with abundance of grapes, vines, and olives, as in the day when the spies sent by Moses entered it; and I can only wonder that, to a hardy and warlike people like the Israelites, after a long journey in the desert, the rich products of Hebron did not present more powerful considerations than the dignity of the men of Anak. We turned a point of the mountain to the left; and at the extreme end of the valley, on the side of a hill, bounding it, stands the little city of Hebron, the ancient capital of the kingdom of David. But it bears no traces of the glory of its Jewish king. Thunder and lightning, and earthquakes, wars, pestilence, and famine, have passed over it; and a small town of white houses, compactly built on the side of the mountain, a mosque and two minarets, are all that mark the ancient city of Hebron.

As soon as we came in sight of the city, the sheik dismounted; and arranging his saddle, made Paul take back his dromedary and give me my horse; and placing me on his right hand, and drawing up the caravan with the order and precision of a troop of "regulars," we made a dashing entry. It was on Friday, the Mussulman's Sabbath; and several hundred women, in long white dresses, were sitting among the tombs of the Turkish burying-ground, outside the walls. We passed this burying-ground and a large square fountain connected with the ancient city, being regarded at this day as one of the works of Solomon; and leaving the baggage camels at the gate, with our horses and dromedaries on full gallop, we dashed through the narrow streets up to the door of the citadel, and, in no very modest tone, demanded an audience of the governor. The Turks and Arabs are proverbial for the indifference with which they look upon every thing; and though I knew that a stranger coming from the desert was a rare object, and ought to excite some attention, I was amused and somewhat surprised at the extraordinary sensation our appearance created. Men stopped in the midst of their business; the lazy groups in the cafés sprang up, and workmen threw down their tools to run out and stare at us. I was surprised at this; but I afterwards learned that, since the pacha had disarmed all Syria, and his subjects in that part of his dominions wore arms only by stealth, it was a strange and startling occurrence to see a party of lawless Be-

douins coming in from the desert, armed to the teeth, and riding boldly up to the gates of the citadel.

The janizary at the door told us that the governor was sick and asleep, and could not be disturbed. He was, however, a blundering fellow; and after a few moments' parley, without giving his master any notice, he had us all standing over the sleeping invalid. The noise of our entering and the clang of our weapons roused him; and staring round for a moment, leaning on his elbow, he fixed his eyes on the sheik, and with a voice the like of which can only issue from the bottom of a Turk's throat, thundered out, "Who are you?" The sheik was for a moment confounded, and made no answer. "Who are you?" reiterated the governor, in a voice even louder than before. "I am Ibrahim Pacha's man," said the sheik. "I know that," answered the governor; "none but Ibrahim Pacha's men dare come here; but have you no name?" "Sheik El Alouin," said the Arab, with the pride of a chief of Bedouins, and looking for a moment as if he stood in the desert at the head of his lawless tribe. "I conducted the pacha's caravan to Akaba?" and pointing to me, "I have conducted safe through all the bad Arabs Abdel Hasis, the friend of the pacha?" and then the governor, like a wild animal baulked in his spring, turned his eyes from the sheik to me, as for the first time sensible of my presence. I showed him my firman, and told him that I did not mean to give him much trouble; that all I wanted was that he would send me on immediately to Bethlehem.

I had no wish to stop at Hebron, though the first city in the Holy Land, and hallowed by high and holy associations. The glory of the house of David had for ever departed. I was anxious to put an outpost between myself and the desert; and I had an indefinable longing to sleep my first night in the Holy Land in the city where our Saviour was born. But the governor positively refused to let me go that afternoon: he said that it was a bad road, and that a Jew had been robbed a few days before on his way to Bethlehem; and again lying down, he silenced all objections with the eternal but hateful word, "Bokhara, bokhara!"—"to-morrow, to-morrow." Seeing there was no help for me, I made the best of it, and asked him to furnish me with a place to lodge in that night. He immediately gave orders to the janizary; and as I was rising to leave, asked me if I could not give him some medicine. I had some expectation and some fear of this, and would have avoided it if I could. I had often drugged and physicked a common Arab, but had never been called upon to prescribe for such pure porcelain of the earth as a governor. Nevertheless, I ventured my unskilful hand upon him; and having with all due gravity asked his symptoms, and felt his pulse, and made him stick out his tongue till he could hardly get it back again, I looked down his throat, and into his eyes, and covering him up, told him, with as much solemnity as if I was licensed to kill secundum artem, that I would send him some medicine, with the necessary directions for taking it. I was quite equal to the governor's case, for I saw that he had merely half killed himself with eating, and wanted clearing out, and I had with me emetics and cathartics that I well knew were capable of clearing out a whole regiment. In the course of the evening he sent his janizary to me; and, expecting to be off before daylight, I gave him a double emetic, with very precise directions for its use; and I afterwards learned that, during its operation, his wrath had waxed warm against me, but in the morning he was so much better that he was ready to do me any kindness.

This over, I followed the janizary, who conducted me around outside the walls and through the burying-ground, where the women were scattered in groups among the tombs, to a distant and separate quarter of the city. I had no idea where he was taking me; but I had not advanced a horse's length in the narrow streets before their peculiar costume and physiognomies told me that I was among the unhappy remnant of a fallen people, the persecuted and despised Israel-

ites. They were removed from the Turkish quarter, as if the slightest contact with this once-favoured people would contaminate the bigoted follower of the prophet. The governor, in the haughty spirit of a Turk, probably thought that the house of a Jew was a fit place for the repose of a Christian; and following the janizary through a low range of narrow, dark, and filthy lanes, mountings, and turnings, of which it is impossible to give any idea, with the whole Jewish population turning out to review us, and the sheik and all his attendants with their long swords clattering at my heels, I was conducted to the house of the chief Rabbi of Hebron.

If I had had my choice, these were the very persons I would have selected for my first acquaintances in the Holy Land. The descendants of Israel were fit persons to welcome a stranger to the ancient city of their fathers; and if they had been then sitting under the shadow of the throne of David, they could not have given me a warmer reception. It may be that, standing in the same relation to the Turks, alike the victims of persecution and contempt, they forgot the great cause which had torn us apart and made us a separate people, and felt only a sympathy for the object of mutual oppression. But whatever was the cause, I shall never forget the kindness with which, as a stranger and Christian, I was received by the Jews in the capital of their ancient kingdom; and I look to my reception here, and by the monks of Mount Sinai, as among the few bright spots in my long and dreary pilgrimage through the desert.

I had seen enough of the desert, and of the wild spirit of freedom which men talk of without knowing, to make me cling more fondly than ever even to the lowest grade of civilisation; and I could have sat down that night, provided it was under a roof, with the fiercest Mussulman, as in a family circle. Judge, then, of my satisfaction at being welcomed from the desert by the friendly and hospitable Israelites. Returned once more to the occupation of our busy, money-making life, floating again upon the stream of business, and carried away by the cares and anxieties which agitate every portion of our stirring community, it is refreshing to turn to the few brief moments when far other thoughts occupied my mind; and my speculating, scheming friends and fellow-citizens would have smiled to see me that night, with a Syrian dress and long beard, sitting cross-legged on a divan, with the chief rabbi of the Jews at Hebron, and half the synagogue around us, talking of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, as of old and mutual friends.

With the few moments of daylight that remained, my Jewish friends conducted me around their miserable quarter. They had few lions to show me, but they took me to their synagogue, in which an old white-bearded Israelite was teaching some prattling children to read the laws of Moses in the language of their fathers; and when the sun was setting in the west, and the Muezzin from the top of the minaret was calling the sons of the faithful to evening prayers, the old rabbi and myself, a Jew and a Christian, were sitting on the roof of the little synagogue, looking out as by stealth upon the sacred mosque containing the hallowed ashes of their patriarchal fathers. The Turk guards the door, and the Jew and the Christian are not permitted to enter; and the old rabbi was pointing to the different parts of the mosque, where, as he told me, under tombs adorned with carpets of silk and gold, rested the mortal remains of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

But to return to my Bedouin companions. The sheik and his whole suite had been following close at my heels, through the narrow lanes and streets, up to the very doors of the synagogue; and their swarthy figures, their clattering swords, and grim visages, prevented my seeing the face of many a Hebrew maiden. I expected a scene with them at parting, and I was not disappointed. Returning to the rabbi's, they followed me into the room, and, after a few preliminaries, I gave them the price of the camels, and laid down a few pieces of silver, each separately. Not one of them

touched it, but all looked at the money and at me alternately, without speaking a word (it was about ten times as much as I would have had to pay for the same services any where else); and the sheik seemed uncertain what to do. The janizary, however, whose presence I had almost forgotten, put himself forward as an actor in the scene; and half drawing his sword, and rattling it back into its scabbard, swore that it was a vile extortion; that the governor ought to know it; and that the firman of the pacha ought to protect a stranger. This brought the sheik to a decision; and taking up his own portion, and directing the rest to do the same, he expressed himself satisfied, and, without moving from his place, betook himself to smoking. It was evident, however, that he was not altogether content; and the janizary leaving us soon after, hardly had the rattling of his steel scabbard died away along the narrow passage, when they all turned upon me, and gave voice to their dissatisfaction. I told them that I had paid them an enormous price, much more than the sheik had spoken of at Cairo; that I had brought with me more money than he had given me to understand would be necessary, and that it was all gone; that it was impossible to give them any more, for I had it not to give. In fact, I had paid them extravagantly, but far below their extravagant expectations. One would not have come for 200 dollars, another for 100, &c.; and from the noise and clamour which they made here, I am well satisfied that, if the denouement had taken place in the desert, they would have searched for themselves whether there was not something left in the bottom of my trunk; and from what happened afterwards, I am very sure that they would have stripped me of my Turkish plumage; but now I was perfectly safe. I considered a Turkish governor good protection against the rapacity of a Bedouin Arab. I did not even fear their future vengeance, for I knew that they did not dare set their feet outside of any gate in Hebron, except that which opened to their own tents in the desert; they seemed to think that they had let me slip through their fingers; and when they pushed me to desperation, I told them that I did not care whether they were satisfied or not. As I rose, the sheik fell; and when I began working myself into a passion at his exorbitant demand, he fell to begging a dollar or two, in such moving terms that I could not resist. I continued yielding to his petty extortions, until, having ascertained the expense, I found that I had not a dollar more than enough to carry me to Jerusalem; and at this moment he consummated his impudence by begging my dress from off my back. The dress was of no great value; it had not cost much when new, and was travel-worn and frayed with hard usage, but it had a value in my eyes from the mere circumstance of having been worn upon this journey. I had given him nearly all my tent equipage, arms, ammunition, &c., and I had borne with all his twopenny extortions; but he urged and insisted, and begged and entreated, with so much pertinacity, that my patience was exhausted, and I told him that I had borne with him long enough, and that he and his whole tribe might go to the d—l. This was not very courteous or dignified between treaty-making powers; but considering that the immediate subject of negotiation was an old silk dress, and the parties were a single individual and a horde of Bedouins, it may perhaps be allowed to pass. All the nice web of diplomacy was now broken; and all springing at the same moment to our feet, the whole group stood fronting me, glaring upon me like so many wild beasts. Now the long-smothered passion broke out; and wild and clamorous as the Arabs always were, I had never seen them so perfectly furious. They raved like many bedlamites; and the sheik, with torrents of vociferation and reproach, drew from his bosom the money he had accepted as his portion, dashed it on the floor, and, swearing that no Frank should ever pass through his country again, poured out upon me a volley of bitter curses, and, grinding his teeth with rage and disappointment, rushed out of the room. I did not

then know what he was saying; but I could judge, from the almost diabolical expression of his face, that he was not paying me very handsome compliments; and I felt a convulsive movement about the extreme end of my foot, and had advanced a step to help him down stairs, but his troop followed him close; and I do not know how it is, but when one looks long at the ugly figure of a Bedouin, he is apt to forego a purpose of vengeance. There is something particularly truculent and pacifying in their aspect.

A moment after he had gone, I was exceedingly sorry for what had happened, particularly on account of his oath that no European should ever pass through his country. I felt unhappy in the idea that, when I expected to be the pioneer in opening a new and interesting route, I had become the means of more effectually closing it. With a heavy heart, I told Paul that I must have another interview; that the old dress must go, and any thing else I had; and, in short, that I must have peace upon any terms. To dispose of this business without mixing it with other things: in about an hour the sheik returned with his brother, and, walking up to me and kissing my hand, told me that he had just heard of a robbery on the road to Jerusalem, and came to tell me of it; and looking me in the face, added that, when he had got back to his tent, he felt unhappy at having left me in anger; that he had been so used to sitting with me, that he could not remain away, &c. &c. I was not to be outdone; and looking him back again in the face, I introduced him to my Jewish companions as my dearest friend, the chief of the tribe of El Alouins, who had protected me with his life through the dangers of the desert, and to whose bold arm they were indebted for the privilege they then enjoyed of seeing my face. The sheik looked at me as if he thought me in earnest, and himself entitled to all that I had said; and, satisfied so far, he sat down and smoked his pipe, and at parting disclosed the object of his visit, by asking me for a letter of recommendation to the consul at Cairo, and to the friends of whom I had before spoken as intending to follow me to Petra. Glad to patch up a peace, I told him to come to me early the next morning, and I would settle every thing to his satisfaction. Before I was awake, he was shaking me by the shoulder. I jumped up, and roused Paul; and now wishing to redeem my ungraciousness of the day before, I may say literally that "I parted my raiment among them," and gave away pretty much every thing I had except my European clothes, completing my present with a double-barrelled gun, rather given to bursting, which I gave the sheik's brother. The sheik had changed his tone altogether, and now told me that he loved me as a brother; and, pointing to the brother at his side, that he loved me as well as him; and with great warmth assured me, that if I would turn Mussulman, and come and live with him in his tents in the wilderness, he would give me for wives four of the most beautiful girls of his tribe. He did not confine his offers to me, but told me that he would receive, guard, and protect any of my friends as if they were of his own blood; and warming with his own generosity, or perhaps really feeling a certain degree of kindness, he asked me for some symbol or sign which should be perpetual between

stick of sealing-wax and a lighted lamp were on the low table before me. I made a huge plaster with the sealing-wax on a sheet of coarse brown paper, and, stamping it with the stock of my pistol, chased and carved in the Turkish fashion, I gave him a seal with such a device as would have puzzled the professors of heraldry, telling him that, when any one came to him with this seal, he might know he was a friend of mine; and I added, that I would never lend any one without plenty of money; so that any one who visits the Sheik El Alouin with my recommendation, must expect to make up for my deficiencies. This over, we bade each other farewell, the sheik and the whole of his swarthy companions kissing me on both sides of my face. I looked after them as long as they continued in sight,

listened till I heard the last clattering of their armour, and I never saw nor do I ever wish to see them again. I am sorry to entertain such a feeling towards any who have been the companions of my wanderings, and I hardly know another instance, from the English nobleman down to a muleteer or boatman, at parting with whom I have not felt a certain degree of regret. But when I parted with the Bedouin chief, though he kissed me on both cheeks, though he gave me his signet and his mine in return, and though four Arabian girls are ready for me whenever I choose to put my trust in Mohammed and Sheik El Alouin, it was delightful to think that I should never see his face again.

One by one I had seen the many illusions of my waking dreams fade away; the gorgeous pictures of oriental scenes melt into nothing; but I had still clung to the primitive simplicity and purity of the children of the desert, their temperance and abstinence, their contented poverty and contempt for luxuries, as approaching the true nobility of man's nature, and sustaining the poetry of the "land of the East." But my last dream was broken; and I never saw among the wanderers of the desert any traits of character or any habits of life which did not make me prize and value more the privileges of civilisation. I had been more than a month alone with the Bedouins; and to say nothing of their manners, excluding women from all companionship; dipping their fingers up to the knuckles in the same dish; eating sheep's insides, and sleeping under tents crawling with vermin engendered by their filthy habits, their temperance and frugality are from necessity, not from choice; for in their nature they are gluttonous, and will eat at any time till they are gorged of whatever they can get, and then lie down and sleep like brutes. I have sometimes amused myself with trying the variety of their appetites, and I never knew them refuse any thing that could be eaten. Their stomach was literally their god, and the only chance of doing any thing with them was by first making to it a grateful offering; instead of scorning luxuries, they would eat sugar as boys do sugar-candy; and I am very sure, if they could have got poundcake, they would never have eaten their own coarse bread.

One might expect to find these children of Nature free from the reproach of civilised life, the love of gold. But, fellow-citizens and fellow-worshippers of Mammon, hold up your heads; this reproach must not be confined to you. It would have been a pleasing thing to me to find among the Arabs of the desert a slight similarity of taste and pursuits with the denizens of my native city; and in the early developments of a thirst for acquisition, I would have hailed the embryo spirit which might one day lead to stock and exchange boards, and laying out city lots around the base of Mount Sinai or the excavated city of Petra. But the savage was already far beyond the civilised man in his appetite for gold; and though brought up in a school of hungry and thirsty disciples, and knowing many in my native city who regard it as the one thing needful, I blush for myself, for my city, and for them, when I say that I never saw one among them who could be compared with the Bedouin; I never saw any thing like the expression of face with which a Bedouin looks upon silver or gold. When he asks for bucksheesh, and receives the glittering metal, his eyes sparkle with wild delight, his fingers clutch it with eager rapacity, and he skulks away like the miser, to count it over alone, and hide it from all other eyes.

Helbron, one of the oldest cities of Canaan, is now a small Arab town, containing seven or eight hundred Arab families. The present inhabitants are the wildest, most lawless, and desperate people in the Holy Land; and it is a singular fact, that they sustain now the same mutinous character with the rebels of ancient days, who armed with David against Saul, and with Absalom against David. In the late desperate revolution against Mohammed Ali, they were foremost in the strife, the first to draw the sword, and the last to return it to its scabbard. A petty-Turk now wields the sceptre of the

son of Jesse, and a small remnant of a despised and persecuted people still hover round the graves of their fathers; and though degraded and trampled under foot, from the very dust in which they lie are still looking to the restoration of their temporal kingdom.

Accompanied by my Jewish friends, I visited the few spots which tradition marks as connected with scenes of Bible history. Passing through the bazaars at the extreme end, and descending a few steps, we entered a vault containing a large monument, intended in memory of Abner, the greatest captain of his age, the favoured and for a long time trusted officer of David, who, as the Jews told me, was killed in battle near Hebron, and his body brought here and buried. The great mosque, the walls of which, the Jews say, are built with the ruins of the temple of Solomon, according to the belief of the Mussulmans and the better authority of the Jews, covers the site of the Cave of Machpelah, which Abraham bought from Ephron the Hittite; and within its sacred precincts are the supposed tombs of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. The doors were guarded with jealous care by the bigoted Mussulmans; and when, with my Jewish companion, I stopped for a moment to look up at the long marble staircase leading to the tomb of Abraham, a Turk came out from the bazaars, and, with furious gesticulations, gathered a crowd around us; and a Jew and a Christian were driven with contempt from the sepulchre of the patriarch whom they both revered. A special firman from the pacha, or perhaps a large bribe to the governor, might have procured me a private admission; but death or the Koran would have been the penalty required by the bigoted people of Hebron.

On a rising ground a little beyond the mosque, is a large fountain or reservoir, supported by marble pillars, where my companions told me that Sarah had washed the clothes of Abraham and Isaac. Leaving this, I went once more to the two pools outside the walls, and after examining them as the so-called works of Solomon, I had seen all a stranger could see in Hebron.

I cannot leave this place, however, without a word or two more. I had spent a long evening with my Jewish friends. The old rabbi talked to me of their prospects and condition, and told me how he had left his country in Europe many years before, and come with his wife and children to lay their bones in the Holy Land. He was now eighty years old; and for thirty years, he said, he had lived with the sword suspended over his head—had been reviled, buffeted, and spit upon; and though sometimes enjoying a respite from persecution, he never knew at what moment the bloodhounds might not be let loose upon him; that, since the country had been wrested from the sultan by the Pacha of Egypt, they had been comparatively safe and tranquil; though some idea may be formed of this comparative security from the fact, that during the revolution two years before, when Ibrahim Pacha, after having been pent up several months in Jerusalem, burst out like a roaring lion, the first place upon which his wrath descended was the unhappy Hebron; and while their guilty brethren were sometimes spared, the unhappy Jews, never offending but always suffering, received the full weight of Arab vengeance. Their houses were ransacked and plundered; their gold and silver, and all things valuable, carried away; and their wives and daughters violated before their eyes by a brutal soldiery.

During the evening a fine portly man, in the flowing Syrian dress, came to pay me a visit. His complexion proclaimed him of Coptic origin, a descendant of the ancient lords of Egypt; his manner in his sash told me that he was a writer, and his cordial salutation that he was a Christian. Living among Turks, Arabs, and Jews, he greeted me as if it were a rare thing to meet a professor of the same faith, and a believer in the same God and Saviour. He regretted that he had been away when I arrived, and said that he ought by right to have had me at his house, as he was the only Christian in Hebron; and he, even where proselytes were wanted,

would perhaps not have passed muster according to the strict canons of a Catholic church. My Christian friend, however, was more of a Jew than any of the descendants of Israel around me; for amid professions of friendship and offers of service, he was not forgetting his own interests. The European and American governments had been appointing consular agents in many of the cities of Syria, and this office, under the government of the present pacha, exempted the holder from certain taxes and impositions, to which the fellahs and rayahs were subject. America is known in the Holy Land by her missionaries, by the great ship (the Delaware) which a year before touched at the seaport towns, and by the respect and character which she confers on her consular agents. My Coptic Christian knew her on the last account, and told me, in confidence, that he thought America had need of a consular agent in Hebron, to protect her citizens travelling in that region. I was the first American traveller who had ever been there, and years may roll by before another follows me; but I fully concurred with him in the necessity of such an officer: and when he suggested that there was no better man than himself to hold it, I concurred with him again. Little did I think when, years before, I was seeking to climb the slippery rungs of the political ladder, that my political influence would ever be sought for the office of consul in the ancient capital of David; but so it was; and without questioning him too closely about his faith in the principles and usages of the democratic party, the virtue of regular nominations, &c., taking his name written in Arabic, and giving him my card that he might know the name of his political benefactor, I promised to speak to the consul at Beyroot in his favour; and he left me with as much confidence as if he had his commission already in his pocket.

A more interesting business followed with the old rabbi, probably induced by what had just passed between the Christian and myself. He told me that he had lately had occasion to regret exceedingly the loss of a paper, which would now be of great use to him; that he was a Jew of Venice (I can vouch for it that he was no Shylock), and thirty years before had left his native city and come to Hebron with a regular passport; that for many years a European passport was no protection, and, indeed, it had been rather an object with him to lay aside the European character, and identify himself with the Asiatics; that, in consequence, he had been careless of his passport, and had lost it; but that now, since the conquest of Mohammed Ali and the government of Ibrahim Pacha, a European passport was respected, and saved its holder and his family from Turkish impositions. He mourned bitterly over his loss, not, as he said, for himself, for his days were almost ended, and the storms of life could not break over his head more heavily than they had already done; but he mourned for his children and grandchildren, whom his carelessness had deprived of the evidence of his birthright and the protection of their country. I was interested in the old man's story, and particularly in his unobtrusive manner of telling it; and drawing upon the reminiscences of my legal knowledge, I told him that the loss of his passport had not deprived him of his right to the protection of his country, and that, if he could establish the fact of his being a native of Venice, he might still sit down under the wings of the double-headed eagle of Austria. I afterwards went more into detail. Learning that there were in Hebron some of his very old acquaintances who could testify to the fact of his nativity, I told him to bring them to me, and I would take their affidavits, and, on my arrival at Beyroot, would represent the matter to the Austrian consul there; and I thought that with such evidence the consul would not refuse him another passport. He thanked me very warmly, and the next morning early, while I was waiting, all ready for my departure, he brought in his witnesses. It would have been difficult for the old man to produce deponents who could swear positively to his nativity; but of those whom he brought any one could

look back farther than it is usually allowed to man. They were all over sixty, and their long white beards gave them a venerable appearance, which made me attach more importance to the proceedings than I intended. These hoary-headed men, I thought, could not speak with lying lips; and taking my place in the middle of the floor, the witnesses seated themselves before me, and I prepared, with business-like formality, to examine them, and reduce their examination to writing. Since I left home I had rarely thought of any thing connected with my professional pursuits, and I could not but smile as I found myself seated in the middle of a floor, surrounded by a crowd of Israelites in the old city of Hebron, for the first time in more than eighteen months resuming the path of my daily walks at home. I placed the scribe before me, and with a little of the keenness of the hunter returning to a track for some time lost, I examined the witnesses severally, and dictated in good set form the several requisite affidavits; and then reading them over distinctly, like a commissioner authorised to take acknowledgments under the act, &c., I swore the white-bearded old men upon the table of their law, a Hebrew copy of the Old Testament. I then dictated an affidavit for the rabbi himself, and was about administering the oath as before, when the old man rose, and taking the paper in his hand, and telling me to follow him, led the way through a range of narrow lanes and streets, and a crowd of people, to the little synagogue, where, opening the holy of holies, and laying his hand upon the sacred scroll, he read over the affidavit and solemnly swore to its truth. It did not need this additional act of solemnity to convince me of his truth; and when he gave me back the paper, and I saw the earnestness and deep interest depicted in the faces of the crowd that had followed us, I again resolved that I would use my best exertions to gladden once more the old man's heart before he died. I added to the several affidavits a brief statement of the circumstances under which they had been taken, and putting the paper in my pocket, returned to the house of the rabbi; and I may as well mention here, that at Beyroot I called upon the Austrian consul, and before I left had the satisfaction of receiving from him the assurance that the passport should be made out forthwith, and delivered to the agent whom the old rabbi had named to me.

I had nothing now to detain me in Hebron; my mules and a kervash provided by the governor were waiting for me, and I bade farewell to my Jewish friends. I could not offer to pay the old rabbi with money for his hospitality, and would have satisfied my conscience by a compliment to the servants; but the son of the good old man, himself more than sixty, told Paul that they would all feel hurt if I urged it. I did not urge it; and the thought passed rapidly through my mind, that while yesterday the children of the desert would have stripped me of my last farthing, to-day a Jew would not take from me a para. I passed through the dark and narrow lanes of the Jewish quarter, the inhabitants being all arranged before their houses; and all along, even from the lips of maidens, a farewell salutation fell upon my ears. They did not know what I had done, or what I proposed to do; but they knew that I intended a kindness to a father of their tribe, and they thanked me as if that kindness were already done. With the last of their kind greetings still lingering on my ears, I emerged from the Jewish quarter; and it was with a warm feeling of thankfulness I felt, that if yesterday I had an Arab's curse, to-day I had a Jewish blessing.

CHAPTER XXVI.

An Arnaout.—The Pools of Solomon.—Bethlehem.—The Empress Helena.—A Clerical Exquisite.—Miraculous Localities.—A Boon Companion.—The Soldier's Sleep.—The Birthplace of Christ.—Worship in the Grotto.—Moslem Fidelity.

I HAD given away all my superfluous baggage, and commenced my journey in the Holy Land with three mules,

one for myself, another for Paul, and the third for my baggage. The muleteer, who was an uncommonly thriving-looking, well-dressed man, rode upon a donkey, and had an assistant, who accompanied on foot; but by far the most important person of our party was our kervash. He was a wild Arnaout, of a race that had for centuries furnished the bravest, fiercest, and most terrible soldiers in the army of the sultan; and he himself was one of the wildest of that wild tribe. He was now about forty, and had been a warrior from his youth upward, and battles and bloodshed were familiar to him as his food; he had fought under Ibrahim Pacha in his bloody campaign in Greece, and his rebellious war against the sultan; and having been wounded in the great battle in which the Egyptian soldiers defeated the grand vizier with the flower of the sultan's army, he had been removed from the regular service, and placed in an honourable position near the governor of Hebron. He was above the middle height, armed like the bristling porcupine, with pistols, a Damascus sabre, and a Turkish gun slung over his back, all which he carried as lightly and easily as a sportsman does his fowling-piece. His face was red, a burnt or baked red; his mustaches seemed to curl spontaneously, as if in contempt of dangers; and he rode his high-mettled horse as if he were himself a part of the noble animal. Altogether, he was the boldest, most dashing, and martial-looking figure I ever saw; and had a frankness and openness in his countenance which, after the dark and sinister looks of my Bedouins, made me take to him the moment I saw him. I do not think I made as favourable an impression upon him at first; for almost the first words he spoke to Paul after starting were to express his astonishment at my not drinking wine. The janizary must have told him this as he sat by me at supper, though I did not think he was watching me so closely. I soon succeeded, however, in establishing myself on a good footing with my kervash, and learned that his reading of the Koran did not forbid the wine-cup to the followers of the prophet. He admitted that the sultan, as being of the blood of the prophet, and the vicegerent of God upon earth, ought not to taste it; but as to the Pacha of Egypt, he drank good wine whenever he could get it, and this gave his subjects a right to drink as often as they pleased.

We were interrupted by an Arab, who told us that a party of soldiers had just caught two robbers. The kervash pricked up his ears at this, and telling us that he would meet us at a place some distance farther on, he drove his heavy stirrups into his horse's sides, and, dusting up the hill at full gallop, was out of sight in an instant. I did not think it exactly the thing to leave us the first moment we heard of robbers; but I saw that his fiery impatience to be present at a scene could not be controlled; and I felt well assured, that if danger should arrive, we would soon find him at our side. Soon after we found him waiting with the party he had sought; the two robbers chained together, and, probably, long before this, they have expiated their crime with their lives. He told us that from Hebron to Jerusalem was the most unsafe road in the Holy Land; and that Ibrahim Pacha, who hated the Arabs in that vicinity, was determined to clear it of rebels and robbers, if he cut off every man in the country.

About half an hour from Hebron we came to a valley, supposed to be the Vale of Esheol, where the spies sent out by Moses found the grapes so heavy, that to carry one bunch it was necessary to suspend it on a pole. On the right we passed a ruined wall, by some called the Cave of Machpelah, or sepulchre of the patriarchs, but which the Jews at Hebron had called the House of Abraham.

We were on our way to Bethlehem. I had hired my mules for Jerusalem, expecting merely to stop at Bethlehem and push on to Jerusalem that night. The road between these oldest of cities was simply a mule-path over rocky mountains, descending occasionally into rich valleys. We had already, on this our first journey in the Holy Land, found that the character given of it in

the Bible is true at this day; and that the Land of Promise is not like the land of Egypt, watered by the dews of heaven, but by copious and abundant rains. Indeed, the rain was falling in torrents; our clothes were already dripping wet, but we did not mind it, for we were too full of thankfulness that continued sunshine and clear and unclouded skies had been our portion, when we most needed them, in the desert.

The heavy fall of rain made the track slippery and precarious; and it was four hours before we reached the celebrated reservoirs, known to modern travellers under the name of the Pools of Solomon. These large, strong, noble structures, in a land where every work of art has been hurried to destruction, remain now almost as perfect as when they were built. There are three of them, about 480, 600, and 660 feet in length, and 280 in breadth, and of different altitudes, the water from the first running into the second, and from the second into the third. At about a hundred yards' distance is the spring which supplies the reservoirs, as the monks say, the sealed fountain referred to in Canticles, iv. 12. The water from these reservoirs is conveyed to Jerusalem by a small aqueduct, a round earthen pipe about ten inches in diameter, which follows all the sinuosities of the ground, being sometimes above the surface, and sometimes under. It is easily broken; and while I was in Jerusalem, an accident happened which entirely cut off the water from the pools.

There is every reason to believe that these pools have existed from the date assigned to them; and that this was the site of one of King Solomon's houses of pleasure, where he made himself "gardens, and orchards, and pools of water." The rain here ceased for a few moments, and enabled me to view them at my leisure; and as I walked along the bank, or stood on the margin, or descended the steps to the water's edge, it seemed almost the wild suggestion of a dream, to imagine that the wisest of men had looked into the same pool, had strolled along the same bank, and stood on the very same steps. It was like annihilating all the intervals of time and space. Solomon and all his glory are departed, and little could even his wisdom have foreseen, that long after he should be laid in the dust, and his kingdom had passed into the hands of strangers, a traveller from a land he never dreamed of would be looking upon his works, and murmuring to himself the words of the preacher, "Vanity of vanities, all is vanity."

A little to the right of the pools, towards the region of the Dead Sea, is a very large grotto, supported by great pillars of the natural rock, perfectly dry, without petrification or stalactites: it is a perfect labyrinth within, and, as in many of the ancient catacombs, a man might easily lose himself for ever in its windings. It lies in the mountainous wilderness of Engaddi, and is supposed to be the Cave of Adullam, where David received the mutinous and discontented spirits of his days, and where, when Saul was in pursuit of him, he cut off the skirts of his garment, and suffered him to go away unharmed.

In an hour more we came in sight of Bethlehem, seated on an elevation, a confused and irregular pile of white buildings. The star of the east no longer hovers over it to mark the spot where the Saviour was born; and the mosque and the minaret proclaim the birthplace of Christ under the dominion of a people who reject and despise him.

Heaps of ruins and houses blackened with smoke show that the hand of war has been there. Ibrahim Pacha, on his sortie from Jerusalem, and on his way to Hebron, had lingered on his path of destruction long enough to lay in ruins half the little city of Bethlehem. It is a singular fact, and exhibits a liberality else unknown in the history of the Turks or the Mussulman religion, that the height of his indignation fell upon the Arabs. He spared the Christians for a reason, that never before operated with a Turk—because they had not offended. He did, too, another liberal thing; saying that Christians and Mussulmans could not live together in peace, he drove out from Bethlehem the Arabs whom

the sword had spared, and left the place consecrated by the birth of Christ in the exclusive possession of his followers. True, he stained this act of clemency or policy by arbitrarily taking away thirty Christian boys, whom he sent to work at the factories in Cairo; and the simple-hearted parents, hearing that I had come from that city, asked me if I had seen their children.

It is a happy thing for the traveller in the Holy Land, that in almost all the principal places there is a Christian convent, whose doors are always open to him; and one of the largest and finest of these is in Bethlehem. Riding through the whole extent of the little town, greeted by Christians, who, however, with their white turbans and fierce mustaches and beards, had in my eyes a most unchristian appearance, and stopping for a moment on the high plain in front, overlooking the valley, and the sides of the hill all cultivated in terraces, we dismounted at the door of the convent.

Beginning my tour in the Holy Land at the birth-place of our Saviour, and about to follow him in his wanderings through Judea, Samaria, and Galilee, over the ground consecrated by his preaching, his sufferings, and miracles, to his crucifixion on Calvary, I must prepare my readers for a disappointment which I experienced myself. The immediate followers of our Saviour, who personally knew the localities which are now guarded and revered as holy places, engrossed by the more important business of their Master's mission, never marked these places for the knowledge of their descendants. Neglected for several centuries, many of them were probably entirely unknown, when a new spirit arose in the East, and the minds of the Christians were inflamed with a passion for collecting holy relics, and for making pilgrimages to the places consecrated by the acts and sufferings of our Redeemer and his disciples; and the Empress Helena, the mother of Constantine, the first Christian empress, came as a crusader into the Holy Land, to search for and determine the then unknown localities. And the traveller is often astonished that with so little to guide her, she was so successful; for she not only found all the holy places mentioned in the Bible, but many more; and the piety of Christians will never forget that it was through her indefatigable exertions the true cross was drawn from the bottom of a dark pit, and is now scattered in pieces all over the world, to gladden the hearts of believers. It may be that the earnest piety of the empress sometimes deceived her; but then she always covered a doubtful place with a handsomer monument, upon much the same principle that a jockey praises a bad horse and says nothing of a good one, because the bad one wants praising and the good one can speak for himself. Besides, the worthy empress seemed to think that a little marble could not hurt a holy place, and a good deal might help to make holy what was not so without it; and so think most of the Christian pilgrims, for I have observed that they always kiss with more devotion the polished marble than the rude stone.

But the Christian who goes animated by the fresh, I may almost say virgin feeling, awakened by the perusal of his Bible, expecting to see in Bethlehem the stable in which our Saviour was born, and the manger in which he was cradled, or in Jerusalem the tomb hewn out of the rock wherein his crucified body was buried, will feel another added to the many grievous disappointments of a traveller, when he finds these hallowed objects, or at least what are pointed out as these, covered and enclosed with party-coloured marble, and bedecked with gaudy and inappropriate ornaments, as if intentionally and impiously to destroy all resemblance to the descriptions given in the sacred book.

I had intended going on to Jerusalem that afternoon; but the rain had retarded me so much, that as soon as I saw the interior of the convent, I determined to remain all night. My muleteer insisted upon proceeding, as I had arranged with him when I engaged him; but my kervash silenced him by a rap over the back with the flat of his sword, and he went off on his donkey alone, leaving behind him his companion and his mules.

Entering by the small door of the convent, I heard in the distance the loud pealing of an organ and the solemn chant of the monks; the sound transported me at once to scenes that were familiar and almost home-like, the churches and cathedrals in Italy; and the appearance of one of the brothers, in the long brown habit of the Capuchins, with his shaved head and sandals on his feet, made me feel for the moment as if I were in Europe. The monks were then at prayers; and following him through the great church, down a marble staircase, and along a subterranean corridor, in five minutes after my arrival in Bethlehem I was standing on the spot where the Saviour of mankind was born.

The superior was a young man, not more than thirty, with a face and figure of uncommon beauty; though not unhealthy, his face was thin and pale, and his high, projecting forehead indicated more than talent. Genius flashed from his eyes, though, so far as I could judge from his conversation, he did not sustain the character his features and expression promised. He was not insensible to the advantages of his personal appearance. The rope around his waist, with the cross dangling at the end, was laid as neatly as a soldier's sword-belt; the top of his head was shaved, his beard combed, and the folds of his long coarse dress, his cowl, and the sandals on his feet, all were arranged with a precision that, under other circumstances, would have made him a Brummel. There was something, too, in the display of a small hand and long taper fingers that savoured more of the exquisite than of the recluse; but I ought not to have noted him too critically, for he was young, handsome, and gentlemanly, and fit for better things than the dronish life of a convent. I am inclined to believe, too, that he sometimes thought of other things than his breviary and his missal; at all events, he was not particularly familiar with Bible history; for in answer to his question as to the route by which I had come, I told him that I had passed through the land of Idumea; and when I expected to see him open his eyes with wonder, I found that he did not know where the land of Idumea was. I remember that he got down a huge volume in Latin, written by saint somebody, and we pored over it together until our attention was drawn off by something else, and we forgot what we were looking for.

The walls of the convent contain all that is most interesting in Bethlehem; but outside the walls also are places consecrated in Bible history, and which the pilgrim to Bethlehem, in spite of doubts and confusion, will look upon with exceeding interest. Standing on the high table of ground in front of the convent, one of the monks pointed out the fountain where, when David was thirsting, his young men procured him water; and in the rear of the convent is a beautiful valley, lying in the midst of it a ruined village, marking the place where the shepherds were watching their flocks at night when the angel came down and announced to them the birth of the Saviour. The scene was as pastoral as it had been 1800 years before; the sun was going down, the shepherds were gathering their flocks together, and one could almost imagine that, with the approach of evening, they were preparing to receive another visitor from on high. In the distance beyond the valley is a long range of mountains enclosing the Dead Sea, and among them was the wilderness of Engaddi; and the monk pointed out a small opening as leading to the shores of the sea, at the precise spot where Lot's wife was turned into a pillar of salt.

Mixed with these references to Bible history were idle legends of later days, connected with places to which the monk conducted me with as much solemnity as he had displayed when indicating the holy places of Scripture. In a grotto cut out of the rock is a chapel dedicated to the Virgin; and he told me that the mother of Christ had here concealed herself from Herod, and nursed the infant Jesus forty days, before she escaped into Egypt. Near this is another grotto, in which the Virgin, going to visit a neighbour with the child in her

arms, took refuge from a shower, and her milk overflowed; and now, said the monk, there is a faith among all people, Turks, Greeks, and Armenians, that if a woman to whom Nature has denied the power of nursing her child, comes to this grotto and prays before the altar, the fountain of life will be opened to her. Nor was the virtue of the place confined to those who should resort to it in person; for the monks had prayed for and had obtained a delegation of the Virgin's power, and a small portion of powder from the porous rock, swallowed in a little water, would be equally efficacious to women having faith. A huge chamber had been cut away in the back of the grotto by pilgrims, who had taken with them to their distant homes some of this beautiful provision for a want of nature, and Paul and myself each took a pilgrim's share.

It was dark when I returned to the convent, followed by my wild Arnaut, whom, by the way, I have neglected for some time. I had told him on my arrival that I should not need his escort any farther; but he swore that he had his orders, and would not leave me until he saw me safe within the walls of Jerusalem; and so far he had been as good as his word; for, wherever I went, he was close at my heels, following with invincible gravity, but never intruding, and the continual rattling of his steel scabbard being the only intimation I had of his presence. He was now following me through the stone court of the convent, into the room fitted up for the reception of pilgrims and travellers. I liked him, and I liked to hear the clanking of his sword at my heels; I would have staked my life upon his faith; and such confidence did he inspire by his bold, frank bearing, his manly, muscular figure, and his excellent weapons, that with a dozen such I would not have feared a whole tribe of Bedouins. In another country and a former age he would have been the *beau idéal* of a dashing cavalier, and an unflinching companion at the winecup or in the battle-field. I bore in mind our conversation in the morning about wine, and was determined that my liberal expounder of the Koran should not suffer from my abstinence. The superior, apologising for the want of animal food, had told me to call for any thing in the convent, and I used the privilege for the benefit of my thirsty Mussulman. The first thing I called for was wine; and while supper was preparing, we were tasting its quality. He was no stickler for trifles, and accepted, without any difficulty, my apology for not being able to pledge him in full bumpers; and although most of this time Paul was away, and we could not exchange a word, the more he drank the better I liked him. It was so long since I had had with me a companion I liked, that I "cottoned" to him more and more, and resolved to make the most of him. I had a plate for him at table by the side of me; and when Paul, who did not altogether enter into my feelings, asked him if he would not rather eat alone, on the floor, he half drew his sword, and driving it back into its scabbard, swore that he would eat with me if it was on the top of a minaret. We sat down to table, and I did the honours with an unsparing hand. He attempted for a moment the use of the knife and fork, but threw them down in disgust, and trusted to the means with which nature had provided him. The wine he knew how to manage, and for the rest he trusted to me; and I gave him bread, olives, fish, milk, honey, sugar, figs, grapes, dates, &c. &c., about as fast as I could hand them over, one after the other, all together, pell-mell, and with such an utter contempt of all rules of science as would have made a Frenchman go mad. Paul by this time entered into the spirit of the thing; and when my bold guest held up for a moment, he stood by with a raw egg, the shell broken, and turning back his head, poured it down his throat. I followed with a plate of brown sugar, into which he thrust his hand to the knuckles, sent down a huge mouthful to sweeten the egg, and, nearly kicking over the table with an ejaculation about equivalent to our emphatic "enough," threw himself upon the divan. I wound him up with coffee and pipes; and when the superior

TRAVELS IN THE HOLY LAND.

came to me in the evening, to the scandal of the holy brotherhood, my wild companion was lying asleep, as drunk as a lord, upon the divan.

Several of the monks came in to see me, and all loved to talk of the world they had left. They were all Italians; and in the dreariness and desolation of Judea, in spite of monastic vows, their hearts turned to the sunny skies of their beautiful native land. They left me at an early hour; and I trust the reader will forgive me, if, in the holy city of Bethlehem, I forgot for a moment the high and holy associations connected with the place, in the sense of enjoyment awakened by the extraordinary luxury of a pair of sheets, a luxury I had not known since my last night in Cairo.

Tempted as I was to yield myself at once to the enjoyment, I paused a while to look at the sleeping figure of my kervash. He lay extended at full length on his back, with his arms folded across his breast, his right hand clutching the hilt of his sword, and his left the handle of a pistol; his broad chest rose and fell with his long and heavy respirations; and he slept like a man who expected to be roused by a cry to battle. His youth and manhood had been spent in scenes of violence; his hands were red with blood; murder and rapine had been familiar to him; and when his blood was up in battle, the shrieks and groans of the dying were music in his ears; yet he slept, and his sleep was calm and sound as that of childhood. I stood over him with the candle in my hand, and flashed the light across his face; his rugged features contracted, and his sword rattled in his convulsive grasp. I blew out the light, and jumped into bed. Once during the night I was awakened by his noise; by the dim light of a small lamp that hung from the ceiling, I saw him stumble to the table, seize a huge jar of water, and apply it to his lips; I saw him throw back his head, and heard his long, regular, and continued swallows; and when he had finished the jar, he drew a long breath, went to the window, came to my bedside, looked at me for a moment, probably thinking what a deal of useless trouble I took in pulling off my clothes; and, throwing himself upon the divan, in a few moments he was again asleep.

In the morning, immediately after breakfast, one of the monks came to conduct me through the convent. The building covered a great extent of ground; and for strength and solidity, as well as size, resembled a fortress. It was built by the Empress Helena, over the spot consecrated as the birthplace of our Saviour, and was intended, so far as human handiwork could do so, to honour and reverence the holy spot. The insufficient means of the pious empress, however, or some other cause, prevented its being finished according to the plan she had designed; and the charity of subsequent Christians has barely sufficed to keep it from falling to ruin. The great church would have been a magnificent building if finished according to her plan; but now, in its incomplete state, it is a melancholy monument of defeated ambition. On each side is a range of noble columns, supporting a frieze of wood which the monk told me was cedar from Lebanon, and still remaining almost as sound as the solid stone. The whole building is divided among the Catholics, Greeks, and Armenians, the three great bodies who represent, or rather misrepresent, Christianity in the East. Each has its limits, beyond which the others must not pass; and again there are certain parts which are common to all. The Turkish government exercises a control over it; and taking advantage of the dissensions between these different professors, sells the privileges to the highest bidder. In the great church the Greeks, pretending to have the richest, are the largest proprietors, to the great scandal of the Catholics, who hate the Greeks with a most orthodox virulence.

The Grotto of the Nativity is under the floor of the church; the Greeks having an entrance directly by its side, and the Catholics by a longer and more distant passage. I descended by the latter. My Arnaout was close at my heels, grave and sober as if he had never known the taste of wine, and following with a respect that

might have satisfied the most bigoted Christian. Indeed, it was a thing to be noted, with what respect and reverence this wild and lawless Mussulman regarded the holy places, consecrated by a religion he believed false, and the worship of a people he despised. Nevertheless, Paul was scandalised at the eyes of an unbeliever being permitted to see the holy places, and stopped at the top of the staircase, to urge upon me the propriety of making him stay behind. The kervash seemed to understand what he was saying, and to intimate by his looks that it would not be an easy matter to turn him back. I did not think, however, that the feet of a Mussulman would be in themselves a profanation, and the monk making no objection, I silenced Paul's.

Passing through the chapel of the Catholic convent, where the monks were teaching the children of the Arab Christians the principles of the Catholic faith, I was conducted to the room of the superior, where, among other relics which I now forget, he showed me the withered hand of an infant, preserved among the treasures of the convent as having belonged to one of the innocents massacred by the order of Herod. Near the door of the chapel we descended a flight of stone steps, and then a second, until we came to an excavation in the solid rock; and following a passage to the right, came to a little chapel, with an altar, dedicated to Joseph the husband of Mary. At the end of this passage was a large chamber, called the school of St Jerome, where that great Catholic saint wrote his version of the Bible, the celebrated Vulgate. Passing out through the door of this chamber, on the right is the tomb of the saint; and directly opposite are the tombs of Santa Paula, and another whose name I have forgotten—very good ladies, no doubt; but who they were, or why they were buried in that holy place, I did not understand; although they must have died in the odour of sanctity, as their bodies have since been removed to the papal city. Returning into the first passage, and advancing a few steps, on the left is an altar over the pit into which the bodies of the murdered innocents were thrown. Under the altar is a recess with an iron grating, opening into the pit, or rather vault below. By the light of a torch I gazed long and earnestly within, but could see nothing that gave confirmation to the story. Over the altar was a rude painting, representing the massacred infants held up by their heels, with their throats cut, and their bowels gushing out; the anguish of the mothers, and all the necessary and fearful accompaniments of such a scene. A few paces farther is an altar, over the spot where Joseph sat during the birth of the divine infant, meditating upon the great event; and farther on, to the left, is the entrance to the Grotto of the Nativity.

It was the hour assigned for the use of the Armenians, and the monks were all there chanting the praises of the Redeemer. The chamber of the grotto is thirty-seven feet long and eleven wide, with a marble floor and walls, the latter adorned with tapestry and paintings. Directly in front of the door by which we entered, at the other end of the Grotto, is a semicircular recess, lined and floored with small blocks of marble; and in the centre a single star, with the inscription, "Hic natus est Jesus Christus de Virga"—here Christ was born of the Virgin. The star in the east which went before the wise men, says the tradition, rested over this spot; and fourteen lamps, the gifts of Christian princes, burning night and day, constantly illumine the birth-place of salvation to a ruined world. On the right, descending two steps, is a chamber paved and lined with marble, having at one end a block polished and hollowed out; and this is the manger in which our Saviour was laid. Over the altar is a picture representing a stable with horses and cattle, and behind a little iron wickerwork are five lamps constantly burning. Directly opposite is the altar of the magi, where the three kings sat when they came to offer presents to the Son of God. Over it is a picture representing them in the act of making their offerings; and one of the kings is represented as Ethiopian.

All this has but little conformity with the rude scene

of the stable and the manger as described in the Bible; and in all probability, most of the holy places pointed out in Bethlehem, and adorned and transformed by the false but well-meaning piety of Christians, have no better claim to authenticity than the credulity of a weak and pious old woman. But amid all the doubts that present themselves when we stop to ponder and reflect, it is sufficient for our enjoyment of these scenes to know that we are in "Bethlehem of Judea," consecrated by the greatest event in the history of the world, the birth of the Son of God. We know that, within the atmosphere we breathe, Christ first appeared on earth; that one of the stars of heaven left its place among the constellations, and hovered over the spot on which we stand; that the kings of the earth came here to offer gifts to the holy child; and beholding multitudes of pilgrims from far-distant lands constantly prostrating themselves before the altar, in the earnestness and sincerity of undoubting faith, we give ourselves up to the illusion, if illusion it be, and are ready to believe that we are indeed standing where Christ was born.

My Armout behaved remarkably well, though once he broke the stillness of the grotto by an involuntary exclamation; his loud harsh voice, and the rattling of his armour, startled for a moment the monks and praying pilgrims. On coming out, I told him that the Christians were much more liberal than the Mussulmans; for we had permitted him to see all the holy places in the church, while I had been violently driven from the door of the mosque in Hebron. He railed at the ignorance and prejudices of his countrymen, and swore, if I would go back to Hebron, he would carry me through the mosque on the point of his sword. I did not much relish this method of entering a mosque, but took it, as it was meant, for a warm expression of his willingness to serve me; and we returned to the apartment of the superior to bid him farewell. The superior accompanied us to the door of the convent; and, without meaning to be scandalous, or insinuate that there was any thing wrong in it, although he was a young and handsome man, I left him talking with a woman.

CHAPTER XXVII.

THE Tomb of Rachel.—First View of Jerusalem.—Falling among Thieves.—Poverty of the Pacha.—A Turkish Dignitary.—A Missionary.—Easter in Jerusalem.—A Little Conversation.

GIVING a last look to the Valley of the Shepherds, we were soon on the mountain's side; and very soon all the interest with which I had regarded Bethlehem was lost, in the more absorbing feeling with which I looked forward to Jerusalem. My muleteer had gone on the night before; my Armout knew nothing of the holy places on the road, and we took with us a Christian boy to point them out. The first was the tomb of Rachel, a large building, with a whitened dome, and having within it a high oblong monument, built of brick, and succeeded over. I dismounted and walked round the tomb, inside and out, and again resumed my journey. All that we know in regard to this tomb is, that Rachel died when journeying with Jacob from Sychem to Hebron, and that Jacob buried her near Bethlehem; and whether it be her tomb or not, I could not but remark that, while youth and beauty have faded away, and the queens of the East have died and been forgotten, and Zenobia and Cleopatra sleep in unknown graves, year after year thousands of pilgrims are thronging to the supposed last resting-place of a poor Hebrew woman.

The boy next conducted us to a stony field, by which, as he said, the Virgin once passed and asked for beans; the owner of the field told her there were none; and, to punish him for his falsehood and lack of charity, the beans were all changed into stones, and the country had remained barren ever since. Paul had been twice to Bethlehem without seeing this field; and he immediately dismounted and joined the boy in searching for the holy petrifications. "It was wonderful," said Paul,

as he picked up some little stones as much like beans as any thing else; "and see too," said he, "how barren the country is!" In about an hour we came to the Greek monastery of St Elias; a large stone building, standing on an eminence, and commanding a fine view of Bethlehem. Stopping to water my horse at a fountain in front of the monastery, I turned to take a last look at Bethlehem; and my horse moving a few paces, when I turned again I saw in full view the holy city of Jerusalem. I did not expect it, and was startled by its proximity. It looked so small, and yet lay spread out before me so distinctly, that it seemed as if I ought to perceive the inhabitants moving through the streets, and hear their voices humming in my ears. I saw that it was walled all around, and that it stood alone in an extensive waste of mountains, without suburbs, or even a solitary habitation beyond its walls. There were no domes, steeples, or turrets, to break the monotony of its aspect, and even the mosques and minarets made no show. It would have been a relief, and afforded something to excite the feelings, to behold it in ruins, or dreary and desolate like Petra, or with the banner of the Prophet, the blood-red Mussulman flag, waving high above its walls. But all was tame and vacant. There was nothing in its appearance that afforded me a sensation; it did not even inspire me with melancholy; and I probably convict myself when I say that the only image it presented to my mind was that of a city larger and in better condition than the usual smaller class of those within the Turkish dominion. I was obliged to rouse myself by recalling to mind the long train of extraordinary incidents of which that little city had been the theatre, and which made it, in the eyes of the Christian at least, the most hallowed spot on earth. One thing only particularly struck me—its exceeding stillness. It was about mid-day; but there was no throng of people entering or departing from its gates, no movement of living creatures to be seen beneath its walls. All was as quiet as if the inhabitants were, like the Spaniards, taking their noonday sleep. We passed the Pools of Hezekiah, and came in sight of the Mount of Olives; and now, for the first sign of life, we saw streaming from the gate a long procession of men, women, and children, on dromedaries, camels, and horses, and on foot; pilgrims who had visited Calvary and the holy sepulchre, and were now bending their steps towards Bethlehem.

At every moment the approach was gaining interest; but in a few minutes, while yet about an hour distant from the walls, my attention was diverted from the city by the sudden appearance of our muleteer, who had left us the day before in a pet, and gone on before us to Jerusalem. He was sitting on the ground alone, so wan and wo-begone, so changed from the spruce and well-dressed muleteer who had accompanied us from Hebron, that I scarcely recognised him. Every article of his former dress was gone, from his gay turban to his long boots; and in their stead he displayed an old yellow-striped shawl, doing duty as a turban, and a ragged Bedouin gown. Late in the afternoon, while hurrying on to get in before the gates should be closed, he was hailed by four Arabs; and when he attempted to escape by pushing his donkey, he was brought to by a musket-ball passing through the folds of his dress and grazing his side. A hole in his coat, however, did not save it; and according to the Arab mode of robbery, they stripped him to his skin, and left him stark naked in the road. From his manner of telling the story, I am inclined to think that the poor fellow had not conducted himself very valiantly; for though he did not regard the scratch on his side or the risk he had run of his life, he mourned bitterly over the loss of his garments. Arrived in the Holy Land, I had thought danger of all kinds at an end; and I could not help recognising the singular good fortune which had accompanied me thus far, and congratulating myself upon the accident which had detained me at Bethlehem.

We were soon approaching the walls of Jerusalem, and seemed to be almost at their foot; but we were on

one of the mountains that encompass the city, and the deep Valley of Jehoshaphat was yet between us and the holy city—the sacred burying-ground of the Jews, the “gathering-place of nations.” Crossing this valley, we descended on the other side, and in a few moments were on one of the seven hills on which the city is built, and entering at the Bethlehem gate. It was guarded by a Turkish soldier, and half a dozen more lay basking in the sun outside, who raised their heads as I approached, their long mustaches curling as they looked at me; and though they gave me no greeting, they let me pass without any molestation. On the right was the citadel; a soldier was on the walls, and a small red flag, the standard of Mohammed, was drooping against its staff. In front was an open place, irregular, and apparently formed by clearing away the ruins of fallen houses. As in all Turkish cities, the stillness was unbroken; there was no rattling of wheels over the pavements, nor even the tramp of horses.

We wound around the walls, and dismounted at the only asylum for strangers, the Latin Convent. I presented myself to the superior; and after receiving from him a kind and cordial welcome, with the usual apologies for meagre fare on account of its being Lent, went to the room assigned me; and had just sat down to dinner, when my poor muleteer entered in greater distress than ever.

Afraid of the very thing that happened, he had started immediately on his return to Hebron, and at the gate his mules were seized by a soldier for the use of the government. It was in a spirit of perfect wretchedness that the poor fellow, still smarting under the loss of his clothes, almost threw himself at my feet, and begged me to intercede for him. I was, of course, anxious to help him if I could, and immediately rose to go with him; but Paul told me to remain quiet, and he would settle the matter in five minutes. Paul was a great admirer of the pacha. Wherever his government was established, he had made it safe for the traveller; and Paul's courage always rose and fell according to the subdued or unsubdued state of the population. In the city of Jerusalem the wind could scarcely blow without the leave of Ibrahim Pacha; and Paul had mounted on stilts almost as soon as we crossed the threshold of the gate. He had already been at his old tricks of pushing the unresisting Arabs about, and kicking them out of the way, as in the miserable villages on the Nile; and, strong in the omnipotence of the firman, he now hurried to the gate; but he came back faster than he went. I have no doubt that he was very presuming and impudent, and richly deserved more than he got; but at all events he returned on a full run, and in a towering passion. The soldier had given him the usual Mussulman abuse, showering upon him the accustomed “dog” and “Christian;” and, moreover, had driven him to the verge of madness by calling him a “Jew,” and threatening to whip both him and his master. Paul ran away from what I am inclined to believe would have been his share, as the Arabs had taken part against him; and, burning with the indignity of being called a Jew, begged me to seek redress of the governor. I was roused myself, not so much by the particular insult to Paul, as by the general intention of the thing, and the disconsolate figure of my poor muleteer; and leaving my unfinished meal, with my firman in my hand, and Paul and the muleteer at my heels, I started for the palace of the governor.

Old things and new are strangely blended in Jerusalem; and the residence of the Turkish governor is in the large building which to this day bears the name of Pontius Pilate. Paul told me its history as we were ascending the steps; and it passed through my mind as a strange thing, that almost the first moment after entering the city, I was making a complaint—perhaps in the same hall where the Jews had complained of Christ before Pontius Pilate, having with me a follower of that Christ whom the Jews reviled and buffeted, burning under the indignity of being called a Jew.

The governor, as is the custom of governors in the

East, and probably as Pontius Pilate did in the time of our Saviour, sat in a large room, ready to receive every body who had any complaint to make; his divan was a raised platform, on an iron camp-bedstead, covered with rich Turkey rugs, and over them a splendid lion-skin. His face was noble, and his long black beard the finest I ever saw; a pair of large pistols and a Damascus sabre were lying by his side, and a rich fur cloak, thrown back over his shoulders, displayed a form that might have served as a model for a Hercules. Altogether, he reminded me of Richard in his tent on the plains of Acre. At the moment of my entry, he was breathing on a brilliant diamond, and I noticed on his finger an uncommonly beautiful emerald. He received me with great politeness; and when I handed him the pacha's firman, with a delicacy and courtesy I never saw surpassed, he returned it to me unopened and unread, telling me that my dress and appearance were sufficient recommendation to the best services in his power. If the reader would know what dress and appearance are a sufficient recommendation to the best offices of a Turkish governor, I will merely mention that, having thrown off, or rather having been stripped of, most of my Turkish dress at Hebron, I stood before the governor in a red tarboueh, with a long black silk tassel, a blue roundabout jacket buttoned up to the throat, grey pantaloons, boots splashed with mud, a red sash, a pair of large Turkish pistols, sword, and my Nubian club in my hand; and the only decided mark of aristocracy about me was my beard, which, though not so long as the governor's, far exceeded it in brilliancy of complexion.

The few moments I had had for observation, and the courteous demeanour of the governor, disarmed me of my anger; and coffee and the first pipe over, I stated my grievances very dispassionately. Paul's wrath was still dominant, and I have no doubt he represented the conduct of the soldier as much worse than it was; for the governor, turning to me without any further inquiries, asked if he should have him bastinadoed. This summary justice startled even Paul; and feeling a little ashamed of my own precipitation, I was now more anxious to prevent punishment than I had before been to procure it; and begged him to spare the soldier, and merely order him to release the mules. Without another word he called a janizary, and requesting me to wait, ordered him to accompany Paul to the gate where the scene took place; and when Paul returned, the muleteer, with a thankful heart, was already on his way to Hebron. I had the satisfaction of learning, too, that the officers were on the trace of the robbers who had stripped him, and before morning they expected to have them in custody.

Several times afterwards I called upon the governor, and was always treated with the same politeness. Once, when I was walking alone outside the walls, I met him sitting on the grass, with his janizaries and slaves standing up around him; and the whole Turkish population being out wandering among the tombs, he procured for me a respect and consideration which I think were useful to me afterwards, by calling me to a seat beside him, and giving me the pipe from his own mouth. Some months afterwards, at Genoa, I saw a brief article in an Italian paper, referring to a previous article, giving an account of a then late revolution there, in which the governor was on the point of falling into the hands of the insurgents. I have never seen any account of the particulars of this revolution, and do not know whether he is now living or dead. In the East, life hangs by so brittle a thread, that when you part from a man in power, in all probability you will never see him again. I can only hope that the Governor of Jerusalem still lives, and that his condition in life is as happy as when I saw him.

It was Saturday afternoon when I arrived at Jerusalem. I had a letter of introduction to Mr Thompson, an American missionary, and the first thing I did was to look for him. One of the monks of the convent gave me the direction to the American priest, not knowing his name; and instead of Mr Thompson, I found Mr

Whiting, who had been there about a year in his place. Like the governor, Mr Whiting did not want any credentials; but here, being among judges, it was not my dress and appearance that recommended me. I was an American, and at that distance from home the name of countryman was enough. In the city of Jerusalem such a meeting was to him a rare and most welcome incident; while to me, who had so long been debarred all conversation except with Paul and the Arabs, it was a pleasure which few can ever know, to sit down with a compatriot, and once more, in my native tongue, hold converse of my native land.

Each of us soon learned to look upon the other as a friend; for we found that an old friend and schoolmate of mine had been also a friend and schoolmate of his own. He would have had me stay at his house; but I returned to the convent, and with my thoughts far away, and full of the home of which we had been talking, I slept for the first night in the city of Jerusalem.

The first and most interesting object within the walls of the holy city, the spot to which every pilgrim first directs his steps, is the Holy Sepulchre. The traveller who has never read the descriptions of those who have preceded him in a pilgrimage through the Holy Land, finds his expectations strangely disappointed, when, approaching this hallowed tomb, he sees around him the tattered houses of a ruined city, and is conducted to the door of a gigantic church.

This edifice is another, and perhaps the principal, monument of the Empress Helena's piety. What authority she had for fixing here the site of the Redeemer's burial-place, I will not stop to inquire. Doubtless she had her reasons; and there is more pleasure in believing, than in raising doubts which cannot be confirmed. In the front of the church is a large courtyard, filled with dealers in beads, crucifixes, and relics; among the most conspicuous of whom are the Christians of Bethlehem, with figures of the Saviour, the Virgin, and a host of saints, carved from mother-of-pearl, in all kinds of fantastic shapes. It was precisely the time at which I had wished and expected to be in Jerusalem—the season of Easter—and thousands of pilgrims, from every part of the Eastern world, had already arrived for the great ceremonies of the holy week. The court was thronged with them, crowded together, so that it was almost impossible to move, and waiting, like myself, till the door of the church should be opened.

The Holy Sepulchre, as in the days when all the chivalry of Europe armed to wrest it from them, is still in the hands of the infidels; and it would have made the sword of an old crusader leap from its scabbard to behold a haughty Turk, with the air of a lord and master, standing sentinel at the door, and with his long mace beating and driving back the crowd of struggling Christians. As soon as the door was opened, a rush was made for entrance; and as I was in the front rank, before the impetus ceased, amid a perfect storm of pushing, yelling, and shouting, I was carried almost headlong into the body of the church. The press continued behind, hurrying me along, and kicking off my shoes; and in a state of desperate excitement both of mind and body, utterly unsuited to the place and time, I found myself standing over the so-called tomb of Christ; where, to enhance the incongruity of the scene, at the head of the sepulchre stood a long-bearded monk, with a plate in his hand, receiving the pence of the pilgrims. My dress marked me as a different person from the miserable, beggarly crowd before me; and expecting a better contribution from me, at the tomb of him who had pronounced that all men are equal in the sight of God, with an expression of contempt like the "canaille" of a Frenchman, and with kicks, cuffs, and blows, he drove back those before me, and gave me a place at the head of the sepulchre. My feelings were painfully disturbed, as well by the manner of my entrance as by the irreverent demeanour of the monk; and disappointed, disgusted, and sick at heart, while hundreds were still struggling for admission, I turned away and left the church. A warmer imagination than

mine could perhaps have seen, in a white marble sarcophagus, "the sepulchre hewn out of a rock," and in the fierce struggling of these barefooted pilgrims the devotion of sincere and earnest piety, burning to do homage in the holiest of places; but I could not.

It was refreshing to turn from this painful exhibition of a deformed and degraded Christianity to a simpler and purer scene. The evening before, Mr Whiting had told me that religious exercises would be performed at his house the next day, and I hastened from the church to join in the grateful service. I found him sitting at a table, with a large family Bible open before him. His wife was present, with two little Armenian girls, whom she was educating to assist her in her school; and I was not a little surprised to find that, when I had taken my seat, the congregation was assembled. In fact, Mr Whiting had only been waiting for me; and as soon as I came in, he commenced the service to which I had been so long a stranger. It was long since I had heard the words of truth from the lips of a preacher; and as I sat with my eyes fixed upon the Garden of Gethsemane and the Mount of Olives, I could not help thinking of it as a strangely-interesting fact, that here, in the holy city of Jerusalem, where Christ preached and died, though thousands were calling upon his name, the only persons who were praising him in simplicity and truth were a missionary and his wife, and a passing traveller, all from a far-distant land. I had, moreover, another subject of reflection. In Greece I had been struck with the fact that the only schools of instruction were those established by American missionaries, and supported by the liberality of American citizens; that our young republic was thus, in part, discharging the debt which the world owes to the ancient mistress of science and the arts, by sending forth her sons to bestow the elements of knowledge upon the descendants of Homer and Pericles, Plato and Aristotle; and here, on the very spot whence the apostles had gone forth to preach the glad tidings of salvation to a ruined world, a missionary from the same distant land was standing as an apostle over the grave of Christianity, a solitary labourer striving to re-establish the pure faith and worship that were founded on this spot eighteen centuries ago.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

Church of the Holy Sepulchre.—An unexpected Discovery.—Mount Calvary.—The Sepulchre.—The Valley of Jehoshaphat.—The Garden of Gethsemane.—Place of the Temple.—The Four Great Tombs.—Silas's Brook.

During my stay in Jerusalem, a day seldom passed in which I did not visit the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, but my occupation was chiefly to observe the conduct of the pilgrims; and if the reader will accompany me into the interior, he will see what I was in the habit of seeing every day.

The key of the church is kept by the governor of the city; the door is guarded by a Turk, and opened only at fixed hours, and then only with the consent of the three convents, and in the presence of their several dragomen; an arrangement which often causes great and vexatious delays to such as desire admittance. This delay was probably intended for solemnity and effect, but its consequence is exactly the reverse; for as soon as the door is opened, the pilgrims, who have almost always been kept waiting for some time, and have naturally become impatient, rush in, struggling with each other, overturning the dragomen, and thumped by the Turkish doorkeeper, and are driven like a herd of wild animals into the body of the church. I do not mean to exaggerate a picture, the lightest of whose shades is already too dark. I describe only what I saw, and with this assurance the reader must believe me when I say that I frequently considered it putting life and limb in peril to mingle in that crowd. Probably it is not always so; but there were at that time within the walls of Jerusalem from ten to twenty thousand pilgrims all had come to visit the Holy Sepulchre.

Supposing, then, the rush to be over, and the traveller to have recovered from its effects, he will find himself in a large apartment, forming a sort of vestibule; on the left, in a recess of the wall, is a large divan, cushioned and carpeted, where the Turkish doorkeeper is usually sitting, with half a dozen of his friends, smoking the long pipe and drinking coffee, and always conducting himself with great dignity and propriety. Directly in front, surmounted by an iron railing, having at each end three enormous wax candles more than twenty feet high, and suspended above it a number of silver lamps of different sizes and fashions, gifts from the Catholic, Greek, and Armenian convents, is a long flat stone, called the "stone of unction;" and on this, it is said, the body of our Lord was laid when taken down from the cross, and washed and anointed in preparation for sepulture. This is the first object that arrests the pilgrims on their entrance; and here they prostrate themselves in succession, the old and the young, women and children, the rich man and the beggar, and all kiss the sacred stone. It is a slab of polished white marble; and one of the monks, whom I questioned on the subject as he rose from his knees, after kissing it most devoutly, told me that it was not the genuine stone, which he said was under it, the marble having been placed there as an ornamental covering, and to protect the hallowed relic from the abuses of the Greeks.

On the left is an iron circular railing, in the shape of a large parrot's cage, having within it a lamp, and marking the spot where the women sat while the body was anointed for the tomb. In front of this is an open area, surrounded by high square columns, supporting a gallery above. The area is covered by a dome, imposing in appearance and effect; and directly under, in the centre of the area, is an oblong building, about twenty feet long and twelve feet high, circular at the back, but square and finished with a platform in front; and within this building is the holy sepulchre.

Leaving for a moment the thing that is constantly pressing at the door of the sepulchre, let us make the tour of the church. Around the open space under the dome are small chapels for the Syrians, Copts, Maronites, and other sects of Christians who have not, like the Catholics, the Greeks and Armenians, large chapels in the body of the church. Between two of the pillars is a small door, opening to a dark gallery, which leads, as the monks told me, to the tombs of Joseph and Nicodemus, between which and that of the Saviour there is a subterranean communication. These tombs are excavated in the rock, which here forms the floor of the chamber. Without any expectation of making a discovery, I remember that once, in prying about this part of the building alone, I took the little taper that lighted the chamber, and stepped down into the tomb; and I had just time to see that one of the excavations never could have been intended for a tomb, being not more than three feet long, when I heard the footsteps of pilgrim visitors, and scrambled out with such haste that I let the taper fall, put out the light, and had to grope my way back in the dark.

Farther on, and nearly in range of the front of the sepulchre, is a large opening, forming a sort of court to the entrance of the Latin chapel. On one side is a gallery, containing a fine organ; and the chapel itself is neat enough, and differs but little from those in the churches of Italy. This is called the chapel of apparition, where Christ appeared to the Virgin. Within the door, on the right, in an enclosure, completely hidden from view, is the pillar of flagellation, to which our Saviour was tied when he was scourged, before being taken into the presence of Pontius Pilate. A long stick is passed through a hole in the enclosure, the handle being outside, and the pilgrim thrusts it in till it strikes against the pillar, when he draws it out and kisses the point. Only one half of the pillar is here; the other half is in one of the churches at Rome, where may also be seen the table on which our Saviour ate his last supper, and the stone on which the

Peter denied I is master!

Going back again from the door of the chapel of apparition, and turning to the left, on the right is the outside of the Greek chapel, which occupies the largest space in the body of the church; and on the left is a range of chapels and doors, the first of which leads to the prison where, they say, our Saviour was confined before he was led to crucifixion. In front of the door is an unintelligible machine, described as the stone on which our Saviour was placed when put in the stocks. I had never heard of this incident in the story of man's redemption, nor, in all probability, has the reader; but the Christians in Jerusalem have a great deal more of such knowledge than they gain from the Bible. Even Paul knew much that is not recorded in the sacred volume; for he had a book, written by a priest in Malta, and giving many particulars in the life of our Saviour which all the evangelists never knew, or, knowing, have entirely omitted.

Next is the chapel where the soldier who struck his spear into the side of the Redeemer, as he hung upon the cross, retired and wept over his transgression. Beyond this is the chapel where the Jews divided Christ's raiment, and "cast lots for his vesture." The next is one of the most holy places in the church, the chapel of the cross. Descending twenty-eight broad marble steps, the visitor comes to a large chamber eighteen paces square, dimly lighted by a few distant lamps; the roof is supported by four short columns with enormous capitals. In front of the steps is the altar, and on the right a seat on which the Empress Helena, advised by a dream where the true cross was to be found, sat and watched the workmen who were digging below. Descending again fourteen steps, another chamber is reached, darker and more dimly lighted than the first, and hung with faded red tapestry; a marble slab, having on it a figure of the cross, covers the mouth of the pit in which the true cross was found. The next chapel is over the spot where our Saviour was crowned with thorns; and under the altar, protected by an iron grating, is the very stone on which he sat. Then the visitor arrives at Mount Calvary.

A narrow marble staircase of eighteen steps leads to a chapel about fifteen feet square, paved with marble in mosaic, and hung on all sides with silken tapestry and lamps dimly burning; the chapel is divided by two short pillars, hung also with silk, and supporting quadrangular arches. At the extremity is a large altar, ornamented with paintings and figures; and under the altar a circular silver plate, with a hole in the centre, indicating the spot in which rested the step of the cross. On each side of the hole is another, the two designating the places where the crosses of the two thieves were erected; and near by, on the same marble platform, is a crevice about three feet long and three inches wide, having brass bars over it and a covering of silk. Removing the covering, by the aid of a lamp I saw beneath a fissure in a rock; and this, say the monks, is the rock which was rent asunder when our Saviour, in the agonies of death, cried out from the cross, "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" Descending to the floor of the church, underneath is an iron grating which shows more distinctly the fissure in the rock; and directly opposite is a large monument over the head of—Adam.

The reader will probably think that all these things are enough to be comprised under one roof; and having finished the tour of the church, I returned to the great object of the pilgrimage to Jerusalem—the Holy Sepulchre. Taking off the shoes on the marble platform in front, the visitor is admitted by a low door, on entering which the proudest head must needs do reverence. In the centre of the first chamber is the stone which was rolled away from the mouth of the sepulchre—a square block of marble, cut and polished; and though the Armenians have lately succeeded in establishing the genuineness of the stone in their chapel on Mount Zion (the admission by the other monks, however, being always accompanied by the assertion that they stole it), yet the infatuated Greek still kisses and

adores this block of marble as the very stone on which the angel sat when he announced to the women, "He is not dead; he is risen; come see the place where the Lord lay." Again bending the head, and lower than before, the visitor enters the inner chamber, the holiest of holy places. The sepulchre "hewn out of the rock" is a marble sarcophagus, somewhat resembling a common marble bathing-tub, with a lid of the same material. Over it hang forty-three lamps, which burn without ceasing night and day. The sarcophagus is six feet one inch long, and occupies about one half of the chamber; and one of the monks being always present to receive the gifts or tribute of the pilgrims, there is only room for three or four at a time to enter. The walls are of a greenish marble, usually called verd-antique, and this is all. And it will be borne in mind that all this is in a building above ground, standing on the floor of the church.

If I can form any judgment from my own feelings, every man other than a blind and determined enthusiast, when he stands by the side of that marble sarcophagus, must be ready to exclaim, "This is not the place where the Lord lay;" and yet I must be wrong, for sensible men have thought otherwise; and Dr Richardson, the most cautious traveller in the Holy Land, speaks of it as the "Mansion of victory, where Christ triumphed over the grave, and disarmed death of all its terrors." The feelings of a man are to be envied who can so believe. I cannot imagine a higher and holier enthusiasm; and it would be far more agreeable to sustain than to dissolve such illusions; but although I might be deceived by my own imagination and the glowing descriptions of travellers, I would at least have the merit of not deceiving others. The sepulchre of Christ is too holy a thing to be made the subject of trickery and deception; and I am persuaded that it would be far better for the interests of Christianity that it had remained for ever locked up in the hands of the Turks, and all access to it been denied to Christian feet.

But I was not disposed to envy. It was far easier, and suited my humour far better, to take things as I found them; and in this spirit, under the guidance of a monk, and accompanied by a procession of pilgrims, I wandered through the streets of Jerusalem; visited the Pool of Bethesda, where David saw Bethsheba bathing; the five porches where the sick were brought to be healed; the house of Simon the Pharisee, where Mary Magdalene confessed her sins; the prison of St Peter; the house of Mary the mother of Mark; the mansion of Dives and the house of Lazarus (which, by the way, not to be sceptical again, did not look as if its tenant had ever lain at his neighbour's gate, and begged for the "crumbs which fell from the rich man's table"); and entering the Via Dolorosa, the way by which the Saviour passed from the judgment-hall of Pilate to Calvary, saw the spot where the people laid hold of Simon the Cyrene, and compelled him to bear the cross; three different stones on which Christ, fainting, sat down to rest; passed under the arch called Ecce Homo, and looked up at the window from which the Roman judge exclaimed to the persecuting Jews, "Behold the man!"

But if the stranger leaves the walls of the city, his faith is not so severely tested: and for my own part, disposed to indemnify myself for my unwilling scepticism, the third day after my arrival at Jerusalem, on a bright and beautiful morning, with my Nabian club in my hand, which soon became the terror of all the cowardly dogs in Jerusalem, I stood on the threshold of St Stephen's Gate. Paul was with me; and stopping for a moment among the tombs in the Turkish burying-ground, we descended towards the bridge across the brook Kedron, and the mysterious valley of Jehoshaphat. Here I was indeed among the hallowed places of the Bible. Here all was as nature had left it, and spared by the desecrating hand of man; and as I gazed upon the vast sepulchral monuments, the tombs of Absalom, of Zachariah, and Jehoshaphat, and the thousands and tens of thousands of Hebrew tombstones covering the

declivity of the mountain, I had no doubt I was looking upon that great gathering-place, where, three thousand years ago, the Jew buried his dead under the shadow of the Temple of Solomon; and where, even at this day, in every country where his race is known, it is the dearest wish of his heart that his bones may be laid to rest among those of his long-buried ancestors.

Near the bridge is a small table-rock, revered as the spot where Stephen the Martyr was stoned to death; but even here one cannot go far without finding the handiwork of the Lady Helena. A little to the left is the tomb of Joseph and Mary. Descending a few steps to a large marble door, opening to a subterraneous church, excavated from the solid rock, and thence by a flight of fifty marble steps, each twenty feet long, we come to the floor of the chamber. On the right, in a large recess, is the tomb of the Virgin, having over it an altar, and over the altar a painting representing her death-bed, with the Son standing over her, to comfort her and receive her blessing. This is an interesting domestic relation in which to exhibit a mother and her son, but rather inconsistent with the Bible account of the Virgin Mother being present at the crucifixion of our Lord. Indeed, it is a singular fact, that with all the pious homage which they pay to the Son of God, adoring him as equal with the Father in power and goodness, and worshipping the very ground on which he is supposed to have trodden, there is still among the Christians of the East a constant tendency to look upon him as a man of flesh. In a community like ours, governed by an universal sentiment of the spiritual character of our Saviour, it would be regarded as setting at defiance the religious impressions of the people even to repeat what is talked of familiarly by the people of the East; but at the risk of incurring this reproach, it is necessary to illustrate their character, to say that I have heard them talk of the Saviour, and of every incident in his history, as a man with whom they had been familiar in his life; of the Virgin nursing the "little Jesus;" of his stature, strength, age, the colour of his hair, his complexion, and of every incident in his life, real or supposed, from his ascension into heaven down to the "washing of his linen."

At the foot of the hill on the borders of the Valley of Jehoshaphat, beneath the Mount of Olives, we came to the Garden of Gethsemane. Like the great battle-ground where kingdoms have been lost and won, the stubborn earth bears no traces of the scenes that have passed upon its surface: and a stranger might easily pass the Garden of Gethsemane without knowing it as the place where, on the night on which he was betrayed, the Saviour watched with his disciples. It was enclosed by a low, broken stone fence, and an Arab Fellah was quietly turning up the ground with his spade. According to my measurement, the garden is forty-seven paces long, and forty-four wide. It contains eight olive-trees, which the monks believe to have been standing in the days of our Saviour, and to which a gentleman, in whose knowledge I have confidence, ascribed an age of more than eight hundred years. One of these, the largest, barked and scarified by the knives of pilgrims, is revered as the identical tree under which Christ was betrayed; and its enormous roots, growing high out of the earth, could induce a belief of almost any degree of antiquity. A little outside the fence of the garden is a stone, revered as marking the hallowed place where Christ, in the agony of his spirit, prayed that the cup might pass from him; a little farther, where he "swate great drops of blood;" and a little farther is the spot to which he returned, and found the disciples sleeping; and a good pilgrim ever passes from the Garden of Gethsemane to the Mount of Olives without doing reverence in these holy places.

In company with a long procession of pilgrims, who had been assembling in the garden, we ascended the Mount of Olives. The mount consists of a range of four mountains, with summits of unequal altitudes. The highest rises from the Garden of Gethsemane, and is the one fixed upon as the place of our Saviour's ascen-

sion. About half way up is a ruined monastery, built, according to the monks, over the spot where Jesus sat down and wept over the city, and uttered that prediction which has since been so fearfully verified. The olive still maintains its place on its native mountain, and now grows spontaneously upon its top and sides, as in the days of David and our Saviour. In a few moments we reached the summit, the view from which embraces, perhaps, more interesting objects than any other in the world; the Valley of Jehoshaphat, the Garden of Gethsemane, and the city of Jerusalem, the Plains of Jericho, the Valley of the Jordan, and the Dead Sea.

On the top of the mountain is a miserable Arab village, in the centre of which is a small octagonal building, erected, it is said, over the spot from which our Saviour ascended into heaven; and the print of his foot, say the monks, is still to be seen. This print is in the rock, enclosed by an oblong border of marble; and pilgrims may at any time be seen taking, in wax, impressions of the holy footstep; and for this, too, they are indebted to the research and bounty of the Empress Helena.

Descending again to the ruined monastery, at the place where our Saviour, more than 1800 years ago, wept over the city and predicted its eternal ruin, I sat down on a rough stone to survey and muse over the favoured and fallen Jerusalem. The whole city lay extended before me like a map. I could see and distinguish the streets, and the whole interior to the inner side of the farther wall; and oh! how different from the city of our Saviour's love! Though even then but a mere appendage of imperial Rome, it retained the magnificent wonders of its Jewish kings, and, pre-eminent even among the splendid fanes of heathen worship, rose the proud temple of the great King Solomon. Solomon and all his glory have departed; centuries ago the great temple which he built, "the glory of the whole earth," was a heap of ruins; in the prophetic words of our Saviour, not one stone was left upon another; and, in the wanton spirit of triumph, a conquering general drove his plough over its site. For years its very site lay buried in ruins, till the Saracen came with his terrible war-cry, "The Koran or the sword!" and the great Mosque of Omar, the holy of holies in the eyes of all true believers, now rears its lofty dome upon the foundations of the Temple of Solomon.

From the place where I sat, the Mosque of Omar was the only object that relieved the general dullness of the city, and all the rest was dark, monotonous, and gloomy; no spires reared their tapering points to the skies, nor domes nor minarets, the pride and ornament of other Turkish cities. All was as still as death; and the only apparent sign of life was the straggling figure of a Mussulman, with his slippers in his hand, standing up the long courtyard to the threshold of the mosque. The Mosque of Omar, like the great mosque at Mecca, the birthplace of the Prophet, is regarded with far more veneration than even that of St Sophia, or any other edifice of Mohammedan worship; and to this day the Koran or the sword is the doom of any bold intruder within its sacred precincts. At the northern extremity of the mosque is the Golden Gate, for many years closed, and flanked by a tower, in which a Mussulman soldier is constantly on guard; for the Turks believe that, by that gate, the Christians will one day enter and obtain possession of the city—city of mystery and wonder, and still to be the scene of miracles! "It shall be trodden down by the Gentiles until the time of the Gentiles be fulfilled;" and the time shall come when the crescent shall no longer glitte over its battlements, nor the banner of the Prophet wave over its walls.

Returning to the Valley of Jehoshaphat, and passing along its eastern side, we came to the great burying-ground of the Jews. Among its monuments are four, unique in their appearance and construction, and known from time immemorial as the tombs of Absalom, Jehoshaphat, St James, and the prophet Zachariah. All are cut out of the solid rock; the tomb of Absalom is a single stone, as large as an ordinary two-story house, entered with twenty-four semi-columns of the

Doric order, supporting a triangular pyramidal top. The top is battered and defaced; and no pilgrim, whether Jew or Christian, ever passes through the Valley of Jehoshaphat without casting a stone at the sepulchre of the rebellious son. No entrance to this sepulchre has ever been discovered; and the only way of getting into the interior is by a hole broken for the purpose in one of the sides.

Behind the tomb of Absalom is that of Jehoshaphat, "the King of Judah, who walked in the ways of the Lord." It is an excavation in the rock, the door being its only ornament. The interior was damp, the water trickling from the walls, and nearly filled with sand and crumbling stones. The next is the tomb of St James, standing out boldly in the side of the mountain, with a handsome portico of four columns in front, an entrance at the side, and many chambers within. After this is the tomb of Zachariah, like that of Absalom hewn out of the solid rock; and like that, too, having no known entrance. Notwithstanding the specific names given to these tombs, it is altogether uncertain to what age they belong; and it is generally considered that the style of architecture precludes the supposition that they are the work of Jewish builders.

Leaving them after a cursory examination, we descended the valley; and following the now dry bed of the Kedron, we came to "Siloa's brook, that flowed fast by the oracle of God," which, coming from the foot of Mount Zion, here presents itself as a beautiful stream, and runs winding and murmuring through the valley. Hundreds of pilgrims were stretched on its bank; and a little above is the sacred pool issuing from the rock, enclosed by stone walls, with a descent by two flights of steps. "Go wash in the pool of Siloa," said Christ to the man who was born blind; and, like myself, a number of pilgrims were now bending over the pool, and washing in its hallowed waters. Passing by the great tree under which the Prophet Isaiah was sawed asunder, I turned up towards the city, and in a few minutes was standing on Mount Zion.

CHAPTER XXX.

The Field of Blood.—A Traveller's Compliment.—Singular Ceremony.—A Regard Recal.—Ostentation Humility.—Pride must have a Fall.—An Ancient Relic.—Summary Legislation.

ALL that is interesting about Jerusalem may be seen in a few days. My health compelled me to remain there more than three weeks, during which I made two excursions, one to the ancient city of Joppa, and the other to the Dead Sea. As soon as I could do so, however, I visited all the places, to see which is the business of a pilgrim to this holy city. The fourth morning after my arrival, I went out at the Bethlehem Gate, and, crossing the valley of the sons of Hinnon, on the side of the opposite mountain I came to the Acceldama, or field of blood, the field bought with "the thirty pieces of silver," which to this day remains a public burying-place or potter's field. A large chamber excavated in the rock is still the charnel-house of the poor and unhonoured dead of Jerusalem. The fabulous account is that the earth of that field will in forty-eight hours consume the flesh from off the bones committed to it.

Leaving this resting-place of poverty, and perhaps of crime, I wandered among the tombs on the sides of the mountain—tombs ornamented with sculpture, and divided into chambers, the last abodes of the great and rich of Jerusalem; but the beggar, rudely thrown into the common pit in the potter's field, and the rich man laid by pious hands in the sculptured sepulchre of his ancestors, are alike nothing.

Outside the Damascus Gate, and about half a mile distant, is what is called the Sepulchre of the Kings of Judah. This sepulchre is hewn out of the rock, and has its entrance at a large square excavation, the entrance to which is under a small arch. To the left, on entering, is a large portico, nine paces long, and four wide, with an architrave, on which are sculptured fruit and flowers,

much defaced; and at the end, on the left, a hole, filled up with stones and rubbish, barely large enough to enable one to crawl through on hands and knees, leads to a chamber eight paces square; and from this chamber there are three doors, two directly opposite, and one to the right. Entering that to the right, we found ourselves in another chamber; on each of the three sides of which was a large door, with smaller ones on either side, opening to small receptacles, in each of which were places for three bodies. The door of this chamber, now lying on the floor, was a curious work. It had been cut from the solid rock, and made to turn on its hinges or sockets without having ever been removed from its place. On the right, a single door leads down several steps into a dark chamber, where we found the lid of a sarcophagus elegantly carved. The other doors opening from the great chamber lead to others inferior in size and workmanship. On coming out of one of them, at the very moment when I extinguished my light, the hole of entrance was suddenly darkened and stopped up. I had left a strange Arab at the door; and remembering the fearful thought that had often come over me while creeping among the tombs in Egypt, of being shut up and entombed alive, my first impulse was to curse my folly in coming into such a place, and leaving myself so completely in the power of a stranger. But I was taking the alarm too soon. It was only the Arab himself coming in. He, too, had his apprehensions; and, from my remaining so long within, began to fear that I had crawled out some back way, and given his backsheesh the slip.

But enough of the tombs. I leave the abodes of the dead, and turn to the living; and among the living in Jerusalem, there are few who live better than the monks. Chateaubriand, in his poetical description of his pilgrimage to the Holy Land, gives an exceeding interest to the character of these monks. "Here reside," said he, "communities of Christian monks whom nothing can compel to forsake the tomb of Christ; neither plunder, nor personal ill treatment, nor menaces of death itself. Night and day they chant their hymns around the holy sepulchre. Driven by the edgel and the sabre, women, children, flocks, and herds, seek refuge in the cloisters of these weak men. What can enter that sacred enclosure from pursuing his prey, and overthrowing such feeble ramparts? the charity of the monks. They deprive themselves of the last resources of life to run on their suppliants," &c.

The first glance at the well-fed superior of the convent of Jerusalem dispelled in my mind all such poetic illusions, though the beautiful rhapsody was fully appreciated by those of whom it was uttered. On my first interview with the superior, an old monk entered the room, who was in the convent at the time of the visit of Chateaubriand, and both said that they had read the accounts of several travellers in the Holy Land, and none could be compared with his. I do not mean to speak harshly of them personally, for they were my hosts, and every Eastern traveller knows the comfort of a cell in a convent compared with any other shelter he can find in the Holy Land. Particularly I would not speak harshly of the superior of the convent at Jerusalem, towards whom I have an exceedingly kind feeling, and with whom I was on terms of rather jocose intimacy. The second time I saw him he railed at me with much good-natured indignation for having taken off two or three inches of my beard, and, during the whole time I was in Jerusalem, I was in the habit of calling upon him almost every day. I owe him something, too, on Paul's account, for he did that worthy man-of-all-work a most especial honour.

Since our arrival at the convent, Paul had returned to the essence of his Catholic faith, to wit, the strict observance of its forms. In the desert he had often grumbled at being obliged to go without animal food; but no sooner did he come within the odour of burning incense, than he felt the enormity of ever having entertained so impious a thought, and set himself down like a martyr to the table of the convent. He was, in his

way, an epicure; and it used to amuse me, while placing before him the breast of a chicken, to see him turn his eyes wistfully towards me, and choke himself upon pulse and beans. He went through it all, however, though with a bad grace; and his piety was not lost upon the superior, who sent for him a few mornings after our arrival, and told him that a grand ceremony of washing the feet of the disciples was to take place in the chapel, and desired him to officiate as one of them. It was amusing to see Paul's altered manner on his return. With a dignity, and at the same time a respect, which he seemed all at once to have acquired from his clear understanding of his relative duties, he asked me whether I could spare him the next afternoon, stating the reason, and the honour the superior had done him. I told him, of course, that I would not interfere with his playing such an important part; and as it would be a new character for him to appear in, I should like to be present at the representation. The next day he came to me with his coat buttoned tight across his breast, his boots polished, and hat smoothed to a hair, and told me, with great gravity, that the superior had sent me his particular compliments, and an invitation to be present at the ceremony; and turning away, he remarked, with an air of nonchalance, that a Sicilian priest, who had just left me, and who was arranging to accompany me to the Dead Sea, was to be one of his associates in the ceremony.

Paul was evidently very much lifted up; he was constantly telling Elias, the cook of the convent, that he wanted such and such a thing for to-morrow afternoon; begging me not to make any engagement for to-morrow afternoon; and, in due season, to-morrow afternoon came. I entered my room a little before the time, and found him at rehearsal, with a large tub of water before him, prudently washing his feet beforehand. I was a good deal disposed to bring down his dignity, and told him that it was well enough to rehearse his part, but that he ought to leave at least one foot unwashed, as a sort of bonus for his friend the superior. Paul was a good deal scandalised at my levity of manner, and got out of my reach as soon as he could. Afterwards, however, I saw him in one of

the bath with the water out of dignity than ever. I saw him again in the of the convent, standing in line with his associates; and excepting him, the Sicilian priest, and one who was put in to fill up, I never saw a set of harder-looking roundwells.

This ceremony of washing the feet of the disciples, introduced by our Saviour as a beautiful lesson of humility, is performed from year to year, ostensibly to teach the same lesson; and in this case the humility of the superior was evaded shamefully at the expense of the disciples. Most of the twelve would have come under the meaning, though inexplicable, term of "leaver;" but one, a vagrant Pole, was, beyond all peradventure, the greatest blackguard I ever saw. A black muslin frock coat, dirty and glossy from long use, buttoned tight across the breast, and reaching down to his ankles, and an old foxy, low-crowned hat, too big for him, and almost covering his eyes and ears, formed his entire dress, for he had no trousers, shoes, or shirt; he was snub-nosed, pock-marked, and sore-eyed; wore a long beard, and probably could not remember the last time he had washed his face; think, then, of his feet. If Paul had been dignified, he was puffed up almost to bursting; and the self-complacency with which he looked upon himself and all around him was admirable beyond description. By great good fortune for my designs against Paul, the Pole stood next, and before him in the line of the *quasi* disciples; and it was refreshing to turn from the consequential and complacent air of the one to the crestfallen look of the other; and to see him, the moment he caught my eye, with a suddenness that made me laugh, turn his head to the other side; but he had hardly got it there before he found me on that side too; and so I kept him watching and dodging, and in a perpetual fidget. To add to his mor-

tification, the Pole seemed to take particularly to him; and as he was before him in the line, was constantly turning round and speaking to him with a patronising air; and I capped the climax of his agony by going up in a quiet way, and asking him who was the gentleman before him. I could see him wince, and for a moment I thought of letting him alone; but he was often on stilts, and I seldom had such an opportunity of pulling him down. Besides, it was so ludicrous, I could not help it. If I had had any one with me to share the joke, it would have been exquisite. As it was, when I saw his determination to dodge me, I neglected every thing else, and devoted myself entirely to him; and, let the poor fellow turn where he would, he was sure to find me leaning against a pillar, with a smile on my face and my eyes intently fixed upon him; occasionally I would go up and ask him some question about his friend before him; and finally, as if I could not joke about it any more, and felt on my own account the indignity offered to him, I told him that, if I were he, I would not stand it any longer; that I was ashamed to see him with such a pack of rascals; that they had made a cat's-paw of him, and advised him to run for it, saying that I would stand by him against a bull from the pope. He now spoke for the first time, and told me that he had been thinking of the same thing; and, by degrees, actually worked himself up to the desperate pitch of incurring the hazard of excommunication, if it must needs be so, and had his shoes and stockings in his hands ready for a start, when I brought him down again by telling him it would soon be over; and, although he had been most shamefully treated, that he might cut the gentleman next to him whenever he pleased.

After goading him as long as he could possibly bear, I left him to observe the ceremony. At the upper end of the chapel, placed there for the occasion, was a large chair, with a gilded frame and velvet back and cushion, intended as the seat of the nominal disciple. Before it was a large copper vase, filled with water, and a plentiful sprinkling of rose-leaves; and before that, a large red velvet cushion, on which the superior knelt to perform the office of lavation. I need not suggest how inconsistent was this display of gold, rose-water, and velvet, with the humble scene it was intended to represent; but the tinsel and show imposed upon the eyes for which they were intended.

One after the other the disciples came up, seated themselves in the chair, and put their feet in the copper vase. The superior knelt upon the cushion, with both his hands washed the right foot, wiped it with a clean towel, kissed it, and then held it in his hands to receive the kisses of the monks, and of all volunteers that offered. All went on well enough until it came to the turn of Paul's friend and forerunner, the doughty Pole. There was a general titter as he took his place in the chair; and I saw the superior and the monk who assisted him hold down their heads and laugh almost convulsively. The Pole seemed to be conscious that he was creating a sensation, and that all eyes were upon him, and sat with his arms folded, with an ease and self-complacency altogether indescribable, looking down in the vase, and turning his foot in the superior's hands, heel up, toe up, so as to facilitate the process; and when the superior had washed and kissed it, and was holding it up for others to kiss, he looked about him with all the grandeur of a monarch in the act of coronation. Keeping his arms folded, he fairly threw himself back into the huge chair, looking from his foot to the monks, and from the monks to his foot again, as one to whom the world had nothing more to fear. It was more than a minute before any one would venture upon the perilous task of kissing those very suspicious toes, and the monk who was assisting the superior had to go round and drum them up; though he had already kissed it once in the way of his particular duty, to set an example he kissed it a second time; and now, as if ashamed of their backwardness, two or three rushed forward at once; and, the ice once broken, the effect seemed electric, and

there was a greater rush to kiss his foot than there had been to any of the others.

It was almost too hard to follow Paul after this display. I ought to have spared him, but I could not. His mortification was in proportion to his predecessor's pride. He was sneaking up to the chair, when, startled by some noise, he raised his head, and caught the eye which, above all others, he would have avoided. A broad laugh was on my face; and poor Paul was so discomfited that he stumbled, and came near pitching headlong into the vase. I could not catch his eye again; he seemed to have resigned himself to the worst. I followed him round in the procession, as he thrice made the tour of the chapel and corridors, with a long lighted candle in his hand; and then we went down to the superior's room, where the monks, the superior, the twelve, and myself, were entertained with coffee. As the Pole, who had lagged behind, entered after we were all seated, the superior, with the humour of a good fellow, cried out, "Viva Polacca;" all broke out into a loud laugh, and Paul escaped in the midst of it. About an hour afterwards I met him outside the Damascus Gate. Even then he would have shunned me; but I called him, and, to his great relief, neither then nor at any other time referred to the washing of the feet of the disciples.

The reader may remember the kindness with which I had been received by the chief rabbi at Hebron. His kindness did not end there; a few days after my arrival, the chief rabbi of Jerusalem, the high-priest of the Jews in the city of their ancient kings, called upon me, accompanied by a Gibraltar Jew who spoke English, and who told me that they had come at the request of my friend in Hebron, to receive and welcome me in the city of their fathers. I had already seen a great deal of the Jews. I had seen them in the cities of Italy, every where more or less oppressed; at Rome, shut up every night in their miserable quarters as if they were noxious beasts; in Turkey, persecuted and oppressed; along the shores of the Black Sea and in the heart of Russia, looked down upon by the serfs of that great empire of vassalage; and, for the climax of misery, I had seen them contemned and spit upon even by the ignorant and enslaved bores of Poland. I had seen them scattered abroad among all nations, as it had been foretold they would be, every where a separate and peculiar people; and every where, under all poverty, wretchedness, and oppression, waiting for, and anxiously expecting, the coming of a Messiah, to call together their scattered tribes, and restore them to the kingdom of their fathers; and all this the better fitted me for the more interesting spectacle of the Jews in the holy city. In all changes and revolutions, from the day when the kingdom of Solomon passed into the hands of strangers, under the Assyrian, the Roman, the Arab, and the Turk, a remnant of that once-favoured people has always hovered around the holy city; and now, as in the days of David, old men may be seen at the foot of Mount Zion, teaching their children to read from that mysterious book on which they have ever fondly built their hopes of a temporal and eternal kingdom.

The friends made for me by the rabbi at Hebron were the very friends above all others whom I would have selected for myself. While the Christians were preparing for the religious ceremonies of Easter, the Jews were making ready for the great feast of the Passover; and one of the first offers of kindness they made me, was an invitation to wait and partake of it with them. The rabbi was an old man, nearly seventy, with a long white beard, and Aaron himself need not have been ashamed of such a representative. I would have preferred to attach myself particularly to him; but as I could speak neither Arabic nor Hebrew, and the English Jew was not willing to play second, and serve merely as interpreter, I had but little benefit of the old man's society.

The Jews are the best topographers in Jerusalem, although their authority ends where the great interest

of the city begins; for, as their fathers did before them, they deny the name of Christ, and know nothing of the holy places so anxiously sought for by the Christians. That same morning they took me to what they call a part of the wall of Solomon's temple. It forms part of the southern wall of the Mosque of Omar, and is evidently older than the rest, the stones being much larger, measuring nine or ten feet long; and I saw that day, as other travellers may still see every Friday in the year, all the Jews in Jerusalem clothed in their best raiment, winding through the narrow streets of their quarter; and under this hallowed wall, with the sacred volume in their hands, singing, in the language in which they were written, the Songs of Solomon and the Psalms of David. White-bearded old men and smooth-checked boys were leaning over the same book; and Jewish maidens, in their long white robes, were standing with their faces against the wall, and praying through cracks and crevices. The tradition which leads them to pray *through* this wall is, that during the building of the temple a cloud rested over it so as to prevent any entrance; and Solomon stood at the door, and prayed that the cloud might be removed, and promised that the temple should be always open to men of every nation desiring to offer up prayers; whereupon the Lord removed the cloud, and promised that the prayers of all people offered up in that place should find acceptance in his sight; and now, as the Mussulman lords it over the place where the temple stood, and the Jews are not permitted to enter, they endeavour to insinuate their prayers through the crevices in the wall, that thus they may rise from the interior to the Throne of Grace. The tradition is characteristic, and serves to illustrate the devoted constancy with which the Israelites adhere to the externals of their faith.

Returning to the convent, and passing through one of the bazaars, we saw an Arab mounted on a bench, and making a proclamation to the crowd around him; and my friend, the Gibraltar Jew, was immediately among them, listening earnestly. The subject was one that touched his tenderest sensibilities as a dealer in money; for the edict proclaimed was one changing the value of the current coin, reducing the tallahree or dollar from twenty-one to twenty piasters, commanding all the subjects of Mohammed Ali to take it at that value, and concluding with the usual finale of a Turkish proclamation, "Death to the offender." My Jew, as he had already told me several times, was the richest Israelite in Jerusalem, and consequently took a great interest in every thing that related to money. He told me that he always cultivated an intimacy with the officer of the mint; and by giving him an occasional present, he always got intimation of any intended change in time to save him self. We parted at the door of the convent, having arranged that I should go with him the next day to the synagogue, and afterwards dine at his house.

CHAPTER XXX.

The Synagogue.—Ideal Speculation.—A Ride in the Rain.—An Ex-official.—Joppa.—A Moral Phenomenon.—Reverence for the Grave.

ABOUT nine o'clock the next morning I was with him, and in a few moments we were sitting in the highest seats in the synagogue, at the foot of Mount Zion. My old friend the rabbi was in the desk, reading to a small remnant of the Israelites the same law which had been read to their fathers on the same spot ever since they came up out of the land of Egypt. And there they sat, where their fathers had sat before them, with high, black, square-topped caps, with shawls wound around, crossed in front, and laid very neatly; long grey beards fastened with a sash, and long beards, the feeble remnant of a mighty people; there was sternness in their faces, but in their hearts a spirit of patient endurance, and a firm and settled resolution to die and be buried under the shadow of their fallen temple.

By the Jewish law the men and women sit apart in the synagogues; and as I could not understand the words of exhortation which fell from the lips of the preacher, it was not altogether unnatural that I should turn from the rough-bearded sons of Abraham to the smooth faces of their wives and daughters. Since I left Europe, I had not been in an apartment where the women sat with their faces uncovered; and, under these circumstances, it is not surprising that I saw many a dark-eyed Jewess who appeared well worthy of my gaze; and it is not a vain boast to say, that while singing the songs of Solomon, many a Hebrew maiden turned her bright black orbs upon me; for, in the first place, on entering we had disturbed more than a hundred sitting on the steps; secondly, my original dress, half Turk, half Frank, attracted the eyes even of the men; and, thirdly, the alleged universal failing of the sex is not wanting among the daughters of Judah.

The service over, we stopped a moment to look at the synagogue, which was a new building, with nothing about it that was peculiar or interesting. It had no gold or silver ornaments; and the sacred scroll, the table of the Law, contained in the holy of holies, was all that the pride of the Jew could show. My friend, however, did not put his own light under a bushel; for, telling me the amount he had himself contributed to the building, he conducted me to a room built at his own expense for a schoolroom, with a stone in the front wall recording his name and generosity.

We then returned to his house; and being about to sit down to dinner with him, I ought to introduce him more particularly to the reader. He was a man about fifty-five, born in Gibraltar to the same abject poverty which is the lot of most of his nation. In his youth he had been fortunate in his little dealings, and had been what we call an enterprising man; for he had twice made a voyage to England, and was so successful, and liked the country so much, that he always called himself an Englishman. Having accumulated a little property, or, as he expressed it, having become very rich, he gratified the darling wish of his heart by coming to Jerusalem, to die and be buried with his fathers in the Valley of Jehoshaphat. But this holy purpose in regard to his death and burial did not make him undervalue the importance of life, and the advantages of being a great man now. He told me that he was rich, very rich; that he was the richest, and in fact, the only rich, Jew in Jerusalem. He took me through his house, and showed me his gold and silver ornaments, and talked of his money and the uses he made of it; that he lent to the Latin Convent on *interest*, without any security, whenever they wanted; but as for the Greeks—he laughed, laid his finger on his nose, and said he had in pledge jewels belonging to them of the value of more than 20,000 dollars. He had had his losses, too; and while we were enjoying the luxuries of his table, the heaven of his nature broke out, and he endeavoured to sell me a note for £1500, of the Lady Esther Stanhope, which he offered at a discount of fifty per cent.—a bargain which I declined, as being out of the line of my business.

I remember once the American fever came upon me in Athens; when, sitting among the ruins of the Acropolis, upon a broken column of the Parthenon, I speculated upon the growth of the city. I bought, in imagination, a piece of ground, and laid it out in lots, lithographed, and handsomely painted red, blue, and white, like the maps of Chicago, Dunkirk, and Himsdale; built up the ancient harbour of the Piræus, and ran a railroad to the foot of the Acropolis; and I leaned my head upon my hand, and calculated the immense increase in value that must attend the building of the king's new palace, and the erection of a royal residence on the site of Plato's academy. I have since regretted that I did not "go in" for some up-town lots in Athens; but I have never regretted not having shaved the note of the Queen of the East, in the hands of the richest Jew in Jerusalem.

It was Saturday, the Jewish Sabbath. The command

to do no work on the Sabbath day is observed by every Jew, as strictly as when the commandment was given to his fathers; and to such an extent was it obeyed in the house of my friend, that it was not considered allowable to extinguish a lamp which had been lighted the night before, and was now burning in broad daylight over our table. This extremely strict observance of the law at first gave me some uneasiness about my dinner; but my host, with great self-complacency, relieved me from all apprehensions, by describing the admirable contrivance he had invented for reconciling appetite and duty—an oven, heated the night before to such a degree that the process of cooking was continued during the night, and the dishes were ready when wanted the next day. I must not forget the Jew's family, which consisted of a second wife, about sixteen, already the mother of two children, and his son and son's wife, the husband twelve, and the wife ten years old. The little gentleman was at the table, and behaved very well, except that his father had to check him in eating sweetmeats. The lady was playing on the floor with other children, and I did with her what I could not have done with a bigger man's wife—I took her on my knee and kissed her. Among the Jews, matches are made by the parents; and immediately upon the marriage, the wife is brought into the household of the husband. A young gentleman was tumbling about the floor who was engaged to the daughter of the chief rabbi. I did not ask the age of the lady, of course; but the gentleman bore the heavy burden of three years. He had not yet learned to whisper the story of his love to his blushing mistress, for, in fact, he could not talk at all; he was a great bawling boy, and cared much more for his bread and butter than a wife; but his prudent father had already provided him.

On the morning of the 21st I departed for Jaffa, the ancient Joppa. It was a bright and beautiful morning when I left the Bethelchem Gate. I had been an hour on my way, it began to rain, and continued nearly the whole day. About three o'clock in the afternoon we came to the village of Abu Ghazal, the seat of the most powerful families of Fellahs in the Holy Land. Nearly all his life he had been more or less in arms against the government; and his name was known among all the Christians in the East as the robber of the pilgrims to the Holy Sepulchre. I had met and spoken with him outside of the walls of Jerusalem, and during the rain, as I approached his village, I determined to stop and throw myself upon his hospitality for the night; but the returning sunshine deceived me, and I passed on, admiring the appearance of his village, which had much the best of any I had seen in the Holy Land. About an hour afterwards I was repining, under a merciless rain, that I had not fulfilled my purpose. Riding three hours longer, stopping from time to time under a rock or tree, I was ascending the last range of mountains; before me were the fertile plains of Sharon, and across the plain, still at a great distance, was Ramla, the ancient Arimathæa, the city of "Joseph the counsellor, the good man, and just." To our right, bordering the sea, was the range of Mount Carmel; but the rain was pelting in my eyes so that I could see nothing of it. I had been eight hours on the back of one of the most stubborn mules that ever persisted in having their own way; toiling with all my might, with blows and kicks, but finding it impossible to make him move one step faster than he pleased; and when the tower, the mosque, and the minaret of Ramla were before me, at the other side of a level plain, and an hour's smart riding would have carried me thence, I was completely worn out with urging the obstinate brute; and with muttered threat of future vengeance, wound my cloak around me, and hauling my umbrella close down, and grinding my teeth, I tried to think myself resigned to my fate. A strong wind was driving the rain directly in my face, and my mule, my cursed mule, stopped moving when I stopped beating; and in the very hardest of the storm, when I would have rushed like a bird on the wing, turned off from the path, and fell quietly to brows-

ing on the grass. Afraid to disarrange my umbrella and cloak, I sat for a moment irresolute; but the brute turned his face round, and looked at me with such perfect nonchalance, that I could not stand it. I raised my club for a blow; the wind opened my cloak in front, puffing it out like a sail; caught under my umbrella, and turned it inside out; and the mule suddenly starting under a deluge of rain, I found myself planted in the mud on the plains of Sharon. An hour afterwards I was drying my clothes in the house of our consular agent at Ramla. There was no fire-place in the room; but I was hovering over a brazier of burning charcoal. I spent that night and all the next day in Ramla, although a quarter of an hour would have been sufficient to see all that it contained, which was simply nothing more than is to be found in any other village. The consul gave me a dry coverlet; and while some of his friends came in to look at and welcome the stranger, I laid myself down upon the divan and went to sleep.

The next morning I was unable to move; the fatigue, and particularly the rain of the preceding day, had been too much for me, and I remained all the morning in an up-stairs room, with a high ceiling and a stone floor, lying on a rug in one corner, cold, desponding, and miserable. In the afternoon I went down into the large room, to talk with the consular agent. But a year before he had flourished in all the pomp and pride of office. The arms of our country were blazoned over his door, and the stars and stripes had protected his dwelling; but a change had come over him. The Viceroy of Syria had ordered the flags of the consuls to be taken down, and forbade them to be put up again.

I could not help thinking that he was perfectly right, as it was merely allowing them the benefit of a foreign protection, to save the men and their families, with two or three janizaries, from their duties to himself; but I listened anxiously to the complaints of the poor agent. His dignity had been touched, and his pride wounded. In the eyes of his townsmen, for the governor had demanded the usual duty from his sons, and had sent his executive officers with the summary order, the duty or the lastinado. The agent owed his appointment to Commodore Patterson, and talked of him and Captain Nicholson as friends who would see justice done him if he could communicate with them. I was afterwards struck with a display of delicacy and a sense of propriety that I had not expected from him; for although he charged me with many messages to Commodore Patterson, he requested me not to mention his difficulties in the matter of the agency, as he had already made representations to the consul at Beyroot, who had laid them before Commodore Porter at Constantinople; and an application in another quarter would look like distrusting their ability, or their willingness to resent what he called an indignity offered to the American flag. Annoyed at such a woman dodging by, with their faces covered, and always avoiding me, I told him, that being a Christian and holding an appointment under our government, he ought to conform to our customs, and treat his women more as companions; or, at least, to let them come into the same room, and sit at the same table with him. He listened, but could not see any reason in my proposition. He said it might do for us; for with us the wives always brought their husbands money (the ignorant, uninformed barbarian), but in Syria (he sighed as he said it) they never added a para to the riches of their lords.

The next morning I set out again for Jaffa. The road lies through a rich plain; and in three hours, passing a large detachment of Turkish soldiers encamped outside, and waiting a transport to carry them to Alexandria, I was entering the gate of the ancient city of Joppa. Believed to have existed before the deluge, the city where Noah dwelt and built his ark; whence Jonah embarked for Tarshish, when he was thrown overboard and swallowed by a whale; the port used by Solomon to receive timber from Tyre for the building of the temple, and by all the kings of Judah to

connect the city of Jerusalem with foreign people, Jaffa is now a small Turkish town on the shores of the Mediterranean, but on a little eminence projecting into the sea, and containing a population of from 10,000 to 15,000 Turks, Arabs, Jews, and Christians. It has a fine climate, and a fine country around it; and the orange gardens are the finest on the shores of the Mediterranean. Although the seaport of Jerusalem, its harbour has always been bad; and when I was there, the wreck of a Turkish man-of-war was lying on the beach; and that same night, there being a severe storm, the little Greek pilgrim vessels were considered in great danger.

There is nothing of interest in the modern city of Jaffa. Its history is connected with the past. The traveller must stand on the shore, and fill the little harbour with the ships of Tarshish, or imagine Noah entering the ark with his family, by whom the earth was to be repopled; or wander through the narrow streets and ask himself, Where is the house of Tabitha, whom Peter "raised from the dead?" or that of Simon the tanner, where Peter "tarried many days?" and he may feel a less holy, but hardly less powerful interest, in standing by the gate where, for many years, a large pyramid of skulls attested the desperate struggle of Napoleon; or, in walking through the chambers of the Greek convent, then used as an hospital for the French, and the monks will show him an apartment where, when all hearts were sinking within them for fear, he visited and touched the sick of the plague, restored the drooping courage of his soldiers, and almost raised the dying from their bed of death.

Besides the interest attached to this place by reason of its great antiquity, and the many important events of which it has been the scene, I remember it with much kindness on account of the American consular agent, and the cordial manner in which he received me. He was not at home when I arrived; but in a few moments he came in, and, taking both my hands in his, pointed to the American arms on the wall, entered the story

with all the extravagance of the East, told me that all he had was mine. I had a great mind to take him at his word, and begin by appropriating a beautiful emerald that I saw on his finger; but, for the present, I contented myself with asking merely for a dinner, which was soon prepared; and I sat down to dine in the ancient city of Joppa, with my country's arms before me, and my country's banner waving above.

The agent was an Armenian, and a strict observer of all the requisitions of his exacting creed: he was rich, and had no children; and, what I never before heard from the lips of man, he said that he was perfectly happy. I was the first American who had visited him since he had received his appointment, and it seemed as if he could not do enough for me. He had repaired and reconstructed the whole road from Jaffa to Jerusalem; and when I asked him what reward he promised himself for this, he answered that he had done it for God, the pilgrims, and his own honour. I remained with him that night, and would have gone early the next morning, but he would not part with me so soon. I dined with him again; and in the afternoon, escorted to the gate by two janizaries, each with a large silver-headed mace in his hand, I left, probably for ever, my Armenian friend and the ancient city of Joppa. I do not know when I parted from a man with more regret.*

I slept that night at Ramla; and the next day, about four o'clock, in company with several hundred pilgrims, I was again entering the Bethlehem Gate. Notwithstanding the munificence of my Armenian friend, the road from Jerusalem to Jaffa, a road travelled from the time when Jonas went thither to embark for Tarshish, is now a mere mule-path, on which I was several times obliged to stop and turn aside to let a loaded mule pass by.

I had seen every thing in Jerusalem that it was the duty of a traveller to see. My time was now my own, for idling, lounging, or strolling, in the luxurious consciousness of having nothing to do. In this humour I used to set forth from the convent, never knowing where I should go, or what I should do; and whenever I went out with the deliberate intention of doing nothing, I was always sure of finding enough to occupy me. My favourite amusement in the morning was to go out by St Stephen's Gate, and watch the pilgrims as they began their daily round of visits to the holy places. Frequently, if I saw a group that interested me, I followed them to the Garden of Gethsemane and the Mount of Olives; sometimes I stopped in the Valley of Jehoshaphat, and, sitting down on the grave of an Israelite, watched the Jewish pilgrims. One morning, I remember, Paul and I were together; and we saw a young girl kissing the tomb of Zachariah, and weeping as if her heart would break. Paul asked her rather roughly what she was crying about; and the poor girl, looking at him for a moment, burst into a flood of tears, and told him that she was weeping over the tomb of the blessed prophet.

But there are few things connected with my journeying in the Holy Land which I look back upon with a more quiet satisfaction than my often repeated and almost daily walk around the walls of Jerusalem. It was a walk of between three and four miles; and I always contrived, about half an hour before the gates were closed, to be sitting on a favourite tombstone near St Stephen's Gate. The great Turkish burying-ground is outside the wall, near this gate; and regularly, on a fine afternoon, towards sunset, the whole Turkish population, in all their gay and striking costumes, might be seen wandering among the tombs. Few things strike a traveller in the East more than this, and few are to us more inexplicable. We seldom go into a graveyard except to pay the last offices to a departed friend, and for years afterwards we never find ourselves in the same place again without a shade of melancholy coming over us. Not so in the East; to-day they bury a friend, to-morrow they plant flowers over his grave, and the next day, and the next, they tend and water them, and once-a-week, regularly, they sit by the grave. On every holiday it is a religious duty to go there; and as often as they walk out for health or pleasure, they habitually turn their footsteps to the burial-ground. To them the grave is not clothed with the same terrors. It is not so dark and gloomy as to us. They are finer believers than we are, though, as we think, in a false and fatal creed; and to them there is a light beyond the grave, which we of a better faith can seldom see. It was a beautiful picture to behold the graveyard thronged with Turkish women, in their long white veils. It would, perhaps, be too poetical to look upon them all as mourners. Perhaps, indeed, it would not be too much to say, that of the immense multitude who, day after day, are seen flitting among the tombs, many a widowed fair one, over the tomb of a dead lord, is dreaming of a living lover.

But there was one whom I noticed every day; she was always sitting by the same stone, and I always noticed her as one of the first to come out, and one of the last to return. She was a young Sciotie girl, mourning over the tomb of her young lord; and well she might, for he had been to her a friend and protector, and she had been his only bride. When her father's house was laid in ruins, and her grey-headed sire and her manly brothers were slain before her eyes, he had saved her from the bloody scimitar, or from a fate worse than death; and he had wooed her, not as a Turk and master, but as a lover. He had won her young heart; and she had forgotten her kindred and her country; he had died with his bloody scimitar in his hand, and she thought only of the dead when she stood beside his

* The town of Jaffa has since been destroyed by an earthquake; and of 15,000 inhabitants, 13,000 were buried in the ruins. His Armenian friend escaped?

CHAPTER XXXI.

Desert of St John.—A Midnight Procession.—Road to Jericho.
—A Community of Women.—A Navigator of the Dead Sea.—A
Dance by Moonlight.—A rude Lodging.

IN company with Mr Whiting, I started for the Desert of St John the Baptist. Passing the Pool of Gihon, where Saul was anointed king by Zadoc and Nathan, we came to the Convent of the Holy Cross, the great altar of the chapel being erected, as the monks pretend, over the spot where grew the tree from which the cross was made. Moving on among hills and valleys, on our right was a distant view of Ramah, the country of Samuel the seer; and before us, crowning the very top of a high hill, were the ruins of the palace and the burial-place of the warlike Maccabees. The Convent of St John is built on the spot where John the Baptist was born. There is no doubt of this, say the monks; for beneath the great altar of the church is a circular slab of marble, with an inscription almost effaced: "Hic natus est precursor Dei"—here the forerunner of the Lord was born. This convent is in a fine situation; a small Christian village is attached to it; the top commands a beautiful view of the mountains, cultivated in terraces; and directly in front is the great Valley of Turpentine, or Elah, the battle-ground of the Israelites and Philistines, of David and Goliath. Taking a Christian boy with us as guide, we entered the valley; and following the stream to its source, in about two hours we came to the place where, it is said, Saul and the men of Israel pitched by the valley of Elah, and set the battle in array against the Philistines. It was precisely the spot where the scene so graphically recorded in Scripture might have taken place. "And the Philistines stood on a mountain on the one side, and Israel stood on a mountain on the other side, and there was a valley between them." On each side of me was a mountain, and the brook was still running near from which the shepherd-boy gathered the five smooth stones. The boy who accompanied us told me that the precise stones had never yet been found, though the monks had often searched for them.

At the extreme end of the valley is the Desert of St John, where was heard, for the first time, the voice of one crying in the wilderness, "Prepare ye the way of the Lord; make his paths straight." Directly in front, at the top of the mountain bounding the valley, is an open door in the rock leading to the grotto in which the prophet lived. There is no appearance of a desert in this place, except solitude; and if it be merely a locality fixed upon by the monks, they could not have selected one more inappropriate. It is one of the prettiest and best cultivated spots in the Holy Land; and sitting in the door of the grotto, with an Armenian pilgrim by my side, and looking out upon the valley and the mountains, all around terraced and cultivated to the very summits, all still and beautiful, I thought I had never seen a place better calculated to inspire a pious, philosophic, and happy state of mind, than this Desert of St John. We returned by a different road, searching on our way for the pool where Philip baptised the church of Queen Candace; but after losing ourselves once or twice, and fearing a threatening shower, we returned to the city unsuccessful.

At about ten o'clock that evening, the monks, under a guard of soldiers and a crowd of pilgrims, each with a candle in his hand, left St Stephen's Gate in solemn procession. With a loud chant they crossed the Valley of Jehoshaphat, wound about the foot of the Mount of Olives to Bethpage and Bethany, said mass in the tomb of Lazarus, and returning, prayed and chanted on the Mount of Olives and in the Garden of Gethsemane; and at about daylight the next morning returned to the convent.

Several days I had been preparing for a journey to the Dead Sea, but a mysterious influence seemed hanging about the borders of that water; and now the rest of the Holy Land was perfectly tran-

quil, the Fellahs were in commotion among the barren mountains around it. I had waited two or three days at the request of the governor; but hearing of nothing in particular to prevent me, I determined to set out. The Sicilian priest who had proposed to accompany me could not go; and at about eight o'clock I was sitting on my horse alone, outside St Stephen's Gate, waiting for Paul, who had gone to the governor for a letter which he had promised me to the aga of Jericho. Attracted by the uncommon beauty of the morning, half the population of Jerusalem had already gathered without the walls. Joining a party of pilgrims, I followed once more the path I had so often trodden across the Brook Kedron and the Valley of Jehoshaphat; and, parting with them at the foot of the Mount of Olives, I wound around its base, and fell into the road to Jericho and the Jordan. We must have passed Bethpage, though there is nothing to mark where it stood; and in about an hour we came to Bethany, now a ruined Arab village, though the monks still show the house of Martha and Mary, the tomb of Lazarus, and even the barren fig-tree which was cursed by our Lord. The tomb of Lazarus is a large excavation in the rock; and the sepulchral chamber is at the foot of a staircase of ten or twelve steps.

Not far from Bethany we came to a fountain enclosed with marble, and soon after to a valley, where, the monks say, our Saviour, in coming from beyond the Jordan, at the prayer of the sisters of Lazarus, reposed with the disciples. In about two hours we were among the mountains. The scene every moment became wilder and more rugged; and except in the wilderness of Sinai and among the wastes of Idumea, I never travelled so dreary a road as "in going down to Jericho." It is on this desolate route that our Saviour lays the scene of the parable of the good Samaritan; and nowhere a more forcible illustration be given of the heart of the priest and the Levite, in "passing by" the other side. Ascending for some distance by the precipitous side of a yawning chasm, where a false movement of my horse might have dashed me to atoms, from the top of the Mountains of Desolation I looked to the left upon a higher and still wilder and more dreary range; and, towering above all the rest in gloomy grandeur, its naked sides pierced with doors for the cells of hermits, was the mountain of our Saviour's fasting and temptation; before me were the plains of Jericho, the Valley of the Jordan, the Mountains of Arabia, and the Dead Sea. A high, square building, like a tower, marked the site of Jericho, and a small stream, running between two banks of sand, was the hallowed Jordan.

Descending the mountain, on our left, directly at the foot, were the remains of an aqueduct and other ruins, which, in all probability, were part of the ancient city of Jericho. The plain commences at the foot of the mountains; the land is fertile, and well watered with streams emptying into the Jordan, but for the most part wild and uncultivated. About half way across passed the edge of a stagnant pool, nearly covering a Mussulman burying-ground; the tombstones were washed from their places, and here and there the ghastly skeletons were visible above the muddy water. In one place, crossing a stream, we met three Abyssinians, who had come from the remotest point in the interior of Africa where the name of Christian is known, to bathe in the sacred Jordan. Two or three times we were obstructed by brick fences, intended as ramparts to protect the inhabitants and their flocks against the incursions of wolves; and at about four o'clock we arrived at the ruined village of Jericho.

I have observed that travellers generally, when they arrive at any place of extraordinary interest, find the right glow of feeling coming over them precisely at the proper moment. I never had any difficulty in Italy; for there, in the useful guidebook of Madame Starke, beautifully interspersed with valuable information about lanes, post-horses, and the price of washing linen, the reader may find prepared for him an appropriate cata-

logue of sensations for almost every possible situation and object, from a walk in the Coliseum by moonlight to a puppet-show at San Carlino in Naples; but in a country like this, a man is thrown upon his own resources; and notwithstanding the interest attached to the name of Jericho, I found it a hard matter to feel duly excited.

Jericho was the first city in Canaan which fell into the hands of the Israelites. It was long the second city of Judea, and, according to the Jewish Talmud, contained twelve thousand priests. It had its hippodrome and amphitheatre, and in its royal palace Herod the Tetrarch died. But the curse of Joshua seems to rest upon it now: "Cursed be the man before the Lord who shall rebuild Jericho." It consists of fifty or sixty miserable Arab houses, the walls of which on three sides are of stone, piled up like a wall by the farmers, most of them not so high as a man's head, and the front and top either entirely open or covered with brush.

The old fortress in which I expected to sleep, I found entirely abandoned, and the apartments used as a shelter for sheep and goats. I expected to find there the aga, quietly smoking his pipe, and glad to receive and gossip with a stranger; but I had mounted to the top, and looked out upon the extensive plains of Jericho and the Valley of the Jordan, without meeting a single person; and it was not until I had gone out of the gate, and with the bridle in my hand was walking back into the village, that I noticed the remarkable circumstance, so different from the usual course of matters in Arab villages, that no throng of idlers had gathered around me. In fact, I had passed through the village, gone to the fortress, and come back, without seeing a man; and soon found that there was not a male in the village above ten years old, except the aga, and one passing Arab. It had numbered sixty men, of whom Ibrahim Pacha had ordered a levy of twenty-four for his army. The miserable inhabitants had decided among themselves upon nineteen who could best be spared; and, unable to supply the rest, in a spirit of desperation had abandoned their village; and, taking with them all the boys above ten years old, fled to the mountains around the Dead Sea, where they were now in arms, ripe for rebellion, robbery, and murder.

I found myself very much at a loss: the aga was a stranger there, and knew nothing of the localities; and I could not find a boy old enough to conduct me to the Well of Elisha. Some of the women knew where it was, but they would not go with me, though I asked them in all courtesy; and, taking my direction from them, and fixing my eyes on the naked top of the mountain of our Saviour's temptation, in about half an hour I reached the miraculous fountain where, at the request of the men of Jericho, Elisha, "cast salt into the spring and healed the water." It is enclosed in a large marble basin, and several streams, constantly running from it, refresh and fertilise the plains of Jericho. Riding on a short distance farther, I came to an aqueduct and the ruins of a Greek convent, at the base of the "exceeding high mountain" from whose top the devil showed our Saviour all the kingdoms of the world. The naked sides of the mountain are studded with doors, opening to the cells of anchorites and hermits, who there turned their backs upon temptation, and, amid desertion and solitude, passed their days in penance and prayer.

It was dark when I returned to Jericho. Before going away, the aga had taken me to his hut, and wished me to pass the night with him; but as two horses had already taken their places before me, and the hut was perfectly open, having merely a roof of branches, and nothing at all in front, I had looked round and selected another for my lodging-place, chiefly from the circumstance of its having a small boat set up on its side before it, so as to form a front wall.

That boat told a melancholy tale. It was the only one that had ever floated on the Dead Sea. About eight months before, Mr Costigan, an Irish traveller, who had been some years in the East, had projected a most in-

teresting journey, and, most unhappily for himself and the interests of science, died almost in the moment of its successful accomplishment. He had purchased his boat at Beyroot, and, with a Maltese sailor for his servant, in spite of many difficulties and impediments from the Arabs, had carried it across the country on a dromedary, and launched it on the Sea of Galilee; he had explored this most interesting water, and entering the Jordan, followed it down until he narrowly escaped with his life among the rocks and rapids of that ancient but unknown river; and then constantly obstructed by the Arabs, even the governor of Damascus refusing him any facilities, with great difficulty he succeeded in bringing his boat by land to the Dead Sea. In the middle of July he had embarked with his servant to make the tour of the sea, and eight days afterwards the old woman in whose tent I lodged had found him lying on the shore alone, gasping for breath. She had him carried to her hut, where he lay till the Rev. Mr Nicolaisen, the English missionary at Jerusalem, came for him, and the second day after his arrival in Jerusalem he died. With his dying breath he bore the same testimony to the kindness of woman under the burning sun of Syria that our countryman Ledyard did in the wilds of Siberia; for while lying upon the shores of the Dead Sea, the Arabs gathered round him only to gaze, and would have left him to die there if this old woman had not prevailed upon two of her sons to carry him to her hut.

That boat was interesting to me for another reason. Nothing, not even the thought of visiting Petra and the land of Idumea, affected me so strangely as the idea of making the tour of this sea; and notwithstanding the miserable state of my health, shattered by my journey in the desert, as soon as I heard, after my arrival at Jerusalem, that there was a boat at Jericho, I began to think of taking advantage of it. If I had succeeded in this, I should consider my tour the most perfect and complete ever made by any oriental traveller. I had burned up the cars, sail, &c.; but on my return from Jaffa I was compelled to abandon all thoughts of making the attempt. Still, when I saw the boat, all my ardour revived; and never, in my lonely journeyings in the East, did I wish so earnestly for the comfort and support of a friend. With a companion, or even with a servant, who would encourage and support me, in spite of my health I should certainly have undertaken it; but Paul was particularly averse to the attempt; the boat was barely large enough for two; and I was compelled to give up the thought.

That evening I saw at Jericho what I never saw before. It was a beautiful moonlight night, and all the women were out of doors singing and dancing. The dance was altogether indescribable; consisting not of wanton movements, like those of the dancing girls in Egypt, but merely in joining hands and moving round in a circle, keeping time to the music of their own voices. I had never seen so gay and joyous a scene among the women in the East; and though their fathers, and brothers, and husbands, and lovers, were away among the mountains, I did not feel disposed to judge them harshly. It was so rare, in that unhappy country, to see any thing like gaiety of heart, that if they had been dancing over the graves of their husbands, I should have been inclined to join them. And they did not shun us as the Moslem women generally do; they talked with us with their faces uncovered; and I remember a young Arab girl, not more than sixteen, who had a child in her arms, and who told me that its father had fled to the mountains; and she put the child in my arms while she joined in the dance. In fact, my situation began to be peculiar; the aga had gone off to look for some one who would accompany me to the Dead Sea; and among perhaps more than a hundred women, that night Paul, and I, and my muleteers, were the only men in Jericho. In justice to the poor Arab women, however, I would remove from them any imputation of want of feeling or hardness of heart; for I have no doubt the young girl who left her child in my arms loved its father

as warmly as if they were all clad in purple and fine raiment every day.

I would have been better satisfied, however, if that night they had ceased their merriment at an earlier hour; for long after I had lain down on my stony bed, their song and laugh prevented my sleeping; and when they had retired, other noises followed: the lowing of cattle, the bleating of sheep and goats, the stamping of horses, the crying of children, and the loud barking of the watch-dog; and, finally, the fierce assault of the voracious insects that always swarm in an Arab's hut, drove me from my bed and out of doors. The cool air refreshed and revived me, and I walked by the light of a splendid moon among the miserable huts of the village, hunted and barked at by the watching wolf-dog, and perhaps exciting the apprehensions of the unprotected women.

I leaned against a high fence of brush enclosing some of the huts, and mused upon the wonderful events of which this miserable place had been the scene, until my eyes began to close; when, opening a place among the bushes, I drew my cloak around me and crawled in, and soon fell fast asleep. Once during the night I was worried and almost dragged out of my burrowing-place by the dogs, but I kicked them away, and slept on. At daylight the aga was pulling me by the shoulder, armed to the teeth, and ready to escort me. I shook myself and my toilet was made; and before the laughers, and singers, and dancers of the previous night, had waked from their slumbers, we were mounted and on our way to the Jordan.

CHAPTER XXXII.

The River Jordan.—The Dead Sea.—Force of Example.—Buoyancy of the Dead Sea.—A Perilous Ascent.—A Navigator of the Dead Sea.—Story of the Voyage.—The Convent of Santa Saba.

Moving directly from the ruined village, we soon left the fertile plains of Jericho, and entered the barren valley of the Jordan. It was washed and torn by the mountain torrents, full of gullies and large sand-hills; and in about an hour and a half we were standing on the banks of the river, at the most hallowed spot on the margin of that sacred stream, where, 1300 years ago, John baptised the Redeemer of the world; and where, year after year, thousands of pilgrims throw themselves into the river, with the blind belief that, by bathing in its waters, they wash away their sins. As a pious pilgrim, it would have been my duty, perhaps, to do the same; but the reader will please remember that it was the last day of March; that I had slept in a bush; that my limbs were stiff; and that it was not yet six o'clock in the morning, and that I had not breakfasted. Sitting down, then, on the bank, I made my morning meal, and drank as devoutly of its water as any pilgrim who ever stood by Jordan.

I afterwards followed the river close along its bank till it emptied into the Dead Sea, and nowhere found any spot that, for beauty of scenery, could be compared with this consecrated bathing-place of the pilgrims. The bank here is about ten or twelve feet high; a clear, level table of land, covered with rich grass, and large bushes on the edge overhanging the river. Judging by the eye, the river is here about thirty paces broad; the current is very rapid, and the pilgrim, in bathing, is obliged to hold on by the bushes, in order to prevent himself being carried away. Here, it is said, the wild beast still keeps his haunt; and the traveller sometimes, when the river is rising, may realize the expression, "He shall come up like a flood out of the swelling of Jordan." Opposite, the bank is low, and the bushes grow down to the water's edge. Then, suddenly below this, the river narrows to ten paces; and there is not another spot on the line of the Jordan which can attract the eye of the traveller. It is a small, broken, and muddy stream, running between banks of barren and stony soil, and if it were not for the few reeds and sedges which grow in it, a man would look upon it as the most uninteresting of rivers. In one

place I saw an Arab wading across; and the river there, so far as I could judge, had not fallen more than two feet. I followed it as closely as the cracks and gullies would allow, cutting off none of the bends. For the last two or three miles it runs between perpendicular banks of sand, from five to ten feet high, and its pure waters are already corrupted by the pestiferous influence of the bituminous lake. On the left it stops even with the shore; but on the right the bank runs out to a low, sandy point, round which a quantity of driftwood is collected; and here, with a gentle ripple of its waters, the Jordan is lost in the Dead Sea.

I followed it almost to the very point, until my horse's feet sank above his felloes in the wet sand. It was the old opinion, and was counted among the wonders of the lake Asphaltites, that the river passed through without mingling with the waters of the lake; and Pococke says, "I thought I saw the stream of a different colour;" but Pococke did not follow the river down to the extreme point. I did; and could see most distinctly the very spot where the waters mingled. Instead of the river keeping its way through, its current was rather stopped at once by the denser water of the lake; and, in fact, for two or three miles above its mouth, the Jordan is impregnated with the salt and bituminous matter of the lake.

Almost at the moment of my turning from the Jordan to the Dead Sea, notwithstanding the long-credited accounts that no bird could fly over without dropping dead upon its surface, I saw a flock of gulls floating quietly on its bosom; and when I roused them with a stone, they flew down the lake, skimming its surface until they had carried themselves out of sight. From the point on which I stood, near its eastern shore, the sea was spread out before me as motionless as a

molten lead, bounded on all sides by ranges of high and barren mountains, as if by the great desert valley of El Ghor.

ceiving the waters of the Jordan, but unlike other waters, sending no tributaries to it. Pliny, Diodorus Siculus, and Josephus, describe it as more than sixty miles long; but Mr. Band and his companions, by observation from elevated heights, measured it not more than thirty; and as the ancient writers were better acquainted with it than modern geographers, it has been supposed that the lake has contracted in its dimensions, and that part of the valley of El Ghor was once covered by its water. Moving on slowly from the point of the Jordan, the shore grew sandy, strewed with brush and driftwood, and rising in a slope to the sandy plain above. I rode along nearly the whole head of the lake with my horse's feet in the water, and twice picked up a large piece of bitumen, almost like common pitch, supposed to be thrown up from the bottom of the lake. The sand is not bright like that of an Atlantic or Mediterranean beach, but of a dirty, dark brown. The water is exceedingly clear and transparent, but its taste and smell are a compound of all that is bad.

It was now the last day of March, and even before we left the plains of the Jordan the sun had been intensely hot; without a branch or leaf to break its force, it poured upon the dreary waste around the Dead Sea with a scorching and withering heat. It was on this shore that the Knight of the Leopard encountered the Saracen Emir; and in the sandy plain above is the beautiful scene of the Diamond of the Desert, in the opening of Scott's Crusaders. The general features of the scenery along the northern shore of the Dead Sea are admirably described. The Diamond of the Desert is, of course, the creation of the author's fancy; and the only actual error is in placing the wilderness of Engaddi, which Scott has confounded with the mountains of Quarantania, but which is really half way down the borders of the sea.

It was two o'clock when my guards, having conducted me along the head of the sea, proposed returning to Jericho. I had already had some difficulty with them. I was disappointed in my purposed exploration of this sea; once in my wish, conceived on the top of Mount

Hor, to strike it at its southern extremity, and coast along its borders; and then in the still more attractive project of exploring it in a boat. Instead of returning to Jericho, my desire was to go down the borders of the sea, and turn up among the mountains to the convent of Santa Saba. At Jerusalem I could not hire horses for this convent, because, as they said, it was a dangerous route; and I took them for Jericho, hoping in some way or other still to accomplish my object. By accident, an Arab from Santa Saba had come to Jericho during the night; and in the morning I told the aga and his companion that I would not have them as my escort at all, unless they would go with me to the convent. They at first objected, but afterwards promised to go as far as I wanted them; now they again made objections. I thought it was merely to enhance the value of their services; but in a few moments they told me they would not go any farther; that the order of the governor was to protect me to the Dead Sea, and back to Jericho. The worst of it was, that my muleteers refused to go without the guard; and although we had a guide with us who told us there was no danger, though we had not met a single Arab since we left Jericho, and though we could see many miles down the lake, and plainly distinguish the wild track up the bare side of the mountain to the open country above, they were of the bad Arabs." I was determined, however, not to go back to Jericho. I had no idea of sleeping in the bushes again; and spurring my horse, I told Paul to follow me, and they might do as they pleased. The aga and his companion bade me farewell; and, as the arid plain, were soon hidden from view by hills of sand. I continued along the shore; and after a few moments' consultation, my Arabs finally followed.

early in the morning, I started for the north; and, as I rode, the general aspect was very new to me, as soon as I turned the head, and looked back, the mountain every moment assumed a different aspect, although every where wild, rugged, and barren. At three o'clock we were approaching a place where the mountain precipitously from the lake leaving no room for a passage at its foot; my eyes were fixed upon the lake, my thoughts upon its mysterious properties. The Arabs believed that living bodies, and even heavy metals, would not sink in it; and Piny and Shabo have written of its extraordinary buoyancy. Before I left Jerusalem, I had resolved not to bathe in it, on account of my health; and I had sustained my resolution during the whole of my day's ride along its shore; but, on the point of turning up among the mountains, I could resist no longer. My clothes seemed to come off of their own accord; and before Paul had time to ask me what I was going to do, I was floating on its waters. Paul and the Arabs followed; and after splashing about for a while, we lay like a parcel of corks upon its surface.

From my own experience, I can almost corroborate the most extravagant accounts of the ancients. I know, in reference to my own specific gravity, that in the Atlantic or Mediterranean I cannot float without some little movement of the hands; and even then my body is almost totally submerged; but here, when I threw myself upon my back, my body was half out of water. It was an exertion even for my lank Arabs to keep themselves under. When I struck out in swimming, it was exceedingly awkward; for my legs were constantly rising to the surface, and even above the water. I could have lain there and read with perfect ease. In fact, I could have slept, and it would have been a much easier bed than the bushes at Jericho. It was ludicrous to see one of the horses. As soon as his body touched the water, he was afloat, and turned over on his side; he struggled with all his force to preserve his equilibrium; but the moment he stopped moving, he turned over on his side again, and almost on his back, kicking his feet out of water, and snorting with terror. The worst of my bath was, after it was over, my skin was

covered with a thick, glutinous substance, which it required another ablution to get rid of; and after I had wiped myself dry, my body burnt and smarted as if I had been turned round before a roasting fire. My face and ears were encrusted with salt; my hairs stood out, "each particular hair on end;" and my eyes were irritated and inflamed, so that I felt the effects of it for several days. In spite of all this, however, revived and refreshed by my bath, I mounted my horse a new man.

Modern science has solved all the mystery about this water. It has been satisfactorily analysed, and its specific gravity ascertained to be 1.211, a degree of density unknown in any other, the specific gravity of fresh water being 1.000; and it has been found to hold in solution the following proportions of salt to 100 grains of water:—

	Grains.
Muriate of lime,	3.520
Muriate of magnesia,	10.246
Muriate of soda,	10.350
Sulphate of lime,	0.651
	<hr/> 24.560

Except the reduced level of Petra, I never felt unwilling to leave any place. I was unsatisfied. I had a longing desire to explore every part of that unknown water; to spend days upon its surface; to coast along its shores; to sound its mysterious depths, and search for the ruins of the guilty cities. And why not? If we believe our Bible, that bituminous lake covers the once fertile vale of Siddim, and the ruins of Sodom and Gomorrah; and why may we not see them? The ruins of Thebes still cover for miles the banks of the Nile; the pyramids stand towering as when they were built, and no man knows their builders; and the traveller may still trace, by "the great river, the Euphrates," the ruins of the Tower of Babel. Besides, that water does not destroy; it preserves all that it touches; the wood that falls into it becomes petrified by its action; and I can see no good reason why it should hide for ever from man's eyes the monuments of that fearful anger which the crimes of the guilty had so righteously provoked.

Except to the summit of Mount Hor, I never had so desperate a climb as up the barren mountain on the borders of the Dead Sea. We had not found any water fit to drink since we left the Jordan, and turned up a little before we reached the place we had intended, the guide telling us that here we would find a spring. We were soon obliged to dismount; and even our sure-footed horse, trained as they were to climbing mountains, slipped, faltered, and completely failed. Our guide told us that he had never ascended with horses before; and, looking forward, the attempt seemed utterly impossible. The noble animals climbed with the intelligence of men, holding on with their fore-feet as if they were hands, and the Arabs above pulling them by the mane, or pushing from below. One of them, in climbing a almost perpendicular height, fell over backward. I thought he was killed; and my Arabs, irritated by toil, thirst, and the danger to their horses, sprang upon the guide, and I believe would have killed him if Paul and I had not interfered. Taking off the enormous saddle, we all joined above and below, and hoisted and pushed him up almost bodily.

It was nearly dark when we reached the top of the mountain, and I sat down for a moment to take a last look at the Dead Sea. From this distance, its aspect fully justified its name. It was calm, motionless, and seemingly dead; there was no wave or ripple on its surface, nor was it hurrying on, like other waters, to pay its tribute to the ocean; the mountains around it were also dead; no trees or shrubs, not a blade of grass, grew on their naked sides; and, as in the days of Moses, "brimstone and salt, it is not sown, nor beareth, nor any grass groweth thereon."

One thing had especially attracted my attention in

ascending the mountain : on attaining a particular point, we had a clear view of the whole sea, and at the extreme end we saw distinctly what Paul and I both at once called an island. M. Seetzen, one of the earliest modern travellers who visited this sea, imagined that he had discovered a large island in the same direction; and though no one believed in its reality, I had then seen no satisfactory explanation of the appearance. I could not be deceived in what I saw. There never was any thing that looked more like an island, and I afterwards received an explanation which to me at least was perfectly satisfactory. It comes from one who ought to know, from the only man who ever made the tour of that sea, and lived to tell of it; and, relying upon the interesting nature of the subject, I make no apology for introducing it here.

When the unhappy Costigan was found by the Arabs on the shore of the Dead Sea, the spirit of the enterprising Irishman was fast fleeing away. He lived two days after he was carried to the convent at Jerusalem, but he never once referred to his unhappy voyage. He had long been a traveller in the East, and long preparing for this voyage; had read every book that treated of the mysterious water, and was thoroughly prepared with all the knowledge necessary for exploring it to advantage. Unfortunately for the interests of science, he had always been in the habit of trusting greatly to his memory; and, after his death, the missionaries in Jerusalem found no regular diary or journal, but merely brief notes written on the margins of books, so irregular and confused that they could make nothing of them; and, either from indifference, or because they had no confidence in him, they allowed Costigan's servant to go without asking him any questions. I took some pains to trace out this man; and afterwards, while lying at Beyroot, suffering from a malady which abruptly put an end to my travels in the East, Paul hunted him out and brought him to me. He was a little, dried-up Maltese sailor; had rowed around that sea without knowing why, except that he was paid for it; and what he told me bore the stamp of truth, for he did not seem to think that he had done any thing extraordinary. He knew as little about it as any man could know who had been over the same water; and yet, after all, perhaps he knew more than any one else could learn.

He seemed, however, to have observed the coast and the soundings with the eye of a sailor. They were eight days in accomplishing the whole tour of the lake, sleeping every night on shore except once, when, afraid of some suspicious Arabs whom they saw on the mountains, they slept on board, beyond the reach of gun-shot from the land. He told me that they had moved in a zigzag direction, crossing and recrossing the lake several times; that every day they sounded, frequently with a line of 175 brachia (about six feet each); that they found the bottom rocky and of very unequal depth, sometimes ranging thirty, forty, eighty, twenty brachia, all within a few boats' length; that sometimes the lead brought up sand, like that of the mountains on each side; that they failed in finding bottom but once, and in that place there were large bubbles all around for thirty paces, rising probably from a spring; that in one place they found on the bank a hot sulphur spring; that at the southern extremity Mr Costigan looked for the River of Egypt, but did not find it; that in four different places they found ruins, and could clearly distinguish large hewn stones, which seemed to have been used for buildings; and in one place they saw ruins which Mr Costigan said were the ruins of Gomorrah. Now, I have no doubt that Mr Costigan talked with him as they went along,

and told him what he told me; and that Mr Costigan had persuaded himself that he did see the ruins of the guilty city. He may have been deceived, and probably was; but it must have been the most intensely interesting illusion that ever any man had. But of the island, or what Paul and I had imagined to be such:—He said that they too had noticed it particularly; and when they came towards the southern extremity of the lake, found that it was an optical deception, caused by a tongue of high land, that put out for a long distance from the middle of the southern extremity; and, being much higher than the valley beyond it, intercepted the view in the manner we had both noticed. This tongue of land, he said, was composed of solid salt; tending to confirm the assertion of Strabo, to which I referred in my journey through Idumea, that in the great valley south of the Dead Sea there were formerly large cities built entirely of salt. The reader will take this for what it is worth; it is at least new, and it comes from the only man living who has explored the lake.

He told me some other particulars; that the boat, when empty, floated a palm higher out of the water than on the Mediterranean; that Costigan lay on the water, and picked a fowl, and tried to induce him to come in; that it was in the month of July, and from nine to five dreadfully hot, and every night a north wind blew, and the waves were worse than in the Gulf of Lyons; and in reference to their peculiar exposures, and the circumstances that hurried poor Costigan to his unhappy fate, he said that they had suffered exceedingly from the heat, the first five days Costigan taking his men at the oars; that on the sixth day their water was exhausted, and Costigan gave out; that on the seventh day they were obliged to drink the water of the sea, and on the eighth they were near the head of the lake, and he himself exhausted, and unable any longer to pull an oar. There he made coffee from the water of the sea; and a favourable wind springing up, for the first time they hoisted their sail, and in a few hours reached the head of the lake; that, feeble as he was, he set off for Jericho, and, in the meantime, the unhappy Costigan was found by the Arabs on the shore a dying man, and, by the intercession of the old woman, carried to Jericho. I ought to add, that the next time he came to me, like George Gibbie, he had tried whether the money I gave him was good, and recollected a great many things he had forgotten before.

The reader cannot feel the same interest in that sea which I did, and therefore I will not detain him longer. In three hours, crossing a rich and fertile country, where flowers were blooming, and Arab shepherds were pasturing their flocks of sheep and goats, we had descended the bed of a ravine, where the Kedron passes from Jerusalem to the Dead Sea, at the foot of the mountains of Santa Saba. It was night when we arrived; and groping our way by the uncertain light of the moon, we arrived at the door of the convent, a lofty and gigantic structure, rising in stories or terraces, one above the other, against the sides of the mountain, to its very top; and then crowned with crenets, that from the base where I stood, seemed, like the tower at which the wickedness of man was confounded, striving to reach to heaven.

We "knocked and it was opened to us;" ascended two or three flights of steps, climbed up a ladder, crawled through a small door, only large enough to admit one at a time, and found ourselves in an antechamber, surrounded by more than 100 Greek pilgrims. A monk conducted us up two or three flights of steps to the chamber of the superior, where we took coffee. In a few moments we followed him again up two or three more flights of steps to a neat little room, with a divan and a large pile of coverlets.

I thought of the bush in which I had lodged the night before, spread out a few of the coverlets, crawled in among them, and in a few moments the Dead Sea, and the Holy Land, and every other land and sea, were

*I would suggest whether this irregularity does not tend to show the fallacy of the opinion, that the cities of the plain were destroyed by a volcanic eruption, and that the lake covers the site of an extinct volcano. I have seen the craters of Vesuvius, Solfatera, Etna, and Monte Rosso, and all present the same form of a mountain excavated in the form of a cone, without any flatness found in the bottom of this sea.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Convent of Santa Saba.—A strange Picture.—Celebration of Good Friday.—Palm Sunday.—A Struggle for Life.—The Grave of a Friend.—A Convert.—Burial of a Missionary.

I SLEPT till nine o'clock the next morning. The first thing I did after breakfast was to mount to the tower at the top of the convent. This is the largest Greek convent in the Holy Land; and I remarked that it was in a good state of repair, and that large and expensive improvements were then in progress. The tower commanded a view of the whole convent, built in terraces, in a sort of amphitheatre, in the side of the mountain. All around, particularly in the mountain opposite, were ranges of grottoes, formerly the residences of anchorites and hermits, admirably situated for cherishing pious thoughts, and leading a holy life. An old white-bearded monk, leaning on his staff, was toiling up it sides, leading a long procession of pilgrims, probably to some very holy place; and below me, apparently growing out of the rock, was a large palm-tree, planted, as they say, by Santa Saba himself in the fourth century. The cemetery is about half way down—a vault under an open area. The flat stone that covered the entrance was fastened down with cement. The monk told me that the bodies of the dead were laid on stone benches, where time was thrown over them; and as soon as decomposition had taken place the bones were removed, and thrown upon a pile in another part of the cemetery.

The chapel, like all the other Greek chapels, was full of gaudy and ridiculous ornaments and paintings; and, among the latter, there was one that attracted the particular admiration and reverence of the pilgrims. At the top of the picture sat the father, surrounded by angels, and patriarchs, and good men; and on his right was a range of two-story houses, St Peter standing before them with the keys in his hand. Below the father was a large, powerful man, with a huge pair of scales in his hand, weighing sinners as they came up, and billeting on each the weight of his sins; below him were a number of naked figures, in a sitting posture, with their arms spread out, and their legs enclosed in long boxes extended horizontally. On the left a stream of fire was coming down from the father, and collecting in the mouth of a huge nautescript sea-monster, while in front stood a great half-naked figure, pitching in the sinners just as the fireman on board a steam-boat pitches in the long sticks of wood, and the damned were kicking about in the flames. On the right was Elias doing battle with Antichrist; and below was a representation of the last day, and the graves giving up their dead, in almost every conceivable variety of form and situation.

In another chapel, dedicated to John of Damascus, who formerly lived there, behind an iron grating in a grotto of the rock was a large pile of skulls and bones, the remains of 14,000 hermits who dwelt among the mountains, and were slain by the Turks.

The superior had been waiting some time to accompany me to Jerusalem. Will the reader believe it? "This man had lived twenty years in the convent, and had never been to the Dead Sea! I was so disgusted with him that I rode on and left him; and following the Valley of the Kedron, meeting on the way hundreds of Greek pilgrims, in three hours I was again in Jerusalem.

The next night being Good Friday, the monks of the Latin Convent performed the ceremony of the crucifixion. The doors were open at an early hour for a short time, and then closed for the night, so that we were obliged to be there two or three hours before the ceremony began. Most of the pilgrims had prepared against the tediousness of waiting by bringing with them their beds, mats, and coverlets; and all around the floor of the church, men, women, and children, were taking an intermediate nap. The proceedings commenced in the chapel of the Latin Convent, where

priests, monks, pilgrims, Paul, and myself, all assembled, every one holding in his hand a long lighted candle. The superior, with his gold mitre and black velvet cloak trimmed with gold, my friend the Sicilian priest, and some other dignitaries of the church, were present, very richly dressed. On a large cross was the figure of a man, representing the Saviour, the crown of thorns on his head, nails in his hands and feet, blood trickling from them, and a gaping wound in his side. Before setting out on the procession, the lights were extinguished; and, in total darkness, a monk commenced a sermon in Italian. After this the candles were relighted, banners and crucifixes raised, and the procession moved round the church towards Calvary. Stopping at the Pillar of Flagellation, at the prison where they say Christ was confined, where the crown of thorns was put upon his head, where his raiment was divided, &c., and giving a chant, and an address by one of the monks at each place, they wound round the church until they came to the staircase leading to Calvary, and, leaving their shoes below, mounted barefoot to the place of crucifixion. Here they first went to an altar on the right, where, as they have it, Christ was nailed to the cross; and laying the figure down on the floor, although they had been bearing it aloft for more than two hours, they now went through the ceremony of nailing it; and returning to the adjoining altar, passed the foot of the cross through the marble floor, and with the bleeding figure upon it, set it up in the hole in the natural rock, according to the tradition, in the very spot where, 1800 years ago, Christ was crucified. At the foot of the cross a monk preached a sermon in Italian, warm, earnest, and impassioned; frequently turning round, and with both hands extended, apostrophising the bleeding figure above him. In spite of my scepticism and incredulity, and my contempt for monkish tricks, I could not behold this scene unmoved. Every attendant upon the crucifixion was represented; for the Governor of Jerusalem was present, with a smile of scorn upon his handsome features, and Turkish and Mussulman soldiers breaking the stillness of the scene with loud laughs of derision; and I could almost imagine that I heard the unbelieving Jews, with gibes and sneers, crying out, "If he be the King of Israel, let him come down from the cross!"

After the body had remained some time suspended, two friars, personating Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus, approached the foot of the cross; and one of them on the right, with a long pair of pincers, took the crown of thorns from the head, waved it around slowly with a theatrically mournful air, kissed it, and laid it down on a table before him; he then drew long spikes from the hands and feet, and moving them around, one by one, slowly as before, kissed them, and laid them also on the table. I never saw anything more affecting than this representation, bad as it was, of the bloody drama of the crucifixion; and as the monks drew out the long nails from the hands and feet, even the scoffing Mussulmans stopped their laugh of derision. I stood by the table while they laid the body upon it, and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth; followed them when they carried it down from Calvary to the stone of anointment; stood by the head of the stone while they washed and anointed it, and prepared it for burial, and followed it to the door of the sepulchre. It was now near two o'clock; the ceremony was ended, the Mussulman soldiers had retired, and Paul and I returned to the convent. We had no lamp; and as, in all the Turkish cities, every one is obliged to carry a lamp at night, and, in fact, it is necessary for his own security, we walked through the narrow streets of Jerusalem bearing the same long candles with which we had figured in the procession of the crucifixion.

On Sunday morning, being Easter, or Palm Sunday, I visited, for the last time, the Church of the Holy Sepulchre. It was more crowded than I had ever yet seen it. The courtyard literally swarmed with vendors of amulets, crucifixes, and holy ornaments; and within the church were tables of oranges, figs, dates, &c. The

Arab baker was walking about, with a large tray on his head, crying his bread; and in each of the altars was a sort of shop, in which Greeks were making and selling chaplets and wreaths of palm-leaves. It was altogether a lively image of the scene when Christ went into the temple, and "cast out them that bought and sold, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers." The ceremonies of the day were in commemoration of that on which our Saviour entered into Jerusalem, riding upon an ass, when the multitude followed him, strewing their garments and branches of palm-trees in his path, and crying, "Hosannah to the Son of David!" When I entered, the monks of the Latin Convent were celebrating grand mass before the holy sepulchre; and, in the mean time, the Greeks were getting ready for their turn. Their chapel was crowded, and all along the corridors the monks were arranging the people in procession, and distributing banners, for which the young Greeks were scrambling; and in one place a monk, with a standard in his hand, which had just been handed down from above, with his back against the wall, was knocking and kicking away a crowd of young Greeks, struggling to obtain it for the procession.

As soon as the Latins had finished, the Arab soldiers, whom I always found regular attendants at these scenes, as if they knew what was coming when the Greeks began, addressed them with loud shouts of "Yellah, yellah—come on, come on!" A large banner was stationed at the door of the sepulchre, and the rush of the pilgrims to prostrate themselves before it, and to touch it with their palm-branches, was tremendous. A tall young Greek, with a large turban on his head, while his left hand supported the banner, was laying about him with his right as if he were defending the sepulchre itself from the hands of the infidels. The procession advanced under a loud clamour, preceded by a body of Turkish officers to clear the way; then came the priests, wearing their richest dresses, mitres, and caps richly ornamented with precious stones, and carrying aloft sacred banners, and one sprinkling holy water. Wherever he came, the people were terrible; the Greeks became excited to a degree in the church, and the Arab soldiers appeared

bursting through the rear ranks, thrust his face over my shoulder, and bawled out "Papa, papa," in such an agonising voice, that the "papa" aimed at him a copious discharge, of which my face received the principal benefit. When the largest banner came round, the struggle to touch it with the palm-branches was inconceivable. A Turkish officer had, until this time, covered me with his body, and, by dint of shouting, kicking, and striking furiously about him, saved me till the procession passed by; but after this the work became dreadful. I could feel my ribs yielding under the pressure, and was really alarmed when a sudden and mighty surge of the struggling mass hurried me into the street in trade of a merchant of dates and oranges. Instead of picking up his goods, the fellow grappled at me; but I got out of his clutches as well as I could; and, setting up for myself, kicked, thumped, and scuffled until I made my way to the door; and that was my last visit to the Church of the Holy Sepulchre.

I had regretted that I could not stay for the Greek jugglery, the drawing down fire from heaven, when every pilgrim considers himself bound to light a taper at the sacred flame; and those who fight first are considered the most fortunate and the most favoured in the sight of God. I could not imagine the wild and frantic struggling among more than 1500 lights and fanatics for the first rays of the heavenly fire; but from what I saw that day, I felt that it would be putting life and limb in peril to be among them. Two years before, a horrible catastrophe had happened at the entrance of this ceremony. The air of the church had become so contaminated by the exhalations from the bodies of the thousands crowded within it, that respiration became impossible; confusion, and a rush for the door, a Pacha was carried out senseless, and the people, by a strong body of his soldiers;

and between 200 and 300 pilgrims were trodden down and trampled to death. Their bodies were laid out next morning in the court of the church; and so degraded is the character of these Christian pilgrims, that, as I was told by Mr Nicolaisen, the English missionary to the Jews, who was looking among them for a servant of his own, the friends and relatives of the slain carried them away in triumph, as martyrs in the cause of Christ.

My last visit in Jerusalem was to Mount Zion. I believe I have not mentioned that on this hill stands the tomb, or the supposed tomb, of David. It is covered by a mosque; the tomb is walled in, and, as the Arab door-keeper told me, even the eyes of the pacha are not permitted to look within the holy place. Here, too, is the cenaculum, or chamber where our Saviour ate his last supper with his disciples; in the Armenian chapel is the real stone that was rolled from the door of the sepulchre; and here also is the house of Caiaphas, the high-priest, with a tree marking the spot where the cock crew when Peter denied his master.

But there was one spot on Mount Zion far more interesting to me than all these, or even than anything in Jerusalem. It was the grave of my early friend, whom I had tracked in his wanderings from the Cataracts of the Nile, through the wilderness of Sinai, to his last resting-place in Jerusalem. Years had rolled away since I bade him farewell in the streets of our native city. I had heard of him in the gay circles of Paris, about to wed with one of the proudest names in France; again, as a wanderer in the East, and then as dead in Palestine. But a few short years had passed away, and what changes! My old school-mates, the companions of my youth and opening manhood, where were they? Gone, scattered, dispersed, and dead; they were deep in the earth, and he had left his home, and been

the Holy Land, and I
at the death? Who of his divi
spoke of him? Who really
I had been a part of

a scene which almost made me weep; the burial of an Armenian pilgrim. He was brought for burial in the clothes in which he had died; the grave was too small, and had to be enlarged; the priest stood at the head of the grave under a heavy shower of rain, and, as he offered me his snuff-box, I mumbled at being obliged to wait; and when the grave was enlarged, and the body thrown in, and the wet dirt cast upon it, he mumbled a short prayer, and then all hurried away. And this was the grave of my friend; and I could not but ask myself who had buried him, and who had mourned over his grave. The inscription on his tombstone afforded but vague answers to my questions, and they were of a painful character. It ran thus:—

D. O. M.

Hic jacet

Reverendus Pater

Re

Anglicani Ecclesie Con. of Hyero. et suis fratribus intrinsecis sp. et
Ermoules Lutheri et Calvin abjectis,
Catholicam religionem professum synagoga corrupta
E vita decessit IV. nonas Augusti, MDCCXXX. aetatis ann.
XXXV.

Amici mercedis sponso

Oratio pro eo.

He had died at the convent, and died alone. His travelling companion had accidentally remained at Jaffa, had not heard of his sickness, and did not arrive in Jerusalem until poor B—— was in his grave. It was necessary to be wary in my inquiries; for the Catholics here are ever on the watch for souls, and with great ostentation had blazoned his conversion upon his tomb. The first time I inquired about him, a young monk told me that he remembered him well as on the day of his arrival, a fine, handsome young man, full of health and spirits, and that he immediately commenced talking about religion, and three days afterwards they said

mass, and took the sacrament together in the chapel of the convent. He told me the story so glibly, that I was confident of its falsity, even without referring to its improbability. I had known B—— well. I knew that, like most young men with us, though entertaining the deepest respect and reverence for holy things, in the pride of youth and health he had lived as if there was no grave; and I could imagine that, stretched upon his bed of death in the dreary cell of the convent, with “no eye to pity and no arm to save,” surrounded by Catholic monks, and probably enfeebled in mind by disease, he had, perhaps, laid hold of the only hope of salvation offered him; and when I stood over his grave, and thought of the many thorns in his pillow in that awful hour—the distracting thoughts of home, of the mother whose name had been the last on his lips; the shuddering consciousness that, if he died a Protestant, his bones would be denied the rites of burial, I pitied, I grieved for, but I could not blame him. But when suspicion was aroused by the manner of the monk, I resolved to inquire further; and if his tale should prove untrue, to tear with my own hands the libellous stone from my friend’s grave, and hurl it down Mount Zion. I afterwards saw the monk who had shrived him, and was told that the young man with whom I had conversed was a praetor and a fool; that he himself had never heard B—— speak of religion until after his return from the Dead Sea with the hand of death upon him; that he had administered the sacrament to him but three days before his death, when all hope of life was past, and that even yet it might be a question whether he did really renounce his faith, for the solemn imprecation was made in a language he but imperfectly understood; and he never spoke of it except, in the wildness of delirium, to me, under the name “mother.”

I have said that in his dying hours he was harrowed by the thought that his body would be denied a Christian burial. Mr. V—— told me that the Catholics would have had a resting place in consecrated ground, leading me a short distance to the grave of a fellow missionary who had died since he had been in Jerusalem, described to me what he had seen of the Christian spirit of the Christians of the holy city. Recalled by the Latins, the friends of Dr. Dodge had asked permission of the Greek patriarch to bury him for a little while in their burying-ground; and, negotiating with the dragoman of the convent, they thought that permission had been granted; but while they were in the act of performing the funeral service, a messenger came in to inform that the place had been filled up. They protested, but the service till the delay excited the attention of his unhappy widow and they were obliged to tell her that where they could lay the head of her young husband a reluctant permission was at length granted, and they buried him by the light of torches; and although there had been no graves in that part of the ground before the Greeks had buried all around, to prevent any application for permission to lay by his side there, he was another heretic.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Pilgrimage to the Jordan.—Pilgrim’s Certificate.—The Tomb of Samuel.—Departure from Jerusalem.—Last view of the Dead Sea.—Village of Einbroot.—Departure from Judea.—Mounts Gerizim and Ebal.—An Antique Manuscript.—“Eas.” in Samaria.

The next day I left Jerusalem; but before leaving it, I was witness to another striking scene, which I shall never forget; the departure of the pilgrims, fifteen or twenty thousand in number, for the Jordan. At an early hour I was on horseback, outside St. Stephen’s Gate. It was such a morning as that on which I started for the Dead Sea, clear, bright, and beautiful; the streets of the city were deserted, and the whole popula-

tion were outside the walls, sitting under the shadow of the temple, among the tombs of the Turkish burying-ground; the women in their long white dresses, with their faces covered, and the men in large flowing robes, of gay and varied colours, and turbans of every fashion, many of them green, the proud token of the pilgrimage to Mecca, with pipes, and swords, and glittering arms; the whole Valley of Jehoshaphat was filled with moving beings, in every variety of gay apparel, as if the great day of resurrection had already come, and the tenants of the dreary tombs had burst the fetters of the grave, and come forth into new life and beauty.

I had received an invitation from the governor to ride in his suite; and while waiting for him at the gate, he terrible Abouges, with his retainers, came out and beckoned me to join him. I followed him over the Kedron and the Valley of Jehoshaphat to the north of Gethsemane, where I stopped, and, giving my horse to an Arab boy, I stepped over the low fence, and, seating myself on the jutting root of the tree marked by the knives of pilgrims as that under which our Saviour was betrayed, looking over the heads of the Turkish women seated on the fence below, I saw the whole procession streaming from the gate, crossing the Valley of Jehoshaphat, and filing along the foot of the garden. They were on foot and on horseback, on donkeys, mules, dromedaries, and camels; and here and there were well-equipped caravans, with tents and provisions for the monks of the different convents. It would be impossible to give any idea of this strange and extraordinary procession: here might be seen a woman on horseback, with a child on each arm; there a large pander on each side of a mule, with a man in one and a woman in the other; or a large frame on the high back of a camel, like a diminutive ark, carrying a whole family, with all their quilts, coverlets, cooking utensils, &c. Among them, riding alone on a raw-boned horse, was a beggarly Italian, in a worn and shabby European dress, with a fowling-piece and a game-bag, and every body made way for him; and there was a general laugh wherever he came. And now a body of Turkish horsemen, with drawn scimitars in their hands, rushed out of the gate, dashed down the valley, and up the sides of the mountains at full gallop, clearing the way for the governor; and then came the governor himself, under a salt to from the fortress, on a horse of the best blood of Arabia, riding as if he were part of the noble animal, preceded by the music of the Turkish drum, and bowing with a nobility and dignity of manner known only in the East, and which I marked the more particularly, as he stopped opposite to me and beckoned to me to join him. Then came the pilgrims again, and I sat there till the last had gone by. Galloping back to the gate, I turned to look at them for the last time, a living, moving mass of thousands, thousands of miles from their homes, bound for the sacred Jordan, and strong in the faith that, bathing in its hallowed waters, they should wash away their sins.

In a few moments I was at the convent; and, sending Paul before me to the Damascus Gate, I went to take my leave of the superior. He told me that, though I was an American (the only Americans he had seen were missionaries, and he did not like them), he liked me; and bidding me a kind and affectionate farewell, he put into my hands a pilgrim’s certificate, which follows in these words—

FR. FRANCISCUS XAVIERUS A MELITA.

Orbis minorum regularis observantie S. P. N. Francisci; ecclesie melitensis lector theologicus; ex-definito; sacre congregationis propaganda fidei responsalis; missionum Aegypti et Cypri prefectus; in partibus orientis commissarius apostolicus; sacri Montis Sion, et sanctissimi sepulchri D. N. Jesu Christi guardianus; totius Terrae Sanctae custos, visitator, et humilissimus in domino servus:

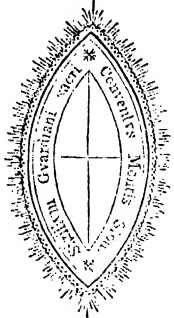
Illustrissimo Domino *** * ***** Americo libenter hoc presens testimonium damus, et omnibus, ac singulis hos praesentes nostras litteras lectoris, vel inspectoris notum, fideique

TRAVELS IN THE HOLY LAND.

facimus, Laudatum Illustrissimum Dominum Jerusalem pervenisse, et omnia principaliora loca, quae in tota Palestina visitari solent, praesertim Ssm. Sepulchrum Dom. N. Jesu Christi, Calvariae Montem, Præsepium Bethlehemiticum, etc., visitasse. Et quod ita sit, attestationem manu nostra subscribimus, et sigillo majori officii nostri munimus expediri mandamus.

Datus Jerusalem, ex hoc Venerabili Conventu Sancti Salvatoris, die 3 Aprilis, Anno Domini 18 trigesimo-sexto.

Fr. Franciscus Xaverius a Melita, Custos Terræ Sanctæ.



De Mandato Renditi in Npto Patris,

FR. PERPETUUS A SOLERIO.

Secretarius Terræ Sanctæ.

Which, being interpreted, is as follows:—

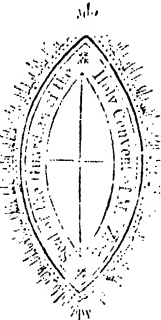
BROTHER FRANCIS XAVIER, OF MALTA.

Brother Francis Xavier, of Malta, of the order of monks of the regular rule of our Father Saint Francis; theological reader of the order of Malta; expounder, missionary of the sacred congregation for propagating the faith; prefect of the mission Egypt and Cyprus; apostolical commissary in the Eastern world; guardian of the holy Mount Zion, and of the most holy Sepulchre of our Lord Jesus Christ; keeper and visitor of all the Holy Land, and humble servant in the Lord:

To the most illustrious Lord ***** an American, we give this present testimonial; and to all and every one who shall read or inspect these our present letters, we do make known and certify that this celebrated and most illustrious lord has come through Jerusalem, and has visited all the principal places which are accustomed to be visited in all Palestine, especially the most Holy Sepulchre of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Mount of Calvary, the Convent at Bethlehem, &c.; and that it is so we subscribe this attestation with our hand, and cause it to be put forth fortified by the great seal of our office.

Given at Jerusalem, from this venerable seat of the Holy Saviour, on the 3d day of April, the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and thirty-six.

Brother Francis Xavier, of Malta Guardian of the Holy Land



Given by command, in the private office of the Father

FRANCIS A SOLERIO,

Perpetual Secretary of the Holy Land.

Whereby the reader will see, that whatever may be his fate hereafter, a pilgrimage to the holy city gives a man temporal honours, and has transformed a republican citizen of America into an "illustrissimus dominus."

With this evidence of my pilgrim character, I mounted my horse for the last time at the door of the inn, and set my way in going to the Damascus Gate,

but a friendly Jew conducted me to it; a Jew was the first to welcome me to the Holy Land, and a Jew was the last to speed me on my way from the holy city of Jerusalem. Paul was waiting for me; and for half a mile we passed mounds of ruins, the walls of the old city having extended some distance beyond the Damascus Gate. In about three quarters of an hour, a little to the right, we came to what are called the Tombs of the Judges, excavations in the rock, one of them full of water. I have no satisfaction in the revelation of these tombs, for there I lost my old companion, the terror of evil dogs, my Nubian club; which, since I bought it in Nubia, had seldom been out of my hand. In about three hours we were mounting Djebel Samiel, the highest mountain about Jerusalem, crowned with the ruins of Ramah, the birthplace and tomb of Samuel the seer. A few Arab huts are around the ruins; and a ruined mosque, the minaret of which has fallen, is the most prominent building on the mountain. We entered the mosque; at the farther end was a door locked, but with a key in it. I turned the key, and entered a dark chamber. By the light from the door I could see at the far end a dark, sombre-looking object, and groped my way to the tomb of Samuel; I kept my hands on it, and walked around it; and hearing some of the villagers at the door, I tore off a piece of the palm, as I had done from the tomb of Aaron, and hurried out. I stopped for a moment on the top of the mountain, and, looking back towards the holy city, saw for the last time the Mosque of Omar rising proudly over the ruins of the Temple of Solomon, the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, the walls of Jerusalem, and the Dead Sea.

My first impression, this latter had been from the tomb of Aaron; and I considered it a not uninteresting coincidence that I was now standing upon it for the time from the tomb of Samuel.

In about an hour, riding over a rough road, we came to the village of Be'er, supposed to be the Be'er to which Jonathan fled "for fear of his brother Abimelech." A ruined khan was at the entrance of the village, and near it a large fountain, at which the women were washing. About an hour beyond this, to the right, on a little elevation, are the ruins of Bethel, the ancient Bethel. It was here that the bears came out and tore in pieces the children that mocked the bald-headed prophet Elisha, and it was here that Jacob took "the stones of the place for his pillow, and dreamed, and beheld a ladder reaching to heaven, and the angels of God ascending and descending thereon." Though surrounded by stony mountains, it was prettily situated; I rode among the ruins without dismounting. The place was solitary and deserted, and not a human being appeared to dwell in it. At one end were the ruins of a church, and near it was a large fountain in a stone reservoir; a single cow was drinking at the fountain, and at the moment a boy was driving past a flock of goats to his village home in the mountains. He was a Christian, and called me Christian, and hanji or pilgrim, and gave me a wild flower, which he plucked from under my horse's feet. It was a beautiful afternoon, and all was so still and quiet that I felt strongly tempted to lie down and sleep where Jacob did; but I had given away my tent and camp equipage, and I reflected that while I was sure of the patriarch's pillow of stone, I had but little prospect of being blessed with the promise that softened it, "that the land on which he lay should be given to him and his seed, and that in him all the families of the earth should be blessed."

In about an hour we came to the village of Einbroot, prettily situated on an eminence, and commanding on all sides a view of fertile and well-cultivated valleys. We were looking for Einbroot; and as the village to which we had come lay a little off the road, we were not sure it was the place we wanted. A woman told us it was not, a man assured us that the sheik was not at home, and there seemed clearly a disposition to send us on farther, and this determined us to stop. We rode up to the village, and inquired for the sheik; the villagers gave us evasive answers, one saying that he

was away, and another that he was sick; but a little boy, pointing with his finger, told us that he was there, praying; and looking up, we saw him on the top of the house, on his knees, praying with all his might, and occasionally looking over his shoulder at us. By his not coming to welcome me, I saw that he did not wish me to stay; and after my scenes with the Bedouins in the desert, having a comparative contempt for dwellers in houses, I dismounted and sat down, determined to see who would get tired first. In the mean time the villagers gathered around as spectators of our contest, and the sheik, as if ashamed of himself, at length finished his prayers, and came down to receive me. He told me that he had no place for us, and showed me to a large room, fifty or sixty feet square, which seemed to be the common resort and sleeping-place of all who had no particular home. After the comforts of the convent at Jerusalem, I did not like the look of things in the beginning of my journey; but consoling myself with the reflection that it was only for one night, I spread my mat in a corner, and had just time to stroll around the village before dark.

The houses were built of rough stone, a single story in height, with mud roofs, many of them overgrown with grass, and now presenting, towards sundown, the singularly picturesque spectacle, which I had often noticed in Syria, of the inhabitants sitting out upon the terraces and roofs of their houses, or, perhaps, the still more striking picture of a single old white-bearded, patriarchal figure, sitting alone upon his housetop. One of these venerable personages called me up to his side; and I was well rewarded for my trouble, and could fully appreciate the satisfaction with which the old man, day after day, looked out upon the beautiful and well-cultivated valley, the terraces, and the smiling villages on the mountain side.

Several of the villagers were following us, and among them a fine old man, the brother of the sheik, and formerly sheik him-self. He told me that, since the stormy times of Mohammed Ali, he had resigned the sheikdom, and comforted him-self for the loss of station in the arms of a young wife; and before we parted we were on such good terms that he told me the reason of their unwillingness to receive us; namely, that they thought we were officers of Mohammed Ali, sent to spy out their condition, and ascertain the number of their men able to bear arms; but satisfied that we were merely travellers, and warned by my honest disclaimer of the imputed character, he invited me to his house, and both he and the sheik, and all the villagers, seemed striving now to atone for the churlishness of their first reception.

The old man was as kind as a man could be; in fact, his kindness oppressed me; for having but one room in his house, he sent both his wives out of doors to sleep at a neighbour's. In vain I told him not to disarrange himself on my account; to make no stranger of me; to let them stay; and that it was nothing to me if the whole harem of the sultan was there; he was positive and decided. I entreated him about his wives, and he said that he had been a poor man all his life, and could never afford to keep more than one till lately; and now the companion of his youth and the sharer of his poverty was thrust away into a corner, while with all simplicity and honesty he showed me the best place in the house appropriated to his young bride. He talked as if it had been the hardest thing in the world that he had been obliged to content himself so long with his first wife. Thus it seems, that here, as with us, extravagance comes with wealth; and whereas with us, when a man grows rich he adds another pair of horses to his establishment, so the honest Mussulman indulges himself with another helpmate.

Two Turks and an Arab slept in the room with us; and before going to bed, that is, before lying down on the mud floor, and the first thing in the morning, they turned their faces to the tomb of the Prophet, knelt down and prayed. In the evening one of them had complained of a headache, and another, standing over

him and pressing his temples with the palms of his hands, repeated a verse of the Koran, and the headache went away. I asked him whether that was good for a sore throat; he told me that it was, but, after giving me a verse or two, said that his remedy could only have full effect upon true believers.

Early in the morning I set off, my host and the sheik, and half the village gathering around me to bid me farewell, and invoke blessings upon me. I did not know the extent of the sacrifice my host had made for me until at the moment of parting, when I got a glimpse of his young wife.

We were now entering the region of Samaria, and, though the mountains were yet stony, a beautiful country was opening before us. We soon came into a smiling valley full of large olive-trees, and rode for some time in a pleasant shade. Every where we were meeting streams of pure water, tempting us perpetually to dismount after the sandy desert through which we had been so long travelling. We passed, too, several villages, among which I remember was the village of Cowara, beautifully situated on the side of the mountain, overlooking a fertile valley, and all the women of the village were in the field picking the tares from the grain.

I was now about entering one of the most interesting countries in the Holy Land, consecrated by the presence of our Saviour in the body, and by the exercise of his divine and miraculous powers. The Bible was again in my hand, and I read there that Jesus Christ had left "Judea and departed into Galilee; that he must needs pass through Samaria, and that he came to a city of Samaria called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph." And "Jacob's well was there, and Jesus, being weary with his journey, sat down on the well, and it was about the sixth hour. And there cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water; and Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink." It is with no irreverent feeling that I draw the parallel, but I was following in the very footsteps of the Saviour; I too had left "Judea, and had departed into Galilee;" I too "must needs go through Samaria;" and I too was before entering the city, I would fain sit down on the well of Jacob, where our Saviour talked with the Samaritan woman.

At Cowara I took a guide to conduct me to this well. In about two hours we were winding along the side of Mount Gerizim, whose summit was covered with the white dome of the tomb of an Arab saint; and passing one well on the declivity of the mountain, going down to the valley at its base, we came to Jacob's well, or the Beer Samara of the Arabs. I knew that there was a difference of opinion as to the precise site of this interesting monument; but when I found myself at the mouth of this well, I had no wish to look farther; I did feel and all whole I did; our Saviour coming out from Judea, and travelling along this valley; I could see him, wearied with his journey, sitting down on this well to rest, and the Samaritan woman, as I saw them at every town in the Holy Land, coming out for water. I could imagine his looking up to Mount Gerizim, and predicting the ruin of the temple, and telling her that the hour was coming when neither on that mountain nor yet in Jerusalem would she worship the God of her fathers. A large column lay across the top of the well, and the mouth was filled up with huge stones. I could see the water through the crevices, but, even with the assistance of Paul and the Arabs, found it impossible to remove them. I plucked a wild flower growing in the mouth of the well, and passed on.

The ground which I was now treading is supposed to be the "parcel of ground" which Jacob bought of the sons of Hamor, the father of Shechem, for a hundred pieces of silver, and gave to his son Joseph. Turning the point of the mountain, we came to a rich valley, lying between the mountains of Gerizim and Ebal. Crossing this valley, on the sides of the mountains of Ebal is a long range of grottoes and tombs, and a little

before coming to them, in a large white building like a sheik's tomb, is the sepulchre of Joseph, as it is written, "the bones also of Joseph, which the children of Israel brought up with them out of Egypt, buried they in Shechem." I dismounted and entered the building, and it is not an uninteresting fact that I found there a white-bearded Israelite, kneeling at the tomb of the patriarch, and teaching a rosy-cheeked boy (his descendant of the fourth generation) the beautiful story of Joseph and his brethren.

It was late in the afternoon when I was moving up the valley of Naplous. The mountains of Gerizim and Ebal, the mountains of blessings and curses, were towering like lofty walls on either side of me; Mount Gerizim fertile, and Mount Ebal barren, as when God commanded Joshua to set up the stones in Mount Ebal, and pronounced on Mount Gerizim blessings upon the children of Israel, "if they would hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord, to observe and do all his commandments,"* and on Ebal the withering curses of disobedience. A beautiful stream, in two or three places filling large reservoirs, was running through the valley, and a shepherd sat on its bank, playing a reed pipe, with his flock feeding quietly around him. The shades of evening were gathering fast as I approached the town of Naplous, the Shechem or Sychem of the Old Testament, and the Sychar of the New. More than a dozen lepers were sitting outside the gate, their faces shining, pimpled, and bloated, covered with sores and pustules, their nostrils open and filled with ulcers, and their red eyes fixed and staring; with swollen feet they dragged their disgusting bodies towards me, and with hoarse voices extended their deformed and hideous hands for charity.

We rode up the principal street; and at the door of the palace I met the governor just mounting his horse, with a large retinue of officers and slaves. I bid him good evening, and he sent a janizary to conduct me to the house of a Samaritan, a writer to the government, where I was received, fed, and lodged, better than in any other place in the Holy Land, always excepting the abodes of those suffering martyrs, the Terra Sancta monks.

I had just time to visit the Samaritan synagogues. Leaving my shoes at the door, with naked feet I entered a small room, about fifteen feet square, with nothing striking or interesting about it except what the Samaritans say is the oldest manuscript in the world, a copy of the Pentateuch, written by Abishua, the grandson of Aaron, three years after the death of Moses, or about 3360 years ago. The priest was a man of forty-five, and gave me but a poor idea of the character of the Samaritans, for he refused to show me the sacred scroll unless I would pay him first. He then brought down an old manuscript, which, very much to his astonishment, I told him was not the genuine record; giving him very plainly to understand that I was not to be bamboozled in the matter. I had been advised of this trick by the English clergyman whom I met in Jerusalem; and the priest, laughing at my detection of the cheat, while some of his hopeful flock who had followed me joined in the laugh, brought down the other, preserved in a tin case. It was written in some character I did not understand, said to be the Samaritan, fat and worn, and bearing the marks of extreme age; and though I knew nothing about it, I admitted it to be the genuine manuscript; and then all laughed when I told the priest what a rogue he was for trying to deceive me; and this priest they believe to be of the tribe of Levi of the seed of Aaron. If I had left Naplous then, I should probably have repeated the words that our Saviour applied to them in his day, "Ye are the sons of the devil, ye are the seed of the serpent," but I spent a long evening, and had an interesting conversation with my host and his brother, and in their kindness, sincerity, and honesty, forgot the petty duplicity of the Levite.

Much curiosity has existed in Europe among the

* Deuteronomy, xxviii. 1.

learned with regard to this singular people, and several of the most eminent men of their day, in London and Paris, have had correspondence with them, but without any satisfactory result. The descendants of the Israelites who remained and were not carried into captivity, on the rebuilding of the second temple were denied the privilege of sharing the labour and expense of its reconstruction at Jerusalem; and in mortification and revenge, they built a temple on Mount Gerizim, and ever since a deadly hatred has existed between their descendants the Samaritans and the Jews. Gibbon, speaking of them in the time of Justinian, says, "The Samaritans of Palestine were a motley race, an ambiguous sect, rejected as Jews by the pagans, by the Jews as schismatics, and by the Christians as idolaters. The abomination of the cross had already been planted on their holy mount of Gerizim, but the persecution of Justinian offered only the alternative of baptism or rebellion. They chose the latter; under the standard of a desperate leader, they rose in arms and retaliated their wrongs on the lives, the property, and the temples of a defenceless people. The Samaritans were finally subdued by the regular forces of the East; 20,000 were slain, 20,000 were sold by the Arabs to the infidels of Persia and India, and the remains of that unhappy nation atoned for the crime of treason by the sin of hypocrisy." About sixty families are all now remaining, and these few relics of a once powerful people still dwell in their ancient capital, at the base of Mount Gerizim, under the shadow of their fallen temple.

The brother my host was particularly fond of talking about. He was very old, and the most I could learn I ever saw who lived to attain a great age. He was tall, long, and all his limbs were of a tall man, but he was so hump-backed that in sitting he rested upon his hump. He asked me many questions about the Samaritans in England (of America he had no knowledge) and seemed determined to believe that there were many in that country, and told me that I might say to them, who ever I found them, that there they believed in one almighty and eternal God, the five Books of Moses and a future Messiah, and the day of the Messiah's coming to be near at hand; that they practised circumcision, went three times a-year up to Mount Gerizim, "the everlasting mountain," to worship and offer sacrifice, and once a-year pitched their tents and left their virgins alone on the mount for seven days, expecting that one of them would conceive and bring forth a son, who would be the Messiah; that they allowed two wives, in case of barrenness four; that the women were not permitted to enter the synagogue, except once a-year during fast, but on no account were they permitted to touch the sacred scroll; and that although the Jews and Samaritans had dealings in the market-places, &c. they hated each other now as much as their fathers did before them.

I asked him about Jacob's well; he said he knew the place, and that he knew our Saviour, or Jesus Christ, as he familiarly called him, very well; he was Joseph the carpenter's son, of Nazareth; but that the story which the Christians had about the woman at the well was all a fiction; that Christ did not convert her; but that, to the contrary, she laughed at him, and ever refused to let him water to drink.

The information I received from these old men is more than I have ever seen in print about this reduced and singular people, and I give it for what it may be worth. I cannot help mentioning a little circumstance, which serves to illustrate the proverb that boys will be boys all the world over. While I was exploring the mysteries of the Samaritan creed, it being the season of Easter, a fine chubby little fellow came to me with a couple of eggs dyed yellow, and trying them on his teeth, just as we used to do in my boyish days (did we learn it from them or they from us?) gave me a choice; and though it may seem a trifling incident to the reader, it was not an uninteresting circumstance to me, this celebration of my "paas" in the ancient Sychem, cracking eggs with a Samaritan boy.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Sebasto.—Ruins of the Palace of Herod.—Mount Tabor.—Nazareth.—Scriptural Localities.—Tiberias.—An English Sportsman.—Bethsaida and Chorazin.—Capernaum.—Zaffad.—Arrival at Acre.

At about eight o'clock in the morning we left Naplous; the lepers were lying at the gate as before; not permitted to enter the walls of the city, but living apart and perpetuating among themselves their loathsome race. The valley of Naplous was, if possible, more beautiful by morning than by evening light, shaded by groves of figs, olives, almonds, and apricots in full bloom, and bounded by lofty mountains, with a clear and beautiful stream winding and murmuring through its centre. Until I came to this place, I had frequently said to myself that I would not give the estate of a wealthy gentleman in Genes for the whole kingdom of David; but there was a rare and extraordinary beauty here, even in the hands of the Arab Fellahs. Men and women were stealing among the trees, in gaily-coloured apparel, and, instead of the turban or tarbouch, the men wore a long red cap, with the tassel hanging jauntily like that of a Neapolitan. For more than an hour we followed the course of the stream, and nothing could be more beautifully picturesque than the little mills on its banks; low, completely embosomed among trees, and with their roofs covered with grass, and sometimes the agreeable sound of a waterfall was the first intimation we had of their presence. There was something exceedingly rural and poetic in their appearance. I went down to one of them, more than usually beautiful, hoping to be greeted by some lovely "maid of the mill;" but, as if it were determined that every thing like illusion in the East should be destroyed for my especial benefit, the sight of one chamber, filled with sacks of grain, sheep and goats, and all kinds of filth, and a young girl sitting in the door, with the head of an old woman in her lap, occupied as it was by a man, drove the idea from my mind.

Leaving the stream to the right, and crossing among the mountains some hours came in sight of the ruins of the ancient Samaria, standing on a singularly bold and isolated mountain, crowned with ruins. The capital of the kingdom of Israel, where Ahab built his palace of ivory; where, in the days of Jeroboam, his citizens sat in the luxury, saying to their masters "come and let us be destroyed by the Assyrians, but rebuild and rest more than its original splendour by Herod, now the state foretold by the prophet Amos. The tents and their posterity are taken away. The ancient Samaritans are all gone, and around the ruins of their palaces and temples are gathered the miserable huts of the Arab Fellahs. Climbing up the precipitous ascent of the hill, we came to the ruins of a church, or tower, or something else, built by our old friend the Lady Helena, and seen to great advantage from the valley below. The Lady Helena, however, could not put together all this stone and mortar for a picturesque ruin. It was erected over, and in honour of, the prison where John the Baptist was beheaded, and his grave. I saw that this spot was guarded with jealous care by the Arabs, and that none but Mussulmans were permitted to see it; but this did not prevent my asking admission; and when the lame sheik said that none could enter without a special order from the pasha, Paul rated him soundly for thinking we would be such fools as to come without one; and, handing him our travelling firman, the sheik kissed the seal, and, utterly unable to determine for himself whether the order was to furnish me with horses or admit me to mosques, said he knew he was bound to obey that seal, and do whatever the bearer told him, and hobbled off to get the key.

Leaving our shoes at the door, in one corner of the enclosure, we entered a small mosque with whitewashed walls, hung with ostrich eggs, clean mats for the praying Mussulmans, a sort of pulpit, and the usual recess of the Khebla. In the centre of the stone floor was a hole

opening to the prison below, and, going outside, and descending a flight of steps, we came to the prison chamber, about eight paces square; the door, now broken and leaning against the wall, like the doors in the sepulchres of the kings at Jerusalem, was a slab cut from the solid stone, and turning on a pivot. On the opposite side were three small holes, opening to another chamber, which was the tomb of the Baptist. I looked in, but all was dark; the Mussulman told me that the body only was there; that the prophet was beheaded at the request of the wife of a king, and I forget where he said the head was. This may be the prison where the great forerunner of the Lord was beheaded, at least no man can say that it is not; and leaving it with the best disposition to believe, I ascended to the ruined palace of Herod, his persecutor and murderer. Thirty or forty columns were still standing, the monuments of the departed greatness of its former tenant. On one side, towards the north-east, where are the ruins of a gate, there is a double range of Ionic columns. I counted more than sixty, and, from the fragments I was constantly meeting, it would seem as if a double colonnade had extended all around.

The palace of Herod stands on a table of land, on the very summit of the hill, overlooking every part of the surrounding country; and such were the exceeding softness and beauty of the scene, even under the wilderness and waste of Arab cultivation, that the city seemed smiling in the midst of her desolation. All around was a beautiful valley, watered by running streams, and covered by a rich carpet of grass, sprinkled with wild flowers of every hue, and beyond, stretched like an open book before me, a boundary of fruitful mountains, the vine and the olive rising in terraces to their very summits. There, day after day, the haughty Herod had sat

and become hardened with these still towering columns, the high captains, and chief estates of Galilee; here the daughter of Herodias, Herod's brother's wife, "danced before him, and the proud king provided with an oath to give her whatever she should ask, even to the half of his kingdom." And while the feast and dance went on, and given to the damsel? And Herod has gone, and Herodias, Herod's brother's wife, has gone, and "the lords, and the high captains, and the chief estates of Galilee" are gone; but the ruins of the palace in which they feasted are still here; the mountains and valleys which beheld their revels are here; and oh! what a comment upon the vanity of worldly greatness, a Fellah was turning his plough around one of the columns. I was sitting on a broken capital under a fig-tree by its side, and I asked him what were the ruins that we saw; and while his oxen were quietly cropping the grass that grew among the fragments of the marble floor, he told me that they were the ruins of the palace of a king—he believed, of the Christians; and while pilgrims from every quarter of the world turn aside from their path to do homage in the prison of his beheaded victim, the Arab who was driving his plough among the columns of his palace, knew not the name of the haughty Herod. Even at this distance of time I look back with a feeling of uncommon interest upon my ramble among those ruins, talking with the Arab ploughman of the king who built it, leaning against a column which perhaps had often supported the haughty Herod, and looking out from this scene of desolation and ruin upon the most beautiful country in the Holy Land.

Descending from the ruined city, we continued our way along the valley. In about an hour we came to the village of Betan, standing on the side of a mountain, overlooking a fertile valley; the women were in the fields, as I had seen them before, picking the tares from the wheat. Riding along through a succession of beautiful valleys, nearly all the way close to the banks of a running stream, and stopping under a fine shade of olives for our noonday meal, we came to Sanpoor,

standing on an insulated hill, commanding an extensive view of the country, and once a strongly fortified place, with a tower and walls, supposed to have been built during the time of the crusades, but now totally demolished and in ruins. About three years ago it was taken, after a six months' siege, by Abdallah Pacha, the great soldier of the sultan; the insurgent inhabitants were put to the sword, and their houses burnt and razed to the ground. A little beyond this, the continued falls of rain have formed a small lake. In an hour and a half we passed the village of Abattia; and late in the afternoon we fell in with a party of Turkish travellers, one of whom was the "biggest in the round" of all the men I had seen in the East. His noble horse seemed to complain of his extraordinary burden. At about six o'clock we had left the beautiful country of Samaria, and were entering the little town of Jenin, or Janceh, standing on the borders of Galilee, at the commencement of the great plain of Jezreel.

Early in the morning, leaving the village of Janceh, we entered almost immediately the great plain of Jezreel. The holy places were now crowding upon me in rapid succession. I was on my way to Nazareth, the city of Joseph and Mary, where Christ spent nearly all his life; but I turned off the direct road to do homage on Mount Tabor, recognised the scene of our Saviour's transfiguration. We passed two miserable villages, looking at a distance like little mounds or excrescences on the surface of the great plain: and, turning to the right, around the mountains of Samaria, saw afar off the lofty summit of Hermon, crowned with a sheik's tomb. On the right, towards the Sea of Galilee, was the village of Bisan, the Bethshan of the Bible, where the Philistines fastened the bodies of Saul and his three sons to the walls after they had fallen in Mount Gilboa.*

Before us, and the most striking and imposing object on the whole of the great plain of Esiracleon, was Mount Tabor. It stands perfectly isolated; rising alone from the plain in a rounded tapering form, like a truncated cone, to the height of 3000 feet, covered with trees, grass, and wild flowers, from the base to its summit, and presenting the combination so rarely found in natural scenery of the bold and the beautiful. At twelve o'clock we were at the miserable village of Deborah, at the foot of the mountain, supposed to be the place where Deborah the prophetess, who then judged Israel, and Barak and "10,000 men after him, descended upon Sisera, and discomfited him and all his chariots, even 900 chariots of iron, and all the people that were with him." The men and boys had all gone out to the daily labour, and we tried to persuade a woman to guide us to the top of the mountain, but she turned away with contempt; and having had some practice in climbing, we moved around its sides until we found a regular path, and ascended nearly to the top without dismounting. The path wound around the mountain, and gave us a view from all its different sides, every step presenting something new, and more and more beautiful, until all was completely forgotten and lost in the exceeding loveliness of the view from the summit. Stripped of every association, and considered merely as an elevation commanding a view of unknown valleys and mountains, I never saw a mountain which, for beauty of scene, better repaid the toil of ascending it; and I need not say what an interest was given to every feature when we saw in the valley beneath the large plain of Jezreel, the great battle-ground of nations; on the south the supposed range of Hermon, with whose dews the psalmist compares the "peasentness of brethren dwelling together in unity;" beyond, the ruined village of Endor, where dwelt the witch who raised up the prophet Samuel; and near it the little city of Nain, where our Saviour raised from the dead the widow's son; on the east, the mountain of Gilboa, "where Saul, and his armour-bearer, and his three sons, fell upon their swords, to save themselves

from falling into the hands of the Philistines; beyond, the Sea of Galilee, or Lake of Genesareth, the theatre of our Saviour's miracles, where in the fourth watch of the night he appeared to his terrified disciples, walking on the face of the waters; and to the north, on a lofty eminence, high above the top of Tabor, the city of Saphet, supposed to be the ancient Bethulia, alluded to in the words "a city that is set on a hill cannot be hid."

But if the tradition be true, we need not go beyond the mountain itself, for it was on this high mountain that "Jesus Christ took Peter, and James, and John his brother, apart," and gave them a glimpse of his glory before his death, when "his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light; and a voice out of the cloud was heard, saying, 'This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased.'" I stood on the very spot where this holy scene was enacted. Within the walls of an old fortress is a ruined grotto, with three altars built as Peter had proposed, one for Christ, one for Moses, and one for Elias; where, once a-year, the monks of the convent, and all the Christians of Nazareth, ascending in solemn procession, offer adoration and praise to the Saviour of the world. The top of the mountain is an oval, about half a mile long, and encompassed by a wall built by Josephus when he was governor of Galilee; within this enclosure is a table of luxuriant grass and wild flowers, sending forth such an odour, and looking so clean and refreshing, that, when my horse lay down and rolled in it, I felt the spirit of boyhood coming over me again, and was strongly tempted to follow his example.

We descended and hurried on towards Nazareth. Winding along the valley, an accidental turn brought the mountain again full before me, alone, and strongly defined against the sky; the figure of a man could have been seen standing on the top as on a pedestal. I know not whether, in the splendid court of Raphael that now adorns the Vatican, he had any idea of this particular mountain; but I remember that, looking back upon it at this time, it struck me that it was exactly the scene which the daring genius of the painter might have selected for the transfiguration of the Son of God.

In two hours and a half we were in the vale of Nazareth, and approaching the city of Nazareth. The valley is fertile, surrounded by hills, and the city stands at the extreme end on the side of an elevation. The houses are white, and in the place of a priest's residence, as of his birth, the mosque with its minaret is the most conspicuous object, and next to that the convent. A little on this side is a Greek church, built, as the Greeks say, over the spot where the angel Gabriel appeared to the Virgin Mary, and announced to her the birth of her son, "of whose kingdom there should be no end." A little farther is a fountain, where the Virgin is said to have been in the habit of going for water; a procession of women, with large jars on their heads, was coming out from the city, and one of them, a Christian woman, gave us to drink; a comfortable-looking monk, taking his afternoon's promenade in the suburbs, was the first to greet us, and following him, we dismounted at the door of the convent—one of the largest in the Holy Land.

In the city where Joseph and Mary lived, and where our Saviour passed thirty years of his life, there is of course no lack of holy places; and as in the case of the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, as many of these places as possible have, with admirable economy, been brought under one roof. The Church of the Annunciation, within the walls of the convent, next to the Church of the Holy Sepulchre, is the finest in the Holy Land. There are two organs, and the walls and pillars are hung with red damask. Under the principal altar is the house of Joseph and Mary, consisting of several grottoes, kitchen, parlour, and bedroom. In front of the same altar are two granite columns, designating the spots where the angel and the Virgin stood at the time of the annunciation. One of them is broken off

* Josh. ix. xvii. 11; 1 Samuel, xxxi. 12; Kings, iv. 12.

below, and the upper part hangs from the roof—the monks say by a miracle, but others by mortar; and all over Galilee the miraculous pillar is celebrated for its virtue in curing diseases. Outside the convent are the workshop where Joseph wrought at his carpenter's trade, and the synagogue, where Christ, by reading the book of Isaiah, and applying to himself the words of the prophet, so exasperated the Jews that they rose up and thrust him out of the city. A lamp was burning dimly at the altar, and an Arab Christian prostrating himself before it; and, lastly, I saw the table on which, say the monks, our Lord dined with his disciples both before and after the resurrection—a large flat stone about three feet high, and fifteen paces in circumference. I was about knocking off a piece as a memorial, when the friar checked me, and turning round a nail in one of the many holes in the surface, he worked off a little powder, laid it carefully in a paper, and gave it me.

In my humour there was no great interest in visiting these so-called holy places; but here was the city in which our Saviour had been brought up. I could walk in the same streets where he had walked, and look out upon the same hills and valleys; and a man of warm and impassioned piety might imagine that, in breathing the same atmosphere, he was drawing nearer to the person of the Saviour. I went back to the convent, joined the monks at vespers, listened to the solemn chant and the majestic tones of the organ, and went to bed.

Early in the morning, changing for the first time the horses with which I had come from Jerusalem, I took a Christian of Nazareth for my guide, and started for Tiberias and the Sea of Galilee. In about an hour we came to Cana of Galilee, where our Saviour performed his first miracle by turning water into wine. At the entrance of the village is a fountain, where the women were drawing water in large jars, and near it a Greek church, built over the house of the young man at whose wedding the miracle was performed. Here, too, are large stone jars, being, as the monks say, the identical vessels in which the water was changed. War, bloody and relentless war, has swept over the little Cana of Galilee; fire and sword have laid waste and destroyed the peaceful village in which Christ met the rejoicing wedding-party.

In about two hours, leaving Mount Herman and Mount Tabor on our right, we passed through the field where the disciples plucked the corn on the Sabbath day; about half an hour farther on is the mountain of the Beatitudes, where Christ preached the sermon on the mount. Whether the tradition be true or no, it was just the place where, in those primitive days, or even in the state of society which exists now in the Holy Land, such an event might have taken place; the preacher standing a little distance up the hill, and the multitude sitting down below him. Indeed, so strikingly similar in all its details is the state of society existing here now to that which existed in the time of our Saviour, that I remember, when standing on the ruins of a small church supposed to cover the precise spot where Christ preached that compendium of goodness and wisdom, it struck me that if I or any other man should preach new and strange things, the people would come out from the cities and villages to listen and dispute, as they did under the preaching of our Lord.

Half an hour farther on we came to a large stone, on which, tradition says, our Saviour sat when he blessed the five loaves and two fishes, and the immense multitude ate and were filled. These localities may be, and probably are, mere monkish conjectures; but one thing we know, that our Saviour and his disciples journeyed on this road; that he looked upon the same scenes, and that, in all probability, somewhere within the range of my eye these deeds and miracles were actually performed. At all events, before me, in full view, was the hallowed Lake of Genesareth. Here we cannot be wrong; Christ walked upon that sea, and stilled the raging of its waters, and preached the tidings of salvation to the cities on its banks. But where are those

cities now? Chorazin and Bethsaida, and thou, too, Capernaum, that wast exalted unto heaven! The whole lake is spread out before me, almost from where the Jordan enters unto where that hallowed stream passes on to discharge its waters in the bituminous lake which covers the guilty cities; but there is no city, no habitation of man—all is still and quiet as the grave. But I am wrong; towards the southern extremity of the lake I see the city of Tabberceah, the miserable relic of the ancient Tiberias, another of the proud cities of Herod, standing on the very shore of the sea, a mere speck in the distance, its walls and turrets, its mosques and minarets, telling that it is possessed by the persecutors and oppressors of the followers of Christ.

We descended the mountains, and passing under the walls of the city, continued on about half an hour to a large bath erected by Ibrahim Pacha over the hot springs of Emmaus, celebrated for their medicinal properties; and finding that we could pass the night there, left our baggage and returned to the city. The walls and circular towers, Moorish in their construction, gave it an imposing appearance; outside the gate was the tent of a harlot, that unhappy class of women not being permitted, by the Mussulman law, to enter the walls; within, all was in a most ruined and desolate condition; a great part being entirely vacant, and, where the space was occupied, the houses or huts were built far apart.

Tiberias was the third of the holy cities of the Jews; and here, as at Jerusalem and Hebron, the unhappy remnant of a fallen people still hover around the graves of their fathers, and, though degraded and trampled under foot, are still looking for the restoration of their temporal kingdom. There were two classes of Jews, Eastern and European, the latter being Muscovites, Poles, and Germans; all had come merely to lay their bones in the Holy Land, and were now supported by the charity of their brethren in Europe. There were two synagogues and two schools; an interesting sight to see them, old men tottering on the verge of the grave, and beardless boys studying in the same mysterious book what they believed to be the road to heaven.

I inquired for their rabbi, and they asked me whether I meant the Asiatic or European. I told them the greater of the two, and was conducted by a crowd to his house. I had no diffidence in those days, and invited myself to sit down and talk with him. He was an old man, and told me that they were all poor, living upon precarious charity; and that their brethren in America were so far off that they had forgotten the land of their fathers. Every thing looked so comfortable in his house, that I tried to get an invitation to stay all night; but the old rabbi was too cunning for me. It was a fete day, but my notes are so imperfect that I cannot make out whether it was their Sabbath. All were dressed in their best apparel, the women sitting in the doors or on the terraces, their heads adorned with large gold and silver ornaments, and their eyes sparkling like diamonds.

Returning, I noticed more particularly the ruins beyond the southern wall. They extend for more than a mile, and there is no doubt that this ground was covered by the ancient city. The plain runs back about half a mile to the foot of the mountain, and in the sides of the mountain are long ranges of tombs. It was from one of these tombs, said our guide, that the man possessed of devils rushed forth when our Saviour rebuked the unclean spirits, and made them enter into a herd of swine, which ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and were drowned.

Passing the bath, I walked on to a point where I could see the extreme end of the lake, forming near the other side into the Jordan. It was a beautiful evening, still and quiet as the most troubled spirit could wish. The sides of the mountains were green and verdant, but there were no trees, and no rustling of the wind among the branches; not a boat was upon the lake; and, except the city of Tiberias, which, enclosed within its walls, gave no signs of life, I was

even an Arab's hut, is seen upon its banks, not a solitary boat upon its waters. A single pelican was floating at my feet, and, like myself, he was alone. He was so near me that I could have hit him with a stone; he was the only thing I saw that had life, and he seemed looking at me with wonder, and asking me why I still lingered in the desolate city. I was looking upon the theatre of mighty miracles; it was here that, when a great tempest arose, and the ship was covered with waves, and his disciples cried out, "Save us, or we perish," Christ rose from his sleep, and rebuked the wind and the sea, "and there was a great calm;" and here too it was that in the fourth watch of the night he appeared to his terrified disciples, walking on the face of the sea, and crying out to them, "It is I, be not afraid;" and again the wind ceased, and there was a calm.

But this scene was not always so desolate. The shores of this lake were once covered with cities, in which Christ preached on the Sabbath day, healed the sick, gave sight to the blind, cleansed the lepers, cast out devils, and raised the dead. Bethsaida and Chorazin I had passed, and I was standing among the ruins of Capernaum, the city that was exalted to heaven in our Saviour's love; where Christ first raised his warning voice, saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand;" and I could feel the fulfilment of his prophetic words, "Wo unto thee, Chorazin, wo unto thee, Bethsaida; it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to hell, and it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee." I am aware that lately there has been some dispute whether this be the site of Capernaum, but I had now passed along the whole western shore of the lake, and, if this be not Capernaum, my horse's hoofs must have trampled upon the city of our Saviour's love without my knowing where that city stood.

I thought to enhance the interest of this day's journey by making my noonday meal from the fish of the Lake of Genesareth; obliged to go back by the mills, and having on my way up seen a net drying on the shore, I had roused the sleeping Arabs, and they had promised to throw it for me; but when I returned, I found that like Simon Peter and the sons of Zebedee, "they had toiled all day, and had caught no fish."

Here we turned away from the consecrated lake, and fixed our eyes on the end of my day's journey, the towering city of Zaffad. But the interest of the day was not yet over. Ascending for about an hour from the shore of the lake, we came to the great caravan road from Jerusalem to Damascus, and a little off from this to a large khan; and within this khan, according to tradition, is the pit into which Joseph was thrown by his brethren before they sold him to the Ishmaelites. The khan, like all other caravanserais, is a large stone building, enclosing a hollow square, with small chambers around it for the accommodation of caravan travellers. The pit is a solid piece of mason-work, like a well; and, when I saw it, was nearly full of water. Both Mussulmans and Christians reverence this as a holy place; near it, a Mussulman mosque and a Christian chapel; and few travellers pass this way, whether Mussulmans or Christians, without prostrating themselves before the altar of Joseph the Just.

In all probability, the legend establishing this locality has no better foundation than most of the others in the Holy Land; but I cannot help remarking that I do not attach the importance assigned by others to the circumstance of its distance from Hebron, at that time Jacob's dwelling-place. We know that Joseph's brethren were feeding their father's flock at Shechem; and when Joseph came thither "wandering in the field, he inquired after his brethren, and a man told him, they are departed hence, for I heard them say, let us go to Dothan;" and Joseph went after his brethren, and found them in Dothan.²⁷ If there be any good reason for calling this place Dothan, to me it does not seem at all strange, that, in the pastoral state of society which existed then,

and still exists unchanged, Jacob's sons had driven their flocks to a pasture-ground two days farther on; and affording a striking illustration of the scene supposed to have taken place here, while we were loitering around the khan, a caravan of merchants from Damascus came up, on their way to Egypt; and the buying or selling of slaves, white or black, being still a part of the trade between these places, I have no doubt that, if I had offered Paul for sale, they would have bought him and carried him to Egypt, where, perhaps, he might have risen to be a grand vizier. From hence we continued mounting again, the city of Zaffad seeming to detach itself more and more, and to rise higher and higher above surrounding objects, and the atmosphere growing perceptibly colder; and at four o'clock we had reached the city.

Zaffad is the last of the four holy cities of the Jews. My intercourse with the Jews in the Holy Land had been so interesting, that I determined to prolong it to the last, and having heard a favourable report of a Jew, the English consular agent at Zaffad, I rode directly to his house. He was a very poor and a very amiable man. I went with him to the governor, showed my firman, and demanded permission to see the grotto of Jacob. The governor was sick, and told me that God had sent me there expressly to cure him. Since my successful experiment upon the governor of Hebron, I began to think doctoring governors was my forte, and, after feeling his pulse, and making him stick out his tongue, upon the principle that a governor was a governor, and what was good for one was good for another, I gave him an emetic which almost turned him inside out, and completely cured him. One thing I cannot help observing, not with a view of impeaching any thing that is written, but as illustrating the state of society in the East, that if a skillful physician, by the application of his medical science, should raise an Arab from what, without such application, would be his bed of death, the ignorant people would be very likely to believe it a miracle, and to follow him with that degree of faith which would give credit to the of touching the "hem of his garment."

From the palace of the governor we ascended to the ruined fortress crowning the very top of the hill, and from one of the windows of the tower I looked down upon an extensive prospect of hills and valleys; the Lake of Genesareth seemed almost at my feet; the stately and majestic Tabor was far below me, and beyond was the great plain of Jezreel, stretching off to the mountains of Carmel and the shores of the Mediterranean. In all my wanderings in the most remote places, I had been constantly seeing what I may call the handwriting of Napoleon. In Italy, Poland, Germany, and the burnt and rebuilt capital of the czars, at the pyramids and cataracts of the Nile, and now, on this almost inaccessible height, the turrets of the fortress were battered by the French cannon.

We descended again to the Jews' quarter. Their houses were on the side of the hill, overlooking a beautiful valley. It was the last day of eating unleavened bread, and the whole Jewish population, in their best attire, were sitting on the terraces and on the tops of their houses, in gay, striking, and beautiful costumes, the women with their gold and silver ornaments on their heads and around their necks, enjoying the balmy mildness of a Syrian sunset; and when the shades of evening had driven them to their houses, I heard all around me, and for the last time in the Holy Land, rising in loud and solemn chants, the Songs of Solomon and the Psalm of David.

There are about 200 families of Israelites in Zaffad; they come there only to lay their bones in the land of their fathers; have no occupation or means of livelihood; spend all their time in reading the Bible and Talmud, and live upon the charity of their European brethren. The agent told me that during the late revolution they had been stripped of every thing; that, as at Hebron, they had suffered robbery, murder, and rapine; that the governor had allowed them to take

refuge in the fortress, where they remained, 3000 in number, without a mat to lie on or bread to put in their mouths; many of them had died of starvation, and the living remained beside the bodies of the dead till the whirlwind passed by: that, thinking himself save under his foreign protection, he had remained below, but that his hat with the consular cockade had been torn off and trampled under foot; and his wife, a lovely young woman sitting by our side, then not more than nineteen, had been thrown down, whipped, and he did not tell me so, but I inferred that far worse had befallen her; and the brutal Turk who committed the outrage still lived, and he met him in the streets every day.

During the evening a Christian from Nazareth came in, and it struck me as an interesting circumstance that I was introduced to him as a brother Nazarene.

A Jew welcomed me to the first of the holy cities, and a Jew accompanied me on my exit from the last. Both received me into their houses, and gave me the best that they had, and both refused to accept a price for their hospitality. I had a hard day's journey before me. My Jewish friend had told me that it would be necessary to make a very early start to arrive at Acre that night, but it so happened that I set off late. We had a ravine to cross, the worst I had met in Syria. Paul and I were some distance ahead, when we heard the shouting of our muletter; our baggage mule had fallen, and caught on the brink of a precipice, where he was afraid to move until we came to his help; and this and the exceeding roughness of the road detained us so much, that when we reached the other side of the ravine, my guide told me that it would be utterly impossible to reach Acre that day. I would have returned, but I did not want to throw myself again upon the hospitality of my Jew friend. I was in a bad condition for roughing it; but at the risk of being obliged to sleep in some miserable Arab hut, or perhaps under the walls of Acre, I pushed on.

For two or three hours there was no improvement in the road; we were obliged to dismount several times, and could not do more than pick our way on a walk. We then came to the village of Rimah, situated in a fine olive-grove. The villagers told us it would be impossible to reach Acre before night, but a bribe to my guide induced him to lead off on a brisk trot. Of every man we met we asked the distance; at length we came to one who told us he thought we might do it. I could almost always tell beforehand the answer we should get; when we came to a lazy fellow, sprawling on the ground and basking in the sun, he invariably said no; and when we met an Arab, riding nimbly on his mule, or striding over the ground as if he had something to do and meant to do it, his answer was always yes; and so we were alternately cheered and discouraged. We watered our horses at the stream without dismounting. About mid-day Paul handed me a boiled fowl, holding on by one leg while I pulled at the other; the fowl came apart, and so we dined on horseback without stopping. I am not sure, but I do not think there was any thing particularly interesting on the road; once, riding over a fine, well-cultivated valley, we saw at a distance on the right two handsome villages; and standing alone, something which appeared to be a large white mosque or sheik's tomb.

At about four o'clock we came in sight of the Mediterranean, the great plain of Acre, the low circular shore extending to Caïpha and Mount Carmel; and before us, at a great distance, on an extreme point in the sea, the ancient Ptolemais, the St Jean d'Acre of Richard and the crusaders. Still we were not safe. The sun was settling away towards my distant home, when we reached the shore of the sea. I shall never forget my sensations at the moment when I gained that shore; after the Red Sea and the Dead Sea, and the Sea of Galilee, it seemed an old acquaintance, and I spurred my horse into the waters to greet it. But I had no time to dally, for as yet I was not seen. I joined the last of the loungers outside the walls; the heavy gates were swung to as I entered; and when I

pushed my jaded horse over the threshold of the gate, I felt as happy as the gallant leader of the crusaders when he planted the banner of England upon the walls of Acre. Soon in the peaceful cell of the convent, I forgot my toil and anxiety, as well as Richard and the holy wars. The night before I had slept by the quiet waters of Galilee, and now the last sounds that I heard were the rolling waves of the Mediterranean.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

A Ride on Donkeyback.—Caïpha.—Adventure with a Consul.—Mount Carmel.—The Plain of Jezreel.—Convent of Mount Carmel.—Kindness of the Monks.—Curiosity Gratified.

I ROSE next morning much fatigued. My strength had been greatly impaired by sickness and exposure, and I intended to give myself a day of rest, instead of which I committed an act of folly. The night before I left Jerusalem, I had seen, at the house of my friend Mr Whiting, the poetical pilgrimage of M. de Lamartine; I had not time to read it through, and by chance opened it at the chapter containing the particulars of his visit to Caïpha; and the glowing account which he gave of the two sisters of the Sardinian consul had inflamed in some degree my imagination. I had found it one of the most annoying circumstances attendant upon travelling in the East, that, in spite of the poetical accounts of Eastern beauty, though I had seen Georgian and Circassian women, I had never yet met with any thing that to my mind was equal to the beauty of the European and American women. I had passed Caïpha, and it was a direct retrograde movement to the city, but early in the morning, as I was walking in the ramparts of Acre, I looked back towards the little city, and the beautiful creations of the poet rose before me in most ravishing colours. I was very low. There was no physician in Acre; and, perhaps, to bask an hour in the sunshine of beauty might revive and restore me. Paul, too, was under the weather; ever since his fall from the dromedary he had wanted bleeding, and it might do him good. In short, I had been rambling for months among ruins and old cities, working as hard as if I were to be paid for it by the day; I had had enough of these things, and one glimpse of a beautiful girl was worth more to me at that moment than all the ruins of the Holy Land; but I would not admit to myself, much less to Paul, that I was making this retrograde movement merely to see a couple of pretty faces, and I ordered horses for Caïpha and Mount Carmel. Horses, however, were not to be had, and we were obliged to take donkeys, which I considered unlucky. For the first time since I left Jerusalem, I brushed my tarboosh, my blue jacket, and grey pantaloons.

I started on donkeyback. Caïpha is distant a ride of about three hours and a half from Acre, all the way along the shore of the sea. About half an hour from Acre, we crossed the river Belus in a boat. It was on the banks of this stream that Elijah killed the 400 prophets of Baal, gathered unto Mount Carmel by the orders of Ahab. A dead level plain, fertile but uncultivated, stretched back for many miles into the interior, and in the front to the foot of Mount Carmel. We rode close along the shore, where the sand was every moment washed and hardened by the waves. The sea was calm, but the wrecks on the shore, of which we counted seventeen on our way to Caïpha, told us that the elements of storm and tempest might lurk under a fair and beautiful face; all which was apropos to my intended visit. On the way I thought it necessary to let Paul into part of my plans, and told him that I wanted to stop at the house of the Sardinian consul. Paul asked me whether I had any letter to him; I told him no; and by degrees disclosed to him the reason of my wanting to go there; and he surprised me by telling me that he knew the young ladies very well; and when I asked him how and when, he told me that he had assisted them in their cooking when he stopped there three years before with Mr Wellesley.

This was rather a damper; but I reflected that Haidee, on her beautiful little island, prepared with her own hands the food for the shipwrecked, and revived at the thought.

We were now approaching Caïpha. The city was walled all around; without the walls was a Mohammedan burying-ground; and the gate, like the shields of Homer's heroes, was covered with a tough bull's hide. I rode directly to the consul's house; it was a miserable-looking place, and on the platform directly before the door stood a most unpoetical heap of dirt and rubbish; but I didn't mind that; the door was open, and I went in. The table was set for dinner, and I could not help remarking a few rather questionable spots on the tablecloth; but I didn't mind that; knives, forks, and plates were a spectacle to which I had long been unaccustomed, and my heart warmed even to the empty platters. I thought I had come at the witching moment, and I felt as sure of my dinner as if I had it already under my jacket. The consul was sitting on a settee, and I began the acquaintance by asking him if there was an American consul there. He told me no; at which I was very much surprised, as we had one at Jaffa, not so much of a place as Caïpha; and I invited myself to a seat beside the consul, and made myself agreeable. I soon found, however, that I was not so pleasant a fellow as I thought. The consul answered my questions, but his manner might be interpreted, "Don't you see you are keeping the dinner waiting?" I didn't mind that, however, but talked about the necessity of my government having a consul there to entertain American travellers, and suggested that at Jaffa the government had given the appointment to the then acting Sardinian consul; still my friend was impenetrable. I tried him upon several other topics, but with no great success. During this time the mother entered, evidently in dishabille, and occasionally I got a glimpse of a pair of fine black eyes peeping at me through the door. At last, when I found that he was bent on not asking me to dine, I rose suddenly, made a hundred apologies for my haste, shook him cordially by the hand, and, with most consummate impudence, told him that I would call again on my return from Mount Carmel. Paul rather crowed over me, for he had met and spoken to the young ladies, and in the same place where he had seen them before.

In about an hour we had reached the top of Mount Carmel; this celebrated mountain is the only great promontory upon the low coast of Palestine, and it is, beyond all comparison, the finest mountain in the Holy Land. The traveller at this day may realise fully the poetical description by the inspired writers, of the "excellency" of Mount Carmel. The pine, oak, olive, and laurel, grew above a beautiful carpet of grass and wild flowers, and from amid this luxuriance I looked out upon the plains of Acre, the little city stretching out on a low point, like a mere speck in the water, and beyond, the mountains of Lebanon; on the left, along the shore of the Mediterranean to the ruins of Cesarea, the once proud city of Herod and of Cornelius the centurion, where Paul made Felix tremble; in front, the dark blue sea, on whose bosom two transports, with Egyptian soldiers on board, were at that time stretching under easy sail from Acre to Alexandria; and behind, the great plain of Jezreel.

One word with regard to this great plain. I had travelled around, and about, and across it; had looked at it from hills and mountains, and I was now on the point of leaving it for ever. This plain, computed to be about fifteen miles square, is the "mighty plain," as it is called, of the ancients, and celebrated for more than 3000 years as the "great battle-ground of nations." From here Elijah girded up his loins, and ran before Ahab to the entrance of Jezreel; it was on this plain that Barak went down, and 10,000 men after him, and discomfited Sisera and all his chariots; it was here that Josiah, king of Judah, disguised himself, that he might fight with Necho, king of Egypt, and fell by the arrows of the Egyptian archers. The Assyrian and the Per-

sian, Jews and Gentiles, crusaders and Saracens, Egyptians and Turks, Arabs and Frenchmen, warriors of every nation, have poured out their blood on the plains of Esdraelon; and here, said a gentleman whom I met in Palestine skilled in the reading and interpretation of the prophecies, will be fought the great final battle with antichrist, when circumstances which are now supposed to be rapidly developing themselves shall bring together a mighty army of the followers of Christ, under the banner of the cross, to do battle in his name, and sweep from the earth his contemners and opposers.

The convent on Mount Carmel is worthy of the place where it stands, and, like the mountain itself, is the best in the Holy Land. The church, which is unfinished, is intended to be a very fine building, and the interior of the convent is really beautiful. I could hardly believe my own eyes when I saw, in rooms provided for travellers, French bedsteads with curtains, and French dressing-tables. The rules of their order forbid the Carmelite friars to eat meat; but they set me down to such a dinner, to say nothing of the wines of Mount Lebanon, that, so far as regarded the eating and drinking merely, I was glad I had not invited myself to dine with my friend the consul at Caïpha. From my seat at the table I looked out upon the distant sea; the monks were all gathered around me, kind, good men, happy to receive and talk with a stranger; and it is no extravagance to say, that, after having been buffeted about for months, I felt at the moment that I could be almost willing to remain with them for ever. I ought not to tell it, but the fact is, the extraordinary comfort of the convent, and the extraordinary beauty of the scene, drove away all the associations connected with this gathering-place of the prophets. I wanted nothing but what I saw before me. The monks told me that there was fine shooting on the mountain. I could throw myself into the clearest of waters, and bathe, or, with my little boat, could glide over to Caïpha or Acre. For an invalid in search of retirement, with every beauty that climate and natural scenery can offer, I know no place superior to the convent at Mount Carmel. It is one of the few places I ever saw where a man could be cheerful and happy in perfect seclusion. Books, the mountain, the sky, and the sea, would be companions enough. It would be the sweetest spot on earth for a very young couple to test the strength of their poetic dreams; and knocked about and buffeted as I had been, when the superior told me that, in spite of the inscription over the doors of their convents, "*Clausura per le donna*," I might build a house on the spot where I stood, and bring whom I pleased there, it instantly brought to my mind the beautiful birds of paradise of De Lamartine, and my engagements with my friend the consul at Caïpha. The whole of the fraternity accompanied me down the side of the mountain; and I beg to except them all, including the cook, from any thing I may have said bearing harshly upon the monastic character. The recollection of my engagement, however, began to hurry me. The friars were puffy and shortwinded; one by one they bade me good bye; and the cook, a most deserving brother, and unnaturally lean for his profession and position in the convent, was the only one who held out to the foot of the mountain. I crossed his hand with a piece of money; Paul kissed it; and, after we had started, turned his head and cried out to the holy cook, "*Orate pro mihi*!"—"Pray for me."

At Caïpha we found the consul in the street. I do not know whether he was expecting us or not; but, whether or no, I considered it my duty to apologise for having staid so long on the mountain, and accompanied him to his house. Unluckily, it was so late, that Paul said if we stopped we should be shut out from Acre; and when I looked at the sun and the distant city, I had great misgivings, but it was only for a moment. The sisters were now dressed up, and standing in a row as I passed. Their dresses were Asiatic, consisting, from the waist downward, of a variety of wrappers, the outermost of which was silk, hiding the most beautiful figures under a mere bundle of habits. I went into the

room, and took a glass of lemonade with my watch in my hand. I would not speak of her in the morning, but now, in full dress, the interesting mother, so glowingly described by M. de Lamartine, appeared in a costume a great deal beyond what is usually called low in the neck. I do not mention it as a reproach to her, for she was an Arab woman, and it was the custom of her country; and as to the young ladies—M. de Lamartine had never been in America.

I had intended this for a day of rest; but I had, if possible, a harder task than on the preceding day to reach the city before the gates were closed. We pushed our donkeys till they broke down, and then got off and whipped them on before us. It was like the Irishman working his passage by hauling the tow-line of the canal boat; if it was not for the name of the thing, we might as well have walked; and when I lay down that night in my cell in the convent, I prayed that age might temper enthusiasm; that even the imagination of M. de Lamartine might grow cool; and that old men would pay respect to their lawful wives, and not go in ecstasies about young girls.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

St Jean d'Acre.—Extortions of the Pacha.—Tyre.—Questionable Company.—Lady Esther Stanhope.—Departure from the Holy Land.—Conclusion.

I SHALL say but little of Acre. The age of chivalry is gone for ever, but there is a green spot in every man's memory, a feeble but undying spark of romance in every heart; and that man's feelings are not to be envied who could walk on the ramparts of St Jean d'Acre without calling up Richard and Saladin, the crusaders and the Saracens; and when the interval of centuries is forgotten, and the imagination is revelling in the scenes of days long passed away, his illusion rises to the vividness of reality as he sees dashing by him a gallant array of Turkish horsemen, with turbans and glittering sabres, as when they sallied forth to drive back from the chivalry of Europe. Near the city is a man is still called Richard Cœur de Lion, and from which Napoleon, pointing to the city, said to Murat, "The fate of the East depends upon yonder petty town." Constantinople and the Indies, a new empire in the East, and a change in the face of the whole world! Eight times he led his veteran soldiers to the assault; eleven times he stood the desperate sallies of the Manchuke sabres. British soldiers under Sir Sydney Smith came to the aid of the besieged; the ruins of a breach of wall served as a breastwork, the muzzles of British and French muskets touched each other, and the spearheads of their standards were locked together. The bravest of his officers were killed, and the bodies of the dead soldiers lying around putrified under the burning sun. The pacha (Djezzar the Butcher) sat on the floor of his palace, surrounded by a heap of gory heads, distributing money to all who brought in the heads of Frenchmen; and he who was destined to overturn every throne in Europe was foiled under the walls of Acre. Three years ago it sustained, under Abdallah Pacha, a long and bloody siege from Ibrahim Pacha, and when it fell into his hands, was given up to pillage and the flames. It has since been rebuilt, fortified with skill and science, and is now almost impregnable; full of the elite of the Egyptian army under Colonel Séve (formerly aid Marshal Ney), now Ismailia Pacha, and constantly stored with five years' provisions. The pacha has lately been building fine hospitals for his soldiers, and an Italian apothecary, licensed to kill scoundrelly women, is let loose upon the sick at the low rate of a hundred dollars per annum.

I was so much pleased with the old Arab who went with me to Mount Carmel, that I hired him and his donkeys again for another journey. He was an old Egyptian from Damietta; four of his children had been taken for soldiers, and he and his old wife and three donkeys followed them about wherever they went. He

had had two wives and sixteen children, and these were all that were left. They were all now stationed at Acre, and when we started, two of them, not on duty at the time, were with the old man at the convent, arranging the baggage while he was taking his coffee and pipe; they accompanied us to the gate, received the old man's benediction, and returned.

A short distance from the gate we met a Turkish grandee, with his officers, slaves, and attendants. He had formerly been a collector of taxes under Abdallah Pacha, and would have done well as an office-holder under a civilised government, for he had abandoned the falling fortunes of his master in time to slip into the same office under his successor.

Looking back, Acre appeared to much better advantage than from the other side, and the mosque and minaret of Abdallah Pacha were particularly conspicuous. We rode for some distance by the side of an aqueduct, which conveys water from the mountains twenty miles distant to the city of Acre. In the plain towards Acre two upright pillars, in which the water rose and descended, formed part of the aqueduct. Our road lay across a plain, and several times we picked up musket balls and fragments of bombs, left there by the French and Napoleon. We passed two palaces of Abdallah Pacha, where the haughty Turk had revelled with his fifty or a hundred wives in all the luxuries of the East. The plain was very extensive, naturally rich, but almost entirely uncultivated. Over an extent of several miles we would perhaps see a single Arab turning up what on the great plain appeared to be merely a few yards; and the oppressive nature of the government is manifest from the fact that, while the whole of this rich plain lies open to any one who chooses to till it, hundreds prefer to drag out a half-starved existence within the walls of Acre; for the fruit of their labour is not their own, and another will reap where they sow; the tax-gatherer comes and looks at the products, and takes not a fifth, or a sixth, nor any other fixed proportion, but as much as the pacha will

the question is not how much he shall take, but how much he shall leave. Taxation, or rather extortion, for long to call it by so mild a name, from cantars of wheat down to single eggs, grinds the Arab to the dust; and yet, said the old man, even this is better than our lot under the sultan; even this we could bear, if the pacha would only spare us our children.

Along this plain we passed a large house, in a garden of oranges, lemons, almonds, and figs, with a row of cypress-trees along the road, formerly the residence of the treasurer of Abdallah Pacha. He himself had been a great tyrant and oppressor, and had fallen into the hands of a greater, and now wanders, with both his eyes out, a beggar in the streets of Cairo.

In about five hours we came upon the sea, on a bold point projecting out like Carmel, the white promontory of Pliny, the ancient Scada of the Syrians. On this point stood an old khan, and we sat down under the shadow of the wall for our noonday lunch. From here, too, the view was exceedingly fine. On the left were Acre and Mount Carmel; on the right the Turkish city of Sour, the ancient Tyre; and, in front, the horizon was darkened by the island of Cyprus. Almost at my feet was the wreck of a schooner, driven on the rocks only the night before, her shivered sails still flying from the masts, and the luckless mariners were alongside in a boat bringing ashore the remnant of the cargo. I asked him, and, like me, looking out upon the movements of the shipwrecked sailors, and apparently bemoaning his own unhappy lot, was a long, awkward, dangling young man, on his way to Acre; sent by the sheik of his village to work in Ibrahim Pacha's factory for three rolls of bread a-day. I asked him why he did not run away, but where could he go? If he went to a strange village, he would immediately be delivered up on the never-failing demand for soldiers. There was no help for him. He did not know that there were other lands, where men were free; and if he had known it, the curse of poverty rested upon him, and bound him where

he was. I had seen misery in Italy, Greece, Turkey, Russia, and gallant, but conquered and enslaved Poland, but I saw it refined and perfected under the iron despotism of Mohammed Ali.

From hence the road continued, for about two hours, over a rocky precipice overhanging the sea, and so narrow that as I sat on my horse, I could look down the steep and naked sides into the clear water below. In one place were the ruins of an old wall, probably, when the city before me was in its glory, defending the precipice. In the narrowest place we met a caravan of camels, and from here descended into a sandy plain, and passing small rivulets and ruins of castles or fortresses, came to a fine stream, on the banks of which were soldiers' barracks; the horses, with their gay accoutrements, were tied near the doors of the tents, constantly saddled and bridled, and strains of military music were swelling from a band among the trees.

Near this are what are called Solomon's cisterns, supposed to have been built by King Solomon in payment for the materials furnished by Hiram, king of Tyre, towards the building of the temple. Circumstances, however, abundantly prove that these cisterns, and the aqueduct connecting them with Tyre, have been built since the time of Alexander the Great.

On the extreme end of a long, low, sandy isthmus, which seems to have crawled out as far as it could, stands the fallen city of Tyre, seeming, at a distance, to rest on the bosom of the sea. A Turkish soldier was stationed at the gate. I entered under an arch, so low that it was necessary to stoop on the back of my horse, and passed through dark and narrow streets, sheltered by mats stretched over the bazaars from the scorching heat of a Syrian sun. A single fishing-boat was lying in the harbour of "the crowning city, whose merchants were princes, whose traffickers were the honourable of the earth!"

I left the gate of Tyre between as honest a man and as great a rogue as the sun ever shone upon. The honest man was my old Arab, whom I kept with me in spite of his bad donkey; and the rogue was a limping, sore-eyed Arab, in an old and ragged suit of regimentals, whom I hired for two days to relieve the old man in whipping the donkeys. He was a dismissed soldier, turned out of Ibrahim Pacha's army as of no use whatever, than which there could not be a stronger certificate of worthlessness. He told me, however, that he had once been a man of property, and, like honest Dogberry, had had his losses; he had been worth sixty piasters (nearly three dollars), with which he had come to live in the city; and been induced to embark in enterprises that had turned out unfortunately, and he had lost his all.

On my arrival at Sidon I drove immediately to the Arab consular agent, to consult him about paying a visit to Lady Esther Stanhope. He told me that I must send a note to her ladyship, requesting permission to present myself, and wait her pleasure for an answer; that sometimes she was rather capricious, and that the English consul from Beyroot had been obliged to wait two days. The state of my health would not permit my waiting any where upon an uncertainty. I was but one day from Beyroot, where I looked for rest and medical attendance; but I did not like to go past, and I made my application perhaps with more regard to my own convenience and feelings than the respect due

to those of the lady. My baggage, with my writing materials, had not yet arrived. I had no time to lose; the Arab agent gave me the best he had; and writing a note about as "big as a book" on a piece of coarse Arab paper with a reed pen, and sealing it with a huge Arab wafer, I gave it to a messenger, and, tumbling him out of the house, told him he must bring me an answer before daylight the next morning. He probably reached Lady Stanhope's residence about nine or ten o'clock in the evening; and I have no doubt he tumbled in, just as he had been tumbled out at Sidon, and, demanding an immediate answer, he got one forthwith, "Her ladyship's compliments," &c.; in short, somewhat like that which a city lady gives from the head of the stairs, "I'm not at home." I have since read M. de Lamartine's account of his visit to her ladyship, by which it appears that her ladyship had regard to the phrasology of a note. Mine, as near as I can recollect it, was as follows:—"Mr S., a young American, on the point of leaving the Holy Land, would regret exceedingly being obliged to do so without first having paid his respects to the Lady Esther Stanhope. If the Lady Esther Stanhope will allow him that honour, Mr S. will present himself *to-morrow*, at any hour her ladyship will name." If the reader will compare this note with the letter of M. de Lamartine, he will almost wonder that my poor messenger, demanding, too, an immediate answer, was not kicked out of doors. My horses were at the door, either for Beyroot or her ladyship's residence; and when obliged to turn away from the latter, I comforted myself with a good gallop to the former. Her ladyship was exceedingly lucky, by the way, in not having received me; for that night I broke down at Beyroot; my travels in the East were abruptly terminated; and after lying ten days under the attendance of an old Italian quack, with a blue frock coat and great frog buttons, who frightened me to death every time he approached my bedside, I got on board the first vessel bound for sea, and sailed for Alexandria. At Beyroot I received a letter from the friend who had taken me on board his boat at Thebes, advising me of the sickness of his lady, and that he had prevailed upon the English doctor at Beyroot to accompany him to Damascus and Baalbe.

I heard of the death of Mr Lowell, a gentleman from Boston, who had preceded me on many parts of my tour in the East; and who had every where left behind him such a name that it was a pleasure for an American to follow in his steps; and here, too, I heard of the great fire, which, by the time it reached this distant land, had laid the

of my native city in ruins. In the midst of my troubles, however, I had the things that gave me pleasure. I met her friends with whom I

I mounted the catara: the Nile, one of whom I hope one day to see in my own country; I received from the Austrian consul an assurance that the passport of my Jew friend: should be made out, and delivered forthwith to his friend there. For ten days I lay on the deck of a little Austrian schooner, watching the movements of a pair of turtle doves; and on the morning of the eleventh I was again off the coast of Egypt, and entering the harbour of Alexandria. Here I introduced myself to the reader; and here, if he have not fallen from me by the way, I take my leave of him, with thanks for his patient courtesy.

NOTE.

By the arrival in America of my friend Mr Gliddon of Cairo, of whom mention has been several times made in the foregoing pages, the author has received the following notice of the Egyptian Society. The objects of the society are sufficiently explained in the notice; and they are such as cannot fail to recommend themselves to all who feel any interest in Egypt, and the East generally. The author is personally acquainted with many of the members, particularly with Mr Walne, Hon. Sec., who, besides being a gentleman of high literary and professional attainments, has devoted much attention, and with great success, to the study of hieroglyphics and Egyptian antiquities; and the author feels great satisfaction in being permitted to say that any individual, or literary or scientific institution, may, without further introduction, correspond with Dr Walne in relation to any of the objects set forth in the notice.

NOTICE OF THE EGYPTIAN SOCIETY.

The impulse of modern discovery has excited a general and increasing interest respecting the antiquities of Egypt, while the unusual facilities of access both from India and Europe, coupled with the internal tranquillity of the country, are more than ever calculated to induce travellers to visit the Valley of the Nile, and examine personally the extraordinary monuments with which its banks abound.

By the munificence of his highness the viceroy, Cairo will, it is presumed, possess, at no distant period, a museum that, in Egyptian antiquities, may be expected to rival all existing collections. But the stranger visiting the capital, removed from those conveniences to which he has been accustomed in European cities, has particularly to regret the absence of a public library of reference, so essential to his researches.

The want of an institution that should at once offer this desirable resource, serve as a point of union for social intercourse, and be a medium for obtaining additional information relative to Egypt and the adjacent countries, has long been felt; and it is a desire of supplying this deficiency that has suggested the formation of the Egyptian Society.

The objections of the association are:—

First, To form a rendezvous for travellers, with the view of associating literary and scientific men who may from time to time visit Egypt.

Second, To collect and record information relative to Egypt, and to those parts of Africa and Asia which are connected with or tributary to this country.

Third, To facilitate research, by enabling travellers to avail themselves of such information as may be in the power of the society to obtain, and by offering them the advantage of a library of reference containing the most valuable works on the East. The Egyptian Society is open to gentlemen of all nations, and is composed of Members, Honorary Members, and associate Members.

Members.—The Members (the number of whom is at present limited to twenty) are the trustees of the institution, direct the disposal of the funds, and have the general government of the society. To be eligible as a Member, a gentleman must have been at least one year an Associate Member, and be recommended in writing by three Members. The election must take place at a general meeting, and be by ballot, one black ball to exclude.

Members pay an annual subscription of one guinea; but those elected after the 1st of March, 1837, will pay in addition an admission fee of one guinea.

The contribution of ten guineas at once constitutes a Life Member.

Honorary Members.—Honorary Members will be elected only

from literary and scientific men, who have particularly distinguished themselves in relation to Egypt, or from gentlemen who have especially promoted the objects and interests of the society.

Associate Members.—With the exception of taking a part in the government of the society, Associate Members enjoy the same privileges as the Members.

To be eligible as an Associate Member, a gentleman, if not usually resident in, must at least have visited Egypt, and have passed two months either in this country, or in those parts of Africa and Asia which are immediately connected with or tributary to it. It is necessary that he be recommended in writing by two Members: the election must take place at a general meeting, and be by ballot, two black balls to exclude. Associate Members pay an annual subscription of one guinea. The contribution of five guineas at once constitutes a Life Associate Member.

Honorary Officers.—The President, Treasurer, Secretary, and council of management, are annually elected from the Members.

The funds arising from subscriptions and donations will be applied, as far as possible, to the formation of a library, to which the Members and Associate Members can always have free access, and to which travellers can be introduced, till such time as they become eligible to join the society. Rooms have been opened, the association possesses the nucleus of a library, and the members have every reason to hope that, by their own exertions, and with the assistance of those who take an interest in the institution, they will soon succeed in forming a collection that, while it includes many interesting volumes on the East in general, may contain the works of all the ancient and modern authors who have made Egypt the subject of their observations.

ALFRED T. WALNE, Hon. Sec.

Cairo, July 9, 1836.

Since the above was in type, the author has been favoured with a communication from the Egyptian Society, by which it appears that the objects of the society have been duly appreciated, and that it is now established upon a foundation calculated to render it eminently useful to those who may visit Egypt for the purpose of antiquarian, literary, or scientific research; but the particular favour which the author has to acknowledge now, is the interesting information that Colonel Vyse (before referred to as engaged in exploring the pyramids) has discovered no less than three new chambers over the king's chamber in the great pyramid, which he calls by the names of Wellington, Nelson, and Lady . . . The last is remarkable as containing the following cartouche.



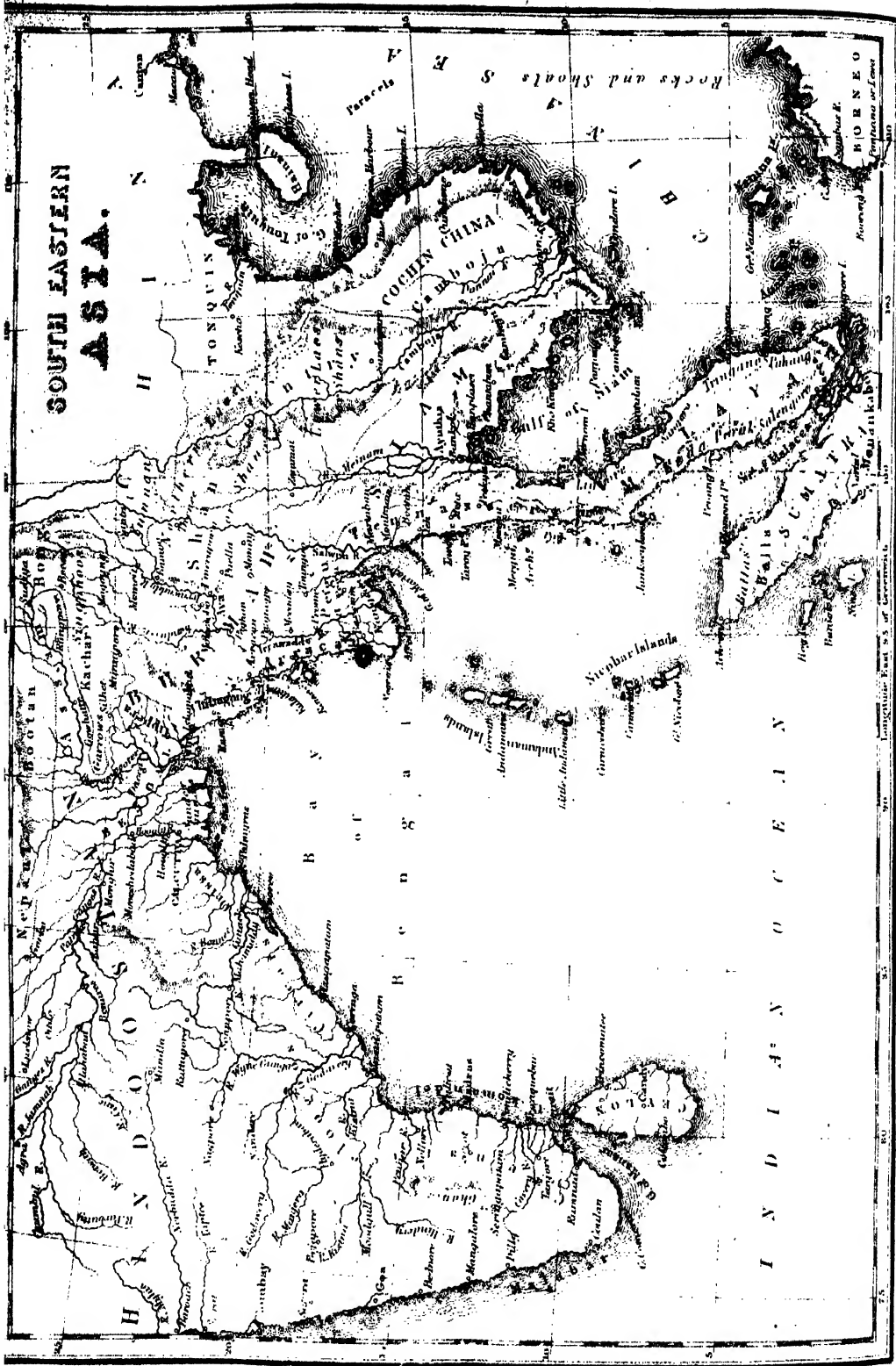
Rosellini, a learned Italian, now editing a second edition of Champollion's works, who found this cartouche in one of the tombs, reads it "Seamphis." This establishes the fact that the pyramids were not built anterior to the use of hieroglyphics, and also that Saphisor Saphis, was the builder, as stated by Manetho, according to Mr Wilkinson's table, about 2120 years B. C. The particulars of this interesting discovery, and the details connected with the present exploring of the pyramids, will probably soon be given to the public through Mr Wilkinson.

END OF INCIDENTS OF TRAVEL IN EGYPT &c.

EDINBURGH:

Printed by W. & R. CHAMBERS, 13, Waterloo Place.

**SOUTH EASTERN
ASIA.**



I N D I A N O C E A N

Scale of Miles 0 100 200 300 400 500 600 700 800 900 1000

T R A V E L S

B U R M A N E M P I R E

BY HOWARD MALCOM.

ILLUSTRATED WITH A MAP OF SOUTH-EASTERN ASIA,
AND WOOD ENGRAVINGS.

EDINBURGH:

PUBLISHED BY WILLIAM AND ROBERT CHAMBERS.

1340.

EDINBURGH :
PRINTED BY W. AND R. CHAMBERS,
• 19, WATKINSON PLACE.

NOTICE BY THE PUBLISHERS OF THE PRESENT EDITION.

THE present work, *Travels in BURMAH, or Burman Empire*, forms the first section of the author's "Travels in South-Eastern Asia," published in 1839, in Boston, United States, and is followed by the second, which comprehends *HINDUSTAN, MALAYA, SIAM, and CHINA*. As the two are quite distinct, it has been considered advisable to separate them, for the accommodation of the class of purchasers for whom the present edition is designed.

The author, who was engaged in the philanthropic object of exploring new fields of missionary enterprise, prefixes the following preface (dated "Boston, February 1839,") to the original edition:—

"The only aim of the following pages is utility. Had a place been sought among admired travellers, I should have given more descriptions, incidents, and delineations of private character, and fewer facts, opinions, and reflections; which would at once have saved labour, and rendered me less vulnerable.

Honest intentions, diligent inquiries, and fortunate opportunities, in the latter fit

America, where in every place we met persons of veracity, and free to impart information. In the East, the case is much worse. The foreigner, dreaded for his power, and abhorred for his religion, excites both civil and religious jealousy. His manners often displease, by the omission of forms of which he may be ignorant, or to which he cannot succumb. He is met with taciturnity, or wilful misrepresentation; and if he escape these, he will generally encounter ignorance. If he be so happy as to find both intelligence and communicativeness, the want of books, maps, charts, and statistics, renders the information of natives merely local, and often conflicting. Added to all, his interpreter may be unskillful. If he depends upon resident foreigners, their

in the latter part, their inquiries negligent, or the statements of one may be flatly contradicted by those of another. All these embarrassments have met me by turns, so that frequently, after laborious and continued inquiries, I have been compelled to lay aside the whole mass of notes, in the utter inability to decide whom to believe. I preferred silence, and apparent deficiency, to questionable statements.

My advantages have, nevertheless, been great. I was sent out, as the deputy and representative of one of the great American Missionary Societies, to examine into, and with the missionaries adjust, many points not easily settled by correspondence; to compare the various modes of operation in different missions; to survey the field; to compare the claims of proposed new stations; to comfort, encourage, and strengthen the missionaries in their arduous work; and to gather details on every point where the board lacked information. Such a mission gave me confidence, in the eyes of all classes, wherever I went, and toleration in making investigations, which might otherwise have been deemed impertinent. The time spent at each place was sufficient for deliberate inquiries, from various sources. In most places, I found missionaries and civilians, who had lived long on the spot, and who gave me the fruits of mature and extended observations. My interpreter was in general not only thoroughly conversant with the language, but in the habit of familiar intercourse with the people, and possessing their confidence. Before leaving a place, I generally submitted my notes to several persons for a careful perusal. If, therefore, I should be convicted of errors, they are such as the best informed persons on the spot have fallen into, and as my reader would have imbibed, had he been in my place.

In every part of the work I have studiously sought brevity, lest, by diminishing its circulation, my great object should be defeated. Voluminous communications in relation to my official

inquiries, and conclusions, are in possession of the board, which will not be withheld from the examination of proper applicants.

Conversations with heathen, converted and unconverted, often deeply interesting, are omitted, because they occur so abundantly in the printed communications of missionaries. Descriptions, adventures, and scenery, as well as geographical, commercial, and political memoranda, are inserted only so far as comported with the precise object in view. To have abstained wholly from such observations, would have been to withhold facts necessary to a proper knowledge of the countries to which our friends extend their benevolence; besides which, many of the friends of missions have access to but few books; and some will be indebted to these pages for most of their information on the subjects which are introduced.

All works on the East differ from each other in the orthography of names, and few are even consistent with themselves. Some seem to take pride in a new orthography of old terms; and no two have the same system as to new ones. This difficulty cannot be surmounted, till some mode of Romanising foreign languages be adopted. In the present edition, I have so given. Others are written as directed by some one skilled in that particular language. When no aid was at hand, they are given just as they sounded to my ears, from the lips of the natives.

Every one is embarrassed, in reading works on India, by meeting terms not found either in dictionaries or encyclopaedias. An explanation given in the margin, when the term first occurs, cannot be always recollected, and the note is not easily found again. To avoid this disadvantage, I have thrown together the necessary explanations in a glossary. Some terms not used by me, but often occurring in Oriental works, are added, to make it more useful.

Deeming it indispensable that a book of travels, in a region so unknown, should contain numerous pictorial illustrations, I applied myself from the beginning to making sketches at every opportunity. A number of these are inserted, and constitute an entirely new contribution to our stock of Oriental pictures.

The map has been constructed with great care. On arriving in India, an outline was drawn on a very large scale; and as local surveys or narratives of recent journeys came to hand, corrections were continually made. My own tours and conversations with missionaries, and other gentlemen, furnished more. At the surveyor-general's office in Calcutta, I was allowed an inspection of various recent unpublished maps and charts of Farther India. The omission of unimportant towns, and uncertain rivers and mountains, makes some parts of it look meagre; but confusion is thus avoided without diminishing the amount of general information.*

It would be a grateful task to acknowledge the kindnesses which were multiplied upon me in every place. But such matters belong to the sacred recollections of private history. To publish them all would require constant repetitions, in which the reader could take no interest; and to name a part, would be doing injustice to the rest. Suffice it to say, that I was every where most affectionately and respectfully received, for my work's sake. Never had a man kinder homes when far from his own, not only among missionaries, but with private, civil, and military gentlemen.

May He who blessed the enterprise, and bore me safely through, bless the publication!"

* In the present (People's) edition, a map of less dimensions, but including the principal places, has been given; and it has only been found possible to present a selection of pictorial illustrations, consistently with the low price which the publishers keep in view in this series of reprints.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.	Page	CHAPTER VI.
Departure. Employments. Illness. Comet. Company. Preach on deck. Squall. Magellan Clouds. Send Letters. Trade-Winds. Another Illness. Tristan d'Acunha. Portuguese Men-of-War. Ship Tigris for Ceylon. Encounter between a Whale and a Thrasher. "Doubling Cape of Good Hope." Day of Fasting. Enormous Shark. Nicobar Islands. First Sight of Idolaters. Kedjere. Heavy Dew. Andaman Islands.		Chittagong. Cox's Bazaar. Akyah. Kyook Phyoo. Rangoon. Arracan.
DIGESTED NOTES ON THE BURMAN EMPIRE.		
CHAPTER I.		
The Term India. Hither and Farther India. Boundaries of Burmah. History of the Empire. War with the British. Dismemberment of the Tenasserim Provinces. State of the Succession.		
CHAPTER II.		
Features of Country. Climate. Mountains. Minerals. Rivers. Soil. Productions. Agriculture. Animals. Birds. Fishes. Reptiles. Insects.		
CHAPTER III.		
Population. Form and Features. Buildings. Food. Dress. Manners and Customs. Character. Condition of Women. Marriage. Polygamy. Divorce. Diseases. Medical Practice. Midwifery. Funerals. Amusements. Musical Instruments. Manufactures.		
CHAPTER IV.		
Government. Orders of Nobility. Grades of Community. Magistracy. Laws. Division of Property.		
CHAPTER V.		
Revenue. Commerce. Currency. Army. Navy. Slavery. Division of Time. Weights and Measures. Language. Literature. Degree of Civilisation.		
CHAPTER VI.		
Extent of Buddhism. Meaning of the Term. Antiquity of the System. History of Gaudama. The next Buddh. The Bodagat. Theory of the Universe. The Four Islands. This Island, or the Earth. Origin and Fall of Man. Celestial Regions. Hells. No Eternal God. Universe eternal. Moral Code. Merit. De course of Gaudama. Religious Offices. Images. Impressions of Gaudama's Foot. Worship. Offerings. Public Days. Superstitions. Nat-worship. Priests; their Dress, Residences, Morals, Office, Support, Numbers, Orders, Funerals. Priestesses. Sects. Toleration. Remarks.		

CHAPTER I.	Page
Departure. Employments. Illness. Comet. Company. Preach on deck. Squall. Magellan Clouds. Send Letters. Trade-Winds. Another Illness. Tristan d'Acunha. Portuguese Men-of-War. Ship Tigris for Ceylon. Encounter between a Whale and a Thrasher. "Doubling Cape of Good Hope." Day of Fasting. Enormous Shark. Nicobar Islands. First Sight of Idolaters. Kedjere. Heavy Dew. Andaman Islands.	

CHAPTER II.	
Arrival at Amherst. First Sabbath at Maulmain. Coasting Voyage. Moung-na-gung. Curiosity of the people. Walk over the Mountain. Tayoy. Mata. Karens; their Piety, Liberality, Temperance, Gratitude; Letters from young Converts; Chinese; Bodos, Merani; Population; Chinese; Mussulmans and Christians; Samese Shans; Important as a missionary station. Tenasserim Islands. So-long. Storm. Disagreeable Insects. Variety of costumes. Karen Juggler. Graveyard.	

CHAPTER III.	
Return to Maulmain. Missionary Conference. Preaching. Bahu Island. Karen Churches near Maulmain. Water Festival. Chinese Ceremony. The Moherrun. River Excursion. Remarkable Caves. Karen Christian Village. Church-meeting and Baptism. Population of Maulmain; Commerce, State of Buddhism, State of the Mission, English Influence.	

CHAPTER IV.	
Population of Rangoon; Commerce; Price of Living. Shweda-gon Pagoda. Slaves of the Pagoda. Burial-Worship. Rainy Monsoon. History of the Mission. Mambos. Labour of Native Assistants. Interesting Case. Voyage to Pegu. Evidence of former Greatness. Shwemadon Pagoda. Voyage up the Irrawaddy. Boats. Mode of Fishing. Prome. Laper Village. Gaudama's Foot. Burman Energy. Earth-oil Wells. Shyan Caravan. Ruins of Pagan. Attempt to buy Beef. Buffalo Herdmen. Curiosity of Natives. Toddy. Arrival at Ava.	

CHAPTER V.	
Splendid K. Pagodas. Pri. Palace. Population. Arts. Prices. The Mohara Prince. Mon-wa-go Woon-gye. The Burman Pontiff. Sam-ra-wa Prince. Climate of Ava. History of the Mission in Ava. Present State of Mission. Safety of the Missionaries. Roman Catholics. Sogaing. Marble Quarries. Mahagad Pagoda. Un-rapoon.	

TRAVELS

IN

BURMAH, CHITTAGONG, AND ARRACAN.

CHAPTER I.

Departure. Employments. Illness. Comet. Company. Preach on deck. Squall. Magellan Clouds. Send Letters. Trade-Winds. Another Illness. Tristan d'Acunha. Portuguese Men-of-War. Ship Tigris for Ceylon. Encounter between a Whale and a Thrasher. "Doubting Cape of Good Hope." Day of Fasting. Enormous Shark. Nicobar Islands. First Sight of Idolaters. Kedgerce. Heavy Dew. Andaman Islands.

How cordial and comprehensive are the sympathies of true religion! Who saw that the Louvre, with her eleven ordained ministers, about to spread her canvass, could fail to contrast the scene with ordinary shipping operations? Over all the wharf is one dense mass of grave and silent spectators, while the decks and rigging of the adjacent ships are filled with younger, but not less intent, observers. No sound interrupts the ascending prayer. The full harmony of a thousand voices wafts to heaven the touching hymn. Countless hands, thrust towards the narrow passway, seek the last token of recognition. Even the aged, unaccustomed to tears, weep, not from bitterness, but in exuberance of love.

But here are none of the customary inducements to convene a crowd. A ship sailing with passengers is no novelty. One of the number was, indeed, the pastor of a large and most affectionate congregation; but with the others, in general, the multitude had no acquaintance. Personal attachments, therefore, had not assembled the people. There was, in fact, nothing in the scene which could call forth a general interest, but its religious character. The regular packet, crowded with passengers, leaves our shores, while only here and there a group of personal friends look on with interest. The merchantman unfurls his sails, but his destination and objects are not regarded. But the missionary!—he awakens the sympathy of every believer. Stranger though he be, all press to grasp his hand, and, when gone, all intercede for him with God. Even denominational preferences are forgotten, and every sect mingles in the throng, exulting in a common joy.

But all this is a mere fraction of the fruits of Christian charity. The same expansive benevolence embraces the unseen, unknown heathen. Intense interest for those sends forth these self-denying ones, and draws from Christians at home the requisite funds. The world is the field over which the eye of the Christian wanders, and for all of which he will labour and pray while he has being. Oh blessed gospel, which thus makes man the friend of man, and excites in the heart all that is pure, joyous, and benevolent!

Never did a ship leave Boston harbour more nobly. A fine wind, and favouring tide, bore us on so rapidly as scarcely to leave us time to gaze one lingering farewell to the faint outlines of the great and beautiful city. In two hours the pilot left us, bearing brief notes of affectionate remembrance to friends behind. Soon we found ourselves in the midst of scores of beautiful schooners, engaged in mackerel fishing. So thickly did they lie along the horizon, as to resemble streets of stately white houses. Even these, at length, sank into the dim distance, and we dashed on till night closed in, and the breeze hushed itself to rest.

WEDNESDAY, SEPT. 23, 1835. Light winds and a smooth

sea gave us a night of quiet repose; but as the sun rose cloudless out of the sea, the wind freshened on our quarter, and amid an array of studding-sails we made fine progress. Most of the passengers, alas! feel no relish for the noble sight of ocean, and the rapid plunging of our gallant ship. Sea-sickness, that most dispiriting of all maladies, oppresses them. Mr Sutton and myself, however, being inured to the unnatural motion, are so far exempt as to be able to act the part of nurses. Between attending the sick, and making fast the baggage, I found ample employment for the day.

My heart fills with tender and grateful emotions, as I arrange the various gifts of friendship and regard which almost fill my state-room. Nothing that experience could dictate, or imagination suggest, as requisite for my comfort, seems wanting. My sweet but oppressive emotions find relief only in pouring out before God fervent thanks, and imploring him to remember his promise, that a cup of cold water given to a disciple because he is a disciple, shall not lose its reward.

24.—The wind has continued favourable, and we are already advanced on our way nearly 500 miles. The skylight in my state-room proves sufficient. The round-house (so called) on deck, is an invaluable comfort, and will be especially so in rainy weather. In the evening, such as were well enough commenced family worship in the cabin.

25.—STILL fine and favouring breezes. The awning being extended, and seats arranged, Brother Sutton preached this morning an appropriate and interesting discourse. Most of the passengers able to attend. As many were singers, I led the psalmody with my flute, and we raised hosannas, not unacceptable, we trust, even to the ear of God. Four of the crew attended. Our entire company then resolved themselves into a Bible-class, to meet every Lord's day afternoon at half past three, and requested me to take charge of it. We selected the "Acts of the Apostles," as most appropriate to missionary work. Till the arrival of the appointed hour, on every side were seen the brethren and sisters, busy with Doddridge, Henry, Scott, Barnes, Adam Clarke, &c. &c. Each recitation will embrace a chapter, and occupy from one to two hours.

26.—SEPT. 10.—Amid the numerous discomforts of a long sea voyage, one is thrown upon his own resources both for improvement and pleasure. But the mind accustomed to view with intelligent and devout contemplation the works of God, can seldom be without materials for lofty and purifying thought. And surely the wide ocean and wider sky present a rich field for the expatiation of our noblest thoughts. Pacing the deck, or leaning against the bulwarks, towards setting sun, it would seem as though the most gross and thoughtless mind must rise, and expand, and feel delight. Far and near rolls "old ocean." Before Jehovah spread out the fairer scenery of the dry land, these restless billows swelled and sparkled beneath the new-made firmament. Thousand of years their wide expanse remained a trackless waste,

"Unconquerable, unrepined, untired,
And rolled the wild, profound, eternal bass,
In nature's anthem."

The storm then found no daring mariner to brave its fury, and the gentle breeze no repose on the fair canvass of the lordly ship. Age after age, the fowls of heaven and the tenants of the deep held undisputed empire. But now, every ocean is added to the dominion of man. He captures its rulers, he makes its surges his highway, and so dexterously adjusts his spreading canvass, as to proceed, in the very face of its winds, to his desired haven. But oh! how many have found in those same billows a grave! How many a gallant ship has "sunk like lead in the mighty waters," where beauty and vigour, wealth and venerableness, learning and piety, find undistinguished graves! To these lone deserts of pure waters man pursues his brother with murderous intent—the silence is broken by thundering cannon—the billows bear away the stain of gore, and all that storm ever swallowed up have been out-numbered by the victims of a battle. Oh war! when will thy horrid banner be for ever furled!

Reflection, following the chasing waves, passes on to the shores they lave, and there looks over nations, and beholds men in their manners, customs, follies, and crimes, their loves and hates, their joys and sorrows, their enthusiastic pursuit of wealth, and amazing disregard of Heaven. How interminable and salutary are the thoughts thou inspirest, ocean! whether we regard thy age, thy beauties, thy wrath, thy silence, thy treasures, thy services to man, thy praise to God, or the scenes which have been acted on thy surface!

But while we thus muse and speculate, the glories of sunset fade into sober grey, the billows take a deeper tinge, stars multiply, and soon we stand beneath a firmament glowing with ten thousand fires. Here are vaster, sublimer, fields for thought.

—Hail, Source of Being! Universal Soul
Of heaven and earth! Essential Presence, laid!
To Thee I bend the knee; to Thee my thoughts
Continual climb; who, with a master hand,
Hast the great whole into perfection touched."

How ennobling and purifying is the study of astronomy! How delicious the Christian's hope of soon roaming among these works of infinite wisdom and power, ever learning, adoring, rejoicing, improving; ever becoming more full of God, and of glory, and of joy!

I ought to mention, that on the 28th September we had a meeting to agree upon some general measures for the profitable employment of our time. It was unanimously agreed, that in addition to our daily family worship, prayer-meetings should be held every Sunday and Wednesday evenings; that the brethren officiate alphabetically at public worship on deck, and in asking a blessing during one day at table; that the monthly concert of prayer be held at the same hour as the other evening meetings; that I should deliver on Thursday evenings a course of lectures on missions, missionary measures, and missionary fields; and that brother Sutton should deliver occasional lectures on modern mythology and the state of the heathen.

12.—Head-winds, the past three or four days, have kept us pitching sharply, and put all our invalids again on the sick-list. To-day we have a fair wind, which has already smoothed the sea, and our friends are better. We are within twelve or thirteen degrees of the Cape Verdes, but expect to go much nearer, though not probably in sight.

SUNDAY, OCT. 18.—Crossed the tropic of Cancer. Not being able to command voice enough to preach on deck, I attempted it this evening, by general request, in the cabin. Other brethren performed all the devotional exercises, but my throat suffered considerably. It is remarkable that we have not yet met the north-east trade-wind, which prevails generally as high as 25°. But He who sent us will give us such speed as pleases him.

23.—Have been confined to my bed with an attack on the bowels, which on Monday laid a severe hold up on me. Am now about, but tender to eat nothing but a little oatmeal gruel. The tender care and sympathy of brethren, and still more of the sisters, is very sweet.

What a blessed home would this world be, if Christian love pervaded every bosom! It is exceedingly gratifying that harmony and kind feeling prevail among all our passengers, though so different in temper, age, and previous pursuits, and comprising, as we do, four distinct denominations.

Sailing for the last two days along the coast of Africa, it is impossible to avoid frequent thoughts of that devoted land. How deep the darkness which covers it! How few the points where Christianity kindles her fire! How wretched, even in temporal things, its thronging millions, and how utterly secluded from the improvements of the age! Yet the word of the Lord once resounded along these shores, and triumphed over the vast interior. African philosophers, ministers, and generals, came not behind the greatest of their time. Why, and how, the dreadful change? "Verily, there is a God that ruleth in the earth!"

Yesterday we caught the first faint zephyrs of the north-east trade-wind, and to-day it has increased to its regular velocity; that is, we go at six or seven miles an hour. We are all glad, and, I trust, thankful.

SATURDAY, 24.—Have been deeply interested to-night in observing the comet, which cloudy nights have hitherto kept invisible. Here we are, calmly gazing at the identical thing, which, by its amazing brilliancy, spreads such universal panic in 1456. All Europe seemed to believe that the day of judgment was at hand. The pope (Calixtus III.) partook of the alarm. Ordering all church bells to be rung every day at noon (a practice which has since widely prevailed), he required all good Christians to say the "Ave Maria" thrice a-day, with this addition—"Save us from the Turk, the Devil, and the Comet." He went farther, and had the comet, in regular form, excommunicated every day! But the patient luminary filled the coffers of its ghostly anathematisers. Incalculable treasures were poured into the hand of priests from the guilty and the affrighted; and the vilified comet, "holding on the even tenor of his way," passed out of sight. It has appeared every seventy-five years since that time (though with diminished brightness), and science, the handmaid of religion, has now made it an object of calm calculation and ennobled piety.

We have for some days had a continual temperature of about 80°. With an awning over the deck, and our thinnest clothes, we keep comfortable on deck, though hardly so below.

27.—Am nearly well, though not yet able to partake of common food. Thanks to my gracious Lord, past sufferings have not been so utterly unimproved, as to permit me now to be either terrified or querulous under the endurance of evil, so called. I feel that repeated afflictions come not as lightnings on the seathed tree, blasting it yet more, but as the strokes of the sculptor on the marble block, forming it to the image of life and loveliness. Let but the divine presence be felt, and no lot is hard. Let me but see his hand, and no event is unwelcome.

FRIDAY, 30.—The monotony of a calm (for the trade-wind has already failed us) has been agreeably relieved yesterday, and to-day by the neighbourhood of two ships, much larger than our own—one English, the other American. The English ship (the *John Barry*, of London) has 260 convicts for Sydney, in New South Wales. They swarmed on the whole deck, and in the rigging, while men under arms stood sentry over them. There were probably some troops also on board, as there were several officers on the quarter-deck, and a fine band of music. This was politely mustered yesterday, when we were as near as we could safely sail, and played for an hour or two very delightfully. As the music swelled and died away in heaving and exquisite cadences, now gay, now plaintive, and now rising into martial pomp, it not only refreshed, and soothed, and exhilarated, but awakened trains of not unprofitable thought. They belonged to our father-land; they came from the noblest nation earth ever saw; they were but lately arrayed against us in horrid war; they bore to a distant home

a motley crew of refined and vulgar, educated and

any of in exile finish an inglorious life, and meet the second death? Or, will some faithful preacher find them there, under whose admonitions they may recover earthly honour and find eternal life? Oh that their native land may long remain the pillar of freedom, the source of noble missionary endeavour; that her stupendous navy may rot in peace; that this ship may have souls born to God among her crew; and that the convict colony may soon be a part of Christ's precious church!

The American ship was the *Canada*, of New York, Captain Hicks, a noble ship, whose sailing greatly surpasses ours. We went on board, and spent half an hour very pleasantly.

MONDAY, NOV. 2.—A perfect calm yesterday enabled me to preach on deck. Every person on board was present, except the man at the wheel, and one sick in the fore-castle. Our national flag wrapped round the capstan made a romantic pulpit; while another, extended across the ship just behind my back, from the awning to the deck, made us a beautiful tabernacle, and gave a charming aspect of compactness and sociability to our little convocation. Oh that God would bless the endeavour to the souls of our unconverted fellow-voyagers! We often converse with the men individually; but though they receive remarks with kindness, and seem to possess many good qualities, I perceive no particular anxiety on the subject of religion resting on the mind of any of them. The brethren and sisters seem truly prayerful for their conversion. This was peculiarly manifest this evening at our monthly concert of prayer, and is shown at all our social meetings. I visit the sick sailor frequently, and carry him little delicacies, but his extreme sufferings are as yet fruitless of spiritual good.

THURSDAY, 5.—Reached the south-east trade-wind and are going gaily with a steady breeze at the rate of seven miles an hour. Those who have not been to sea can scarcely realise the exhilaration of spirit produced by a strong favouring wind, after wearisome delays. We had scarcely made any advance for ten days, and were almost weary of delay. When we had wind, it was in severe squalls, accompanied with heavy showers. The majesty of a few sharp squalls, however, repays one for the danger they may involve, and tempts the timid passenger to brave the wind and a wetting for the pleasure of the sight. Every sluggish sailor is converted instantly into a hero. Every order is obeyed on the run. The lofty display of canvass which had been flapping against the masts, is rapidly reduced as the threatening cloud draws on. Regardless of the huge drops which now begin to descend, the captain stands at the weather bulwark, peering through half-closed lids into the gathering gloom. Fitting gusts herald the approaching gale. More canvass is taken in, the waves are lashed to foam, the wind howls through the rigging, the bulk-heads creak and strait, the ship careens to the water's edge, and the huge spray springs over the weather bow; then comes the rain in torrents, the main-sail is furled, the spunker braild up, and the man at the wheel is charged to "mind his weather helm." Soon the whole force of the blast is upon us. "Hard up!" roars the captain. "Hard up, sir!" responds the watchful helmsman. The noble thing turns her back to the tremendous uproar, and away we scud, conscious of safety and thrilling with emotions of sublimity.

The rush is over. The dripping seamen expand again the venturous canvass, the decks are swabbed, the tropical sun comes out gloriously, we pair ourselves to promenade, and evening smiles from golden clouds that speak of day-gladdened realms beyond. And now the rolling billows, disrobed of their foaming glitter, quiet themselves for the repose of night, while the blessed moon beams mildly from mid-heaven.

"Thou art, oh God! the life and light
Of all this wondrous world we see;
Its glow by day, its smile by night,
Are but reflections caught from thee.
Where'er we turn, thy glories shine,
And all things bright and fair are thine."

FRIDAY, NOV. 6.—Just before sunset crossed the equator, in longitude 28° W., forty-five days from Boston; having sailed by log 4640 miles. Among the improvements of recent years is the abrogation in most ships of the absurd and inhuman practices which used to prevail at this point of a voyage, in regard to such as crossed the line for the first time. Strange that a custom so barbarous should ever have existed, more strange that it still is tolerated by some captains, and almost incredible that Christian missionaries and venerable fathers in the church should not be exempt. But two or three years since, two young missionaries from England to India were subjected to its full rigours, and even Tyerman and Bennett did not wholly escape. Alas! how many proofs there are of our slowness to learn to love our neighbour as ourselves. Our captain permitted nothing of the sort, and remarked that the sight of these inflictions early determined him, that if ever he became master of a vessel, he would utterly forbid them.

Numerous birds, but of what species I cannot learn, have been around us for several days. Sometimes we are surrounded by them in flocks of several kinds, generally very large. The fine brisk trade-wind we now enjoy, imparts a delightful coolness to the air on deck, though it is difficult to be comfortable below. Thermometer 79° to 83°.

9.—For some days we have been indulged with aquatic novelties, which serve to vary our monotony, and create topics for our many journalisers. Black-fish, bonetas, flying-fish, dolphins, porpoises, gulls, &c., summon our new voyagers to the side, and excite no little interest. These are so abundantly described in elementary books, that no description of them need be given here. We found the dolphin very good eating, white, dry, and resembling the pike, or pickerel, in taste. The descriptions of the flying-fish which I have read are not correct in stating that they have no power really to fly, but only spring from the water, and, guiding themselves with their huge pectoral fins, keep up a little while, in the direction of the wind. We often see them actually flying, and skimming up and down, accommodating themselves to the waves, and going sixty or seventy yards at a time, but generally in a direction from the ship, which they seem to think is some enemy. Poor things! they lead a precarious life; for many, both of the watery and feathered tribes, make them a constant prey.

Last evening caught a booby (*pelicanus sula*), and to-day I succeeded in getting a Mother Carey's chicken, or stormy petrel (*procellaria pelagica*), by trailing a thread in which its wings became entangled. The booby sat doggedly on the mizzen royal yard, and, as the mate approached him, kept edging off till he got to the very end of the spar, but would not fly, and suffered himself to be caught. As they will bite severely when attacked, he was suddenly seized by the neck and brought below. He has remained on deck all day, without attempting to fly, and looking as stupid as possible. The stormy petrel is about the size of a small robin; dark brown, with a broad circle of white at the root of the tail; black, hooked bill; long, slender legs; and ample, webbed feet. Fond of the bits of grease, &c., thrown over in the slops, they follow us often whole days, and in large numbers. Notwithstanding the scorn with which the proposal was received, I had the petrel broiled, together with slices from the breast of the booby. They were both pronounced excellent by all who could be prevailed upon to taste them. As the plumage of both birds was in fine order, I preserved and stuffed their skins.

NOV. 11.—Saw this evening the Magellan clouds. Instead of being always at the water's edge, as Colonel

Symmes* affirmed, they stand high in the heavens, and will be almost vertical as we pass round the Cape. We can perceive but two, both bright; but it is said there is a third one, dark. Those we see are oval, about the size of a cart-wheel to the eye, and exactly resembling the milky way. It is supposed by astronomers that they consist of just such a collection of stars as form that beautiful pathway across the heavens. The present residence of the younger Herschel, at the Cape of Good Hope, with his stupendous instruments, will doubtless furnish the learned world with some new and important facts in regard to these famous "clouds."

The clearness of the atmosphere in this region is very striking. So pure is the air, that the stars shine with a glory not inferior to that of our most resplendent northern nights. In one respect, they transcend even those, viz., the visibility of stars down almost to the very horizon. Shooting-stars are numerous, and of great apparent size. Delicious weather, smooth water, and fine winds, make up the monotonous but attractive scenery of our evenings.

"— Such beauty, varying in the light
Of gorgeous nature, cannot be portrayed
By words, nor by the pencil's silent skill;
But is the property of those alone
Who have beheld it, noted it with care,
And in their minds recorded it with love."

The comet has become more glorious, and its train is visible to the naked eye, stretching upwards, almost a fourth part to the zenith. Seen through the ship's glass, it is half the size of the moon, and of a dazzling brightness, resembling Jupiter. It appears low in the west, and sets about half past nine.

THURSDAY, 12.—Had the great pleasure, to-day, of sending letters directly to Boston, by the ship *Susan*, Captain Jennings, from Rio Janeiro. Judging by appearances that she was an American vessel, and bound for the United States, we checked our way to meet her, and finding our hopes confirmed, asked the captain to leave to, and take letters, which he readily did. I had seven nearly finished, and, among us all, made up more than sixty, which will gladden our friends, by assuring them that we are, so far, all well. Such opportunities are very rare at sea, and we feel grateful that our friends will thus be able to hear from us seven or eight months before they could from Calcutta.

We are now in south latitude $15^{\circ} 34'$, and west longitude $32^{\circ} 20'$, going seven miles (or knots) an hour, day and night, fanned and forwarded by the invaluable trade-wind. There are on the globe two trade-winds; one north of the equator, for ever blowing from the north-east, and the other south of the equator, and blowing always from the south-east. They extend about 28 degrees each side of the equator, but advance and recede several degrees according as the sun is north or south of the line. They blow with sufficient force to propel a vessel generally about seven miles an hour, and with such uniformity, that for many days a ship scarcely alters a rope; and are attended with delightful weather. They extend quite round the globe, except where the action of the sun on masses of land, or high islands, obstructs it for a limited space. They are generally attributed to the rarefaction of the air, under the path of the sun, causing an influx from towards the poles. The wind thus created is drawn westward by the combined action of the sun in its path, and the rapid rotatory motion of the earth. The north-east trade-wind stops short of reaching the equator by several degrees, and is less regular and strong, which is attributed to the great contraction of the Atlantic between Africa and Brazil, and to the greater quantity of land in the northern hemisphere, producing an amount of rarefaction which allows less cold air for the supply of the tropics. At the West Indies, the large scoop of ocean so the eastward gives uniformity to the trade wind; and hence the term "Windward Islands." Whatever

may be the second causes of these great and perpetual phenomena, we certainly owe the great First Cause unspeakable thanks; for they impart most important benefits.

NOVEMBER 19.—Another severe shaking of my clay house has been reminding me again of the Master's warning, "Behold, I come as a thief!" An attack of cholera on Monday, reduced me in a few hours to extremity. It was more violent than most previous attacks, but yielded sooner. Precious days, however, have these been. What fresh and endearing benefits do sicknesses impart! No height of worldly honour, or richness of bodily enjoyment, would induce me to part with the salutary lessons derived from even one of these attacks.

We have now probably bid farewell, for the present, to warm weather, being in latitude 30° . Thick clothes are in requisition, and the thermometer ranges from 60° to 65° . It will probably remain cold with us for five or six weeks, perhaps more. We had the pleasure to-day, for the first time, of seeing Cape pigeons, and that kind of aquatic birds, the albatross (*diomedea exulans*). These, with gannets, molly mawks, boobies, pintadoes, and other birds for which those on board have no name, are almost constantly round the ship.

SATURDAY, 21.—Well enough to be on deck and enjoy the calm and delicious vernal sun. The present season in this latitude nearly corresponds with our May at home. At evening, after watching a gorgeous sunset, I was sitting in the round-house to avoid the dew, when cries of admiration called me out; and there was Venus, queen of all stars, gradually descending into ocean, unobscured by mist or cloud! Nothing could be more beautiful. It gave a strong proof of the exceeding purity of these skies.

THURSDAY, 26.—Feasted our eyes with the sight of "land," which for sixty-five days we have not done. But imagination had to spread the banquet; for few of us would have suspected that we saw land, had we not been told so. The dim, cloud-looking crags of Tristan d'Aenpha showed their questionable outline amid fogs and rolling mists, for about an hour, and then left us to spend another sixty-five days, or more, before we again see aught but sky and water. This lonely spot is occupied by but a single family of fifteen or twenty persons.

"Cape weather" is now upon us—foggy, damp, and cold, but with a noble westerly gale, driving us on magnificently. Our promenades on deck are suspended; but the cool weather enables us to sit in our state-rooms, and the privilege of unrestricted retirement makes amends for the absence of many others.

SATURDAY, 28.—Succeeded, this morning, in harpooning a porpoise (*delphinus phocaena*), and getting it on board. It measured seven feet in length, and more than three feet in girth; of a pure white under the belly, and rich lead colour on the back; with large fins on each side, near the head; and the nose long and pointed, not unlike that of a hog. This latter feature is no doubt the reason why in French, Italian, and German, the creature is called "*hog fish*." The spout-hole is not on the crown of the head, as is said in the Encyclopædia Americana, but quite forward of the brain, on the snout, and divided by a septum of solid bone, into two oval apertures, each capable of admitting a finger with ease. The harpoon entered its heart, so that it never moved after being brought on deck. Its blubber (that is, the coat of fat lying under the skin) was stripped off for lamp-oil, and the carcass hung up for food. The kidneys exactly resembled a pint of small grapes enclosed in a thin, transparent pellicle. The rapidity with which these creatures swim is astonishing. Instead of tumbling and rolling lazily, as in smooth weather, they seem to gather spirits with a breeze, playing back and forward across the bows, though the ship is going eight or ten miles an hour. Their movements indicate perfect ease and gaiety, and not unfrequently they leap wholly out of the water.

We had scarcely done with the porpoise, when "a sail" was announced. We soon came near enough to

* Author of the theory that the interior of the earth is hollow and inhabited.

perceive that she had a whale alongside, from which they were hoisting the last sheets of blubber, and soon after cut adrift the carcass. It floated by us at a little distance, covered with huge and ravenous birds pulling it to pieces, while a multitude of smaller ones swam around, picking up the scattered fragments. We soon spoke the ship, and found her to be the *Samuel Robertson* of New Bedford, out ninety days. The captain politely offered to send a boat if any of us wished to gratify our curiosity, and several of the gentlemen gladly availed themselves of the opportunity. They found her a "temperance ship," in fine order; and after spending half an hour, and leaving some tracts, newspapers, &c., returned with a present of two fine albatrosses, measuring eleven feet across the wings. Unaccustomed to injury from man, they seemed nowise affrighted, and sat quietly on deck. Their long wings and short legs render it impossible for them to rise in flight from a flat, solid surface. When provoked, they snapped violently at the person, uttering a shrill, loud sound, not unlike the braying of a mule. They cannot stand up on their feet a minute, but continue squatting as on the water. In walking, their awkwardness is really ludicrous, while their enormous palmated foot comes down each time with a heavy slap. Though the largest of all aquatic birds, they fly with great ease, seldom moving the wing; now skimming gracefully along the surface of the water, adroitly conforming to its undulations, and now soaring aloft like an eagle. They are continually seen in this region, hundreds of miles from land, and at night repose at pleasure on the surface of the deep. They prey upon flying fish, spawn, molluscs, dead carcasses, &c., and are generally in good condition.

SUNDAY, 29.—For an entire week we have gone six or seven miles an hour, day and night, on our exact course, enjoying mild weather, but with excessive dews. This morning, at sunrise, the wind lulled to a three-knot breeze, and has continued so all day, giving us a fine opportunity for worship. It is remarkable, that as yet every Sabbath but one has been calm, and pleasant enough for service on deck.

An uncommon scene has been before us all day. From daylight till dark we have been sailing through vast multitudes of the "Portuguese man-of-war," (*holothuria physalis*), though we have gone forty miles. They extended on every side as far as the eye could reach, varying in size from that of the palm of the hand to that of a finger nail, and close enough to average, probably, one to every two cubic feet. We readily caught some in a basket. They are elliptical in shape, about as thick as common pasteboard, with a sail of the same thickness, extending diagonally from one end to the other. This position of their sail makes them always seem to be sailing "on a wind," and not directly before it. Beneath is a cavity, corresponding to the base of the sail. The interior of this is filled with small short tubes, like mouths, and from the edge of it hang numerous long tentacles, like roots. The sail is white, and the body, or horizontal part, of a beautiful silvery lead colour, inclining to a deep blue at the circumference, and taking on an edge tint of rose, after it has been kept some time in a glass. It has neither bones nor shell. The sailors consider it poisonous to the touch; but I handled them (cautiously at first, of course) without any ill effect.

Our Bible-class continues exceedingly interesting, and generally holds nearer two hours than one. It costs me, however, more effort than I anticipated. The questions asked by such a class are not of ready solution. All take a deep interest in it, and prepare themselves by study. We use no text-book.

TUESDAY, DEC. 1.—Last evening, a sail was descried directly astern, which, by three o'clock this morning, proved to be the *Tigris*, from London to Ceylon. They passed ahead; but the wind dying away, they after breakfast put off a boat, and the captain (Stephens), Colonel Macpherson, of the Ceylon regiment, a surgeon, and several young officers, came on board. Learning

from them that the Rev. Mr Hardy and wife, Wesleyan missionaries to Ceylon, were on board, Mr Sutton and myself, with two or three of the brethren, went to him, and had a pleasant interview. On returning, we found our captain had rigged my arm-chair with nice tackle, to the yard-arm, and was prepared to give the ladies an excursion. The two boats took them all, and they remained an hour with the ladies in the *Tigris*, during which a genteel repast was served to them. Our first visitors remained with us, and took lunch. From Colonel Macpherson, who had served in the Burman war, I learned a few particulars respecting that people, and also the Shyans, for whom I feel deeply interested.

During the absence of the ladies, we observed an encounter between a humpbacked whale and a thrasher. The whale seemed greatly provoked, floundering, and blowing with violence, while the thrasher adroitly evaded the stroke of his flukes, sometimes by leaping entirely out of the water. Presently after these combatants disappeared, four or five other whales were seen rolling and playing within one hundred yards of the ship, their backs rising five or six feet out of the water, while, ever and anon, as they descended, their broad tails rose high into view. Towards evening, a breeze sprang up, the *Tigris* passed on, and we parted company with the regret of several neighbours.

25.—In latitude $37^{\circ} 30'$, longitude 70° east. Never had ship a finer run than ours since we left the equator. We got up to latitude 35° on the 23d ult., being then in longitude 23° west. We have thus run ninety-three degrees of longitude in thirty-three days, and have passed the Cape without the semblance of a storm. It being nearly midsummer here, we have had mild though damp weather, the thermometer never sinking below 50° .

I had no conception that "doubling the Cape of Good Hope" meant passing near the coast of South America to a higher latitude than the Cape, and then proceeding as near as possible in a straight line six thousand miles eastward, before we turn northward again; in the mean time not coming within one hundred and fifty or two hundred miles of Cape. But such is the course rendered necessary by the trade-winds. Persons embarking for India at any time except from about the first of October to the first of January, ought to be provided with flannels for five or six weeks' use.

Having found the flesh of our porpoise exceedingly delicate, we have sought every opportunity to harpoon another, but without success, till yesterday, when we welcomed one on deck. All agree that they never ate more delicious meat than this is, after it has been kept a day or two. It has no resemblance to fish in appearance or taste; but when cooked, is of a dark colour like venison, and eats like the tenderest beef. The liver is very fine. This porpoise was instantly recognised as of a different species from the other, though of the kind usually caught in this region. It had a strong, thick, collar-shaped fin on the back. The light colour of the belly was diffused over the back towards the tail. The other, which the sailors called Cape Horn porpoise, had no fin on the back, and was of an uniform dark colour the whole length of the back. The captain assures us that the porpoises which tumble about in our bays are quite equal to these for food. It is a pity, in this case, that they are not brought to market. Being easily taken, they would form at once a cheap and delicious food; besides the advantage of the oil. Perhaps they are not kept sufficiently long to become tender.

JANUARY 1, 1836.—Our fine run continues. For fifty-four days past our progress has averaged 172 miles a-day, which is seventy miles more than the average of the first forty-five days. We now see no albatrosses, and few birds of any kind, no whales, no ships. The reflection that as we walk the deck, we can turn no where and look towards home, that friends and countrymen are beneath our feet, and that the thickness of the globe divides us, makes this new year's day memorable. Absence indeed it is, when one can get no farther from his country.

MONDAY, 4.—According to previous agreement, we observed this as a day of fasting and prayer, as is done by so many associations at home, having reference to our own spiritual improvement and the advancement of true religion over all the earth. Had a prayer-meeting from ten to half past eleven, A. M. At one, P. M., I preached in the after-cabin from Habakkuk iii. 2—"Oh Lord, revive thy work!" and in the evening we observed the usual concert of prayer. I trust the season was not wholly lost to us. But, alas! how strongly are we reminded at the close of a day so designated, that "our righteousnesses are as filthy rags." My throat suffered less than it has hitherto from similar exertions, for which I am truly thankful. We had a slight breakfast and supper, but dispensed with dinner.

WEDNESDAY, 6.—Were visited yesterday by an enormous shark. We were going but at the rate of two knots (miles) an hour, and some men were at work over the side, whose feet occasionally dipped in the water, and it is possible this may have drawn him. He was about thirty feet long, and four or five broad, the head flat, and nearly square across the snout. After he had accompanied us some time within eight or ten feet of the ship, the captain had the harpoon thrown into him. It entered near his head, and passed deeply. For some moments he seemed unconscious of the wound, and then moved off abeam. In vain the sailors held on to the rope; it passed irresistibly through their hands till it came to the end where it was made fast, and then, though an inch in diameter, broke like a thread. The sailors call this the *bone-shark*. It is, I am pretty confident, the basking shark (*selache maxima*) of the books, not infrequently seen on the American coast, and which greatly resembles a huge cat-fish. Its flesh is said to be good eating, and a valuable amount of oil may be got from it. Around him as usual were pilot-fish (*scomber ductor*), shaped like a perch or small fat herring, and girdled beautifully with alternate rings of blue and white.

MONDAY, 11.—Preached in my turn last evening, in the small cabin, and suffered still less than before. For several Sabbaths we have had a separate meeting for the seamen at four o'clock, held in the fore-castle or on the forward deck. They all attend, and give respectful attention. I sometimes converse with them individually at sunset. They admit the importance of personal piety, and one or two are serious; but their great objection to giving themselves up immediately to God is, that they cannot maintain a devotional life, situated as they are at sea. Alas! there are always some to scoff at a religious messmate, and a sailor can hear any thing better than scorn. Sad are the responsibility and danger of the "one sinner [that] destroyeth much good."

FRIDAY, 15.—Are at length north of the line again, and have been for a day or two within twenty-four hours' sail of Sumatra. Sixteen thousand miles of our voyage are now accomplished in safety. It has been oppressively hot for a fortnight, with daily showers of rain. Some of the gentlemen have refreshed themselves by swimming at the side of the vessel when it was calm, and the captain has "rigged up" a nice bath on deck for the ladies, of which they gladly avail themselves.

It is pleasing to have ocular evidence in rock-weed, tropic birds, &c., of our approach to *Arca Chersonensis* and *Argentea Regio*, as the ancients called Burmah and Siam. They knew little more of these regions than that they existed, and few moderns know much more. But the eyes of Christians are now turned on these lands with strong benevolence, and the world will know not only their riches in gold and silver, in ivory and spices, but the condition of their teeming population and the character and tendencies of their religion. The missionary shall feel at home on lands which white men knew not, and the knowledge of God supplant their gloomy superstitions. Soon we shall say, "Thy light is come!"

JANUARY 18, 1836.—Sailing to-day only eighty miles from the Nicobar Islands, and embayed among pagan

countries, makes one feel already amid the heathen. On these pleasant islands the gospel was long and faithfully dispensed, and deliberately and finally rejected. Mingled emotions of pity for the deluded people, and admiration of true missionary zeal, force themselves upon us, when we remember the struggles and martyrdom of the faithful Moravians on these coasts. Eighty years ago they began by sending six men to convert and civilise the people. Others came, as disease made breaches in their number. Thirty years long did these holy men exert themselves amid both hardships and discouragement. Obligated at night, in their preaching tours, to sleep in trees, or bury themselves in the sand of the shore to avoid venomous insects; often escaping as by miracle from alligators, serpents, and wild beasts; feeding on wretched shell-fish; lodged in poor huts; and labouring with their own hands for a subsistence—they fainted not, nor ceased their toil. But no ear gave heed to their heavenly message, no heathen began to adore the true God, no idol was cast to the moles and the bats. Thirteen of the brethren, with ruined health, returned to Tranquebar and died, while eleven more found graves in their little cemetery. The society at length ordered the only surviving missionary to abandon the undertaking, and bear his rejected tidings to another people. The lonely labourer, therefore, after kneeling on the green sod, where lay his loved companions and predecessors, and offering one more fervent prayer for the pitied islanders, left the country [in 1787], and "the voice of free grace" has been heard among them no more. Oh ye Nicobarians! how have ye put from you the teachings of Jesus, and "counted yourselves unworthy of eternal life!" But the light now kindling on Burmah's shores shall strike your silent mountains, and wake from your dank valleys the exultations of the saved.

TUESDAY, 26.—Recalled. Juggernaut's temple about ninety miles distant. It is difficult to abstain from gazing over the side perpetually at the countless numbers and variety of aquatic creatures, which, far and near, sport themselves on the smooth, warm surface of the sea. Through the glass we discern numerous turtles, puffing-pigs, &c., while nearer at hand are sharks, dog-fish, sun-fish, toad-fish, cuttle-fish, porcupine-fish, snakes, sea-lice, spiders, &c.; and on every fragment of bamboo, or wood, or cocoa-nut husk which floats along, are various shell-fish, suckers, and worms. Different parties take the boat from time to time and row about, getting fine turtles, and picking up a great variety of creatures, which we should be glad to preserve, if we had the conveniences. I began my portfolio by making drawings of several of the fishes. We got six or eight crabs, about as large as a half dollar, exceedingly beautiful and various in their colours. In a piece of porous wood not exceeding four inches square, we found perhaps fifty different insects, all, of course, new and curious to us. What an opulence of divine power and skill is seen in this endless variety of animated beings!—all perfect in their kind—all happy in their way—all fulfilling some object for which they were made. "Oh that men would praise the Lord for his goodness and his wonderful works!"

MONDAY, FEB. 1.—At our concert of prayer this evening, it was an affecting consideration that; on all this coast, from Cuttack to Calcutta, not a solitary evangelist holds forth the word of life! Commercial zeal maintains, at great expense, buoys, light-houses, telegraphs, and pilots, lest property should be lost on these numerous shoals; but Christian zeal has not lit up the torch of truth, to save the thousands of these people from the loss of the soul! How many other districts of equal magnitude are similarly destitute! Oh Zion! thy wealth cankers. Thy worldliness in expenditure, in fashions, and in pursuits, oppresses thy greatness, destroys thy power, and leaves whole nations unblest with thy light! Oh for some such devotedness as men of earth exhibit in the ways of pleasure and of gain! Oh that the millions of money annually wasted by professed Christians in the United States, were

expended, not in injury to the church, but in elevating from barbarism, misery, and death, the untaught millions of heathen!

3.—Yesterday, about eight o'clock, A. M., we got a pilot, and are now slowly ascending the Hoogly, hoping to find at Kedgerce, about sixty miles up, some conveyance for our friends who are going to Calcutta. The boat which brought on board the pilot was manned with nine lascars. My heart melted at this first sight of poor idolaters. Compassion and awe have been seldom more strongly excited. Looking round on the others, who stood looking over the ship's side, I found my eyes were not the only fountains of tears. To-day we have seen many more natives, who came off to us in their boats. Most of them have a very small white cotton cloth wrapped round their loins; some have it long enough to cover the shoulders also, when they choose to loose it for that purpose; and a few wear turbans of the same material: none have any defence to the feet. Their complexion is not much different from that of coloured people in our Northern states, who have not generally the jet colour of Africans. Some of the younger ones were not so dark, and had more of the red tint of the American aborigines. Their stature is small, limbs well proportioned, countenance intelligent, nose aquiline, teeth very white, hair black, and inclined to curl. A fishing-boat attached itself to our stern as we lay at anchor, and remained during the ebb tide, in company with another, which had come to offer aid in working the ship. It was interesting to observe the nicety with which they prepared their rice, and the enormous quantity they devoured. I should judge that each man ate two quarts; but it was boiled dry, and lay loose. It is to be considered, however, that they eat little else. They ate with the fingers, or rather the hand, pressing together as much as they could well grasp, and cramming as much of it as they could into the mouth, letting the remainder fall back into the dish again; then picking up a small morsel of fish. It was an ocular proof of the propriety of the eastern custom of "washing before meat"—a custom which a mere American reader might regard as founded on superstition. After dinner, and smoking, they lay down to sleep. Untying the cloth round their loins they made it answer as a sheet, and the bare deck formed their couch. Though we find it warm in the middle of the day (thermometer in the shade, 79°) they all complained of the cold, and laid themselves in the full blaze of the sun.

The boats are similar to ours, but pointed at each end, heavier, and decked over, so that the rowers sit flat on the floor, or on a very low stool, having the oar fastened at the top of two small sticks, about two feet long, set up like the letter A. Most of the oars were bamboo rods, with a flat piece, about eighteen inches long, at the end. They are short, and the rowers sit in pairs, side by side, while the boat is steered by an oar at the stern.

5.—Went ashore, and, after visiting the telegraph officer at this station, strolled through the bazaar. We found rice, grain, sugar, milk, eggs, fowls, cocoa-nut and mustard-seed oil, nuts, oranges, guavas, bananas, plantains, shattucks (called here *pomelos*), pine-apples, yams, sweet potatoes, onions, cabbages, carrots, Irish potatoes, lettuce, &c. &c., but no butcher's meat. Generally, the prices were much cheaper than with us; but such of the articles as do not properly belong to a tropical climate were of very poor quality. Mustard is cultivated in large fields simply for the oil, which is prized not only for burning but for cookery, and especially for anointing oil, in which last mode the consumption is very great.

6.—Having parted with Mr Sutton and his company, we weighed anchor about two o'clock, and dropped down the river, to resume our voyage to Burnah. The navigation here is so intricate as seldom to be attempted at night, especially during this month, when fogs occur every night. From midnight till this morning at eight o'clock, the fog and dew sent down from the rigging a

continual dropping, like a smart shower. A good rain of an hour's duration would not have wet the ground more deeply. What a merciful provision, in a country where no rain occurs for so long a period! A fine wind and ardent sun clear the atmosphere about eight o'clock.

FEB. 12.—Just now we have to the south of us the Andaman Islands. The chief of these is 140 miles long, and 25 wide, divided, however, in fact, into three islands, by channels which extend across the whole breadth. This archipelago was known to Ptolemy, who calls it "*Insulæ bonæ fortunæ*." He declares the inhabitants to be *anthropophagi*, which horrid fact is confirmed by late travellers, though it seems they eat human flesh only in revenge towards enemies, or when impelled by famine, to which they are often exposed. They are genuine negroes, and unusually repulsive in appearance, having limbs disproportionally slender, protuberant bellies, high, round shoulders, very large heads, woolly hair, thick lips, and sooty skin. The average height of the men is about five feet. No two races of men are more distinct than this people and the nations around them. How they came here is a problem not solved. The general conjecture is, that a Portuguese slaver from Mozambique was some time wrecked here, and thus peopled the island. But we have the account of two Mahometan travellers, who journeyed eastward in the ninth century, 600 years before Portuguese ships found their way to the Indian Ocean. Their description of these islanders is quite correct. They say, "The complexion of the people is black, their hair frizzled, their countenance frightful, and their feet very large. They go quite naked, and eat human flesh." Perhaps no people on earth stand lower in the scale of humanity. Going utterly naked, and therefore exposed to the annoyance of various insects, they are in the habit of daubing themselves from head to foot with mud, which, hardening, forms a complete defence, but gives them a hideous appearance. Their habitations are scarcely superior to the lair of the monkey. Four slender poles stuck into the ground, tied together at the top, and covered with leaves, form the whole structure. A few leaves scraped into a corner make the bed. Their only manufactures are some poor bows and arrows, hardened at the end by fire, or pointed with bone; and some simple fishing-tackle. Addicted to war (!) and kept down by scanty food, their numbers amount to less than 3000 souls. Who will go to these? Who will carry the torch of truth into that thick gloom! Lord, send by whom thou wilt send!

11.—Passed not far from the Preparis and Narcondam Islands. The former is accessible only on the eastern side. It is about seven miles long, entirely covered with a dense forest, and uninhabited. Monkeys and squirrels, said to be the only quadrupeds, are exceedingly numerous. Narcondam is regarded as of volcanic origin, and has on its summit the apparent crater of an exhausted volcano. Its form is conical, and, though the island is very small, its height is computed at 2500 feet. It is visible in very clear weather seventy miles.

17.—Since leaving Kedgerce, we have held meetings every evening with the men in the fore-castle, and are rejoiced to find eight out of the ten avowing themselves subjects of deep conviction, and declaring their full purpose of heart to follow Christ in all his appointed ways. We usually preach a familiar discourse, and then converse with them personally. Their gradual progress has been very perceptible, and so far very satisfactory. Several of them pray in our little meetings with great propriety. Three of them gave good evidence of conversion, and desire baptism. They are much the most sensible in the crew, and one has an excellent education. We hope they will be found true to their new purpose, and the temptations of the future, and redeemed at last by the grace of God.

CHAPTER II.

Arrival at Amherst. First Sabbath at Maulmain. Coasting Voyage. Moun-ma-goung. Curiosity of the people. Walk over the Mountain. Tavoy. Mata. Karens; their Piety, Liberality, Temperance, Gratitude; Letters from young converts Churches; Books. Mergui; Population; Chinese; Mussulmans and Christians; Siamese Shans; Important as a missionary station. Tenasserim Islands. Se-longs. Storm. Disagreeable insects. Variety of costumes. Karen Juggler. Grave-yard.

MONDAY, FEB. 21, 1836.—Cast anchor at Amherst. Thanks to God for his great mercy in bringing us to our desired haven in safety and peace!

Having yesterday sent a line to Mr Judson at Maulmain, by a small boat, we had scarcely anchored before Mr Osgood was on board to welcome us. It was a joyous meeting, saddened, however, by seeing in brother Osgood's face evidence of infirm health. He brought covered boats to take us to Maulmain, and at ten o'clock, the tide being favourable, we set out, and arrived about day-break. Brother J. received us with exultation at the aid we brought, and we were soon comfortably quartered—myself at brother J.'s, and the rest at the houses of brethren Osgood, Hancock, and Vinton.

Our first Sabbath in this dark land was, of course, full of interest. In the morning, we worshipped with the Burman congregation in the zayat. About seventy were present, nearly all Christians. Seldom have I seen so attentive and devout an audience. They sat, of course, on the floor, where mats were spread for their accommodation, a large bamboo, about eighteen inches from the floor, serving as a rest to the back. In prayer the Americans knelt, and the rest, without rising from the floor, leaned forward on their elbows, putting their palms together. At the close of the petition, all responded an audible "Amen!"—a practice truly apostolic, and strangely discontinued with us. Mr J. preached with much apparent earnestness, and all listened with rapt attention. Several inquirers were present, some of whom applied for baptism.

At night, attended at the chapel, where worship in English is regularly maintained. About one hundred were present, chiefly soldiers. During the whole day the gong resounded in different parts of the city, and in the evening several theatres were opened. We were informed that one of the chiefs was giving a feast of seven days, on the occasion of his last child having his ears bored.

After holding a meeting early on Monday morning, to decide on the destination of Mr Davenport, I returned to the ship, to superintend the discharge of the cargo, and got back in the night on Tuesday. During the intervals of loading lighters, I went ashore, and sketched Mrs Judson's grave, and the tree over it. The head and foot stones are in perfect order, and, with the little grave of "Maria," are enclosed in a light bamboo fence. The mouth of the Salwen and the broad expanse of ocean opens on the left. It is a holy spot, calculated indeed to awaken the emotions which the sweet poetess has ascribed to the traveller.

Instead of attempting to describe my thoughts and feelings as I gazed upon the spot, I will give some stanzas written by Mrs Sigourney, to whom I forwarded a copy of the picture, with the request that she would furnish a few lines.

THE HOPIA TREE,

PLANTED OVER THE GRAVE OF MRS ANN H. JUDSON.

"Rest! Rest! The hopia tree is green,
And proudly waves its leafy screen
Thy lowly bed above;
And by thy side, no more to weep,
Thine infant shares the gentle sleep,
Thy youngest bud of love,
How oft its feebly-wailing cry,
Detained unsealed thy watchful eye,
And pained that parting hour,
When pallid death, with stealthy tread,
Descried thee on thy fever-bed,
And proved his fatal power!

Ah! do I see, with faded charm,
Thy head reclining on thine arm,
The 'Teacher' far away?—
But now, thy mission labours o'er,
Rest, weary clay, to wake no more
Till the great rising day."

Thus spake the traveller, as he stayed
His step within that sacred shade:

A man of God was he,
Who his Redeemer's glory sought,
And paused to woo the holy thought
Beneath that hopia tree.

The Salwen's tide went rushing by,
And Burmah's cloudless moon was high,
With many a solemn star;
And while he mused, methought there stole
An angel's whisper o'er his soul,
From that pure clime afar—

Where swells no more the heathen sigh,
Nor 'neath the idol's stony eye
Dark sacrifice is done;
And where no more, by prayers and tears,
And toils of agonising years,
The martyr's crown is won.

Then visions of the faith that blest
The dying saint's rejoicing breast,
And set the pagan free,
Came thronging on, serenely bright,
And cheered the traveller's heart that night,
Beneath the hopia tree.

TUESDAY, 29.—Waited, with Mr J., on Mr Blundell, the commissioner of the province, or governor, as he is here commonly called, and on Mr Condamine, the second in office. They received us politely, and were able to answer me many important questions. Mr Blundell is regarded as a skilful and prudent governor, and as earnestly desirous of the true prosperity of the country. He estimates the entire population of the provinces under his care at less than 300,000 souls; the provinces of Amherst, Tavoy, Yeh, and Mergui, at less than 100,000; and Arracan at about 200,000.

Having concluded unanimously, at a full meeting of the brethren, to call a general convocation of all our missionaries who could attend and return before the rains, it has become necessary that my visit to Tavoy and Mergui should be made before such meeting, which, in view of all considerations, we appointed for the 30th of March. In order to be exempt from the delays and disappointments attendant on waiting for casual vessels, we chartered a small cutter. She is a tiny craft, of forty or fifty tons, but has a little cabin, which accommodates Mr Abbott* and myself very well.

The coast presents noble mountain scenery, but is entirely uninhabitable, as is the case also with numerous islands, and which form almost a continuous chain a few miles from shore. Dense forests cover the whole, presenting throughout the year a rich and varied verdure. To avoid three, or perhaps four, days' delay in going round Tavoy point, and up the river, I was set ashore, with a few articles of immediate necessity, at Moun-ma-goung, a small Burman village, eight or ten miles walk from Tavoy. It stands nearly a mile from the shore, with wide paths and good houses, beautifully shaded by noble trees, especially the bunyatha or jack, a species of the bread-fruit. While the necessary preparations were being made, I was conducted to the cool zayat, and was scarcely seated on its floor of split canes, when a woman brought a nice mat for me to lie on, another presented me with cool water, and the head man went and plucked for me a half dozen of fine oranges. None sought or expected the least reward, but disappeared, and left me to my repose. A constant succession of children, however, came to gaze at the foreigner, and some women, carrying babes, quitted at a little distance to gratify their curiosity; all, however, behaving with decorum and respect. In a Burman village, the zayat is the only tavern. It

* A fellow-passenger from America, destined for the Karens.

consists of a shed with a floor raised three or four feet from the ground, and wide verandas to keep off the sun. The quality of the building varies with the wealth and generosity of the villagers. Some are truly splendid. As chairs and tables are out of the question, and as every traveller carries his own provision, here is an ample hotel. The neighbours readily furnish water, and fruits seem free. A little fire, kindled near, cooks the rice, an hour's slumber follows the unpretending meal, and all things are ready for a start.

After some repose, the coolie (or porter) having adjusted the baggage at the ends of a pole, placed it on his shoulder, and walked on as guide. After passing some patches of pine-apple, and many noble fruit-trees, of kinds unseen before, we entered the jungle, and began to wend our way over the mountains, which extend along all this coast, and terminate at Tavoy Point. Though no rain has fallen since October, the foliage was fresh and intense. Floe great and small, beamed on us at every step, and in some places filled the air with fragrance. Innumerable vines, creeping, climbing, and depending, seemed to intertwine the trees for mutual support. A great variety of parasites clung to the branches, sometimes with very large leaves, forming a complete and beautiful sheath to the entire trunk, and sometimes sending down long stems thirty or forty feet, waving to the breeze like small ropes. The lower portions of the mountain are of coarse grey granite, the higher parts of some friable stone with which I was not acquainted; the soil generally a stiff reddish clay. Near the summit of the

mountain we stopped at a shallow well, and, spreading a cloth on the ground, my servant produced the result of his morning cooking on board the cutter, with fine cool water, drawn in a joint of bamboo. In the midst of our frugal meal, a couple of pongthees came up, followed by servants bearing their baggage, and stopped under the shade of the same great tree, though on the opposite side. After dining, an ample plateful was given to the coolie, while Jesse sat down and helped himself. The poor coolie took the plate, and, squatting down at some distance from the elder priest, reached forward with great reverence, and presented the whole. The old man and his followers took a little, but with indifference. The bread he smelled, and examined, and tasted, but threw it away. His palate, I suppose, was not adjusted to such a novelty.

As we sat waiting for the sun to decline, Jesse engaged the old man in a religious discussion. They both pleaded with great earnestness and much gesture, mingling ten feet apart. I could but pray earnestly that the poor grey-headed idolator might be convinced of the truth, and my recently-converted man be able to set Jesus savingly before him. How I longed to be able to proclaim to them the great salvation! The old man at length got out of patience, and moved off, followed by his company. The Lord grant that this people may be inclined to accept the heavenly boon which American Christians are offering them! About sunset arrived at Tavoy, and was most kindly received by Mrs Mason and Miss Gardner, the only missionaries now at the station.

MARCH 14.—The ten days spent in this city have been much occupied with the missionaries in hearing statements, asking questions, examining accounts, visiting schools, giving advice, and such other official duties as will recur at every station. Such matters do not belong here, and my readers will not expect to find them in subsequent pages, though they form an important part of my duties.

The town and suburbs of Tavoy contain, as I am informed by the acting governor, 1845 houses, with a population of 3045 souls, giving a fraction less than five to a house. Of these, about two hundred are Chinese men, generally married, and, of course, to Bur-

man females. There are also Malays, Malabars, Mussulmans, &c. The streets are in good order, with much shade, and exhibit some stir of business. Good vessels are built here, and a regular trade maintained with the chief places along the coast from Singapore to Canton. This secures bakers, and many other convenient mechanics.

The province, exclusive of the city, contains 4768 houses, and 25,143 inhabitants; or rather over five to a house. There are from thirty to forty criminal convictions per annum. The revenue is more than equivalent to the expenditure of the company in keeping up its military and civil establishments, which is said not to be the case with any other of these provinces. The number of priests is estimated at about 400. Of nuns there are about 50; of whom all I saw were beyond middle life, and generally wore the aspect of mendicants.

The dialect of Tavoy is a sort of obsolete Burman, scarcely intelligible to those who speak the pure language; but no difference exists in writing.

The missionaries at this station are Mr and Mrs Wade, Mr and Mrs Mason, and Miss Gardner. The latter alone and Mrs Mason attend to the Tavoyers, and only in the way of schools. Of these there are generally five or six, containing about 150 pupils.

The married missionaries, though obliged to reside here part of the year, on account of the unhealthiness of the Karen forests during the rains, give their whole time and attention to that people. The dry season they spend among the mountains, sometimes several months in a place, particularly at Mata. From April to October they remain at Tavoy, engaged in the study of Karen, and preparing books in that language, while their wives, assisted by Miss Gardner, attend to boarding-schools for Karen children, who come to town for this purpose.

Public worship in the Burman language is held every Sunday morning, in a convenient chapel, of ample dimensions, at which the children of all the day-schools, with their teachers, are required to be present. Few of the other heathen citizens attend; seldom more than two or three; and as there are but five native Christians in Tavoy, the congregation is very small. Some that were baptised here, have gone to other places. Worship is also held every evening at the house of one of the missionaries, at which the native Christians, and pupils in the boarding-schools, attend. Seven soldiers have been baptised, but all are now gone, and only a gentleman in the medical service, and the missionaries, form at this time the Baptist communion in Tavoy. In no part of our field is help more wanted than for the Burman department of the Tavoy mission.

Two days' journey from Tavoy, a considerable number Karens, converted in different places, have been brought together, and formed into a Christian village; the heads of every family being members of the church. These Christians now amount to about 200, and conduct themselves with exemplary rectitude. By the aid of the missionaries, they have obtained goats, bullocks, oil-mills, seeds, &c.; and with these, and still more by the increased industry they have been taught to practise, they have been enabled to cease their wanderings, and acquire many comforts to which their countrymen are strangers. Cleanliness, in which Karens are universally deficient, has been attained in no small degree. The men have been exhorted to raise plenty of cotton, and the women induced so to apply themselves to spinning and weaving, as to furnish every one of their families with a change of raiment. They now wash their garments often, which before they scarcely ever did. Their ground under their houses, which always used to be receptacles for filth and vermin, is all swept out clean every Saturday afternoon, and the rubbish burnt. On Sunday they come to public worship perfectly clean, and, as their costume covers the person entirely, the sight would please the most fastidious American eye.*

* Dr Richardson. To this gentleman, who has travelled more extensively in Burmah and these provinces than any other European here, I am indebted for much valuable information.

* Friends who wish to make little presents to the Karen Christians, might send fine tooth-combs, brown soap, writing-paper,

But it is the spiritual change visible at Mata,* which is most delightful. In this respect they present a most attractive spectacle. Punctual in all public services, they fill a large zayat on the Sabbath, and manifest a decorum and devotion far superior to any thing ordinarily seen in America. Being a musical people, and having a book of over a hundred hymns, composed by Mr Mason, they, almost without exception, unite in the singing; and to my ear their psalmody was correct and sweet. After a prayer or a benediction, they all utter an audible "Amen," remain silent on their knees for the space of half a minute, and retire in perfect silence—a practice which would greatly improve our meetings. Mrs

Wade has been in the habit of holding daily a prayer meeting with them at sunrise. Almost every morning before daylight, many gather at the zayat, and commence singing hymns. As soon as Mrs Wade is seen issuing from her door at sunrise, they strike the gong, and presently the multitude come together. It is remarkable, that not one man or woman refuses to pray when called upon. On Sunday a Sunday school is held in the morning, at which all the children of proper age attend; those that are not professors being formed into one company, and the others into another, superintended by the missionary and his wife alternately. Public worship and preaching are held morning and evening. The afternoon is often employed in baptising, or administering the communion; and when this is not the case, prayer-meetings are held at the houses of the sick. Some fifty or more members of the church live at different distances in the country, as far round as five or six miles. These attend punctually, generally walking in on Saturday afternoon, that they may lose no part of the blessed day.

It will of course be supposed that this people, so lately wild and wandering, without books, without even the forms of religion, and furnished as yet with no part of the word of God in their own tongue, and but a single manuscript copy of the Gospel of Matthew, would be exceedingly ignorant of the claims of Christianity. They are indeed so. But it is exhilarating to see the readiness and cordiality with which they enter into the performance of every duty, as soon as it is made known to them. Time would fail to describe all the instances which illustrate this remark; but one or two may be named.

Mrs Wade had on one occasion read to them that chapter in Matthew, which, describing the judgment, speaks of visiting Christ (as represented in his disciple) when sick or in prison, &c. They at once saw how regardless they had been of persons under sickness and sorrow; and the very next day began to perform services to the sick, such as they had never thought of doing before. A poor widow, who had a leprosy sort of disease, and a child about two years old, similarly affected, were visited by many of them the very next day. They performed many repulsive offices for her and her child, brought water, cleaned the house, gave them rice and other articles, and so enriched and comforted the poor creature, that she was bewildered with delight. These attentions have continued constantly. Another, who was bed-ridden with loathsome sores, was attended to in the same way. Since that time no one is suffered to want any thing which the rest enjoy. These kindnesses are done with studied concealment, and can be learned only from the beneficiaries themselves.

On being told of the persecution of Maung Sa, lone and others at Rangoon, and how they had been chained, imprisoned, and excessively fined, they unexpectedly proposed subscribing towards paying his fine and releasing them from prison; and out of their deep poverty actually sent to Rangoon fifty rupees for this purpose. They have built, of their own accord, a sufficient house for the residence of their missionary and his family, and

* The name given their village, importing, literally, "Love." Sometimes they call it Mata-Myn, or City of Love.

a zayat. A greater evidence of Christian generosity is seen in their missionary zeal. Those whose abilities, as assistants or schoolmasters, warrant the missionaries in sanctioning it, are ever ready to part with their families, and go wearisome journeys of six months at a time, among distant villages, where they are utterly unknown, carrying on their backs tracts and food, sleeping on the way in trees, or on the ground, and enduring many privations. Young men whose services are very important to their aged parents in clearing jungle and planting paddy are readily spared, and go to various points during the rainy season teaching schools, for which their salary is from two to three dollars a month—half what they could earn in other employ. About twenty schoolmasters and assistants are now thus employed. Mr Mason has, in his excursions, baptised many converts, who were brought to the knowledge of the truth by these assistants. His last journey among the retired villages between Tavoy and Mergui has been cheered by the reception of a number of such.

The change in regard to temperance is not less remarkable. Unlike the Burmans, whose religion utterly forbids strong drink, and who scarcely ever use it, the Karens use it universally, and generally to excess; every family make arrack for themselves, and from oldest to youngest partake. Drunkenness, with all its train of horrors, is of course rife among them. But no sooner do any become serious inquirers, and consort with the disciples for further instruction, than they totally abandon the accursed thing. In Mata, therefore, not a drop is made or drunk. The children of the very men who were sots, are growing up without having tasted or seen it. The consequences to domestic peace and general welfare are supposed.

It will be recollected that they knew nothing of letters or books, till Mr Wade reduced their language to writing about three years ago. It is found that the system he has adopted is eminently philosophical, and so easy for learners, that, in a few weeks, pupils who have never seen a letter learn to read with facility.

As evidence at once of the benefit of Mrs Wade's school, and the piety of the young converts, I will here give translations of some letters received from pupils on coming away from Tavoy. They are part of some twenty or more, and are a fair specimen.

Letter from a female scholar aged fifteen years.

"Oh great teacher!—We put our trust in Jesus Christ, the eternal God. Oh great teacher, having heard that you have come to Tavoy, I have a great desire to see thy face. Therefore, oh great teacher, when thou prayest to God, I beg thee to pray for me: when I pray, I will remember thee, oh great teacher! When I heard of thy arrival, I had a great desire to go to you. I said to my father, I will go, but he did not give permission. My mind was cast down, and my tears fell much, oh great teacher! Oh pray for me, and I, when I pray, will much pray for thee.—A letter of affection from NAW POO MOO."

From a girl of sixteen, who had been to school nine months.

"Oh great teacher! Sir—Great is the grace and glory of Jesus Christ, the son of the eternal God! In former times we heard not the word of God. But now, Sir, we endeavour very much to keep his commands. I heard of your coming, and my mind was very happy. But I greatly desire to see you; therefore do come to Mata, oh great teacher! By hearing of your arrival, my tears fell much. Great sir, in order that I may keep the word of the Lord, do pray for me, and that we may meet together amidst the joys of heaven: as for me, I trust I exert myself in prayer truly to God. The affectionate letter of the disciple MOO YAT."

From a girl sixteen years of age.

"Oh great teacher!—We put our trust in Jesus Christ, the son of the eternal God. When you pray to God, pray for us; and when we pray, we will pray for thee. When I set out to return, by means of longing after thee I cried much; but by thinking on the grace of God, my mind was somewhat let down. Notwithstanding, during the whole day in which we were separated from you, my longings did not cease. I thought that in this state we see each other but a small moment; but when we arrive in heaven, we shall behold each other age upon age. Then we can—

not be separated. Oh great teacher, I have a painful desire to see your country. In order to go with you, I asked and obtained permission of my mother. If you consent, please write me a kind letter immediately. But if you do not give permission, do not write. As for me, I have an earnest wish to see the country of the teachers and their wives.

NAU MOO KLUR.

I might add many interesting facts and incidents, which filled me with pleasure and thankfulness on their behalf. But I am not drawing a picture, for the sake of exhibiting glowing colours. Christian benevolence does not depend on success. If it did, the town of Mata, amid the solitude of the great mountains of Tavoy, exhibits facts, which, if they were all the effects our whole missionary operations could boast, are sufficient to assure the most incredulous of the blessedness of our enterprise.

When endeavours to do good fail, it is a sweet reward to see those we meant to benefit grateful for our interference. And when good is really done, our pleasure is often neutralised by the pain of being ungratefully requited. Those who support our enterprise ought to know that this people testify aloud their continual gratitude towards the Christians of this country for the knowledge of Christianity. They often compare their former degradation and misery with their present comforts and hopes. The pastor of the Mata church frequently speaks of these things in moving terms—himself once a sot, and cruel. The missionaries cannot remain in the forest during the rains, so that this church is left six months in the year to itself. Their return is the occasion of a general rejoicing. When they are ready, many come to Tavoy to accompany them out, and to carry portions of the articles to be transported; and where the way is sufficiently level, carry Mrs Wade or Mrs Mason in a litter. As the long file winds under the trees, along the narrow crag, or up the bed of a torrent, songs of Zion echo among the dark recesses, and nature rejoices to see her maker glorified by men who for ages received his favours brutally. Warned of their approach, the villagers come forth in troops, some hours' walk, and after glad greetings, fall in behind (for the path admits no double file), and the lengthened train comes into the village with resounding joy.

Nor is Mata alone in its brightness amid Burman shades. All along the jungle, as far as Mergui to the south, and above Maulmain on the north, Karens are turning to God. The missionaries properly discourage their always collecting into exclusively Christian villages, but in some cases it seems expedient and necessary. Among the Karens in the Tavoy provinces are the following churches, besides Mata, which are also regular out-stations:—*Toung Byauk Gale*, two and a half days' south of Tavoy—16 members, 25 inquirers: *Pee-kah*, four days' south of the last-named church—15 members, 43 inquirers: *Kah-pah*, three days' south of Pee-kah, on a stream of the same name, navigable for boats—20 members, and, within a day's walk, 54 inquirers, most of whom have asked for baptism: *Tah-mlah*, on the Tenasserim, three days' from Mergui—9 members. All these have good places of worship, built by themselves; and each has a native pastor and a Christian schoolmaster. There are also in the region six other schools, under Christian masters; and measures are in train to form others. On an average, last year, ten learned to read in each school, some of whom are middle aged, and some quite old persons. The names of the pastors are not given here, because, being young men, they are changed every year; to give each an opportunity of being with the missionary half his time in the acquisition of Christian knowledge.

The only printed books in Karen are three tracts—Mrs Judson's Catechism, translated by Mr Wade, with the commands of the New Testament as contained in the "View;" Sayings of the Fathers, a small tract containing traditions and commands, which remarkably coincide with biblical history; and Mrs Judson's Catechism versified, both the latter by Mr Mason. There

are in the Tavoy provinces about 250 Karens who have learned to read. The younger part of these generally show great earnestness in copying such other works as are prepared by the missionary, and not yet printed. The works which have been written or translated, and the printing of which is greatly needed, are as follows: Gospel of Matthew; Vade Mecum, containing passages of Scripture, with reflections for every day in the month, and embracing an extended View of the Chris-

tian religion, and translation of most of Mr Boardman's Digest, both by native Christians; a tract consisting of didactic and hortatory pieces, by native preachers; Mr Judson's View of the Christian religion, versified, by Sau Panlah, a native assistant; Bible-class Questions on Matthew, by Mr Wade; Brief Biographies of Joseph, and other Old Testament Characters, by the same; Child's Catechism for Sunday schools, by Mr Vinton; Lee-mo-pga, or spelling-book of the Chegau or Myetthio; ditto of the Pwo or Myet kyen (the two dialects used by the Karens), by Mr Wade. Besides these, there are a Grammar by Mr Mason, and a Dictionary by Mr Wade, in an advanced state of preparation, and a considerable mass of manuscripts, for the use of present and future missionaries, which it is not intended to print; such as customs and demon worship of Karens; fables and legends, amounting to more than 100; Karen poems and traditions; many letters from Karens, copied into a book to show the structure of the language; an extensive vocabulary of common things, in English and Karen; another in Burman, Karen, and English; and a phrase-book for beginners, in Burman and Karen.

I was happy to find that the Christians here partook of the zeal of their transatlantic friends, in giving for the support of a preached gospel. A society has been formed, called the "Tavoy Missionary Society, auxiliary to the Baptist Board of Foreign Missions," which has been in existence four years. For the last two years it has supported four native assistants. It is sustained chiefly by the Europeans and Americans at the station, but several of the natives pay their regular monthly contribution.

I had the pleasure, in my voyage from hence down the coast, to be accompanied by the Rev. Mr Wade; and after four days, arrived at Mergui. The only European with whom we had intercourse there was Captain Macleod, the commissioner, or acting governor of the province, who received us at his house with the utmost cordiality. He communicated, with great frankness, many important facts, besides patiently answering a wearisome round of questions. There are but thirty-five British inhabitants in the place, including common soldiers.

Mergui, or, as the natives call it, *Bike*, is beautifully situated at the mouth of the middle branch of the Tenasserim. This noble river has three principal mouths, and several minor ones. The chief is that about four miles north, and receives, a few miles before it enters the ocean, the Byng river from the north. A fine island, opposite the town, shelters it from the south-west monsoon, and makes a safe though small harbour.

The site of the city embraces a high hill, surmounted, as usual, with conspicuous pagodas. Next to the sea it rises abruptly; and the houses of the English, which are erected on its summit, have a magnificent view of the lower town, the harbour, and the ocean. The rear of the hill slopes gradually, and is thickly built with native houses, on regular streets sheltered from the sun by fine fruit, and other trees, almost as close as in a forest. Among these, the cocoa-nut, jack, and papaya, are the most frequent. At the time Captain Alexander Hamilton visited this city, it was in possession of Siam. He calls it *Merje*, and says that "in former times there were many English there." The massacre of these, which was succeeded by the expulsion of those in Siam, occurred in 1687. The chief exports are sapan wood,

denise, lug, tortoise-shell, and edible birds' nests. It was founded within a century by the Burmans. The ancient fortifications are still seen, though rapidly vanishing by the use of the bricks for other purposes. It is thus with the ramparts of all the towns in British Burmah, it being useless to retain extensive walls for a handful of troops, which, if occupied by hosts of natives, might help them in resistance.

The whole province of Mergui has a population of only 10,000, of which above 6000 are in this town. This great scantiness of people in one of the finest regions of the earth, is chiefly owing to the intolerable government under which they have lived. About twenty years ago, it was unusually severe under the viceroyship of Daing-woon, who was engaged in repelling the Siamese. The atrocities of this monster were incredible, and drove forty or fifty thousand inhabitants from the province, besides the multitudes which he destroyed. In speaking to the Burmans of hell, even at this day, no circumstance is so appalling as to assure them that Daing-woon will be there!

Here, as at Maulmain and Tavoy, I find numerous Chinamen married to Burman wives. They are at once the most valuable of the community for mechanical and mercantile conveniences, and the most pernicious for introducing and vending, wherever they go, *arrack* and *opium*. Without them Europeans would suffer many discomforts, and through them the natives are greatly corrupted. Their superiority in civilisation and intelligence to the various nations with whom they are intermixed in every part of the East, is very striking.

Besides the usual quantity of pagodas and kyoongs, there are four mosques, for the use of the Mussulman part of the population, and a Popish chapel. About 400 of the inhabitants, descendants of the early Portuguese, profess to be Christians. No converts that my informants knew of, have joined the number from among the Burmese, except some who unite in order to be married to those who belonged before.

Mergui has been put down as one of our stations, but it was only occupied by a native assistant for six months. We have but one professed Christian in the place, and that a woman. Mr Mason has been thrice through the town, on his way to the Karens up the Tenasserim; and the efforts he and his assistants have made have met encouraging results. In this respect, a very great change has been wrought, we trust, by the good hand of the Lord. Ko Ing was greatly persecuted, and could get but few hearers. He was reviled as he walked along the street, and some would even throw stones. At his death, the people showed no disposition to listen; and his wife, with the above-named woman, were the only Christians. His death robbed the mission of one of its most valuable assistants, and the subsequent marriage and removal of his wife, left the solitary widow to hold up a faint light in a dark place. Now, the case is quite different. A large part of the people readily receive tracts and New Testaments, so much so, that when Ko Myet-lay lately visited the place, taking 150 Testaments and many tracts, all were gone in two days, without going abroad to offer them. All were applied at his lodgings, and received with many expressions of thanks. Not only did he thus impart the blessed truths to Burmans; the Chinese and Siamese, hearing that he also had tracts in their languages, came for them; and he entirely disposed of a considerable quantity sent by Mr Jones from Bankok. It is now easy to obtain attentive hearers, though frequently some dispute. Not only do many listen with apparent candour, but some seem really under serious impressions, and about twelve profess to have embraced the gospel. These have not yet been baptised, for want of opportunity sufficiently to examine and try them; but they are said to be steadfast, though much reviled by their pagan acquaintance. They are like sheep without a shepherd, and need immediate care. Moreover, they would probably form an encouraging church at once, if a missionary could be placed there. The

husband of the disciple above named, and an interesting daughter, are desirous of baptism.

Late circumstances have conspired with the above facts to make Mergui now a favourable opening. A few years ago, the two chief ponghees came to an open rupture, and all the people took sides with one or the other. Great animosity and confusion prevailed for a long time, each party denouncing hell to the other. A few months ago one of them retired to Tavoy, and there died. His party have ever since utterly refused to worship the priests who remain, or make them offerings, and, in fact, have almost ceased from religious observances. These are now particularly ready to hear our preachers.

The fact, too, that Siamese Shyans live here, most of whom, the men at least, speak Burman; and that on the Tenasserim and its tributary streams, and on the coast below Mergui, they have villages, one containing 800 souls, urges us to make early efforts here. If any of these Shyans should receive Christ (and surely we may hope and believe they would), they would be invaluable in carrying the gospel to their countrymen who inhabit the hills and mountains from the Tenasserim to Bankok. Tracts, &c., in this language can at once be had from Mr Jones, and all things seem to be ready. The intercourse between Burmah and Siam, so far as the natives of the two countries are concerned, is perfectly unrestrained, though no white man is allowed to pass the frontier.

Many Karens, too, are conveniently accessible by boat from Mergui, by the Tenasserim and its branches. Mata village stands on an extreme branch of this river, accessible by water only to very small boats. Tenasserim city, once very large, but now containing a population of only about 250, is but forty miles up the river from Mergui. It is resorted to from different places for gold dust, and would be an important outpost for a native assistant.

The islands on the Tenasserim coast are quite populous, and, as yet, have never been visited by Christian teachers. There are three large islands in one cluster, inhabited by Se-longs, without a written language and in a very degraded state. These would claim some of the time of native assistants from Mergui, and occasional visits from the missionary.

All these facts conspire to urge us to place a missionary here as soon as possible. In order to this the man must be sent out, as no missionary on the ground can be spared from his present post. The place is as salubrious, perhaps, as any part of the earth; and the presence of the British officers secures nearly all the conveniences of housekeeping with entire regularity. The cost of living is less than at Maulmain.

Learning that Mr Mason was at a village not far distant on the coast, intending to remain a few days, and then come to Mergui for a passage home, I sent an express, and had the pleasure, in due time, of welcoming him on board the cutter, with ten or twelve coolies who had been carrying his tracts and baggage in the jungle, together with some Karen native preachers. The reports of his journeys are deeply interesting to the friends of missions, and eminently exemplify the usefulness of native assistants.

The present period of the year on this coast is the latter part of the dry season, and is marked by heavy squalls and showers. After these there are about six weeks of clear weather increasingly hot, after which the monsoon changes to the south-west with violent squalls, and the rains set in for six months. In this return voyage to Maulmain we experienced three of these storms, accompanied by much thunder, each severely testing the power of our anchor and vessel. The rocky coast furnishes no harbour except Mergui, Tavoy, and Amherst; and the high mountains which skirt the shore seem to draw together the utmost fury of the elements.

One of these storms, experienced off Tavoy Point, will be memorable to all on board. As night drew on, the thunder, which had been growling on the mountains,

grew more violent. It was evident we should have a hard blow; and the tide turning against us, we were obliged to anchor in an exposed situation. After dark the wind and lightning increased, and we got top-mast, gaff, &c., upon deck, and paying out much cable, waited the issue uneasy. At length it blew a hurricane, and the lightning kept up a glare bright as mid-day. It was but at intervals that it was dark even for a moment, the light flickering constantly like a torch in the wind. We were in the very midst of the electric cloud, and the sharp, cracking thunder was deafening. Torrents of rain drenched the poor fellows on deck (for there was room for only two or three below), and even in the cabin I had to gather my desk, &c. under an umbrella, for the neglected seams let in the water in twenty places. The little cutter pitched heavily at her anchor, and the loud roaring of a lee surf told what we should experience if she parted her chain. We left all in the hands of God, and were sitting in silence below, when a universal shout of terror brought us on deck—a ball of fire rested on the mast-head! The consternation was universal; the captain and every one of the crew vociferating prayers, one to the Virgin Mary, another to Mahomet, &c., each in different language. They seemed frantic, and their voices rose on the tempest like the swelling wail of dying men. One declared it was the devil, and proposed to drive him away by burning a certain mixture to make a horrid smell. They seemed comforted, however, to see us confident, and aware of its cause. The Christian Karens were tranquil but awe-struck, and lay on their knees with their faces to the deck, uttering prayer each for himself in a low but audible voice. It staid clinging to the mast amid all the rocking of the surges, till the lascars were nearly ready with their incantations, and then disappeared. It was an hour of great danger; but the good hand of the Lord was upon us, and our frail bark rode out the storm, which abated in its violence before morning.

Aside from the danger of navigating this side of the Bay of Bengal (except from September to March, when the weather is exceedingly fine), the inconveniences are not small, from the bad construction and management of the vessels employed, and the annoying insects, &c., with which they abound. My little cutter is superior in all those respects to the Burman vessels which I expect generally to sail in from place to place. I can stand up in the cabin, while in those one can only sit, and that on the floor. I have a little quarter-deck, which they know nothing of. And we have an iron anchor, while theirs is but a piece of wood shaped like a fish-hook. On the score of insects, too, I am informed that my condition is far better. In the latter point, however, I can by no means boast. Hundreds of ants, great and small, black and red, move in endless files every where. Cockroaches, flying and creeping, spotted, striped, and plain, walk over me and about me all night, but through mercy they do not bite, and are, withal, quite shy when there is a light burning, and so do not interrupt me when engaged. I now and then kill a forward fellow, but it is in vain to think of abating the nuisance, for their "name is legion." I have nice sugar-cane laid in a corner for the ants, to keep them away, but some of them are blood-thirsty, and bite me with all zeal. I sometimes watch a bold fellow, as he runs over my hand; and when he finds a suitable spot, he raises himself perpendicular and digs into me, kicking and struggling as if he would go through the skin. The spiders I kill without mercy, and busy enough they kept me the first day or two. Some of them have bodies as big as the joint of one's thumb, and occupy as they stand a space as large as the top of a coffee-cup. Mice nibble my clothes at night. I have seen but two or three centipedes, and succeeded in killing them; but there are doubtless more on board. But the mosquitoes! They are a torment day and night. I am comforted with the assurance that strangers suffer most with them, and hope they will not "make a stranger of me" much longer.

Among all these enemies, I have no auxiliaries but

two or three nimble lizards. These I carefully befriend, and they consume as many of the vermin as they can. But what are these among so many! Besides their services in the butchering department, they interest me by their sudden and adroit movements on the walls and ceiling, and, withal, sing for me every night, as soon as the candle is out.

The variety of costume on board is striking. My man is from Madras, and wears generally nothing but a pair of calico drawers. The captain has nothing but a piece of cheek wound tight round his loins, and drawn up between his thighs. The owner's agent, or supercargo, is a Mussulman, and wears, besides the waist-cloth, a muslin jacket with sleeves, tied in front, so as to discover the left breast. The su-cun-ny, or steersman, is a half-blood Portuguese, and wears drawers, and a short shirt or jacket, of red calico. One of the sailors has a regular short gown and petticoat, and the other short drawers only. The Karens wear nothing but a long shirt without sleeves, made of substantial cotton cloth, ingeniously figured in the loom. Diversity in dress is still greater in the towns, arising from the great mixture in the population. I have, however, already become so accustomed to it, that it ceases to excite attention.

We have one person on board who excites my notice—a Christian disciple, who was a Karen Bhookoo, or prophet. He was so struck with fear, when the "great teacher" sent for him into the cabin to ask him some questions, that I got but little from him. He declared that at first he felt impelled, he knew not how, to predict the coming of a deliverer in six months, and sincerely believed it. But when the lapse of that time proved him wrong, he became wilful, and deliberately endeavoured to impose on the people's credulity, to keep up his influence.

Among my luxuries at Tavoy, were several visits to the grave-yard, where, among others, is the tomb of Boardman. It was once a Buddhist grove; and a dilapidated pagoda still remains within the enclosure.

CHAPTER III.

Return to Maulmain. Missionary Conference. Preaching. Bala Island. Karen Churches near Maulmain. Water Festival. Chinese Ceremony. The Mohurram. River Excursion. Remarkable Caves. Karen Christian Village. Church-meeting and Baptism. Population of Maulmain; Commerce, State of Buddhism. State of the Mission, English Influence.

By the utmost diligence in overseeing the boatmen, and taking advantage of every tide and every breeze, I got back to Maulmain, in mercy, the morning of March 30, the very day on which our conference was to convene. We began our session accordingly, having present brethren Judson, Wade, Kincaid, Bennett, Hancock, Mason, Osgood, Vinton, Howard, Webb, Haswell, and Abbott. Every day, except the Sabbath, was diligently spent in the business, and besides many important topics, which, though fully discussed, did not come to a formal vote, the following subjects were acted upon, besides minor ones:—the establishment of a seminary for native assistants; its location, temporary preceptor, and course of studies and by-laws; new fields of labour proposed and described; native schools; polygamy among natives, and the management of such cases in regard to applicants for baptism; reducing the size of the Burman character; the plan of giving English names to native children; boarding-schools, and the best mode of their endowment. Considerable time was taken up in designating the new missionaries to their fields of labour. They seem to be as jewels, which each was anxious to seize. Every man felt keenly the claims of his station or neighbourhood, and longed to see more labourers in what he deemed so promising a field. It was a noble strife of disinterested love, and so small was the reinforcement, compared with the admitted wants, on all sides, that it was difficult to decide where aid should first be sent.

The next Sabbath, being the first in April, I preached to the brethren and sisters by vote of the convocation. We met in the new and unfinished chapel, built for the native church. The building, though large for Burmah, is scarcely larger than many dining-rooms in India; yet, as our little band arranged themselves in one corner, we seemed lost in the space. There was, however, moral power in the meeting; and when I reflected on the recent origin of the mission, its small beginnings, and its various dangers and hindrances, the company before me was a most refreshing sight. Here were twelve missionaries, besides Misses Gardner and Macomber, and the missionaries' wives. Elsewhere in the mission were four evangelists and a printer, not computing those in Siam. The text was, "Glorify ye the Lord in the fires;" and every heart seemed to say Amen, as sentence after sentence came forth. It was delightful preaching to greedy listeners; and long had most of these been deprived of the refreshment of sitting under a gospel sermon. Mr Judson had not heard a sermon in English for fourteen years.

As my eye rested on this loved little company, it was sweet to contemplate the venerable founder of the mission, sitting there to rejoice in the growth of the cause he had so assiduously and painfully sustained. His labours and sufferings for years, his mastery of the language, his translation of the whole Word of God, and his being permitted now to be the pastor of a church containing over a hundred natives, make him the most interesting missionary now alive. What a mercy that he yet lives to devote to this people his enlarged powers of doing good! And we may hope he will very long be spared. His age is but forty-seven; his eye is not dim; not a grey hair shows itself among his full auburn locks; his moderate-sized person seems full of vigour; he walks almost every evening a mile or two at a quick pace, lives with entire temperance and regularity, and enjoys, in general, steadfast health. May a gracious God continue to make him a blessing more and more!

A day or two after the close of our conference, I accompanied Mr Vinton to Balu Island, to counsel with him on the final choice of a spot for a new station, and to visit some Karen villages, where as yet the gospel had not been dispensed. This island forms the right bank of the Salwen river, from Maulmain nearly to Amherst. It is about seventeen miles long, and six or seven wide, settled chiefly by Karens. No portion of these Tenasserim provinces is more fertile, or more carefully and successfully cultivated. The population of course is dense, amounting to over 10,000. Along the whole island, from north to south, stretches a fine chain of moderately elevated mountains.

passed down its western side a few miles, we came to a creek, navigable for row-boats, except at very low tide, and pulled up it to within about two miles of the proposed spot. From the mouth of the creek, the rice fields engross each side as far as the eye can reach, covering an immense flat but little above common high-water mark. The walk from the boat to the spot proposed led through villages and rice-fields, till we began to ascend the mountain, and then presented enough of the beauties of an oriental forest to keep a transatlantic eye intent. Being the midst of the hot season, we of course were deprived of its full glories; but many trees bore large and gorgeous flowers, besides shrubs and smaller plants in great variety. American forest more large trees, and less undergrowth, but they have fewer leaves, and scarcely any flower-bearing trees. We were never a moment without a variety of blossoms in sight, and many fruits.

Arrived at the spot, I found it near one of the lower summits, overlooking rice-fields, limited north and south only by the extent of vision, and to the west commanding a wide view of ocean, distant five or six miles. From the summit of that ledge, a few yards onward, a view scarcely less extensive is had of the Salwen river, Amherst, and the ocean.

It would seem that, though in the jungle, this spot

must be salubrious, from its complete exposure to the sea-breeze, and its great elevation; but I fear it will prove too much out of the way from the main path. After breakfasting on the spot, we descended to the village of the Karen chief, and spent the day making contracts for house materials, and testifying to them the grace of God.

Though we lodged each night in the boat, we spent our time and ate among the people. The glance thus gained at native character was very gratifying. We saw no house where poverty seemed to dwell (though we passed through four or five villages), and no disorder in any place. Wherever we stopped to eat, we entered a house freely, and were immediately offered clean mats, and treated with the utmost hospitality. Able and willing to supply our wants, they sometimes expostulated with the servant, as he was cooking our meals, that he had brought rice and fowls, instead of allowing them to furnish our table. This trait is prevalent among the Karens. Native assistants go from village to village among them, even where the gospel has never been heard, and take literally "neither scrip nor purse." They are bountifully supplied, even where their message meets only with opposition. Mr Vinton, on one occasion, went several days' journey among Karen villages, without servant or food. Every where they killed for him their best fowls, and spread before him rice, fruits, honey, and whatever they had, and gave him their best place to sleep.

Among that portion of the Karens lying contiguous to Maulmain, Mr Vinton is the only labourer. There are in this province three churches—1st, at Ko Chet-thin, village, on the Salwen river, two days' above Maulmain—thirty-seven members, five or six inquirers, Ko Chet-thin pastor; 2d, *Newville*, on the Dagaing river, three days' from Maulmain—twenty-eight members, Ko Tappan pastor; 3d, *Boo-tah*, on the river Attaran—thirty-four members, Ko Taumah pastor. The station at Chumnerah has been abolished by the removal of all the people. The place is no longer inhabited. This part of the mission to the Karens has five valuable native assistants, including the three pastors just named, besides several young members of the church, in training, who give evidence of being called to the ministry. One hundred and twenty-three persons have been baptised in all.

When the amount of labour which has been bestowed on this portion of the Sgau Karens is considered, these results will appear exceedingly encouraging. Miss Cummings went to Chumnerah to acquire the language, but died before she was able to speak it. Mr Judson commenced this department of the mission, and resided among the people a few months. He, however, retired thither chiefly to be undisturbed in translating, and devoted but a small part of his time to direct missionary labour. Mr and Mrs Vinton came out in December 1834; and their time, of course, has been almost wholly occupied in getting the language. They have already made a beginning in proclaiming the gospel, but much of their time will still have to be spent in study. They are now the only labourers among this people; and six months of the year they must leave these infant churches, and retire from the jungle to their new station on Balu Island. The past dry season, they visited them each, and passing up the Un-zan river, twelve days' from Maulmain, established several schools in important villages. They hope to be able to reside on this island during the rains, continuing the itinerant system in the dry season.

The festivities which usher in the new year (commencing at the April new moon) have, for several days past, kept the town excited. Before every Burman house is erected a slight bamboo palisade, six or eight feet long, decorated very tastefully with young palm-trees, and pots of water, filled with various beautiful blossoms. The moistened streets send up an enlivening freshness, which, with the odours of the flowers, makes the street like a charming avenue in a garden. The absurd yet amusing ceremony to which these are pre-

parations, seems peculiar to Burmans. It is a general war of water. Every one is at liberty to wet his neighbour, but the compliment is chiefly paid by women to men, and men to women; the children taking the principal share of the business into their hands. I have just been riding along the principal streets to witness the scene; but no one offered to compliment me, or other foreigners, with a bowl of water. They know that foreigners, whose raiment is not so easily changed, do not relish the sport; though sometimes, out of ill-timed complaisance, they submit to it. Almost universally the people take it pleasantly; but occasionally I saw little fellows chased and overthrown in the dirt, who played off on men. It certainly requires some command of temper, to show entire nonchalance when the children project a forcible stream from large bamboo syringes directly into the eyes and ears, creeping up slyly for the purpose, and running off with exultation. Not a native is to be seen with dry clothes; but "holiday clothes," on this occasion, are their poorest.

No one can assign any origin or signification to this custom. It seems as if it must have originated in some notions of purification from the sins of the old, and entering cleansed upon the new year; but Buddhists have no idea of the remission of sins in any way. Their only hope is to balance them with merit.

Besides this harmless and merry custom, the religious celebrations of several classes of foreigners have kept the town in confusion for a fortnight past. The Chinese have just had their annual ceremonies in memory of deceased ancestors. Hearing, a few mornings since, an uncommon din of great gongs and other discordant instruments, I went to the veranda, and saw the procession pass to the cemetery. It was a meagre affair as to pomp, but doubtless quite as absurd as if it had been in their own country. A succession of tables, borne, like biers, on men's shoulders, were spread with hogs, goats, and poultry, roasted whole, and various other eatables; the horrid music followed, and a procession with streamers, terminated by a man or two with muskets, firing at short intervals. A priest, in proper costume, walked on each side of the tables.

Nothing can exceed the revolting exhibitions made by the Hindoo Mussulmans, who also are now holding their annual feast of Mohurram. By nature almost black, they make themselves entirely so with paint; many of them adding blotches and hideous figures, not only on their faces but on every part of their body, and of every coloured earth they can find. Some go further, and put on masks of infernal ugliness, with horns, snouts, and indescribable distortions. I never beheld them but with fresh horror. Moving about the streets in companies, they writhle every muscle, some throwing their arms about as if ready to attack every one they meet, others slapping long flat sticks together; some beating on drums, and pieces of brass, others filling the air with yells and clamour. Man could not more brutify himself, even in the madness of intoxication.

These three ceremonies are, perhaps, pretty fair specimens of the habits of the three nations of idolaters. Surely they furnish no ground for the boast of the infidel as to the purity and nobleness of human nature, evinced by pagans whose morals have not been contaminated by Europeans.

Desirous of seeing the people, as much as possible, in their own retired villages, where foreign influence is unknown, and of ascertaining the number, locality, &c., from personal observation, I occupied the latter part of April in making two excursions into the interior; one up the Dagaing, and the other up the Salwen river. In the first, Mrs Judson accompanied me, and in the last and longest, Mr J. himself. We slept generally in the boat, stopping at shady villages to cook our food, distribute tracts, &c.

The whole region immediately above Maulmain is alluvial; the rocks chiefly blue limestone of excellent quality. The country is flat, fertile, and beautiful, but, though once populous, is now thinly inhabited. The

scenery is rendered romantic and peculiar by small mountains, rising abruptly from the level fields to the height of four, five, and six hundred feet; the base scarcely exceeding the size of the summit. In most parts, rees and shrubs cling to the sides; but here and there the castellated and perpendicular rocks project above the foliage, like the turrets of some huge ruined tower. On the summits of many of them, apparently inaccessible to human feet, Buddhist zeal has erected pagodas, whose white forms, conspicuous far and near, remind the traveller every moment that he surveys a region covered with the shadows of spiritual death. Some of the smaller of these hills I ascended. My heart sickened as I stood beside the dumb gods of this deluded people, looking down and around on a fine country, half peopled by half civilised tribes, enjoying but half the blessings of their delicious climate, borne by whole generations to the chambers of death. They eat, and drink, and die. No inventions, no discoveries, no attainments, no enjoyments, are theirs, but such as have descended to them age by age; and nothing is left to prove they have been, but their decayed pagodas, misshapen gods, and unblessed graves.

Most of these mountains contain caves, some of them very large, which appear to have been, from time immemorial, specially devoted to religious purposes. The wealth and labour bestowed upon these are of themselves sufficient to prove how great the population has been in former ages. I visited, in these excursions, three of the most remarkable—one on the Dah Gieng, and two on the Salwen. They differed only in extent, and in the apparent antiquity of the idols they contained. Huge stalactites descended almost to the floor in many places, while, in others, stalagmites of various magnitudes and fantastic shapes were formed upon the floor. In each, the bats occupied the lofty recesses of the ceiling, dwelling in deep and everlasting twilight. In one they seemed innumerable. Their ordure covered the bottom, in some places to the depth of many feet. Throwing up some fragments of idols, we disturbed their noon-tide slumbers, and the effect was prodigious. The flutter of their wings created a trembling or pulsation in the air, like that produced by the deepest bass of a great organ. In the dusk of the evening they issue from the cave in a thick column, which extends unbroken for miles. The natives all affirmed this to be the case every evening; and Mr Judson himself, when here with Major Crawford and others, saw the almost incredible fact.

This cave has evidently been long deserted, except that a single large image at the entrance is kept in repair, before which were some recent offerings. I might, therefore, have easily obtained images for my friends; but Mr J. being afraid of an injurious influence on the native Christians who were with us, I abstained, and afterwards obtained a supply by regular purchase.

The last one we visited is on the Salwen, about fifteen or twenty miles above Maulmain. The entrance is at the bottom of a perpendicular but uneven face of the mountain, enclosed in a strong brick wall, which forms a large vestibule. The entrance to this enclosure is by a path, winding along the foot of the mountain; and nothing remarkable strikes the eye till one passes the gate, where the attention is at once powerfully arrested. Not only is the space within the wall filled with images of Gandama of every size, but the whole face of the mountain, to the height of eighty or ninety feet, is covered with them. On every jutting crag stands some marble image, covered with gold, and spreading its uncouth proportions to the setting sun. Every recess is converted into shrines for others. The smooth surfaces are covered by small flat images in burnt clay, and set in stucco. Of these last there are literally thousands. In some places they have fallen off, with the plaster in which they were set, and left spots of naked rock, against which bees have built their hives undisturbed. Nowhere in the country have I seen such a display of wealth, ingenuity, and industry. But imposing as is

this spectacle, it shrinks to insignificance, compared to the scene which opens on entering the cavern itself. It is of vast size, chiefly in one apartment, which needs no human art to render it sublime. The eye is confused and the heart appalled, at the prodigious exhibition of infinitude and folly. Every where, on the floor, over head, on the jutting points, and on the stalactite festoons of the roof, are crowded together images of Gandama—the offerings of successive ages. Some are perfectly gilded; others encrusted with calcareous matter; some fallen, yet sound; others mouldered; others just erected. Some of these are of stupendous size; some not larger than one's finger; and some of all the intermediate sizes; marble, stone, wood, brick, and clay. Some, even of marble, are so timeworn, though sheltered of course from changes of temperature, that the face and fingers are obliterated. In some dark recesses bats were heard, and seemed numerous, but could not be seen. Here and there are models of temples, kyongs, &c., some not larger than a half bushel, and some ten or fifteen feet square, absolutely filled with small idols, heaped promiscuously one upon another. As we followed the paths which wound among the groups of figures and models, every new aspect of the cave presented new multitudes of images. A ship of five hundred tons could not carry away the half of them.

Alas! where now are the successive generations whose hands wrought these wonders, and whose hearts confided in these deceptions? Where now are the millions who came hither to confess their sins to gods that cannot hear, and spread their vain oblations to him that cannot save? The multitudes are gone, but the superstition remains. The people are left like the gleanings of the vintage, but the sway of a senseless, hopeless system is undiminished. Fewer bow in these dark recesses, but no better altars witness holier devotions. May we not hope great things from the effect of a full toleration secured by the present rulers, and a full tide of missionary effort set forward by American churches? Thanks be to God that a Christian nation rules these provinces, and a Christian community sends forth light and truth. Happy and auspicious is the mental dawn which now begins to break! May Christians pray it into perfect day!

On the third day after leaving Manuhain, we arrived at the newly-formed Christian village of which Ko Chet-thing, so well known in America, is pastor. It numbers as yet but thirteen houses, of which most of the adults are Karen disciples, drawn together to enjoy the means of mutual edification. Thirty-nine members constitute the church, and others are about to remove thither. Few of the great effects produced at Mata are yet visible here; but religion has already placed this little band far above their wandering brethren in many respects. At least, it has saved their souls! Did it leave them all in their destitution of comfort and refinement, the deficiency, when compared to the gain, would be a grain of sand—to the universe!

Mr Vinton was absent on a preaching tour up the river. Mrs Vinton received us with a hearty welcome, and the disciples were not behind in paying their cordial respects. My intended visit had been announced to them a fortnight ago, and a church-meeting and communion season appointed. Some Christians from other villages had arrived, and others kept emerging from the jungle all day. Several brought presents of eggs, plantains, honey, &c., and the occasion evidently possessed in their minds great interest. A number of serious inquirers and hopeful converts presented themselves. Several, who had for some months given evidence of a spiritual change, asked baptism, and the evening was spent in warm devotional exercises. We lodged in little rooms partitioned off at the end of the chapel, and most of those who came from a distance lodged in the building. It was truly refreshing to hear them conversing, till a late hour, on the things of the kingdom. As one after another at length grew sleepy, he engaged in private prayer in a low tone of voice, I himself for repose on the clean bamboo

floor. The voice of prayer was in this manner kept up till midnight.

Next morning we had a church-meeting, at which, among other business, three candidates for baptism were received. Some others were deferred for the present. The rude-looking assembly (lately so rude indeed, and so ignorant of eternal things) transacted their business with much order, and great correctness of judgment. Now, and several times before, I addressed them officially, through Mr Judson, examining into their degrees of religious knowledge, and leaving them various injunctions relating both to temporal and eternal things. In the afternoon we met again, and, after religious exercises, walked in procession to the water side, where, after singing and prayer, I baptised the candidates in the name of the Holy Three. The river was perfectly serene, and the shore a clean sand. One of those lofty mountains which I have described rose in isolated majesty on the opposite shore,* intercepting the rays of the setting sun. The water was perfectly clear, the air cool and fragrant, the candidates calm and happy. All was good. May that lonely mountain often, often echo with the baptismal hymn and the voice of prayer! Next morning we had the Lord's supper, and departed, amid the tears and prayers of these lovely children of the forest.

How blessed and golden are these days to Burmah! Men love to mark the glorious sunrise. Painters copy it; poets sing it; all derive pleasure and elevation as they gaze while it blazes up the heavens, turning to gorgeous purple every dull cloud, gilding the mountain tops, and chasing the mists from the valley. God seems present, and creation rejoices. But how much more glorious is the dawn I am permitted here to witness! All the romance which swells the bosom of the sentimentalist, gazing on early day, is coldness and trifling, compared to the emotions a Christian may cherish when he sees the gospel beginning to enlighten a great nation. Surely we may hope such is the case here, and that the little light which has invaded this empire of darkness will issue in perfect day. I see a dim twilight; others will rejoice in the rising sun, and others in the meridian day. Oh Lord, come with thy great power! Inspire the churches to do all their duty, and prepare all people for thy truth.

I have now seen much of the Karens, and gathered what information there is respecting them, which will be introduced, with notices of other tribes, in a subsequent chapter.

The city of Manuhain was only a few years ago a jungle, though some intelligent natives affirm that it was once a large city, and the metropolis of a Shyan kingdom, then independent. After the cession of these provinces to the English, it was selected as a military post, and a town sprang up, which has continually increased, and numbers now 18,000 souls. The rest of the province contains about 30,000 more, of whom some thousand are Karens and Pongthoos. The city consists principally of one street, which extends along the river about two and a half miles. The river is about a mile wide, with a tide of twenty feet perpendicular rise. In the rear, distant about a quarter of a mile, is a long narrow hill, running parallel to the river, presenting along its summit a string of pagodas mostly fallen to ruin. From a fine road, made here by Sir A. Campbell, the whole city, with the river, shipping, and high hills on the opposite island of Balu, are in full view. The location of the city has been found exceedingly salubrious, and gentlemen in the company's service are glad to resort hither for health, from the opposite shore of the Bay of Bengal. The settlement is too recent to be adorned with noble shade trees, like Tavoy and Mergui, but is well laid out, and the Burmans, always tasteful in such matters, have planted them to a sufficient extent. Over the water-courses are handsome bridges of substantial masonry; and fine roads are made, and being made, in various directions.

* Containing also a cavern filled with idols, which, however, I had not time to visit.

Being the metropolis of British Burmah, the commissioner or acting governor resides here. The garrison consists of a regiment of the line, a detachment of artillery, and some companies of sepoy. The officers of this force, and the gentlemen connected with the civil service, make a considerable circle of English society, which, with soldiers, traders, &c., and their families, ensure all the conveniences of an abundant market, various mechanics, and well-supplied shops. In the market may always be had fresh beef, pork, goat, venison, and poultry, butter, eggs, milk, &c., with great plenty of the finest fish, fruits, and vegetables. In passing through it one day, I counted thirty-two different kinds of fruit besides vegetables. The price of articles, with some exceptions, is cheaper than in our cities—fowls, two rupees a dozen; rice, half a rupee a bushel. The best of bakers' wheat-bread is sold at about our rates, and British goods are in general cheaper than with us. On the whole, it is perhaps as pleasant and desirable a residence as any part of the east.

On commerce and trade there are no restrictions. Vessels pay no tonnage, and merchandise no duty. Even pilotage is established at low rates, and such as choose to dispense with a pilot, pay only a small sum for the benefit of the buoys. Ship and boat building, on English and native models, is done to the amount of some thousand tons per annum.

The imports from Tavoy and Mergui are principally attaps, or demees (leaves stitched upon strips of ratan, ready for thatching), damar torches, cardamoms, sapen wood, guaper, ratans, preserved doryans, mats, salt, yams, and ivory. In return are sent to these places cotton, oil, English goods, paddy, beef, lime, and tamarinds.

From Rangoon are imported catech, stick-lac, gram, oil-seed, earth-oil, sesamum oil, lappet (tea), wheat, ivory, lackered ware, glazed pottery, jaggery (black sugar), Burman silks, tamarinds, chillies, garlic, &c.; and in return are sent araca-nuts, cotton, dates, English goods, coco-nuts, &c.

From Penang are brought umbrellas, muskets, torches, dates, coffee, &c.; and in return are sent chiefly paddy and rice.

From Calcutta are brought specie, English goods, wines, ginger, steel, rose-water, sugar; and almost the only important return is teak timber. The same may be said of Madras. This is about the whole commerce of Moulmain. From eight to twelve vessels enter and clear per month.

Among the inhabitants are 500 Chinese, and above 2000 other foreigners, most of whom are from Bengal and Madras. Each class has a place of worship, and adheres to its national costume and habits. The English have a company's chaplain, and a capacious church. Here service is regularly performed, and the troops are required to attend. The English Baptist church have also a good meeting-house of teak, and one of the missionaries always acts as pastor. At present, Mr Osgood discharges this duty, in connection with his engagements at the printing-office.

Though there is not the slightest restraint upon idolatry in these provinces, the people are certainly less devoted to their superstition than before the war. It is scarcely possible to discover, from the appearance of the streets, when the worship days occur; and the number of priests is much less than it would be among an equal population in Burmah Proper. The people are evidently ripening for some change. There is therefore eminent necessity for following up, with the utmost vigour, the means for extending Christianity. The morals of the people would greatly suffer by the loss of their religious system, if no other were to be substituted. Such a crisis is not altogether improbable, and the people of God are most affectingly called upon, by the state of the case, to send out more teachers forthwith.

Still, Buddhism is as yet by no means a neglected system. New pagodas are making their appearance in different parts of the city. There are twenty-nine kyoungs, containing somewhat more than 500 priests,

including noviciates, who are plentifully supported. The kyoungs are vastly superior to the dwellings of the common people, and some of them are situated in delightful groves with ample grounds. Here and there is a sacred bannian-tree, carefully nurtured, and occasionally lighted with lamps at night. In the city and suburbs are seventy-eight pagodas.

My evening walks with Mr and Mrs Judson were upon the hills, and near the principal of these pagodas. The ascent is fatiguing, though part of the way is facilitated by brick stairs twelve or fifteen feet wide. The pagoda, as usual, is entirely solid. Around its base are smaller ones, and numerous shrines built of brick nicely stuccoed, like little temples, from the size of a large dog-house up to the size of a small dwelling. Within and around these are images of Gaudama, precisely like the pictures of him common in America, generally all gilt. Little paper flags, &c., &c., are before them—the offerings of the devout. Tall flag-staffs are numerous planted on the crown of the hill, with various streamers, some of which are tasteful and elegant.

A large and substantial house stands beside the pagoda, literally filled with images of Gaudama, most of them of colossal size. These are made of brick, with a thick coating of plaster, perfectly smooth, and resembling marble. There are some hundreds of these, all in perfect repair, many of them apparently placed there by these deceived idolaters quite lately. The number continually increases. One of these images is in a recumbent posture, and must be at least forty feet long. Some of the images represent worshippers, in a most reverent attitude, before certain figures.

While walking among these distressing evidences of folly and misery, we often saw scenes like the following:—A poor man struggled up the back part of the mountain with a little child on his back, less than three years old, plucking a few green twigs from the bushes as he passed. He went up to a great bell suspended in the area, and taking a deer's horn lying on the ground for the purpose, struck it twice or thrice. Then, reverently entering the image-house, he prostrated himself, and taught his lit le one to do the same, which it did so readily as to make it certain it was not its first attempt. He then prayed with the palms of his hands placed together, and raised to his forehead, while the poor little babe lisped out some of the same words. At the conclusion, he walked up to the idol he had addressed, and laid before it, with great solemnity, his offering of green leaves; and taking up the babe, descended the mountain.

Oh ye parents, who take no pains to teach your little ones to adore, and trust, and serve the eternal God, be moved and abashed. That poor idolator may confront and condemn you at the last awful day!

Thank God, the gospel is slowly extending its happy conquests in this place. Two very respectable people applied for baptism at Lord's day, and many are persuaded that Boodhi is no God. A hundred Christians hold forth the truth, and a growing press presents to the people the divine testimony. But we must pray for the spirit's influence. May not this be our chief deficiency?

The mission here was established by Mr Boardman with the first settlement of the town by the British in 1827. Mr Judson came in a few months, and Mr Boardman left the place to commence the station at Tavoy. It is now the principal point in our mission, having the printing-office, five houses for missionaries, an English chapel, a large teakwood zayat, and smaller zayats in different parts of the town. Belonging to the station are Mr Judson, Mr Hancock, Mr Osgood, and Mr Bennett. The latter is wholly engaged in teaching an English high-school for native children, and is nearly supported by the salary allowed by the company.

The printing-office is of brick, two stories high, 136 feet long by 56 wide. It contains four hand-presses, and a power press, equal to two more; twelve small founts of English type, one of Burman, one of Karen, and one of Taling. For these last there are punches and

matrices complete, so that they may be cast anew at any time. The expense has, of course, been enormous, there being about one thousand matrices for the Burman font alone. A new set of punches and matrices has just been ordered for the Burman character, on a size reduced one third. The upper rooms of the office are devoted to a bindery, storage, &c. The capabilities of the bindery are fully equal to the work of the printing-office. Every part of the labour, in printing and binding, is performed by natives, of whom, on an average, twenty-five are constantly employed.

The native church under Mr Judson's care has more than a hundred members. Some sixteen or eighteen are valuable assistants, of whom a part are generally employed at other stations. Such as are employed here, meet Mr Judson every morning at sunrise, and give an account of their labours during the previous day, often rehearsing the very conversations. An excellent opportunity is thus obtained for enlarging and rectifying their views, and giving them helpful ideas in particular cases. On Sunday, the congregation consists of but few besides the church members. If any attend three or four Sundays, they are pronounced disciples by their friends, and indeed generally become so.

Scarcely more direct missionary labour is expended on this city than on Tavoy. Mr Hancock is not yet sufficiently master of the language to be able to preach, and Mr Osgood has of course made still less advance. Nor do the printing-office labours of these brethren allow them to devote much time to study. Mr Judson has been so much engrossed with revising the translation of the whole Old Testament, and proof-reading, for several years, as to be wholly prevented from labouring publicly, either in the *zayat* or from house to house. Mr Bennett is confined to the school, the labours of which are truly arduous. Thus this great city, with nominally four missionaries, has no evangelical labour done for it, except by the native assistants.

Mrs Hancock has under her care two schools, containing together twenty-five scholars, a few of them females, which she examines monthly. One of the teachers is a disciple. It is very common for the pupils to be withdrawn after a while, sometimes even before they learn to read. All are required to attend worship on Lord's days, and are both then and at other times instructed in religion. From four to eight of the scholars are supported by the mission, at an expense of about three rupees a-month. One of these schools has been in existence three years, and during that time six of the scholars have passed from death unto life. The other school is but of four months' standing.

Mrs Osgood* has two schools for girls, which contain together nineteen scholars. One of the teachers is a Christian. Christian instruction is imparted very much as in the boys' schools. None of the pupils are boarded at present. One of these schools has existed ten months, the other has just now gone into operation. No conversions have taken place.

Mr Bennett's school is large and flourishing. He possesses a happy talent in imparting instruction, and the stated examinations abundantly attest his diligence. The English language is the principal object, and many of the pupils have made surprising proficiency.

The labour which has been bestowed on schools at this station shows little fruit. There are, however, a few pupils, who, having long attended, are obviously elevated by the process. I give a specimen of the composition and spelling of one who was a scholar of Mrs Boardman's in 1839, and is now a pupil in Mr Bennett's school, and a promising member of the church. It is a letter to one of the missionaries in Tavoy, and is given as he wrote it in English, literature. The penmanship is beautiful.

Your young brother Moung Bwah sends to you benevolence, love, and in the faith, grace, mercy, and peace from God our

Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord. Because of God, love, and benevolence, my soul and body are well. I am still in Maulaia, ever learning wisdom and instruction of the teacher. I endeavour to follow the teacher's words, and learn my lessons with diligence, and not to be idle. I pray Jesus Christ for you and your's, neighbour. Pray, you to God for me; I with respect beg you to. Through the Saviour, Lord Jesus Christ's mercy, I am quite still in God's commandment.

All who love the Lord Jesus Christ's glory, hope in our way. This world is like a wild island, with many ferocious wild animals. The Saviour Jesus, to save us, come from the Father's nearness with the *save-ship*, that we poor sinner might be saved. But we every day hope in God's mercy, and desire a gentle and quite mind.

Before time, first man Adam, first woman Eve, two persons sinned. We have all gone out of the way, we are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no, not one, when we trust in Jesus, we all ride the *save-ship*, and free from sin, and wild animal's harm. That nearness to the Lord, free us from harm, and make us quite and happy. Then we are near the Lord, and worship with respect. God's mercy on me that I may grow wiser in good wisdom, my older sister, if God give me permission, you will again see me, then I should be very glad. Your affectionately,
MOUNG BWAH."

English influence in a variety of ways improves the temporal condition of these provinces. It has abolished those border wars, which kept this people and their neighbours continually wretched. None but those familiar with the country can describe the evils produced by a Burman war. The troops are drawn from the remotest provinces, and as they march, labourers, stores, money, boats, and cattle, are taken without compensation. They have no tents, no pay, no regular rations, and suffer every sort of hardship. Every where as they go, the people fly into the jungle, and such property as cannot be carried away is plundered without restraint. Poverty and distress are thus spread over the whole kingdom, even by a petty border conflict. Of course, at the seat of war, every evil is magnified a hundred fold. The mode of raising troops is the worst possible. Each chief is required to furnish so many, and is sure to get rich by the operation. He calls first upon those who have money, and suffers them to buy themselves off, taking finally only those who have no money. So, if he want boats, the richer boatmen pay a bribe, and get off, and the poorer must go. So with carts, and in fact, every thing. The suppression of war cuts off a large portion of the chances for these extortions.

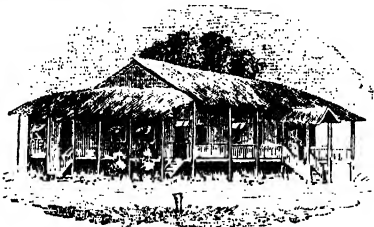
In the Tenasserim provinces various improvements are perceptible. Coin is getting introduced instead of masses of lead and silver; manufactures are improving; implements of improved construction are used; justice is better administered; life is secure; property is sacred; religion is free; taxes, though heavy, are more equitably imposed; and courts of justice are pure, generally. Formerly, men were deterred from gathering round them comforts superior to their neighbours, or building better houses, for fear of exactions. Now, being secure in their earnings, the newly-built houses are much improved in size, materials, and workmanship. There are none of those traps and trammels which embarrass courts in England and America. The presiding officer in each province, Amherst, Tavoy, and Mergui, sits as magistrate on certain days every week; and before him every citizen, male or female, without the intervention of lawyers, may plead his cause and have immediate redress. Every where in British Burmah, the people praise English justice; but they are not yet reconciled to regular taxation. Though the Burman government, or its oppressive agents, took from them more than they pay now, yet it was occasional, consisted chiefly in labour, and they were not under the necessity of saving any thing against a certain day—a matter to which they have been altogether unaccustomed.

Presuming that my readers would be glad to see Mr Judson's residence, and desirous of giving a specimen of the houses of our Burman missionaries, I made a

* "THE MIRROR," February 15, 1839.

* Mrs Osgood died of consumption, Oct. 5, 1837, having been less than three years in the country.

drawing, which is given in a reduced size below. It contains three good-sized rooms and two small ones, it is built precisely like the natives' houses, only larger and better, and cost about three hundred dollars. All our Burman missionaries use similar ones. During my pleasing residence with this great and good man, the small room on the extreme left was my chamber, and the large one, with two little fir-trees under the windows, my study. The centre room is the dining-hall, and the farthest one Mr J.'s chamber. His study is a large apartment partitioned off from one end of the chapel. The kitchen, or "cook-house," is always a small, separate building.



Mr Judson's house.

CHAPTER IV.

Population of Rangoon; Commerce; Prices of Living. Shoodagön Pagoda. Slaves of the Pagoda. Sunrise Worship. Rainy Monsoon. History of the Mission. Maubee. Labour of Native Assistants. Interesting Case. Voyage to Pegu. Evidences of former Greatness. Shoodagön Pagoda. Voyage up the Irrawaddy. Boats. Mode of Fishing. Prance. Laper Village. Gaudama's Foot. Burman Energy. Earth-oil Wells. Shyan Caravan. Ruins of Pagan. Attempt to buy Beef. Buffalo Herdmen. Curiosity of Natives. Toddy. Arrival at Ava.

On the 14th of May, the sad hour of bidding adieu to the dear missionaries and their interesting disciples arrived, and I embarked for Rangoon. Every day had increased my regard for them, and the probability of seeing them no more made the last few days truly sorrowful.

The change of the monsoon, which now takes place, is often accompanied with severe squalls; but these coasting vessels have little fear of them, and never lay up on that account. Often the season passes without any that are serious, as it has this year. We had two or three flurries with rain; but they helped us on powerfully, and the 17th (of May) found me at Rangoon, without accident. The entrance of the river, though six miles wide, is difficult to find, the channel very narrow, and the coast very shoal for a great distance above and below; while a perfectly flat shore, scarcely above high tides, gives the mariner no certain land-marks. There are no pilots to be had, but by sending a boat to the city. On one point is a cluster of trees, which has been called "the elephant," from a fancied resemblance to that animal; but my imagination was too dull to discern much shape. The sands have extended some miles to the southward, since the coast was first surveyed.

Having passed the ordeal of the custom-house, without any special vexations, I found Messrs Webb and Howard, with their wives, in usual health, and received from them a kind and cordial reception.

The name of Rangoon is so conspicuous in the annals of our mission, and occurs so often in the narratives of travellers on this coast, that I naturally entered it with feelings of peculiar interest. Association of ideas, of course, keeps up some of that interest; but so wretched a looking town, of its size, I have nowhere seen. The city is spread upon part of a vast meadow, but little above high tides, and at this season resembling a neglected swamp. The approach from the sea reveals nothing but a few wooden houses between the city wall and the shore. The fortifications are of no avail against modern modes of attack. They consist of merely a row

of timbers set in the ground, rising to the height of about 18 feet, with a narrow platform running round inside for musketeers, and a few cannon, perhaps half a dozen in all, lying at the gateways, in a useless condition. Some considerable streets are back of the town, outside the walls.

The entire population is estimated at 50,000, but that is probably too much. There is no other seaport in the empire, but Basscin, which has little trade, and the city stands next in importance to Ava; yet there is nothing in it that can interest a traveller. A dozen foreigners, chiefly Monguls, have brick tenements, very shabby. There are also four or five small brick places of worship, for foreigners, and a miserable custom-house. Besides these, it is a city of bamboo huts, comfortable for this people, considering their habits and climate, but in appearance as paltry as possible. Maulmain has already many better buildings. The eaves of the houses generally descend to within six or eight feet of the ground; very few being of more than one story, or having any other covering than thatch. Cellars are unknown, and all the houses are raised two or three feet above the ground for coolness and ventilation. As the floors are of split bamboo, all dirt falls through, and what is not picked up by crows, dogs, fowls, &c., is occasionally swept out and burned. For nearly half the year, the city presents a most singular appearance, half sad, half silly. By a standing law, on the setting in of the dry season all the thatch must be removed, except a particular kind, not common, made partly of split bamboo, which will not easily burn. Were it not for the people in the streets, and the cloths of various kinds put up in the houses to keep off the sun, it would seem, at these times, like a city deserted.

The streets are narrow, and paved with half-burnt bricks, which, as wheel-carriages are not allowed within the city, are in tolerable repair. There is neither wharf nor quay. In four or five places are wooden stairs, at which small boats may land passengers; but even these do not extend within twenty feet of low water mark. Vessels lie in the stream, and discharge into boats, from which the packages, slung to a bamboo, are lugged on men's shoulders to the custom-house.

The commerce of the place is still considerable, though greatly crippled by enormous port-charges, and absolute prohibitions against exporting rice or the precious metals. Specie is exported, but only by adroit smuggling. Could rice be exported freely, a most beneficial trade, both to government and people, might be carried on, the agriculturist receive a better reward for his toil, and the price of land be raised throughout the kingdom. Paddy is now selling at five rupees the hundred baskets; that is, about two dollars fifty cents for a hundred bushels!

The best of cleaned rice is four annas a basket—about twelve cents a bushel! Wheat, as good as I have ever seen, is selling at twenty dollars per hundred bushels. Such prices would send here half the vessels in Bengal Bay. How strange that governments must always be doing damage, by dabbling in matters which, if left to themselves, would prosper! However, the policy is certainly more wise than that of Great Britain, which lets some of her subjects annually starve, and others constantly suffer, by keeping bread-stuffs away.

Other necessities are equally cheap in Rangoon—fowls, about one dollar per dozen; black tea, brought down the Irrawaddy from China, twelve cents a pound; rice, one cent per pound; coffee, six cents per pound; sugar, six; bread same as in Boston; eggs, fifty cents per hundred; milk, forty-five cents per gallon; wages, six dollars per month, without food or lodging; oil for cooking and lamps, fifty cents per pound; washing, four dollars per hundred; fuel, about seventy-five cents per month. Almost every kind of British manufactures may be had in the bazaar, at rates not higher than they cost in Boston. Medicines are not easily procured, and many kinds are excessively dear.

During the long wars of Europe, in the days of Napoleon, many vessels were built here, chiefly by the

English, amounting, on an average, from 1790 to 1802, to three or four thousand tons per annum. At the time of Colonel Symmes's visit, in 1795, there were several ships on the stocks, of from 600 to 1000 tons' burden. This branch of business is now almost annihilated.

Two miles from Rangoon is the celebrated pagoda, called Shoodagôn. It stands on a small hill, surrounded by many smaller pagodas, some fine *zayats* and *kyoungs*, and many noble trees. The hill has been graduated into successive terraces, sustained by brick walls; and the summit, which is completely levelled, contains about two acres.

The two principal approaches from the city are lined on each side, for a mile, with fine pagodas, some almost vying for size with Shoodagôn itself. These are in every state of repair; from beautiful white new ones to mere grass-grown heaps. In most of them the apertures still remain through which the English soldiers penetrated, to take the treasure always deposited in them. Even the great pagoda did not escape; but it is so perfectly repaired as to show no signs of the indignity.

Passing these on your way from the city, you come to a flight of time-worn steps, covered by a curious arcade of little houses of various forms and sizes, one above another, some in partial decay, others truly beautiful. After crossing some terraces, covered in the same manner, you reach the top, and, passing a great gate, enter at once this sad but imposing theatre of Gaudama's glory. One's first impressions are, what *terrible grandeur!* what *sickening magnificence!* what *absurd imagery!* what *extravagant expenditure!* what *long successions of devotees* to procure this throng of buildings of such various dates! what a poor religion that makes such labours its chief meritoriousness! Before you stands the huge Shoodagôn, its top among the clouds, and its golden sides blazing in the glories of an eastern sun. Around are pompous *zayats*, noble pavements, Gothic mausoleums, uncouth colossal lions, curious stone umbrellas, gracefully cylindrical banners of gold-embroidered muslin hanging from lofty pillars, enormous stone jars in rows to receive offerings, tapers burning before the images, exquisite flowers displayed on every side, filling the air with fragrance, and a multitude of carved figures of idols, worshippers, griffins, guardians, &c.

Always, in the morning, men and women are seen in every direction kneeling behind their gift, and with uplifted hands reciting their devotions, often with a string of beads counting over each repetition; aged persons sweep out every place, or pick the grass from the crevices; dogs and crows straggle around the altars, and devour the recent offerings; the great bells utter their frequent tones; and the murmur of praying voices makes a hum like the buzzing of an exchange. The whole scene is so strange, so distressing, that one is relieved to stroll away among the huge trees, and gaze from the parapet on the unlimited scene around. It is one wide, flat jungle, without a single hill, but that of Syrian in the distance; but it is *nature*. It is the temple of the true God; the only representation he has given of his natural perfections, as the Bible is of his moral ones. All the rest is distortion, absurdity, and crime. Of inferior pagodas (though some surpass in size any I have seen elsewhere) there are in Rangoon more than five hundred, occupying as much space as the city itself, probably more. Most of them stand a little out of the city, interspersed with groves embowering costly *kyoungs* and commodious *zayats*. The latter are particularly numerous, to accommodate the hosts of worshippers who resort thither at certain seasons of the year.

In the vicinity of the hill are 150 families of "slaves of the pagoda," containing about two hundred men, and, as their chief told me, "plenty of women." They do not appear to be poor or despoiled, and their quarter of the city is not distinguished by any particular feature. They become so, not always because of crime, but even by merely incurring the displeasure of a great

man; or he gives them as an act of piety. Most of them are so by birth, for the progeny of such persons are for ever in the same condition. They are not allowed to marry, except among themselves.

I visited the pagoda frequently about sunrise, as it is the only direction in which one can ride. There were always twenty-five or thirty worshippers scattered up and down, and on the regular worship days, several hundreds. They come and go during the cool of the morning, remaining about fifteen minutes, and amounting, I was told, in the whole, to two or three thousand. A few remain all day in the cool *zayats*, often repeating their worship, and spending the intervals of the time in friendly chat. Some, as an act of particular merit, stay all night. No priests are in official attendance, nor, indeed, did I ever see any there performing their own worship. The act of worship is called *shee-ko*, though the name is often given to the mere act of prostration which accompanies it.

Every one brings a present, often a bunch of flowers, or only a few green twigs, plucked on the way, but generally the nicest eatables ready cooked, beautiful bunches of flowers, articles of raiment, &c. The amount of offerings here is very great. Stone vases, some of which will hold fifty or sixty gallons, stand round the pagoda, into which the devotees carefully lay their leafy plates of rice, plantains, cakes, &c. As these are successively filled, appointed persons from among the pagoda slaves, empty them into their vessels, assorting the various kinds. The beautiful flowers remain all night, and are swept out in the morning. No one ever objected, however, to my gathering them at pleasure. A gift once deposited is no more regarded. I have seen crows and dogs snatch the gift ere the offerer had well done his prayers, without the shadow of resistance being offered.

The reproof of Jehovah to Israel by the prophet often came strongly to my mind, as these crowds passed on with their beautiful flowers, and the finest of the fruits of the earth. "She did not know that I gave her corn, and wine, and oil, and multiplied her silver and gold, which they prepare for Baal: therefore I will take away my corn and my wine, and will recover my wool and my flax." Hosea iii. 3, 9. How boundless the goodness and forbearance of God! "Will a man rob God? Yet these rob him of the tithes and offerings? bestowed on their senseless images, and take his fruits of the earth to do honour to the things his soul abhors. I could not but feel, as I gazed upon the rich landscape and bright heavens, and marked the joy of the young men and maidens as they passed on, that He who then forbore, would, in his abundant mercy, "give them pastors after his own heart, who shall teach them knowledge and understanding."

The rainy monsoon has been considered fairly set in, since the 10th of May, but it rains as yet generally only towards night, and the weather is every way delicious; every tree being evergreen, a few showers bring forth all the beauties of midsummer. Though the sun is nearly vertical, the clouds and showers so cool the air, that the thermometer seldom rises above 86° or 87° at noon, and goes down to 80° before morning. I have now passed the ordeal of the entire hot season; and of nothing am I more convinced, both from experience and observation, and especially from the testimony of very many intelligent foreign residents, than that the climate is as salubrious and as pleasant as any other in the world. I have suffered from heat greatly more in Italy, and even in Philadelphia, than I have ever done here, and have never found a moment when I could not be perfectly comfortable by sitting still. To go abroad in mid-day, is, however, more intolerable, and, for any but natives, is eminently hazardous.

The mission to this city has had great disadvantages, and the apparent results are at this time very small. The first missionaries, who were English, chose a situation outside the town near the pagoda, and erected a building far too sumptuous. One afterwards chose another field, and the other another employment. The

station was never effectively occupied till by Mr Judson, who being without native assistants, without the language, without tracts, without experience, and living in the same house, was here many years before he began to make direct evangelical efforts among the people. Part of this time was spent in acquiring the Pali,* or sacred language of the Burmans, on which he was erroneously led to place a high value. At length he was able to preach, and some souls were won; but scarcely had a little church been gathered, before the war broke out, in which he suffered so dreadfully, and which suspended all missionary effort, and scattered all the converts. At the close of it, he did not resume his place in Rangoon, but proceeded to the provinces ceded to England, where he has remained. The flower of the church followed him to Maulmain.

From that time there has never been a missionary stationed here who could fully preach in Burman!

Mr Wade was at the station a few months, in so bad health as to be thought near his end, and sailed for America. All the others have spent their time chiefly in study.

The spirit of persecution has never intermitted at Rangoon, and the acts of it very seldom. Mr Judson never had public meetings of the church, either for worship or business, and the disciples came to him privately. When Mr and Mrs Bennett attempted to establish a school, an excitement was created which immediately scattered it. The master was publicly whipped, and the old pastor, Ko Tha-a, was imprisoned and put into the stocks, and released only by paying sixty rupees. Mr and Mrs Webb took the station two years ago, on the removal of Mr Bennett to take charge of the government free-school at Maulmain. Though he had only made a good beginning in the language, yet, with the aid of the old pastor, and a native assistant from Maulmain, he began to look out and draw forth the very few disciples who were now left, and to meet and act without concealment. After a few months, and before any new conversions occurred in the city, persecution was recommenced, which put a stop not only to the meetings, but all missionary effort. Mr Webb and wife had gone to Maulmain for their health, and Mr Howard, who had been in the country but a few months, was left in charge of the station, when the troubles began. Ko Sanlone,† the preacher (the old pastor has been deterred from public labours since his sufferings), was seized while preaching on the veranda, and though Mrs H. procured from the woon-gyee an order for his release, the inferior rulers refused to execute it, and at last succeeded in incensing his mind also. They demanded Sanlone's death, and possibly might have procured it, had he not been a Maulmain man, and of course a British subject. Six or eight Karens, who formed Mrs H.'s school, and as many more who had at that time visited Rangoon to receive baptism, were seized, punished in the stocks, and, after a week, sent away into the jungle. Search was made for disciples throughout the city, but none were detected. Various tortures were inflicted on Sanlone, to make him renounce his faith, and the impression throughout the city was, that he would be put to death; but after several sums of money had been paid by his wife, he was at length turned out, with chains on his legs, to work in the woon-gyee's yard. After a time, by paying more than two hundred rupees, he was set at liberty, with the express injunction not to preach or distribute tracts again in the jurisdiction of the woon-gyee. From this time, none of the disciples durst avow themselves, except the old pastor, Sanlone's wife, and a few more. No meetings were held; the people durst not come near the missionaries, nor receive a tract, nor even engage as servants in their families. A poor woman, who took care of Mrs Webb's child for a short time, was fined fifteen rupees for so doing. After three or four months, the alarm subsided. The people now

accept tracts, and assistants from Maulmain preach unmolested; but no Rangoon native Christian dares do it, or give tracts. The church cannot be assembled; but few members can be found at all; and the church may almost be said to be extinct. It is not probable that any native would be allowed openly to confess that he had changed his religion.

In the mean time, God has been carrying on his work among the adjacent Karens, particularly at Maubee, through the instrumentality of Ko Tha-byu.* Many have been converted; the old members, though fined upwards of six hundred rupees, and surrounded by reproach and injury, continue steadfastly to avow their faith, and keep up their meeting. Mr Webb has baptised about forty, who have come to Rangoon for that purpose; some of them since the persecution. Ko Tha-a has been out to them, and baptised twenty-nine more; and sixty or eighty are now asking baptism. Within the past two months, they have again been fined, and they are still greatly oppressed. Here is certainly an example of fortitude and meekness worthy to be recorded with those of early Christians. Six hundred rupees could only be extorted from these miserable Karens by the seizure of their entire substance. Many of them had not left a bullock, or an implement to till the ground. The case furnishes an answer to such as ask evidence of the reality of a work of grace on the hearts of our converts, and should animate us to send the gospel to a people who so sincerely receive it.

The native assistants who accompany me labour diligently, and are greatly pleased with appearances so far. The day after arriving, they spread nice mats on the porch under my window, and, taking their seats, with a pile of tracts beside them, soon had an audience. They have continued thus every day, having almost always one or two, and sometimes twenty or thirty, to listen or dispute. So little labour will support a family in this country, that many are always at leisure to sit thus. So far as I have seen, they uniformly conduct with decorum and good temper. Mr Webb is generally at hand to watch the course of debate, and take a part when it seems useful. After eight or ten days, two of them proposed a walk of twelve or fifteen miles, to preach and distribute tracts in the villages round about. They took a goodly quantity, and, after a few days' absence, returned delighted. In every village they were well received, and where they stopped, the best food and lodging were given them with the kindest hospitality. Their tracts were gone long before they got back, and eighty or ninety persons applied in vain. They met with several interesting cases. One of these was a man, who, being on a journey, by chance as we say, stopped at a house where they were resting themselves. The moment he saw the tracts, he fell upon his knees, and shee-koed to the ground. He received two or three with the greatest reverence and gratitude, offering several rupees in return. He had for years felt burdened with sin, and deeply felt the impotency of the Burman religion to grant him relief. In some of his travels he had met a man who had a little book which disclosed a new religion. On becoming anxious, he offered twenty rupees if any would bring him such a one; but he sought in vain. At length, some one told him there were foreign teachers in Rangoon, who had such books to give away. He immediately travelled there, but sought them through the city in vain, and returned more sad than ever. His delight at now meeting with the books and teachers was great. With a mind prepared for instruction, he at once understood and received the truths disclosed to him, and sat from hour to hour listening to the wondrous truths of the gospel. He was furnished with the "Life of Christ," the "Digest of the New Testament," and one or two smaller tracts, and did not leave the assistants while they remained. May the kind providence which brought him to that house make him a monument of mercy, and an instrument of good to benighted Burmah!

* Pronounced *Pah-lee*; accenting both syllables alike.

† Accent on last syllable.

* Last syllable accented, and pronounced like *u* in *fabre*.

All travellers accord to Burmans the praise of uncommon energy, and in this respect they doubtless stand very far above their neighbours. But though possessed of much muscular power, and ready at times to exert it all, their activity will not compare with that of northern men. In negotiations of all sorts, they are particularly slow, crafty, and suspicious. From the day of my arrival, I looked out for a boat to convey me to Pegu, Ava, &c., and several times thought I had succeeded in hiring a suitable one; but have been finally compelled to purchase. Being a mere hull, it has been necessary to build upon it the customary appurtenances, and I have found it impossible to expedite the business. Through the kind offices of Mr Lanceigo, collector of the port, I have an excellent and experienced old *pen-in*, or head boatman, who, with six men, engages to take me to Pegu and Ava for a given sum.

On the 1st of June, I set forward to visit Pegu and adjacent towns, accompanied by Mr Webb, two of the native assistants, and a servant. A clear sky enabled us to get every thing on board without wetting, and we got on finely for a couple of hours, when a squall came up, which nearly swamped us; but it was soon over, and we baled out the boat, and proceeded with renewed obligations to praise Him "who walketh upon the wind and maketh the clouds his chariot."

The comfort and confidence with which, in this region, one may travel for half the year, secure from storm or shower, are now reversed. It rains daily. The atmosphere, loaded with moisture, insinuates its dampness every where, making musty and mouldy the very clothes in one's trunk. Those who are at home here can do very well by wrapping things in flannel or waxed cloths, or putting them in tin boxes, &c.; but the traveller, and the voyager in a small boat, has none of these conveniences.

Entering the Pegu river about an hour's pull below Rangoon, we ascended to the ancient and famous city of Pegu in three tides. Had we not stopped to look at towns, distribute tracts, &c., two tides would have answered, by which I judge the distance to be about sixty miles. The river empties into the Rangoon by a wide mouth, but soon narrows to 200 yards, and before we get to the city, to as many feet. Only small boats ascend it farther. The banks are luxuriant flats, covered with a grass ten or twelve feet high (the *saccharum spontaneum*), much used in thatching. For the first forty miles, no habitations are to be seen. Monkeys, alligators, cranes, and vultures, were numerous. Elephants, deer, wild hogs, tigers, &c., are said to be abundant, but we saw none. This fair and fruitful region is almost abandoned, while whole nations struggle to glean from barrenness and frigidly a hard subsistence.

Within twenty miles of Pegu, we found villages, and gave tracts, accompanied with exhortations from Mr Webb and the assistants. In these towns no tracts had ever been given, no Christian teacher had ever been seen. Many refused our books, suspecting some snare; but the most received them gladly. Most of the tracts were extracts from the Old Testament, Mark, Luke, and Life of Christ. The latter is a copious harmony of the four Gospels, wholly in Scripture language. The Lord bless the seed of his own truth! The people are principally Peguans (or Talings, as the Burmans call them), and speak that language chiefly, though nearly all of the men understand Burman. There are some Karens also, and farther inland they form almost the entire population.

I found the once proud and imperial city sunk to a common village. Zangumang, a town opposite, which, with a considerable region adjacent, is ruled by an upright Armenian Christian, is now greater in size and prosperity. In fact, on this side, for many miles, is a constant succession of thriving villages.

While Pegu was the metropolis of an independent kingdom, it had a population of 150,000 souls. But Alompra, aware that its destruction would serve to perpetuate his conquest of the country, destroyed it, leaving only the sacred edifices.

Its former extent may still be traced; but I found almost the whole site covered with water a few inches deep, owing probably to a neglect of the drains and sluices. The present town is upon the site of the old, and consists of but two streets, one parallel to the river and the other leading out to the great pagoda. The late king endeavoured to restore the city to consequence, as the Peguans are no longer a distinct people. For this purpose, he removed thither, in 1790, from Rangoon, the seat of the provincial government. The effort proved abortive. The merchants and majority of the people remained at Rangoon, where all business advantages were so greatly superior, and the government was soon reseat at Rangoon. The description of the city given by Colonel Symmes, who visited it in 1795, will not now apply.

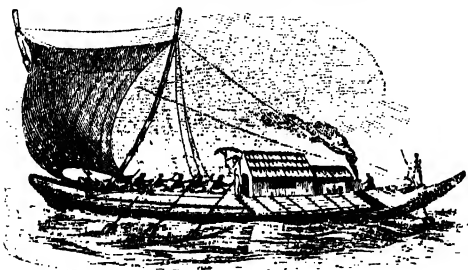
Desolate and diminished as is the city, its huge Shoo-ma-doo pagoda, and some of its appendages, are in good preservation, and worthy of all admiration. It stands on a fine hill, of gradual ascent, the summit of which has been flattened into a plain of about three acres. The sides are sloped into two terraces, ascended by steps of hewn stone. The top is occupied not only by the great pagoda, but by zavats, kyonings, trees, &c. The pyramid is of the usual form. The base consists of two octagonal stories, much larger than the pagoda itself, and wide enough to sustain each a ring of sixty pagodas, about thirty feet high, similar to each other, though not alike, and many of them much injured by time. The diameter of this octagonal base is 400 feet, and the entire height of the building 360 feet. This is the pagoda represented in my Bible Dictionary, and of which alone prints are common. The country round is that same uniform level which distinguishes the whole of what was the kingdom of Pegu.

Having made considerable alterations in my boat, suggested by experience in going to Pegu, I left Rangoon for Ava, accompanied by Mr Howard, as interpreter, on the 14th of June. The weather was fine, and before the end of the flood tide, we had rowed twenty-five miles on the Paulang, one of the mouths of the great river of Burmah. The country was flat, inundated at high tides, and uncultivated, till towards evening, when the banks were higher, the lands laid out for rice, and villages numerous.

Stopping, at the expiration of the next tide, at Kew-new, twenty-five miles farther, we found a cluster of large villages, amounting to fifteen or sixteen hundred houses. Innumerable boats, large and small, were taking in rice, salt, fish, &c., for the upper country. Hiring two small canoes, which could penetrate among the crowd of boats, we supplied tracts to all who would accept them, on both sides of the river; thus sending the truth to perhaps a hundred different villages. Before getting the canoes, I gave to all the boats passing by, and was affected to see some who could not come near, plunge into the river and swim to me for them, and, bearing them back with upraised hand, sit down instantly to read them aloud. Some women applied for books, who proved their claim by reading fluently. In most of the boats, large and small, were women and children, who seemed at home, and, I am told, spend much of the year (in some cases all of it) in this way. In the small craft, they generally steer the boat while the husband rows.

The boats on this river, though of all sizes up to 200 tons, are but of two general descriptions. All retain the canoe shape, sharp at each end. Large boats have one mast, and a yard of long slender bamboo, to which is suspended a square sail. The sail is made in sections, the centre ones only being used in strong winds, and the others added at the sides when necessary. Sometimes a small sail is temporarily fastened above the yard to the ropes, by which it is sustained. The deck extends from five to ten feet beyond the sides, with large bamboos fastened beneath; making at once a platform for the men, when using their setting-poles, &c., and an outrigger to prevent their upsetting. The vessel itself is wholly covered with a regular Burman

house, well thatched, which carries part of the cargo, and furnishes cabins to the family and boatmen. This gives them just the appearance of the pictures of Noah's ark in children's books. Over this roof is a platform, on which the men stand to work the sail. They are manned by from fifteen to twenty-five or thirty men, and sometimes forty or more; the captain, or owner, having his wife and whole family on board.



Ascending the Irrawaddy.

My boat is a sample of such as persons in moderate circumstances use for going from town to town, and in the small way of trade along the river. It is a canoe hollowed out of one log forty-six feet long, deepened by a single plank fastened on each side. The stem and stern are left solid for three or four feet, and curve upwards out of the water, especially aft. The forward half is decked with bamboo and thatch. As Burmese sit cross-legged on a floor to row, this accommodates them in using both oars and poles, and furnishes a sleeping-place beneath for the native assistants. The boatmen always sleep on deck. About twelve feet of the after half is occupied by two little cabins for myself and Mr Howard, one for sleeping, and the other, which contains a table, chair, &c., serving as a parlour. The sides of the latter are made of light mats, the upper half turning up for a window. The sleeping-room is but three feet high, as baggage, food, &c., must be kept under it; but the floor of the sitting-room, being near the bottom of the boat, enables us to stand up in it. Behind the rooms is the kitchen, namely, a shallow box filled with earth; beneath which is wood and water; while at the side hangs a hen-coop. Round the rooms is an outrigger, to enable the men to pass back and forth without intruding on me, and to prevent her oversetting. This last appendage is not common to boats of this size. Finding her to roll heavily, we fastened at the water-mark a bamboo, ten or eleven inches in diameter, running nearly the length of the boat. The sail, which is square, is fastened between two bamboos, which stand up ahead of each other, in the form of the letter V.

Such is my home for much of this "rains." For the first few days, I was so cramped for room and so incommoded with rain, heat, smoke, and mosquitoes, that it was difficult to do any thing in the way of study. But now I am quite at ease; the mosquitoes are left behind; my little matters are all adjusted, and I find it luxury to enjoy the entire command of my time—a luxury for many years almost unknown.

Ten days' diligent progress brought me within a day or two of Prome, where the unbroken level of the vast delta of the Irrawaddy begins to be relieved by the occasional sight of distant hills. A few miles onward, they approach the river, where their abraded bases present the now novel sight of stones and gravel. The rocks are red calcareous sands, one, quartz, and breccia, the gravel chiefly quartz. Undulations now begin to appear in the surface of the country, and on the whole the scenery is attractive. More delightful weather could not be. A fine shower or two, nearly every day, lasts half an hour or so, and the temperature varies agreeably from eighty to eighty-five degrees in the day, descending two or three degrees at night, while at all times there is a fine breeze. This, for the hot season, as it now is, was much cooler than I had expected. The banks now begin to be high, and dry

enough to admit walking along the shore, and I find it pleasant to pass through the beautiful groves of mango, tamarind, and palm trees, which divide the villages. Hitherto we have had villages in sight almost every moment, sometimes several at a time. It is so still; but on ascending the bank, we find others, not visible from the boat, stretching along a mile back from the river. Beyond are extensive paddy-fields, with large herds of buffaloes.

The river is now thirty feet above its lowest stage, and spreads for a mile or two on each side, not in one vast sheet, but cutting up the country into innumerable islands. We follow the remote windings to avoid the powerful current of the main stream, and thus find many villages where no white face was ever seen. These are generally small, but consist sometimes of several hundred houses. As no missionary has gone up the river to give tracts in the rainy season, there is little doubt but that many of these people now for the first time receive the knowledge of the true religion. On the great river, we often find persons who have had tracts, and now utterly refuse them. But in these byways all receive them with gladness.

I feel especially anxious to furnish the boats with books. Issuing, as they do, out of every creek, they will carry some knowledge of the eternal God to hundreds of villages where no missionary is likely to penetrate for years.

Several times, lately, I have observed an ingenious, and to me, novel mode of fishing. A score or more of gourds are suffered to float down the stream, from each of which depends a hook and line. The fisherman, in his little canoe, passing from one to another, takes up what is caught, baits the hooks; and when he has followed them a mile or two, returns with his fish, or begins again.

A strong southerly wind brought us to Prome (*Prome*, as the natives call it) early on the afternoon of the 24th, and gave us sufficient opportunity of viewing the city. For eight or nine miles the villages had been contiguous, some of them very large. We walked over a good deal of the city. It exhibits every where symptoms of poverty and decay; and from an estimate made on a height in the suburb, I should judge it to contain less than five hundred houses. The walls are mostly fallen down, the ditch filled up, and the stately remains of ancient superstition hastening to ruin. We went a little way beyond the city to a fine hill, on which stands a pagoda not much smaller than that at Rangoon, and gilded from top to bottom. The ascent is by brick stairs, covered with a succession of zayats. In some respects it is a more interesting spot than the hill of Shoo-da-gon. The city is more plainly seen, the vicinity is far more beautiful, and the distant mountains form a fine background. Around the pagoda are many smaller ones, containing beautiful marble images, some as large as life. A profusion of trees, gilded streamers, and other objects usually seen around pagodas, occupy the enclosure; and the whole air of the place is that of solemn antiquity. In one of the zayats sat an old man, thin, and of a fine intellectual countenance, eating a nice dinner, which some women had brought him, who were sitting near to return with the dishes. He has determined to spend his remaining days or years on that venerated hill. What is brought him, he eats. When nothing comes, he fasts. In different places were seen persons at prayer, or piously cutting up the grass which obtruded itself in the joints of the flagging. The bells, struck by coming worshippers, yielded deep, soft tones, and the chime from the lofty tee was particularly clear and sweet. The sun, descending with uncommon splendour, threw his mitigated rays under the roofs of the ancient temples, casting twilight pomp upon the stately idols in the deep niches; silence reigned among the retired terraces and time-worn shrines; the free, fresh breeze diffused luxurious coolness, and, as the shade of evening gathered on, the place seemed just such as a devoted Buddhist would choose for his abstractions. A Christian could not but recur to holy themes, and

be warmed with fervent aspirations for the coming of the Lord.

Descending by different stairs, a polite citizen pointed out the evidences of a magnificent arcade, which was accidentally burnt several years ago. It was the ruler's way to the pagoda. Over the low grounds beyond it is a fine causeway of brick, some hundred yards long. On each side, groves of palm, interspersed with kyoungs and little bridges, formed altogether a scene of great beauty. All this to the honour of a frail man, who died and was buried, as his own worshippers admit—while He who gives the rain in its season, and in whom they live, receives no reverence! All this to "change the glory of the incorruptible God into an image," and "the truth of God into a lie!" All this to "worship and serve the creature more than the creator, who is God over all and blessed for ever!" Oh that this people may soon know the riches of the goodness and long-suffering of God! Alas! that the best we can hope of this unhappy people, is, that having "sinned without law, they shall perish without law!"

Before re-entering the city, we passed through a little village allotted to lepers. Four men and a woman seated themselves in a row, by the wayside, as we came up, and modestly solicited alms. Before giving any thing, I stopped some minutes to observe the effects of this terrible disease. They made no clamour, did not repeat their solicitations, showed off no affectations, but were cheerful, and entirely without pain. Much bodily suffering is not endured in this disease, except at the commencement. One was not much affected: each of the others had lost all of their fingers, and most of their toes. They were thin and haggard. The distressing scene brought powerfully to mind the gracious cures of our divine master. There are about thirty-five or forty of these persons in the city, occupying two villages.

A couple of hours' sail from Prome, with our fine monsoon, brought us to a narrow pass in the river, resembling the highlands of the Hudson. On one of the highest western summits is the famous pagoda Poo-o-dong, visible among the trees. Here Gaudama lived, and here is shown on a rock the print of his foot, *evidently* fabulous, one would think, even to a Burman; for no human foot was ever of such a shape. Copies on stone, in plaster, or in painting, of this great wonder, are preserved in many places, and regarded with great veneration.

On every side, for some days, we have indigo growing, and the large jars in which it is steeped frequently stand in rows beside the river. Both soil and climate here are said to be eminently favourable to this plant, and the cultivation of it in experienced and scientific hands would certainly prove lucrative. Most of the product is consumed in this region, which is particularly devoted to manufactures. Large quantities of cotton cloth are daily seen hanging up at the villages, in the course of being dyed. Some of it is of a brilliant red, procured from native woods, called *nee-pe-ay* and *soo-lan*. These are preferred even to the sapan wood, as yielding as good a colour, and more durable.

In every respect the landscape has now changed. Instead of an interminable level, devoted mainly to coarse grass and paddy, without trees, without birds, and without houses, except in large villages, we have every variety of beautiful landscape; fine hills, cultivated in patches, even to the summit, scattered houses, fenced fields, noble trees: with horses, cattle, *negs*, fowls, and numerous birds. Among the trees the beautiful and stately *tamarind* now begins to be seen.

The number of trading boats on the river is astonishing. We pass scores every day, and sometimes hundreds. My boat being small, in mere ballast ton, and well manned, we pass every one, and thus have an opportunity of supplying numbers of them with tracts. The largest of them carry ten or twelve thousand bushels of uncleaned rice, the smaller three or four hundred. Their chief lading seemed to be rice, salt, and *gaa-pa*. In ascending, they are, for the most

part, drawn by the crew with a rope from the bank, or propelled by setting-poles; sailing only when the wind is fair, and neither too strong nor too weak. They are generally from three to four months in ascending from the delta to Ava.

No one can ascend the river without being impressed with the hardihood, skill, energy, and good humour of Burman boatmen, and the happy adaptedness of their boats to the navigation. In ascending, much of the way must be accomplished by setting-poles. For these they use straight bamboos, of a species which is almost solid, and very strong. The end is applied, not to the front of the shoulder, as with us, but above the collar bone, or on the top of the shoulder. Bending forward till their hands touch the deck, they bring the resistance perpendicular to the spine, and thus possess far greater power than is possible by our mode. When but slight exertion is required, the pole is applied as with us. On many boatmen and coolies, a callus is formed on the top of the shoulder, which looks like a small swelling. Getting aground is a daily occurrence, and sometimes frequently in a day, owing to the continual shifting of the sands, and uncertainty as to the height of the water. In such cases the men are instantly in the water to shove off. In pulling the boat by ropes, we frequently meet streams and nullahs, over which they swim without a moment's hesitation. If a bamboo or an oar fall overboard, they instantly plunge in and recover it. In fact, they seem almost amphibious; and Burman costume is most happily adapted to aquatic exigencies. The strength and energy with which they surmount difficulties, transcend any thing I ever saw among the boatmen on our own western waters, and in point of temper and morality they are immeasurably superior. In this trip, and my various previous ones, I have never seen a quarrel, or heard a hard word. Cross accidents have occurred, and we have frequently been entangled with other boats, but all difficulties have been met and surmounted with good temper, and even hilarity.

Familiarity with the watery element seems to prevail in Burmah, wherever there are streams. I have seen women and children swimming with ease and confidence; and several times little children, scarcely able to walk alone, frightened at the white foreigner, have plunged into the water to swim to their mothers in the boats. The practice of mothers taking their infants daily to bathe, renders them perfectly fearless of the water.

JUNE 27.—For some days the river scenery has been increasingly interesting. The country seems generally under tillage; cities and towns line the shores, and the hills are covered with fine forests. Italy itself might justly be proud of the scenery. The improvements and population appear to extend, however, in some places at least, but a short distance from the river.

Before sunset, June 28, came to for the night at Yay-nan-goung, a village important only for its trade in petroleum. The wells being but two miles from the village, I immediately set out to walk to them. The way was well beaten by bullock carts, often crossing the bed of the torrent (now dry), whence the village derives its name. A more rugged and desolate region can scarcely be imagined. The rocks are sandstone, pudding stone, and petrifications; the soil, sand and blue clay. Small hills on every side rise abruptly, like waves in a chopping sea, sterile and unsightly. One plant only seemed to find a congenial soil. It resembled a prickly pear, growing to the height of thirty feet, with stem a foot in diameter.

The wells are very numerous, said to be more than 400, occupying a space of about 12 square miles. They are from 200 to 300 feet deep, of small calibre, and sustained by scantling. The temperature of the oil, when first raised to the top, is 89°. Men do not go down, but an earthen pot is lowered in and drawn up over a beam across the mouth, by two men running off with the rope. The pot is emptied into a little pool, where the water with which it is largely mixed subsides, and the oil is

drawn off pure. It is exported in earthen jars, containing about 30 pounds. The price now, including the pots, is about a tical for 2½ viss, or about 50 cents for ten pounds. A well yields about 400 or 500 viss per day, and is worked by three or four men. Sometimes 700 are obtained. The amount depends on the quantity of water drawn up with the oil. A duty of one-twentieth is paid to government.

This most useful oil is very extensively used for lamps and torches, and is exported to all parts of the empire whither it can be taken by water. It is also used for preserving wood, mat partitions, palm-leaf, books, &c., from insects and from the weather, and is an admirable article for these purposes. Even the white ants will not attack wood which has been brushed with it.

For several days we have noticed on the shore great quantities of petrified wood, and have gathered specimens, which exhibit the fibres and cells perfectly. Some trunks of trees, ten or twelve feet long, lie in the edge of the water, entirely petrified. Teeth, bones, &c., are found in the same state. The inhabitants assured me that they sometimes picked up petrified leaves.

Sa-lay, a day's sail above the oil wells, though not large, is an important city. It is the metropolis of a fertile district, and drives a considerable trade in jag-gery, catch, cotton, onions, &c. Here, as at several places before, we found Shyans, comfortably bivouacked on shore, and bartering blue jackets, stick lac, &c., for salt and salt fish. Their commodities are brought in carts, and in panniers on the backs of bullocks. They seemed in no haste, were engaged in little manufactures for sale, and would probably remain till the close of the rains. They are instantly distinguished from Burmans, by wearing a regular round-about jacket and wide trousers of blue nankeen, reaching to the knees. The jackets are frequently quilted very neatly. I have seen various companies of them in different places, trading in the same manner. They always appear decidedly superior to Burmans in intelligence and civilisation. There is, however, great difference in this respect between the different tribes. The information I have obtained respecting this nation, from the people themselves and other sources, with what I may hereafter collect, will appear in another place.

The scenery since leaving the oil wells is wholly changed. The hills are more naked, and the whole country wears a peculiar aspect of desolation; villages are few, and the population evidently sparse. In some places the western shore rises abruptly to the height of two or three hundred feet, of very soft sandstone. The eastern bank is less elevated. Thousands of birds have made perforations in the side for their nests. Among these, the common sparrow and the wild pigeon seemed most numerous. Inland are rugged and bleak hills, covered with shrubs and stunted trees. The soil of the valleys is the debris of sandstone and breccia, with very little loam.

The remains of the once magnificent Paghan stand in the midst of this region, so destitute apparently of the means of supporting human life. Such a locality, however, have some of the greatest cities in the world, and still more frequently the ruins of great cities. Man's presence and power can make a garden in a desert, and his departure brings desolation over the fairest scenes. This city is said to have been founded A. D. 107; but none of the ruins have ascribed to them a higher date than A. D. 860. An American could scarcely assign half this age to any building of brick. But these bricks are uncommonly fine, the masonry exceedingly massive, and the chunnam, or stucco with which they were coated, almost indestructible, in so mild a climate. The edifices, being regarded with religious veneration, have been preserved from all intentional dilapidation. The plants and trees too, which overgrew deserted edifices elsewhere, and, by insinuating their roots into crevices, hasten their ruin, are here not seen. This last peculiarity has been thought to arise from the influence of

the adjacent earth-oil wells and springs on the atmosphere.

As would be expected by all who have seen a Burman city, these ruins are of sacred edifices only. The frail bamboo houses of the people perish almost as soon as deserted. I entered the place from the north, where a common cart-way crossed the crumbled ridge of a great wall. Gullies and torrents cut up the environs on this side, and it is probable that the city never extended over this region. Every spot, however, which would accommodate a pagoda, has one upon it. Within the wall, the ground is level, though very high, and commanding a wide prospect. Here, for the first time, I saw buildings which could be called temples; many of the pagodas being built hollow, with noble rooms devoted to images and image worship. Some of these, as well as those which are solid, are of the noblest description; little injured by time, with here and there some remains of the exterior gilding in sheltered places. We entered some, and found superb carved and gilded ceilings, sheltering at once great, ghastly, half-crumbled Gaudamas and herds of cattle. Marks of fire in some, showed them to be used by the people for occasional homes, or perhaps by herdmen.

I could not attempt to count these venerable piles. They are thickly scattered, not only over all the site of the city, but for miles round. Many of them are more than a hundred feet high. One, which seems to have been occasionally repaired, is two hundred and ten feet high. The difference between their shape and that of those in the lower provinces is very striking. Instead of the solid mass of masonry, rising with a tapering spire, these are ponderous, wide-spread buildings, whose noble interiors entitle them to the name of temples. The arches are lofty, in both Grecian and Gothic forms, and the ceilings in many cases gilded and ornamented with painting and tracery. The exterior is equally unlike the pagodas of Pegu, from the profusion of laboured cornices, turrets, and spires, which are scattered over the whole surface.

It is evident that great reverence yet exists for this spot; for many of the pagodas, of a size scarcely inferior to their venerable neighbours, are certainly modern, and a few are new. Such a feature, in a landscape of ruins, is truly rare, and keeps the mind fastened on the sad thought that the cold and gloomy system which reared these "vain oblations" has not passed away with the infatuated generation who constructed them.

That the people should come to these abandoned shrines, and add others also, to be left unhonoured by the passing throng, is perhaps accounted for by the fact, that on this spot this religion was first proclaimed in Burma. Ah-ra-han, the successful missionary of Goodism, here proclaimed its doctrines nearly a thousand years ago. At this place (then the metropolis), under the patronage of King Ah-nan-ya-tha-mon-zan, he taught his "new religion;" and its spreading influence utterly supplanted polytheism, and all the ancient superstitions. Thus may man, with kingly aid, change the forms of human faith; but oh, how hopeless are our efforts to change the hearts of this people, without divine aid! God grant that the period of Buddhist delusions may soon cease, and leave these new structures only to mark the melancholy prevalence of former sin.

The boatmen having intimated, some days ago, that cattle were very plenty here, and that I might get a calf cheap, I inquired if they wanted veal themselves. They rather reluctantly confessed their desire, knowing me to be aware of their religious scruples; but I readily agreed that, if they would procure me a calf, my Madras servant should kill it, so that they might eat without compunction. Accordingly, at Nong-oo, the penin bought a fat yearling for a rupee and a half, (67½ cents). But as the late owner was leading it to the river, half a dozen of the neighbours set up a clamour, because he had sold his beast to be killed; a crowd gathered, the penin slunk away, and the disappointed owner led back his heifer! The proper way to get meat is to shoot any fat animal you see, then pay

its owner for the damage, and bear off your prize. The owner in such case escapes blame, and is gratified to get the money.

In this region cattle are very numerous, both buffaloes and the braminy breed. We were offered, at the next village, a fine pair of very fat oxen for six rupees. The roads are good here, and much inland transportation is carried on. We every evening saw herds brought over from the islands, where they had been pastured during the day. It was amusing to observe the skill of the herdsmen in swimming them across the wide and rapid current. With a short stick, they swam behind, making them keep their heads up-stream, bringing up those who lag, jumping often on their backs, and walking from one to another; now standing up on an ox, now sitting at ease upon him, now dashing down or up for a straggler, and seeming to be as much in their element as the buffaloes themselves.

It has often been very amusing to see the consternation or the curiosity of the people, many of whom have never seen a white man before. Even the dogs set up an unusual barking; but the fiercest of them run, if I stop a moment. I have sometimes put to partial flight a herd of buffaloes, to whom my white face and white dress are as terrific as to the dogs. As I sit to eat in the boat, a range of women and children often squat on the ground to gaze. If I go towards them, they generally vanish. Often, on entering a house among the Karens, on some of my tours, the whole family would run away, and leave me in sole possession. Many times, as I walk along the bank, and, by turning a corner, come suddenly upon young girls drawing water, they instantly leave their pots and fly. To those who are too old to feel terror, I am generally an object of curiosity. They turn up my pantaloons, admire the seamless stockings, feel under my vest, and wonder that we should wear so many garments. Sometimes they call me a *nat*. I am constantly struck with their politeness. They desist from any thing on the slightest intimation; never crowd around to be troublesome; and if, on showing my watch, pencil-case, or any thing which particularly attracts them, there are more than can get a sight, the outer ones stand aloof, or keep seated, and thus wait till their turn comes, or, as is oftener the case, when I have not time to wait, forego the sight altogether, without any signs of turbulence.

After passing Paghlan, the palmyra is very common. This is the species of palm which here yields the toddy, and is therefore called by foreigners *toddy-tree*. To many of them slight perpendicular ladders are fastened, by which the owner ascends every morning to obtain the sap from a cut made for the purpose. But the regular climbers want no such aid. They tie their feet together, about six inches apart, and thus can apply the soles of each foot to the tree. Locking their fingers together, they clasp the trunk with their arms, and thus ascend with rapidity and ease. The sap or toddy is generally drunk immediately, when it is sweet and wholesome, or made into sugar, which resembles that obtained with us from the maple. When suffered to stand four or five hours, it ferments, and becomes more intoxicating than wine; but is rarely used in this state by Burmans, and almost never to the point of intoxication. From Paghlan to Ava, this species of palm is very abundant, and produces a large amount of jaggery, which sells for two thirds of a cent, our money, per pound.

JULY 5th, 1836, brought us in sight of the "golden city," after a voyage of three weeks. The distance is about 400 miles by my computation, though it is generally made 500. Since leaving the Delta, it has seldom rained, and only in warm and transient showers. We had some perils, at one time having the mast and sail carried away in a squall, and several times rolling heavily in rough places, so as to dip water on both sides. We were never without apprehensions of robbers, who always infest the river more or less. Several times, when we had moored for the night, the chief of the village came to assure us that many bad men lived in

that neighbourhood, and that we could not be safe without moving farther to where many boats might be lying, or a village. On several occasions, suspicious boats hovered round, which my men affirmed were robbers, but I was never attacked.

Thus a voyage in which I expected only discomfort and peril, has been performed with safety, and many conveniences. How foolish are uncomfortable anticipations, while we have reason to think we are in the path of duty!

On the way up, we have visited and distributed tracts in eighty-two towns, cities, and villages; supplied 657 boats and vessels, many containing families, and from fifteen to thirty men; besides handing them, in a multitude of cases, to persons along shore. Generally, we moored before sundown at some village, where the assistants would divide themselves, and, getting two or three congregations, spend the evening in preaching and discussions. In general, the tracts were received with the utmost avidity, and those who got one would often clamour for another. Scores waded or swam to the boat after them; and often we were so thronged with applicants, when moored to the shore, that we could scarcely eat or sleep. But this fact is far from proving a general desire among the people for the knowledge of the new religion. A tract is in every respect a curiosity. They have never seen such *paper*, their own books being made of palm-leaf, or black pasteboard, which is written upon with a steatite pencil. The *printing* is a great curiosity. The *shape of the book* is a curiosity. Besides, it is *property*, and no Burman will refuse a gift, without a strong reason.

CHAPTER V.

Ava. Splendid Kyoungs Pagodas. Priests. Palace. Population. Arts. Prices. The Mek-a-ra Prince. Mer-wa-de Woon-gwee. The Burman Pontiff. Sur-ra-wa Prince. Climate of Ava. History of the Mission in Ava. Present State of Mission. Safety of the Missionaries. Roman Catholics. Saguing. Marble Quarries. Mengood Pagoda. Umerapoora.

My stay in Ava amounted to four weeks. The concerns of the mission, and the acquisition of information respecting the country and its tributaries, occupied, of course, all business hours. Daily habits of active exercise, however, gave me an opportunity of making such observations on the city and vicinity as naturally find a place in the diary of a traveller.

The name of the city is Ang-wa, or Awa, pronounced by Europeans Ava, a term which they sometimes apply also to the kingdom. The city is surrounded by a wall twenty feet high, embracing a space of about seven miles in circumference. Within this is a considerable area, enclosed by a better wall, with a broad, deep ditch, called "the little city." This space is chiefly occupied by the palace, hall of justice, council-house, and the dwellings of some of the nobility, but contains also some well-built streets, and many inhabitants. The palace itself, and public buildings, are enclosed in a third wall, which is itself enclosed in a stockade. A very large part of the city is outside of all these walls, on the margin of the rivers. On the east is the river Myet-nga, or Little River, a fine stream, 150 yards broad, extending far into the interior. The Irrawaddy, opposite the city, is without islands, and compressed to a breadth of eleven or twelve hundred yards.

The sacred edifices, as usual, are the prominent objects, which on every side seize the attention. They are almost as numerous as at Paghlan, and some of them of equal size. Viewed from the river above, their white and gilded spires give the city an exceedingly imposing appearance, which is not realised on entering it.

I shall not attempt minute details respecting these edifices; but Ava has little else to describe. Here are no hospitals, prisons, schools, societies, factories, &c., whose principles or modes would aid the philanthropist, or throw light on Burman character; no literature, nor literary men, to describe; nor even sects whose

opinions, practices, numbers, &c., might be usefully traced. I will try, however, to give my reader some farther ideas of Ava.

One of my first visits was to Bong-jeaw, a kyoung or monastery built by the present king. There are three separate houses, each as large as a common church, connected by galleries, and occupying a noble enclosure in the midst of the city. The roofs have of course the royal and sacred peculiarity of successive stages, one above another. Every part, except the very tiles, is richly carved in bas-relief, and covered with gold. Every inch of surface in the interior, except the floor, is similarly carved and gilded. The effect is dazzling, but rather childish than sublime. We found the poungee, ra-han, or president, in a vast apartment, with lofty ceiling supported by many pillars, reclining on the floor near the principal image, with his couch, books, writing apparatus, betel-box, &c., by his side. He was modest, sensible, and frank, utterly unlike the great majority of his brethren, so far as I have hitherto known them. He conversed freely for half an hour, and seemed much pleased with our visit. While we were there, a young priest came and worshipped him, precisely as the idol is worshipped, and on going away, presented an offering of flowers, which he took in his hand, and laid on a vase near him, which was already piled with flowers, apparently received the same way.

I afterwards inspected several other kyoungs, quite as splendid. Certainly none but the monarch himself has so splendid a dwelling as the priests.

The pagodas are even more various in their shapes than at Paghau, and far surpass in taste and beauty any I have seen. Most of them are over 100 feet high, and some more than 200. Colossal images of bell-metal, marble, and brick, covered with stucco, are innumerable. One which had just been finished out of a solid block of white marble, is truly stupendous. I had no mode of taking his vast proportions, but measured his hand, and found the breadth twenty inches. As his proportions were just, this would make his height, had he been in a standing posture, about thirty-five feet.

It is said there are in the city 20,000 priests, including noviciates; and the number and size of the monasteries seem to sanction the computation. The queen's monastery has 500; and that which I have described above had 300 regular priests, and about the same number of noviciates. It should be remembered, they are in fact colleges, and nearly all who are receiving a regular education are in them as novices.

These buildings are found in almost every part of the city, enclosed by fine brick walls and shady walks. They are the only specimens of beauty and grandeur which the city can boast, except the pagodas, the palace, and a few zayats. Aristocratic feelings prevail even in these abodes of pretended sanctity, and into some of them none but youths of the higher classes are admitted. A number of our disciples who have been noviciates, speak unfavourably of the morals of the priesthood. Dressed like other citizens, they may go any where after dark without being recognised.

The palace is entirely of wood. It consists of nearly a hundred buildings, of different sizes, and occupies a space about a quarter of a mile long, and almost as broad. The roofs have all the royal order of architecture. The hall of audience is in a sumptuous and convenient building, standing on a terrace of stone and mortar, which constitutes the floor, and is coated with stucco, hard and polished. Lofty pillars, richly carved, support the roof, and, like the rest of the building, are covered with gold. The roof rises like a steeple, with many stages, and is 195 feet high.

In looking at such buildings, or at the numerous boats of his majesty and the nobility, of which every part, and even the oars, are covered with gold, one wonders whence all this wealth is derived, and is distressed that it should be so absurdly bestowed. The money expended in pagodas, kyoungs, temples, and gold and silver baubles, would fill the country with canals, bridges, and durable houses.

The streets of Ava cross each other at right angles, and are wide, straight, and clean, but not paved. The centre is kept smooth and clean for foot-passengers, while the sides are appropriated to wheel-carriages, elephants, &c. Much of the labour of transportation is done by bullock carts. Their bodies are framed of timber, with bamboo yoke, and the wheels of wood, without tire. I saw no horses used for draught; but handsome bullock carriages are used by the wealthy. They are without seats of course, and the floor is nicely matted or cushioned. The animals, being used only for this purpose, trot along quite briskly. Around their necks are strings of bells. The houses are not generally better than in other large towns, but thatch being entirely prohibited, they look more respectable. The roofs are covered with short pieces of bamboo, so arranged as to look exactly like shingles. Great men generally live in the centre of some square, surrounded by the houses of their many retainers. Most of them have a good brick building, of two or three rooms, intended not for occupancy, but as a fire-proof depository for their valuables. These have very lately become common, and, with some fine brick monasteries just erected, and a sort of arsenal now in progress, indicate a general introduction of brick houses. Nothing but the absurd prohibition of the government has prevented this long ago. In some of these enclosures are pleasant gardens and fruit-trees.

As to the population of the city, I was as much pained to obtain correct information. The accounts obtained from government officers did not differ much from each other. They said a census was recently taken, which gave 30,000 houses for the city and suburbs, without including any adjacent villages, and that ten per cent. ought to be added for omissions. They computed seven persons to a house, and thus make the population 200,000. As the government actually receives taxes on 30,000 houses, there does not seem room for estimating the number lower; but I am confident it must include the district. Mr Crawford allows only 30,000. A severe fire occurred just before my arrival, which was reported by the proper officers to the king as having destroyed 1000 houses, besides huts and temporary residences. I examined the ground carefully, and compared it with the rest of the city, over all of which I rode repeatedly. The result of the whole induces me to estimate the population of Ava at about 100,000. The whole city and kingdom being divided into tens of houses, under an officer, and every ten of these officers being under a superior, who has charge of them, and their hundred houses, a census, at least under the very eye of government, must be tolerably correct. Taxes are assessed on families as such, without regard to wealth. The head man is the tax-gatherer. If he can tax a hundred houses, and report only ninety, he puts the balance into his pocket. A Burman census is thus almost always less than the truth.

The city abounds with shops, containing nearly every article of foreign goods, and an ample number of mechanics; though in some particular branches there are none. I purchased specimens of carpentry, jewellery, tinware, toys, dais, lacerated boxes, earthenware, gongs, &c., which were highly creditable to their skill. Their boat-building, carving, sculpture, gilding, basket-making, and weaving, are as good and ingenious as in America, for aught I could see, making due allowance for the differences of form, &c., established by national custom. I got some paintings, executed in their best style by native artists, one of whom is the king's painter, which are about equal to the pictures on common clocks and looking-glasses. In landscapes they fail utterly, having no idea of perspective. Many of our trades are wholly unknown to the Burmans.

The market is abundantly supplied with fruits, vegetables, and fresh fish, of various excellent kinds. Beef and veal are generally to be had, but not every day. Fowls are much dearer than at Rangoon, costing, generally, a tical (about fifty cents) for four. Rice is also nearly double the price which it bears at Rangoon.

Wages are five ticals (two dollars fifty cents) a month for men, or four annas (twelve and a half cents) per day; the labourer finding his own food.

Having seen much of humble life in retired villages, and among individuals of this class, with whom I am constantly coming in contact, I was glad to multiply opportunities of noting the condition and manners of the great. My second visit of this kind was to the widow of the governor of the city, who so greatly befriended Mrs Judson in her trials here during the late war. She was surrounded by retainers, and had as visitors at her house some distinguished females; but, except in the costly jewels about her person, and various valuables in her coon-box, was not to be distinguished from common people. Her house, in America, would have been deemed the abode of poverty. She was glad to see one who had been personally acquainted with Mrs J., and several times remarked that she had always loved her as a daughter. She listens respectfully to religious subjects, but does not appear to be shaken in her attachment to Buddhism.

My next visit of the kind was to the Mek-a-ra prince, son of the late king, and uncle to the present one. He is grandson to the famous Alompra, and is said to bear a remarkable family likeness to that monarch and his descendants. He received us with great urbanity, and readily gave me information on various points, for which I had prepared myself with questions. My having been the intimate friend of Dr Price, whose memory he cherishes with very affectionate respect, seemed of itself a passport to his regard.

He is much the most literary Burman in the kingdom. He reads English, is a good mathematician, is well acquainted with geography, and has considerable mechanical ingenuity. In his library are a number of good English books, among which is a complete set of Rees's Cyclopædia. He has also various instruments, models, &c. Withal, Burman-like, he is an alchemist. Mathematics is his favourite science, and he rejects every thing which cannot be demonstrated like a problem. I carried for my present* some small charts, exhibiting a condensed view of languages and their classification, governments and their condition, heights of mountains, lengths of rivers, &c., with which he expressed himself pleased, and upon which he asked Mr Kincaid many questions, indicating both an excellent intellect and extensive information. He gave me minutely the last census, and his own opinion respecting the amount of population, voluntarily writing for me the items on the spot. He is said to be remarkably free from national prejudices. A slight evidence of this occurred now. We all (Messrs Kincaid, Simons, and myself) sat on the floor, of course, on a rug which was laid down for our accommodation; and I was pretty comfortable, with my back against a post. But one of my feet was before me, and his wife pointed the attention of a servant to that fact. The prince instantly forbade that I should be disturbed, and begged me to sit in any posture which I found most convenient. Sitting with the feet towards another is considered particularly disrespectful, and a Burman would hardly dare, for the price of his head, to take such an attitude before one of the royal family. I have since learned to sit *à la mode*, that is, with my feet behind me, on one side, or crossed in front, as a tailor.

Though far from being a bigoted Buddhist, the prince with all his reading seems to be decidedly attached to that system. Mr Kincaid gave him Galland's *Arabian Nights*, on the soul, just issued from our press at Maulmain, translated by Mrs Benfit. He received it with pleasure, but said he could not believe it, unless it proved the matter clearly, by making it just as plain as that two and two make four. I told him it presented a different kind of evidence, and endeavoured to explain the difference between a mathematical and a metaphysical

tainty. But it was all in vain, till I begged him just to take his pencil, and prove to me, by figures, that he was not a dead man! He looked perfectly nonplussed for a moment, then burst into a laugh, and seemed by further explanation to get the idea. He promised to read the book with earnest attention, and, on taking leave, begged Mr Kincaid would bring me again.

Under the auspices of Colonel Burney, I had a very pleasant interview with the Mea-wa-de Woon-gyee. He has long been chief woon-gyee, or prime minister, though much of his power is engrossed by Salé Men, the queen's brother. The venerable old man, whose countenance is very fine, received us very kindly, and with evident pleasure. Colonel Burney had told him that I had visited various parts of Europe, and he is very fond of hearing of foreign countries. He spoke of the great distance of America, and, taking up his circular coon-box, pointed out accurately, as on a globe, the relative positions of Burmah, America, England, &c. He added, however, perhaps on account of his retainers present, "Our system has a Myenmo mount," and puts your country so and so." In accepting my presents, he said he knew not what to give us Americans and English, for we seemed to have every thing already; and neither he nor any other sent me any thing. Producing a gilded casket, he exhibited, apparently in corroboration of his remark, various handsome articles, chiefly of English manufacture, which had been given him; among the rest, a watch presented by the famous General Bandula, just before the contest with the British in which he lost his life. There was also his *tsal-o-ay*, which he handed us to inspect, and then wore during the rest of the interview. He spoke of our country with much approbation, and expressed a strong desire that we should open commercial relations. It was replied that their present restrictions on exports disabled our vessels from selling their cargoes; that if specie and rice were allowed to be exported, they could pick up what little lac, ivory, &c., there might be in the market, and, selling the rest of their goods for rice or specie, proceed elsewhere to complete their homeward cargo; but he could not see the propriety of sending away rice or specie. The wisdom and candour manifested on several topics which came up, encouraged me to lay before him the oppressive conduct of the rulers at Rangoon, and especially at Mawbee, towards the missionaries and disciples. He declared himself entirely ignorant of these transactions, and much displeased. I remarked, among other things, that he knew the Karens had no religion; that their conversion threw no slur on the state religion; that Christianity must make better subjects of these wild and uncivilised people; and that in our country entire freedom of religious opinions was allowed without injury. He assented fully, and said, if I would have a full statement of the case written and laid before him, he would sift it to the bottom, and effectually prevent the repetition of such acts. This was accordingly done afterwards through Colonel Burney.

This woon-gyee was a poor boy, and has risen, chiefly by his own merit, through many grades of office, to his present premiership; thus furnishing a strong exemplification of a peculiarity in this government, resembling a boasted trait in our own. No offices or titles here are hereditary but the kingship.

During the visit, two Shyan Chobwas came in, and gave me an opportunity of extending my information respecting routes to China. These men are, in point of fact, kings at home, but they approached the minister with the greatest deference. They were waited on by the late Burman governor of Bamoo, another of the routes by which I am seeking to ascertain the accessibility of China.

A visit to the Tha-then-a-byng', or supreme pontiff of the empire, was less pleasant. I was not surprised; much less displeased. He of course saw in me a patron and strengtheners of the mission—an object he naturally

* In all visits to the principal men, it is expected that a person when first introduced will make an offering. Indeed, it is common on *any* circumstances.

* See chapter on Burman religion.

abhorred. He afterwards gave, as a sort of excuse for his reserve, that we did not sheekoo at our entrance. If this was really his difficulty, it adds a proof to many I have had already, of the excessive pride of these priests. His monastery was as splendid as Burmans know how to make it; carved and gilded in every part, within and without.

The Sur-ra-wa prince, to whom Mr Kincaid next introduced me, received me with the greatest urbanity. He is the only full brother of the present king, a few years younger, and is more likely to succeed him than the proper heir apparent.* He is said exactly to resemble the king, and certainly there could scarcely be a more intelligent and manly countenance. The Alompa forehead, which distinguishes this family, slopes backward somewhat too rapidly for a good head, but is high, and has great breadth. When speaking, his countenance is lighted up with great animation. Though less literary than his uncle, the Mekara prince, he is considered more talented, and to possess more general information. He spoke in high terms of our country, and acknowledged the impolicy of the restrictions on exports, and other impediments at Rangoon. In remarking on various countries and their institutions, he showed not only an enlightened, but a reflective and strong mind. Respecting the tribes between here and China, he gave me much valuable information. The object of my visit to the golden city being explained to him, I expressed much satisfaction, in finding our missionaries here fully protected and enjoying all the rights of citizenship. He immediately drew a comparison between the liberal usages of this country, in receiving and protecting all foreigners, and the policy of China in excluding them; invited me to place teachers in the adjacent cities; and recommended me to travel in the interior, and see more of the country.

During the interview, his lady was introduced, with a lovely infant, two or three years old; and nothing occurred to indicate that odious haughtiness which so generally attaches to men of his rank in the east. On taking leave, he invited us to visit his garden next day, which we did; for I deem a garden a test of civilisation. We found a large space, perhaps an acre, well laid out, with raised brick foot-paths, plastered, and resembling stone. Marble tanks, artificial ponds, with gold and crimson fish, numerous water-courses and reservoirs, and several men engaged in drawing water from wells, showed how much attention to irrigation is necessary to a garden at Ava. He had the peach, apple, coffee, fig, and many other foreign fruits, besides the varieties of luscious ones which are native. In an adjacent enclosure he had wild animals and some singular birds, perfectly gentle, and going at large. On the whole, it was a tasteful and pleasing spot. Men of rank in this city, generally have such gardens, on which they bestow great expense. I visited one or two others, which had handsome *zayats* in them, where the owner reposed sometimes as in a summer-house, or received his intimate friends.

Not to multiply accounts of visits to great men, it will be enough to remark that I found all to whom I was introduced intelligent and affable. Having read of them as gorgeously arrayed on days of state ceremony, I was disappointed to find them dressed precisely like other men, with waist-cloth and turban only. These, however, were of the best materials. If it was the cool of the day, they wore also the *en-gy*, or muslin coat. Their dwellings now are temporary buildings, outside of the city wall, and are, in fact, mere shanties. By what is, perhaps, a necessary precaution, in such a government, when the king goes out of the city, all the nobles must go out also, and stay out till he returns. He is now residing at his water-palace, so called—a collection of wooden houses, one story high, between the city wall and the water.

During my whole visit here, Colonel Burney was in the habit of sending to me the distinguished persons

who called upon him, who could give me information, from their own knowledge, of the tribes between this city and China. Among others was the lately famous Duhá Gám, who rules the largest part of the Singphoos. He came with a *sera-dau-gyee*, or chief secretary, and rode a horse richly caparisoned. The skirts of the saddle were circular, a yard in diameter, and completely gilded. In other respects he had no marks of a prince but his intelligence. Among other inquiries, I asked if he would protect Christian teachers, and suffer them to give books, if we sent some to his tribe. He assured me that he would, and that all quiet foreigners were secure in any part of his dominions. Besides a small present of penknife, scissors, &c., he accepted a copy of the New Testament, an assortment of tracts, and a map of the world, lately lithographed by the missionaries, with the names in the Burman language. Mr Kincaid endeavoured to impress on his mind some leading truths of religion.

Besides the information gained from such persons, it was no small advantage to have the populace, who followed them, see the mission thus noticed by great men, and see their numerous retinue going away with our books and tracts in their hands. The influence of such a sight can only be realised by those who have seen the profound respect paid by orientals to persons in authority.

The climate of Ava, most of the year, is delightful. The cool season lasts from the middle of October till the early part of April. During this period, heavy fogs prevail early in the morning, but they soon disperse, and leave a sunny sky. The thermometer at night, and towards morning, descends to 15° or 50°; sometimes, though very rarely, to 40°; rising in the middle of the day to 60° or 70°. Towards the end of April, it begins to get hot, and the last of that month, and whole of May, are the trying portion of the year. The thermometer ranges from 85° to 100°, rising sometimes even to 110°, in a fair exposure at mid-day; but it is always many degrees cooler at night. About the 1st of June, some dashes of rain occur; the sky is always cloudy, and the periodical inundation of the river spreads vast sheets of water over the low grounds. These, with the south-west monsoon, which rarely intermits, spread a cool freshness on every side. The present is the rainy season on the coast, and on the mountains north of Ava, but around the city it rarely rains; in some years, so little as to cut off all crops, and create almost a famine. It was during this period that my time was spent in Ava, and more delicious weather could not be. The thermometer has not been above 93°, and rarely above 87°. The average at mid-day has been about 83° or 84°. Before morning, I always find it necessary to draw over me a flannel sheet. The river is now from thirty to forty feet above its common level. About the middle of August, the waters begin to subside; the clouds are less dense; and for a short time very hot weather returns, but not so oppressive as in May. The cool season then sets in, as above mentioned. The river owes its rise not so much to rain in the upper country, as to the rapid melting of the snow on the lofty mountains connected with the Himalaya range, where the Irrawaddy rises, in common with the Kyendween, Buranpooter, and great Camboja rivers.

Missionary efforts were begun in this city by Messrs Judson and Price in 1823, but Mr Judson very soon returned to Rangoon. Immediately on rejoining Mr Price, with Mrs Judson, in 1824, the war broke out, during which the missionaries were called not to act for Christ, but to suffer. At the close of the war, Mr Judson proceeded to Amherst. Thus scarcely any thing was done to create a general knowledge of Christianity, or to convert individuals; Dr Price being chiefly engaged with his medical profession, and a school of noblemen's children. He was, however, a faithful and laborious man, so far as his bodily strength, wasted by a slow consumption, would permit. He preached to his retainers, and such as would come to his house, every Sabbath, and impressed religion on many with whom

* He ascended the throne, on the death of his brother, in 1837.

he came in daily contact, but never went among the common people as an evangelist. Had he lived to complete the education of the youth entrusted to him, he would have done an incalculable service to the country. He had obtained permission to carry several of them to Calcutta, to finish their studies at Serampore; and, though worn down by disease, could not be dissuaded from making it the last effort of his life. In spite of weakness, which confined him almost constantly to his bed, he finished all his arrangements, and the day of sailing arrived. He arose and dressed as usual. But, though he could disregard debility, he could not escape death. On that morning, his attendants, having left him for a short time, returning, found him dead in his chair! The British resident has since tried in vain to obtain another set of youths to go to Calcutta for education.

No conversion occurred at Ava, nor indeed can the mission be regarded as fairly begun, till the arrival of Mr Kincaid, in June 1833. He had been in the country since November 1830, and had so far acquired the language as to be able to pray and expound a little, but had not attempted to deliver regular discourses. He took a large quantity of tracts and books, of which he gave away 17,000 on the way up: this was the first general distribution made on the river. A house was obtained; preaching was kept up regularly on the Sabbath, and every week evening; and Ko Shoon and Ko Sanlone, excellent assistants from Maulmain, occupied public *zayats*, and taught from house to house. The first convert was Mah Nwa Oo, wife of a disciple whom Dr Price had brought with him from Rangoon. She, with another, was baptised in October of the same year. Since then, twelve others have been received into the church; all Burmans but one, an Indo-Briton. Mr Kincaid's published journals make any further history of this station unnecessary, except to say, that in September 1835, Mr Simons joined the station, and has been employed chiefly in teaching schools, and giving tracts to such as came to the house. He has not yet so far acquired the language as to preach, or communicate much with the natives.

The present aspect of the station is full of encouragement. Mr Kincaid is completely at home in the language, and the native assistants, among whom is Ko Shoon again for a season, are laboriously engaged. Besides these, Ko Gwa, the deacon, a wise and invaluable old man, is employed much of his time very usefully in private conversation through the city. He had charge of the late king's bearers, amounting to several hundred men, and possesses not only a large acquaintance, but some influence. Two or three of the other members are of very respectable worldly standing, and three young men give promise of becoming useful in the ministry. They are studying English, geography, &c., at the mission house, under Mrs Simons, and two of them will probably join the school at Tavoy.

All the disciples except two, who reside forty miles off, and one who is often kept away in attendance upon his sister, a maid of honour in the palace, are regularly at worship every Sunday, and attend the concert of prayer, and such other meetings as may be appointed.

Ava is the great centre to which persons resort from every part of Burmah and its tributary states. Many of these come to the mission for books, not so much to hear about "the new religion," as to see white foreigners, especially ladies. Except Mrs Judson (who, of course, was little seen abroad during the war, and, as the governor's widow stated, part of the time wore the full Burman costume to avoid molestation), no white female has ever been seen here, till the establishment of the British residency. There they dare not go to satisfy their curiosity, and they flock to the mission-house, for the ostensible purpose of obtaining a tract. During my stay, there were always some in the house, often a complete throng, staring at every thing, feeling every thing, wondering at every thing. Often, when their attention secured for a moment to divine truth, they begin to

feel your hands, or examine the intricacies of your raiment, or the joints of your table, and you perceive your words are lost upon them. Sometimes they seem absorbed with wonder at the tract you have given them, and, in trying to find out how it is put together, pull it to pieces before your eyes. Many have heard that Mr Kincaid has globes and an orrery, and come avowedly to see those. Our mode of eating is an especial marvel; and we generally have many spectators in the room, or at the door. Such facts, together with those I have already mentioned in relation to tracts, must be remembered by the friends of missions at home, lest they make very erroneous inferences from the naked statements of missionary journals.

It has been inferred from these, that persons have come hundreds of miles for a tract, or to hear of Christ, from its being stated, that a person from such or such a distant point came for tracts, &c.; whereas the person, being at the station on other business, came as a matter of curiosity. It has been inferred, too, that a general spirit of inquiry has been excited throughout the empire. Alas! the very contrary is the fact. In general, tracts are received more cordially at first than ever afterwards; and often, on visiting a village a second or third time, few will accept a tract at all. A writer in America has stated that "whole villages have been converted unto God." There has been no such event. Two Christian villages have been formed by collecting converted Karens together, and others may yet be formed; but, as a general measure, it is deemed unsafe and undesirable. The great stumbling-block with Burmans, as with those to whom apostles preached, is "Christ crucified." They cannot get the idea of an eternal God; and that Christ was a man seems to put him on a footing with Gandama. They bring up the fact of his being "born of a virgin," just as infidels do. Thus that glorious doctrine, which, to such of them as come to feel the power and guilt of sin, is the sweet theme that fills their heart with peace, is to the multitude the "hard saying," which they cannot bear.

Yet there are some prominent encouragements at this station. That tracts and books may be distributed from hence to the remotest parts of the empire, is a very important circumstance. That they come from the imperial city, gives them augmented influence. That they are frequently taken by head-men and principal citizens, gives more. That government is fully aware of our missionary efforts, having had Mr Kincaid several times before them, gives the people an impression that his conduct now is at least winked at. It is ascertained also that some thirty or forty persons in the city are so entirely convinced of the truth of Christianity as to have forsaken the forms of Buddhism, and worship in secret, as they affirm, the eternal God. They dare not come to public worship, and some of them not even to the missionary; but they receive gladly the visits of the native assistants, and, we may hope, will yet become decided Christians.

As to the personal safety of the missionaries, there is no apparent ground of apprehension. The government would not drive them from the country, much less offer personal violence. Their late humiliation by the British has greatly altered their tone towards white foreigners. It is altogether probable that the threats of the woon-gyees, and orders to stop giving books, are intended merely to exempt themselves from blame. If it should come to the king's ears that missionaries are giving books, and he should choose to be angry, they wish to be able to appeal to their record, and show that the missionaries have continued in spite of prohibition. To forbid a thing, is often, with Burman officers, their final measure, after which, having thus thrown off the responsibility, they are often pleased to see their orders disregarded. At present, too, the question who shall be the next king, is probably one of engrossing magnitude to the rulers. It is also to us. If a certain candidate succeed, Buddhism will revive on every side; if another, toleration will probably be allowed. Let us earnestly commend the result to Him who exalteth kings at his

pleasure. If the missionaries should be driven away, it would probably be by such measures being taken with the natives as to render a further stay useless. One of the highest officers proposed, it is said, in a late conversation respecting the crowds who came for books, the crucifixion of some six or eight caught so doing, and that they be suspended before Mr Kincaid's door till they rotted away. There is much reason, however, to think this was said for mere effect; for the speaker is known to be specially indifferent to Buddhism.

Near Ava are eight or nine hundred Catholics, chiefly the descendants of French and other prisoners, brought by Alompra from Syrian, at his conquest of that place in 1756. They are settled in six small villages, the chief of which is Kyun-ta-yuah, which has 100 houses. In 1784, two priests were sent by the Propaganda. The troubles of Europe prevented their receiving any remittances for thirty years; but their scanty wants were supplied by their poor flock, and by the practice of medicine. They were quiet, literary men, and much respected. One died in 1823, and the other in 1832. Their places have been supplied by young priests from Italy. I cannot find that here, or elsewhere in Burmah, the Catholics make much effort to gain converts to the Christian faith; and though half a century has elapsed since the arrival of the first missionaries, they have never given their people any portion of the Scriptures in their vernacular. The service is in Latin, of course; but such as preach, do so in Burman. The Catholics live and dress just as other Burmans, and are only to be distinguished from them by their deeper poverty and grosser immorality.

A visit to Sagaing, opposite to Ava, and once the metropolis, gave me not only an opportunity of noting what my official duty required, but of visiting the tomb of Dr Price. The intimacy that subsisted between us, and the fine points in his character, came vividly before me as I walked over the fallen walls of his dwelling, or in his garden in ruins,

.. And still where many a garden-flower grows wild."

or under the huge tamarinds which shaded his walks. 'Twas a dark day for Burmah when he died. The Lord has blessed his memory by the conversion of his two sons, now in America. May they become apostles for Burmah!

The population of Sagaing is perhaps 50,000, and the small district or township belonging to it about 80,000 more. There seems to be no obstacle to the immediate settlement of a missionary, except that we have no one familiar with the language who can be spared. Many Chinese reside here, who read tracts and Bibles in their own language. The few we have been able to distribute in this vicinity for a few months past, have been most gratefully received, and sundry individuals, in applying for others, have proved they had been attentively read.

Three miles north-west of the city are the quarries of statuary marble from which most of the stone image of Gaudama are made. It is also used for water-spouts and other purposes about sacred edifices, and shine conspicuously round all the pagodas in this part of the country, in the polished claws and grinning teeth of the huge lions (so called) which guard the precinct. The real lion is unknown in Burmah; and these images, which, though of all sizes, are perfectly alike, are the most atrocious caricatures of the king of beasts.

From eight to fifteen miles farther north is a region resembling the "licks" of our western country, where vast quantities of salt are made.

Five miles south-west of Sagaing, and about a mile from the great manufactory of idols, is the Kyoun-moo-dau-gyee pagoda, famous for its size. Its shape is precisely like a thimble, 170 feet high, and 1000 feet in circumference at the base. It looks, in ascending the river, like a little mountain. An inscription within the enclosure gives the date of its erection, which corresponds to our A. D. 1626.

The Mengoon pagoda, above Umerapoora, would be vastly larger if finished, surpassing some of the pyramids

of Egypt. When not more than half advanced, the grew so cool towards Buddhism, and had so exhausted his means and the liberality of the nobles, that he abandoned the undertaking. His Brahminical astrologers furnished him an excellent pretext by giving out that so soon as finished he would die, and the dynasty be changed. The lions were finished, and though intended, of course, to bear the usual proportion the size of the edifice, they are ninety feet high. A large bell was also cast for it, stated, in the thirty-fifth volume of the authorised Burman History or Chronicles, to weigh 55,500 viss (about 200,000 lbs.); but the chief moon-gyee declared to me that its weight was 88,000 viss.

On the way to Umerapoora, we saw the royal barges, and visited the pagodas and zayats of Shway-kyet-yot, or "the scratch of the golden fowl." The group stands on a bluff jutting into the river, opposite the range of hills back of Sagaing, which terminate at the shore. The whole is now in fine order, some having been lately re-coated with stucco, and the whole fresh whitewashed. It forms the most beautiful object from Ava, resembling, at that distance, a noble palace of white marble.

Here Gaudama wears a form not given to him elsewhere, I believe, except in paintings, namely, that of a cock. The legend is, that when he was in that form of existence, he was king of all fowls, and, passing that race, he scratched there! Hence the sanctity of the spot, and hence the noble structures which distinguish it. The face of the stone cocks which ornament the niches is somewhat human, the bill being brought up to his eyes, like a huge hooked nose. In the zayats at his cool and delightful retreat, commanding the best view of Ava and much of the river above and below, we found a number of well-dressed men reposing on clean mats, to whom we preached "Jesus and the resurrection." They readily accepted tracts, and we left them intently perusing them.

A short row farther brought us to Umerapoora, seven miles above Ava, on the same side of the river, which here takes a sudden bend to the north. It extends back to a noble lake, and is shaded charmingly with trees. The location is, however, very inferior to that of Ava. A low island and an extensive flat obstruct the harbour, and, except at high water, the lake behind has not a good entrance from the river. At Ava, the shore is bold, and the water always deep, and the Myetnga, or Little River, which passes through the eastern suburb, is a fine navigable stream, opening a trade to the interior for two hundred miles.

Umerapoora was nearly desolated by a dreadful fire in 1823; but though within the walls it remains desolate, the suburbs have grown to a city at least as populous as Ava itself. A large number of Chinese reside here, and carry on a considerable trade with their own country by the annual caravans. They are Buddhists, as most of the common Chinese are, and have a showy temple, with an adequate supply of priests. We sought refuge there in a shower, and were courteously received. They listened to the good news with decorum, and accepted Burman tracts, in which language many of them read. During our visit, a number of Burmans came and made their offerings and shuekoo to the image.

There are various wonders at Umerapoora, such as the great and boasted bell (Burmans are marvellously fond of vast bells); the brass cannon, almost the largest in the world; the stupendous brazen image of Gaudama, brought from Arracan; the girl mentioned in Mr Kincaid's journal, and by Major Crawford, as being covered with long fine hair, &c.; but I could not spend the time necessary to see them, and, procuring a bullock cart, rode about to see the localities, extent of population, &c.

It seems important to locate at least two missionaries at this place, not only for the 100,000 inhabitants, but for the thousands of Chinese who may here be reached. One of the missionaries might study Chinese, and be prepared at a future day to accompany the caravan to Yunnan. The government would not interfere to

prevent the conversion of foreigners, and the converts which, we are bound to hope and believe, would be made, might become most efficient missionaries to their countrymen.

A few miles back of the city, the Chinese have some plantations of sweet cane, and manufacture a large quantity of excellent brown and yellow sugar. I purchased some as good as our best yellow Havanna, at about four cents a pound.

The immediate cognisance of the king secures this part of the empire from many of the severe oppressions under which more distant sections constantly groan; and tends in several other ways to increase its comparative population. It is beyond doubt the most densely inhabited part of the kingdom. Those whom I deemed best able to inform me, stated, that within a radius of twenty miles, there must be at least half a million of people.

On the 3d of August came the sad adieu to the kind friends in Ava, who for a month had left nothing untried to make my stay pleasant, and aid my official duties. To Colonel H. Burney, the British resident, I am under many obligations, not only for attentions and assistance in the acquisition of information, but for personal kindnesses bestowed in the most delicate manner. To him, and scarcely less to Mrs Burney, the mission is largely indebted. At Tavoy, of which province Colonel Burney had charge some years, they were as parents to the lamented Boardman. At Rangoon, where he has occasionally resided, since holding his present appointment, they were not less kind to the missionaries, even watching them day and night in their sickness. At Ava, our brethren and their families not only receive daily and expensive kindnesses, but are ever so treated as to give them the highest possible estimation among the people.

The first two days of the descending voyage passed delightfully. My boat, too small for two, is ample for one, and I soon got all my matters nicely adjusted. Secure from interruption, and being alone, little exposed to distraction, it was encouraging to be able to get to work in good earnest, to arrange and digest the hoard of memorandums gained during the past busy month. It creates, too, something like a feeling of *home* to be, any where, "monarch of all you survey," and to be surrounded by none but such as you may command; and especially, there is satisfaction in reviewing your steps after an errand is pleasantly accomplished. With all these advantages, the river, now forty feet above its common level, bore me along at the rate of four miles an hour, and so loftily, that I could see over the country far and near; the banks being but a foot or two above the flood. Instead of being dragged only by ropes, under a sultry bank, seeing only such houses and trees as stood on the brink, or, if under sail, "hugging the shore," to avoid the current, we now swept gallantly down the mid stream, higher from the top of the boat than the level country, and seeing the noble hills to their very base. The whole landscape, refreshed by occasional rains, presents, at this season, scenes which are not surpassed on the Rhine, or on our own more beautiful Connecticut.

7th.—Alas! a traveller has little cause to give patience a furlough because he gets a visit from pleasure. Here I am, the fourth day of the trip, moored not "under the lee," but alongside of a sandy island, just enough "a-lee" to get a constant drizzle of sand upon every thing, and not enough to shelter us from the huge waves that render it impossible to do any thing, while the wind has full sweep at me, and will not suffer a paper to lie in its place. The men have done their best to "keep moving," but the wind defies both oars and tide. Yesterday we had much ado to make headway against it, and it probably will not alter much, as it is the midst of the monsoon. It, however, generally subsides before night, and we must catch our chances. If my Master be not in haste to get me to Rangoon, why should I be? My eyes, partly from over-use, and partly from the glare upon the water, have become bad again; and as there is no one to

speak to, I am ensconced here, deprived of book, pen, and conversation. If this order of things should continue, I shall soon have a satiety of my lordly loneliness.

August 13.—Through divine goodness I am now in sight of Rangoon, having made the passage in eleven days, without accident. For the sake of expedition, I floated a good deal in the night, as the wind then always subsided, and we made better progress than in the daytime with six oars. But the boatmen were sadly uneasy at doing so, and were constantly assailed by accounts of recent robberies and murders. At one village, we found in the house of the head-man several persons who had that afternoon been robbed of their boat, and all it contained. Frequently, as we passed a village, the officers would call out that we must wait for other boats and proceed in company. Sometimes they would take a boat, and come out to compel me to stop, saying that, if I was murdered or robbed, they might have to answer for it with their heads. I always answered that I must proceed; and making them some little presents, they would desist. On several occasions, they had no sooner left me, and it was perceived along shore that I was going on, than a little fleet of boats would put off, and I went abundantly escorted. They had all probably been detained for the same reasons, and supposing me well armed, as foreigners always are, were glad of my protection.

What a wretched government is this, which, while it taxes and burdens the people to the very utmost, grants them, in return, no security for person or property! Hence the huddling together in little wretched villages. A Burman with any thing to lose would not dare to live on a farm even one mile from a village. No such case probably exists in the empire. The very poorest, and the Karens, who are always very poor, venture to live in villages of three or four houses in the jungle, and cultivate patches of rice. The people at large live in the bondage of constant fear. Not only is thieving common, but robbing by bands. Thirty or fifty men, well armed and disguised, surround a house, while a detachment plunders it, and permit no one to go to their aid. On the rivers, robberies are even more frequent, as the chance of detection is less. We have scarcely a missionary family that has not been robbed. So much was said, by some of my kind English friends in Rangoon, of the folly and danger of going unarmed, as I had hitherto done, and of the imputations which would be cast upon them, if they suffered me to go in this manner, that I consented to borrow a pair of pistols and a bag of cartridges. I never opened my bag of cartridges till to-day, when, seeing alligators along shore, and desirous to see if they were as impenetrable as travellers assert, I went to my bag, but found they were all musket cartridges, and not one would go in! Surely, in closing this part of my mission, I may sing of the mercy of the Lord, and cherish an increased confidence that his goodness will lead me "all my journey through."

CHAPTER VI.

Chittagong. Cox's Bazaar. Akyab. Kyauk Phyo. Ramree. Arracan.

THERE being no mode of getting into the Arracan and Chittagong provinces but by way of Calcutta, my next voyage was to that city; but to avoid disjoining the notes on Burmah, I postpone any account of Bengal, and will finish, in this chapter, my travels on this side of the bay.

I embarked, November 27, from Calcutta for Chittagong. The voyage consumed a fortnight.

This town lies about ten miles from the mouth of the river, on the right bank, and is the head-quarters of a company's regiment, and the civil officers of the province. The Rev. Mr Johannes, who has laboured here for sixteen years, in connection with Serampore, re-

ceived me with great hospitality, and in a few days I was provided with a passage one stage farther on my way.

Chittagong, or Islam-a-bad, is situated on and among small abrupt hills, which furnish beautiful sites for the mansions of the English, some of which command a view of the sea. The natives live along the valleys, among plattain, olive, mango, orange, and almond trees, with neat gardens of esculents. The streets are in good order, and the bazaar abundantly supplied with every sort of domestic and foreign produce. The town includes 12,000 people, and immediately adjacent are many populous villages. The language, the mode of building, and the general aspect of every thing, are decidedly Bengalee. About three hundred vessels, chiefly brigs of from forty to a hundred tons, are owned in the place, and many vessels from other places resort there. The chief exports are rice and salt. I saw lying at anchor several large Maldivé boats of indescribable construction. These vessels, with a deck made of thatch, venture annually, during this fine season, from those distant islands, bringing cowries, tortoise-shell, cumela, cocoa-nuts, and coir for rope, and carry away rice and small manufactures. No missionary has ever been sent to that numerous and interesting people.

Mr Johannes preaches in English and Bengalee, both of which are vernacular to him, but devotes most of his time to a very large school, which was commenced by the Rev. Mr Peacock, in 1818. It was intended, and has always been continued, for poor Roman Catholic children, but there have generally been a few Bengalese. Several of the pupils, on finishing at school, have obtained places under government. Only two scholars have ever been converted.

Accompanying Mr Johannes into the bazaar to preach, we soon had an audience of ten or fifteen, who paid good attention, and asked some questions, but seemed firm in their own faith. A Mussulman Yogee passing by, smeared with cow-dung and Ganges mud, I felt anxious to converse kindly with him, and did so for some time through Mr Johannes. His countenance was anxious and care-worn, and he declared that the sole object of his life was to appease the severity of the angel of death. I pointed him to the Lamb of God, and endeavoured to make clear to his understanding the way of life. It was not necessary to dwell on his sinfulness and need of a Saviour, for he was burdened with conscious guilt. But he was afraid to give up his austerities, and depend on free grace; and ended with the usual conclusion, that our religion is excellent for us, but their religion is better for them.

There has for ages been a mixed progeny of Portuguese in Chittagong, who have multiplied to about two thousand souls. They have two places of worship, and at present one priest, who, being ignorant both of Bengalee and English, is restricted to the mere performance of his Latin ritual. This class show no anxiety, in general, for the conversion of the pagans, and in many cases are less moral, if possible, than the heathens themselves.

The district of Chittagong is about 120 miles long, and 60 wide. It seems to have belonged originally to Tipurah, and to have become a part of the kingdom of Bengal early in the sixteenth century, after which it was annexed to the Mogul dominions. It was ceded to the Company by Jaffier Ali Khan in 1760. The population is about 1,000,000, of which two-thirds are Mussulmans, and the residue chiefly Hindus. There were formerly many Mugs, but since the tranquillisation and security of Arracan under British rule, most of these have returned to their country.

Most of Chittagong is fertile, and rice is largely exported. Salt is made and exported in great quantities, and much is used on the spot in curing fish, which abound on the coast. The inhabitants are in general wretchedly poor, but the company derive annually from the province about 1,200,000 rupees. The taxes being collected, not on the system of Arracan and the Tenas-

serim provinces, but on the Zemindar system of Bengal, the people pay perhaps nearly double that sum.

Finding a coasting-vessel of about thirty tons, bound to Akyab, I embraced the opportunity of going that far towards my destination, and, after an uncomfortable voyage of five days, reached the place.

A little to the south of Chittagong, we passed the mouth of the Cruscool river, where is situated the Mug village of Cox's bazaar, containing perhaps six hundred houses. Here the excellent Colman laboured a few months and died. Loath to quit the place at the beginning of the rains, and spend that long period away from his people, he remained, and fell at his post. The insalubrity of this spot to foreigners seems not easily accounted for. It stands only two or three miles from the open sea, on lofty ground, at the termination of the "White Cliffs," and has no jungle very near. Colman's bungalow stood on a hill facing the sea, and there seemed no reason why a temperate and prudent man might not remain safely. But this whole coast seems deadly to foreigners.

Of such cases as that of Colman, I have learned the particulars of some twenty or more, who, trusting to caution and a divine blessing on well-meant endeavours, and willing to hazard all things for the heathen, have staid where others dare not stay, and, sooner or later, fallen by the country fever. The Lord forgive those, who, without having seen a mission, pronounce the whole scheme mercenary. An idle, luxurious, and selfish missionary, I have not yet seen.

No missionary has resided at Cox's bazaar since Mr Colman's decease. Mr Fink has sometimes visited the place, and for a few months two native assistants were stationed there. About twenty of the inhabitants had become Christians before Mr Colman's arrival, some of whom removed to Akyab. The rest are dead, excluded, or scattered. The town must be an out-station from Chittagong. The population is constantly diminishing.

At Akyab, the Rev. Mr Fink, a converted native of Ternate, who has been a missionary here for ten years, in connection with Serampore, received me into his large family with great kindness. The English officers, as every where else, bestowed upon me every attention in their power, and added many valuable facts to my stock of official memoranda.

The city is situated on the northern mouth of the Arracan, or more properly the Kulladine river, about a mile from the sea, and has a spacious and secure harbour. It is the commercial metropolis of Arracan, and generally has much shipping in port. Rice is obtained in unlimited quantities among the numerous islands which form the delta of the Kulladine and Combermere bay. It costs, on an average, cleaned from the husk, ten rupees per hundred acres, and the export amounts annually to more than 300,000 rupees. The price of paddy, or uncleaned rice, is about five rupees a hundred acres. A considerable quantity of salt is exported, which is here bought at three maunds for a rupee, or about 250 pounds for forty-five cents. The population of the city is about 6000, of whom many are Bengalese, and some Chinese.

The district of Akyab comprises the whole of Arracan as far south as Combermere bay; but in all this region only about 20,000 dongas are cultivated. Each dong of tilled land will produce about 280 bushels of paddy, yielding the cultivator about seventy or eighty rupees, when delivered at market.

The number of mendicants in the whole district, according to the last census, is thirty-one Mugs, and 210 Mussulmans. Of loose women there are but two Mugs, while of the comparatively few Bengalese there are over fifty. These wretched beings are licensed for five rupees each per annum—a system which is pursued in other parts of the company's territory. In relation to this licensing prostitutes, so common, not only in India, but Europe, I wish all concerned in making such laws could be reproved in the language of that truly great man, President Dwight, in his sermon on the seventh

commandment:—"Who could believe that princes, and other rulers of mankind, have taxed and licensed these houses of ruin? Who could believe that sin would be thus bartered in the market, and damnation be held up as a commodity for bargain and sale?—that the destruction of the human soul would be publicly granted and authorised as a privilege?—and that patents would be made out, signed, and sealed, for peopling more extensively the world of woe?"

Mr Fink maintains, with the aid of his wife and son, and a native assistant, three schools—one for males, and another for females, in the vernacular; and one for boys in English. All are in a weak state, and present few encouraging appearances. No conversion has occurred in either of the schools. He has baptised here eleven Arracanese and two East Indians.* The whole number of members in his church is about forty. Of these many reside at Kroo-day, a village on the other side of the island, eight miles distant, containing ten or twelve families, most of whom are Christians. Four of the natives are employed as assistants, who daily distribute tracts, and preach from house to house. None are at present known to be seriously examining the claims of Christianity.

The principal articles of living are cheap in this province. Bread as good as that of our bakers is supplied daily, at one rupee for fourteen loaves a little smaller than those sold with us for six and a quarter cents; fowls, one rupee per dozen; ducks, eight for a rupee; best cleaned rice, one rupee per bushel; eggs, six cents per dozen; milk, about fifteen pints for a rupee; servants' wages, six rupees per month, without board. Fuel costs about one rupee per month.

I embraced the opportunity at Akyab, as at other places, of preaching to the few who understand English (about a dozen, including Mr Fink's family), and to the natives through Mr Fink. In addressing native Christians (for in general none others attend public worship), I generally question them respecting the great truths of religion, and find them, as might be expected, mere babes in knowledge, but often very intelligent and firm. A weekly exercise, on the plan of our Bible classes, would prove, at every station, of great utility.

No vessel being ready for Kyook Phyoo, I hired a fishing-boat, leaving Mr Fink to engage me a passage in the first vessel for Madras. With eight stout oarsmen, and a promise of buckshee (presents) if they made great haste, I arrived in twenty-three hours; the time being usually from two to three days. The little Hindustanee I endeavoured to pick up in Calcutta proves every day important, but on this occasion quite necessary, as not a soul in the boat speaks a word of English. The Hindustanee is the universal language of India, understood by some persons in every region, and spoken generally by servants. Foreigners acquire it in preference to any of the other vernaculars. Fifty or sixty travellers' phrases, with sundry single words, enable me to get along somehow, but often leave me at a loss in cases of special necessity.

Through divine goodness in restoring Mr and Mrs Comstock from late severe illnesses, I found them at their post in Kyook Phyoo in health, and was received with great joy. A week soon rolled away in friendly and official intercourse, and resulted, as in previous cases, in a strong personal regard, which made parting truly painful. We visited all the adjacent villages, and settled various plans, which I trust will prove important and successful. I availed myself of my present improvement in voice to preach to the military gentlemen of the station, and such others as understood English, and had an audience of about twenty—the only sermon they had heard during the two years of the regiment's stay in Arracan.

Mr and Mrs Comstock arrived at Kyook Phyoo, and began the first labours of our Board in Arracan in

March 1835, having previously studied Burman in America, and during the voyage, under Mr Wade. He now begins to converse freely with the natives, and to preach a little. He has distributed tracts, and conversed with the people not only at Kyook Phyoo, but at some sixty or seventy villages in the district. In March 1836, he began two schools, which had an average of twenty-five scholars. The repeated sicknesses of both himself and wife have interrupted them very much, and considerably reduced the attendance. The scholars, with two or three adults, form Mr Comstock's audience on the Sabbath. Part of the day is spent with the pupils in Sabbath school exercises. Several of the boys evinced a good proficiency in reading, writing, geography, and arithmetic, and answered questions on the principal points of Scripture truth with great correctness. No conversion is known to have taken place at this station, and but one individual seems to be seriously examining the claims of Christianity. This, however, is by no means discouraging, when it is considered that Mr Comstock came here, nearly ignorant of the language, only eighteen months ago, and, of course, has not been able to communicate divine truth to any advantage, nor has he enjoyed the services of a native assistant. I procured one for him at Akyab, and with this aid, and his present knowledge of the language, have no fears of his success, if health be spared to him.

This port is a watering-place for numerous trading vessels from Bassein and other places in Burmah, on their way to Chittagong and Calcutta. They generally stop several days, and traffic a little. Many of them carry forty, fifty, or even more men. These often resort to Mr Comstock's house, to hear about the new religion, and receive tracts. Some of them come from places which no missionary has yet visited. As the region round Kyook Phyoo is barren, and thinly peopled, almost every eatable and many manufactures are brought from adjacent places, and from Aeng, which extends still more the opportunity of distributing gospels and tracts. The employment on public works, &c., being greater than the supply of resident labourers, many come every dry season, and return to their families at the beginning of the rains, by whom the truth may be disseminated. The very extensive archipelago to the east and north of Kyook Phyoo, enables a missionary to reach much of the population by water, in a convenient boat. Thus, although the population of the town is small, not exceeding, probably, with adjacent villages, 2000 souls, it is an important location for a missionary. It, moreover, has the advantage of a European physician, and a bazaar containing every necessary.

Ramree, at the south-east end of the island, about twenty-four hours' sailing from Kyook Phyoo, stands on a large creek of the same name, eighteen or twenty miles from the mouth, and has 7000 inhabitants, compactly located. It occupies both banks of the creek, connected by noble bridges, and enjoys a large bazaar, and much commerce. Though very hot, from its being low and surrounded by hills, it bears a high character for salubrity, and latterly has been preferred, in this respect, even to Kyook Phyoo. One or two British officers reside here. It has all the advantages, as a missionary station, which have just been attributed to Kyook Phyoo, besides having a much larger population, and ought to be occupied as soon as possible. The large and very populous island of Cheduba is immediately adjacent.

Eastward of Ramree about half a day, is a considerable sect, who maintain that there is one eternal God, who has manifested himself in the different Buddhas. They deny the transmigration of souls, and affirm that at death the future state of every human being is eternally fixed. They worship images of Gaudama, merely as images, to remind them of deity. They have, however, kyongs and priests, and conform to all the Burman usages, though rejected as heretics by their countrymen. There has been no attempt made to

* The term now generally applied to those in whom native and European blood is mixed, and who used to be called "country born."

BURMAH.

ascertain their number, though it is certainly considerable. Many tracts and portions of Scripture have been distributed among them, and some have expressed strong desires for the visits of a missionary.

Sandoway, the capital of the district of that name, which embraces all the southern part of Arracan, is situated on the Sandoway river, about twelve miles from the sea. It has a population of 4000, chiefly Burmans and half-Burmans; the rest are Mugs. No spot in India is considered more healthful than this. From hence a missionary might operate extensively, not only in south Arracan but up the Bassein river, and the islands at its mouth, in Burmah Proper. The British officer there is anxious for the settlement of a missionary, and would afford him every possible facility. It is the only spot, besides those which have been named, where a missionary could hope to live during the sickly season, except, perhaps, Aeng, where a British commissioner, &c., reside throughout the year, though at great hazard. No officer has been able to retain his health there, and several have died.

Of the province of Arracan, I need not add much to the remarks on particular districts which have already been given. It is called by the natives *Rekhein*, and is bounded north by the River Naaf, and a line from near its sources, eastward to the A-non-pec-too-nion, or Yomadong Mountains, which divide it from Burmah the whole length down to Cape Negrais. On the west is the Bay of Bengal. The length is about 470 miles. The breadth never exceeds 100, and sometimes is only 10—average about 60. It is estimated to contain about 17,000 square miles, of which but one twenty-fourth part is cultivated, though almost every part is capable of tillage.

The population is usually given in books at 300,000, but, by the last official returns, is only 237,000. The country is divided into four districts, namely, Akyab, Ramree, Sandoway, and Aeng; of which Akyab has 108,166 inhabitants; Ramree, 68,934; Sandoway, 23,976; and Aeng, 11,751. In addition to these, there are hill tribes, not regularly numbered, amounting to about 25,000.

The country appears to have preserved its independence from the earliest periods, though often invaded and overrun, for a time, by its more powerful neighbours. In 1753, Minderagye, emperor of Burmah, resolved on annexing it to his dominions. Raising an overwhelming force, he invaded it in various places, both by sea and land, and, though vigorously resisted, completely conquered all the more level portions on the sea-board, and took the monarch prisoner. Several hill tribes, however, remained free, and do so to this day.

Among the spoil on this occasion, the most valued articles, and those which perhaps had a large share in inducing the war, were a colossal bronze image of Boodh, and a cannon measuring thirty feet long, and ten inches in calibre. These were transported in triumph to Umerapoora, the then capital, and are still shown there with much pride.

The cession of the country to the British, the descendants of the old royal family of Arracan have several times endeavoured to regain the government. During the present year (1836), an attempt of the kind was made. Some of the hill tribes, and various robbers, &c., joined the conspirators, and an army of considerable force was mustered. Some villages were burnt, and the city of Arracan taken; but the sepoys drove them from the place without coming to any pitched battle, and the leaders at length took refuge in Burmah, and ended the struggle. The government at Ava has given up most of the chiefs, who are now in prison at Akyab.

This province has always been deemed particularly unhealthy to foreigners, though the natives have a few diseases, and as little sickness, as in other parts of Burmah. Kyonk Phyo, Ramree, and Sandoway, are certainly salubrious points, particularly the latter. Most of the face of the country is rugged mountain, covered with forest and jungle. The soil of the low

lands is luxuriant, and well watered by beautiful streams from the mountains. The coast is particularly desolate; and except at three or four places, shows no sign of any inhabitant. The ranges of hills along the sea-board are composed of grey sandstone, intermixed with ferruginous clay. Coral abounds along the whole coast.

The proximity of the mountains to the sea precludes large rivers. The only one of importance is the Kuladine, which rises about the parallel of Chittagong, and after a southerly course of 250 miles, including its windings, disembogues by several mouths, the principal of which is at Akyab. The Arracan river discharges by the same delta. The innumerable islands which extend from the latitude of the city of Arracan to that of Kyonk Phyo, give complete access to most of the agricultural region.

Arracan was once famous for cocoa-nuts, but in former wars they were nearly exterminated. There are now scarcely any trees of this sort in the province, and quantities are imported. The fruits and vegetables are much the same as in Burmah, but in general less abundant, and of inferior quality. Oranges (called by the natives sweet limes) are very plenty and excellent. The proper lemon, I was told, is not found, but there are sour limes as large as ostrich eggs, with skin as thick as that of the sluttuck. In some places there are mangoes, and the jack is pretty common. The wild fig is excellent. Other fruits are much the same as in Burmah, but scarcer and of inferior quality. The annual fall of rain is about two hundred inches. The seasons are the same as those of Pegu.

Arracan was formerly the principal city, and very large. It is now reduced to 3000 inhabitants, and is still diminishing. Its trade has passed to Akyab, at the mouth of the river, a site selected by the English for its advantageous position for health and commerce, and now rapidly growing. The old city has been always fatal to foreigners, though a favourite residence with the Mugs. The Burmans, who used to come with the governor when the country was their province, could not endure it. When the British took it and established a camp there, two full European regiments were reduced, in a few months, to three hundred men in both—and even of sepoys and camp-followers from forty to fifty died per day. Perhaps the particular circumstances of that army gave force to the pestilence, for nearly the same dreadful diminution attended the army in Rangoon, confessedly one of the healthiest places in the world.

This country is regarded as the parent hive of the Burman race and language. They are certainly much less intelligent than the Burmans, and the country less prosperous, doubtless in consequence of frequent and desolating wars, and long oppression. The written language is precisely the same as the Burman; but the pronunciation of many letters is so different as to make a dialect not very intelligible to Burmans. Why the language and people are called *Mugs* rather than *Arracanese*, is not very clear. I was generally assured that it is derived from a race of kings, who reigned at the time the country first became much known to Europeans. They regard the term as a contemptuous nickname, and universally call themselves *Mrammas*. This name they declare to be usurped by the Burmans, whom they call *Ouk-tha*, or people of the low country. The Burman in turn takes this epithet as an insult.

Many Bengalese are settled in the maritime sections of the country, who retain their own faith. They are called by the Arracanese *Kulá-yekéin*. Their morals are far worse than those of the natives.

The trade of the country never was considerable, till since the late removal of transit duties. It is now large and increasing. There is no mint in the province, as erroneously stated by Hamilton, but company rupees and pie are the uniform currency.

The taxes are very burdensome, and levied on almost every thing—land, fruit-trees, fishing-nets, spirit-shops, boats, buffaloes, toddy-trees, ploughs, hucksters, traders,

physicians, astrologers, the right of collecting wax and honey, of cutting timber, &c. &c. All the monopolies are now abolished, except opium and salt. The opium vender must buy only of government, and must also pay twenty-five rupees per annum for a licence. Formerly the inhabitants were forced to make a certain quantity of salt, and sell it to the government for two annas a maund, which was carried to Bengal, where also it is a monopoly, and where none could be bought except from government at four to six rupees per maund—a clear profit, in that short distance, of about forty times the price. The people are not now forced to make it, but all they do make must be sold in the province, or, if exported, must be sold only to government at twelve annas the maund. The entire revenue derived by the company from Arracan amounts to about 600,000 rupees per annum.

Slaves were much more numerous under the Burman government than at present, and modifications of the system have been established very much like those of the Tenasserim provinces. Such as were taken in war have been released. Persons may sell themselves for money, but cannot sell one another, or their children. Fifteen rupees per annum is now required to be deducted from the debt of a man, and eight from that of a woman.

Though the Arracanese are Boodhists, and as tenacious of their system as others, yet they seem less devoted to its prescribed observances. Little money or time is spent in religion. I saw no pagoda in the province, except a small one, left half built, near Akyab; nor any person carrying offerings, or attending to his religion in any other way. The Kyoungs which I saw are but wretched huts. There are more in the interior, pagodas, &c., in greater abundance; but Mr Fink, who has travelled much in the province, has seen but three new pagodas in the whole district of Akyab, for ten years past. His opinion is, that the influence of Boodhism is sensibly on the decline, while no other system is taking its place. At Akyab are only about twenty priests. At Raurree, which is the episcopal residence and religious metropolis of all Arracan, there are not more than two hundred.

Among many incidents illustrative of the declining power of Boodhism over this people, Mr Fink related the following. In one of his excursions, a man complained to him (Mr Fink holds an office under government) of his neighbour for demolishing an idol. The man defended himself by the following representation:—He had been fishing at some distance from home, and was returning with a club in his hand to defend himself from wild beasts. As he approached the village, and was passing by an image of Gaudama, he saw some of his buffaloes wandering into the forest. Commending his net and string of fishes, therefore, to the care of the idol, he set off to recover his beasts. This object accomplished, he returned; but as he drew near, a huge bird descended, and bore away his string of fish. Angry at the image, and excited by his loss, he upbraided it for stupidity, and dealt upon it such blows with his club as knocked off its head. Mr Fink, of course, endeavoured to show the folly of both him who still venerated, and him who had rudely broken the idol.

To one who has observed the awful reverence paid by idolaters to their idols, this incident is not merely amusing. A few years ago, no man in Arracan would have dared, under any temptation, to commit such an act, and especially to excuse himself for it. This little fact, too, shows that, as in Popery so in Boodhism, though the more enlightened regard the image only as an image, and a remembrance of Deity, the common people pay it, truly and literally, divine honours.

Some thousand of tracts and portions of Scripture have been distributed in Arracan, and the truth proclaimed in many places; but it is known that large numbers of the tracts have been destroyed, and no general spirit of investigation prevails. The few native Christians in connection with Mr Fink are all that are known among the 300,000 Arracanese.

Towards the hills is the Mroo or Mroong tribe, about 5000. Beyond these, on the lower hills, are the Kyens, amounting to 15,000; and beyond these, on the Yomadong Mountains, are the Arungs, or Arings, amounting to 10,000. Of these tribes and others on the borders of Burmah, mention will be made in another place.

None of them have received the "good news," and little of them is known to the British government. Missionaries among either of them would be obliged to reside half the year on the sea-board, on account of the insalubrity of their country in its present uncleared state.

The return to Akyab was rendered less dreary than the voyage down, by the society of brother Comstock. There was no more room indeed; as, though I had a larger boat, there were now two of us; and the monsoon being against us, we were much longer. But Christian converse is sweet in this land of idols and iniquity. As we now were obliged to stop at night, and for cooking, it gave an opportunity of seeing some of the people in their villages, and presenting them the first tracts they had ever seen, as well as walking a little among the solitudes of everlasting green.

The region between Kyouk Phyou and Akyab is an extensive and yet unexplored archipelago of small hilly islands, for the most part uninhabited. In winding among these, instead of putting out to sea, the scenery, though wild, is often very fine—

"An orient panorama, glowing, grand,
Strange to the eye of Poesy; vast depths
Of jungle shade; the wild immensity
Of forests, rank with plenitude, where trees
Foreign to song display their mighty forms,
And clothe themselves with all the pomp of life and bloom."

LAWSON.

The shores for the most part are coral. Specimens of great size and beauty, white, yellow, red, and black, are gathered here. To walk on "coral strands" was not less new to me than to see beautiful shells, such as are on mantel-pieces at home, moving over the moist sand, in every direction, each borne by its little tenant. The study of conchology has long seemed to me to bear about the same relation to the animal kingdom, that the study of the coats of unknown races of men would be to the human family. But to see the creatures in their robes; to watch them as they sought their food, or fled to their holes at my approach; to mark what they ate, how they made their holes, and how, when overtaken, they drew all in, and seemed dead; how they moved and how they saw, &c.—was delightful. I felt myself gazing at a new page in nature's vast volume. I rejoiced that my God is so wise, so kind, so great, and that one day I should read his works "in fairer worlds on high."

Some of these shells resembled large snails, but of beautiful colours; others, still larger and more elegant, were of the shape used for snuff-boxes; others were spiral cones, five or six inches' diameter at the base. Each had claws, which it put forth on each side, and walked as a tortoise, but much faster. When alarmed, the head and claws were drawn inward so far as to make the shell seem empty. As my ignorance of conchology prevented my distinguishing common from rare specimens, I refrained from encumbering my luggage with either shells or coral.

The forest was too thick and tangled to allow us to penetrate many yards from shore, except where there were villages. Recent tiger tracks, too, admonished us not to attempt it. Alas! here is a fine country, with but one-fortieth of the land inhabited; and the forests thus left render the climate injurious to the few who remain. Such are the bitter fruits of war. War has made this wilderness, where there might have been a garden, and given back the homes of men to beasts of prey.

Leaving the shores of Burmah, probably for ever, inflicted on me no small pain. The dear list of names who compose our band of labourers there seemed before

me as the shores receded. Personal intercourse had been rendered endearing by intimacy, by mutual prayers, by official ties, by the kindest attentions, by a common object of life, and by similarity of hopes for the world to come. To part for ever could not but wring my heart.

"'Tis sad to part, e'en with the thought
That we shall meet again;
For then it is that we are taught
A lesson with deep sorrow fraught,
How firmly, silently, is wrought
Affection's viewless chain.

Long ere that hour, we may have known
The bondage of the heart;
But, as uprooting winds alone
Disclose how deep the tree has grown,
How much they love is only known
When those who love must part."

Happy I am to be able to bear solemn and decided testimony to the purity, zeal, and economy of our missionaries and their wives. I have nowhere seen persons more devoted to their work, or more suitable for it. Nowhere in all Burmah have I seen "missionary palaces," or an idle, pampered, or selfish missionary. As to the female missionaries, I am confident that, if they were all at home this day, and the churches were to choose again, they could not select better. I bear testimony that what has been printed respecting the state and progress of the mission is strictly true; though I found that the inferences which I and others had drawn from these accounts were exaggerated. Every thing I have seen and heard has tended to satisfy me of the practicability and usefulness of our enterprise, and to excite lamentation that we prosecute it at so feeble a rate.

Divine approbation evidently rests upon every part of the undertaking. The life of Judson has been spared so long, that we have a translation of the whole Bible, and several tracts, more perfect than can be found in almost any other mission. We have nearly 1000 converts, besides all those who have died in the faith; and sixty or seventy native assistants, some of them men of considerable religious attainments. A general knowledge of Christianity has been diffused through

some large sections of the empire. Several of the younger missionaries are now so far advanced in the language, as to be just ready to enter on evangelical labours. Very extensive printing operations are now established, producing about two millions of pages per month; and the whole aspect of the mission is highly encouraging.

The little churches gathered from among the heathen added much to the sense of bereavement inflicted by this parting. The faces of the preachers and prominent members had become familiar to me. With some of them I had journeyed many weary miles. Through them I had addressed the heathen, and distributed the word of God. To some of them I had endeavoured to impart important theological truths. I had heard them pray and preach in their own tongue to listening audiences. I had marked their behaviour in secret, and in hours of peril. Not to love them would be impossible. To part from them for life without pain, is equally impossible. May it but prove salutary to myself!

The consciousness of a thousand imperfections in the discharge of my duty, forms the principal trial. Still there has been good devised, and good begun, and evil checked, and plans matured, which I trust will be found in the great day among the things which perish not.



A statue, such as guard the gates of Burman temples.

DIGESTED NOTES ON THE BURMAN EMPIRE.

CHAPTER I.

The Term India. Hither and Farther India. Boundaries of Burmah. History of the Empire. War with the British. Dis-
memberment of the Tenasserim Provinces. State of the Suc-
cession.

BEFORE passing to other countries, I will here insert the result of my observations and inquiries respecting the natural, moral, political, and religious state of the country.

The term *India* seems to be derived from the Greeks, who applied it to the vast regions beyond the river Indus, to them almost unknown. It is never given to any part of this region by the natives themselves. Both Darius and Alexander pushed their conquests beyond this famed river, though not so far as the Ganges; and from the officers employed in these expeditions, the first historians seem to have derived all their accounts. When the country, some centuries afterwards, came to be better known, it was divided by Ptolemy (A. D. 150) into "Hither and Farther India," making the Ganges the boundary. This distinction is still observed, and seems exceedingly proper. "Hither India" is but another name for Hindustan, including the whole peninsula between the Arabian Sea and Bay of Bengal, and extending northwards to Persia and Thibet. "Farther India," or India beyond the Ganges, embraces Burmah,

Assam, Munnipore, Siam, Camboja, and Cöchin-China; or, to speak more comprehensively, all the region between China and the Bay of Bengal, southward of the Thibet mountains.

The term "Chin-India," which has been lately given to this region, seems to have no propriety, and creates confusion. Malte-Brun increases this confusion by inventing the name "Indian Archipelago," embracing Ceylon, the Laccadives, Maldives, Andaman's, Nicobars, Moluccas, Philippines, Borneo, Sumatra, Java, Celebes, and all their minor neighbours. This name is adopted by some other writers, but with very different boundaries. Crawford, in his History of the Indian Archipelago, limits it thus:—From the western end of Sumatra to the parallel of the Aroe Islands, and from the parallel of 11° south to 19° north, omitting the islands of the Bay of Bengal. Of the countries which compose Farther India, Burmah is the most important, and in all India, is second only to China. The natives call their country *Myamma* in their writings, and in common parlance *Byan-ma*, which is spelled *Bram-ma*, of which foreigners make Burmah. The Chinese call the country *Mein-t'een*. It included, before the late war with England, what were formerly the kingdoms of Ava (or Burmah Proper), Cassay, Arracan, Pegu, Tavoy, Tenasserim, and the extensive territory of the Shyans, extending from Thibet on the north to Siam on the

south, and from the Bay of Bengal on the west to China on the east. This territory is about 1020 miles long, and 600 broad. It now includes Burmah Proper, the greater part of Pegu, a small part of Cassay, and nearly all the Shyan territory. The extreme length of the kingdom is 720 miles, and the extreme breadth about 400.

The rest of Cassay is now independent; while Arracan and the Tenasserim provinces, embracing a territory of about 40,000 square miles, now belong to the British.

Innumerable fables, founded on a wild chronology, make up the Burman history of the origin of their nation, which they throw back several millions of years. The earliest probable date in this stupendous chronology is the epoch of Anjina, the grandfather of Gaudama, which corresponds to the year 691 B. C. In the sixty-eighth year of that epoch, or before Christ 623, Gaudama was born. From that period their tables seem worthy of regard, and are certainly kept with great appearance of accuracy. There is, however, nothing in them that demands a place here.

The seat of government can be traced back to Prome, which seems to have been founded in the year B. C. 443. About this time, the Boodhist religion is supposed to have been introduced. Prome continued to be the metropolis 395 years, when the government was removed to Pagan, where it continued nearly twelve centuries. During this period was established their common vulgar era, the commencement of which corresponds to A. D. 639.* About A. D. 1300, the government was removed to Panya, and soon afterwards to Sagaing. Both these cities were destroyed by the Shyans in 1363, under their king Tho-ken-bwa, in revenge for his father's being given up to the Chinese, after having fled to the Burman court for protection.

About 1526, the Shyans from the region of Mogoung invaded Burmah, put the king to death, overran the country as far as Prome, and for nineteen years reigned at Ava over these acquisitions. The Burmans then recovered their old boundary. The dynasty at this time seems to have been Peguan.

About A. D. 1546, the more hardy natives of the highlands threw off allegiance to this dynasty, and established one of their own families on the throne. Pegu, however, was never regarded as a conquered province, but remained identified with the northern districts. Soon after this, the territory of the Shyans was conquered, and the kingdom began to assume a consequence it had never possessed before. It was, however, much less extensive than now. In 1567, the Burmans, aided by Laos or Shyan tributaries, conquered Siam, and held that country in subjection for thirty years. It afterwards regained its independence; but a deep-rooted enmity remained between the two nations, and war frequently recurred.

About the year 1740, the Peguans, gathering a strong faction in Prome and Martaban, raised the standard of revolution. For twelve years, a ferocious and obstinate civil war distressed the country. At length, being aided by the Portuguese, the Peguans pushed their conquests to the metropolis, which surrendered at discretion. Dweep-dee, the king, was made prisoner, and a southern king once more assumed the throne. But a year had scarcely elapsed before Alompra (more properly spelled *Aloung Pra*), the courageous chief of Moke-so-ho,† gathering a few intrepid adherents, commenced a resistance which issued in a revolution. After some minor successes, his countrymen flocked to his standard, and marching to Ava, that city fell into his hands. Extraordinary courage, prudence, and wisdom, marked his movements; success every where followed; and, after a sanguinary war of several years, Peguan authority was once more subverted, and has never since been ascendant.

Alompra, of course, retained his pre-eminence, and took possession of the throne he had established. Proceeding in his successful career, he attacked Munniporo or Cassay, and reduced to complete subjection the Shyans. With scarcely any cause, he attacked and conquered Tavoy, then an independent kingdom. The Tavoyers, however, instigated by Siam, who was jealous of her growing neighbour, revolted, and were aided by many Peguans and Siamese. Alompra soon crushed the rebellion, and advancing against Siam, invested Mergui by sea and land. It soon submitted, and with it the ancient city of Tenasserim.

After resting and refreshing his army at the latter place, and effectually reducing the entire province, he passed through the whole length of Siam, and invested its capital. This was on the point of yielding, which without doubt would have been followed by his annexing the whole country to his dominions, when he was seized with violent illness, and died in a few days, aged fifty years. The fact was concealed from the army, which broke up its camp in good order, and returned without much molestation. On arriving at Martaban, in his own dominions, then a great city, the sad dislosure was made, and the funeral rites took place. Siam has never recovered the province of Mergui.

Alompra was succeeded by his eldest son Nam-dogyee-pra, who made Sagaing again the capital, but reigned only four years. His death brought to the throne Shon-bu-yei, the next younger brother. He removed the capital again to Ava, and reigned twelve years with considerable éclat, though he was regarded as a profligate prince. He invaded and conquered Cassay, suppressed a revolt among the Shyans, and added to his Shyan dominions the region of Zennal. In 1767, the Chinese, elated with their recent conquests in Bukharia, seemed resolved to annex Burmah to their already vast empire. An immense army crossed the frontier, and, after a few skirmishes, approached the capital; but after being reduced to extremity for want of provisions, they were routed in a pitched battle, and so many made prisoners that few escaped to report the disaster. A second army shared a similar fate, and the two countries have since lived in peace.

On application of the Shyans at Zaudapori for aid against the Siamese, the Burman king sent a large army into Siam, which reduced the country to great straits, and again took Ayutthia, the then capital. The Siamese give a horrid description of the conduct of the conquerors, though not unlike other histories of eastern warfare. Plunder and slaves seem to have been the chief objects; and in getting the former, every atrocity seems to have been committed. Shenbuyen prepared, in 1771, another expedition against Siam, which failed in consequence of disaffection in the army, a large part of which was raised in Martaban and Tavoy.

Shenbuyen died in 1776. He was succeeded by his son Shen-gu-za, who, after a reign of five years, was assassinated in a mutiny of his officers. These placed on the throne Moung-moung, sometimes called *Paung-gu-za*,* from the place of his residence, son of Nam-dogyee. This man was almost an idiot; but having been brought up by this faction, and being thoroughly under their influence, was deemed a fit tool for their ambitious projects. But he was too imbecile, and his party too discordant, to resist the aspiring energies of Men-der-a-gyee, fourth son of Alompra, who now claimed the throne of his father. Moung-moung was seized and imprisoned, and, on the eleventh day of his reign, was publicly drowned, in conformity to the Burman mode of executing members of the royal family. Forty of the late king's wives, with all their children, were placed in a separate building, and blown up with

* It is exceedingly difficult to ascertain the private names of Burman sovereigns. It is considered presumptuous and indelicate in any subject to call the king by his youthful name. Indeed, most persons change the name in growing up. It was often inquired what my name was when a child, and great surprise exhibited to find that it remained unchanged.

* April 1838 was the commencement of their year 1000.

† A small village, twelve miles north of Ava, and the same distance back from the river.

gunpowder. With many other cruelties he confirmed himself in the kingdom.

Menderagye* was in the forty-fourth year of his age (A. D. 1782), when he found himself seated on the throne of his distinguished father. He soon detected several conspiracies—one by a general in the army, who was put to death; another, by a descendant of the former dynasty, was near proving successful. This last effort having originated at Panya, he put every soul in that city to death, destroying the houses, and obliterating every trace of its existence. His reign lasted thirty-seven years, during which the country remained in a high state of prosperity. He founded the city of Umerapoor, six miles farther up the river, and transferred to it the seat of government. In 1783, he added Arracan to his already extensive dominions. In 1786, renewing the old feud with Siam, he contended for the provinces of Tavoy and Mergui, which had revolted under the patronage of the Siamese. This war continued till 1793, when he finally succeeded, and the provinces continued to be a part of Burmah, till given up to the British at the close of the late war. The Siamese, however, several times made irruptions into these provinces, held them a few weeks, and retired with what spoil and captives they could carry away. In 1810 he fitted out a respectable armament to take Junk Ceylon from the Siamese, and for a time held possession. But the enemy soon mustered a formidable force, and compelled the Burmans to surrender. On this occasion, some of the chiefs were barbarously beheaded, and others carried to Bangkok to work in chains, where Crawford saw some of them so employed in 1822.

This monarch seems at first to have been inclined to be religious, or at least to have suffered strong compunctions for the violent and murderous manner in which he came to the throne. In the second year of his reign, he built the costly temple called Aong-mye-lo-ka, at Sagaing, and gave it four hundred and forty slaves. He studied the Bedagat, consorted much with priests, built various religious structures, and commenced the stupendous pagoda at Mengoon, which, if finished, would equal in size some of the Egyptian pyramids. At length he knew so much of the books and the priests as to overthrow all his piety, and exasperate him against the whole system of popular religious belief. He built and gave gifts no more. The immense edifice at Mengoon was left unfinished, on the pretext that the Brahminical astrologers predicted his death as soon as it should be completed—a decision obtained probably by himself. He proclaimed the priests to be utterly ignorant, idle, and luxurious, reprobated their fine houses, and finally issued an edict expelling them all from their sumptuous abodes, and requiring them to live according to their neglected rules, or return to labour. For a long time there was scarcely a priest to be seen; but, falling into his dotage, and dying soon after, in his eighty-first year, things reverted to their former order, and they are now as numerous as ever.

The throne was ascended, in 1819, by Nun-sun, (literally, "he enjoys a palace;") grandson to Menderagye. His father had long been heir-apparent, and was eminently loved and revered by the people, but died before the throne became vacant. The king immediately adopted Nun-sun as his successor, to the exclusion of his own sons. The kingdom had now become extensive and powerful, embracing not only Ava and Pegu, but Tavoy, Tenasserim, Arracan, and Mummipore. Cachar, Assam, Jyntea, and part of Lao, were added by Nunsun.

He was married in early life to a daughter of his uncle, the Mekara prince; but one of his inferior wives, daughter of a comparatively humble officer, early acquired great ascendancy over his mind, and, on his coming to the throne, was publicly crowned by his side.

* "Gyee" is the term for *Great*, and "Pra" is *Lord*, or an object of reverence. The expression *Great Lord* is then a general term for royalty, like *Pharash*, or *Cesar*, but has been appropriated to this monarch.

On the same day, the proper queen was sent out of the palace, and now lives in obscurity. His plans for securing the succession show that he was aware that even the late king's will would not secure him from powerful opposition. The king's death was kept secret for some days, and the interval employed to station a multitude of adherents in different parts of the city, to prevent any gatherings. On announcing the demise, the ceremony of burning was forthwith performed in the palace yard, at which he appeared as king, with the queen by his side, under the white umbrella, and at once took upon himself all the functions of royalty. Several suspected princes were soon after executed, and many others deprived of all their estates. Some of the latter still live at Ava, subsisting by daily labour. The Mekara prince, his uncle, either became, or feigned to be, insane, and his papers showing no indications of his having interfered in politics, he was spared. He became rational two years afterwards, and has since devoted himself to literature. My interview with this prince is mentioned in a previous chapter. Two years after his accession, the king resolved to restore the seat of government to Ava. To this he was induced partly from the great superiority of the latter location, partly from the devastation of a fire which burnt a great part of Umerapoor, with the principal public buildings, partly from a desire to erect a more splendid palace, and partly (perhaps not least) from the ill omen of a vulture lighting on the royal spire. The greater part of his time, for two years, was spent at Ava in temporary buildings, superintending in person the erection of a palace twice the size of the old one, and other important buildings. During this period, many citizens, especially those who had been burnt out, and numbers of the court, settled in the new city, and the place became populous. On completing the palace (February 1824), the king returned to Umerapoor, and, after brilliant parting festivities, came from thence, with great pomp and ceremony, attended by the various governors, Chobwaws, and highest officers. The procession, in which the white elephant, decorated with gold and gems, was conspicuous, displayed the glories of the kingdom, and great rejoicings pervaded all ranks. Umerapoor still retained a numerous population, which even at this time is supposed to equal that of Ava.

It was but a few weeks after this festival that news arrived of a declaration of war by the East India Company, and that their troops were already in possession of Rangoon. Difficulties on the Chittagong frontiers had been increasing with that government for twenty-five years, in regard to numerous emigrants from Burmah, whose leaders were averse to the present government, and even laid some claims to the throne. They had been in the practice of making predatory incursions into Arracan, and retiring to the British side, where Burman troops were not allowed to follow. Some decisive measures of the emperor had recently ripened the quarrel, and the government of British India deemed it proper to proceed to open war.

The court of Ava learned the fall of Rangoon with surprise, but without alarm. So confident were they of capturing the entire British army, that the only fear was that they might precipitately retire! Many of the court ladies actually stipulated with the field-officers for a number of white slaves, and the army, collecting to proceed to Rangoon, manifested the most exuberant spirits.

There were three English gentlemen at Ava, who naturally fell under suspicion; especially when it was discovered that some of them had been apprised of the declaration of war. They were all imprisoned, and together with Messrs Judson and Price, who were soon added to the number, experienced for many months excessive hardships.

Calculating on friendly co-operation from the Peguans, who, it was thought, would embrace this opportunity to throw off the Burman yoke, and knowing that the best period for rapidly ascending the river is during the south-west monsoon, the British forces arrived

May 10th, 1824, just at the beginning of the rains. But the innumerable boats ordinarily found on the river had all disappeared, partly perhaps by order of the viceroy, and partly from fear. The boats of the transports were as nothing towards conveying an army, and it became necessary to halt in Rangoon. But even this was well nigh fatal to the army. The city had been so completely evacuated by the affrighted people, that not a soul was left but a few aged and helpless persons, who either could not fly or had nothing to lose. There were, of course, no servants, no bazaar, no provisions. Sick officers in vain offered five or six rupees for a single fowl, and the whole army was obliged to depend on ship stores. This, with the nature of the season, and the fatigue of frequent skirmishes, produced sickness among the troops, and some thousands were cut off before any advance was made. After the lapse of nearly a year, the army proceeded up the river, receiving but one serious check, and retired, June 1825, into barracks at Promo for the hot season. On the 3d of November, hostilities recommenced. Melloon was stormed on the 19th of January 1826, and Paglan on the 9th of February. On the 24th of February, a treaty of peace was formed at Yan-da-bo, and on the 8th of March, the army took boats for Rangoon.

By this treaty, the Burmans relinquished part of Martaban, and the whole of Arracan, Yeh, Tavoy, and Mergui; and agreed to pay the English five million rupees towards defraying the expenses of the war. At the same time, Asam and Munnipore were taken from them, and the latter declared independent, under British protection.

From that time, the kingdom has been rather advancing in civilisation and prosperity. No longer at liberty to make war upon its neighbours, its frontier is quiet and secure. Acquainted better with foreigners, its pride is abated, and beneficial innovations are less resisted. The government, though unaltered in its model, is in some respects better administered, and commerce is increased.

The king is at this time subject to periods of insanity, and has little to do with public affairs. The chief power is in the hands of the Sallay-Men, or prince of Sallay, the queen's brother, generally called Men-Sa-gyee, or great prince. He is probably the richest man in the kingdom, Sallay being one of the most lucrative fiefs; in addition to which he receives the duties on the Chinese inland trade, besides large presents from office-seekers, and litigants in the Lotdau.

Several individuals are regarded as candidates for the crown on the demise of the present king. One of them is the Men-Sa-gyee above mentioned, who is a devoted Buddhist. He may prefer to espouse the cause of the present king's youngest brother, the Men-dong prince, who is married to his daughter. Another candidate is the Ser-a-wa prince, the king's brother, next in age, an accomplished and talented prince, remarkably free from prejudice for a Burman, and probably better acquainted with foreign countries than any other native. As he keeps a large number of war-boats and armed retainers, and has a considerable magazine of arms in his compound, it is generally believed that he aspires to the throne.* No other man in the empire is so qualified for that high station, so far as the foreigners at Ava are able to judge.

The proper heir-apparent, only son of the present king, is popular with the common people, but has almost no power; the queen's brother holding his place in the Lotdau. Though permitted the insignia of his rank, he is kept studiously depressed, and seems destitute of either the means or the qualifications for making good his title.

* This prince did, in fact, become king, on the death of his late majesty, in 1837.

CHAPTER II.

Features of Country. Climate. Mountains. Minerals. Rivers. Soil. Productions. Agriculture. Animals. Birds. Fishes. Reptiles. Insects.

THE general features of a country so extensive, are, of course, widely diversified. It may be said of it, as a whole, in the language of Dr Francis Hamilton,* that "this country, in fertility, beauty, and grandeur of scenery, and in the variety, value, and elegance of its natural productions, is equalled by few on earth." He adds, "It is occupied by a people of great activity and acuteness, possessed of many qualities agreeable to strangers."

The upper country is mountainous throughout; the highest ranges being to the north and north-east of the capital. The scenery of these elevated regions is beautiful, and the climate highly salubrious. Extensive forests, comprising a great variety of excellent timber, cover the heights; while the valleys are jungle,† cultivated in many places, and abounding in fruit-trees. The coasts and water-courses are eminently fertile, and contain the chief part of the population. By far the largest portion of the country is uninhabited.

The extensive delta of the Irrawaddy is for the most part scarcely above high tides, and evidently alluvial. Much of it is overflowed during the annual rise of the river. Rocks are not found, except a cellular orange-coloured iron ore, which occurs on the gentle swells. There are a few hills composed of the iron ore above named, breccia, calcareous sandstone, blue limestone, and quartz. In the lower part of the course of the Salwen and Dagaing, some of the low mountains are almost entirely quartz. Some hills, rising abruptly from the levels, are blue limestone, of the very best quality. In the most of these are caves, remarkable not only for their natural grandeur, but for the religious veneration with which they have been regarded, and the multitude of mouldering idols which they contain. An account of some of them has been already given. The great ranges of mountains, both on the sea-shore and inland, are chiefly granite and mica-slate.

The climate of Burmah differs greatly in the higher and lower districts, but is every where salubrious to natives where the jungle is cleared. Ample proof of this is visible in their robust appearance and muscular power. Foreigners find most parts of the sea-coast salubrious, to a degree not found in most other parts of India.

In the maritime part of the country, there are two seasons—the dry and the rainy. The latter begins with great uniformity about the 10th of May, with showers which gradually grow more frequent for four or five weeks. It afterwards rains almost daily till the middle of September, and occasional showers descend for a month longer. From 150 to 200 inches of water fall during this period. This quantity is truly astonishing, as in the moist western counties of England it is but sixty inches in a year. It seldom rains all day, so that exercise and out-door business may be continued, though at times it rains almost incessantly for several days. As the sun shines out hot almost daily, vegetation proceeds with amazing rapidity; and every wall or building not coated smoothly with plaster, becomes in a few seasons covered with grass and weeds. This is the only period when any part of the country becomes unhealthy to foreigners, and even then, the courses of great rivers, and parts extensively cleared, remain salu-

* Edinburgh Phil. Journal, vol. ii. p. 99.

† The difference between a jungle and a forest ought to be understood by every reader of oriental travels. A forest is the same as with us—land covered with large trees, growing thickly together, and almost uninhabited. A jungle is exactly what is called in Scripture a wilderness; that is, a region of many trees, but scattered, with much undergrowth, and often thickly inhabited, though generally somewhat sparsely. The open spaces very generally bear a tall, coarse grass, resembling that of our prairies, which, when near villages, is annually burnt over, to improve the pasture.

BURMAH.

trious. On the subsiding of the rains, the air is cool, the country verdant, fruits innumerable, and every thing in nature gives delight. The thermometer ranges about 60° at sunrise, but rises 12° or 15° in the middle of the day. In March it begins to grow warm; but the steady fanning of the north-east monsoon makes it always pleasant, when out-door exertion is not required. In April the heat increases, and becomes for two or three weeks oppressive; but the first dashes of rain bring relief.

Between tide-water and the mountain regions at the north and east, there may be said to be three seasons—the cool, the hot, and the rainy. The cool season begins about the same time as in the lower provinces, and continues till the last of February, making about four months. The thermometer now descends to about 40°, at the lowest. This temperature is only just before morning. In the middle of the day it is seldom colder than 60°. The greatest heat is far less than on the Madras coast; averaging, in the hottest weather, from 85° to 90°, but rising sometimes much higher.

In the most elevated districts there are severe winters; but of those sections no precise accounts have been received.

Much of Burmah is decidedly mountainous, particularly to the north and east of Ava; but few of the ranges have names, at least not in our language. The natives seem to designate particular heights, but not entire ranges; and Europeans have not explored these parts of the country. The barrier which divides Burmah from Arracan, called in maps A-nou-pee-too-miou, is lofty and well defined. The coast near Tavoy, and the islands adjacent, are mountainous. But at present nothing instructive can be said as to this feature of the kingdom.

The mineral riches of the country, though known to be considerable, have been but scantily developed. Gold is obtained from mines in Bamoo, towards the Chinese frontier, and is found also in the shape of dust, in the head waters of all the principal streams. It is no obtained in large quantities, probably only from want of enterprise and capital; and a considerable amount is annually received overland from China. Nearly the whole is used in gilding sacred edifices: the rest goes into jewels, or is used to gild the utensils of the great. As currency it is scarcely ever used, and then only in ingots.

The principal, if not the only silver-mines, are in Lao about twelve days' journey from Bamoo, where they are wrought by Chinese. The estimated produce is about 500,000 dollars per annum. About 1000 miners are employed. The contractors pay government fixed rent, amounting to about 25,000 dollars per annum.

Emeralds are not found in the country, and the diamonds are small; but rubies, reputed to be the finest in the world, are obtained in considerable quantities, particularly about five or six days' journey from Ava, in an east-south-east direction, near the villages of Mo-gout and Kyat-pyan. I saw one, for which four pounds of pure gold were demanded. The king has some which are said to weigh from one hundred and twenty to one hundred and fifty grains. Sapphires are very abundant, and often of surprising size. Some have been obtained, weighing from three thousand to nearly four thousand grains. All over a certain size being claimed by the crown, very large ones are almost always broken by the finders. Jasper, amethyst, chrysolite, loadstone, noble serpentine, and amber, are also found; the two latter in almost unlimited quantity. Noble serpentine is obtained chiefly near Mogoung where, at particular seasons of the year, about a thousand men, Burmans, Laos, Sinkphoos, and Chinese Shyans, are employed in quarrying or mining it out. Captain Hannay saw boats laden with it, of which some masses required three men to lift them. From 400 to 600 traders from China annually resort to the mines to purchase serpentine. The majority of these are from Santa, but most of the wealthier ones come by Bamoo.

The principal amber mines are in and round the Hukong valley, on the Asam frontier. It is very abundant; but the natives having neither spade nor pickaxe, and using chiefly a sort of spear made of a cane burnt at the sharpened end, they accomplish very little. Most of it is carried at once to China.

Iron ore is found in large quantities, from which the natives make sufficient iron for the consumption of the country; but, probably from the imperfect mode of smelting, it loses thirty or forty per cent. in the forge. The principal supply is furnished from the great mountain of Poupa, a few days' journey east of Ava, about latitude 21° 20'.

Tin is plenty in the Tavoy province, and perhaps elsewhere, and has been occasionally got out in considerable quantity; but at present little is done. Resort has been had, almost exclusively, to the gravel and sand of water-courses; and there is little doubt but that a proper examination of the hills would show the existence of extensive beds of ore.

Lead is abundant, but is chiefly got out by the Shyans, and brought down for barter. It contains always a little silver, about three-fourths of a rupee in thirty-five or forty pounds.

Nitre is found in considerable quantities, encrusted on the surface of the earth, in several places among the hills north of Ava. Probably, through imperfect management, the quantity obtained is not sufficient to prevent the importation of a considerable amount from Bengal, for the manufacture of gunpowder. Natron is obtained in the same districts, and is used for soap. Its price is only eight or nine dollars per ton, but it is by no means pure.

Salt exists, in several places, in the upper country. From eight to twenty miles north of Sagaing, are many places resembling our great "licks" in the western country, and some small saline lakes. Large quantities of salt are made by leaching the earth, very much as we do ashes, and boiling down the water. On the head waters of the Kyendween, a large quantity is made from springs and wells, the waters of which yield the large proportion of one-twentieth of their weight in salt.

Sulphur and arsenic are obtained in abundance. The latter is for sale in all the bazaars in its crude state; but for what it is used, except a little for medicine, I did not learn.

Petroleum is obtained in great quantities at Yaynangyoung, on the Irrawaddy, above Prome; and the supply might be largely increased, if there should be a demand. The wells are two miles back from the river, thickly scattered over a region of several miles in extent, remarkable for its barren aspect, each producing a daily average of one hundred and fifty gallons of oil, which sells on the spot for three ticals per hundred viss, or about forty cents per cwt. The gross annual produce is about eighty millions of pounds; it is carried to every part of the kingdom accessible by water, and is used for lights, paying boats, and various other purposes. It has the valuable quality of securing wood from the attacks of insects. A boat's bottom, kept properly in order with it, is about as safe as if coppered. It is thought to be a defence even from white ants.

At Sagaing, and some other places north of it, are quarries of marble, some of which is very fine. It is a primitive limestone, of snowy whiteness, semi-transparent, free from all cracks, and capable of the highest polish. The almost exclusive use made of it, is in the manufacture of images of Gaudama, and other sacred objects. This employs constantly a large number of persons. Similar marble, but of inferior quality, is found in various other places, and is largely used for lime. It is apt to contain hornblende and mica, with occasional crystals of felspar, and to be found in connection with pure mica-slate. Limestone prevails along the whole river. Near the statuary marble quarries, it is blue, of the finest quality; between that place and Paghau, it is dark, bituminous, and slaty; lower down,

near Promé, it is coarse-grained and sandy. Grauwacke is also found, in numerous places, from Ava to Rangoon. Stentite is very abundant, and in various parts of the kingdom. Pearls, of good quality, are often picked up on the coast of Mergui and its islands. They are not, however, fished for, and only such are obtained as are found in shells driven ashore, or lying above low-water mark. The pearls are small, but of regular form and good colour.

Petrifications of wood, bones, and even leaves, are common on the banks of the Irrawaddy. So far as yet known, they are most numerous in the region of Yunnan-young. Crawford transmitted to England several chests of these. The bones proved to be of the mastodon, rhinoceros, hippopotamus, tapir, hog, ox, deer, antelope, gavia, alligator, emys, and tryonix. Of the mastodon there are evidently two species, and both these entirely new, making eight known species of this extinct genus. I picked up as many as I could transport, and forwarded them to the Boston Society of Natural History. They comprise fossil bones, and wood, and calcareous concretions without any organic nucleus, and resembling the tuberculous roots of vegetables.* The natives, as might be supposed, attribute these petrifications to the waters of the Irrawaddy; but this must be erroneous. The specimens are washed out of the banks by the encroachment of the river, and are found in beds of sand and gravel, thirty or forty feet above the highest floods. The matrix adhering to many of the bones, seems to be quartz and jasper pebbles, united by carbonate of lime, and sometimes hydrate of iron. Logs of wood, which have evidently lain long in the river, are not changed. Bones are not found of the elephant or tiger, both of which are now abundant in the country, but of the mammoth, which has been extinct for ages, and of the rhinoceros, hippopotamus, tapir, and gavia, which are no longer inhabitants of Burmah. All these reasons conspire to assign these fossils to an antediluvian epoch. Some of the vegetable fossils are impregnated with carbonate of lime, but most of them are silicified in the most beautiful manner, showing perfectly the fibres of the plant. The bones are in admirable preservation, owing probably to their being highly impregnated with hydrate of iron.

Coal of excellent quality, both anthracite and bituminous, has been discovered in various places, but has not been brought into use.

The principal river in the empire, and, indeed, in all Farther India, is the Irrawaddy, which rises in the Namean Mountains, a range south of the Himalaya, but belonging to that great chain. After a course of 1200 miles, it falls into the Bay of Bengal, by several mouths, near Cape Nigraus. Most of these mouths are navigable for large craft; those of Bassien and Rangoon, for vessels drawing five fathoms. It may be ascended as far as Ava at all seasons, by vessels of 200 tons; and in the rains they may proceed to Mogoung river, a distance of about 800 sailing miles from the sea. Above this point, in the dry season, it winds along a very tortuous channel, at the rate of two miles an hour; but in its inundations, from June to September, it rises high, flows rapidly among small islands, and presents a comparatively straight course, having a breadth of about a mile at Bamoo, and in some places below Ava, from four to six. At Ava the rise is about thirty-three feet. At this time, boats ascend most easily, impelled by the south-west monsoon. It is not confined to an annual freshet, but, during the monsoon, rises and falls three or four times. On its banks, between Ava and Rangoon, are numerous villages and cities, some of them very large. Large villages and towns are also established a little back from the river, by which the inhabitants avoid many exactions of boat-service, both in peace and war.

The Salwen, or Martaban river, rises among the same ranges which originate the Irrawaddy, the Burampooter, the Meinam, and the great Camboja rivers. In the first part of its course, it is called Louk-chang by the Chinese. It has a course of several hundred miles, and disembogues by two mouths, one at the north of Bala Island, and the other at the south. The northern channel, though very wide, is navigable only for small boats.

The Kyendween rises near the sources of the Irrawaddy, and, after watering the Kubo valley, and passing through some of the best and most populous parts of Burmah, enters the Irrawaddy about fifty miles below Ava.

The Setang river makes, at its mouth, an imposing appearance upon the map, being several miles wide, but is nearly useless for all purposes of internal communication. At low water there is no continuous channel deeper than four feet, but various spots give a depth of from ten to fifteen feet. The tide, compressed by the funnel form of the shores, and collecting the whole force of the flood from a great distance in the bay, acquires fearful velocity. Except at the lowest neaps, there is a "bore" on the setting in of the flood, which subjects small vessels to the most imminent danger. Some years ago, a surveying vessel from Maulmain reported that it had set her in a westerly direction at the rate of twelve miles an hour!

The Myet-nga, or Little river, enters the Irrawaddy on the north side of the city of Ava, and is navigable for large boats to a very considerable distance.

The Mogoung river empties into the Irrawaddy in lat. 24° 57', and is boatable for a hundred miles.

There are some other rivers in the empire nearly as important, and some fine lakes, but the only good harbours now left to Burmah are those of Rangoon and Bassien.

The soil of the maritime portions of Burmah is perhaps unsurpassed in fertility. The inconsiderable fraction which is cultivated, though after a most imperfect manner, yields not only abundance of rice for the inhabitants, but a great amount for exportation to the upper provinces. The paddy-fields yield generally from eighty to one hundred fold, and in some cases twice that amount.

Farther inland, the country becomes undulating, but is scarcely less fertile, though for the most part a mere jungle. The region still farther east and north is mountainous, and bears the usual characteristics of such districts.

There are said to be several deserts of considerable size, but they have never been explored.

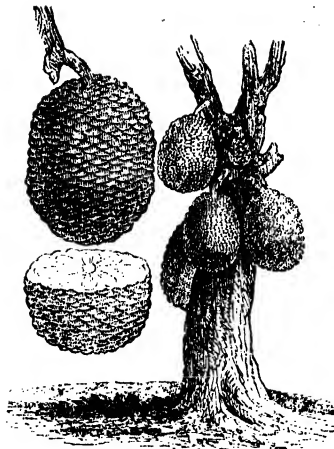
In this favoured country are found nearly all the valuable trees of Farther India; but while the people are thus supplied with a profusion of valuable timber, they are far below their neighbours in the case of fruit trees, and have them generally of an inferior quality.

The following list is by no means offered as a perfect catalogue of Burman fruits and timbers. It is intended to show the resources of the country in these matters. The information was chiefly picked up on the wayside from natives, sometimes with the plant in sight, but often not.

The scientific names have been given, when known, in order that those who choose may identify the plant.

The Da-nyan, or Durean (*durio zebethinus*), flourishes in the provinces of Tavoy and Mergui, but not elsewhere in the empire. The tree is nearly as large as the jack, and the fruit greatly resembles it, but is smaller, scarcely attaining the size of a man's head. It is esteemed by the natives the most delicious fruit in India. Europeans are not fond of it until after repeated trials. Those who persist, always unite with the natives in their preference. It contains ten or twelve seeds, as large as pigeons' eggs, which, when roasted, are not inferior to chestnuts. It is the most costly fruit in India, and is never found propagating itself in a wild state. The tree is high and spreading, lives a hundred years, and produces about two hundred dureans in a year.

* Similar concretions, often mistaken for corals, &c., and stalactites, are found in Austria, Sardinia, England, and elsewhere.



Jack Tree and fruit.

The Bun-ya, Pien-mai, or Jack (*artocarpus integrifolia*), is thought not to be indigenous, but thrives well in all the lower provinces. Its name seems to indicate the peninsula of Hindustan as its proper country, and it certainly is very common there. In the Teloo-goo language it is called *Jaka*. It attains to the height of eighty or one hundred feet. Branches, thick, alternate, and spreading; leaves, very dark green. The full-grown fruit weighs from thirty to fifty pounds, growing not from the twigs, but in young trees from the thick branches, afterwards from the top of the trunk, and, when very aged, from the roots. It is covered with a very thick, rough, green skin, and is full of white stones, the size of a pullet's egg. Few persons are fond of it at first, but by repeated trials soon become so. I found it very indigestible. There are two kinds, which, however, do not greatly differ. The timber is very valuable, and used for musical instruments, cabinet ware, and ornamental work.

The Managoot, or Mangosteen (*garcinia mangostana*), grows in Mergui province, but is not common. The tree is low, about the size and shape of an apple-tree; leaves, dark green. It is raised from the seed, and bears the seventh year. Some trees yield annually from a thousand to two thousand mangosteens. The fruit is generally deemed by foreigners the finest in India, and indeed in all the world. Foreigners are fond of it from the first. It resembles the black walnut in size, and the pomegranate in its exterior. A hull like that of the black walnut is to be removed, and the fruit appears white, pulpy, grapelike, about the size of a small plum, and having one or two very small stones. Its taste is mildly acid, and extremely delicate and luscious, without a tendency to cloy the appetite; and almost any quantity may be eaten by most persons without danger. It seems to have been introduced from the Indian Archipelago, and is far from attaining in the hands of the Tavoyers the perfection it there possesses.



Mango.

The Tharrat or Thayet, or Mango (*mangifera indica*), called by Tavoyers *Thurrape*, is one of the largest fruit trees in the world, reaching a height of one hundred feet or more, and a circumference of twelve or fourteen, sometimes even of twenty-five. Branches, thick, spreading; leaves, long, narrow, smooth, shining; flowers, small, white. The fruit is delicious, about four inches long, and two wide; thin, smooth, greenish skin, and very large hairy stone. There are as many kinds as there are of apples, and differing about as much from each other. The timber is excellent, and is used for masts, pestles, mortars, &c.

The Thimban, Papaya, or Papau (*carica papaya*),

grows to the height of fifteen to thirty feet, without branches or leaves, except at the top, where the fruit grows close to the stem. Leaves twenty to thirty inches long. Fruit is of a green colour, and closely resembles a small musk-melon, with round black seeds, which, when very young, have the taste of capers. It seems to have been introduced by the Portuguese. It comes rapidly to maturity in any soil, bears fruit all the year, and is exceedingly prolific. It is inferior in flavour to our musk-melons. There are several kinds, all highly prized. The sap of this tree is a most deadly poison, taken inwardly. The French doctors use it as a medicine. When exposed to the air, it resembles salt.

The Ong, or Cocoa-nut (*cocos nucifera*), resembles other palms, especially the palmyra or toddy-tree: the leaves are longer. The fruit is too well known to need description. The envelope or husk furnishes a large part of the cordage, called *coya* or *coir*, which is not surpassed in excellence by any other, though little is made in Burmah. From the nut, an oil of good quality is obtained in large quantities, used both in cooking and for light. The top of the tree is tapped for toddy, by cutting off the end of the stem which bears the blossom. It is generally made into sugar, or some is drunk fresh. In other countries, arrack is distilled from this species of toddy.

The tree is scarce, particularly in the upper provinces, and almost entirely wanting in Arracan; so that large quantities are imported from the Nicobar Islands and elsewhere, which are chiefly used in making curry. For this purpose the whole fruit is scraped, and the juice squeezed out. The pulp is thrown away.

The Cocoa-nut tree delights in a sandy soil, and at the same time requires to be much watered. Hence they are generally found by rivers, or on the sea-coast. The palmyra, on the contrary, grows every where.



The Plantain-Tree.

The Nep-yau, or Plantain (*musa paradisiaca*), is one of the most valuable gifts of Providence to a great part of the globe, growing wherever the mean temperature exceeds 65°. The stalk seldom exceeds seven or eight inches in diameter, and twenty feet in height, bears but one bunch of fruit, and dies. The stem is cut close to the ground, but from the same root, however, the tree is renewed many years. The leaves, when young, are the most beautiful in India, expanding, with a smooth surface and vivid

green, to six feet in length, and two or more in breadth, but, soon after attaining full size, the edges become torn by the wind. The flower is very large, purple, and shaped like an ear of Indian corn. At the root of the outer leaf, a double row of the fruit comes out half round the stalk or cob. The stem then elongates a few inches, and another leaf is deflected, revealing another double row. Thus the stem grows on, leaving a leaf of the flower and a bunch of the fruit every few inches, till there come to be twenty-five or thirty bunches, containing about 150 or 180 plantains, and weighing from sixty to eighty pounds. The weight bends over the end of the stem, and when ripe it hangs within reach. Like other palms, it has no branches.

Humboldt calculates that thirty-three pounds of wheat, and ninety-nine pounds of potatoes, require the same surface of ground that will produce 4000 pounds of ripe plantains, which is to potatoes as forty-four to one, and to wheat as 133 to one. What a mercy is

such a tree, in a country where hard labour is oppressive by reason of heat! There are as many varieties of this fruit in Burmah as there are of the apple with us; some preferred for cooking, others for eating in a raw state; some sorts grow wild, but in general it is exclusively the result of culture.

The small-fruited Plantain, or Banana (*musa sapientum*), is common in the southern districts, but is not much cultivated. It is found wild, and in that state has seeds, which the cultivated plantains never have.

The Coon-the, or Betel (*areca catechu*), another species of palm, grows both wild and cultivated, attaining the height of thirty to fifty feet, but seldom so thick as a man's thigh; without limbs or leaves, except at the top. Bark, smooth, ash-coloured, and marked with parallel rings. The fruit is the size of a nutmeg, and resembling it in structure.

Near it is generally seen growing the Pung, or Betel Vine (*piper betle*), a slender annual, whose leaf, touched with a little lime, is the universal accompaniment to the areca-nut and cutch for chewing. It is cultivated on a trellis like the grape.

It would be tedious to describe all the other palms, which are exceeding numerous, different species being applied to different uses, but all of them of primary importance. One of the most widely disseminated is the *cocos nypa*. From this are obtained the best leaves for thatching, called by Burmans *dence*, and by Europeans *atap*, from the Malay word for thatch, and by them specifically given to this plant as furnishing the best. It yields abundance of toddy and sugar.

The Mager, or Tamarind (*tamarindus Indicus*), is not found upon tide waters, but is very abundant throughout the upper provinces. It becomes ninety or 100 feet high, and twelve or fifteen in circumference, and, like the mango, is planted not less for shade than fruit. The branches extend widely, with a dense foliage of bright green composite leaves, very much like those of the sensitive plant. The flowers are in clusters, of a beautiful yellow, veined with red. The fruit hangs like beans. The pods are longer, darker, and richer than the tamarind of the West Indies, and are preserved without the addition of syrup. The timber is like ebony, very strong, and used for mallets, for coolies for bearing-poles, &c. The young leaves, as well as the fruit, are used in curry.

The Young-pien-nai, or Mountain Jack, grows like the jack, but the fruit never exceeds the size of a goose's egg, and has the taste of a tart cherry.

The Mayan, or Marian (*mangifera oppositifolia*), grows wild in most parts of the country. It is a lofty, spreading tree. Fruit yellow, the size of a plum. There are several varieties, of which some are sweet and others sour. It is an excellent fruit, but does not grow in the upper provinces.

The Sabu-tha-bey is one of the largest of trees. Fruit, size of a small peach, red, very many seeds, hanging in clusters from the trunk.

The Palmyra (*borassus*) grows every where, but abounds chiefly in the upper provinces, especially near Ava. There are several varieties. It issues from the ground the full thickness it is ever to be, about three to four feet diameter, and gains a few inches in height every year, throwing out no branches, and bearing leaves only at the summit. It reaches the height of about forty feet; and sometimes, but rarely, fifty-five or sixty feet. The leaves are of great size, standing out from a stem like the fingers of an extended hand. From this species of palm, the leaves for writing are prepared. The tree comes to maturity in about thirty years, but often takes forty. The male trees afford juice for *toddy* three months in the year, the female seven or eight, each giving daily from one to three gallons, which is gathered by cutting off a shoot which would bear fruit, and suspending a pot or a bamboo to the end. Most of this is made into molasses or jaggery. Some of it is drunk fresh from the tree, when it resembles new cider. By standing a few hours, it ferments rapidly, and in that state is considerably intoxicating.

It is, I believe, never distilled. The fruit is black, oval, shiny, two inches in diameter, and used after cooking in a great variety of ways. The stone of the fruit is a third of its bulk, and is buried in the ground for the sake of the large sprout it produces, which is prized as an esculent. Every part of the tree is made useful. The sap is boiled down as we do that of the maple, and yields the tolerable sugar called *jaggery* in commerce. Large quantities of this are made.

The May-u-ah is the size of an apple-tree. Fruit excellent, size of a plum, purple colour, sweet, small seeds. It is said to grow in the celestial regions, and to be a favourite food of the Nats.

The Aw-zah, or Guava (*psidium pomiferum*), is abundant in some places, but is not extended over the whole country, and is certainly not indigenous. It grows to the height of twenty or thirty feet, with leaves of pale green, and beautiful, large, white blossoms. The fruit is about the size of a pear, and a little yellowish when ripe, full of hard seeds, the size of buck-shot. Foreigners generally despise it, as they do many other Indian fruits, which a few experiments would teach them to admire. There are several varieties.

The Custard-apple (*annona squamosa*, &c.) grows well, if planted in proper places, but receives little care, and is not so common as its extreme deliciousness deserves. The fruit resembles a large pine but not yet opened, or a pine-apple cheese, and is about the size of a large apple. The skin is thick, and the inside filled up with seeds mixed among a yellowish pulp, so closely resembling soft custard as to fully justify its name. Its Javanese name has the same allusion.

The Ta-lain-no is a vine which attains a diameter of eight or twelve inches. Fruit, yellow, pear-shaped, acid, with six or eight stones, size of an egg.

The Zee, or Crab-apple, a moderate-sized tree. Fruit, size of a large cherry, one large stone. Two kinds, sweet and sour. The timber is highly prized for its fine grain, toughness, and elasticity.

The Zim-hyoon (*dillenia*) is of several kinds. They are large trees, but the timber is worthless. Fruit, size of a small plum, sour, red.

The Ka-ling grows twenty or thirty feet high, generally wild. The fruit is the size of a child's marble, used more as medicine than food.



Cashew-Nut.

The Thcho-tharet, or Ka-shoo, Cashew or Acajou (*anacardium occidentale*), is a spreading tree, seldom more than fifteen or eighteen feet high. The fruit resembles a pear, but is rendered very remarkable by a crescent-shaped nut growing on the end. It is much prized by Burmans, though not by foreigners. The roasted nut is excellent.

The Kyet-mouk, or Cock's-comb, is a moderate-sized tree, found wild in most parts of the country. The fruit is red, sour, the colour of a cock's comb, and has similar corrugations on the skin. It hangs in grape-like clusters.

The Zoung-yau is peculiar to the upper provinces. Fruit, size of a guava, pink, full of seed, smooth skin. Fruit, leaves, and root, are used as medicine. The tree is of good size, but useless as timber.

The La-moo is a small tree, like a willow, growing only near salt water, and generally in the very edge, twelve or fifteen inches in diameter. The blossom is very beautiful, a little like a thistle, very fragrant, pale green, large, umbrella-shaped pistil, innumerable stamens, no corolla, but a thick calyx, which remains, and holds the fruit like a dish. Monkeys are fond of the fruit, and are often seen in the tree. The natives use it in curry. Timber useless.

The Na-ual is a very large tree, thorny. Fruit, deep red, size of a small plum, skin very thin, full of hard white, triangular seeds. Prized only by the natives.

The Than-lwen, or Olive, grows plentifully round Mergai, but not of very good quality, as it is entirely neglected.

The Lep-han grows every where in the upper pro-

vinces, and is one of the largest trees in the country, often ten and twelve feet in diameter. The ripe seeds are contained in pods, enveloped in a fine cotton, of which mattresses are commonly made. Both blossoms and fruit are eaten, when young, chiefly in curry. Timber inferior.

The Ka-na-zoo, or Saul, or Soondry tree (*hericaria*), is a much larger tree than in Bengal; chiefly found on the tide waters. Fruit hangs in loose bunches, size of grapes, very pleasant, one seed. Leaves, large, alternate, smooth, green on the upper side, and silvery-white beneath. Timber, hard, straight-grained, elastic, and durable; used for mill work, spokes, shafts, &c. There are several species of this valuable tree.

The Theet-cha, or Chestnut (*castanea martabanica*), is abundant in the upper districts, but seems not known on the coast.

The Thit-to (*sandoricum indicum*), a very large tree. Fruit, size of an apple, with three seeds, yellow when ripe. Timber is used for most common purposes, but not much valued, being soft and of uneven grain.

The Lieng-maw, or Orange-tree (*citrus*), is found in several varieties, but growing wild, as do almost all Burman fruits, is generally of inferior quality. I believe the Burmans never graft or inoculate any fruit.

The Then-ba-yah, or Lime (*citrus, medica, limetta*, &c.), has its several varieties, and is excellent.

The Lieng-maw, or Lemon (*citrus limonum*, &c.), is also common and good. The name in Burman, it will be observed, is the same as for the orange, though the term *sweet* is often given to the latter as a distinction.

The Pummelose, or Pomelow, called with us shattueh, or shaddock (*citrus decummana*), is prized, but is rare in Burmah, though so abundant in most parts of the east.

The Khan is a shrub, three or four feet high, yielding a valued fruit which resembles a sweet grape.

The Go-nyen, a vine producing pods three or four feet long, containing ten or twelve beans, ten inches in circumference. These beans, well boiled, are sometimes used for food.

The Myouk Go-nyen, a smaller vine, bearing in its pod but one bean, the size of half a dollar. Monkeys are said to be very fond of it, but Burmans do not eat it.

The Soung-ya grows six or eight feet high. Fruit, the size of an apple, elongated, deeply fluted, brilliant yellow, contains ten seeds in five apartments. Chiefly used to acidify curry.

The Theet-kyapo, or Cinnamon (*laurus cinnamomum*), grows wild, at least in the Martaban province, but is not of good quality, doubtless for want of cultivation. A great variety of the *laurus* tribe is found besides this cinnamon.

The Shah-zoung (*aloe*) is in many varieties. Used both for medicine and chewing with the betel.

The Yay-yoh is a pretty large tree. Leaf, large, and very deep green. Fruit resembles a pine bur, with soft and tender covering to a solid mass of hard seeds occupying six sevenths of the whole bulk. When green it is cooked, and when ripe, eaten raw, as valued sauce to salt fish.

The Quah-lay (*mucina pruriens*), a celebrated vermifuge, abounds every where in the jungle. In a tender state the natives use it as food.

The Kyah (*aculumbium speciosum*) is a sort of lily, growing in the water; flower very large, pink and white; fruit is as large as one's fist, forming an exact hemisphere, on the flat surface of which about twenty-four seeds are embedded, which, when ripe, are black and hard. Prized for eating. The flowers are a favourite offering at the pagoda.

Cherries and plums are common and good in the extreme north-west portions of the country; and in the extreme north-east the apple and peach flourish, but are little cultivated, if at all, and are of inferior quality.

Tobacco grows with vigour in most parts of the country; often large spaces are covered with the wild plant. The consumption is not great, as it is used only for smoking; and then the wrapper is formed from the

leaf of the thennat-tree, and all the roots are used as well as the leaf. It is cultivated along the margins of water-courses, but in a slovenly way.

Besides these, Burmah has a great variety of fruits, such as castor-bean, anise seed, capers, cardamom, capscium, pine-apple, raspberry, whortleberry, tomato, &c. I have no means of enumerating the entire list. Visiting the bazaar at Maulmain, about the close of the dry season, for the express purpose of counting what might be there exposed, I found more than thirty. This was not the most abundant season of fruits, but the contrary. I presume there are not less than 150 or 200 fruits in this favoured country, besides numerous varieties of some of them.

As to the value of these numerous fruits, compared with those of our own country, testimony differs, as on other matters of taste. The Burman and Karen who visited America, deemed the best of our fruits very insipid. Americans at first admire few Burman fruits, but those who persist in eating even the most repulsive, soon become fond of them. The enjoyment of them, therefore, rests with one's self, as it does in regard to drinking the water of some mineral springs, or eating olives. In my own opinion, India has greatly the advantage of America and Europe in her fruits, both in number and quality. The plantain itself may be considered an equivalent to almost the whole of our fruits. It may be had fresh every day in the year, and, in its numerous varieties, makes both a vegetable and a fruit, of which none are ever tired, and by partaking of which none are ever injured.

Among their edible roots, they have ginger, cassia, liquorice, arrow-root, yam, sweet potato, Irish potato, onions, garlic, asparagus, ground-nut, &c.

They also find in the woods, plains, and lakes, innumerable esculents, in the selection of which the very children become expert. Most of these are prepared in the form of curry, and eaten in small quantities, as condiments to their rice.

The principal grains will be mentioned when we come to speak of agriculture.

The country is scarcely less favoured in valuable timber-trees, some of which have been already named as bearing useful fruit.

First to be named among these is the Kewn, or Teak (*tectona grandis*), which is here far more abundant than in any other part of India. It is probably, on the whole, the most valuable timber in the world, for strength, fineness, and durability; and in this country especially so, for being always safe from white ants. It grows to an enormous size, attaining maturity in about eighty years. Wood, reddish, and susceptible of a very fine polish. It is one of the few tropical trees which shed their leaves annually, and at once. It has this advantage over oak, that, while oak has an acid which destroys iron, teak has an essential oil which preserves it. Fruit, rough, brown, size of cherry, worthless. There is also another species, the *tectona hamiltoniana*, much smaller.

Next to the teak, for timber, is the Thingan (*hopia odorata* of Dr Gardner), very abundant, especially in the lower provinces. It is as tall as the teak, but less spreading. This, and the teak, make the best canoes. This is the tree which spreads its branches over the graves of Mrs Judson and her infant. But that particular specimen is very aged, and decaying. It was called the *Hopo*-tree, in honour of a distinguished gentleman of that name in England.

The Pee-mah (*lagerstromia*?) is a very large and useful tree, sometimes twelve or fifteen feet in circumference, preferred for some parts of ship-building to teak. Leaf, very small; fruit, like a lemon, and very sour; wood, reddish, hard, tough, and durable. From the bark constantly exudes a yellow gum, like gamboge.

Turra-fee (*calophyllum*) is a large tree, timber excellent for most purposes; very different from

The Thur-ap-pa, or Tibro (*quercus amherstiana* of Wallich), which is a noble tree, used for all purposes as timber in the lower provinces.

The Pipal, often called *Bannian* (*ficus religiosa*), is the sacred tree of the Burmans. Under it Gaudama is said to have become a Boodh. It is common in every part of the country. The branches do not descend and take root like the genuine bannian. It is a very noble tree, and bears a fruit the size of a grape, of which birds are fond, but which is not eaten by man. One of these grows over the brick baptistery, in the mission compound at Maulmain, extending its branches also over the street. On its young and flourishing branches the Burmans sometimes hang lighted lamps as a deed of merit.

The Nyong-bawdee (*ficus bengalensis*) is the genuine bannian. Roots descend from every part of the stem, and many of the branches, which, on reaching the earth, become themselves trees. Those which descend along the trunk, give it the appearance of being enveloped in brawny vines, and afford a shelter, by the crevices they make, to numerous insects and reptiles, while under the wide shelter of the foliage man and beast may repose. It is a favourite resort of monkeys, who eat both the leaves and the fruit. The leaves are dark, large, smooth, glossy. Its venerated character prevents its use as a timber, in which respect it would, however, not be very valuable. The tree is uncommon in Burniah, but some fine specimens are found at Mergui.

The Tay, or Ebony (*diospyrus ebenum*), is plenty in the upper provinces, growing generally in the neighbourhood of teak. Leaf very small. Towards the close of the dry season, the leaves are annually shed, like those of the teak, at a particular season, which distinguishes it prominently, in a country where almost every tree is evergreen. Little use is made of the timber. The specimens brought to me were black, and of fine grain, but inferior to that used by our cabinet-makers.

The Teng-yet, or Ten-yet, Sapan-wood (*caesalpinia sappan*), grows abundantly in the province of Mergui, and adjacent parts of Siam, in several parts of the Shyan territory, and among the mountainous regions of Munnipore. The full-grown tree is seldom higher than from fourteen to sixteen feet; thorny, bearing a large yellow flower in the month of August; leaves, small and of a dark green. It belongs to the same order of plants with *Brazil-wood*, and has been sometimes so called. It makes a rich red dye, and is exported for that purpose. The name is derived from the Malays, who call it *sapan*.

The Shah, or Cutch-tree (*mimosa catechu*), is indigenous, rising sometimes to the height of forty feet. Timber, tough and durable, much used for ploughs, &c. From this tree is made the catechu, cutch, or terra japonica, chewed generally with the betel nut.* The wood is hewn into chips, boiled, and the liquor inspissated till it becomes thick enough to spread on a mat, when the drying is completed in the sun. It dissolves completely in water, is slightly bitter, highly astringent, and contains fifty-five parts in a hundred of tannin. Burmans make two kinds, the red and the black; both from the same tree. The red is preferred in Bengal, and the black in China. It is chiefly made in the neighbourhood of Prome, though the tree is found in all parts of the country.

The Silk Cotton-tree (*bombax ceiba*) adorns many parts of the country, and is one of the largest trees. Its beautiful and soft flos is used for pillows and thin mattresses by the natives; but whether the wood is valuable I did not learn.

The Par-o-wah is a stately tree, a foot in diameter. Timber, very hard and tough, and of a yellow colour. It is somewhat scarce, and of but little account, as the Burmans have no tools with which to work such a wood to advantage.

The Thub-byu (*ficus*) is a large tree, five feet or more in circumference; pretty good timber. The fruit, about the size of a goose's egg, grows in a tuft of leaves,

* The same article is produced in Malaya, from the plant called *uncaria gambir*, and in Egypt and Arabia from the *acacia*. It has lately been exported from Singapore to England, in large quantities for tanning.

like a cabbage; used to acidify curry. From it is obtained a glutinous oil, which dries rapidly, and makes a good varnish.

The En, or Ain (*dipterocarpus grandiflora*), grows tall and slender, to a prodigious height, throwing out branches only towards the summit. It yields a valuable resin, used in torches, and for paying boats. The timber is excellent, and is used for masts, bridges, and long reaches.

The Kun-nyin-ben (*dipterocarpus*), and the Kun-nyin-se, are two trees of the same kind, one bearing a white fruit, and the other red. Both are very large trees, and excellent for planks, boats, &c. The boiled sap is a very beautiful varnish. Torchcs are often dipped in it, to increase their brilliancy, and sometimes made of it, mixed with saw-dust. The varnish at Rangoon costs, at retail, four annas a viss, or about twelve and a half cents for four pounds.

The Theet-say (*melanorrhous usitate*) is the tree from which the celebrated black Burman varnish is made, and which, when properly prepared, is superior to copal. It seems to have been first known to the English by its Munnipore name, *Kay-oo*, or *Khue*.

The Tah-noung is a most beautiful, though rather small tree. Leaves, very small, composite, lively green, rising from the base of a double thorn.

The Tau-ma-gyee (*claccarpus*) is generally very large. Grain, clear and straight; timber, highly prized.

The Yu-ma-may (*euphorbia*). Large and valuable tree. Wood, soft and light, but very tough; and is used for turned wooden ware, and light domestic articles.

The Tan-the-ah (*hopcia floribunda* of Wallich). Very large, somewhat abundant, and a useful timber.

The Thud-dote, a very large tree, but not prized for timber. Fuel, good; fruit used a little; leaves used to rub furniture, and the body.

The Thub-be (*mimusops*) is a large tree, valued in ship-building. Fruit, size of a grape, containing one large seed. There is also another species (*m. elengi*), which is called in Bengal *Bocool*.

The Pa-douk, or Mahogany (*swietenia mahagoni*), is plenty in the upper provinces, especially round Ava; found occasionally in Pegu. It grows very large, and is mostly of the branched or knotty kind. Little used except for their great horizontal rockets.

The Tienyo, or Pine, of several varieties, is abundant in the dry and hilly districts, reaching a good size, often fifty feet without a limb. One or two species are found in the Tenasserim provinces, but not frequently. It is neglected as timber because of its softness and exposure to ants. Some turpentine is manufactured from it. Pieces of it are every year washed down the Irrawaddy. As all India now depends on European and American spars, which often sell at most exorbitant prices, it is probable that Burniah will one day be enriched by the export of its fir timber.

The Young-sa-gu (*myristica*) is a very large tree.

Of Oak, eight or ten species are found in different parts of the upper country, some of them stately trees; but the abundance of teak and of thingun prevents its general use.

Cedar is common and of a gigantic size on the lofty summits of the mountain ranges on the Munnipore frontier. In the same regions, the ash is abundant, and of the best quality.

Lancewood is common, at least in the southern provinces. It grows fifteen or twenty feet high, very straight; bark, grey; wood, light yellow.

The Me-yah (*greeria?*) is a middling-sized tree, of pretty good timber. Fruit resembles the whortleberry; two seeds in each. It is eaten sometimes, but is not prized.

The Ne-pe-say-gyee attains a diameter of six or eight inches. In the manufacturing towns on the Irrawaddy, perhaps elsewhere, it is very much used to dye a fine red colour, and might probably be exported for this purpose with great advantage.

The Thep-on is a large tree, excellent for fuel, but

not greatly valued as timber. The leaves and fruit are used in curry.

The Mai-kia (*marrya*) is not a large tree, but is highly esteemed for handles to spears, knives, &c. The grain is like box-wood, but tough and elastic. Found only in the lower provinces.

The Kun-ne-an (*myristica*) is a very large tree, found in the lower provinces, on high ground, and therefore probably common in the upper. Considered one of the best of timbers in the kingdom for canoes, oars, houses, and most other purposes.

The Koc (*syndesmis tavoyana* of Wallich) is a large tree, making good timber, but not much used as such. There are at least two kinds, one being a white wood, and the other red. The root chopped up, dried, and ground to powder, is a favourite medicine, and is also rubbed over the body for cutaneous diseases. The bark, chopped fine, and thrown into the water where there are fish, produces the same intoxicating effects upon them as does the *cocculus indicus*.

The Than-ben (*artocarpus*) is a large tree, sometimes used as timber, but generally spared for its gum, which is excellent for paying boats, and is regarded as a cure for the itch. The fruit is a bean, two feet long.

The Thah (*bignonia*) is a noble-looking tree, furnishing a straight timber for posts of houses, &c.

The Tub-bo (*varia*) grows to a large size, and makes smooth, handsome posts, but is not used for boats. It bears a large, brilliant, yellow, fragrant flower.

The The-myu-zoo grows only in the lower provinces, where it is plenty. From the kernel of the fruit is made an oil highly esteemed for the hair.

The Cow-moo is found of at least two species, one having a broad leaf, and the other narrow. Both are very large. Canoes of the largest size are made of them, and considered nearly as good as those made of teak.

The Mien-ga (*cynometra*) is a small tree, and makes good small posts, &c., but is chiefly used for fuel. It is abundant in the lower provinces, but grows in the upper when planted, which is sometimes done for fuel.

The Boo-so-paw, or Cork-tree, is indigenous in the lower provinces, and, it is believed, in the upper also. Unlike the proper cork, the bark is thin and worthless. The wood itself is soft, tough, fine, and makes a cork equal to any other.

The Then-mat is a moderate-sized tree. Spreading, thick foliage, soft, smooth leaf. The fruit resembles a gooseberry, very glutinous; one hard seed; not used. Wood, a good deal used for sandals; but the principal value of the tree is in its leaves, which are preferred above all others for wrappers to cheroots.

The Lazun (*pongamia atropurpurea* of Wallich). Very large tree, abundant in Tenasserim provinces. Flower, a beautiful purple.

The Thik-ad-do (*sterculia fetida*) is a very large and valuable tree. The wood is odoriferous, straight, strong, takes a fine polish, and is preferred for furniture.

The Pah-oua (*osyris pellata*) is found in all the maritime districts, and probably in the hills also.

The Eagle-wood (*aquilaria agallochum*), commonly called jignum aloes, is said to be abundant in the southern parts of the Tenasserim provinces. It yields an incense much valued in the east, particularly China and Japan.

The Kul-lo-wah (*laurus*) is an inferior sort of camphor-wood. Bark, fragrant.

The Soo-ban is a shrub exceedingly prized by the Burmans, as yielding the best red dye of any wood they have. It is sold at a tical per viss, and seems rather rare. The leaves are a favourite article for curry.

The Gamboge (*garcinia cambaja*) is found in the southern provinces, growing fifteen feet high. Leaf, broad, pale green; bark, light lead colour. A gum of a beautiful yellow is abundantly yielded by its bark without incisions, but seems not to be used, except to a small extent as medicine.

The Nah-oo attains a diameter of eighteen or twenty inches. Blossom, very beautiful and fragrant, yellow,

size of a large rose; grows only in wet places. Timber, very worthless.

The Ind-way abounds in the forests, and is a large tree. Seed, the size of a small egg. It yields a very useful resinous gum, of a light-grey colour, used in the seams of boats, &c. It is obtained not only by incision, but drops on the ground, and is gathered without trouble. It is very much used, and may always be bought in the bazaar.

The Myouk-gno, or Mouk-chaw, is a large tree, of excellent timber. Bark, perfectly smooth; flower, very small, on a long stem.

The Them-men-sa-bo is about the size of an apple-tree. Several varieties. Has long thorns. Fruit, an inch in diameter, pungent, and full of seeds, like a guava. The bruised fruit, and the ashes of the wood, are mixed with indigo, to make a fine blue.

The Hnaw-ben is a large tree, of pale-yellow wood, preferred for making combs. It bears a large, fragrant fruit, but worthless.

The In-jeën is a large tree, common in the upper provinces. Flowers, small, pinkish-yellow, very fragrant, growing in clusters, and celebrated in Burman poetry. This is the species of wood generally found petrified near the earth-oil wells on the Irrawaddy. Gaudama died near one of these trees.

The Pyouk-saik is a large tree, common in the jungle. Small, yellow flower; wood, hard, tough, straight-grained; and chosen, wherever it can be had, for the broad centre-piece of Burman wheels.

The The-din, or Anatto (*blea orellana*), is abundant, at least round Rangoon. Tree, twelve to fifteen feet high; leaf, very small; fruit, like a bean. For dyeing, the pods, which are round, the size of an egg, are crushed, washed, and the sediment dried for the pigment. In this form it is exported to a small extent.

Several beautiful and vigorous thorny shrubs are common in the up-country, suitable for hedges, and a good deal used as such. But instead of being planted, the bushes are cut up, and laid along. Of course they are not durable.

The Wah, or Bamboo (*arundo bambos*), is what is generally called in America *cane*, and is used for fishing-poles. It is one of the most useful, if not the most so, of all Burman plants. It grows from forty to eighty feet high, in clusters or stools, of thirty or forty together, and perfects its timber the second year. There are forty or fifty varieties, some a hundred feet high, and twelve inches in diameter. Some are small, thin, and light; some are almost solid, and much stronger than wood of the same diameter. Of it are made houses, bridges, furniture, masts, rigging, cordage, paper, baskets, tools, nets, pumps, pitchers, fences. Indeed, to describe its uses would be to notice all the operations of the household and field, of trade and mechanics. The inspissated juice, called *tubasheer*, is used in medicine, and is regarded by chemists as a very remarkable substance. Dr Brewster calls it "hydrate of silica;" that is, liquid flint. The young plants are agreeably esculent, and prized for food.

Among the varieties of cane are several of the ratan kind (*calamus*), called *Ke-ain* or *Kyein*, growing chiefly in the southern provinces. Some kinds are nearly as thick as the wrist, growing 100 or 200 feet long, and very strong. It bears, in large clusters of eighty or ninety, a beautiful imbricated fruit, the size of a musket ball, not edible in its raw state, but sometimes preserved. The English name is adopted from the Malays, who call it *Rotan*.

Lac, which is largely exported from Burmah, is obtained chiefly in the Shyan districts. It is the product of an insect (*coccus lacca* of Linnaeus), which exudes the gummy matter upon twigs, to protect its eggs, and create a sort of habitation. It lives on various trees; in Asam, chiefly on the *ficus religiosa*. The lac is assorted into qualities, which are called *stick lac*, or that which has the twig in the centre, *seed lac*, *lump lac*, *shell lac*, &c.

There are several very common plants, which form

an excellent substitute for soap, and are extensively used for such. Of some the bark is used, and of others the bean: one is the *sapindus* of Linneæus. Europeans use these for their hair, in preference to any thing else.

Of dye-stuffs, both shrubby and arboreous, there is a good variety, embracing nearly all the sorts known to exist within the tropics. The turmeric, which is very common, seems to be less used as a dye than as an ingredient in curry, to which it imparts an aromatic flavour, and rich yellow colour.

Besides those mentioned as medicinal, the natives regard numerous others in this light. Indeed, almost any thing uncommon is made to enter into their pharmacopœia. The stalls of the apothecaries, as they may be called, exhibit the most whimsical variety. I have seen the shells of English walnuts among the number.

Several vegetable poisons abound in the woods, of which the Karens avail themselves to poison their arrows.

Flowers are innumerable, and for the most part as superior to ours in size and splendour as they are inferior in fragrance. Fragrant flowers, however, though few in proportion, are perhaps as numerous, on the whole, as with us.

Tillage is performed in some places almost exclusively with the hoc and mattock; in others, the plough is used, and sometimes rice-lands are broken up, after being kept wet for a time, merely by the feet of oxen. The plough resembles in shape the spade on a playing-card, has no colter, and cuts to the depth of three or four inches. Horses are never used for draught. Bullocks are managed by a rein, passed through the septum of the nose. Rice-fields are sometimes prepared by merely treading up the moist earth with oxen, raking off the weeds, and sowing the seed broadcast. The Karens, and some of the Burmans, transplant the rice, when about six inches high, into regular drills, which thus produces far better than when sown broadcast. Reaping is performed with a sickle, like ours, but smaller. The grain is trodden out by oxen, and the straw carefully saved for fodder.

In the flat and floodable districts, divisions are marked by ditches, or narrow embankments; in the upper country, often by hedges of thorn, cut up and brought to the spot. There is an indigenous thorn (*siziphus jujuba*) admirably adapted for quick-set hedges; but such are not cultivated, except those of a thorny bamboo, which grows too tall, and is in other respects ill adapted to the purpose.

The lower country has no roads for waggons. Boatable streams are almost the only means of communication, and the only parts settled. Adjacent villages are often connected by footpaths. In the higher districts, roads are general, and kept in tolerable repair.

Cultivators of the soil do not reside on detached farms, but always in villages, for mutual protection against wild beasts and robbers. Indeed, as to a *far*, there is no such thing in Burmah. Each family cultivates a piece of the neighbouring jungle, and brings the produce into the village, where the cattle also are brought for security. When there are neither water-courses nor springs, wells are dug, which yield good water. Instead of a bucket, a basket is used coated with damar, and attached to a rope held in the hand; but often it is fastened to a long lever, balanced on a high post, precisely like the well-sweeps of New England.

The wages of labour are two or three times higher than in any other part of India—a fact which strongly indicates scanty population. A common coolie, or field-hand, receives five or six rupees per month, besides his provisions, which are worth about two rupees more.

Rice being universally preferred to every thing else for food, it is raised wherever it will grow; and in the vast delta of the Irrawaddy, is almost exclusively cultivated. In size and quality it is greatly superior to that of Bengal. The river-lands are surpassingly rich,

and, even under their present imperfect system of husbandry, yield more than a hundred fold. Two crops in a year may be raised. The Burmans mentioned to me about forty kinds of rice, and I saw at least eight or ten.

Cotton, of various kinds, is raised with the utmost facility, in every part of the country, but chiefly in the region extending from Prome, on both sides of the river, some sixty or seventy miles above Ava. It is sown at the same time as paddy, viz., May, and gathered about November. The same ground is seldom used two successive years. A space is cleared of brush and grass, burnt over, and the seed sown broadcast. The annual kinds are exclusively cultivated; but the British have introduced into their portions of the country the Per-nambuco and other perennial kinds, which promise to succeed well, and attain to a great size. Much of the crop is exported across the country to China, but the principal part is consumed in household manufactures.

The narkin, or red cotton, is cultivated largely, and is preferred for women's en-gyees or short gowns. This kind is chiefly obtained from the Shyans, who also manufacture the cloth just named, and find a ready market for it at Ava.

Though cotton-seed in America has been till lately used only for manure, and rarely even for that, not a kernel is wasted in Burmah, nor even used as manure. Some is used for oil, for the expression of which they have good mills, turned by bullocks. Some is made into torches for public feasts, by being placed in a narrow jar, and sprinkled with oil; and a very considerable part is eaten. It is steeped till it sprouts, and is a highly-prized food in districts where rice is scarce. The young plant is sometimes used also as an esculent.

Tobacco grows wild in many places, and is cultivated in most parts of the country. There are several kinds, some of which is not surpassed for smoking by the finest Havana. The best sorts and qualities sell at about a rupee a viss; the middling sorts, about half that price; and the poorest, four or five viss for a rupee. The best is raised on the rich levels of the maritime districts, and water-courses. The culture of this article might be almost indefinitely increased; but it has not become an article of export. From 1000 to 1200 pounds are yielded per acre, on an average.

A little is used for chewing; but the consumption for smoking is very great, not in pipes, but in cigars, or cheroots, with wrappers made of the leaves of the *Theretree*. In making them, a little of the dried root, chopped fine, is added, and sometimes a small portion of sugar. These are sold at a rupee a thousand.

The uplands produce wheat, and various other grains, with scarcely any labour, as well as beans, peas, and esculents, in great variety. The wheat crop is from twenty to fifty fold; the grain is heavy and sound, and the success of the crop as likely as any other. The price at Ava is always greatly less than that of rice, viz., about fifty cents per bushel.

Rice, too, is not excluded from high land cultivation. The better qualities cannot be raised, nor a great quantity; but many varieties are produced, chiefly those of the glutinous kind. Of this sort, some kinds are a beautiful purple, or indigo colour; another kind, called the *Kouk-myen-phyoo*, is a large and very white grain; and another, called *Kouk-myen-ne*, is a bright red. The average crop, on these high lands, is about fifteen fold. Between the hilly districts and the low flats, inundated by the periodical rise of rivers, are extensive flats, well adapted to rice, and made to raise it in large quantities by artificial irrigation. The moment is seized when the water-course is at its height, and it is thrown up the few remaining feet. A shallow basket, coated with damar, is fastened to a long handle, and so balanced by a cord from above, as to make the dipping of the water an easy and rapid process.

Several kinds of millet (*holcus*), among which is the *andropogon cernuum*, are largely raised for food in the upper provinces, where rice is comparatively dear, and to some extent in all. They grow luxuriantly with

very little care, and yield a highly nutritive food, though little valued in comparison with rice.

Indian corn, called here *Pyoung*, grows well wherever planted, but is cultivated in too slovenly a manner to produce as it might. It is rarely given to cattle, but is consumed by the natives in a green state, and is sold, ready boiled, in all the bazaars, at a mere song. The common yield is from fifty to seventy fold.

Among the most esteemed varieties of pulse are a sort of kidney-bean (*phaseolus max*); and several kinds of French bean (*dolichos*); and Gram (*cicer arietinum*), called by the natives *Kula-pai*, or "foreigner's bean," which produces very abundantly, but is raised in small quantities, and chiefly in the northern districts.

The Nlian (*sesamum orientale*) is largely cultivated, chiefly for an excellent oil, which it yields abundantly, and which is used both for food, unction, and light. It seems to be the same plant called Vango in the West Indies, and Bonny in our southern states. It is a delicate annual, from two to five feet high, leaves three inches long, opposite, downy.

The Mong-nyen (*sinapis orientalis*) is also raised in considerable quantities, chiefly for the oil, which is an excellent substitute for butter, and is much used also as an unguent.

The certainty and regularity of the periodical rains, in the western and eastern districts, render a general failure of crops altogether unknown. In the middle region, round Ava, the reverse is sometimes true.

Whether the true hemp is cultivated in Burmah I know not, but Dr Wallich saw the beautiful single lanceolate-leaved *crotalaria* raised for that purpose.

The tea-plant grows indigenous in all the upper provinces, and is raised in large quantities for exportation to the rest of the country. Part of it is prepared as a pickle, in which form it is a favourite article of food among all classes; and part is dried and put up in hard round balls. I used the latter during my whole residence in the country, and coincide with all the missionaries in pronouncing it equal to the best black teas of China. The taste, however, is somewhat peculiar, and few are fond of it at first. It is generally supposed to come from China, being mostly brought by the Chinese and Shyan caravans; but several of the chief men at Ava assured me it is the product of their own territories, purchased on the way. It sells at Ava, at about one rupee a viss (twelve cents per pound). In the lower provinces, it brings double that price. But even at the latter rate, it is exceedingly cheap. There is no obstruction to its exportation.

Black pepper is indigenous, and in some places small quantities are cultivated. It might be made a great article of export; but the natives do not esteem it as a condiment, preferring the long red pepper, or chilly. The latter article might also be made an important article of commerce, and is now exported to some extent. With it the people of the upper districts purchase rice, &c., from the lower districts. It is found wild in great quantities. Cultivation seems to increase the size but not the pungency of the plant.

The sugar-cane attains its full size and richness in fertile spots, and sugar might be exported to a great extent. Millions of acres, adapted to its most successful cultivation, lie wholly uninhabited. Though almost every Burman raises a little sugar-cane, it is merely to be eaten in its natural state, and none, that I know of, resort to it for sugar. The Chinese round Umerapoora make a considerable quantity of excellent light-brown sugar, which is sold very cheap. They also clay some of it, and produce an article as white as our loaf sugar, but much abridged of its sweetness.

Indigo grows wild, and is cultivated also to some extent. The mode of extracting the dye is unskilful, and the whole product is used in the fabrics of the country. The high price of labour will forbid the exportation of this article.

The ground-nut (*arachis hypogæa*) grows well, and in many places is attended to, and produced in considerable quantity; but as a general thing, it is entirely disregarded.

The process of raising garden vegetables is much the same as with us.

Honey is exceedingly plenty, but always derived from wild bees. It is less prized than that from Yunnan, and is of a darker colour; but is consumed largely, and exported to some extent. In obtaining it, the bees are not destroyed.

The wild animals of the country are the elephant, elk, tiger, leopard, buffalo, deer (of several species), antelope, bison, nyghau, rhinoceros, wolf, goat, hare, racoon, serval or mountain cat, civet cat, tiger cat, pole cat, hog, black bear, porcupine, ichneumon, squirrel (of several kinds), baboon, and monkey (of many kinds), mole, otter, and rat. Some of these are scarce, others, particularly the elephant, tiger, deer, hog, and rat, are very abundant.

Elephants are most abundant and noble in Pegu, but are numerous in some of the mountain districts. The feline animals are most abundant in the maritime districts. Much is said of the white elephants of Burmah. There is now but one known to exist in the empire—an old and remarkably fine animal, which has long been the pride of royalty at Ava. He seems to be an albino.

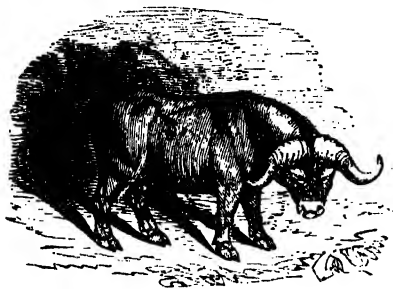
It is very remarkable that the jackal, though found in great numbers over nearly all the warm regions of the world, and particularly numerous in Bengal and Chittagong, is wholly unknown in Burmah. Yet the mountains which divide Burmah from the adjacent jackal regions, are not only passable in many places for travellers, but have open roads or paths, constantly used. The whole *canis* genus, except the common house-dog, seems wanting in Burmah. Neither the jackal, fox, wolf, nor hyena, have yet been found in the country.

There are alligators of at least two species, and some attain the largest size. In the tide-waters they literally swarm, and not unfrequently kill men sleeping on the little boats. Sharks abound at the mouths of the rivers. Turtles and tortoises are very common on the coast; and some places are so frequented by them to lay their eggs, that the spots are farmed out by government for a considerable sum.

The domestic animals are the buffalo, braming cattle, horse, ass, mule, goat, dog, hog, cat, sheep. Some of these are very rare. Indeed, none are common but horses, horned cattle, and dogs. Animal food being prohibited by their laws, none are raised for food; and woollen garments being little known, sheep are not wanted for wool. Except a flock owned by the king, I heard of none belonging to natives. English gentlemen sometimes keep a few for the sake of the mutton, which run with the goats, kept for milk, and are tended by the same man. So entirely in these hot climates do sheep lose their distinctive features, that, in seeing them mixed with goats, I never could tell them apart. They are never white, as with us, and their wool degenerates into hair. May not this illustrate Matt. xxv. 32, 33—"He shall separate them one from the other, as a shepherd divideth the sheep from the goats?" Though an unaccustomed eye could not discern the difference, the shepherd knows each perfectly. So, though, in this world, hypocrites mingle with God's people, and resemble them, the "Great Shepherd" instantly detects them, and, at the appointed time, will unerringly divide them.

The braming cattle are not numerous. The buffalo is used instead, and is the same which is common in Siam, Assam, and China. A correct idea can be had from the annexed drawing. It is of twice the size of the braming ox, of a dark dun colour, with huge black horns. The animal is remarkable for its aquatic habits. Being nearly destitute of hair, insects annoy it exceedingly, and it generally takes its repose in the water, with but a part of its head visible. He is managed by a cord passed through the septum of the nose, and draws in a yoke like ours, generally single, and not in pairs. To see an animal so huge, and generally so ferocious, thus easily humbled and restrained, throws a strong light on the 19th chapter of 2d Kings; and often,

as I saw a child lead a buffalo thus, I was reminded of Sennacherib, the mighty, the presumptuous Sennacherib. Full of confidence in his overwhelming force, he stands ready to devour Israel, "as the green herb, and as the grass of the field," (v. 26), and, like a roaring bull, utters "his rage against God." How calm and contemptuous are the words of Jehovah! "Because thy rage against me, and thy tumult, is come up into mine ears, therefore I will put my hook in thy nose, and my bridle in thy lips, and I will turn thee back by the way by which thou camest." (v. 28.) I am still struck with it daily. The contempt expressed in comparing him to a beast of burden, and the ease with which God could lead him away, like a bullock by the nose, are very fine.



The Buffalo.

The breed of horses is small, but excellent, resembling in many points the Canadian pony. They are capable of enduring great fatigue, and never need shoeing, but are not used for draught. For this latter purpose the buffalo is principally employed.

Dogs, breeding unrestrained, are so numerous in the villages as to be a sad nuisance, to foreigners at least. Receiving very little attention, they are compelled by hunger to eat every species of offal, and in this respect are of some service in a country where scavengers are unknown.

The elephant must of course be named among domestic animals, as well as wild. All, wild and tame, are owned by the king; but great men keep more or less, as they are permitted or required. There are said to be two thousand of them in the empire, properly trained. Next to the white elephant, those are most prized who have most flesh-colour about the ears, head, and trunk. This always appeared to me a blemish, and has a diseased, spotted appearance. The other points of beauty are to have the fore legs bow out much in front, and the crupper to droop very low.

Burmans rarely use them for any other purpose than riding or war. Instead of preferring females, as do the more effeminate Hindus, because more docile, Burmans will scarcely use them. They are kept for breeding, and for decoys in capturing the wild animal. It has been often denied that the elephant will breed in a domestic state; but it is most certainly the fact in this country, and to a considerable extent. I have often seen them in the pastures with their young. The process of catching and taming elephants is too similar to that practised elsewhere in the east to need description here.

The ornithology of Burmah has never yet been given, but is probably similar to that of Hindustan, on which splendid and extensive works are before the public.

The Henna, or Braminy goose, a species of *Anas*, is the symbol of the empire, but is not regarded with religious veneration. Kites seem to remain only in the dry season. In the forests are found the vulture, hawk, partridge, parrot, pheasant, bird of paradise, doves of several varieties (one almost as large as a hen), raven, two species of pheasants, a great variety of woodpeckers, sparrows, and martins. Pigeons are both wild and tame, as are also pigeons and parrots. Jungle-fowl abound in the forests. It resembles the common barnyard fowl, except that, like other wild fowl, its plumage is invariably the same, namely, a dark red, with black

breast and legs. The male crows like the common cock. The flesh is excellent food.

Wild ducks (of several varieties), cormorants, pelicans, plovers, snipe, teal, and a variety of other aquatic birds, are common. Sparrows are so numerous as to be in some places a serious injury to husbandmen. The beautiful and sagacious bottle-nest sparrow (sometimes called *toddy-bird*) is abundant. It has no song, but a cheerful chirp; and as they associate in communities, they enliven the place of their retreat most agreeably. The nest has often been described. It may rather be called a house, as it is seldom less than a foot in height, and twice as much in circumference, containing not only the nest where incubation is performed, but an apartment for the male bird, who gives much of his time to his mate during this process. Few Burman birds have a pleasant song, though some are by no means disagreeable.

Around villages, crows are innumerable. Secured from molestation by Burman faith, and fed by the pagoda offerings, they multiply without restriction. Though valuable as general scavengers, they are often very troublesome, even coming into the house and stealing food from the table. The noise of them at Tavoy, Rangoon, and some other places, kept up all day, by thousands, was to me, for the first few days, exceedingly annoying.

Domestic fowls are common. Among the varieties is one whose feathers, skin, and bones, are perfectly black. I often ate them, but perceived no difference in the taste, except, perhaps, that they are more tender. Ducks are somewhat common, but geese are very rare, and turkeys have not been introduced.

Fishes are in multitudes on all the coasts, and in every river, creek, and even tank. Few of them resemble those of our hemisphere; but in quality some are quite equal to the best we have. About fifty kinds have been noticed, but I could only get the English or Bengalee names of the following:—*ekup*, *beckty*, mullet (four or five kinds), pomfret, *hishah* or sable, *salier* or luckwah, *ruce*, sole, mango, catfish, eel, *bumela* or *latea*, carp, *datina*, *punga*, flounder, skate, and rock-cod.

Prawns, crabs, oysters, mussels, periwinkles, coelies, &c. &c., are found in any quantity on the sea-beach, and in some places are a good deal relied on for food.

Reptiles are numerous, but less troublesome or dangerous than is supposed in this country. Injuries from them are very rare, even among natives whose habits expose them more than foreigners.

Serpents are numerous in some places, but few are venomous. A species of water-snake is dreaded as most poisonous. The *boa constrictor*, and several species of *cobra*, are occasionally seen of large size. The former are sometimes killed with a kid, or even a calf, in their stomachs entire! The rat-snake is often six feet long, and even more. One of the most dreaded snakes is a species of viper, which is perfectly deaf, and cannot be awaked by any noise; the slightest touch, however, rouses it in an instant.

Scorpions are of two kinds, black, and whitish brown. The former attain the length of five or six inches, and their bite is often fatal. The latter are more common, but smaller and less venomous. At Mergui, and possibly elsewhere, there is a flying lizard, about five inches long, not unlike the common picture of the dragon. I procured and preserved several in alcohol, which are now in the Museum of the Boston Society of Natural History. The wings are leathery, like those of a bat, and extend along the whole side of the body. They have about the same power of flight as the flying squirrel of our country.

Lizards of various kinds are common. They inhabit pagodas, trees, rocks, and the roofs of houses. A small kind, which feeds principally upon flies, inhabits all dwelling-houses. It is always a welcome resident, and is allowed to run about the walls, and even come upon the table to catch the insects which gather round the lamp. The *Toukty*, or *Gecko*, is a beautiful creature, about six inches long. Some consider it venomous, but this is not

clear. The Pa-dat attains a much greater size than the Toukay. The Then-like is apt to sting, and is by some deemed poisonous. The Poke-then, a sort of chameleon, with a mane along the top of his neck, which changes colour beautifully. It is called in Madras the blood-sucker. The Iguana is generally from two to four feet long, including the tail. Sometimes they are seen as large as a child seven or eight years old. They are not common, except in the jungle; and are prized as a very delicate food.

Spiders of various sorts are, of course, not wanting; some of them are as large as a common crab, and as poisonous as hornets.

Leeches are inconceivably numerous in many places, and so large as to create serious inconvenience to persons who are obliged to work in the water.

Centipedes are very common. The most common kinds are two or three inches long; but some are double that size. Their venom has been greatly exaggerated. Many persons who have been bitten by them assured me that the pain and inflammation were not greater than are produced by the sting of a common bee. It varies, as that does, in different persons.

Insects, in all the varieties common to a tropical climate, abound in Burmah; but there is no record of their having been so numerous as to create local devastations. The white ants are most destructive. These are abundantly described in encyclopedias. The musquito is troublesome in low places, but seems not so poisonous as ours, or at least only to new comers. On the delta of the Irrawaddy, and some other moist districts, they swarm so as to fill the air as soon as it is dark, and cattle can only be kept alive, by placing them at night in the midst of a thick smoke. I have been in many parts of America, however, particularly the sea-coast of Jersey, where these insects are as troublesome. Papillones, libellule, scarabei, cicadæ, cantharides, and many more, are active all day, but give place to far greater multitudes, which fill the air at night. I believe no collection of Burman insects has ever been made; but it was utterly out of my power to gather any.

CHAPTER III.

Population. Form and Features. Buildings. Food. Dress. Manners and Customs. Character. Condition of Women. Marriage. Polygamy. Divorce. Diseases. Medical Practice. Midwifery. Funerals. Amusements. Musical Instruments. Manufactures.

Few countries have had their population so variously estimated. Old geographies stated it at 30,000,000; Synnes made it 17,000,000; Cox afterwards reduced it to 8,000,000; and Balbi allows it only 3,700,000. The chief woon-gye at Ava informed me that the last census gave a total of 300,000 houses. Allowing a fraction short of seven persons to a house, this would make 2,000,000; presuming one-third of the houses to have escaped enumeration, we have 3,000,000. After the most careful inquiries, I am led to put down the number of the inhabitants, to whom the Burman tongue is vernacular, at 3,000,000. This estimate was confirmed by many persons and numerous facts. The Shyans are probably 3,000,000 more, and, with other subsidiary tribes, bring up the total population to about the estimate of Cox.

The people, though not so tall as Hindus, are more athletic. The average height of men is about five feet two inches, and of women four feet ten inches; that is to say, about four or five inches shorter than the average height of Europeans. Women have more slender limbs than men, but are universally square-shouldered. Corpulence is not more frequent than in this country. In features they are totally dissimilar to the Hindus, and rather resemble the Malays, especially in the prominence of cheek-bones, and squareness of the jaw. The nose is never prominent, but often flat, and the lips generally thick. The complexion of young

children, and those who have not been exposed to the sun, is that of our brightest mulattoes. Few, except among the higher classes, retain this degree of fairness, but none ever become, by many shades, so black as Hindus. I saw few whose complexions were clear enough to discover a blush. The standard of beauty seems to be delicate yellow; and in full dress, a cosmetic is used by ladies and children which imparts this tint. It is remarkable that this hue should be admired not only here, but amongst the almost black natives of Hindustan, and the many-coloured inhabitants of the islands of the Indian Ocean.

The hair of the head is very abundant, always black, rather coarse, and rendered glossy by frequent anointings. On the limbs and breast there is none, strongly contrasting in this respect with Hindus, whose bodies are almost covered with hair. Their beard is abundant on the upper lip, but never extends over the cheeks, and is but scanty on the chin.

Puberty does not occur much earlier than with us; women bear children to nearly as late a period. The average length of life seems not perceptibly different from that of Europe.

Dwellings are constructed of timbers, or bamboos set in the earth, with lighter pieces fastened transversely. When good posts are used, they are set seven feet apart; lighter ones and bamboos are placed closer. A frame set on stone or brick pillars, is never seen. The sides are covered, some with mats, more or less substantial and costly; or with thatch, fastened with split ratans. The roof is usually of thatch, even in the best houses. It is very ingeniously made and fastened on, and is a perfect security against wind or rain. The cheapest is made of strong grass, six or seven feet long, bent over a thin strip of cane four feet long, and stitched on with ratan. A better kind is made of attap or dennee leaves, in the same manner. These are laid on like wide boards, lapping over each other from twelve to eighteen inches. They cost a mere trifle, and last about three years.

The floor is of split cane, elevated a few feet from the earth, which secures ventilation and cleanliness, and makes them far more comfortable and tidy than the houses of Bengal. The open crevices between the slats, however, too often invite carelessness, by suffering offal and dirty fluids to pass through; and not unfrequently, among the lower ranks, the space under the house is a nasty mud-hole, alive with vermin. The doors and windows are of mat, strengthened with a frame of bamboo, and tied fast at the top. When opened, they are propped up with a bamboo, and form a shade. Of course, there are no chimneys. Cooking is done on a shallow box, a yard square, filled with earth. The whole house may be put up in two or three days, at an expense of from sixty to one hundred rupees, though many do not cost half that sum. Posts of common timber last from ten to fifteen years, iron-wood forty or fifty, and good teak eighty or a hundred. The houses of the more opulent, in large towns, are built of wood, with plank floors and panelled doors and window shutters, but without lath, plaster, or glass.

Such houses furnish a fine harbour for spiders, worms, lizards, and centipedes, but create no inconvenience in general, except the particles of dust which are constantly powdered down from the thatch, as the worms eat it up. The lizards are not only harmless but useful, consuming flies, musquitoes, &c. The centipedes are poisonous; but it is very rare that any one is bitten, and the result is merely a painful swelling and inflammation for a few days.

The rank of the opulent is particularly regarded in the architecture of the dwelling, and a deviation from rule would be instantly marked and punished. The distinction lies chiefly in hips or stages in the roof.

The whole of the architectural skill of this people is by no means exhibited in their dwellings. Some of the zayats, pagodas, and temples, are truly noble. There can be no doubt that if the people were not prohi-

bited, they would often erect for themselves substantial stone or brick buildings. It has been said that they have lost the art of turning an arch, but this is wholly a mistake. I have seen many fine arches, of large span, evidently erected within a few years, and some not yet finished, constructed wholly by Burman masons. The stucco, which covers all buildings, is put on with extraordinary durability, and generally with tasteful ornaments. Floors and brick images, covered in this way, have often a polish equal to the most exquisitely wrought marble. The mortar is made of the best lime and sand, with a liberal mixture of jaggery, but without hair. No one can form a proper estimate of Burman architecture who has not visited Ava, or one of the ancient seats of government. Religious structures are there far more numerous and magnificent than in distant parts of the empire. As in other countries, the state religion shines most, in temporal endowments and honours, in the neighbourhood of the metropolis.

Though Burmans spend all their zeal on useless pagodas, there are near the capital some other structures of public utility. Some tanks have been constructed, which secure irrigation, and consequent fertility, to a fine region of adjacent country. One of these, near Mokesobo, is truly a noble work. Across the little river at Ava, and the marsh adjacent, is a very long bridge, which I have not seen surpassed in India, and scarcely in Europe. Various other edifices, both civil and military, ornament the metropolis, and would do honour to any people.

The favourite food, in common with all India and China, and universally used by all who can afford it, is rice. This is often eaten without any addition whatever, but generally with a nice curry, and sauces of various stewed melons, vegetables, &c. Except among the very poor, a little meat or fish is added. Sweet oil, made from the sesamum seed, enters largely into their seasoning. But the great condiment is chillie, or capsicum. From the highest to the lowest, all season their rice with this plant. The consumption is incredibly great, and in its dried state it forms a considerable branch of internal trade. The whole pod, with its seeds, is ground to powder on a stone (a little water being added if the peppers are dried), and mixed with a little turmeric, and onions or garlic, ground up in the same manner, and generally acidified with some sour juice: often, instead of water, the expressed juice of rasped cocoa nut is used to make the curry. In this the fish or meat is stewed, if they have any, and a very palatable sauce is made, at almost no expense. Sweet oil, made of the cocoa-nut, sesamum, or mustard seed, is a very admired addition to their various messes, and almost entirely superseded the use of butter. The latter is used only in the clarified state, called *pau-bot*, and by Europeans *ghce*.

In the upper districts, where rice is dearer than below, wheat, maize, sweet potatoes, onions, peas, beans, and plantains, enter largely into the common diet. Indeed, a Burman seems almost literally omnivorous. A hundred sorts of leaves, suckers, blossoms, and roots, are daily gathered in the jungle, and a famine seems almost impossible. Snakes, lizards, grubs, ants' eggs, &c., are eaten without hesitation, and many are deemed delicacies. An animal which has died of itself, or the swollen carcass of game killed with poisoned arrows, is just as acceptable as other meat. Like the ancient Romans, the Burmans are very fond of certain wood-worms, particularly a very large species found in the trunks of plantain-trees. I have seen several foreigners, who had adopted it as one of their delicacies.

Though the law forbids the taking of life, no one scruples to eat what is already dead; and there are always sinners enough to keep the sanctimonious ones supplied with animal food. Indeed, very few scruple to take game or fish. Thousands of the natives are fishermen by profession. I asked some of these what they thought would become of them in the next state. They admitted that they must suffer myriads of years

for taking so many lives, but would generally add "What can we do!—our wives and children must eat."

Cooking is done in a thin, earthen pot, narrow at the mouth, placed close to the fire, on three stones. Very little fuel is used, and this of a light kind, often the stalks of flowers, reminding me of the remark of our Saviour (Matt. vi. 30), when he reproved unreasonable anxiety about raiment. The variety of modes in which the different kinds of rice are prepared is surprising. With no other addition than sugar, or a few nuts, or rasped cocoa-nut, they make almost as many delicacies as our confectioners; and such as I tasted were equally palatable.

Though their wheat is of the finest quality, it is much less valued than rice, and sells for less money. Its name, "foreigner's rice," shows it not to be indigenous but when it was introduced is not known. Its being also called *gyong*, which is a Bengalee name, intimates that it might have been received from thence. Animals are fed with it, and, in some places, it forms a large part of the people's subsistence; not ground and made into bread, but cooked, much as they do rice. The bread made of it by foreigners is remarkably white and good, the fresh juice of the toddy-tree furnishing the best of leaven. The bakers are generally Bengalese, who grind the flour, in the manner so often alluded to in Scripture, in a hand-mill. Wherever there are Europeans, there are some of these bakers, who furnish fresh bread every day, at a rate not dearer than with us.

In eating, Burmans use their fingers only, always washing their hands before and after, and generally their mouths also. A large silver contains the plain boiled rice, and another the little dishes of various curries and sauces.

They take huge mouthfuls, and chew the rice a good deal. Sometimes a handful is pressed in the palm till it resembles an egg, and is in that form thrust into the mouth. The quantity taken at a meal is large, but scarcely half of that devoured by a Bengalee. Only the right hand is used in eating, the left being consigned to the more uncleanly acts. They eat but twice a-day, once about eight or nine o'clock, and again towards sunset. They avoid drinking before or during eating, on the plea that they then could not eat so much: after eating, they take free draughts of pure water, and lie down to take a short nap.

The dress of men in the lower classes, while engaged in labour, is a cotton cloth, called *pes-só*, about four and a half yards long, and a yard wide, passed round the hips, and between the thighs, most of it being gathered into a knot in front. When not at work, it is loosed, and passed round the hips, and over the shoulder, covering, in a graceful manner, nearly the whole body. A large part of the people, especially at Ava, wear this of silk; and there is scarcely any one who has not silk for special days. A jacket with sleeves, called *ingce*, generally of white muslin, but sometimes of broadcloth or velvet, is added, among the higher classes, but not habitually, except in cold weather. It buttons at the neck and bottom. Dressed or undressed, all wear the turban, or *goun-boung*, of book-muslin, or cotton handkerchiefs. The entire aspect of a respectable Burman's dress is neat, decorous, and graceful. On the feet, when dressed, are worn sandals of wood, or cow-hide covered with cloth, and held on by straps, one of which passes over the instep, the other over the great toe. On entering a house, these are always left at the door.

Women universally wear a *te-mince*, or petticoat, of cotton or silk, lined with muslin. It is but little wider than is sufficient to go round the body, and is fastened by merely tucking in the corners. It extends from the arm-pits to the ankles; but labouring women, at least after they have borne children, generally gather it around the hips, leaving uncovered all the upper part of the form. Being merely lapped over in front, and not sewed, it exposes one leg above the knee, at every



Burman Lady.

step. By the higher classes, and by others when not at work, is worn, in addition, an *in-gee*, or jacket, open in the front, with close, long sleeves. It is always made of thin materials, and frequently of gauze or lace. Labouring women and children frequently wear, in the cold season, a shorter gown, resembling a sailor's jacket, of common calico. Nothing is worn on the head. Their sandals are like those of men. The picture represents a genteel woman, with a cigar, as is very common, in her hand.

Boys go naked till they are five or six in cities, and seven or eight in country places. Girls begin to wear clothing several years earlier.

Both sexes wear ornaments in their ears. They are not rings, or pendants, but *cylinders* of gold, silver, horn, wood, marble, or paper, passed through a hole in the soft part of the ear. The perforation is at first small, but the tube is from time to time enlarged, till it reaches the fashionable dimensions of about an inch in diameter. As in all countries, some are extreme in their fashions, and such enlarge it still more. I have seen some of these ear ornaments larger round than a dollar. The boring of a boy's ear is generally made, by those who can afford it, an occasion of a profuse feast and other entertainments. After the period of youth, few seem to care for this decoration, and the holes are made to serve for carrying a spare cheroot, or a bunch of flowers.

Men generally wear mustachios, but pluck out their beard with tweezers: old people sometimes suffer it to grow; but it never attains to respectable size. Both sexes, as a matter of modesty, pluck out the hair under the arm, which certainly diminishes the repulsive aspect of the naked bust.

Both sexes wear their hair very long. Men tie it in a knot on the *top* of the head, or intertwine it with their urban. Women turn it all back, and, without a comb, form it into a graceful knot *behind*, frequently adding chaplets or festoons of fragrant natural flowers, strung on a thread. As much hair is deemed ornamental, they often add false tresses, which hang down behind, in the manner shown in the last picture. Both sexes take great pains with their hair, frequently washing it with a species of bark, which has the properties of soap, and keeping it anointed with sweet oil.

Women are fond of rendering their complexions more fair, and at the same time fragrant, by rubbing over the face the delicate yellow powder already mentioned, which is also found a great relief in cutaneous eruptions, and is often used for this purpose by the missionary, with success. They occasionally stain the nails of the fingers and toes with a scarlet pigment. Bathing is a daily habit of all who live in the vicinity of convenient water. I was often reminded, while sitting in their houses in the dusk of the evening, of our Saviour's remark (John xiii. 10), "He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit." The men, having finished their labour, bathe, and clean themselves at the river, or tank; but walking up with wet feet defiles them again, so that they cannot with propriety come and take their place on the mat or bed. Taking up some water, therefore, in a cocoa-nut dipper, out of a large jar which stands at the door of every house, they easily rinse their feet as they stand on the step, and "are clean every whit."

All ranks are exceedingly fond of flowers, and display great taste in arranging them on all public occasions. The pagodas receive daily offerings of these in great quantity, and a lady in full dress throws festoons of them around her hair. Dressy men, on special occasions, put a few into the holes in their ears.

In all Burmah pictures, it is observable that the arm, when used to prop the body, is curved the wrong

way. This arises from the frequency of such a posture to persons who sit on the floor with their feet at their side, and from the great flexibility of the joints of orientals. It is deemed a beauty in proportion to its degree of flexure. I found the same fashion prevailing in Siam. The stories, in some books, of their dislocating their elbow at pleasure, and even putting up the hair, &c., with the joints reversed, are absurd.

The mode of kissing is curious, though natural. Instead of a slight touch of the lips, as with us, they apply the mouth and nose closely to the person's cheek, and draw in the breath strongly, as if smelling a delightful perfume. Hence, instead of saying, "Give me a kiss," they say, "Give me a smell." There is no word in the language which translates our word *kiss*.

Children are carried, not in the arms, as with us, but astride the hip, as is the custom in other parts of India. The cradle of an infant is an oblong basket, without rockers, suspended from the rafters. The least impulse sets it swinging; and the child is thus kept cool and unannoyed by the flies.

The custom of blacking the teeth is almost universal. It is generally done about the age of puberty. The person first chews alum or sour vegetables several hours, after which a mixture of oil, lamp-black, and perhaps other ingredients, is applied with a hot iron. When done by the regular professors of the art, it is indelible. At the metropolis, the practice is getting into disrepute, and still more so in the British provinces; and as intercourse with foreigners increases, the practice may become obsolete. Whenever I asked the reason of this custom, the only answer was, "What! should we have white teeth, like a dog or a monkey?"

Almost every one, male or female, chews the singular mixture called *coon*; and the lackered or gilded box containing the ingredients is borne about on all occasions. The quid consists of a slice of araca-nut, a small piece of cutch, and some tobacco rolled up in a leaf of betel pepper, on which has been smeared a little tempered quicklime. It creates profuse saliva, and so fills up the mouth that they seem to be chewing food. It colours the mouth deep red; and the teeth, if not previously blackened, assume the same colour. It is rather expensive, and is not taken very often through the day. Smoking tobacco is still more prevalent among both sexes, and is commenced by children almost as soon as they are weaned. I have seen little creatures of two or three years, stark naked, tottering about with a lighted cigar in their mouth. It is not uncommon for them to become smokers even before they are weaned, the mother often taking the cheroot from her mouth and putting it into that of the infant! Such universal smoking and chewing makes a spittoon necessary to cleanly persons. It is generally made of brass, in the shape of a vase, and quite handsome. Hookas are not used, and pipes are uncommon. The cheroot is seldom wholly made of tobacco. The wrapper is the leaf of the then-nat tree; fragrant wood rasped fine, the dried root of the tobacco and some of the proper leaf, make the contents.

Men are universally tattooed on the thighs and lower part of the body. The operation is commenced in patches, at the age of eight or ten years, and continued till the whole is finished. The intended figures, such as animals, birds, demons, &c., are traced with lamp-black and oil, and pricked in with a pointed instrument. Frequently the figures are only lines, curves, &c., with an occasional cabalistic word. The process is not only painful but expensive. The tattooing of as much surface as may be covered by "six fingers," costs a quarter of a tical when performed by an ordinary artist; but when by one of superior qualifications, the charge is higher. Not to be thus tattooed, is considered as a mark of effeminacy. The practice originates not only from its being considered ornamental, but a charm against casualties. Those who aspire to more eminent decoration have another tattooing with a red pigment, done in small squares upon the breast and arms.

A few individuals, especially among those who have

made arms a profession, insert under the skin of the arm, just below the shoulder, small pieces of gold, copper, or iron, and sometimes diamonds or pearls. One of the converts at Ava, formerly a colonel in the Burman army, had ten or twelve of these in his arm, several of which he allowed me to extract. They are thin plates of gold, with a charm written upon them, and then rolled up.

The upper classes sleep on bedsteads, with a thin mattress or mat, but most people sleep on the floor. Some have a thick cotton cloth to wrap themselves in at night, but the majority use only the clothes worn in the day. Sheets are not thought of by any class: even Europeans prefer to have their mattresses enclosed in the fine mats of the country, and sleep in suitable dresses.

Respectable people are always attended in the streets by a few followers, sometimes by quite a crowd. A petty officer of middling rank appears with six or eight: one carries a pipe, another a coon-box, another a water-goblet, with the cup turned upside down on the mouth, another a spittoon, another a memorandum book, &c. All classes use umbrellas when walking abroad. Peasants and labourers, when at work, generally wear hats two or three feet in diameter, made of light bark.

It is scarcely safe for travellers to attempt to pour-tray national character. Calm and prolonged intercourse, at every place, with men long on the ground, and daily contact with natives, merchants, civilians, soldiers, and missionaries, gave me, however, opportunities for forming opinions such as fall to the lot of few.

The Burman character differs, in many points, from that of the Hindus, and other East Indians. They are more lively, active, and industrious, and though fond of repose, are seldom idle when there is an inducement for exertion. When such inducement offers, they exhibit not only great strength, but courage and perseverance, and often accomplish what we should think scarcely possible. But these valuable traits are rendered nearly useless, by the want of a higher grade of civilisation. The poorest classes, furnished by a happy climate with all necessities, at the price of only occasional labour, and the few who are above that necessity, find no proper pursuits to fill up their leisure. Books are too scarce to enable them to improve by reading, and games grow wearisome. No one can indulge pride or taste in the display, or scarcely in the use, of wealth. By improving his lands or houses beyond his neighbours, a man exposes himself to extortion, and perhaps personal danger. The pleasures, and even the follies, of refined society, call forth talents, diffuse wealth, and stimulate business; but here are no such excitements. Folly and sensuality find gratification almost without effort, and without expenditure. Sloth, then, must be the repose of the poor, and the business of the rich. From this they resort to the chase, the seine, or the athletic game; and from those relapse to quiescent indulgence. Thus life is wasted in the profitless alternation of sensual ease, rude drudgery, and active sport. No elements exist for the improvement of posterity, and successive generations pass, like the crops upon their fields. Were there but a disposition to improve the mind, and distribute benefits, what majesty of piety might we not hope to see in a country so favoured with the means of subsistence, and so cheap in its modes of living! Instead of the many objects of an American's ambition, and the unceasing anxiety to amass property, the Burman sets a limit to his desires, and when that is reached, gives himself to repose and enjoyment. Instead of wearing himself out in endeavours to equal or surpass his neighbour in dress, food, furniture, or house, he easily attains the customary standard, beyond which he seldom desires to go.

When strangers come to their houses, they are hospitable and courteous; and a man may travel from one end of the kingdom to the other without money, feeding and lodging as well as the people. But otherwise they have little idea of aiding their neighbour. If a boat or a waggon, &c., get into difficulty, no one stirs to assist,

unless requested. The accommodation of strangers and travellers is particularly provided for by *sayats* or caravansaries, built in every village, and often found insulated on the highway. These serve at once for taverns, town-houses, and churches. Here travellers take up their abode even for weeks, if they choose; here public business is transacted, and here, if a pagoda be near, worship is performed. They are always as well built as the best houses, and often are amongst the most splendid structures in the kingdom. Though they furnish, however, no accommodations but a shelter, the traveller procures at the bazaar all he finds necessary, or receives, with the utmost promptitude, a full supply from the families around. A missionary may travel from one end of the country to the other, and receive, wherever he stops, all that the family can offer.

Temperance is universal. The use of all wine, spirits, opium, &c., is not only strictly forbidden, both by religion and the civil law, but is entirely against public opinion. I have seen thousands together for hours, on public occasions, rejoicing in all ardour, without observing an act of violence or a case of intoxication. During a residence of seven months among them, I never saw but one intoxicated; though the example, alas! is not wanting on the part of foreigners. It is greatly to be deplored that foreigners, particularly Moguls and Jews, tempt their boatmen and labourers to drink ardent spirits, and have taught a few to hanker after it.

During my whole residence in the country, I never saw an immodest act or gesture in man or woman. The female dress certainly shocks a foreigner by revealing so much of the person; but no women could behave more decorously in regard to dress. I have seen hundreds bathe without witnessing an immodest or even careless act, though, as in the case of woman's dress, the exposure of so much of the person would, with us, be deemed immodest. Even when men go into the water by themselves, they keep on their *pisso*. As to general chastity, my informants differed so greatly that I cannot speak. It is certain, that among the native Christians there has been much trouble produced by the lax morality which prevails in this respect among married people.

Children are treated with great kindness, not only by the mother, but the father, who when unemployed takes the young child in his arms, and seems pleased to attend to it, while the mother cleans her rice, or perhaps sits unemployed by his side. In this regard of the father, girls are not made secondary, though, as with us, boys are often more valued. I have as often seen fathers carrying about and caressing female infants as male. Infanticide, except in very rare cases by unmarried females, is utterly unknown. A widow with children, girls or boys, is much more likely to be sought again in marriage than if she had none. The want of them, on a first marriage, is one of the most frequent causes of polygamy.

Children are almost as reverent to parents as among the Chinese. They continue to be greatly controlled by them, even to middle life; and the aged, when sick, are maintained with great care and tenderness. Old people are always treated with marked deference, and in all assemblies occupy the best seats among those of their own rank.

They are called an inquisitive people, and may be more so than other orientals, but I saw no particular evidence of it. Perhaps much of what travellers call inquisitiveness is no more than the common form of salutation. Instead of "How do you do?" their phrase is, "Where are you going?" They certainly seem fond of news, but not less fond of their own old customs, to which they cling with great tenacity.

Gravity and reserve are habitual amongst all classes; caused probably by the despotic character of the government and the insecurity of every enjoyment. Men are seldom betrayed into anger, and still less seldom come to blows. The women are more easily provoked, and vent their spleen with the most frantic violence of voice and gesture, but do not strike. Both sexes utter in

their quarrels, in default of profane oaths, of which their language is happily destitute, such obscene expressions as can scarcely be conceived; and not content with applying them to their adversary, they heap them upon his wife, children, and parents. They are certainly far from being irritable, and one daily witnesses incidents, which among us would excite instant strife, pass off without a sign of displeasure.

Gratitude is a virtue of great rarity. They never, on receiving a present or any other favour, make any acknowledgment; nor is there any phrase in the language equivalent to "I thank you." Those who have associated much with Christians, and especially Christians themselves, are exceptions to the general rule. These, and whoever else wish to express thankfulness, use the phrase, "I think it a favour," or "It is a favour." Buddhism necessarily tends to suppress gratitude by keeping up the constant sense of mercenariness. If a man does another a favour, he supposes it to be in order to obtain merit, and seems to feel as though he conferred an obligation by giving the opportunity.

Thieving and pilfering are common, but perhaps not more so than in other countries; and much less so than we might expect, considering the frail and accessible nature of their houses. These crimes, too, are for the most part perpetrated by a few of the basest sort, and cannot be regarded as stamping the character of the nation. The inadequacy of the government to the protection of the people makes it surprising that criminal offences are not more common. Sometimes gangs of robbers circumvent a house, and while some plunder it, others preclude all aid. Boats are very frequently robbed, as the offenders then are not easily traced. Murder not unfrequently accompanies these depredations.

Lying, though strictly forbidden in the sacred books, prevails among all classes. They may be said to be a nation of liars. They never place confidence in the word of each other, and all dealing is done with chicanery and much disputing. Even when detected in a lie, no shame is manifested; and unless put on oath which a Burman greatly dreads, no reliance whatever can be placed on the word of any man. Of course there are honourable exceptions to this general character, as there are in the other vices.

Never, perhaps, was there a people more offensively proud. From the monarch, who adopts the most grandiloquent titles he can invent, to the pettiest officer, every man seems bloated with self-conceit. Accustomed to conquest under every king since Alompira, and holding all the adjacent tribes in vassalage, they carry themselves in a lordly manner. The meanest citizen seems to feel himself superior to the Peguans, Karens, Tors, &c., around him. Gradations of rank are most minutely and tenaciously maintained, and are signified in every thing. Houses, dress, betel-box, water-goblet, cap, umbrella, horse-equipments, &c., are all adjusted by rule. To ride on an elephant is the privilege only of royalty and high office, though often granted as an indulgence to others. The king alone, and his immediate family, use a white umbrella; the next have them gilded; the next red or fringed, next green, &c. Subdivisions of these grades are marked by the number of umbrellas of each particular colour. Thus one has twenty, another ten, another eight, and so downwards.

The very language in which common actions are mentioned, is made to minister to this nicety. Thus there are three or four ways to speak of every thing, such as eating rice, walking out, sleeping, speaking, dying, one of which is always used of the king, another of priests, another of rulers, another of common persons. It would be an insult to use a lower phrase than the person is strictly entitled to, though a higher one is sometimes used as a sign of special respect. The same difference is made in the words for walking abroad, and many more.

This haughtiness is manifested as grossly to foreign ambassadors as is done in China. They are treated as suppliants and tribute-bearers. It has generally been

contrived to have them presented on the great "beg-pardon day," which occurs once in three months, when the nobles are allowed an audience with the king, and lay at his feet costly presents.

Both their religion and government contribute to this pride. Holding it as certain that they have passed through infinite transmutations, they are sure they must have been highly meritorious in former states of existence to entitle them to be human beings, who are but little lower than Nats, and stand the highest possible chance for heaven.

Burmans seem particularly addicted to intrigue and chicanery. The nature of the government tends to this, as will be seen in a subsequent chapter. In dealing with Europeans, they are also tempted to such practices by consciousness of ignorance, and by having often been shamefully overreached. But while evasiveness and subtlety are discernible in all their intercourse with government men and foreigners, those of the same village seem to do business in good faith; and when a ruler or European has established a character for fair and punctual dealing, he is seldom deceived by those in his employ.

That polished suavity of manners which so strikingly characterises Hindus, even of low caste, is wholly wanting among the Burmans. They have nothing which resembles a bow, or the shaking of hands. When one is leaving a house, he merely says, "I am going," and the other replies, "Go." On receiving a gift or a kind office, an acknowledgement is scarcely ever uttered or expected. When great reverence is intended, the palms of the hands are put together, and thus raised to the forehead, adoringly, as in worship; but this, of course, rarely occurs, except in addressing superiors, and is then never omitted.

In general they are uncleanly. Some regard, to be sure, ought to be had to the light fabrics they wear. If we wore a white jacket as long as we do one of black bombazine, it would look filthy enough. Yet it is not more clean. Burmans are fond of appearing neat, and the better classes, when seen abroad, are generally very tidy. But their skin, their hair, and their houses, are decidedly slovenly. Persons are always seen bathing at the river or public wells, but the proportion to the whole population is very small. Very little is accomplished towards removing the filth from their bodies by their daily ablutions, as they seldom use soap, and their skin is generally more or less moistened with oil. Few are without vermin in their heads, and washing common clothes is done only at very distant intervals.

This brief delineation of character may serve to show how distorted and partial are the views which mere theorists take of heathen society. Formerly, it was the fashion to ascribe the greatest purity and dignity to an uncivilised and primitive state of manners, and to expatiate on the crimes, follies, and effeminacy, of more artificial and polished communities. More recently, it has been the fashion to consider all who have not received our customs, and our religion, as sunk in degradation, devoid of every moral and natural excellence, and destitute of every species of human happiness. The truth, as to Burmah at least, lies between these extremes.

Women probably have their place assigned them as correctly in Burmah as in any other nation. Their intercourse is open and unrestricted, not only with their countrymen but with foreigners. The universal custom is to give them the custody of their husbands' cash; and by them is done the chief part of all buying and selling, both in shops and in the bazaar. They clean rice, bring water, weave, and cook; occasionally assisting in the management of a boat or the labours of the field. But hard work, of all kinds, the universal custom assigns to men. They are by no means denied education, nor is any impediment placed in the way of their attaining it; but the monastic character of the schools prevents admission there. Private schools for girls are not uncommon in large places. Females of the higher classes do not contemn industry, and affect

the languid listlessness of some orientals. They furnish their servants with useful employment, over which they preside with attention. A British ambassador, when formally presented to the mother of the queen, observed in one of the galleries three or four looms at work, operated by the maidens of her household. Such a fact reminds us of the occupations of Greek ladies, as intimated in the advice Telemachus gives Penelope, in Homer's *Odyssey*:—

"Retire, oh queen! thy household task resume;
Tend, with thy maids, the labours of the loom.
There rule, from public care remote and free:
That care to man belongs."

Burmans cherish none of those apprehensions respecting surplus population, which dishonour some countries in Europe. Like the Chinese, they deem the increase of subjects the glory and strength of the throne. Hence their readiness to have foreigners marry Burman women. Hence, too, they are not allowed to leave the kingdom, nor are the female progeny of mixed marriages. Every ship is searched before leaving the country, and heavy penalties would be incurred by the attempt to smuggle away any female.

Marriages are not often contracted before puberty, and are consummated without the sanction of priests or magistrates. Parents do not make matches for children; and every youth looks out his own companion. As in more civilised countries, however, this reasonable boon is denied the children of royal blood. Among common people, when a young man has made his choice, he declares himself to the mother, or some friendly matron; and if there be no objection, he is permitted to frequent the house, and something like a regular courtship takes place. He continues his intimacy till all parties are agreed, when he is admitted to eat with the daughter, and sleep at the house. He is then her husband, and the neighbours gradually ascertain the fact. The ratification of marriage consists in eating out of the same dish. Whenever this is seen, marriage is inferred: indeed, if it can be proved, they are married, and must live as husband and wife. After marriage, the young man must reside with his wife's parents three years, three months, and three days, serving them as a son. If he choose not to do this, and the bride be willing to leave her parents' home, he must pay them sixty teals; and if, at a subsequent stage of his domestication, he choose to depart, he pays such a proportion as can be agreed on.

Among the higher classes, marriages are more ceremonious. On the wedding day, the bridegroom sends to his intended suits of apparel and jewellery. Mutual friends assemble with him at the house of the bride, where a liberal entertainment is given. The hands of the couple are solemnly joined, in the presence of the company, and they partake out of the same dish a little pickled tea.

Polygamy is authorised by law, but is exceedingly rare, except among the highest classes. The original wife generally retains pre-eminence, and the others perform subordinate duties in the house, and attend her when she goes abroad.

Divorces are shockingly common. If both parties agree on the measure, they have only to go before a magistrate, and declare their desire, when he grants the separation, without any further ceremony than requiring them to eat pickled tea before him, as was done at their marriage. If one party seek to put away the other, more trouble and expense is requisite. A process of law must be commenced, and a regular trial had. It is therefore seldom attempted. Women may put away their husbands in the same manner, and with the same facilities, as husbands put away wives. Each party, in all divorces, is at liberty to marry again. According to the written law, when a man and wife separate by mutual consent, the household goods are equally divided, the father taking the sons, and the mother the daughters.

Instead of the expensive mode of putting away a

husband or wife which common law furnishes, a much easier is often resorted to with complete success. The parties aggrieved merely turn priests, or nuns; and the matrimonial bond is at once dissolved. They may return to secular life at any time, and marry another; but for appearances' sake, this is generally deferred some months.

In the British provinces, considerable effort has been made to check the frequency of divorces, but without much success.

It will be supposed, from the description given of the salubrious climate and simple diet of the Burmans, that diseases are few, and the people generally healthy. Such is the fact. Life is often prolonged to eighty, and even ninety years, though a person is old at sixty. No general pestilence has ever been known but the cholera, which seldom appears, and then in a milder form than in most other countries.

The principal diseases are fever, rheumatism, consumption, and bowel complaints. Consumption is a common word by which old persons are carried off, but it attacks youth comparatively seldom. Intermitting fevers are scarcely known, but remittent and continued types are very common. The stone and scrofula are almost unknown, but dropsy, and asthma, and hernia, are not uncommon. The small-pox comes round occasionally, and carries off great numbers, especially children. Inoculation has been a good deal resorted to, since the English war; but though great efforts have been made, for twenty years, to introduce vaccination, it has not succeeded. Matter has been brought from Bengal, Madras, England, France, and America, put up in every possible mode, but in vain. Fifteen or twenty healthy persons, in the full course of cow-pox, were sent to Maulmain, a few years since, at the expense of the East India Company, from whom many were vaccinated, but only a few successfully; and from those it could not be propagated again. Leprosy, in several forms, is seen at the great cities, where its victims collect in a separate quarter, and live chiefly by begging—the only beggars in the country. The general form is that which attacks the smaller joints. I saw many who had lost all the fingers and toes, and some both hands and feet. In some cases, the nose also disappears. It does not seem much to shorten life, and is not very painful, except in its first stages. Those with whom I conversed declared that they had not felt any pain for years. In many cases, it ceases to increase after a time; the stumps of the limbs heal, and the disease is in fact cured. I could not hear of any effectual remedy: it seems in these cases to stop of itself. It can scarcely be considered contagious, though instances are sometimes given to prove it so. Persons suffering under it, are by law separated entirely from other society; but their families generally retire with them, mingling and cohabiting for life. The majority of the children are sound and healthy, but it is said frequently to reappear in the second or third generation. Lepers, and those who consort with them, are compelled to wear a conspicuous and peculiar hat, made like a shallow, conical basket. The children, whether leprosy or not, are allowed to intermarry only with their own class.

Cutaneous diseases are common, arising, doubtless, partly from general want of cleanliness, and partly from the frequent checks which perspiration must receive, where so little clothing is worn by day or night. It is thought by the natives that these diseases arise from the habitual and free consumption of fish. The itch is very common. I have seen neighbourhoods where almost every individual was affected. A sort of tetter, or whitish spots, spreading over parts of the body, is exceedingly common, but does not seem to affect the general health. It is of two kinds; one, in which the spots retain sensitiveness, and another, in which they are entirely insensible. The natives regard the latter kind as indicating approaching leprosy.

Ophthalmia is common. Besides the brilliancy of a

tropical sun, from which their light turban in no degree defends the eyes, it is probable that the general practice of keeping new-born infants in rooms but little darkened, and taking them into the open day, may have a tendency to produce this. I never saw a Burman squint. Lues venerea is much more rare than with us, and generally wears a milder form. There are, occasionally, some horrible cases. Of the goitre, said to be common in the Indian Ocean, I never saw a case; nor had any person of whom I inquired.

Among children, worms seem to produce the most frequent and fatal diseases, probably owing to the want of animal food, and the unrestricted use of vegetables and fruits, ripe and unripe. Teething is far less hazardous than with us, and is rarely fatal. The natives scarcely think of ascribing any bad symptoms to the process of dentition.

There are many medical men, but few who are respectable in their profession. As a body, they are the worst of quacks. They are divided into two schools. One is called *Dat*, literally "element." These give no medicine, but operate wholly by regulating the diet. They are in general the most respectable class, and in many cases succeed very well, particularly in fevers, where they allow an unlimited quantity of acidulated drink, particularly tamarind water. The other class is called *Say*, literally "medicine." These go to the opposite extremes, giving enormous doses of the most heterogeneous substances. They sometimes boast that a particular pill is made up of forty, fifty, or sixty ingredients, deeming the prospect of hitting the cure to be in proportion to the number. The medicines are generally of a heating kind, even in fevers. In all the bazaars are stalls of apothecaries, who display a most unimaginable assortment of roots and barks, pods and seeds. I have seen English walnut-shells exhibited prominently; indeed, whatever is astringent, is carefully saved. Mercury and arsenic have long been in use, and are, in general, given with discretion; but nearly all their remedies are drawn from the vegetable kingdom.

Both classes of doctors, occasionally, add conjuring and charms to their other practices, and many medicines are vended to neutralise the effects of these dreaded mysteries. As to anatomy, they know nothing. They indeed make pretensions to this science, and have books upon it; but the sum of their knowledge is, that the human body has 360 bones, 900 veins, 900 muscles, discharges impurities by 9 apertures! &c. Dissection is never thought of.

A favourite treatment, particularly for local pains, is *hni-king*—a practice similar to the champooing of the Hindus, but sometimes performed more roughly. For ordinary pains, the limbs and body are gently squeezed with the hands, or pressed and kneaded. For sharper pains, the elbow is employed, and for extreme cases, operation is performed by standing on the patient with naked feet, and carefully moving about on the part affected. I found the gentler plan a great relief for pain in the bowels, or rheumatism, and exceedingly refreshing after great fatigue. It often proved a delightful soporific, when nothing else would enable me to sleep.

The treatment of small-pox is very like that formerly practised in this country. The air is carefully excluded by curtains, and little or no medicine is given. The skin is occasionally washed with spirits, or the patient bathes in water. The latter plan seems eminently hazardous, but missionaries have not only bathed daily in cold water in every stage of the pustules, with safety, but found it a delightful relief.

The profession of midwifery is confined wholly to women, and it is exceedingly rare that any difficulty occurs. Their practice, however, seems very barbarous. It consists chiefly in champooing the patient, and frequently with the most revolting violence. After delivery, she is roasted before a hot fire for several days, while fresh air is carefully excluded from the apartment. If any difficulty afterwards occurs, it is

attributed to her not having been sufficiently sweated. This roasting exceeds in severity any thing which we should think endurable. The amount of wood allowed for this purpose would suffice the family, in ordinary times, for months.

Funerals are conducted with many demonstrations of grief on the part of immediate relations, or hired mourners. No sooner is a person dead than the nearest female relatives set up loud lamentations, talking the while, so as to be heard far and near. The house is soon filled with the friends of the family, who suffer the relations to vent their grief, while they assume all the necessary cares and arrangements. The body is washed in warm water, and laid out upon a mat or couch, in good clothing, generally white, which is the mourning colour. A coffin is prepared, ornamented more or less, according to station, in which the corpse remains several days, when it is carried in procession to the place of the dead, and there burned, with the coffin. Sometimes the place of the viscera, and parts of the coffin and funeral car, are stuffed with gunpowder, so that, when the conflagration reaches a certain point, the deceased is *blown up* to the Nats!—exploded into heaven! The charges are borne by the friends, who bring to the house money and gifts, amounting sometimes to a considerable surplus. The principal expenses are the customary donatives to priests, who benefit largely on these occasions; but the funeral cars are often costly, and it is usual to give alms to the poor.

Infants are carried to the grave in their basket cradle, suspended from a pole between men's shoulders, with a neat canopy of fringes, drapery, &c. The mother, instead of being dressed up for the occasion, follows weeping, clad in the common and soiled raiment, worn during her maternal assiduities around the bed of death. They are not burned, but buried; and the cradle, placed upside down on the grave, preserves for a while the identity of the spot, in an appropriate and touching manner. All are buried, without burning, who are under fifteen years of age, or die of small-pox, or in child-birth, or are drowned.

When a rich man dies, the body is cleaned of the internal viscera, and the fluids squeezed as much as possible from the flesh. Honey and spices are then introduced, and the body, encased in bees-wax, remains in the house sometimes for months. When the time for burning arrives, the town wears the appearance of a holiday. Musicians are hired, relations are feasted, and throngs of people attend in their best clothes. The body, when brought out, is placed on a sort of triumphal car, some resisting, and others propelling, with such earnestness and confusion, that the coffin seems in danger of being dropped between the house and the car. One party cries, "We will bury our dead!" the other vociferates, "You shall not take away my friend!" When placed in the car, the same struggle is renewed, and two or three days are spent in this manner; the people manifesting all the jollity of a festival. It is, of course, understood that the resistance must not be serious, and the party who carry out the body ultimately succeed. The rest of the ceremony resembles the funeral of a priest, described in a subsequent chapter. Sometimes the body is carried round about, that the ghost may not find its way back to the house. The remains of great personages, after burning, are collected in small urns of glass, ivory, gold, or silver, and preserved in the family. Persons dying of cholera, which is deemed infectious, are not burned, but must be buried the same day.

The following account of the burning of an At-wea-woon's wife, from Crawford,* gives a very satisfactory idea of a court funeral, which I had no opportunity of seeing.

"The insignia of the At-wea-woon were borne in front; then came presents for the priests, and alms to be distributed amongst the beggars, consisting of sugar-

* Journal of an Embassy to the Court of Ava.

cane, bananas, and other fruits, with garments. An elephant, on which was mounted an ill-looking fellow, dressed in red, followed these. The man in red had in his hands a box, intended to carry away the bones and ashes of the deceased. This, it seems, is an ignominious office, performed by a criminal, who is pardoned for his services. Even the elephant is thought to be contaminated by being thus employed, and for this reason an old or maimed one is selected, which is afterwards turned loose into the forest. A band of music followed the elephant; after which came a long line of priestesses, or nuns, all old and infirm; then came ten or twelve young women, attendants of the deceased, dressed in white, and carrying her insignia. The state palanquins of the deceased and her husband; the bier; the female relations of the family, carried in small litters, covered with white cloths; the husband's male relations on foot, dressed in white, followed in order. The queen's aunt, the wives of the Woon-gyee, the At-wen-woon's, and Woon-dauks, with other females of distinction, closed the procession.

The body was conveyed to a broad and elevated brick terrace, where it was to be burnt. We assembled on this to see the ceremonies to be performed. The coffin, which was very splendid, was stripped of the large gold plates with which it was ornamented; and the class of persons whose business it is to burn the bodies of the dead, were seen busy in preparing the materials of the funeral pile. This is a class hereditarily degraded, living in villages apart from the rest of the inhabitants, and held to be so impure that the rest of the people never intermarry with them. By the common people they are called *Thuba-rajá*, the etymology of which is uncertain; but their proper name is *Chandala*, pronounced by the Burmans *Sandala*. This is obviously the Sanscrit name of the Hindoo outcasts. The Chandalas, united with the lepers, beggars, and coffin-makers, are under the authority of a wun, or governor; hence called *Le-so-wun*, or 'governor of the four jurisdictions.' He is also occasionally called *A'-rwat-wun*, which may be translated, 'governor of the incurables.' This person is by no means himself one of the outcasts, but, on the contrary, a dignitary of the state. Like all other public functionaries, he has no avowed salary, but draws his subsistence from the narrow resources of the degraded classes whom he rules. Their villages are assessed by him in the usual manner; and being invested with the administration of justice over these outcasts, he draws the usual perquisites from this resource. A considerable source of profit to him also is the extortion practised upon the more respectable part of the community. The scar of an old sore or wound will often be sufficient pretext to extort money from the individual marked with it, to enable him to escape from being driven from society. If a wealthy individual have a son or daughter suffering from leprosy, or a disease which may be mistaken for it, he will have to pay dearly to avoid being expelled, with his whole family, from the city. The Chandalas, or burners of the dead, were represented to me as having originated in criminals condemned to death, but having their punishment commuted. They differ from the *Taone-m'hu* in this—that the punishment of the former descends to their posterity, whereas that of the latter is confined to the individual.

In a short time, the mourners, consisting of the female relations and servants of the deceased, sat down at the foot of the coffin, and began to weep and utter loud lamentations. Their grief, however, was perfectly under control; for they ceased, as if by word of command, when the religious part of the ceremony commenced. It sometimes happens that, when the families of the deceased have few servants or relations, hired mourners are employed for the occasion. The first part of the office of the burners was to open the coffin, turn the body prone, bend back the lower limbs, place six gilded billets of wood under its sides, and four over it. The *rahans*, or priests, had hitherto neither joined the procession nor taken any share in the funeral rites,

but were assembled in great numbers under a shed at no great distance. The high-priest, or *Sare d'hau*, and another priest, now came forward, and, along with the husband, took in their hands the end of a web of white cloth, of which the other was affixed to the head of the coffin. They sat down, and the friends and principal officers of government joined them. The priest, followed by the assembly, with their hands joined, muttered the following prayer or creed, namely: 'We worship Boodh'; 'We worship his law'; 'We worship his priests'; and then repeated the five commandments—'Do not kill'; 'Do not steal'; 'Do not commit adultery'; 'Do not lie'; 'Do not drink wine.' The husband poured water upon the cloth from a cocoa-nut shell, pronouncing, after the priest, these words: 'Let the deceased, and all present, partake of the merit of the ceremonies now performing.' The assembly pronounced the words, 'We partake'; or, 'We accept.' The pouring of water upon the ground is considered by the Burmans the most solemn vow. It is as if it were calling the earth to witness, or rather the guardian Nat, or tutelary spirit of the place, who, it is supposed, will hold the vow in remembrance, should men forget it. Two other priests followed the first, repeating the same, or similar prayers and ceremonies. After this, the company retired to some distance, and fire was set to the funeral pile. Notwithstanding the pomp and parade of this ceremony, it was, upon the whole, not solemn, and indeed, in all respects, scarcely even decorous. The persons not immediately concerned in the performance of the funeral rites, laughed and talked as at a common meeting; and the solemnity of the occasion seemed to affect no one beyond the husband, the son, and the female relations."

Among the chief amusements are the drama, dancing, tumbling, music, athletic feats, and chess. The first four of these, as with other nations, are generally connected in one exhibition. The dramatic representations are rather respectable; though the best performers are generally Siamese, who, in these matters, are said to excel all others in India. The performances are always open to the public, generally under a temporary canopy, extended over the street; and in passing, I sometimes stopped a few moments, but not long enough to understand the plot. The dresses are modest, but showy, and apparently expensive. Symmes pronounces the dialogue to be "spirited, without rant, and the acting animated, without being extravagant."

Clowns, harlequins, and buffoons, whose performances are not different from our own, fill up the intervals between the acts. Theatres are not established at any appropriate building. The actors are always perambulatory, and perform at the sole expense of persons giving an entertainment.

The dancing is the reverse of ours; being performed with very slow and stately movements, and less with the feet than with other parts of the body. The dancer walks round the stage, extending his arms, and placing himself in every possible attitude. The head, arms, back, wrists, knees, and ankles, are strained this way and that, keeping time to loud music. No figures or combinations are attempted, but each dancer makes gesticulations, according to his own ideas of gracefulness. Males and females do not dance together; indeed, there are scarcely any female dancers, the men assuming female costume for the occasion. Their long hair, done up *à la femme*, makes the deception so complete, that strangers are confident they are females. The English practice of dancing, *one's self*, for amusement, is quite astonishing in all parts of India. The effort seems downright drudgery, and the more absurd as they can have it done for them better, and yet so cheap, by those whose profession it is! I have often been watched with astonishment while walking backward and forward on the shore, when my boat was moored for the night. They are amazed that a man who might sit, should choose to walk, or that, if able to lie down, he should choose to sit.

The boxing differs little from similar abominations in England, except in being conducted with far less barbarity. The first appearance of blood terminates a contest.

Cock-fighting is very prevalent in some parts of the country. The fowls are of extraordinary courage, and the spurs are armed with gaffles. Engagements of this kind may be seen daily in the streets.

Foot-ball is very common, and played with great skill. The ball is a hollow sphere, of split ratan, from six to ten inches in diameter, which, being perfectly light, is thrown high in air at each stroke. The object is to keep it aloft. It is struck not only with the instep, but with the head, shoulder, knee, elbow, heel, or sole of the foot, with almost unerring precision. This is certainly a remarkable amusement for sedentary orientals, and seems to be derived from the active Chinese, whom I have seen at this game in several other parts of the east.

Cheess is common, especially among the better classes. It is in some sort sanctioned by the sacred books; at least, instances are there recorded of celestial personages having played at the game. The board is like ours; but instead of a queen, they have a prime minister, whose moves are more restricted.

All games of chance are strictly forbidden by their religion, and may be said to be generally avoided. Several such games are, however, in use. One of these is played with covies thrown into a bowl, and seems to be the same practised by schoolboys in America, called *props*. It prevails extensively, and the jingling of the shells may often be heard all night. I several times saw dominoes played. Card-playing is by no means unknown, though less general than many other games. The card is about the size of ours, but the pack is more numerous and more beautiful. I had one offered me for sale for about twenty dollars, which had elaborate paintings on every card.

The people may be said to be addicted to music, though few are skilful in producing it. The common street music is horrible; but among the great men I found several performers, who showed not only great skill but genuine taste. It is remarkable that all their tunes are on a minor and plaintive key, abounding in semitones and sharps.

Their variety of instruments is not large, and, I think, are all specified in the following enumeration:—

The *Morung*, or gong, is a sort of bell, shaped like that of a clock, or a shallow wooden bowl with the edge turned in, composed of tin, bismuth, and copper. It is evidently borrowed from the Chinese, though made by themselves. It is of various sizes, from a diameter of three or four inches to that of twenty or thirty. It is struck with a mallet covered with rags or leather, and produces a deep, solemn tone, not unpleasant.

The *Pau-ma-gyee*, or drum, is not unlike our great hand-drum, but much heavier, being made, as all their drums are, of solid wood excavated. The parchment is stretched by the same arrangement.

The *Tseing*, or *S'hing*, or *Boundaw*, is a collection of small drums, suspended round the inside of a richly carved frame of wood, about three feet high. They regularly diminish in size from that of a two-gallon measure to that of a pint. The player sits within the circle, and with his hands produces a rude tune or accompaniment. Drum-sticks are not often used. In the full band the boundaw is never omitted.

The *Megoun*, or *Me-kymung*, is a guitar, in the shape of a crocodile, with the strings extending from shoulder to tail, supported by a bridge in the centre, and played with the fingers.

The *Soung* is a harp, and resembles that used in Wales, but much smaller, and less perfect. At one end of a hollow base an arm rises with a full curve, to which the strings being fastened, it gives them different lengths. The performer gives semitones by applying the finger of the left hand, occasionally, near the end of a string, which has the effect of shortening it. He per-

forms, however, in general, with both hands. I have heard really delightful music from this instrument. It is of various sizes, from two to four feet long.

The *Tey-au*, or *Ta-yaw*, is a violin, with two or three strings, played with a bow. The belly is sometimes carved out of a solid piece. The tone is far from being pleasant.

The *Kyay-uyng* is a collection of twelve or sixteen small gongs, set either in a square or circular frame, varying in their tones according to a just scale. They are struck with small sticks an inch in diameter and six or seven long, covered with cloth. From this instrument, also, accompanied by the voice, I have heard very sweet music, particularly when performed upon by the Meawade Woongyee at Ava. It is an instrument common to all Farther India, and deserves to be introduced into Europe.

The *Kyay-Kauk*, called by Symmes *Kyezoup*, is a similar instrument, differing only in the form of the frame in which the gongs are fixed.

The *Pa-to-lah* is a row of flat pieces of bamboo, the largest two inches broad, and twelve or fifteen long, placed on horizontal strings, and struck with a little hammer in each hand. It is very ancient, and has doubtless given rise to our instrument resembling it, made of pieces of glass.

The *Pay-loay* is a sort of hautboy. The sound is that of an inferior flute. The mouth-piece is like that of a clarinet.

The *Huck* is a clarinet without keys, the end opening very wide, like a trumpet. The sound is keen and shrill. It is always in the public bands of music, but I never heard pleasant tones from it.

It is remarkable that Burmans are entirely ignorant of whistling. I have seen them stare intently on a person who did so, and saying to one another, in surprise, "Why! he makes music with his mouth!"

The manufactures of this country are by no means contemptible, and many trades are carried on skilfully, particularly in large cities.

Ship-building, on European models, is conducted on an extensive scale at Rangoon. Colonel Franklin computes that, from 1790 to 1801, 3000 tons were built thus in that city. The cost of such vessels is a third less than at Calcutta, a half less than at Bombay. Native vessels are very numerous, owing to the absence of roads, and the great size and number of the water-courses. These are very ingeniously constructed, and admirably adapted to inland navigation, though utterly unlike any thing seen in this country. Some of them are of two hundred or two hundred and fifty tons burden. The canoes are often large enough to carry eight or nine tons. In excavating these, they do not first remove half the tree, but open only a narrow groove, and, after the excavation, widen it by fire. A single log thus makes a boat seven or eight feet wide. When opened to this extent, it is common to add a board, a foot wide, round the edge.

Good earthenware is made in several parts of the empire, some of which is exported. It consists, for the most part, of water-jars and cooking utensils, of various sizes, generally unglazed. These are said to be the best made in India, and are very cheap. A jar the size of a common dinner-pot costs but about three cents. Some of them are the largest I ever saw, and contain from sixty to one hundred gallons, thick, black, and well glazed.

The lamps are of earthenware, about eight inches high, much on the ancient classical model. The wick is the pith of a twig.

They make no porcelain, and indeed need very little, their utensils of turned wood, and their lacerated cups and boxes, answering the purpose. Specimens of this lacerated ware have been sent home by many of the missionaries. They are first woven, like a basket, of fine split ratan, and rendered water-tight by successive layers of varnish. The figures are scratched on with a sharp style, and coloured by spreading on paint, which

abides in these traces, but is wiped off with a cloth from the smooth surface. Of these boxes, &c., there is a great variety, some large enough to contain a bushel. Those about four inches in diameter, and the same depth, are generally used as con-boxes. The best of this ware is made by the Shyans.

Jewellery is made at all the principal places, but it is rare that any thing of much taste and beauty is produced in this way. Embossing and filigree work form their chef-d'œuvres; and some specimens which I brought home would do honour even to a Chinese. One of these is a silver box, such as is used for the tempered quicklime in con; another is a cocoa-nut shell, on which are the twelve signs of the zodiac, according to their names and ideas. I have never seen more beautiful embossing than these present. Gems are beautifully cut and polished.

In gilding they certainly excel; putting on the leaf with great precision, and making it resist dampness. No European picture-frames, though kept with the greatest care, withstand the long and pervasive damp of the rainy season. But these artists make their gilding endure not only in the house, and on the iron tees of pagodas, but even when spread over common mortar on the outside of a building. To give both smoothness and tact, they use nothing but the common thitsay (literally "wood-oil") of the country, which is laid on repeatedly, like successive coats of black paint.

The assayers of precious metals are expert and exact; and as money goes by weight, and is therefore constantly getting cut to pieces, and alloyed, these persons are numerous. I saw a couple of them at work in the Rangoon custom-house. A small furnace is set in the earth, urged by a double bellows, made of two large bamboos. From each bamboo a small tube near the bottom conveys the air directly to the fire. The melted metal is cast into cakes, weighing two or three dollars, and thus passes into circulation, to be again cut into pieces as occasion may require.

Cotton and silk goods are made, in sufficient quantity to supply the country. Some of them are fine and beautiful; but in general they are coarse and strong, and always high-priced. In getting the seed from the cotton, they universally use a small and ingenious machine, of which a good idea may be got from the picture. It consists of



Cleaning Cotton.

Two small cylinders, in contact, one of which, moved by a crank, turns the other; the cotton is drawn through, and leaves the seed behind. One person cleans thus ten viss, or thirty-six pounds per day. About two-thirds of the weight is left in seed. The seeds, sprinkled with oil, are used for torches at festivals, &c., in the open air. The whole process of making cotton and silk goods from the raw material, is managed by women. The spinning-wheel is like ours, only smaller, and without legs, as the people sit on the floor. In preparing the rolls, they have nothing like cards, and after whipping it fine with a furrier's bow, they form the rolls with their fingers.

Their loom differs in no respect that I could discover from our common loom in America, except that for foot-paddles they have rings or stirrups, in which the feet are placed. When figures are to be introduced, however, the mechanism is ingenious, and the labour very tedious. The colours for this purpose are each on a separate bobbin, or shuttle, passed back and forth with the finger, as the weaving advances. In this manner, the stripes have both warp and woof of the same colour, like ribbons put together. Sometimes a more curious process is adopted, which carries the figure aside into other stripes, in a manner which no British loom could imitate. To comb the warp they use the fruit of the Sahtha, a strong grass, eight or ten feet high, with jagged, thorny leaves. The fruit is the size of an ostrich egg, having a shell like a young pine

bur. This being removed, leaves a sharp, strong hair, which makes an excellent brush for the purpose.

The process of dyeing is well understood, and the colours beautiful and various; but, probably for want of proper mordants, or from frequent wetting and strong sun, they are apt to be transient. The colours of silks, however, are permanent.

Near Summei-kyoung saltpetre is obtained; and the principal occupation of many of the inhabitants of that region is the manufacture of gunpowder. This is of pretty good quality, but the process of making it I had no opportunity of seeing. In making fire-works, which are liberally used on public occasions, particularly rockets, they display great ingenuity. Some of them are of incredible magnitude. I have seen some from eight to twelve feet long, and four to seven inches in diameter. They are sometimes still larger. Cox declares that when he was at Ava, he saw some made which contained 10,000 pounds of powder each. If such were the fact, which seems impossible, the powder must have been exceedingly weak. Large rockets are made of a log of mahogany, or other tough wood, hollowed out, and well hooped with strong ratans or thongs of raw hide.

Iron ore is smelted in several districts, and forged into implements at all the principal places. But they cannot make steel, and receive that article from England, by way of Bengal. Their chief tool, and one used for all manner of purposes, from the felling of a tree to the paring of a cucumber, is the dah. The handle is like that of a cleaver, and the blade like a drawing-knife. It is also a prominent weapon, and when made for this purpose, is somewhat more long and slender.

Brass is compounded and wrought with more skill than is shown in almost any other of their manufactures. A good deal is made in sheets, and wrought into water-vases, drinking-vessels, spittoons, &c. The latter are always of one form, namely, that of a vase with a very wide top.

In casting bells, Burmah transcends all the rest of India. They are disproportionately thick, but of delightful tone. The raised inscriptions and figures are as beautiful as on any bells I have seen. They do not flare open at the mouth, like a trumpet; but are precisely the shape of old-fashioned globular wine-glasses, or semi-spheroidal. Several in the empire are of enormous size. That at Mengoon, near Ava, weighs, as the prime minister informed me, 333,000 viss—more than 330,000 pounds! It seems almost incredible; but if any of my readers, interested in such matters, will make a computation for themselves, they will find it true. The bell, by actual measurement, is twenty inches thick, twenty feet high, including the ear, and thirteen feet six inches in diameter.* The weight was ascertained by the Burmans, before casting, and its bulk in cubic inches proves them correct. It is suspended a few inches from the ground, and, like their other great bells, is without a tongue. That at Rangoon is not much smaller. It will be recollected that the largest bell in the United States does not exceed 5000 pounds. The Great Tom, at Oxford, in England, is 17,069 pounds, and the famous but useless bell at Moscow is 444,000 pounds.

Gongs are made at or near Ava, but I could not see the process. Kettles, ornaments, images, &c., are nicely cast at the capital.

Two kinds of paper are made by Burmans. One is a thin, blackened pasteboard, made of macerated cane, and used for writing upon with a pencil of soap-stone. From this the writing may be removed with a sponge, as from a slate. Sometimes, though rarely, it is made white, and written on with ink. The other is a thin, but very strong paper, rather fine, and used in the manufacture of umbrellas. English and Chinese papers

* A friend, distinguished as a civil engineer, computed the weight, from this measurement, to exceed 500,000 pounds, supposing the bell-metal to consist of three parts copper, and one part tin.

are sold in the bazaars. The umbrellas are framed of bamboo, and covered with glazed paper, and ornamented inside with flos silk, like a rose on a blanket. They cost from twenty-five to fifty cents a-piece, and will last two or three seasons. I saw various manufactories of them in the upper cities; but the seaboard is chiefly supplied from China, by way of Penang.

Along the coast, salt is made to a considerable extent; but solar evaporation, so far as I could learn, is not resorted to. It is a monopoly of government, and yields a considerable revenue. The process is hasty and imperfect, and so conducted that little or nothing can be done but in the months of February, March, and April. Each manufacturer pays a tax of about forty ticals, without reference to the extent of his works. The article, though thus taxed, is but half the price, or less, which it costs, when cheapest, in Bengal, seldom averaging more than fifty cents per bushel.

The manufacture of marble is almost confined, as has been stated, to images of Gandama. They are made principally at the quarries near Sagaing, a few miles from Ava. The export of these idols is prohibited, but some may be obtained from the Tenasserim provinces.

Glass is not made at all; nor do the habits of the people require it. Good cordage, even to large cables, is made of coir, or coya, the bark of the cocoa-nut tree. Fishing-nets and small cordage are truly beautiful. Sandal-makers are numerous, and their work handsome and durable; but boots and shoes, in our mode, they cannot make. Foreigners, however, find no difficulty in getting them made by Chinese, who live in all the towns, and make almost any thing if the pattern be furnished.

CHAPTER IV.

Government. Orders of Nobility. Grades of Community. Magistracy. Laws. Division of Property.

THE monarch is absolute. Custom and convenience require him to ask counsel of the nobles touching important matters, but he is not bound to adopt it. Indeed, he often treats his courtly advisers with contempt, and sometimes with violence, even chasing them out of his presence with a drawn sword. On a late occasion, for a very slight offence, he had forty of his highest officers laid on their faces in the public street, before the palace wall, and kept for hours in a broiling sun, with a beam extended across their bodies. He is, however, seldom allowed to know much of passing events, and particularly of the delinquencies of particular officers, who are ever ready to hush up accusations by a bribe to their immediate superior. No office, title, or rank, except that of the king, is hereditary. Promotion is open to all classes.

Next in rank to the royal family are the woon-gyees (from woon, *governor*, and gyee, *great*), or public ministers of state. Of these there are commonly four, but sometimes five or six, forming a court or council, which sits daily in the lô-dan. His majesty is sometimes, though rarely, present at the deliberations. Royal acts are issued, not in the king's name, but in that of this council. Causes of every kind may be brought here for decision.

Below these are the woon-douks (from woon, *governor*, and douk, *prop*), or assistant woons, who attend at the lô-dan, and express their opinions. They have no right to vote, but may record their dissent. They co-operate in carrying into execution great matters of state policy, and are often exceedingly influential.

Of about the same grade, but rather inferior, are the a-twen-woons (from a-twen, *inside*, and woon, *governor*), of whom there are generally from four to six. These constitute the cabinet, or privy council, and have access to his majesty at all times. They do not act publicly as king's officers, nor sign imperial documents, but are in daily session in a room near the palace. Their influence with the king procures them great respect, and many bribes.

There are six or eight government secretaries, called sa-redau-gyee (*great government writers*), whose business is similar to that of the state secretaries. It is not necessary to describe minutely the other grades of officers. They descend in regular progression, down to the head-man of a hamlet, each exercising arbitrary sway over those next beneath.

The life of men in power is divided between idleness, sensuality, intrigue, and oppression. To their superiors they cannot without danger avoid flattery, fawning, and deceit. From inferiors they derive a maintenance by fraud, deceit, bribery, and violence. General knowledge is beyond their reach, for the books of the country do not contain it. The liberality and intelligence gained from intercourse with foreigners is wanting, for this also they do not have. From first to last, they are, with few exceptions, harpies, who seek only their own advantage, and neither love nor pity the people. The country labours under the curse which Jehovah threatens to send upon a wicked people—"Governors who should be like fire among the wood, and like a torch of fire in a sheaf; who should devour all the people round about, on the right hand and on the left."

Orders of nobility are marked by the *tsa-lo-ay*, or gilded necklace. The particular grade is indicated by the number of chains composing it, which are united at different places by bosses. Three strands of common chain-work indicate the lowest rank; three, of more curious construction, the next above; then come those of six, nine, and twelve, which last is the highest for a subject. Chief princes of the blood wear eighteen, and the monarch himself twenty-four.

The community is, by common estimation, divided into eight classes—the royal family, great officers, priests, rich men, labourers, slaves, lepers, and executioners,* and perhaps some others. Even among these are different degrees of respectability. None of the classes constitute an hereditary caste, except lepers and slaves of pagodas. The latter are the most respectable of all outcasts. All, except slaves and outcasts, may aspire to the highest offices, which are frequently filled by persons of low origin.

The legislative, executive, and judicial functions, are not separated, but a measure of power in each is enjoyed by every officer. Hence arise innumerable and shameful abuses. Having no salary, every government man regards his district, or office, as his field of gain, and hesitates at no measures to make it profitable. Most of the rulers keep spies and retainers, who discover who has money, and how it may be got. Accusations of all sorts are invented, and the accused has no way of escape but by a present. Real criminals may almost invariably elude justice by a bribe, if it bear some proportion to the magnitude of the offence. Gangs of robbers frequently practise their trade by the connivance of a ruler who shares their gains. One of the native Christians, who had been in the employ of a ruler before his conversion, assured me, that often, on finding some one who had laid up a little wealth, his master would employ some retainer to place a few goods under the intended victim's house by night, in order to bring against him the charge of theft. In the morning it would be loudly proclaimed that this retainer of the great man had been robbed. A general search would ensue, and the goods being soon detected under the victim's house, the evidence would be declared complete. The wretched man, whose only fault was thrift and saving, would be condemned to some severe punishment, and escape only by paying a fine as great as it was supposed he was able to bear.

It would require greater space than can here be spared, to give any correct conception of the general misrule of men in power. We give one other instance. The late war having introduced into Rangoon and

* Executioners are reprieved felons, dead in law, and marked by a tattooed circle on the cheek, and often by the name of their crime tattooed in legible letters upon their breast. They are not allowed to sit down in any man's house, and all intimacy with them is forbidden.

vicinity the Bengal coins, the woon-gyee engal largely in making four-anna pieces, which were really worth but two. They were soon well known, and only passed for their real value. The incensed great man sent the herald about the city, proclaiming that whoever objected to take them at their nominal value, should suffer a specified fine and imprisonment. Business was for a while completely checked, and at length, after making some severe examples, he was obliged to let the people return to *weighing* their money as before.

An absolute monarch being, in fact, proprietor both of his domains and his people, he cannot but see that the number of his subjects, and their prosperity, form his true greatness and honour. Hence, though he may be a bad man, prudence and policy dictate a rule which shall minister to the general good. It seems ever to have been thus in Burmah. The king enacts salutary laws, and views his people with kindness; but sycophants and intriguers pervert his plans, and frustrate his intentions. Around Ava, his personal knowledge, and accessibleness to petition through many avenues, check the movements of unprincipled nobles and spread comparative peace and security. Hence the superior populousness of that vicinity. The following account of the system of provincial administration is extracted from "Crawford's Embassy to the Court of Ava;" that gentleman having had, by several months' intercourse with Burman officers, a better opportunity than myself of ascertaining these points. I allow myself to dwell on this topic, as giving the reader an opportunity of judging of the state of the country and degree of civilisation.

"The country is divided into provinces of very unequal size; these into townships, the townships into districts, and the districts into villages and hamlets, of which the number in each is indefinite. The word Myo [Myu], which literally means a fortified town, is applied both to a province and a township, for there is no word to distinguish them. The province is, in fact, an aggregate of townships; and each particular one derives its name from the principal town within its boundary, being the residence of the governor. The district or subdivision of the township, in like manner, takes its name from the principal village within it. This arrangement somewhat resembles that which prevails in China, although much ruder. The governor of a province is called Myo-wun, and is vested with the entire charge of the province, civil, judicial, military, and fiscal. The Myo-wun commonly exercises the power of life and death; but in civil cases, an appeal lies from his authority to the chief council at the capital. All the public business of the province is transacted in an open hall, called a rung, with the epithet *d'hau*, or royal.

The government of the townships is entrusted to an officer, named a Myo-thu-gyi. These words, commonly pronounced by us, and by Mahomedans, Myo-su-gi, may be interpreted 'chief of the township;' for the word 'thu' means *head*, or *head-man*; the others have been explained. The districts and villages are administered by their own chiefs, named Thu-gys; in the latter instance the word 'rua,' pronounced 'yua,' a *village*, or *hamlet*, being prefixed. These are all respectively subordinate to each other.

No public officer under the Burmese government ever receives any fixed money-salary. The principal officers are rewarded by assignments of land, or, more correctly, by an assignment of the labour and industry of a given portion of the inhabitants; and the inferior ones by fees, perquisites, and irregular emoluments, as will be afterwards explained. Extortion and bribery are common to the whole class.

The executive and judicial functions are so much blended in the Burmese form of administration, that the establishments peculiarly belonging to the latter are not very numerous. At the capital there is a judicial officer of high rank, called the Ta-ra-na-thu-gyi; the principal administration of justice at the capital, at least, appears in former times to have been conducted by this officer, but he seems now to have been deprived

of the greater part of it by the encroachments of the two executive councils. The inducements to this, of course, were the profits and influence which the members of these bodies derived from the administration of justice. The three towns, with their districts, composing the capital, have each their Myo-wun, or governor, and these are assisted in the municipal administration of their respective jurisdictions by officers named Myo-cha-re, commonly pronounced Myo-sayé, meaning 'town scribe.' They are in reality, however, a sort of head constables, and well known as such to all strangers, as the busy, corrupt, and mischievous agents of the local authorities. The palace, from its peculiar importance in Burman estimation, has its own distinct governors, no less than four in number, one to each gate; their name, or title, is Wen-m'hu; they have the reputation of having under their authority each a thousand men. In the municipal or provincial courts there is an officer called the Sit Kai, who is a kind of sheriff or principal conservator of the peace, and in imitation of the councils at the capital, an officer named Na-kand'hau, who discharges the office of public informer. Most of the Burman officers in the provinces, down to the Rua-thu-gyi, or chief of a village, have assessors of their own nomination, called Kung, who take the drudgery off the hands of their chiefs, leaving the decision to the latter. A Myo, or town, it should be observed, is divided into wards, or Ayats, each of which is under the direction of an inferior police officer, called the Ayat-gaung. The most intelligent and active officers connected with the administration of justice, are the Shen-its, or pleaders. These persons are described as being tolerably well acquainted with the law and its forms, and are occasionally useful and industrious. To each court and public officer there are attached a competent number of Na-lains or messengers; and annexed to the principal courts is always to be found the Thaong-m'hu, or executioner, with his band of branded ruffians.

The Myo-thu-gyis and Rua-thu-gyis, or chiefs of townships, districts, and villages, exercise a limited judicial authority within their respective jurisdictions, and are answerable for the conservation of the peace. Appeals, in most instances, lie from their authority to that of the provincial officers. In civil cases, these inferior officers try all causes subject to appeal; but in criminal ones, their authority is limited to inflicting a few strokes of a ratan, and they can neither imprison nor fetter. In all cases of any aggravation, it is their duty to transmit the offender to the Thaong-m'hu, sheriff, or executioner of the provincial town. The authority of the chief of the township was, of course, somewhat more extended than that of the district or village, and it rested with him to hear and decide upon causes where the parties belonged to different districts or villages. When the chiefs of towns or villages failed to produce offenders under accusations, they were made to answer the accusation in their own persons at the provincial courts."

The written code, civil and penal, though severe, is, on the whole, wise and good, but is little better than a dead letter. It is principally derived from the Institutes of Menu. This work, of great celebrity among the Hindus, was translated into English by the late Sir W. Jones. It seems to have been received by the Burmans from Arracan, but at what period is not certain. Their translation is called *Dam-a-that*. Every monarch adds to it, or alters, as may please him, and under some reigns it bears little resemblance to the original. For all practical purposes it is almost a nullity, being never produced or pleaded from in courts. Rulers, from highest to lowest, decide causes according to their own judgment, or, more frequently, according to their interest. As a great part of their income is derived from lawsuits, they generally encourage litigation. They receive bribes unreservedly, in open court, and do not hesitate to accept the gifts of both parties. Their oppressions have scarcely any restraint but the fear of ruining their own interest by carrying matters too far. As

to seeking the good of their country, or the promotion of justice, there appears to be no such thing thought of, except perhaps by the king and a few of those immediately about him.

The form of a judicial oath deserves insertion, as a curiosity. It is as follows:—"I will speak the truth. If I speak not the truth, may it be through the influence of the laws of demerit, namely, passion, anger, folly, pride, false opinion, immodesty, hard-heartedness, and scepticism; so that when I and my relations are on land, land animals, as tigers, elephants, buffaloes, poisonous serpents, scorpions, &c., shall seize, crush, and bite us, so that we shall certainly die. Let the calamities occasioned by fire, water, rulers, thieves, and enemies, oppress and destroy us, till we perish and come to utter destruction. Let us be subject to all the calamities that are within the body, and all that are without the body. May we be seized with madness, dumbness, blindness, deafness, leprosy, and hydrophobia. May we be struck with thunderbolts and lightning, and come to sudden death. In the midst of not speaking truth, may I be taken with vomiting clotted black blood, and suddenly die before the assembled people. When I am going by water, may the aquatic genii assault me, the boat be upset, and the property lost, and may alligators, porpoises, sharks, or other sea-monsters, seize and crush me to death; and when I change worlds, may I not arrive among men or nats, but suffer unmixed punishment and regret, in the utmost wretchedness, among the four states of punishment, Hell, Prita, Beasts, and Athurakai.

If I speak truth, may I and my relations, through the influence of the ten laws of merit, and on account of the efficacy of truth, be freed from all calamities within and without the body; and may evils which have not yet come, be warded far away. May the ten calamities and the five enemies also be kept far away. May the thunderbolts and lightning, the genii of the waters, and all sea-animals, love me, that I may be safe from them. May my prosperity increase like the rising sun and the waxing moon; and may the seven possessions, the seven laws, the seven merits of the virtuous, be permanent in my person; and when I change worlds, may I not go to the four states of punishment, but attain the happiness of men and nats, and realise merit, reward, and annihilation." A Burman seldom ventures to take the oath, not only from his terror of its imprecations, but from the expense. Captain Alves* states the following to be the charges in a certain case:—"Administration of the oath, ten ticals; messenger for holding the book over the head, one tical; other messengers, two ticals; recorders, two ticals; pickled tea used in the ceremony, half a tical."

Trial by ordeal is very seldom used, but is not wholly unknown. It is practised in various ways. Sometimes the parties are made to walk into the water, and whichever can hold out longest under the surface, gains the cause. Sometimes it is by trying which can hold the finger longest in hot water or melted lead. A very common mode of punishment is the stocks, used also as a torture to extract confessions or bribes. The instrument resembles the one which is well known in Europe, only that it is so constructed as to raise the feet from the ground, if desired. The accused is thus raised sometimes till his shoulders or head barely touch the floor. In this painful position, he is glad to pay any demands in order to be lowered again. Burman prisons are so insecure as to make it necessary to resort generally to the stocks or iron fetters.

The following notices of Burman laws are deemed important, as throwing light on the character of the people. The wife and children of an absconding debtor are responsible for his debts; but a woman is not required to pay debts contracted by her husband during a former marriage. If a debtor wish to prosecute his creditor for vexatious endeavours to get his pay, his cause cannot be heard by the judge till the debt is first

paid. Where several persons are securities for a debt, each security is responsible for the whole amount, so that the first one the creditor can lay hold of must liquidate the debt. The property of insolvents must be divided equally, without any preference of creditors. Property proved to be lost in any town, must be made good by a tax on the inhabitants, if the thief be not discovered. A man finding lost silver or gold receives, on restoring, one-sixth; if other property, one-third. The eldest son inherits all the arms, apparel, bed, and jewels, of his father; the remainder of the property is divided equally into four parts, of which the widow takes three, and the other children one between them. If a father give one of his sons a sum of money for the purposes of trade, that son returns the capital, without interest, at the death of the father, to be divided with the rest of the inheritance; but the gains are his own. Before a man's property can be divided, the widow must pay all his debts, and give a portion in alms.

The common punishments are, for minor offences, imprisonment, labour in chains, the stocks, and flogs. Then follow flogging, branding, maiming, slavery to pagodas, and death.

Theft is punished by putting the offender in the stocks, where he stays till his friends can raise money enough to appease the great man, besides making restitution. For repeated offences, imprisonment and fetters are added; and the incorrigible, when no longer able to pay fines, are tattooed with a circle on the cheek, or the name of the offence on their breast. Persons thus marked are deprived of all civil rights, that is, become dead in law, and are consigned to the class of executioners.

Capital punishment seldom occurs, and almost exclusively for murder and treason. It is inflicted by beheading, drowning, or crucifixion. The number of executions in the viceroyship of Rangoon is about twenty in a year. Killing a person of the labouring class, in the heat of passion, is punished by a fine of ten slaves, and proportionally up to seventy or 100 slaves, for a person of higher rank. If a man insults another grievously, he must, if able, pay a proper fine; but if very poor, he is to be led through the town with his face smeared with charcoal. A libel is punished by inflicting the same penalty which would have been incurred by the fault unjustly charged upon another. But if the truth of the charge be proved, it is not a libel. Whoever refuses to appear before the judge, loses his cause.

A husband may administer corporal punishment to his wife, for encouraging too great intimacy with other men, neglect of domestic duties, quarrelsomeness, gadding about, meddling too much in the concerns of neighbours, or extravagance. He is first required, however, to admonish her repeatedly in the presence of witnesses. If she still remain incorrigible after a reasonable number of floggings, he may divorce her.

If a man accidentally set fire to a neighbour's house, he is fined one-third the value of his body;* but if he was drunk, or in a violent passion at the time, he must pay the full value of his body. A woman whose husband has gone as a soldier, may marry again if she hear not from him for six years; if he went on business, seven years are required, and if on a religious object, ten. If a woman buy a man and marry him, and afterwards divorce him, he is no longer a slave. If a father sell his child, and afterwards die possessed of property, so much of it as is equal to the price for which the child was sold must be paid to that child, in addition to his share of the inheritance. A slave sent to war and captured, is free if he escape and return. If a master violently beat his slave, his bond debt is reduced one-third. If death ensue, the parents of the slave may claim twice the value of his body; and if there be no parents, that sum is paid to the judge. If a slave abscond from a master known to be cruel, there is no penalty for the person who receives and harbours him. If the master has not been cruel, he may exact full

* Report on Bassein.

* This will generally pay for the house of a common person.

CHAPTER V.

Revenue. Commerce. Currency. Army. Navy. Slavery.
Division of Time. Weights and Measures. Language. Lit-
erature. Degree of Civilisation.

value of the slave's services for the time. If a man permit his runaway slave to be maintained by another during a time of scarcity, he cannot afterwards claim him. A master may not seize his runaway in another village, but must notify the head-man, who shall deliver him up. If a stranger harbour a runaway, knowing him to be such, he is punishable as a thief; but if he be a near relation, there is no penalty.

If a man die insolvent, and charitable people choose to defray the expenses of a regular funeral, they are not chargeable with any of his debts; but if they be particular friends, or distant relations, they must pay one-quarter of his debts; and if near relations, one-half. The head-man of a village or district is held responsible for all robberies committed in his jurisdiction, and must make good the loss, with heavy fines, or produce the offenders.

Changing a landmark is punished by a heavy fine. Debts contracted by betting may be recovered from the loser, but not from his family or heirs. A man hurt in wrestling, or other athletic games, cannot recover damages; but if he be killed, the injurer must pay the price of his body. A woman or a child charging a man with bodily injury, may adduce, as evidence, marks of violence on their persons. But if a man charge a woman or a child in the same manner, such marks are not received as proof, but witnesses must be adduced. An empty vehicle must give place, on the road, to one that is loaded, and if loaded men meet, he who has the sun on his back must give way.

The value of the bodies of men and animals is fixed. Thus a new-born male child is four teals, a female three, a boy ten, a girl seven, a young man thirty, a young woman thirty-five. Of rich persons twice these prices are exacted; and of principal officers still larger sums, rapidly increasing in proportion to rank.

In the provinces held by the East India Company, a salutary change has taken place in the administration of justice, though it is still susceptible of great improvement. The criminal code is nearly like that of Bengal, and the civil is founded on Burman practice, the Dama-that, and the Yesa-that or Raja-that, which last is a collection of decisions and laws made by successive kings. A qualified Burman is connected with every cantchery, who explains provincial customs for the information of the magistrate. The only tax on justice is a charge of ten per cent. on the amount of a suit, paid by the plaintiff, but which is not exacted of the very poor. One rupee is paid for a summons, and half a rupee for each subpoena to witnesses; but these also are remitted to the indigent. Professional pleaders are not allowed, but each party manages his own cause, or gets a friend to do it for him. The trial by jury has been partly introduced, and delights the natives. They deem the office of jurymen honourable, and will accept no pay for their services. Changes also have been made in the mode of taxation, which tend to alleviate the condition of the people, though the entire amount assessed is about as before.

Perhaps no country could have a better system for the division of property. The land is all regarded as belonging to the crown; but any one may occupy as much as he pleases, and in any place not already held by another. He has only to enclose and cultivate it, and it is his. If the boundary be not maintained, or the enclosed space be for several successive years unimproved, it reverts to the king, and may be taken up by any other. Of there are no very large landholders; and it is worth no man's while to hold large unimproved estates.

This system does not in any degree prevent the regular inheritance, sale, or renting of estates, which proceed just as with us. The king himself often purchases lands. Mortgages, leases, &c., are also taken; but a man who loans money on mortgage has the entire use and income of the land or house, instead of a fixed rate of interest, and if not paid in three years, the property is forfeited to the lender, be it what it may.

The revenue of the crown is derived from a tenth of all importations from abroad, tonnage, export duties, a stated tax on every family, and an excise on salt, fisheries, fruit-trees, and petroleum. Except the tax on families, which is generally required in specie, these are taken in kind. Whatever the government is obliged to purchase, is generally paid for in articles so obtained. A small part is exchanged for the precious metals. No tax is levied on lands or personal property. Unmarried men are not taxed, except in bearing their proportion of the assessment on families. The royal treasury is further replenished by fines, escheats, confiscations, presents, the produce of crown lands, and ivory, all of which belong to the king.

Arbitrary assessments are made from time to time on particular provinces, districts, cities, or villages, from which the people have no escape. The royal order for a certain amount is transmitted to the local chief, who proportions at his pleasure the part each family shall pay, and takes care always to levy a larger sum than he is required to transmit. If a few men or boats are required, he is almost sure to call on those whom he knows will pay to be excused, and thus makes it an opportunity for taxing to his own benefit. The same is done when artificers or soldiers are required. Thus the general government is really poor, while the people are oppressed. It of course often happens that individuals assessed for their proportion of these multifarious exactions plead poverty. In such cases, the stocks or the ratan soon extract consent, and often compel persons to sell their little property, or even their children, to satisfy the demand.

All the worst features of this horrible system are seen in the case of the Karens, Toungthoos, Zebains, and other tribes mixed among the Burmans, and treated as inferiors and vassals. These poor creatures are taxed about fifteen teals per family per annum, besides being subject to the exactions above named.

Princes, governors, and other principal officers, are allowed to collect, for their own benefit, the taxes from specified villages or districts, and generally exercise an unbridled spirit of extortion. Lower chiefs have the costs of litigation, &c., for their support, to which they add the profits of shameless bribery. The meanest subordinates contrive to make their posts lucrative; and even the keeper of a city gate expects occasional fees for allowing persons to pass through with their common burdens.

Of course, the welfare of every little province depends greatly on its local ruler. The only remedy, when exactions become intolerable, is to remove into a district more equitably governed. Such a course is necessarily attended with loss and inconvenience; and sooner than resort to it, the people endure much and long. It is, however, by no means uncommon for them to seek this relief. As the grants of district revenues are made by the fiat of the king, and revoked at his pleasure, no great man is sure of continued wealth. The loss of favour at court is attended with the immediate loss of his estates. All the local agents and officers being dependent on their feudal lord, they, too, hold an uncertain tenure. Thus, from highest to lowest, there is no encouragement to attempt the improvement of land or people. In all its ramifications, the government is a system of covetousness.

Among the possessions of the king, we must not omit to notice his elephants. He is regarded as owning all in the kingdom, and has generally from 1000 to 2000 which have been caught and tamed. The white elephant, of which there is now but one, is estimated beyond all price. He is treated like a prince of the blood, and has a suite composed of some of the most prominent officers in the court. Indeed, the vulgar

BURMAH.

actually pay him divine honours, though this is ridiculed by the intelligent.

Burmah has considerable foreign commerce, but wholly carried on in foreign bottoms. The natives, however, perform coasting voyages, which they sometimes extend to Mergui and Chittagong, and, in rare cases, to Calcutta, Madras, and Penang.

The limited extent of sea-coast now left to Burmah, furnishes but two good harbours, namely, Rangoon and Bassein. These are both excellent; but the latter has very little trade, and foreign vessels never go there.

The harbours in the British possessions are inferior to these. Mergui is very safe and easy of access, but very small. Amherst is middling, but approachable only by a narrow channel, which extends across the tide. Ships of 300 tons or more may with caution go up to Maulmain, the channel being well buoyed, and pilots always to be had at Amherst.

The number of clearances of square-rigged vessels from the port of Rangoon amounts to about a hundred annually.

The exports are teak-wood, cotton, ivory, wax, cutch, and stick lac, and in small quantities, lead, copper, arsenic, tin, edible birds' nests, indigo, amber, tobacco, honey, tamarinds, gnapce, gems, sharks' fins, ornament, sapan-wood, and sea-slugs. The nine last named articles are of such limited amount as scarcely to deserve notice. By far the most important item is teak, which is chiefly sent to Calcutta and Madras. The value of this article alone amounted, in former years, to £200,000 per annum. It is now not more than a fifth part of that quantity. About two million pounds of raw cotton is sent to Dacca, where it is used in the manufacture of the fine muslins for which that place has been so celebrated. The Burman collector informed a merchant at Ava, that about thirty million pounds are sent up the Irrawaddy, annually, to China; but Colonel Burney estimates it at about four millions. Nearly four millions per annum are sent to Arracan. None is exported in the seed. The sea-slug is derived from the coasts of Mergui. It is commonly called *Biche de mer*. It is a large marine worm, somewhat resembling a leech, which, when properly cured, is regarded as a great luxury by the Chinese. The mode of curing is to boil them in salt water, and then dry, or perhaps smoke them. There are three principal kinds—black, red, and white. The white sell at ten to twelve dollars per picul (133 pounds), the red for twenty-five dollars, and the black for fifty dollars. Of each of these there are various sizes. Some, when dried, are seven or eight inches long, and one and a half in diameter; others are not larger than a man's finger. The sharks' fins have a skin which is valued for polishing substances, in the manner of fine sand-paper. Their chief value is for the tendons, which are an article of food with the Chinese. They are drawn out and dried, resembling in this state silver wire, and are used in soup, as the Italians use vermicelli. Gnapce is made from prawns, shrimps, or any cheap fish, salted and pounded into a consistent mass. It is frequently allowed to become partially putrid in the process. It is sometimes called in commerce *Balachong*.

An active trade is carried on with China, chiefly by way of Yunnan. Small caravans begin to arrive at Ava from that province, in December. About the 1st of February, the great caravan arrives, and afterwards smaller ones, till the 1st of March. The smaller consist of fifty, a hundred, or two hundred men, and the great one of about a thousand. Each man has several ponies, or mules, sometimes fifteen or twenty, who carry, in panniers, from one hundred to two hundred pounds. Being twenty-five days on the road, the beasts are in low condition. They are guided by large, black, shaggy dogs, some of which go before, and others fetch up stragglers. These are sometimes sold at Ava at from twenty to thirty ticals, but they generally pine away in the hot season, and die.

The Chinese mart, where these caravans stop, is at

Madah, thirteen miles north of Umerapoora, inhabited chiefly by Cassayers. Extensive enclosures are there, in which the fair is opened, while the cattle are sent to graze. They bring raw and floss silk (which the Burmans weave), satins, velvets, crape, cordage, yellow sulphuret of arsenic, tea, spirits, honey, paper, gold leaf, hams, shallow iron pans, sweetmeats, dried fruits, walnuts, chestnuts, and apples. They take back chiefly raw cotton, Bengal opium, British goods, gems, amber, ivory, betel-nuts, sharks' fins, and birds' nests. Many of these merchants avail themselves of the Irrawaddy river, for a considerable distance above Ava. Crawford estimates this interior trade with China to amount to nearly two millions of dollars per annum.

There are several caravans of Shyans, who come annually to the city of Ava, where a large suburb is appropriated. They come and go in troops of fifty or one hundred, from December to March, and amount in the whole to about a thousand. Their goods are brought on bullocks, which are in fine order, and often on their own backs. They bring a few horses, but only for sale, and they are not loaded. Their goods are stick lac, umbrellas, black jackets, cotton cloth of various sorts and colours, lackered boxes (which are far superior to those of Burman manufacture), ground-nuts, sugar, lead, &c. They take back salt, gnapce, dried fish, and betel-nuts.

Monay is a great mart of internal trade, and sends annually to Maulmain a trading caravan, and many cattle for the supply of the British troops. The journey occupies from twenty-five to thirty days. The amount of the trade is about 75,000 rupees per annum.

Considerable inland trade is carried on from one part of the kingdom to another, by boats and waggons.

The lower provinces send up the country salt, rice, dried fish, gnapce, and foreign manufactures; receiving in return petroleum, saltpetre, paper, piece goods, sugar, tamarinds, and various other articles.

In Pegu, a region scarcely equalled in facilities for inland navigation, trade is carried on almost wholly by boats, and few roads exist; mere paths connect the towns and villages. In the upper provinces, which are hilly, and have few boatable streams, good roads are maintained, and merchants transmit their goods from town to town, in waggons drawn by oxen.

The trading vessels on the Irrawaddy are all constructed on the same plan, except those built by or for foreigners. They are long, flat, and narrow, the larger ones being provided with outriggers to prevent their oversetting. Oars and setting poles are almost entirely depended upon to propel them, and tracking is often resorted to, but square sails are spread, when the wind is fair and the water high. Those of the larger sort have one mast, and a yard of great length, on which are suspended as many sails as the case requires, one being slightly attached to the other. Smaller boats have the sail stretched between two bamboo masts fastened to the sides near the bow. Of these, a good idea may be obtained from the cut on page 27. These sails, in very small boats, often consist of the possos of the boatmen.

The waggons and carts are superior in construction to those of Bengal, and some other parts of India. The wheel consists of one strong piece of wood, the length of the diameter, and about two feet wide, through which the axle passes, and the remainder of the rim is made of fellahs.

When used for merchandise, they are well covered with bamboo mats, over which a painted cloth is often spread. A travelling team consists of four or six bullocks, and proceeds about 15 miles a day; a spare bullock or two following, in case of any becoming sick or lame. Merchants generally go in companies, and at night draw up the waggons in a circle, to secure them and their cattle from wild beasts. Within this circle the drivers and their passengers light their fires, dress their food, attend their cattle, tell their romances, and pass the night.

Not the slightest restriction is laid on merchants or

traders from any nation. On the contrary, they are invited and encouraged, and generally accumulate property. They may go and come, or settle in any part of the kingdom.

In the Tenasserim and Arracan provinces, no duties are levied on any articles from any country, and probably will not be for many years. The policy is to open markets for English manufactures, and this is gradually being done, not only in the provinces under their sway, but in adjacent districts, especially the Shyan country round Monay.

The commerce of particular cities and towns, such as Rangoon, Maulmain, &c., is more fully stated in my accounts of those places.

The country has no coinage. Silver and lead pass in fragments of all sizes, and the amount of every transaction is regularly weighed out, as was done by the ancients. (Gen. xxiii. 16. Ezra, viii. 25.) It is cast by the assayers, in thin round cakes, weighing two or three ticals, but is cut up with mallet and chisel, to suit each sale. The price of a thing, therefore, is always stated in weight, just as if we should say, in answer to a question of price, "an ounce," or "a drachm." When an appearance like crystallisation is upon the centre of the cake, it is known to be of a certain degree of alloy, and is called "flowered silver." Of this kind, which is called *Huet-nee*, the tical is worth fifteen per cent. more than the Sica rupee. The *Dyng* has the flowered appearance over all the cake, in larger and longer crystals, and is cast into cakes weighing about twenty ticals, but varies exceedingly in fineness, being of all qualities, from *Huet-nee* to ten per cent. purer. It is assumed to be five per cent. purer.

An inferior kind of silver, even to twenty-five per cent. alloy, circulates freely, for smaller barter. The people, however, are not deceived in its quality, for the degree of purity is detected by them with great readiness, chiefly by the appearance left on the cake at cooling.

Silver, in passing from hand to hand, becomes more and more alloyed, so that, when a man is asked the price of a thing, he says, "Let me see your money!" He then regulates his charge by the quality of the silver, and a piece is chopped off to meet the bill; change, if any, being weighed in lead.

Gold is scarcely used as a circulating medium, being absorbed in gilding sacred edifices, or in jewels. By Burman estimate, gold is eighteen times the value of silver. It often rises to twenty or more, when the people are compelled to obtain it at any price, to pay their tax towards the gilding of some pagoda.

Small payments are made in lead. Each vender in the bazaar has a basket full of this lead. Its general reference to silver is about five hundred to one. It varies exceedingly, however, in its proportion; sometimes fifteen viss of lead is given for a tical, and sometimes only seven or eight, at Ava. In distant parts of the country, where the silver is more alloyed, three or four viss is given for a tical.

The late king, Menderagye, attempted to introduce small silver coin, which he made with a mint establishment imported from England. But he required his ticals to pass for sixty per cent. above their real worth, and the copper for nearly three times its worth. The consequence was a universal stagnation of business; and after urging his law so far as to execute some for contumacy, he was at length obliged to let silver and lead pass by weight, according to their real worth, as before. The people are not anxious for coin. They cannot trust their rulers; they love higgling in bargains; they make a profit on their money, as well as goods, by increasing its alloy; and a numerous class of assayers, or brokers, called *Pwa-zahs* (by foreigners, *Poy-zahs*), subsist by melting up silver, to improve or deteriorate it as they are desired. This they do before the owner's face, and have only the crucible and scorifier for their trouble.

At Rangoon, the Madras rupee circulates generally

for a tical; and along the rivers up to Promé, it is known, and will be received. But at the capital, and throughout the interior, it is weighed, and deemed an inferior silver. In Arracan and the Tenasserim provinces, rupees, pice, and pie, now circulate as in Bengal, and money is scarcely ever weighed.

The common rate of interest, when collateral security is deposited, is two or three per cent. a month; when there is no security, four or five per cent. If the interest become equal to the principal, the debt is cancelled. Creditors, therefore, exact new notes from their debtors every few months, if the interest be not paid.

There is no standing army, though a few men are hired by the month, in some principal places, to bear arms, as a sort of guard. There is no military class in Burmah, probably owing to the religious prohibition of taking life. It is indeed never difficult to raise an army, as each petty ruler is obliged to bring forth his men by conscription; but when raised, it is a mere rabble, destitute both of the spirit and the officers requisite to constitute a respectable force. They march under the same men who rule them in private life, and can seldom have the slightest inducement to leave their homes. There is no cause of exemption from military duty, but bodily incapacity; and every man whose immediate ruler selects him must march. In general, he receives neither pay nor rations, but shares the plunder. But in the late war, the government paid wages and a large bounty. The march of an army through their own country is marked with nearly the same extortions as in a conquered province. Cases of desertion or disobedience are severely punished in the persons of the soldier's family or relations, who, for his misconduct, are spoiled of their goods, sold, or even put to death. Of late years, muskets have been imported in considerable quantities, and some cannon. The former are of the poorest quality, and the latter lie about for the most part without carriages, and are of little consequence.

Burman soldiers are crafty, hardy, and courageous. Though, in the late war, cannon and Congreve rockets robbed them of much of their established character for valour, yet, on all occasions, they behaved with a bravery which British troops have seldom met in the East. Discarding the turban in the hour of battle, they rush rapidly on, with dishevelled hair and fierce gesticulations; and whatever personal courage without proper arms can do, they generally accomplish.

There can scarcely be said to be any navy, as it consists only of long canoes, wholly unfit for sea. These are rowed and fought by the same men. They generally contain forty or fifty men, who sit two on a seat, using short oars, and having their dah beside them. As a river police, they are all-sufficient. Many of these are perfectly gilded, within and without, and even the oars. Some of them are intended to convey the king and royal family, and have handsome canopies, built in the centre or bow, for that purpose.

Slavery exists throughout the kingdom and its dependencies, and of course in the provinces lately ceded to the British. It is produced both by debt and capture. Around Ava, most of the slaves are prisoners of war and their descendants. In other places they are chiefly bond-debtors. A few are annually introduced through a slave-trade habitually carried on along the frontiers. I cannot learn that Burmans themselves engage in this traffic, but they do not hesitate to purchase. Muniporians and Arracanese are brought into Ava, especially on the Siam frontier, where they are often caught and carried across the ill-defined boundary. The entire number of persons brought into bondage by this slave trade is proportionably small. Debtor slaves are numerous in every part of the country. The king's brother told me he estimated their proportion to the rest of the population as one to seven or eight. This might be true at Ava, but I think it much more than the general

average. Persons borrowing money, mortgage themselves when unable to give other security, and become servants to the lender, till the money is paid. The sum borrowed is sometimes very small, perhaps only a few rupees; but this makes no difference in the condition, or in the services required.

In Burmah Proper there is no remuneration towards liquidating the debt; so that the person continues in bondage for life, except the money can somehow be obtained. In the provinces ceded to Britain, it is provided by law, that the debt shall diminish at the rate of four pice (about three cents) per day, by which process freedom is ultimately obtained. The master has power to inflict corporal and other punishments on bond-servants as on other slaves, but not to the extent of drawing blood. They are also bought and sold without their consent, but may change masters at pleasure by obtaining a person to offer for them the amount of the debt. On the sum being tendered by the servant, the master is not at liberty to refuse.

The progeny of servants are free. By the written laws, if a man become father to a male child by his slave, he may keep it, but the woman is thenceforth free. If it be a female child, the father and mother are considered to own but half; and if she pay, or procure to be paid, the other half, the child is necessarily free. But this rule is obsolete; and, by universal custom, a slave who bears to her master a child of either sex is free. If she choose to remain, he is obliged to support her as his wife. Fathers may pledge their wives and children for money borrowed, or in other words, sell them, as the money is often taken up without intention of repayment. The only escape from slavery from life, in such a case, is for the person to obtain by some means the amount due. Such sales are very common, as a man seldom has any other security to give; but in most cases a man redeems his family as soon as he can.

Slaves are not treated with more severity than hired labourers. A state of society where the modes of living are so simple, renders the condition of the slave little different from that of his master. His food, raiment, and lodging, among all the middling classes at least, are not essentially different. Being of the same colour, they and their children incorporate without difficulty with the mass of the people on obtaining freedom. The same fact tends to ameliorate their condition. In fine, their state does not much differ from that of hired servants who have received their wages for a long time in advance. Belonging to persons in the higher conditions does not increase the severity of the bondage; for though the distinction is greater, the services are less. Many slaves live at their own houses, just as other people, but liable to be called on for labour, which in many cases is required only at certain seasons of the year.

In a country where rank is never for a moment forgotten, and where the master has the power of a magistrate over all his dependents, servitude creates a boundary which is in no danger of being passed. The effect is to make the servant, in many cases, the friend and companion of the master, to a degree not ventured upon by masters in countries where employment does not create dependence, and where familiarity may induce assumptions. Still the slaves of a despotic master can never be certain of his favour, and can seldom afford or dare to be honest. They enforce his most unjust exactions as readily as any other commands. From infancy they are trained to craftiness, and all their life serves to confirm this vice.

The slaves to pagodas are in some respects better off than other slaves, or even than common poor people, though it is considered as a condemnation. They become such, chiefly by being given to some pagoda by a great man, as a meritorious offering. Sometimes they are malefactors, whose punishment is thus commuted. More generally they are unoffending inhabitants of some district, whose prince or ruler, for any cause, chooses to make such a donation.

The Burman year consists of twelve lunar months, making the year only 354 days long. To supply this deficiency, a whole intercalary month is introduced every third year. The further rectifications which become necessary, are made, from time to time, by royal proclamation, at the instance of the astronomers. The common era corresponds with our A. D. 639. The year commences about the middle of April, so that the 15th of April 1839, is the first day of their year 1201. In numbering the days of the month, they go no higher than fifteen; that is, from new moon to full, and from full moon to new.

They have four worship-days in a month, namely, new and full moon, and half way between them; so that there is an interval, sometimes of seven days, and sometimes of eight. Without any regard to this arrangement, time is divided into exact weeks of seven days each. What is very remarkable, the days are called from the planets, as are ours. Thus they name the first day of the week from the sun, the second from the moon, third from Mars, fourth from Mercury, fifth, Jupiter, sixth, Venus, seventh, Saturn. The arrangement is the same in Siam.

Both day and night are divided into four equal parts. I never found any instrument for keeping time, though there is a sort of clepsydra at Ava. In the "provinces," our mode of arranging the hours is becoming common; and time-pieces are not uncommon in the hands of wealthy natives.

Burman weights are exhibited in the following table, and are used both for goods and money:—

2 small ruays equal 1 large ruay, or 1 pice; 4 large ruays equal 1 bai or ruay, or 1 anna; 2 bais equal 1 moo, or 2 annas; 2 moos equal 1 mat, or 4 annas (62½ gr. troy); 4 mats equal 1 kyat, or 1 tical; 100 kyats equal 1 piakthah or viss (3 65-100ths pounds avoirdupois).

The small ruay is the little scarlet bean (*abrus precatorius*), with a black spot upon it, called in America *crab's eye*. The large ruay is the black oblong bean, of the *adenanthera pavonina*. The other weights are of brass, handsomely cast, and polished.

By late experiments at the Calcutta mint, the tical is found to be 252 grains troy, and to weigh exactly one cubic inch of distilled water, at the temperature of 90°.

The kind of silver used may make the value more or less than these rates. See more on this subject, under the head Currency.

Measures of length.—8 thits (finger's breadth) equal 1 maik (breadth of the hand with thumb extended); 1½ maiks equal 1 twah (span); 2 twahs equal 1 tounge (cubit); 4 tounge equal 1 lan (fathom); 7 tounge equal 1 tah (bamboo or rod); 140 tounge, or twenty tahs, equal 1 oketlahpah; 7000 tounge, or 1000 tahs, equal 1 taing (2 miles, 581 ft., 8 in.); 6 4-10ths taings, or daings, or 6400 tahs, or 320 oketlahpahs, equal 1 uzena, or about 12 72-100ths miles (in little use except in the sacred books).

Measures of capacity.—2 lamyets equal 1 lamay; 2 lamays equal 1 salay (about 1 pint); 4 salays equal 1 pyee (two quarts); 2 pyees equal 1 sah (a 2 sahs equal 1 saik (a peck); 2 saiks equal 2 kwais equal 1 ten; 100 tens equal 1 coyan.

The ten is what Europeans in the country call a *basket*, from the basket measure of that capacity. This full of clean rice is a common allowance to a labourer for one month. It is deemed to weigh fifty-eight and two-fifths pounds avoirdupois, or sixteen viss, or forty Penang catties.

The language is remarkably dissimilar to the other languages of the east. The character is beautifully simple, and is written with facility. The style of forming letters, whether in printing or writing, is precisely the same. There are eleven vowels and thirty-three consonants. About a thousand characters must be used in printing, in consequence of the numerous combinations.

The structure of the language is natural, but very unlike the English. The pronunciation is difficult, owing partly to the gutturals, and partly to the extreme nicety of the difference in sound between words which mean very different things, and are oftenspelled precisely alike; and, on the whole, it is a difficult language to acquire. All pure Burman words are monosyllables; but there are numerous polysyllables, derived chiefly from the Pali. There being no inflections to any part of speech, greatly simplifies the grammar. Number, person, mood, and tense, are formed by suffixes. Negatives and adjectives are formed by prefixes to verbs. The fastidiousness respecting rank, introduces a perplexing variety of phrases to mean the same action in different persons, to which allusion has already been made. Even in regard to common actions, the verbs used are widely different; for example, for our term to *wash*, are many words; one is used for washing the face, another for washing the hands, another for washing linen in mere water, another for washing it with soap, another for washing dishes, &c.

Instead of a perplexing variety of spelling-books, they have a *Them-bong-gyee*, or spelling and reading book, of about forty pages octavo, of great antiquity, and so perfect, that no other has ever been deemed necessary by the missionaries. It is drawn up philosophically, and when committed, the learner is in possession of every possible sound in the language, except a few from some Pali words which have crept into common use.

Books, as is generally known, are written usually on palm-leaf, with an iron pen or style. The leaf is prepared with care, and of good books the edges are gilded. Some have the margins illuminated, and gilded with considerable elegance. The book is defended by thin slabs of wood, more or less ornamented. Sometimes thin leaves of ivory are used, and occasionally gilded sheet iron. For common books, a thick black paper is used, which is written upon with a pencil of scateite. The writing may be removed with the hand, as from a slate; and such books, called *Tha-bike*, last a long time. They are in one piece of several yards long, and folded like a fan. They can, of course, be used on both sides; and every portion may be sealed up by itself, thus furnishing a good idea of the book mentioned Rev. v. 1, which was "written within and on the back side, sealed with seven seals."

The number of books is, of course, not large, in a country where printing is unknown. All principal citizens, however, possess a few; and the royal library at Ava contains some thousand volumes, kept in large and elegant chests, assorted under different heads, such as law, history, medicine, poetry, painting, and music. The greater part of the literature is metrical, and consists of ballads, legends of Gaudama, histories of the kings, astronomy, and geography.

The sacred books are in Pali, a dialect or corruption of the Sunserit. It is wholly a dead language, few even of the priests being able to read it, and still fewer understanding what they read. It was probably the vernacular tongue of Gaudama, that is, the Magdoh or Magadch of Behar. Buchanan seems mistaken in supposing the Pali of Ceylon, Burmah, and Siam, to be different. He was probably led into the error by the language being written in the respective characters of those countries, as it often is. Mr Wilson thinks it a misnomer to call the language *Pali*, and that that term belongs properly to the character, and *Magadch* or *Puncrit* to the language, corresponding to the terms *Magari* and *Sunserit*. He remarks, also, that the language differs from *Sunserit* only in enunciation, being more soft, and liquifying all the harsh sounds.

The rudiments of education are widely diffused, and most men, even common labourers, learn to read and write a little. But few go beyond these attainments. Women of respectability generally can read, but comparatively few of those in humble life. There is no objection manifested to their learning; but as almost the only schools are the Kyoungs, where girls are

admitted, they are necessarily left untaught, except where the parents can afford to pay a schoolmaster. Boys begin to attend the Kyoung at eight or ten years, but do not assume the yellow cloth till several years after. They learn slowly, and, at the expiration of four or five years, have attained little more than, in a very bungling way, to read and write, and to add, subtract, and divide. Those who take the yellow cloth, and live in the Kyoung, become able to understand a few books, and learn their system of the universe. If they continue priests, and aspire after literature, they go on to get a smattering of Pali and astrology, and if they mean to reach the summit of Parnassus, study the *Then-gyo*, or book of metaphysics.

It has been often said that the Burmans are "a reading people." They might more properly be called "a people that can read." The written and colloquial styles are so different, that few understand readily the sentiments of a book. The mass of the people being wholly without books or periodicals, their reading is confined to the short written instruments employed in the transaction of business. It is truly remarkable that so many children are taught to read, when it is foreseen so little use can ever be made of the acquisition. It certainly is a providential preparation for the diffusion of the word of truth, and ought to encourage the friends of missions in their design of distributing the Scriptures and scriptural tracts.

Properly speaking, there are no literary institutions in the country, and few ever go beyond their acquisitions at the Kyoung. Such as the literature is, it is almost abandoned to the pongyees. A very few, especially among the nobles, are addicted to reading. The most distinguished now is the Mekara prince, who reads English, and collects foreign pictures, maps, coins, implements, &c.

As to astronomy and geography, the more they learn, the more they are in error, for a more absurd system could not be. They describe eight planets, namely, the sun, moon, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, and *Rahu*, the last being invisible. All these revolve round the earth, the sun going quicker than the moon. None of these planets are round, but are extended plains, formed in the manner explained in the chapter on religion. Eclipses are produced by *Rahu* (pronounced *Ya-hu*), an immense monster, who puts the sun or moon under his chin, when the eclipse is partial, or takes it into his huge mouth, and then the eclipse is total.

They are not without maps of various portions of their country, but sadly rude and imperfect, being made without mathematical or astronomical instruments of any sort. I saw some in which the artist, coming to the edge of the paper in tracing out a river, turned up the side, and round the top; thus placing cities and streams to the north and north-west, which, in fact, were due east!

No branch of knowledge is cultivated with avidity but alchemy, in which absurd pursuit nearly every person pretending to literature engages more or less. The royal family is not exempt from this folly. Their only hope is to transmute base metals, minerals, &c., into gold. In procuring specimens of mineralogy, the natives always supposed this was my sole purpose; and in every bazaar are sold stones and petrifications, for the operatives in this sublime science. As to the elixir of immortality, which former humbugs of this sort hoped to discover, it never enters into the head of a Burman alchemist. He has no idea of immortality. Neither his religion or philosophy permits the thought. Did he obtain it, it would dash all his hopes of *nie-bau*.

Whether the state of society exhibited in Burmah be, on the whole, more conducive to happiness than the species of civilisation which we enjoy, is a question I leave to philosophers. It ill becomes us to scorn all states of society which differ greatly from our own, without inquiring how far our estimate may be formed by mere education and habit. I would certainly prefer to ingraft science and religion on the condition of

man in Burmah, to having them accompanied by our forms of society and social constitution. There, human wants have a definite limit, easily reached, and leaving ample leisure to almost every member of society for the pursuits of religion and science. With us, it is scarcely possible for the great majority to fulfil the precepts of religion, or cultivate by science their immortal powers. The labouring man can only by incessant efforts keep himself and family supplied with what they think necessities. With every grade above, it is the same. Not only is religion, but reason and health, sacrificed, in our pursuits, exertions, and amusements. In vain do sacred teachers and philosophers cry out against the universal perversion. So long as society is so constructed, the evils must remain. Prisons, hospitals, poor-rates, executions, poverty, disease, celibacy, and innumerable sufferings, grow up from these evils.

On the whole, the Burmans are fully entitled to be called a civilised people. A regular government, a written language, an established literature, a settled abode, foreign commerce, respectable architecture, good roads and bridges, competent manufactures, adequate dress, gradations of rank, and the conditions of women, conspire to establish their claim to be so considered. Their exact place in the scale of civilisation is not so easily settled. In intellect, morals, manners, and several of the points just named, they are not surpassed by any nation of the East, and are certainly superior to any natives of this peninsula. Prior to the recent entrance of Europeans, the degree of civilisation, whatever it was, seemed to be fixed and complete. No change in laws, habits, manufactures, food, dwellings, poetry, painting, or indeed anything else, had been made for centuries; or if made, yet so slowly as to impart no excitement to the public mind. Now the case is decidedly different. They not only have contact with Europeans, but confess inferiority; and in some things are adopting our modes and manufacture. In the Tenasserim provinces, this is especially the case; and should England resign those possessions, the effects of her dominion on the population will remain and extend. If the present king should retain the views of state policy which he expressed to me while a subject, and which he is the fittest man in the kingdom to execute, Burmah must rapidly rise in political importance.

The introduction of the art of printing would, probably, do more for this people than any other in India. Active, intelligent, and persevering, the whole community would feel the impulse of diffused knowledge. All would read, all would be quickened, all would contribute to the general improvement. It would bring with it that stupendous influence, which is the wonder of these latter days—the power of voluntary association. Men and women would form small communities for the accomplishment each of some favourite aim. Every improvement could be made general. Every useful project would find friends, and succeeding generations enjoy accumulating light.

But in allowing myself these anticipations, I take for granted that missionary efforts will be hugely increased, and their effects fall upon the whole community. True religion can alone enable the press to produce its fullest blessings. Without this, it may elevate the arts, improve science, and advance the general wealth; but it leaves them a race of rebels against the eternal Lord—a kingdom of Satan. Indeed, without religion, the press could not accomplish the worldly prosperity of the state. A press, directed by genuine, steady, and persevering benevolence, must operate for Burmah, ere she rise from the dust, and sit joyously among the nations. As yet all the power of the press is in our hands. What a trust! How are the Baptists in America bound to follow up, with tenfold energy, the work they have so well begun! How should the friends of man lend their aid in disseminating among this people the refinements of true science, the principles of right government, and the blessings of pure religion! Even now she is the first native power in Farther India, and is second in all the East only to China. Within and around her are

a hundred tribes of people, over none of whom is her influence less than that of France over the smaller states of Europe. Let Burmah embrace the Christian faith, and she has at her command money and missionaries for all their tribes.

CHAPTER VI.

Extent of Boodhism. Meaning of the Term. Antiquity of the System. History of Gaudama. The next Boodh. The Bedagat. Theory of the Universe. Moral Code. Discourse of Gaudama. Religious Edifices, &c. Remarks.

Boodhism is, probably, at this time, and has been for many centuries, the most prevalent form of religion on earth. Half of the population of China, Lao, Cochin-China, and Ceylon; all of Camboja, Siam, Burmah, Thibet, Tartary, and Loo-choo; and a great part of Japan, and most of the other islands of the southern seas, are of this faith. A system which thus enchains the minds of half the human race, deserves the attention of both Christians and philosophers, however fabulous and absurd.

Chinese accounts make the introduction of Boodhism into that empire to have occurred about A. D. 65. Marshman supposes the Siamese and Laos to have received the system about three centuries before Christ. A very great increase of the Boodhist faith is known to have occurred in China early in the sixth century, which may have resulted from the flight of priests with him, about that time, from the persecution of the Brahminists.

Boodh is a general term for divinity, and not the name of any particular god. There have been innumerable Boodhs, in different ages, among different worlds, but in no world more than five, and in some not any. In this world there have been four Boodhs, namely, Kanka-than, Gau-na-gong, Ka-tha-pa, and Gaudama. In the Siamese language, these are called Kak-a-san, Kona-gon, Kasap, and Kodom. One is yet to come, namely, Aree-ma-day-eh.

It has been often remarked, that Gaudama was one of the incarnations of Vishnu, and appeared in the form of a cow. This idea has probably originated with the Hindus, and is advanced to support their assertion, that this religion is a branch of theirs. But no two systems can be more opposite, or bear less evidence of one being derived from the other. Brahminism has incarnations, but Boodhism admits of none, for it has no permanent God. If, in its endless metempsychosis, any being should descend from the highest forms of existence to take human nature, it would not be an incarnation of Deity, but a real degradation of being, and the person so descending would become *literally* a man. If he ever rise again, it must be by another almost infinite change, now to better, and now to worse, as merit is gained or lost. While Hinduism teaches one eternal deity, Boodhism has now no god. That has a host of idols; this only one. That enjoins bloody sacrifices; this forbids all killing. That requires atrocious self-tortures; this inculcates fewer austerities than even Popery. That makes lying, fornication, and theft, sometimes commendable, and describes the gods as excelling in these enormities; this never confounds right and wrong, and never excuses any sin. That makes absorption into deity the supreme good; this annihilation. In fine, I know of no important resemblance. None of the Brahminical books are regarded by Boodhists as authoritative, and no practices seem to be derived from them. The fact that Boodhist priests often worship kneeling on a cow-hide, is no evidence of affiliation to Brahminism, as has been asserted. They disclaim any religious preference for the hide of a cow. It is, in fact, just a piece of leather of any kind, folded up like a book, carried either by the priest or his attendant, and laid on the ground when he kneels before a pagoda, to keep him from soiling his robe.

There are some reasons for considering Boodhism, if not the parent system, yet probably more ancient than Brahminism. In various parts of Hindustan are found

indications that Buddhism was once the prevailing faith. The caves of Elephanta* and Elora† contain images of Gaudama of great antiquity.‡ Colonel Franklin discovered one of colossal size among the ruins of Palibothra. I have one of terra-cotta, bearing inscriptions in the ancient Devnagari character. The Vedas themselves mention Boodhi. The Poomanias were unquestionably written some centuries later than the period of Gaudama. The splendid ruins at Prambana, Boro Budo, and Singa Sari in the interior of Java, are regarded by Sir Stamford Raffles as having claims to the highest antiquity of any such structure on the island; and from Captain Baker's descriptions of these, there can be no doubt of their Boodhist origin. The images are of Boodh. The very term *Budo*, or *Bud'ho*, is in the Javanese language synonymous with "ancient" or "pagan." The Javanese speak of the times when Boodhism was the religion of their country as the "ancient times." Their ancient laws make no distinctions, in the award of punishment, in favour of a Brahmin, but always in favour of a king. This is so opposite to the religion of the Hindus, that when they were made, Brahmins could have had no ascendancy. They, however, early acquired power, and when Mahometanism was brought to Java, it found the Hindu faith established as the religion of the country.

Brahminism was introduced into Bali between three and four hundred years ago, previous to which, the reigning religion was Boodhism.§ The existence of caste, and the position of Brahmins on the pinnacle of it, indicate the seniority of Boodhism. Had the religion of the latter been the progenitor, the whole system of caste would have been inherited, almost beyond a doubt. We can scarcely imagine that an established priesthood should resign such power and rank as is held by the political, money-making, haughty, and sensual Brahmins.

Boodhi is possibly the Buddha or Butta of Bochart and Beausobre; the Bod of the Arabians; the Boutta of Clemens Alexandrinus; the Baouth of Gentil. The pyramids of Egypt are so similar in their structure to a pagoda, and so evidently contain sacred relics, and not the bones of kings, that they bear strong evidences of being Boodhist pagodas.

The probability seems to be that Brahminism grew out of Boodhism, and gained power and numbers in Hindustan till the close of the first century of the Christian era, when they were able to commence that persecution of which their own records speak, and which drove out the teachers of Boodhism into Farther India, whence it extended into China.

Gaudama was the son of Thoke-daw-da-reh, or, as it is written in Sunserit, Soodawdaneh, king of Ma-ge-deh (now called Behar), in Hindustan. He was born about A. C. 626.

He had previously lived in four hundred millions of worlds, and passed through innumerable conditions in each. In this world, he had been almost every sort of worm, fly, fowl, fish, or animal, and almost every grade and condition of human life. Having, in the course of these transitions, attained immense merit, he at length was born son of the above-named king. The moment he was born, he jumped upon his feet, and, spreading out his arms, exclaimed, "Now am I the noblest of men! This is the last time I shall ever be born!" His height, when grown up, was nine cubits. His ears were so beautifully long, as to hang upon his shoulders; his hands reached to his knees; his fingers were of equal length; and with his tongue he could touch the end of his nose! All which are considered irrefragable proofs of his divinity.

* On an island of that name near Bombay.

† In the province of Aungmyath.

‡ For descriptions of these very remarkable caves, see Seeley's *Wonders of Elora*; C. Malet's *Transactions of Bombay Lit. Soc.* art. 9 and 15; Daniel's *Voyage to India*; *Transactions of the Asiatic Soc.* vol. ii.; *Modern Traveller*, vol. iv.; Duperron's *Prém. Disc.* to his *Zend Avista*; *Asiatic Researches*, vol. i.

§ Crawford's *Indian Archipelago*, book vi. ch. 2.

When in this state his mind was enlarged, so that he remembered his former conditions and existences. Of these he rehearsed many to his followers. Five hundred and fifty of these narratives have been preserved, one relating his life and adventures as a deer, another as a monkey, elephant, fowl, &c. &c. The collection is called *Dzat*, and forms a very considerable part of the sacred books. These legends are a fruitful source of designs for Burman paintings. Of these I purchased several, which do but bring out into visible absurdity the system they would illustrate.

He became Boodh in the thirty-fifth year of his age, and remained so forty-five years, at the end of which



Gaudama.

time, having performed all sorts of meritorious deeds, and promulgated excellent laws, far and wide, he obtained "nie-ban," that is, entered into annihilation, together with five hundred priests, had been long attended. This occurred in Hindustan, about 2300 years ago, or A. C. 516. The Cingalese make his death to have occurred A. C. 542, and the Siamese, who also reckon time from that era, make it A. C. 544. At his death, he advised that, besides obeying his laws, his relics and image should be worshipped, and pagodas built to his memory, till the development of the next Boodh. He is invariably represented in the same manner, except that sometimes he is made to wear a crown, necklace, ornaments on his arms, &c. The common representation is given in my Bible Dictionary; the other is exhibited in the accompanying cut. I have seen them of all sizes, from half an inch long to seventy-five feet—of wood, stone, brass, brick, clay, and ivory.

The next Boodh is to appear in about seven or eight thousand years from the present time. His height will be eighty cubits; his mouth will be five cubits wide, and the length of the hairs of his eyebrows five cubits. The precise time of his arrival is not predicted.

No laws or sayings of the first three Boodhs are extant. Those of Gaudama were transmitted by tradition, till four hundred and fifty years after his decease, when they were reduced to writing in Ceylon, that is, A. D. 94. These are the only sacred books of the Burmans, and are all in the Pali language. They are comprised in three divisions, or books, namely, *Thoke*, *Winnee*, and *Abcedamah*. Each of these is divided into distinct books, or sections. The whole is called *the Bedagut*. Copies of parts of these works are not scarce, though found chiefly with the priests. Entire copies are rare. Some of them are truly elegant, the leaf being covered with black varnish, as fine and glossy as enamel, and over this the words written in gold letters.

They are all in the same form, and strung on a cord. The outsides are often defended by a handsomely carved and gilded board, of the same size as the leaves. The strings with which they are tied are about an inch wide, and a fathom long, with some sentence woven in with the texture. These are either some quotation from a sacred book, or some pious sentiment. One of those in my possession reads thus:—"This book-string is offered you, with affectionate regard, to tie up your sacred book; that precious book where you will find the door by which to enter nie-ban."

The cosmogony of the *Bedagut* is not precisely alike in the different books; and even in the same book in-

consistencies often occur. The following sketch, therefore, though derived from the best informed priests and missionaries, differs in some respects from various statements which have appeared, and is to be received as the scheme set forth in such books as my informants had read.

The universe is composed of an infinite number of systems, called *Sak-yas*. These systems touch each other at the circumference, and the angular spaces between them are filled up with very cold water. Each side of these spaces is 3000 *uzenas* long. Of these innumerable systems, some are constantly becoming chaotic, and reproduce themselves in course of time. Of these formations and dissolutions there was never a beginning, and will never be an end.

Each system consists of a great central mountain surrounded by seas, and four great islands, each surrounded by 500 smaller ones, and with celestial and infernal regions. Of this great mountain, the eastern side is of silver, the western of glass, the northern of gold, and the southern of dark ruby. It is called *Myenmo*, and is 84,000 *uzenas* high. Its base is equally deep. The top is flattened to a plain 43,000 *uzenas* in diameter. Seven chains of mountains, and seven great rivers or seas, encircle the mount on every side.

The four great islands have each a shape, to which that of the smaller ones belonging to it is exactly conformed. Ours is oval, the western is round, the northern is a parallelogram, and the eastern semilunar. The colour of each set of islands is derived from that side of the mountain next to them. The inhabitants have both their colour and the shape of their faces conformed to that of the island on which they dwell. Those on the eastern islands are nine *enbits* high, those on the western six, those on the northern thirteen. The inhabitants of the eastern and western islands practise agriculture and the arts, much as we of the southern do; but those of the northern have no such employments. A tree is there which yields all manner of garments, meats, fish, &c. They have no sorrows or pains; and every individual lives just 1000 years. Between the great islands ships cannot pass. The sea there rises in waves sixty or seventy *uzenas* high, and contains fishes 600 and 700 *uzenas* long, the mere movement of whose bodies often creates tempests which reach hundreds of *uzenas*!

This earth is the southern cluster of islands, and we are living on the large one. It is a convex plane, not a sphere, and is divided by mountains and navigable seas. Its diameter is 10,000 *uzenas*, and the thickness of the crust or surface on which we live is 240,000 *uzenas*. Below this is water twice as deep as the earth is thick. The whole is supported on a stratum of air twice as deep as the water, and which supports itself by internal concussions or explosions. Beneath is vacuum.

In the other three islands and their dependencies, the inhabitants have always had the same length of life. But in ours, the period constantly varies. At first, our race lived as many years as there would be drops of rain if it rained three years incessantly. In a Siamese version of the same book, it is given as a period of years embracing 163 ciphers. Falling off in virtue and correct habits, the term gradually contracted, in the course of myriads of ages, to ten years. Then mankind was led to reflect and reform, and the period gradually enlarged, as they became more temperate and correct, till it rose even to the primitive duration. By succeeding degeneracy, it gradually contracted again to ten. Of these increases and diminutions there have been eleven, and will be fifty-three more, before the *sakiya* system, to which we belong, will be again destroyed. At this time, the period of life is contracting through our increasing degeneracy, and has fallen to eighty years.

The inhabitants of the three other islands and their dependencies are always reproduced in the same island. But our world has this advantage, that by merit we may rise to the several heavens, and even to *nie-ban* itself.

When by the power of fate a system is to be destroyed, it occurs either by fire, water, or wind. The process of renovation is exemplified in the following account of our own world, which, like the others, has repeatedly been destroyed and renewed. After lying in a state of chaos many ages, the crust of the earth recovered firmness, and was covered with a thin crust of sweet butter. The grateful fragrance ascending to the heavens, celestial beings were filled with desire to eat it, and, assuming a human shape, came down in large numbers. Their bodies were luminous, and they needed no other light. Becoming quarrelsome and corrupt, the delicious crust disappears, and their bodies become dark. In their distress, the sun appears; and afterwards, the moon and stars. Compelled now to seek other food, they find rice growing without a husk, and thus needing no labour. Fire, spontaneously issuing from the stones, cooks it. This gross food at length excited various passions, and mankind became divided into sexes. Marriage followed. The race degenerating still more, was obliged to choose a king. Quarrels multiply, and men disperse over the world. Climate, water, and food, then produce the diversities we see among nations.

The celestial regions consist of twenty-six heavens, one above another; and the infernal regions of eight principal hells, each surrounded by sixteen smaller ones. The base of *Myenmo* Mount is inhabited by dragons, great birds, and animals of unknown shapes. The middle region constitutes the lower of the six inferior heavens, and is inhabited by powerful beings, called *Seedoo-mahah-rujah*. The summit is the next inferior heaven, called *Tah-wa-ting-tha*. Above, in open space, are the four others, namely, *Ya-mah*, *Toke-the-dah*, *Par-an-ing-meta*, and *Etha-wa-dee*. The inhabitants of all these are called *Nats*. They never perform servile labour, for trees bear in profusion every object of necessity or gratification. The term of their lives is about nine million times longer than the present term of ours. Their children are born with the degree of maturity that ours have at fifteen years old. What we call thunder, is the noise they make when at play; and rain is produced by the agitation they make in the air in running about.

In these first six heavens, the inhabitants have body and soul, like ourselves; in the next sixteen, they are pure matter; and in the last four, pure spirit.

The aim of mortals is to attain, after death, to *Tah-wa-ting-tha*, the diameter of which is the same as this earth. Like the abodes of the *Nats*, it abounds in good things, of which the *Bedagat* contains copious and minute details. Among the glorious possessions of *Thig-ya-men*, its king (whose principal residence is fully described) is a huge white elephant. This animal, named *Ay-ra-woon*, is fifty *uzenas* high, and has seven heads; each head has seven tusks, and each tusk seven tanks. In each of these tanks grow seven lilies; each lily has seven blossoms; each blossom has seven petals; each petal bears up seven palaces, and in each palace are seven nymphs, or wives of the king, each surrounded by 500 attendants. Another elephant has one great head, thirty *uzenas* long, on which the king occasionally rides; and thirty-two smaller heads, for the thirty-two royal princes.

Of the principal hells, four inflict punishment by heat, and the other four by cold. Each of these is 10,000 *uzenas* wide. In the sixteen minor hells, the wicked suffer every conceivable misery, not connected with cold or heat. Worms of vast size bite them, their bowels are torn out, their limbs racked, and their bodies lacerated or beaten with dreadful hammers. They are pierced with red-hot spits, crucified head downwards, gnawed by dogs, and torn by vultures. These and a thousand other evils are described with minuteness in the *Bedagat*, and often depicted in the drawings of native artists. The inhabitants are six miles high, and are continually creeping and roaming about, in the vast caves of their dreadful abode.

For killing a parent or a priest, a man will suffer in

one of the hells of fire, during the whole period of a sakiya system. To deny or disbelieve the doctrines of Gaudama, incurs *eternal* suffering in fire. Killing men or animals, causing criminals to be executed, insulting women, old men or priests, cheating, receiving bribes, selling any intoxicating liquor, and parricide, are punished in the worst hells. In some books, a regular scale is made out for estimating the gradation of guilt in all these crimes.

Merit may be gained by good conduct in any of these hells, so that except the criminality has incurred *eternal* torment, the sufferers may rise again to become insects, beasts, men, nats, &c.

Such are the accounts which fill the sacred books, and with which I might fill many pages. It is not important that I quote more. I have quoted thus much, as part of the history of the human mind, and as necessary to a proper estimate of the Boodhist religion.

Of any supreme God, or any eternal self-existent being, Boodhism affords no intimation, nor of any creation, or providence. From the annihilation of one Boodh till the development of another, there is literally no God. Intervening generations must worship his image, law, and priests, and for their rules of life keep the sayings of the last Boodh, namely, Gandama.

Not only has the universe and all its sakiya systems existed from eternity, but also the souls of all the inhabitants, whether animals, men, or celestials. These souls have from eternity been transmigrating from one body to another, rising or falling in the scale of existence and enjoyment, according to the degree of merit at each birth. This rise or fall is not ordered by any intelligent judge, but is decided by immutable fate. In passing through these various forms of existence, the amount of sorrow endured by each soul is incalculable. The Bedagat declares that the tears shed by any one soul, in its various changes from eternity, are so numerous, that the ocean is but as a drop in comparison! Existence and sorrow are declared to be necessary concomitants, and therefore "the chief end of man" is to finish this eternal round of changes, and be annihilated.

The great doctrines of this faith are five, namely, 1. The eternal existence of the universe, and all beings. 2. Metempsychosis. 3. Nic-ban, or annihilation. 4. The appearance, at distant periods, of beings who obtain deification and subsequent annihilation. 5. The obtaining of merit. Of the first four of these, enough has been already said. The last is more deserving of notice, embracing, as it does, the whole system of morals.

Merit consists in avoiding sins, and performing virtues, and the degree of it is the sole hope of the Boodhist. The forgiveness of sins, and the receipt of favour through the merit of another, are doctrines unknown. That suffering can be in any way regarded as a blessing, is to him absurd.

The sins which are to be avoided are described in a moral code, consisting of five principal and positive laws:—1. Thou shalt not kill. 2. Thou shalt not steal. 3. Thou shalt not commit adultery. 4. Thou shalt not lie. 5. Thou shalt not drink any intoxicating liquor. These are explained and branched out, so as to include all sins of the same kind, under each head. The first of these laws is extended to all killing, even that of animals for food. The very religious will not kill vermin. War and capital punishments are considered forbidden by the first law.

Sins are divided into three classes:—1. Those of the body; such as killing, theft, fornication, &c. 2. Those of the tongue; as falsehood, discord, harsh language, idle talk, &c. 3. Those of the mind; as pride, covetousness, envy, heretical thoughts, adoring false gods, &c.

The sacred books portray strongly the evils of pride, anger, covetousness, and inordinate appetites. Men are urged to avoid excessive perfumes, ornaments, laughter, vain joy, strong drink, smoking opium, wandering about the streets in the night, excessive fondness for amusements, frequenting bad company, and idleness. Those who aspire to nic-ban are cautioned to abhor sorcery,

not to credit dreams, nor be angry when abused, nor elated when approved, not to flatter benefactors, nor to indulge in scorn or biting jests, and most carefully to avoid enkindling strife.

The states of the mind are resolved into three classes:—1. When we are pleased in the possession of agreeable things. 2. When we are grieved and distressed by evil things. 3. When neither do good things gratify us, nor evil things distress. The last is the best state, and in it a man is rapidly preparing for nic-ban. In this there is no small resemblance to the doctrine of the Stoics, and some approach to the Christian doctrine of weanedness from the world. Some of their books abound in good comparisons, such as, that he who runs into sinful enjoyments is like a butterfly who flutters round a candle till it falls in; or one who, by licking honey from a knife, cuts his tongue with the edge. There is scarcely a prohibition of the Bedagat which is not sanctioned by our Holy Scriptures, and the arguments appended to them are often just and forcible.

Merit is of three kinds:—1. *Theela*, or the observance of all the prohibitions and precepts, and all duties fairly deducible from them; such as beneficence, gentleness, integrity, lenity, forbearance, condensation, veneration to parents, love to mankind, &c. 2. *Dana*, or giving alms and offerings. This includes feeding priests, building kyongs, pagodas, and zayats, placing bells at pagodas, making public roads, tanks, and wells, planting trees for shade or fruit, keeping pots of cool water by the way-side for the use of travellers, feeding criminals, birds, animals, &c. 3. *Bawana*, or repeating prayers, and reading religious books. Of this last, there are three degrees, or sorts; the first consisting in merely reciting prayers, or reading thoughtlessly; the second, and more meritorious, is praying or reading, with a mind attentive to the exercise; the third, and most excellent, is the performing these exercises with strong desires and awakened feelings. He who neglects to lay up merit is compared to a man who sets out on a journey through an uninhabited country, beset with wild beasts, and provides himself neither with food nor weapons.

Alms-deeds are meritorious according to the objects on which they are bestowed, according to the following general scale:—1. Animals. 2. Common labourers, fishermen, &c. 3. Merchants and the upper classes, when in necessity. 4. Priests. For alms of the first class, the rewards are long life, beauty, strength, knowledge, and prosperity, during a hundred transmigrations; for those of the second class, the same during a thousand transmigrations; for the third, the same during ten thousand; for the fourth, a vastly greater number, but indefinite, being graduated according to the degree of sanctity the particular priests may possess. Alms given by a poor man are declared to be incomparably more meritorious than those given by the rich. So great merit is conferred by acts of *Dana*, that persons are distinguished in society by honourable appellations on this account. The most meritorious deed is to make an idol, and this in proportion to its size and value. He who has done this is called thenceforth *Pya-taga*. He who builds a pagoda becomes a *Tsa-ice-taga*. Next is he who builds a kyong—*kyong-taga*. He who has sacred books transcribed is a *Sak-taga*. He who incurs the expenses of making a priest, is *Thenyan-taga*. The builder of a zayat is *zayat-taga*; the maker of a tank, *gat-gon-taga*. These, and similar titles, are in common use, and are regarded with the same respect as squire, captain, colonel, deacon, &c., are with us.

In attaining *Bawana*, the third sort of merit, a prominent exercise is the frequent repetition of the words "*ancit-sa, doke-kha, Ah-nah-ta.*" The first of these words implies our liability to outward injuries and evils; the second, our exposure to mental sufferings; the third, our entire inability to escape these evils. The repetition of this prayer or soliloquy is of far greater merit than even alms-giving. To keep some reckoning in this most important particular, the votary commonly

uses a string of beads, and passes one through his fingers at each repetition.

Many discourses said to have been delivered by Gaudama, are given in the *Bedagat*. In these, the duties of parents, children, husbands, wives, teachers, scholars, masters, slaves, &c., are drawn out and urged, in a manner which would do honour to any casuist.

The following is part of one of these, addressed to a distinguished personage, who sought his instruction how to avoid evil :—

“ Know thou, that to keep from the company of the ignorant, and choose that of learned men, to give honour to whom it is due, to choose a residence proper to our station, and adapted for procuring the common wants of life, and to maintain a prudent carriage, are means to preserve a man from evil doings. The comprehension of all things that are not evil, the exact knowledge of the duties of our station, and the observance of modesty and piety in our speech, are four excellent modes of renouncing wickedness.

By ministering a proper support to parents, wife, and family, by purity and honesty in every action, by abstinence, by observing the divine precepts, and by succouring relations, we may be preserved from evil. By such a freedom from faults, that not even the inferior part of our nature manifests any affection for them, by abstinence from all intoxicating drink, by the continual practice of works of piety, by showing respectfulness, humility, and sobriety before all, and gratitude to our benefactors, and, finally, by listening often to the preaching of the word of God, we overcome evil inclinations, and keep ourselves far from sin. Docility in receiving the admonitions of good men, frequent visits to priests, spiritual conferences on the divine laws, patience, frugality, modesty, the literal observance of the law, keeping before our eyes the four states into which living creatures pass after death, and meditation on the happy repose of *nie-ban*—these are distinguished rules for preserving man from wickedness.

That intrepidity and serenity which good men preserve amid the eight evils of life (abundance and want, joy and sorrow, popularity and abandonment, censure and praise); their freedom from fear and iniquitude; from the dark mists of concupiscence; and, finally, their insensibility to suffering; these are four rare gifts, that remove men far from evil. Therefore, oh sir! imprint well upon your heart the thirty-eight precepts I have just delivered. Let them be deeply rooted there, and see that you put them in practice.”

Pagodas are innumerable. In the inhabited parts, there is scarcely a mountain peak, bluff bank, or swelling hill, without one of these structures upon it. Those of Pegu and Siam are all formed upon one model, though the cornices and decorations are according to the builder's taste. In general, they are entirely solid, having neither door nor window, and contain a deposit of money, or some supposed relic of Gaudama. From the base they narrow rapidly to about mid-way, and then rise with a long spire surmounted with the sacred tee. Some of those around Ava, and especially those at Pagan, are less-tapering, and more resembling temples.

The sacred tee is of sheet iron, wrought into open work and gilded. It of course rusts off in time, and is seldom seen on an old structure. Its shape is that of a bell, or the bowl of a wine-glass. Round the rim are suspended small bells, to the clappers of which hang, by a short chain, a sheet-iron leaf, also gilded. The wind moving the pendulous leaf, strikes the clappers against the bells, and keeps up a pleasant chime. Around all chief pagodas are smaller ones, sometimes amounting to hundreds, and of great size.

I am not sure of the origin of the term *pagoda*, applied by European writers to this structure. The term is unknown to Burmans or Siamese. The former call it *Tsa-dee*, and sometimes *Fra-tsa-dee*, but more commonly simply *L'hra*-god. The latter call it *Cha-dee*, or *Prachadee*.

Zayats are not exclusively religious buildings. Some are intended to contain idols, and some are for the ac-

commodation of worshippers and travellers, and for town-halls. The majority contain no idols, and are intended only to afford shelter for worshippers and travellers. Some of these are mere sheds, open on all sides; but in almost all cases they are built in a far more durable and costly manner than dwelling-houses.

Every village has a *zayat*, where the stranger may repose or stay for many days, if he please; and many a time I found them a comfortable lodging-place. Like the *chultries* of Hindustan, they are of unspeakable utility in a country destitute of inns, and where every house has its full complement of inmates.

Many *zayats*, especially near great cities, are truly beautiful, and very costly. The ceilings and pillars are not only elaborately carved, but completely gilded, and the stucco floors rival marble in hardness and polish.

Near all considerable cities are a number of *zayats*, which may be called temples, erected to contain collections of idols, amounting in some cases to hundreds. In general these are all colossal, and some are huge. In each collection will be found a recumbent image, sixty, eighty, or even a hundred feet long, made of brick covered with stucco, and often gilded. Almost all the idols which are larger than life are thus formed; but so skilful are the artists in working in lime, that the images have the appearance of polished marble. Groups of images representing Gaudama walking with his rice-pot, followed by attendants with theirs, or illustrating some conspicuous passage in his life, are not uncommon. The doors or gateways of religious edifices are generally guarded by huge Balus and lions, as they call them.

Sometimes other images are added, as crocodiles, turtles, dogs, &c. In the compounds of the best pagodas are various structures, more or less elegant, presented by wealthy worshippers. Some of these resemble umbrellas; others are like shrines; but the most common are streamers, fastened to a mast. Some of these are truly beautiful. They are cylinders of fine book muslin, kept round by light hoops of ratan, and ornamented with figures cut out of silver or gold paper. On the top is the carved and gilded *henza*, or sacred bird—a creature of imagination, resembling nothing in heaven above or earth beneath.

Images and sacred edifices pass through no form of consecration; and an intelligent Burman, when pressed in argument, strenuously denies that he worships these things. He claims to use them as papists do a crucifix. He places no trust in them, but uses them to remind him of Gaudama, and in compliance with Gaudama's commands. Hence he feels no horror at beholding them decayed; and the country is full of such as have gone to ruin. The merit of making a very small pagoda, or image, is much greater than the repairing even of the largest. The son, therefore, suffers the father's structure to sink into ruin, though trifling repairs might prolong its existence for years. The builder himself seldom attempts to repair the ravages of time, which in this country proceed with extraordinary rapidity, preferring to build anew, if again prompted to the same species of piety. That the common people do really and truly worship the very pagodas and images, is most evident. Indeed, such seldom deny it. Few would dare to strike or deface one. Even the Christians are often unable to summon courage to do such a deed.

Impressions of Gaudama's foot are shown in various places, and receive religious worship. Several of these, not only in Burmah, but in Ceylon, Siam, and Lao, are affirmed to have been really stamped there by the deity himself, and are adduced as evidences of his extensive travels. The rest are avowed copies of these impressions, and are more numerous. Some are in stone, and some in stucco, generally handsomely gilded and canopied by some respectable structure. Those of Burmah and Ceylon seem not to be precisely alike.

Worship is not performed collectively, though crowds assemble at the same time on set days. Each one makes his offerings, and recites his prayers alone. No priests officiate; no union of voices is attempted. On

arriving at the pagoda, or image, the worshipper walks reverently to within a convenient distance, and laying his offering on the ground, sits down behind it, on his knees and heels, and placing the palms of his hands together, raises them to his forehead, and perhaps leans forward till his head touches the ground. This is called the *sheeko*. He then utters his prayers in a low tone, occasionally bowing as before, and having finished, rises and carries forward his gift, laying it somewhere near the idol or pagoda. Some proceed first to one of the great bells which hang near, and strike several times with one of the deer's horns which always lie beneath. When one goes alone, this is seldom omitted.

The prayer consists of the form already quoted ("Aneitsa, Dokekha, Ahnahta"), or of a repetition of certain protestations, such as, "I will not lie, I will not steal, I will not kill," &c. Each speaks audibly; but no one is disturbed, though scores kneel side by side. No greetings or recognitions are seen; nothing seems to divert their attention; and the profound humility of both posture and gesture, gives a solemn aspect to the whole scene. Old people, who cannot remember the forms, and persons who are diffident of their ability in this exercise, get some priest to write them a few sentences, which they carry before the pagoda or idol, and fastening it in one end of a stick, stick the other end in the ground, and put themselves for a time into the posture of prayer behind it. At Ava, quantities of these may be gathered any worship-day. The beads used in worship are made usually of black coral, or of the hard shell of the cocoa-nut. There are fifty or sixty on a string. Some persons carry them at all times in their hand, especially the priests, and appear, by passing over one at a time, to be saying their prayers, even in the midst of conversation.

Frequently a worshipper spends an entire day or night at the pagoda, reclining in some of the *zayats*. When the night is chosen, he takes his bed and some refreshments, candles, &c. These are so light that the most aged persons carry them with ease, suspending the bed from one end of a pole, and the water-jar, offering, &c., from the other. I often met these people in the *zayats* lying about, reading from palm-leaves, or returning in the morning to their homes. They reminded me of the embarrassment I felt when a child, in reading of our Saviour's ordering men to "take up their bed and walk." These beds consist of a clean mat, which weighs but three or four pounds, and a short round pillow, with sometimes a cloth or sheet. The latter are rolled up in the mat, and tied with a twine, so that the whole is both light and portable.

None but priests go to the pagoda without carrying some offering, though it be but a flower, or a few sprigs plucked from a bush in passing. A tasteful nosegay is the common gift; but those who can afford it, carry, once a week, articles of food and raiment. The former is always cooked in the nicest manner, and delicately arranged in saucers made of the fresh plantain leaf. Women carry their gifts in shallow baskets on their heads, and men in their hands, or suspended from the ends of a shoulder-pole. They proceed in groups, gossiping and gay, and display their plety with exuberant self-complacency.

There are four days for public worship in every lunar month; namely, at the new and full moon, and seven days after each, so that sometimes their sabbath occurs after seven days, and sometimes after eight. The new and full moons are the principal sabbaths; but few persons observe even all of these. Even those who attend the pagoda, always continue their business, except during the brief absence. The aspect of the city or village, therefore, is not changed, and the stranger would not know the day had arrived, did he not visit the pagoda, or the principal avenues leading to it. There is, in fact, no sabbath in Burmah, nor is any required by their religion. It is meritorious to observe the day, but not sinful to disregard it.

The number of worshippers at the chief pagodas is always sufficient on Sundays to produce a large amount

of offerings, and on such days the slaves of the pagoda take care of such as are useful, and divide the whole among themselves. On other days, dogs and crows consume the offerings, often attacking a gift the moment the worshipper quits it, and devouring it without the slightest molestation. I used to stally myself sometimes with a handsome bouquet from before the idol, walking unmolested among prostrate worshippers. Whatever flowers or fragments are left to the next morning, are swept out like common dirt.

Burmans are oppressed with a multitude of inconvenient superstitions. They observe dreams, omens, lucky and unlucky days, and believe in the casting of nativities, supernatural endowments, relics, charms, witchcraft, invulnerability, &c. The aspect of the stars, the howl of dogs, the flight of birds, the involuntary motions of the body, the cawing of crows, the manner in which fowls lay their eggs, the holes made by rats, and a hundred such things, are constantly observed. A man will not make his canoe of the intended tree, if it falls in an unlucky manner, or the knots are discovered to be unfortunately arranged. They are especially observant of the lines in the palms of one's hand. If the lines on the end of the fore-finger are disposed in circles, it indicates prosperity; if in arcs of a circle, great unhappiness, &c.

Amulets and charms are worn by both sexes, but not by a large number as among Hindus. One of these, common among military men, is the insertion of pieces of gold, or other metal, and sometimes small gems, under the skin of the arm, between the elbow and shoulder. I was allowed, by one of the Christians at Ava, to take from his arm several of these. They are of gold, inscribed with cabalistic letters.

Circumstances, of course, often tend to confirm these imaginations. The fall of the royal spire when the king removed his residence from Unerapoora, was immediately succeeded by the news of the capture of Rangoon. Comets are regarded as portending great disasters, and one appeared during the advance of the British army.

The fear of witches prevails universally, and physicians derive much of their profits from the sale of medicines which are to give security from their arts. As in other countries, the persons charged with possessing infernal powers are generally poor old women. These sometimes favour the suspicion for purposes of gain, and sometimes are subject to maltreatment. Vultures and owls are birds of evil omen, and families will sometimes vacate a house on which one of these birds has alighted. The tattooing of the body is regarded as a charm. Endeavouring to ridicule an individual, once, for the extent to which he had carried this operation, he gravely assured me that it rendered him invulnerable. Pulling out my knife, and offering to test the assertion, he instantly declined, affirming that if he were a *good man*, such would indeed be the effect, but that he was not a good man.

Many of the people, especially among the Karens, Tounghthoos, &c., worship Nats, which have been mentioned as inhabiting the six lower heavens, and are supposed to possess great power in human affairs. In honour of these, little huts, resembling a common dog-house, are erected on a post; and on another, of the same height in front, is fastened a flat board, on which the offerings are placed. Images of Nats are often seen among collections of idols, in the capacity of attendants. They bear a human form, and are portrayed as being very elegantly dressed. Such figures frequently ornament the base of the flag-staffs, and sacred umbrellas erected near pagodas. I never saw any, however, in or near the little huts erected for their worship. Feasts are often made to them, to avert calamity, or to break a fever from sickness. On these occasions, every member of the family, far and near, assembles; and if any be absent, the service is considered nullified.

This worship of Nats forms no part of Buddhism, and is in fact discountenanced as heterodox. It seems to be a relic of the ancient polytheism, which prevailed in the country before its present religion was introduced.

The Burman term applied to a priest is *Pon-gyee*, or *Bon-ghee*; literally "great exemplar," or "great glory." The Pali term *Rahan*, or "holy man," is seldom used. The Siamese name is *Phrasong*. Some authors speak of the priests as *Telopouts*, but the term is never used by Burmans or Siamese. It seems to have been given to the priests by the French and Portuguese, perhaps from the custom of carrying, over their shaven heads, the large fan made of Tal-apot leaf.

Pongyees are not a caste, or hereditary race; nor, as has been remarked, is there any such thing as caste in Burmah. Any one may become a priest, and any priest may return to secular life at pleasure. Thousands do, in fact, thus return every year, without the least reproach. The far greater number enter with the avowed purpose of remaining only a few months, or years, for the acquisition of learning and merit. Indeed, the majority of respectable young men enter the novitiate for a season, not only to complete their education, but because the doing so is considered both respectable and meritorious. The more acute and energetic re-enter society, and, as the phrase is, "become men again." The dull, the indolent, and those who become fond of religious and literary pursuits, remain.

When a youth assumes the yellow robe, it is an occasion of considerable ceremony, of neighbourly festivity, and of enrolment to the monastery.* The candidate, richly clad, is led forth, on a horse handsomely caparisoned, attended by a train of friends and relations, and passes in pomp through the principal streets. Before him go women bearing on their heads his future robes of profession, and the customary utensils of a priest, with rice, fruit, cloth, china cups, &c., intended as presents to the kyoung, and its superior.

This splendour of array bears a striking similarity to the display of dress, &c., made by a nun when about to renounce the world. Henceforth, at least while he remains a priest, the youth is no more to wear ornaments, ride on horseback, or even carry an umbrella. The candidate is also made to pass an examination as to his belief, motives, &c., and to take upon himself certain vows.

Priests are not only to observe all rules binding on common people, but many more. They are bound to celibacy and chastity; and if married before their initiation, the bond is dissolved. They must not so much as touch a woman, or even a female infant, or any female animal. They must never sleep under the same roof, or travel in the same carriage or boat with a woman, or touch any thing which a woman has worn. If a priest's own mother fall into the water, or into a pit, he must not help her out except no one else is nigh, and then he must only reach her a stick or a rope. They are not to recognise any relations. They must not have, or even touch, money; nor eat after the noon of the day; nor drink without straining the water; nor build



Priest walking out.

a fire in any new place, lest some insect be killed; nor spit in water, or on grass, lest some creature be defiled by eating. They must not dance, sing, or play upon musical instruments, nor stand in conspicuous places, nor wear their hair long, or any ornaments, nor have a turban, umbrella, or shoes; and their raiment must be made of rag and fragments gathered in the streets. As the burning sun makes some shelter absolutely necessary for a shorn, unshaven head, they are allowed to carry their huge fan for this purpose, as shown in the cut. They must hold no secular office, nor interfere in the least with government. Seclusion, poverty, contemplation, and indifference to all worldly good or evil are henceforth to distinguish them.

* He who incurs the expense on this occasion, is said to have made a priest, and becomes a Thengan-taga or Pon-gyee-taga.

In eating, a priest must inwardly say, "I eat this rice, not to please my palate, but to support life." In dressing himself, he must say, "I put on these robes, not to be vain of them, but to conceal my nakedness." And in taking medicine, he must say, "I desire recovery from this indisposition, only that I may be more diligent in devotion and virtuous pursuits."

All this strictness, though required in the sacred books, is by no means exemplified in the conduct of the priests. They wear sandals, carry umbrellas, live luxuriously, and handle money. They not only wear the finest and best cotton cloth, but some of them the most excellent silks. They, however, preserve a shadow of obedience, by having the cloth first cut into pieces, and then neatly sewed together. They even look at women without much reserve. The huge fan, peculiar to priests, is intended partly to prevent the necessity of their seeing women when preaching, &c.; but the manner in which they are represented in native pictures, as looking over them, is not more amusing than true.

Their dress covers much more of the person than that of the laity; indeed, it veils them completely from neck to ankles. It consists of two cloths, one put on so as to form a petticoat, and fastened with a girdle, the other brown gracefully over the shoulders and round the neck. The rule is to keep the head shaved entirely; but some permit it to grow an inch or two. I found the rule in Siam was to shave the head twice a month; and probably the same prevails in Burmah. Yellow is appropriated as the colour for the dress of the priesthood, and it would be deemed nothing less than sacrilege if any one else to use it: so peculiarly sacred is it held, that it is not uncommon to see one of the people pay his devotions in due form to the old garment of a priest, hung on a bush to dry, after being washed.

Kyongs are found in all cities and villages, and often in very small hamlets. As a partial compliance to the law, which forbids them to be erected in such places, they are generally placed at the outskirts. They are enclosed within an ample space, generally set out with fruit and shade trees. The ground is kept clear of grass or weeds, in proportion to the strictness of the superior. The kyongs are always vastly better built than the dwellings of even the richest among the laity; and near the metropolis many of them are truly grand. With few exceptions they are built in the same manner as good dwelling houses, only decorated with carved work, and having massive steps of brick and mortar leading up to them. The distinctive mark between common and religious or royal residences, is always observed, namely, the stages or hips in the roof. The number of these breaks depends on the beauty, size, and sacredness of the structure. The apartments are all on one floor, and often rendered truly imposing by the height and decorations of the roof. I have been in some monasteries of great size, which were solidly gilded, within and without, from top to bottom.

As to the morality of the priesthood, my information is too vague and contradictory to allow me to venture an opinion. Perhaps, however, this contradictoriness arose from a real diversity in the characters of the priests whom my different informers had known. It is certain that if they choose to transgress, they may do so with little danger of detection, by assuming the turban and robe of the laity. They cannot be distinguished by their shorn heads, as that is a sign of humiliation practised by all who go into mourning for relations. Sometimes half the community adopt this sign at the death of some very great man or member of the royal family.

Such as their literature is, it is chiefly confined to the priesthood. Few others can so much as read, without hesitation, a book they never saw before, still less understand its contents. The thousands who "finish their education" in the monasteries, furnish but few exceptions to this remark. The nation has acquired the character of "a reading people" from the fact that nearly all males do learn to read in the kyoung. But it is as the bulk of the Jews read Hebrew, without understanding anything they read.

Their office may be called a sinecure. Few of them preach, and those but seldom, and only on special request; after which donations of clothing, &c. are always made to them. On these occasions, though only one preaches, there are generally several present. They sit cross-legged, in a row, on a raised seat, and each holds up before him his fan, to prevent distraction by looking on the audience, and especially to avoid gazing at the women. In public worship, as has already been remarked, they have no services to perform. At funerals, they attend only when desired, and, after reciting the prayers, retire, with liberal gifts borne on the shoulders of boys. Marriage being utterly unholy, they have no services to render there.* Part of them, in most kyongs, spend a portion of every day in teaching the noviciates, and whatever boys may come to learn. Deeming it wholly unprofessional to do any kind of work, most of them spend their time in sheer idleness. During their season of *lent*, as it has been called, the principal priests, especially some few of great reputation, are almost every day called to preach at some house. Liberal gifts are always expected at the close of each service.

It is the rule that each priest perambulate the streets every morning, till he receive boiled rice, &c., enough for the day. From the dawn of day till an hour after sunrise, they are seen passing to and fro, in groups and singly, carrying on their arm the *Thabike*, which is often sustained by a strap passing over the shoulder. They walk on briskly, without looking to the right or left, stopping when any one comes out with a gift, and passing on without the least token of thanks, or even looking at the giver.

The *Thabike* is a black earthen pot, containing about a peck, with a lid of tin or lackered ware, which is made to fit when inverted, so as to hold little cups of curry, meat, or fruits. The more dignified priests omit the morning perambulation, and either depend on a share of what their juniors receive, or have their own servants, and supply their private table from the bazaar, and from offerings which are brought them by the devout. Except in times of scarcity, the daily supply is superabundant, and the surplus is given to day scholars, poor persons, and adherents, who perform various services round the monastery. These retainers are very convenient to the priests in many ways. They receive money, which the priests may not openly touch; go to market for such little luxuries as may be wanted; sell the superabundant gifts of clothing, mats, boxes, betel-nut, &c. Some of the priests are known to have thus become rich. Father Sangermano, who spent many years among them, declares that they make no scruple of receiving even large sums, and that "they are insatiable after riches, and do little else than ask for them."† Sometimes enormous swine are kept under the monasteries; for what purpose I could never learn, except that it is meritorious to feed dumb animals.

The daily gift of food to priests is supposed to be entirely voluntary, and doubtless generally is so. But I have often seen them make a full stop before a house, and wait for some time. A gift is generally brought at length; but if not, the priest moves on without remark. This certainly amounts to a demand. If any family is noticed constantly to neglect giving, complaint is lodged with the ruler, and fines are sure to follow. In some parts of the country, the priest, as he goes his round, rings a little bell, that all may know of his approach, and be ready. As the time of going round is long before the common hour of breakfast, families who intend to give to the priests rise before day to cook the rice. They give but about a coffee-cup full to each, and stand before their door, dealing it out thus, till the quantity

they have prepared is gone. They commonly add such fruits as are in season; with segars, betel, candles, and particularly curry, or sauce, in small saucers.

The company of priests is very great, but I found few places where the exact number was known. From the data I was able to obtain, I think their proportion to the people is about as one to thirty. In some places it is greater, in others less. Ava, with a population of 200,000, has 20,000 priests. The province of Amherst, with 36,000 souls, has 1010. Tavoy, with a population of 9000, has 450.

Besides the Ponghees, there are at Ava a considerable number of Brahmins, who are highly respected. They hold the rank of astrologers and astronomers to his majesty, in which they are supposed to be eminently skilled, and have committed to them the regulation of the calendar. They are consulted on important occasions, and give forth auguries, which are received with great confidence. The ancestors of these Brahmins appear to have come from Bengal at no distant period. Occasionally, new ones come still.

The priesthood is arranged into a regular hierarchy. The highest functionary is the *Tha-thena-hyng*, or archbishop. He resides at Ava, has jurisdiction over all priests, and appoints the president of every monastery. He stands high at court, and is considered one of the great men of the kingdom. Next to him are the *Ponghees*, strictly so called, one of whom presides in each monastery. Next are the *Oo-pe-zins*, comprising those who have passed the noviciate, sustained a regular examination, and chosen the priesthood for life. Of this class are the teachers or professors in the monasteries. One of these is generally vice-president, and is most likely to succeed to the headship on the demise of the Ponghee. Both these orders are sometimes called *Rahans*, or *Yahans*. They are considered to understand religion so well as to think for themselves, and expound the law out of their own hearts, without being obliged to follow what they have read in books. Next are the *Ko-gen-gu-lan*, who have retired from the world, and wear the yellow cloth, but are not all seeking to pass the examination, and become *Oo-pe-zins*. They have entered for an education, or a livelihood, or to gain divorce, or for various objects; and many of such return annually to secular life. Many of this class remain for life without rising in grade.

Those who remain five years honourably, are called *Tay*, that is, simply *priests*; and those who remain twenty, are *Maha Tay*, great or aged *priests*. They might have become Ponghees at any stage of this period, if their talents and acquirements had amounted to the required standard. By courtesy, all who wear the yellow cloth are called Ponghees.

The death of a Ponghee or president of a kyong is regarded as a great event, and the funeral is conducted with pomp and ceremony. The body being embowelled, and its juices pressed out, is filled with honey, and swathed in many folds of varnished cloth. The whole is coated with bees'-wax; that which covers the face and feet being so wrought as to resemble the deceased. These parts are then gilded. The body often lies in state for many months, on a platform highly ornamented with fringes, coloured paper, pictures, &c.

During my stay at Tavoy occurred the funeral of a distinguished Ponghee. Its rarity, and the great preparations which had been made for it, attracted almost the entire populace. The body had been lying in state, under an ornamental canopy, for several months, embalmed Burman fashion. The face and feet, where the wax preserved the original shape, were visible, and completely gilded. Five cars, on low wheels, had been prepared, to which were attached long ropes of ratan, and to some of them at each end. They were constructed chiefly of cane, and not only were in pretty good taste, but quite costly withal, in gold leaf, embroidered muslin, &c. &c.

When the set day arrived, the concourse assembled, filling not only all the *zayats*, but all the groves, dressed in their best clothes, and full of festivity. Not a beggar,

* It was some time before the Christian converts could be reconciled to Mr Judson's performing the marriage ceremony, or being present in any way. It seemed to them a solemnly obscene.

† In Siam, priests are often present on these occasions.

‡ In Siam, those who are reputed for learning and sanctity, receive a regular but small salary from government.

or ill-dressed person, was to be seen. Almost every person, of both sexes, was dressed in silk; and many, especially children, had ornaments of gold or silver in their ears, and round their ankles and wrists. Not an instance of drunkenness or quarrelling came under my eye, or, that I could learn, occurred on either day. The body in its decorated coffin was removed, amid an immense concourse, from its place in the kyoung to one of the cars, with an excessive din of drums, gongs, cymbals, trumpets, and wailing of women. When it was properly adjusted in its new location, a number of men mounted the car at each end, and hundreds of people grasped the ropes, to draw it to the place of burning, half a mile distant. But it had not advanced many paces, before those behind drew it back. Then came a prodigious struggle. The thousands in front exerted all their strength to get it forward, and those behind with equal energy held it back. Now it would go ten or twelve paces forward, then six or eight backward; one party pretending their great zeal to perform the last honours for the priest, the other declaring they could not part with the dear remains! The air was rent with the shouts of each party to encourage their side to exertion. The other cars of the procession were dragged back and forth in the same manner, but less vehemently. This frolic continued for a few hours, and the crowd dispersed, leaving the cars on the way. For several days, the populace amused themselves in the same manner; but I attended no more, till informed by the governor that at three o'clock that day the burning would certainly take place.

Repairing again to the spot, I found the advancing party had of course succeeded. The empty cars were in an open field, while that which bore the body was in the place of burning, enclosed by a light fence. The height was about thirty feet. At an elevation of about fifteen or sixteen feet, it contained a sort of sepulchral monument, like the square tombs in our church-yards, highly ornamented with Chinese paper, bits of various coloured glass arranged like flowers, and various mythological figures, and filled with combustibles. On this was the body of the priest. A long spire, decorated to the utmost, and festooned with flowers, completed the structure. Shortly after the appointed hour, a procession of priests approached, and took their seats on a platform within the enclosure, while in another direction came "the tree of life," borne on the shoulders of men, who reverently placed it near the priests. It was ingeniously and tastefully constructed of fruits, rice, boxes, cups, umbrellas, staffs, raiment, cooking utensils, and, in short, an assortment of all the articles deemed useful and convenient in Burman house-keeping. Women followed, bearing on their heads baskets of fruit and other articles. All these offerings, I was told, were primarily for the use of the deceased. But as he only needed their spiritual essence, the gross and substantial substances remained for the use of the neighbouring monastery.

The priests, with a small audience of elderly persons, now mumbled over the appointed prayers, and having performed some tedious ceremonies, retired. Immediately sky-rockets and other fireworks were let off at a little distance. From the place of the pyrotechnics, long ropes extended to the funeral cars, to which were fastened horizontal rockets bearing various pasteboard figures. Presently, men with slow matches touched off one of these, but it whizzed forward only a little way, and expired. Another failed in the same manner, and shouts of derision rose from the crowd. The next rushed forward, and snatched a portion of the car, which called forth strong applause. Another and another dashed into the tottering fabric, while several men were seen throwing faggots and gunpowder into it, till, finally, a furious rocket entering the midst of the pile, the whole blazed up, and the poor priest was exploded to heaven! Fancy fireworks concluded the ceremony, and the vast crowd dispersed.

The circumstance that a great proportion of the males of the country are for a time members of the priest-

hood, while it serves to confirm and perpetuate national faith, tends also to lower the influence of the clergy. Political influence they have none, and have never sought. They are respected while they continue to wear the yellow cloth, but on relinquishing it, retain no more consideration on that ground. Comparatively few remain permanently in the priesthood, and these not often the most intellectual. Their literary pursuits (so called) have, of course, no tendency to expand or elevate, being a tissue of fables and extravagances; but these books ascribing high merit to seclusion and contemplation, those who persist generally become calm, quiet, and austere. They maintain respect, not by lordly assumptions, but by a character for humility and piety. The higher priests are seldom intolerant, except when they consider their religion in danger, and are often men whom every one must respect. Foreigners generally receive at their hands kindness and hospitality. The inferior priests and novitiates are often the reverse of this in all things. Proud, empty, and presumptuous, they claim honours from foreigners, which they cannot receive, and display, in all their ways, bigotry and folly.

Though nowhere required, or even authorised, by the Bedagat, there are in many places bands of priestesses or nuns, called *Ma-tha-shen*, or sometimes *Ma-thao-daw*. They are few in number, and regarded with but little veneration. Like priests, they may return to common life at pleasure. Most of them are aged, though some are young. The latter often avow their object to be a better selection for a husband, through the conspicuity given them by the office. In most cases of the old people, the profession is regarded as little else than a pretext for begging. Unlike priests in this respect, they are seen about the streets all day long, often asking alms openly, and sometimes clamorously. They are known by dressing in white, which no other women do, and having their head shaved. They dwell, apart from society, near the kyoungs, into which they have free access, and where they perform various menial services.

Both priests and nuns are under the control of a civil officer, called *Kyoung-serai*, or clerk of the monasteries, who derives his appointment from the *Tha-thena-byng*, but is considered a crown officer. He keeps a register of all kyoungs and their lands, inquires into all disputes among the priests, or between them and the citizens, and in general watches over the outward demeanour of the clergy.

Though remarkably united in their religious opinions, Burmans are not entirely accordant. Sects have arisen, the chief of which is that of the *Kolans*, who are said to be numerous and spreading. Kolan was a reformer, who lived about fifty years ago, and taught a semi-atheism, or the worship of Wisdom. Homage was to be paid to this, wherever found; of course not a little was to be rendered to himself. Preachers and teachers of this sect, always from among the laity, frequently rise, and gain many followers. Many of the nobles are said to be of this sentiment. Most of this sect are near Ava, and in the towns on the Irrawaddy. They are called *Paramats*, from a word which signifies "the good law." They discard the worship of images, and have neither priests nor sacred books. Kolan took the *Bedam-ma* (the first part of the Bedagat), and, after revising it, adopted it as a good creed, but it is not much copied among his followers. Until lately, the Kolans have been greatly persecuted, but at present little notice is taken of them.

It has been observed by travellers that this people is remarkably tolerant in religious matters. In a restricted sense, this is certainly true. Foreigners of every description are allowed the fullest exercise of their religion. They may build places of worship of any kind, in any place, and have their public festivals and processions without molestation. But no nation could be more intolerant to their own people. No Burman may join any of these religions, under the severest penalties. Despotism as is the government, in nothing

does more thoroughly display that despotism than in its measures for suppressing all religious innovation, and supporting the established system. The whole population is divided into allotments of ten families, under a petty officer. Over every ten of these allotments is another officer, to whom the others report. These chiefs of a hundred families are under the supervision of a higher officer, who takes cognisance of all causes. On stated days, every chief of ten families is required to bring forth his company to the appointed observances. He does not indeed notice mere remissness but if any person be habitually absent, he must produce either a good reason or a bribe. The whole population is thus held in chains, as iron-like as caste itself; and to become a Christian openly is to hazard every thing, even life.

In the British provinces, the national faith being robbed of the support of the secular arm, seems to be cherished so much the more by national feeling. Expectancy that the religion of the new rulers may spread, seems to awaken greater vigilance that it may not. Pagodas, kyoungs, and priests, are well supported, and the clergy seem anxious to propitiate popular favour to stand them instead of government patronage. It is therefore no easier to distribute tracts, or obtain an audience in Maulmain, than in Rangoon or Ava, though schools are more easily established. Persecution is shown in every form except official. Neighbourly acts are often refused to Christians, and in some cases, were it not for the missionary, the convert could scarcely escape absolute want.

REMARKS.

No false religion, ancient or modern, is comparable to this. Its philosophy is, indeed, not exceeded in folly by any other, but its doctrines and practical piety bear a strong resemblance to those of the Holy Scripture. There is scarcely a principle or precept in the Bedagut which is not found in the Bible. Did the people but act up to its principles of peace and love, oppression and injury would be known no more within their borders. Its deeds of merit are in all cases either really beneficial to mankind or harmless. It has no mythology of obscene and ferocious deities, no sanguinary or impure observances, no self-inflicting tortures, no tyrannising priesthood, no confounding of right and wrong, by making certain iniquities laudable in worship. In its moral code, its descriptions of the purity and peace of the first ages, of the shortening of man's life because of his sins, &c., it seems to have followed genuine traditions. In almost every respect, it seems to be the best religion which man has ever invented.

At the same time we must regard Boodhism with unmeasured reprobation, if we compare it, not with other false religions, but with truth. Its entire base is false. It is built, not on love to God, nor even love to man, but on personal merit. It is a system of religion without a God. It is literally atheism. Instead of a Heavenly Father forgiving sin, and filial service from a pure heart, as the effect of love, it presents nothing to love, for its Deity is dead; nothing as the ultimate object of action but self; and nothing for man's highest and holiest ambition but annihilation.

The system of merit corrupts and perverts to evil the very precepts whose prototypes are found in the Bible; and causes an injurious effect on the heart, from the very duties which have a salutary effect on society. Thus, to say nothing of its doctrines of eternal transmigration and of uncontrollable fate, we may see,

in this single doctrine of merit, the utter destruction of all excellence. It leaves no place for holiness; for every thing is done for the single purpose of obtaining advantage.

Sympathy, tenderness, and all benevolence, would become extinct under such a system, had not Jchoval planted their rudiments in the human constitution. If his neighbour's boat be upset, or his house on fire, why should the Boodhist assist? He supposes such event to be the unavoidable consequences of demerit in a former existence; and if this suffering be averted there must be another of equal magnitude. He even fears, that by his interfering to prevent or assuage his neighbour's calamity, he is resisting established fate and bringing evil on his own head.

The same doctrine of merit destroys gratitude, either to God or man. If he is well off, it is because he deserves to be. If you do him a kindness, he cannot be persuaded that you have any other object or reason than to get merit, and feels that he compensates your generosity by furnishing the occasion. If the kindness be uncommon, he always suspects you of sinister designs. In asking a favour, at least of an equal, he does it peremptorily, and often haughtily, on the presumption that you will embrace the opportunity of getting merit; and when his request is granted, retire without the slightest expression of gratitude. In fact as has been already stated, there is no phrase in his language that corresponds with our "I thank you."

The doctrine of fate is maintained with the obstinacy and devotedness of a Turk. While it accounts to thee for every event, it creates doggedness under misfortune, and makes forethought useless.

Boodhism allows evil to be balanced with good, by a scale which reduces sin to the shadow of a trifle. To shake a pagoda, or offer a flower to the idol, or feed the priests, or set a pot of cool water by the wayside, is supposed to cancel a multitude of sins. The building of a kyoun or pagoda, will outweigh enormous crimes, and secure prosperity for ages to come. Vice is thus robbed of its terrors; for it can be overbalanced by easy virtues. Instances are not rare of robbery, and even murder, being committed, to obtain the means of buying merit. All the terrors, therefore, with which hell is represented, do but serve to excite to the observance of frivolous rites. The making of an idol, an offering, or some such act, is substituted for repentance and reparation, for all inward excellence, and every outward charity.

It ministers also to the most extravagant pride. The Boodhist presumes that incalculable merit, in previous incarnations, has been gained, to give him the honour of now wearing human nature. He considers his condition far superior to that of the inhabitants of the other islands in this system, and his chance of exaltation to be of the most animating character. Conceit, therefore, betrays itself in all his ways. The lowest man in society carries himself like the "twice born" brahmin of Hindustan.

We need not multiply these remarks. It is enough to move our sympathy to know that this religion, however superior to any other invented by man, has no power to save. Though we have no stirring accounts to present of infants destroyed, or widows burned, or parents smothered in sacred mud, it is enough that *they are perishing in their sins*. It matters little whether a soul pass into eternity from beneath the wheels of Juggernaut, or from amid a circle of weeping friends. The awful scene is beyond. May the favoured ones of our happy land be induced to discharge their duty to these benighted millions!

END OF TRAVELS, IN BURMAN EMPIRE.

and agree beforehand, but, on the event of the fall of that empire, either by a revolution at Constantinople, or by a succession of dismemberments, the European powers will each take, under the title of protectors, that part of the empire assigned to it by the stipulations of the congress; that these protectorates, being defined and limited as to territories, according to neighbourhoods, the security of frontiers, and the similitude of religions, manners, and interests, shall not interfere with the rights of local sovereignties, pre-existing in the protected provinces, but shall secure only the feudal superiority of the powers. This sort of sovereignty, thus defined and consecrated as a part of the European code, will principally consist in the right of occupying particular portions of the territory or the coasts, for the purpose of founding either free towns or European colonies, or ports and depôts for commerce. The different divisions of nations, the classifications of tribes, existing rights of all sorts, will be recognised and maintained by the protecting power. It will be an armed and civilising guardianship that each power will exercise; the existence and elements of nationality will be guaranteed under its protectorate, and under a more powerful flag; invasions, dismemberments, discords, and anarchy, will be averted, whilst all pacific means of developing commerce and industry will be abundantly furnished.

These positions assumed, the modes in which the protectorates will act upon and influence the provinces of the East assigned to them, will vary according to localities and manners, and will be directed according to peculiar circumstances; let us see how things will go on.

They will found, at first, one or several free European towns, upon a part of the coast or territory, the most favoured by nature and circumstances. These towns, open, as well as the country around, to all the protected populations, will be governed by the legislation of the mother-country, or by colonial legislations; on entering them, the protected will acquire the right of citizenship, and shortly afterwards of nationality; they will cease to be subject to the oppressive and barbarous government of their tribe or prince; they will enjoy, in all its sacredness, the right of property and transmission to heirs, which is now almost universally denied to them, and which is the first lever of all civilisation; they will possess such immunities as to commerce, industry, and arms, as the protecting state, in its wisdom, shall see fitting to confer upon them. The commercial relations, with these concentrations of liberty, property, and civilisation, will inevitably extend from point to point; towns, villages, and tribes, will not be long before they solicit, in a body, the nationality and the social rights which result from it. The protected country will pass, in a few years, altogether into the system of the protecting nation. Uniformity in laws, and in political and social advantages, will be promptly and liberally extended to them; all these advantages are already appreciated, and ardently desired. Weary of the tyranny, and of the barbarous and oppressive administration which weighs upon them, eager above all things for individual liberty, and the rights of property and commerce, there is no doubt that the first opened towns will be immediately filled. The influence of example, and the secure prosperity which these towns and their lands will enjoy, will draw, by little and little, entire populations. There are but two things to humour and respect, religion and manners, and this is very easy, for tolerance is the law of good sense and of Europe, and the ineffaceable custom of the East. All the creeds should continue to live side by side, in all their mutual freedom and independence. One condition of a purely civil nature can be imposed, and gradually, however, on those who shall establish themselves in the European towns, and in what concerns legislation, and not creed, their usages may be modified. No municipal and supreme law will sanction either the plurality of wives nor slavery, but it will interdict anything of what is simply the private concerns of family conscience.

There will be two sorts of legislation in each protec-

torate, a general, and, in some degree, a feudal one, which will regulate the general relation of protected races and tribes, amongst themselves with the protecting nation, such as the control to taxes, to the militia, and the limitations of trade, and a European legislation of the free European analogous to the spirit of the protecting nation, giving a model as an incessant example and stimulating the backward and barbarous legislation of the bounding tribes. It is indispensable that these, both in theory and in practice, be permitted to co-exist and separate. It will be merely requisite to oblige men of distinct nations, tribes, religions, and nations in the common compact, to live at peace under the guardianship of the protectorate; to accustom them to understand a community of interest, and to collect into deliberative assemblies by nations, and by tribes for certain objects; then to make them name deputies chosen from the most enlightened amongst them, will deliberate with the deputies of the other tribes and nations, upon the common interests of the whole protectorate, so as to habituate them by degrees to friendly intercourse, and to amalgamate them insensibly, not by the force of laws, but by that of manners. The East so prepared by its municipal habits, and by the great diversity of its races, to this state of things, that protecting nation will experience no difficulty, except in one or two large capitals, like Damascus, Bagdad, Cairo, and Constantinople. These difficulties will never be solved by force, but solely by a temporary exclusion from communication with the rest of the protected territories. In the East, the cessation of commerce is the cessation of life. Repentance will soon bring about a reconciliation.

The possibility, I will even say the extreme facility of a similar organisation, is clear to every one who journeys in these countries. The absolute slavery, ruin, and depopulation, the absence of all rights of property and legal transmission, the arbitrary will of the pacha, who ceaselessly threatens both fortune and life, have so denationalised these glorious countries, that any flag that shall be unfurled with these conditions would soon unite the major part of the population under its shade. The greater part of these people are ripe for this great change; all the nations of Turkey in Europe, and all the Greek, Armenian, Maronite, and Jewish populations, are laborious, agricultural, and commercial, and require nothing but security and liberty to multiply and cover the islands and the two continents. In twenty years, the measure which I propose will have created prosperous nations and millions of men, marching under the protecting shield of Europe, to new developments of civilisation.

But I am asked, "What will you do with the Turks?" I answer by another question, "Where will be the Turks?" When the empire has once fallen, been divided and dismembered, the Turks, pressed by all the insurgent populations, will either be confounded with them, or will fly to Constantinople, and into some parts of Asia Minor, where they will be the majority. They will be too few, too hemmed in by implacable foes, too disheartened by the blow of fate, to reconquer their vast possessions. They will themselves form one of those nations, guaranteed and protected by the European power, which shall accept the sovereignty of the Bosphorus, of Constantinople, or of Asia Minor; and they will be too happy to have such an ally, to cover them from the vengeance and attacks of the people who were subject to them. They will preserve their laws, manners, and religion, until contact with a more advanced civilisation leads them insensibly to labour and commerce, and all the social benefits which flow from them. Their territory, their relative independence, and their nationality, will remain under the guardianship of Europe, until their complete amalgamation with the other free nations of Asia. If the plan which I conceive, and which I propose, should draw down outrage on, or compel the expatriation and dispossession of, the wreck of a great and generous nation, I would regard the plan itself as criminal. The Turk

I time to produce their due effects. But it is impossible to say that such exertions are utterly hopeless. On the contrary, there is every ground for hope of the most satisfactory results. The bigotry of the Turks has given place to an enlightened toleration, with more facility, and in a shorter space of time, than has ever been recorded of any other nation. An amalgamation with Europeans in the military and civil services, and in the extensive ramifications of commerce, is leading the whole population to a correct appreciation of the value of discipline, subordination, and social relations. The regeneration of those fair districts of the earth, is much more feasible under its present prospects, if allowed fair scope for development, than the covering them with Cossacks, to keep impatient populations in the necessary subjection. Because, let M. de Lamartine disguise the matter as he may, it would be Russia that would be mainly aggrandised, and it is Russia only that could keep permanent hold of what might be assigned to her. And is her despotism less grudging than the Turkish? Is there any thing so agreeable to humanity in the authentic accounts of the massacres and devastations that have marked the Russian "protectorate" (to use M. de Lamartine's beguiling term) of the Crimea, Georgia, Armenia, or, more latterly, Poland, as to induce very delightful anticipations of her mildness and benignity to the unfortunate Osmanlis? Or, in a word, is there any thing more gratifying to the Christian mind, in the superstitious degradation of the Russians, than in the creed of the Mahometans, who grant to all a full and effective tolerance, and under whom true religion has more prospect of being propagated, than if smothered and degraded in the wretched ceremonies of the Greek church, and its adoration of human corpses?

M. de Lamartine presents Syria and Cyprus to France and Egypt to England. But where are Mehemet Ali and Ibrahim Pacha? They would not be easily dislodged. Austria would have the easiest task perhaps in seizing upon Servia and Macedonia; but has M. de Lamartine forgotten, that in his own account of Servia he expresses his deep regret that he could not remain amongst its natives, to give them the benefit of his sword in achieving their independence?

Upon the whole, it is scarcely to be credited, notwithstanding his own apparent conviction of the wisdom of his views, that Lamartine ever thought they could be acted upon; but it is almost to be inferred that he has given them vent, rather because they were novel and startling, than because they were sage or practical. It is the besetting sin of the majority of French literary men.]

sketch, and whom you yourself abstain from judging. I confess that my impressions were at that time almost entirely favourable to her, whether it was that youth gave me greater sympathy with an existence utterly apart from the usual routine, or that I saw nothing in the desert but what was great and noble. I also recorded my feelings in a faithful recital; but simple and insipid tale withered like a leaf swept by the wind, and fell lifeless into that literary gulf where so many of those political essays that you and I have attempted are doomed to burial.

Nevertheless, my visit to Lady Hester was related to Louis XVIII., who was anxious to learn the details from myself personally. I was indebted to Lady Stanhope for that kindness which hailed and made known some of my adventures in the East; thus the recital of my promenades, after the school of Homer, with the young maidens of Scio, in their last days of life and liberty; thus the particulars of the discovery, acquisition, and removal of the *Venus of Milo*, that masterpiece of ancient sculpture, which my country, I say it with some vanity, owes to my exertions; thus other episodes in my travels then obtained some degree of favour, from connection with the name of my hostess on Lebanon; and if I made no endeavour to communicate to the public my admiration for her, it was because my journey had reference to a political mission. You will approve of my motives, on considering that, with a due regard to the obligations of our common career, I thought that they imposed upon me a rigorous silence. Since torn from that career, the main study of my life, by storms in which so many far more precious interests have been wrecked, I still found myself bound to obey its injunctions, even when I hesitated not to abandon it, and thus my silence has survived my functions.

At the present moment, in describing better than I could what I might relate apart from political concerns, you have awakened my recollections; you will yourself judge if a few features that I had preserved are worthy of being added to your brilliant pictures.

When I had the honour of seeing Lady Hester Stanhope, she was more connected with Europe and its politics, and had not yet forgotten the world, although she held it in contempt. She had not then acquired, from some contemplative characters in Syria, the art of linking the destinies of our hemisphere to the influence of the stars or the firmament; she could still hang their chain from a higher point. Disgusted with the creeds of Europe, with which she was imperfectly acquainted, rejecting the numerous sects of the desert, whose mysteries she had fathomed, she had created for herself a peculiar deism, preserving of the Christian religion only the practice of doing good, and the precept of charity.

The niece of Pitt had mingled from her youth in the struggles of the British Parliament. At a later date, in her travels, she had studied and thoroughly investigated the views of the European cabinets. Thus it was that in our interview she gave vent to such severe judgments upon the men who have ruled the world for the last thirty years; of those men, several have fallen from power, some still exercise a sway, and the greatest number has succumbed to time. Lady Stanhope characterised them by a phrase, stigmatised them by an epithet, and almost all have justified her fearful prophecies. The colouring of her sketches, her revelations, or her hatreds, which she said she inherited from her uncle, I do not consider it proper to make known, but her antipathies against Europe I am not prevented from repeating.

"Will you return to England?" I asked her. "No, never," she replied with energy; "your Europe is so stale! Leave me my desert; what should I do in Europe? To look at nations that deserve their chains, and at kings unfit to reign! Before long, your old continent will be shaken to its very base. You have seen Athens; you are going to see Tyre. See what remains of those noble republics, the protectors of the arts, the queens of industry and the seas! Such will Europe

APPENDIX.

LETTER FROM THE VISCOUNT DE MARCILLI TO
M. DE LAMARTINE.

Of your travels in the East, my dear Lamartine, I have only read some extracts, inserted in different journals, but I can no longer resist my desire to tell you how deeply I am indebted to you for reviving past enjoyments. You have given fresh life to my old impressions; I have refound in you, if there be not too much pride in saying so, those great and powerful emotions, which agitated me twelve years earlier, on beholding the same places. I then gave myself up to the contemplation of those majestic scenes; the desert and Lebanon appeared to me under those sublime aspects that your pencil has recalled; I saw the same ruins, I scaled the same mountains, and the same dust stuck to my pilgrim-sandals; and I am not wrong in believing, that this identity in travel and thought adds an additional link to our friendship.

You have mentioned Lady Hester Stanhope, and I have unceasingly read and reread your delightful tale regarding her; I have meditated upon it as one of a page of my own remembrances, written in letters of fire; you have transported me again to

fall, and the death of the great ones. Aristocracy, soon to be effaced from its place to a sordid and ephemeral middle root or vigour. The populace alone, that in works, still preserves some character, dies. Tremble, if it should ever learn its power. Europe annoys me; I avert my ear from reports which reach me from it, and their ill dead upon this isolated strand. Let us of Europe; I have done with it!"

Lady Stanhope ran over long accounts of the desert. She related to me the events of the king and queenly life; the succour and extends to all travellers, and especially in memory of Napoleon; the death of the king, butchered by the Ansarias on the last night; the striking vengeance she exacted on the poison administered in a tent on the desert; the disguised himself in the East under the name of Ali-Bey, and in Europe under the name of Badia. She spoke to me of her adventures of the mountain, and her excursions.

"One day," said she, "from Damascus to see the ruins. The pacha, my friend, had placed under the care of the Scheik Nasel, the chief of fifty people followed at a day's distance. We sometimes at night, sometimes during the day, as had arisen since my departure, when I mounted on a dromedary came flying to our camp, spoke a few words to the Scheik Nasel, bled, and changed countenance. 'What with you?' I asked. 'Nothing,' he replied; 'I need. Shortly, a second dromedary over the distress of Nasel was increased. I knowing the cause. 'Well, since you' said he, 'my father, one of whose wives I off, is pursuing me with a troop thrice as mine, and is just at hand. He seeks now, for such offences require blood; but entrusted to me, and I will sooner perish you.' 'Depart, fly!' I exclaimed; 'I pre- alone in the desert, to seeing you killed by

your own father; I will wait for him, and manage a reconciliation; but in any case, I shall not be far off, and the sun will be my guide.' He left me on hearing these words, and disappeared with his fifty Arabs. I was alone for about an hour, without any other companion than my mare, or other protection than my poignard, when a cloud of dust arose at the horizon. Some horsemen came forward at full gallop, and in a few minutes Nasel was at my side. 'Honour to the cid, my lady!' he exclaimed, 'he carries a warrior's heart! What I told you was only to try your courage; come, my father is waiting for you!' I followed him. I was received in the camp with all the ceremonies of the desert; gazelles and young camels were furnished for the repast; poets celebrated the exploits of past times. I made an alliance with the tribe, which from that time loves and respects me."

Thanks, my dear Lamartine, thanks for these recollections of my old travels. I yield myself up to the charms they have for me, and I can no more find them than the Arab story-tellers of the khans of Ptolemais, who repeat the great deeds of Antar.

In writing to you I think of that sun which was disappearing behind the mountains of Cyprus, and casting its last tints on the peaks of Anti-Lebanon; I think of that sea, with its blue waves, dying foamlessly away and scarcely breaking on the shores of Sidon. None better than you can understand how strongly the imagination and memory are seized, and how quick the heart beats when, in the bosom of such an amphitheatre, an English woman, whom the Arabs, disregarding her sex, have named *the Lord*, hid under the Bedouin garb, lets fall such words in the silence of the desert.

Adieu! I leave you to read you again, and to indulge in my remembrances afresh. If you should ever send your work to Lady Stanhope, mention to her the name of a man full of her recollection, and proud of being one of those few travellers who have visited her on her adopted mountains, and at the same time of being one of those numerous friends who have admired you in your native valley, so near to my own retreat.

THE VISCOUNT DE MARCELLAS.

APRIL 12, 1835.

